



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### **Usage guidelines**

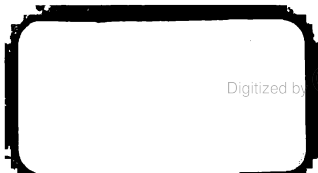
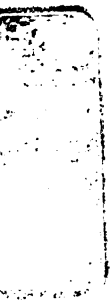
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



E. Osborn

Saml Barrow  
Middleham

G.A. Yorks 8° 1199  
/ 1



HISTORY AND TOPOGRAPHY  
OF THE  
CITY OF YORK;

AND  
*The North Riding of Yorkshire;*

EMBRACING

A GENERAL REVIEW OF THE EARLY HISTORY OF GREAT BRITAIN,  
AND A GENERAL HISTORY AND DESCRIPTION OF  
THE COUNTY OF YORK.

By T. Whellan and Co.

—○—  
IN TWO VOLUMES.—VOL. I.  
—○—

BEVERLEY:  
PRINTED FOR THE PUBLISHERS, BY JOHN GREEN, MARKET PLACE.  
1857.



## P R E F A C E .

---

THE more than usual amount of approval with which the recently published Topographical History of York and the East Riding was received by the general body of the subscribers, as well as by the press of the County, encouraged the publishers to extend their labours to the interesting and highly important district of North Yorkshire; and they now feel a just pride in being in a position to state, that the amount of patronage which has been accorded to them in that locality is perfectly satisfactory, and flattering in the extreme. It, too, must be pleasurable to the inhabitants of the North Riding—an almost purely agricultural district—to know that amongst them is a very large number of patrons of antiquarian and topographical literature—exclusive even of the higher classes.

It is proposed to supply a good History and Topography of York and the North Riding of Yorkshire, in two volumes, written in a popular style to suit all classes, and as free as possible of the technical terms, legal verbiage, and classical dicta, by which the compilations of many learned authors are rendered so insufferably dull to the generality of readers; that is, to those who are not deeply versed in antiquarian lore, and whose limited education precludes them revelling in the literary delights of the classic regions.

The learned classes will easily understand why the present work contains so much plain English, and so little of that quaint Saxon dialect, with which historians are wont to crowd their works: in the following pages, the most simple and common phrases and quotations in Latin are rendered in English, so that "those that run may read." This plan was adopted in the above-mentioned History of York and the East Riding, and appears to have met with a general approbation. The highly respectable editor of a York newspaper—himself a historian—in a review of that production says, "The work does the authors infinite credit, for nothing of public interest in the

sphere marked out, has escaped their notice." Another reviewer observes—"The authors possess a clear and pleasing style of writing, and in a work intended for all classes, have abstained from the controversial discussion of vexed questions, as altogether foreign to the object of this work." A third says of it—"There is a good deal in these volumes which goes far to remove them from that mere twaddle and compilation which, in nine cases out of ten, is the grand feature in local histories. It is not often that we have to note the appearance of a work like the present." Whilst a fourth reviewer, after declaring that the authors "are deserving of the highest praise," &c., adds, that "a more generally useful and interesting work" than it, "could not occupy the library table of a Yorkshire country gentleman, or the fire-side shelves of a farmer, fond of local reminiscences."

If the History, &c., of York and the East Riding, merited such encomiums as these, the first volume of the present work (which is now submitted with much deference) must be worthy of some consideration, seeing that it is (necessarily) in great part at least, a revised and corrected edition of the first volume of that history. And here it may be proper to observe that though the title of the publishers firm has been changed since the publication of the work for the East Riding, from "J. J. Sheahan and T. Whellan," to "T. Whellan and Co.," yet no change whatever has taken place in the *modus operandi*—the staff employed on both works being the same.

The arrangement of the first volume embraces a general review of the early history of Great Britain, and the ancient Kingdom of Northumbria; a general history and description of the County of York; a history of the venerable City of York, with its magnificent Cathedral, and numerous antiquities; and a history of the time honoured Borough of Scarborough, "the Queen of English Watering places."

The second volume will contain concise histories of all the Market Towns, and a topographical survey of all the parishes, villages, &c., in the North Riding of the County.

*Beverley, 1857.*

# Index to Vol. I.

- Abbess Hilda, 88  
Abbeys—See Monasteries  
Aborigines of Great Britain, 37; their religion, 40  
Agricultural Statistics of England, 7; Societies and Farmers' Clubs, 14  
Ainsty Wapentake, 1  
Aire River, 23  
Albion, derivation of, 39  
Alcuin, 290, 312, 477, 661  
Aldborough, the ancient *Isurium*, 42, 306  
Aldby, near Stamford Bridge, 68, 83  
Aldfrid, King, buried at Driffield, 91  
Alfred the Great divides the Kingdom, 97, 115  
Ancient Britons submit to the Romans, and adopt their customs, 53  
Anglo-Danish period, 94  
Anglo-Saxon Churches, 419  
Anglo-Saxon period, 68  
Anglo-Saxon Kings—Alfred the Great, 97; Athelstan, 98; Edmund, 99; Edgar, 100; Ethelred 101; Edward the Confessor, 102, Harold, 103  
Anlaf's fleet enters the Humber, 96  
Antiquities of Yorkshire, 24  
Arbor-Low (Peak of Derby), 49  
Archbishops of York, list of, 383  
Archbishops, annals of the, 387  
Archdiocese of York, 375  
Aries, Council of, 77  
Armies, ancient mode of assembling, 134  
Askerne Springs, 24  
Athelstan, King, establishes the Kingdom; his death, 96  
Atmospherical phenomena, 273  
Augustine, St., created Archbishop of Canterbury, 80  
A woman crucified by her daughter, 257  
Aysgarth Force, 19  
  
Barbarous customs of the English, 148  
Barony, description of, 116  
Bathing places, principal, 17  
  
Battle Abbey, Roll of, 110  
Battles—Battle Bridge, 45; near Doncaster and York, 70, 97, 102, 313; Mount Badon, 71; Hatfield and Denisburn, 85; Winmoor, 88; Bromford, 98; Chester, 99; Fulford and Stamford Bridge, 104; Senlac, commonly called Hastings, 108; York, 120; near York, 121; on Cuton Moor ("Battle of the Standard"), 123; at Falkirk, 132; Bannockburn, 134; Myton-on-Swale, 136; Boroughbridge, 138; Byland Abbey, 139; Nevill's Cross, 142; Bramham Moor, 140; St. Albans, 150; Northampton, 151; Wakefield, 153; Barnet Heath, 153; Towton Field, 155; Danesmoor, 164; Barnet, 159; Tewkesbury, 166; Bosworth Field, 169; Stoke, 172; Flodden Field, 178; Kington, or Edge Hill, 234; Tadcaster and Wetherby, 235; Selby, 239; and Marston Moor, 244  
Bede, the Venerable, 76  
Bedern, derivation of, 471  
Beheading in England, first instance of, 121  
Bells, invention and use of, 480  
Bernicia, Kingdom of, 71  
Beverley and Barmston Drainage, 13  
Beverley, King Charles I. at, 232  
Bible, first complete version published in England, 178; indiscriminate use of, condemned, 189  
Big Ben of Westminster (bell), 431  
Bishops committed to the Tower, 224  
Black Hamilton, 10  
Boadicea, Queen of the *Iceni*, 45  
Boroughbridge burnt by the Scots, 135  
Bramham Craggs, 24  
Bridges of stone first built in England, 364  
Bridlington Chalybeate Spring, 25  
Brigantes, the metropolis of, 42; Cartimandua, their Queen, 45; Venusius becomes their chief, 45  
Britain, derivation of, 39

- British Association, 640  
 British Kings—Arthur, 71, 77, 311; Ambrosius, 77; Uter, 70, Lucius, 76; Vortigern, 68; Ohta and Abisa, 71; Ebraucus, the supposed founder of York, 289  
 British Period, 37  
 British Remains—tumuli, barrows, cromlechs, &c., 46 and 47; corselet of gold found in a barrow, 51; urns, canoes, war chariots, &c., 52  
 Bruce, David, taken prisoner, 143  
 Burgundy, Duchess of, instigates rebellion, 171, 173
- Calder, River, 23  
 Caledonians, 39, 61  
 Camp of Refuge, 122  
 Canals of Yorkshire, 23  
 Canute's reproof to his courtiers, 101  
 Capitation tax, 143  
 Caracalla murders Geta, 58  
 Cassiacus, Chief of the *Silures*, 45  
 Cassiterides, or the Tin Islands, 38  
 Castles or Fortresses, ancient, 24; at Bam-  
 borough, 87; Aldby, 83; York, 98, 337;  
 number of existing remains of Castles,  
 342  
 Cathedral of York, 415  
 Cathedrals burnt, 122  
 Cattle, Teeswater and Holderness, breed  
 of, 8  
 Caves of Yorkshire, 25  
 Caxton introduces Printing, 177  
 Celtic sepulchres and monuments, 46  
 Centenarians in England, 10  
 Chalk formation on the Wolds, extent  
 of, 11  
 Chuntries, how founded, 181  
 Christian Festivals, origin of, 417  
 Christianity introduced into Britain, 74;  
 re-introduced by St. Augustine, 79  
 Civil government, titles, &c., 282  
 Classes, distinction of, preserved by Wil-  
 liam the Conqueror, 113  
 Cleveland, hills and vale of, 4  
 Clifford's Tower at York, 338  
 Cook Fighting, 356  
 Cook, River, 137  
 Coffee introduced into England, 364  
 Commerce of Yorkshire, 18  
 Constantine the Great born, 59, 292; as-  
 sumes the imperial purple at York, and  
 embraces Christianity, 60  
 Constantius, Emperor, resides at York, 59;  
 his supposed tomb, 527  
 Copper Mines, 9
- Coronation stone and chair, 131, 146  
 Corpus Christi Plays, 593  
 Costume of the English in the reign of  
 the Confessor, 103  
 Courts of Exchequer, &c., removed from  
 York, 132; reinstated in York for six  
 months, 135  
 Cromwell, Oliver, at the siege of York,  
 240; his death, 259; his effigies burnt  
 at York, 261
- Danes invade England, 94; their massacre  
 on St. Brice's Day, 100  
 Dance Maine, 51  
 Danish fleet enters the Humber, 119  
 Danish Kings—Ringside, 97; Eric, 100;  
 Sweyne, 101, 813; Canute, 101, 313;  
 Harold and Hardicanute, 101  
 Deluge, the Universal, 33  
 Derwent, River, 22  
 Devil's Arrows, 24  
 Devil's Den (Cromlech), 51  
 Diefyr, or Deira, Kingdom of, 71  
 Deira, derivation of the name, 451  
 Discharged Livings, meaning of, 361  
 Dissolution of Monasteries, 179, 193  
 Disputes about the Festival of Easter, 89  
 Domesday Book, its origin, &c., 112  
 Don, River, 23  
 Drainage of the carra and marshes, 13  
 Drake, the historian, 666  
 Dreadful executions of the nobility, 138  
 Dropping Well at Knaresborough, 25  
 Druids—their sacrifices, 40; their civil  
 government, 42; they oppose the Roman  
 invaders, 42  
 Druidical Circles, 49  
 Ducking or Cucking Stool, 333  
 Dwarf Rose in the Field of Towton, 159
- Eastern Moorlands, 3  
 East Riding of Yorkshire—situation of,  
 10; climate of 13; principal towns of,  
 10; is famous for breeding horses, 14;  
 its mineral productions, 15; marshes  
 and warp land, 16  
 Ecclesiastical Architecture, 419  
 Egbert unites the Kingdoms of the Hep-  
 tarchy, 93  
 Ely, Bishop of, heads an army, 136  
 England, the Island of Saints, 61  
 England divided into parishes, &c., 115  
 England submits to the Conqueror, 122  
 Ermine Street (Roman Road), 65  
 Esk, River, 23
- Fairs, ancient, 354

- Fair Rosamond, 401  
 Famines, 134, 136  
 Flamborough Head, 11  
 Fleming, Nicholas, Mayor of York, 136  
 Flood, great, of Ripponden, 266  
 Foss, River, 23  
 Fosseway (Roman Road), 65  
 Franchise of Yorkshire, 25  
 Free Chapels, how founded, 181  
 Fridstol, or freed stool, ancient, 383
- Galilee Porches in Churches, 382  
 Galtres, ancient Forest of, 23  
 Garraby Beacon, 11  
 Gascoigne, Chief Justice, refuses to pass sentence of death on Archbishop Scrope, 147  
 Gaveston, Piers de, 133  
 General History of Yorkshire, 37  
 Gent, Thomas, the historian, 667, 735  
 Geoffrey Plantagenet, Archbishop of York, 129  
 Geoffrey of Monmouth, the historian, 289  
 Geology of Yorkshire, 26  
 Giggleswick Scar, 25  
 Glass windows first introduced, 416, 454  
 Glo'ster, Richard, Duke of; is made Protector, and crowned King, 167  
 Goodmanham, Pagan Temple at, 84  
 Gothic Architecture, 420  
 Gregory the Great, Pope—his character, 79; he resolves on the conversion of England, 80; appoints Sees, 388  
 Guilds or Fraternities, 192  
 Guisborough Mineral Spring, 25  
 Guy Fawkes, a Yorkshireman, 664
- Hadrian, Emperor, arrives in Britain, 58; resides at York, 291  
 Hadrian's Great Wall, 54  
 Hainault soldiery massacred, 141  
 Harold II. crowned, 103; his death and burial, 109  
 Harrauld Hadrada invades England, 104  
 Harrogate Springs, 24  
 Hebrew language, the oldest, 37  
 Hengist and Horsa invited to Britain, 68  
 Hengist defeats the Picts and Scots, 75  
 Hermit of Knaresborough, 662  
 Hide of land, description of, 116  
 High Street (Roman Road), 64  
 Hinguar and Hubba destroy the Holderness coast, 96  
 Holderness District, 12  
 Holderness, Wasting Cliffs of, 10  
 Holy Island, 86
- Hornsea Mere, 12  
 Horrible brutalities of the Danes, 96  
 Horse Racing, 658  
 Hull, River, 21  
 Hulpit and Hunpit holes, 25  
 Humber, River, 20  
 Hurtlepot, Ginglepot, and Donk, Caves, 25
- Icknild Street (Roman Road), 65  
 Independents, the, rob the Churches, 256  
 Indulgences, definition of, 418  
 Inhabitants of Yorkshire, their character, 26  
 Instance of filial affection, 236  
 Insurrection in the north, 163  
 Insurrection of the northern Catholics, 201  
 Insurrection in the East Riding, &c., 194  
 Insurrection of the old Parliamentary faction, 261  
 Ireland peopled, 38
- Jack Straw and Wat Tyler's rebellion, 144  
 Jenkins, Henry, 9  
 Jews, great massacre of, 126; their number in England, 360  
 Jones, Paul, the Anglo-American buccaneer, 270  
 Judith, Countess of Albemarle, 121  
 Julius Cæsar, invasion of, 43
- King, origin of the name, 82, 357  
 King Arthur defeats the Saxons; his murder, and the discovery of his remains, 71, 77  
 King Edwin's daughter baptized by St. Paulinus, 82  
 King Edwin baptized by St. Paulinus, and his glorious reign, 84; his death, 85  
 King Richard I.—his coronation, 126; his imprisonment in Austria, 128  
 King John visits the north, 129  
 Kings Alexander I. and II. of Scotland married at York, 130  
 King Edward I. at York, 131; his death, 132  
 King Edward II., 133; his murder, 140  
 King Edward III.—his glorious reign and marriage, 140  
 King Henry II.—his heart lately sent to England, 728  
 King Richard II.—his accession, 143; deposition and murder, 146  
 King Henry IV.—his accession, 146; and death, 149  
 King Henry V. visits York and Beverley, 149; his death, 150

- King Henry VI.—his character, 150; falls into the hands of the Yorkists, 152; again made King, 164; confined in the Tower, and murdered, 166
- King Edw. IV. proclaimed, 154; crowned, 159; again crowned, 161; his imprisonment and escape, 164; his death and family, 167
- King Edward V. murdered in the Tower, 167
- King Richard III., crowned, 167; slain at the battle of Bosworth Field, 169
- King Henry VII.—his marriage, &c., 169
- King Henry VIII., 177; he receives the title of *Defender of the Faith*, 178; visits Yorkshire, 186; his death, 191
- King Edward VI., 192; his death, 195
- King James VI.'s accession, 205; his death, 211
- King Charles I.—history of his disastrous reign, 211; is refused admittance into Hull, 226; his person delivered up by the Scots, 256; is tried and executed, 258
- King Charles II. proclaimed, 260; his death, 263
- King James II.—his accession, 263; his death, 265
- Kits-Coty House, 47
- Leland, the Antiquary, 323
- Lead, Copper, and Iron Mines, 9
- Levellers, the, their fanaticism, 256, 257
- Library of York Cathedral, 476
- Lindisfarne, Isle of, 86; Church destroyed by the Danes, 93
- Liturgy (new) compiled, 194
- Londesborough, King Edwin's residence, 84
- Long Meg and her Daughters, 48
- Long Parliament, the, 222
- Lothbric, a Danish General, legend of, 95
- Malham Cove, 25
- Malo Cross, 66
- Mansions, ancient, 24
- Marble Quarries, 9
- Mark, value of, 129
- Mary Queen of Scots, 204
- Massacre of the Jews, 126
- Maxima Cæsariensis, 53
- Mechanics' Institute, Yorkshire Union of, 642
- Mill, derivation of, 54
- Mineral Springs in Yorkshire, 24
- Minster, derivation of the name, 432
- Minstrals or Gleemen, 348
- Mistletoe, a sacred plant with the Druids, 40
- Monasteries, origin of, 486
- Monasteries*, suppression of, 179; annual revenues, 182
- Monastic Institutions in Yorkshire, 24
- Abbeys*—York, 491; Scarborough, 702
- Alien Priors or Cells*, 487
- Friaries*—York, 506; Scarborough, 704
- Nunneries*—York, 513, 574
- Priors*—York, 506, 513
- Hospitals*—York, 487, 514; Scarborough, 709
- Mountains in Yorkshire—Roseberry Topping, 3, 4; Black Hamilton, 3, 10; Botton Head, Nine Standards, Shunner Fell, Water Cragg, &c., 3; Stow Brow, 4; Howardian Hills, 4; Pennygant, Warnside, or Whernside, and Ingleborough, 5, 17
- Multangular Tower at York, 338
- Murray, Lindley, 671
- Nennius, the historian, 289
- Newcastle, Earl of, created a Marquis, 238
- Nice and Sardica, Councils of, 77
- Nidd, River, 23
- Norman Period, 107
- Northern Assize Circuit, 25
- North of England divided into Shires, &c., 101, 118
- Northallerton burnt by the Scots, 135
- North Riding—Situation and extent, 2; principal towns, 3; climate, 5; soil, 5; agricultural and woodlands, 6; cattle, sheep, and horses, 8; minerals and lead mines, 9; longevity of its inhabitants, 9.
- Northumbria, Earls of, 102
- Northumberland, Earl of, murdered, 178
- Northumbrian Kingdom, 81; is conquered by the Danes, 97; extinction of the Northumbrian dynasty, 100; is divided into shires, 118
- Octavius crowned at York, 60
- Oswald's Cross, 86
- Onse, River, 20; etymology of, 290
- Pagan Temple profaned by Coifi, 83
- Pall, or Pallium, of the Archbishops, 389
- Parial, tribe of, 42
- Parliament first held in York, 125; derivation of the name, 125; other early Parliaments, 131, 132, 138, 142
- Parson, meaning of the name, 483
- Paulinus created Archbishop of York, 80



- Paulinus, see St. Paulinus**  
**Penda, King of Mercia, 85**  
**Pentateuch, the, 671**  
**Pestilence, called the "Black Death," 143**  
**Petuaria and Portus Felix (British Towns), 42**  
**Pews in Churches, 520**  
**Phœnician Merchants visit the Tin Islands, 38**  
**Picts and Scots, 61**  
**Pilgrimage of Grace, insurrection, 183**  
**Plague, the, 145, 209, 261**  
**Pedestrianism extraordinary, 680**  
**Plays, sacred, 593**  
**Pope Adrian sends Legates to England, in A.D. 785, 92**  
**Population of England armed, 134**  
**Population of several towns in the reign of Edward III., 143**  
**Population, &c., of Yorkshire, 2**  
**Ports of Yorkshire, 18**  
**Price of provisions in the reign of Edward II., 134**  
**Price of provisions in the reign of Richard III., 168**  
**Price of provisions in 1533, 178**  
**Price of provisions in 1644, 242**  
**Prince Charles Stuart, the Pretender, 267**  
**Prince Rupert, 241**  
**Post Office Statistics, 628**  
**Prince William de Hatfield, 469**  
**Printing Press, the first at York, 177**  
**Protestants and Catholics executed for heresy, 189**  
**Providential escapes, 696**  
**Puritans, the, 200**  
  
**Quakers, origin of the name, 568**  
**Quarter Sessions, where held, 26**  
**Queen Anne's Bounty, 380**  
**Queen Elizabeth's accession, 199; her death, 204**  
**Queen Henrietta, 237; her death, 259**  
**Queen Margaret's adherence to her party, 160; her captivity and death, 166**  
**Queen Mary's accession, 196; her marriage, 197; her death, 199**  
**Queen Victoria's visits to York, 276; to Kingston-upon-Hull, 281**  
  
**Railways of Yorkshire, 23, 648**  
**Ravenspurne, Bolingbroke lands at, 145; Edward IV. debarks at, 165**  
**Rebellion, the, of 1745, 267**  
**Rebellion in Yorkshire, 171**  
**Rebellion of Wyat, 196**  
**Rectories, meaning of, 380**  
  
**Reformatory Institutions, 654**  
**Reformation in Religion, 179; new liturgy compiled, 193**  
**Reform Bill, effects of, in Yorkshire, 25**  
**Religious edifices profaned during the Commonwealth, 458**  
**Religious Houses, 24; suppression of, 179, 193**  
**Richmond, Earl of, lands at Milford-Haven, 169**  
**Riding, origin of the term, 114**  
**Rivers of Yorkshire, 19 to 23**  
**Rollrich Stones, 48**  
**Roman Invasion, 43**  
**Roman Period, 52**  
**Roman Colonies, Stipendiary Towns, Latin Cities, 62**  
**Roman government of Britain, 61**  
**Romans, the, relinquish Britain, 61**  
**Roman modes of sepulture, 57, 298**  
**Roman sepulchral and other remains, 24, 292**  
**Roman Roads, 64 to 67**  
**Roman Stations, 67, 83**  
**Roman Encampments, 68**  
**Roseberry Topping, 4**  
  
**Sanctuaries abolished, 195**  
**Sanctuary, the privilege of, 361**  
**Savings' Banks, capital deposited in them, in 1856, 728**  
**Saxons, the—their origin, manners, &c., 68; invited to Britain by Vortigern, 69; their conquest of the Britons, 72; their religion, 73; titles of honour, 115; names of divisions of land, 114.**  
**Saxon Heptarchy, 73; how composed, 74; extinction of, 93**  
**Saxon Kings—Ida, Ella or Alla, Ethelfrid, and Edwin, 81; Oswald, 85; Oswy, Oswin, and Oswio, 87; Alchfrid, 89; Egfrid, 90; Aldfrid, 91; Osred, Ceonred, Cœlwulf, 91; Oswulf, Mol-Edilwold; Alchred, Alfwold, and Ethelbred, 92; Osbald, Eardulf, and Egbert, 93; Osbert and Ella, 94; Egbert, 97**  
**Saxon Remains at York, 310**  
**Scarborough burnt by the Norwegians, 104**  
**Scarborough besieged by the nobles, 133; burnt by the Scots, 135**  
**Scarborough Castle, attempt to seize it, 197**  
**Scarborough, history of, 672**  
**Scarborough Warning, 197, 687. (For the meaning of the expression, see the Additions, &c., at page xvi.)**  
**Scots pass from Ireland to Scotland, 38**

- Scotland, ancient inhabitants of, 61  
 Scots, their barbarous invasions, 122  
 Scottish Regalia removed to England, 131  
 Scottish League and Covenant, 217  
 Scrope's, Archbishop, rebellion, 146; his execution, 147  
 Sea coast of North and East Ridings, 16  
 Seamer, insurrection at, 104  
 Sepulchral (called Druids') Circles, 49  
 Severus, Emperor, arrives in Britain—his conquests and death, 56; funeral obsequies at York, 57  
 Severus Hill, near York, 57  
 Ship-money, tax imposed, 217  
 Sieges—Portsmouth, 232; Hull, 239; York commences, 240; ends, 251, Pontefract, 252; Sheffield, 254; Scarborough, 254; Bolton, Skipton, and Helmsley, 255; Carlisle, 268  
 Simnel, Lambert, an impostor, is proclaimed King in Dublin, 171  
 Sistantii, tribe of, 42  
 Siward, Earl of Northumbria, 102  
 Sixth Conquering Legion, 53  
 Skipton burnt by the Scots, 135  
 Skirlaw, Bishop of Durham, 411  
 Spencer, Hugh de, favourite of Edward, III., 137  
 Spring tides at Hull, 20  
 Spurn Promontory or Point, 10  
 St. Ceadda, or Chad, Archbishop of York, 390  
 St. Edward the Confessor, 102  
 St. Edwin (King), St. Ethelburge (Queen) 82, 388, 390  
 St. John of Beverley, 394  
 St. Oswald (King), 85  
 St. Oswald, Archbishop of York, 398  
 St. Paulinus, Archbishop of York, 83, 388  
 St. Thomas of Canterbury—ridiculous trial of, 187  
 St. Wilfrid, Archbishop of York, 89, 391  
 St. William, Archbishop of York, 399  
 Staith, origin of the name, 370  
 Sterne, Laurence, 667  
 Stonehenge on Salisbury Plain, 49  
 Stoupe Brow, or Stow Brow, 4  
 Street, derivation of the word, 672  
 Stuarts, the last of the, 415  
 Sunk Island recovered from the Humber, 11, 16  
 Swale, River, 19; St. Paulinus baptizes immense numbers in it, 19; is called the Jordan of England, 80  
 Sweating Sickness, 195  
 Sweyn's Danish fleet enters the Humber, 101  
 Synods held in Northumbria, (A.D. 785) 92  
 Tees, River, 19  
 Temple of Bellona at York, 292, 416  
 Temple of Serapis at York, 295  
 Theodorus, Archbishop of Britain, 90  
 Thirty-nine Articles, the, published, 200  
 Thornton Force and Sear, 25  
 Thrave, meaning of, 162  
 Thurston, Archbishop of York, 123  
 Tithings, why named, 114  
 Tithes, origin of, 378  
 Tonnage and Poundage levied, 214  
 Tosti, Earl of Northumbria, 102  
 Tosti's fleet enters the Humber, 103  
 Tournaments at York, 131, 168  
 Tournament between two English and two foreign Knights, 148  
 Turpin, the highwayman, 513  
 Tyler's, Wat, rebellion, 144  
 Ure, or Yore, River, 19  
 Valor Ecclesiasticus, or Liber Regis (King's Books), 518  
 Vales of York, Derwent, Cleveland, &c., 4  
 Vicarages, origin of, 379  
 Voluntii, tribe of, 42  
 Vortimer defeats the Saxons, 70  
 Wade's Causeway, 66  
 Wages of Workmen in the 14th century, 411  
 Walling Fen and Bishop-soil commons, 14  
 Wall of Antoninus, or Graham's Dyke, 68  
 Waltheof, Earl of Northumbria, 102, 120  
 Wapentake, origin of the term, 114  
 Warbeck, Perkin, an impostor, 174; is proclaimed King, by the title of Richard IV., 175; and is executed for treason, 176  
 Warp Land, 15  
 Warwick, the great Earl of, 162, 165  
 Wars of the Roses, 150  
 War, Great Civil, cause and progress of, 211 to 258  
 Wastes of Yorkshire, 18  
 Waterfalls of Yorkshire, 25  
 Watling Street (Roman Road), 65  
 Wayland Smith's Cave, 47  
 Weathercote Cave, 25  
 Wesley, Rev. John, 547  
 West Riding—situation and principal towns of, 17; soil, minerals, and manufactures, 18  
 Western Moorlands, 5  
 Winter Solstice—a Druidical festival, 41

- Wharfe, River, 22  
 William Duke of Normandy determines to invade England, 103; prepares to do so, 107; is surnamed the Conqueror, 110; his harsh treatment of the English, 112  
 Wolds of Yorkshire, 11; soil of, 12; rabbit-warrens and sheep-walks, 14  
 Wold district, extent of, 11  
 Yordas Cave, 75  
 Yorkshire—situation and Ridings of, 1; area and population of, 2; Wolds and Moorlands of, 3; Carrs and Levels of, 12; agriculture of, 13; wastes of, 18; ports of, 18; commerce of, 18; geology of, 26; general history of, 36; how divided after the Conquest, 118; is famed for its battle fields, 213  
 Yorkshire, Earl of, 283  
 Yorkshire Agricultural Society, 15  
 Yorkshire Witch, the 274  
 Yorkshire, places in, that have given title to Peers, or have been the capital residences of Barons, 286  
 York, Dukes of, 283  
 York, Earl of, 288  
 Yule log, the origin of, 41

## The City of York.

PAGE	PAGE
York becomes the Roman Station, <i>Eboracum</i> .....	First English Parliament held here .....
53	125, 319
Sixth Conquering Legion .....	The City risen to eminence .....
53, 63	126
City besieged by the Britons .....	Great massacre of the Jews ....
56	126, 319
Emperor Severus resides at York ..	Their horrid fate at York .....
56	127
His death and funeral obsequies ..	Temporal and spiritual power united
57, 292	129
Caracalla murders Geta and his friends .....	King John's visit .....
58	129
Carausius, a Briton, proclaimed Emperor, and his murder .....	Henry III. attends a convocation, and Alexander I. of Scotland is married here.....
58	130
Death of the Emperor Constantius .	Alexander II. of Scotland married here .....
59	130
Constantine the Great—arrives, assumes the imperial purple at York, and embraces Christianity .....	Visit of Edward I. ....
60	131
York the capital of Deira.....	York a maritime town.....
71	132
King Arthur celebrates the first Christmas festival at York ....	Parliaments held here, 131, 132, 138,
77, 312	142
York the capital of Northumbria ..	Suburbs of the City burnt by the Scotch .....
81	136
King Edwin baptized at York ....	Several Barons executed at York ..
84	138
York seized by the Danes, and horrible sufferings of the inhabitants	Court and camp of Edward III. at York .....
96	140
Seward, Earl of Northumbria, dies at York .....	His marriage at York .....
102	141
The City taken by the Norwegians	Prince Wm. de Hatfield buried at York .....
104	143
Is the rallying point of the North-umbers .....	Dreadful affray with the Hainaulters
111	140
The citizens submit to William the Conqueror .....	Richard II. confers the title of <i>Lord Mayor</i> , and presents the <i>Mace</i> and <i>Cap of Maintenance</i> .....
119	145
City re-taken by the English and Danes, and partly burnt by accident	Dreadful pestilence .....
119	145
Is besieged and burnt by the Conqueror .....	Courts removed from London to York .....
121	132, 135
Is again burnt (accidentally) in 1137	Henry IV. visits the City of York ..
122	148
	Henry V.'s visit .....
	149
	Edward IV. visits York .....
	159

PAGE	PAGE		
Is crowned here .....	161	Etymology of the name .....	290
Is again at York .....	166	Resemblance of York to Rome .....	291
Prince Edward knighted here .....	168	Is the seat of the Roman Emperors .....	292
Henry VII. at York .....	170	Temple of Bellona .....	292
Rebels attempt to seize him .....	172	Roman Remains of sepulchres, tessellated pavements, altars, ware, &c. ....	292
Visit of the Princess Margaret .....	176	Temple of Serapis .....	295
York one of the staple towns .....	177	Roman burial place .....	298
Churches of York in the time of Henry V. ....	180	Saxon remains .....	310
Visit of Henry VIII. ....	186	Festival of Christmas first held at York .....	311
Execution of the Earl of Northumberland and others .....	203	Description of York in Domesday ..	313
Visits of James VI. ....	206, 210	Houses and population of York in the time of Edward the Confessor ..	318
Visits of his Queen and children ..	209	Great Council of the North .....	319, 343
The Plague at York .....	209	Thanksgiving and illuminations for peace .....	320
Horse race on the river Ouse .....	210	<i>Topography of the City of York</i> .....	320
Visits of Charles I. ....	210, 218	Situation of the City .....	321
He holds a Council at the Deanery ..	221	Description of the fortifications .....	321
Fixes his head-quarters here .....	224	Leland's description of York .....	323
Great meeting on Heworth Moor ..	232	Restoration of the walls .....	323
Queen Henrietta at York .....	238	Circumference of the ramparts .....	327
Siege of York commences .....	240	Entrance gates or Bars .....	327
St. Mary's Tower .....	241, 337, 479	Micklegate Bar, 327; Bootham Bar, 329; Monk Bar, 330; Walmgate Bar and Barbican, 330; Fishergate Bar and Postern, 331; the other Posterns .....	332
Surrender of the City .....	250	Lendal Tower .....	332
Is dismantled of its garrison .....	257	Roman Multangular Tower, and Roman Wall .....	333
Cromwell's visit .....	259	Red Tower .....	336
Old Jenkins at York Assizes .....	259	Old Baile Hill .....	337, 362
Charles II. proclaimed, and Cromwell's effigy burnt at York .....	260, 261	York Castle .....	337, 601
Visit of James, Duke of York .....	261	Clifford's Tower .....	338
Lamps first hung up here .....	263	Site of the Prætorium Palace .....	343
Outrages on the Catholics, Wm. and Mary proclaimed, overflow of the Ouse and a great fire at York ..	265, 266	The Manor Palace .....	343
Great drought here .....	266	Site of Percy's Inn .....	346
Visit of the Prince of Hesse .....	268	Old Archbishopal Palace .....	347, 460
Visit of the Duke of Cumberland ..	268, 349	Lardiner Hall and Duke's Hall .....	347
Visit of the King of Denmark .....	270	Mulberry, or Mulbrai, Hall .....	349
Visit of the Duke of York .....	270	The George Inn .....	349
Corps of volunteers embodied .....	272	The Castle Mills .....	351
Marquis of Rockingham's funeral ..	272	Names of Streets, derivation of .....	352
Prince of Wales and Duke of York at York races .....	273	Abbot of St. Mary's fair .....	354
Visit of Charles James Fox .....	273	Jews numerous in York .....	359
Visit of Prince William Frederick of Glo'ster and the Earl St. Vincent ..	274	The "Railway King," former residence of .....	362
Mary Bateman, the "Yorkshire Witch" .....	274	A street named after him .....	366
Visit of the Duke of Sussex .....	275	First Coffee House in York .....	364
The Queen, Prince Albert, the Duke of Cambridge, &c., at York .....	276	The New Walk .....	367
Royal Agricultural Society's Show ..	276	Suburbs and Bridges of York .....	368
Great banquet at Guild Hall .....	276	Ouse Bridge .....	368
Visit of the Queen and Royal family ..	279	St. William's Chapel .....	369
York, Earl and Dukes of .....	283	Mortality, Cholera .....	372
Origin of the City of York .....	289		

PAGE		PAGE
372	Sanitary measures .....	Hospital of St. Nicholas .....
373	Drainage of the Foss Islands.....	Hospital of St. Magdalen .....
374	Abolition of intramural interment..	Hospital of St. Anthony .....
375	<i>Ecclesiastical affairs</i> .....	St. Anthony's Hall .....
376	Dispute about the Primacy.....	Various religious guilds .....
376	Income of Bishops .....	<i>Churches of York</i> .....
377	Dean and Chapter of York .....	All Saints' Church, North St .....
378	Arms of the Cathedral.....	All Saints, Pavement, 523; Church
383	List of the Archbishops .....	of St. Crux, 524; of St. Cuthbert,
386	List of the Deans .....	526; of St. Dennis, 528; of St.
387	Annals of the Archbishops .....	Olave, 530; of St. Helen, Stone-
400	St. William's entry into York—acci-	gate, 532; of St. John, 534; of St.
	dent on Ouse Bridge .....	Lawrence, 535; of St. Margaret,
	Great feast in honour of Archbishop	537; of St. Martin, Coney St., 539;
404	Neville's enthronization .....	of St. Martin, Micklegate, 543; of
405	Cardinal Wolsey .....	St. Mary Bishophill Senior, 545;
411	Anecdote of Archbishop Mountain..	of St. Mary Bishophill Junior, 546;
415	The Cardinal of York .....	of St. Mary, Castlegate, 547; of St.
415	The <i>Cathedral</i> , or <i>Minster</i> .....	Michael-le-Belfrey, 549; of St. Mi-
418	The edifice rebuilt .....	chael, Low Ousegate, 552; of St.
419	Saxon, Norman, and Gothic archi-	Samson, 553; of St. Saviour, 555;
	tecture .....	of the Holy Trinity, King's Sq.,
424	Dates of the erection of the <i>Minster</i>	556; of the Holy Trinity, Mickle-
425	Chantries in the <i>Minster</i> .....	gate, 557; of the Holy Trinity,
426	<i>Minster</i> burnt by Jonathan Martin	Goodramgate, 560; of St. Maurice,
429	Another fire in the <i>Minster</i> .....	561; of St. Paul, 562; and of St.
428	Musical Festivals .....	Thomas, 562
430	Great bell, "Peter of York" .....	Dissenting Chapels .....
432	Description of the <i>Minster</i> .....	Catholics .....
446	The Ladye Chapelle.....	Catholic Church of St. George ....
451	Relics .....	Catholic fraternities.....
454	The stained glass windows .....	Convent of St. Mary.....
459	Dimensions of the <i>Minster</i> .....	<i>Public Schools</i> .—St. Peter's, 575;
459	Comparative dimensions of the prin-	Holgate's, 577; Training Institu-
	cipal Cathedrals .....	tion, 577; Yeoman, 578; School
459	The monuments .....	of Art, 579; Wilberforce School
469	Chapter House, description of .....	for the Blind, 581; Blue Coat, 582;
473	Dignitaries, &c., of the Cathedral ..	Spinning, 583; Wilson's Charity,
474	Comparative capacity for accommo-	584; Ragged, 584; Dodsworth's,
	dation of the largest Churches in	584; Haughton's, 585; National
474	Europe .....	Schools, 585; British, 586; Wes-
475	<i>Minster Yard</i> .....	leyan, 586; Independent, 587; St.
476	<i>Minster Library</i> .....	George's Catholic, 587; Convent
479	Chapel of the Holy Sepulchre ....	Schools, 587; Sunday Schools,
481	Liberty of St. Peter .....	588.
483	St. William's College .....	<i>Alms-houses, or Hospitals</i> :—Agar's
484	The Bedern .....	Barstow's and St. Catherine's, 589;
487	St. Leonard's Hospital .....	Colton's and Harrison's, 589;
491	St. Mary's Abbey .....	Hewley's and Ingram's, 590; Ma-
506	Holy Trinity Priory .....	son's, Maison Dieu, and Middle-
508	Dominican Friary .....	ton's, 591; Merchant Tailor's, and
508	Franciscan Friary.....	Old Maid's, 592; St. Thomas's,
509	Augustinian Friary .....	592; Thompson's and Trinity
510	Carmelite Friary .....	Hospitals, 595; Watter's and Wil-
513	Benedictine Nunnery .....	son's, 596; and Winterskelf's, 597.
513	St. Andrew's Priory .....	Population, &c., of York .....
		597

	PAGE		PAGE
Commerce, Trade, &c .....	599	Pauper Lunatic Asylum .....	635
Markets, Fairs, &c .....	601	Yorkshire Philosophical Society ..	636
Corporation of York .....	604	The Museum and its contents .....	637
Franchise .....	609	British Association .....	640
Freemen's Strays .....	610	York Institute .....	644
York Tyburn .....	610	Yorkshire Architectural Society....	645
Courts of Justice .....	611	Yorkshire Naturalists' Club .....	645
Guild Hall .....	612	Yorkshire Antiquarian Club .....	646
Mansion House .....	616	Subscription and select libraries ..	646
The Judge's Lodgings .....	618	News Rooms .....	647
Assembly Rooms .....	619	Newspapers .....	648
Festival Concert Room .....	621	Railways .....	648
Theatre Royal .....	622	Gas and Water Works .....	650, 651
Yorkshire Club House .....	623	Public Baths .....	652
The De Grey Rooms .....	623	Banks, Barracks, &c .....	652
County Gaol (York Castle) .....	623	York Poor Law Union .....	653
City House of Correction .....	626	Penitentiary and City Mission .....	654
Post Office .....	627	Reformatory Schools .....	654
Merchants' Hall .....	628	Model Lodging House .....	656
Merchant Tailors' and other Halls..	629	Cemetery .....	657
York County Hospital .....	630	Cholera Burial Ground .....	657
Other Medical Institutions .....	631	Racecourse (Knavesmire) .....	658
York Lunatic Asylum .....	632	Eminent Men connected with York	661
Retreat Lunatic Asylum .....	634		

## Borough of Scarborough.

Its probable occupation by the Romans .....	672	Siege of the Castle in 1648 .....	693
The Saxon origin of the name .....	674	The articles of rendition .....	694
The town burnt and plundered by Tosti .....	675	Captain Brown Bushell .....	696
Manor of Walsgrif (Falsgrave) .....	675	Two providential escapes .....	696
Early charters granted .....	676	George Fox imprisoned here .....	697
Leland's description of Scarbro' .....	677	The Barracks erected .....	697
Boundaries of the old town .....	678	Description of the present ruins of the Castle .....	699
Bland's Cliff formed .....	678	Ancient Chapel in the Castle .....	700
Charnell Garth .....	678, 708	Cistercian Abbey and Rectory .....	702, 745
Mill Beck, the ancient fosse .....	679	Religious Houses .....	704
Scarborough Castle .....	680	Church of St. Sepulchre .....	705
Its early Governors .....	683, 697	St. Nicholas's Hospital and Church ..	709
Visits of Kings John and Edw. I. ..	683	St. Thomas's Hospital and Church ..	710
The town burnt by the Scotch .....	684	Knights Hospitallers .....	711
The Castle besieged .....	686	<i>Topography</i> :—	
Visit of Richard III. .....	686	Situation and description .....	711
The Castle taken by stratagem .....	687	Discovery of the Spa .....	714
The town stormed by the Parliamentarians .....	687	Dickey Dickinson .....	715
Siege of the Castle in 1644 .....	688	Spa Saloon erected .....	716
Terms of its surrender .....	690	The Cliff Bridge .....	717
Sir Hugh Cholmley .....	692	Analysis of the Spa water .....	718
		Ports, Piers, and Harbour .....	719
		White Nab Quarry .....	721

	PAGE		PAGE
Shipping, &c.....	722	Chapels .....	748
Life Boat .....	723	Catholics .....	749
Carnelian Bay .....	723	Catholic Church of St. Peter .....	750
Population, Trade, &c.....	724	Schools .....	751
Markets and Fairs .....	725	Hospitals and Almshouses .....	753
The ancient Mart.....	725	Charitable Institutions .....	755
Disputes about Scarborough and Sea-		Town Hall.....	756
mer Markets .....	726	Newborough Bar .....	757
Ancient Market Cross .....	727	Museum.....	757
Tax called Gablage .....	728	Odd Fellows' Hall .....	759
Civil Government.....	728	Public Market Hall .....	759
Gallows Close .....	729	Theatre and Savings' Bank.....	760
The Mayor tossed in a blanket ....	729	Philosophical and Archæological So-	
The present Corporation.....	731	ciety .....	761
Courts, Franchise, &c.....	732	Mechanics' Institute .....	761
Miscellaneous Mems. ....	734	Libraries, News Rooms, &c. ....	762
Dreadful Fire at Scarbro' .....	735	Temperance Societies .....	762
Earl of Scarborough.....	735	Cemetery .....	762
St. Mary's Church .....	736	Longevity .....	763
Chantries in St. Mary's .....	738	Oliver's Mount .....	764
Its restoration .....	740	The Mere and the Plantation.....	764-5
Christ Church .....	746	Eminent Men .....	765
St. Thomas's Church .....	747	Falsgrave Township.....	767
The Bar Church .....	747		

## ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

---

- Page 35, line 2 from the foot, for chalk-oolite, read *chalk and oolite* (they are distinct formations.)
- „ 25, line 8, add at the foot of the page the following note to the words, “Petrifying Well:”—This well is vulgarly called a *Petrifying Well*, but no petrification (or permeation of matter through any subject) takes place there. It is simply *incrustation* of mineral matter held in solution by the water at Knaresborough.
- „ 178, line 9, foot note to the word “Bible:”—Stephen Langton, the Pope's Legate, and Archbishop of Canterbury, is said to be the first who divided the Bible into chapters and verses.
- „ 197 and 687, add the following foot note to the proverbial expression, “Scarborough Warning,” &c.—A *Scarborough Warning*, according to Fuller, was no warning at all; but a sudden surprise when a mischief is fit before it be suspected. He adds, from Godwin's Annals, that this proverb took its origin from Mr. Stafford's attempt to seize Scarborough Castle, before the townsmen had the least notice of his approach.
- „ 258, line 13 from the foot, for was abolished, read *temporarily abolished*.
- „ 276, lines 4 and 5, for had in each line, read *has*.
- „ 674, line 20, for Knut and Gorm, read *Knut and Harald, sons of Gorm*; and add as a foot note—Before the year 930, when Gorm, King of Denmark, died.
- „ 697, line 14, *add*—In 1832, Lieut.-Col. James Grant, late 23rd Foot, was Governor of Scarborough Castle.



## DESCRIPTION OF YORKSHIRE.

---

THE County of York is situated nearly in the centre of the Kingdom, and is bounded on the N.E. and E. by the German Ocean; on the S. by the rivers Humber and Trent, which separate it from Lincolnshire, and by the counties of Nottingham, Derby, and Chester; on the W. by Lancashire; on the N.W. by Westmorland; and on the N. by Durham. The general form of the County is that of an irregular quadrangle, with two projecting points at its N.W. and S.E. angles; and its extreme points lie between the parallels of 53 deg. 18 min. and 54 deg. 40 min. N. latitude, and between 2 deg. 40 min. W., and 0 deg. 10 min. E. longitude of the meridian of Greenwich. The circuit of the County is about 460 miles; its length from east to west is 110 miles; and its breadth from north to south is 90 miles. It extends in its longest part about 130 miles, from Spurn Head, at the mouth of the Humber, to Lune Forest, where it joins Durham and Westmorland, these being its south-eastern and north-western extremities.

At an early period of the Saxon dominions it was divided into three grand districts called *Ridings*, which, in reference to their relative positions with respect to each other, and to the City of York, are termed East, West, and North Ridings. The North Riding is sub-divided into twelve Wapentakes, including the Liberty of Whitby Strand. The West Riding, the largest of the three divisions, is in nine sub-divisions, including the Ainsty Wapentake, which was formerly the County of the City of York, but was annexed to the West Riding in the year 1836; and the East Riding, the smallest, has seven Wapentakes. Each of the three Ridings has a separate Lieutenantcy, Magistracy, Clerk of the Peace, Treasurer, and other public officers, and courts; but all of them are amenable to the superior courts held for the whole County at York Castle, which stands within the bounds of the City of York. Though the latter place is a County of itself, holding separate courts of gaol delivery,

&c., the electors of the City unite with the North Riding in the election of *Knights of the Shire*.

This great and noble maritime County is by far the largest, and in the number and wealth of its inhabitants, as well as in its natural and artificial productions, the most considerable and important Shire in the Kingdom. Its area, according to the latest Parliamentary Report, is 5,983 square miles, or, 3,829,286 statute acres.\* The population of the County in 1851 was 1,797,995 souls; of which number 892,749 were males, and 905,246 females.† It contains about 620 parishes, comprising about 5000 villages and hamlets; 1 archiepiscopal City (York); 1 episcopal City (Ripon); 13 Corporate towns; 17 Parliamentary Boroughs; and 59 market towns. It returns 37 Members to Parliament, and is divided into 50 Poor Law Unions. It is in the *Northern Circuit*; in the archiepiscopal province of York; and in the dioceses of York and Ripon. The whole of the North and East Ridings and a great part of the West Riding, is chiefly dependent on agriculture; but the latter division is distinguished for extensive manufactures of woollen cloth, worsted stuff, cutlery, and other hardware.

The *North Riding*, which comprehends the whole of the north side of the County, is of an irregular oblong figure, from 70 to 83 miles in length from E. to W., and varying from 25 to 47 miles in breadth from N. to S. It lies between the parallels of 53 deg. 57 min. and 54 deg. 38 min. N. latitude, and between 0 deg. 19 min. and 2 deg. 22 min. W. longitude from Greenwich. It extends westward from the ocean to the confines of Westmorland,

\* *The area of each division of Yorkshire, and density, in 1851.*

DIVISIONS.	Area in Square Miles.	Area in Statute Acres.	Persons to a Square Mile.	Acres to a Person.	Inhabited Houses to a Square Mile.	Persons to a House.
YORK CITY .....	4	2,720	8,542	0.7	1,665	5.1
EAST RIDING .....	1,201	768,419	182	3.5	37	4.9
NORTH RIDING .....	2,109	1,350,121	102	6.3	21	4.8
WEST RIDING .....	2,669	1,708,026	496	1.3	99	5.0

+ *Population of each division of Yorkshire, as enumerated at each Census from 1801 to 1851 inclusive; also, increase of population per cent. in the half century.*

DIVISIONS.	YEARS.						Increase of Population per cent. in 50 years.
	1801.	1811.	1821.	1831.	1841.	1851.	
YORK CITY.....	16,846	19,099	21,711	26,260	28,842	36,303	116
EAST RIDING....	111,192	133,975	154,643	168,891	194,936	220,983	97
NORTH RIDING..	158,927	170,127	188,178	192,206	204,701	215,214	35
WEST RIDING ..	572,168	662,875	809,363	984,609	1,163,580	1,325,495	132

and is bounded on the N. by the river Tees, which separates it from the County of Durham; on the N.E. and E. by the North Sea; on the S.E. by the East Riding; on the S. by the river Ouse and the West Riding; and on the W. by the County of Westmorland.

The Riding is divided into twelve Wapentakes, and contains about 220 parishes, and 580 townships. The principal towns are Northallerton, Scarborough, Whitby, Pickering, Malton, Yarm, Stokesley, Guisborough, Middlesborough, Redcar, Kirbymoorside, Helmsley, Thirsk, Richmond, Bedale, Masham, Middleham, Leybourn, Askrigg, and Hawes. The City of York is attached to the North Riding in the election of two Knights of the Shire. The gaol, house of correction, and the principal courts and offices of the Riding, are situated at its capital—Northallerton; and its six Parliamentary Boroughs are Malton, Richmond, Scarborough, Thirsk, Northallerton, and Whitby. More than 400,000 acres of this Riding are uncultivated hills, fells, and moors, some of which rise to the height of from 1,000 feet to more than 2,000 feet above the level of the sea. The highest of the mountains are Roseberry Topping, 1,022, or according to some, 1,488 feet; Black Hamilton, 1,246 feet; Botton Head, near Stokesley, 1,485 feet; Nine Standards, on the borders of Westmorland, 2,136 feet; Water Crag, 2,180 feet; and Shunner Fell, 2,329 feet above the sea.\* The three latter are at the west end of the Riding.

Mr. Tuke, who surveyed the North Riding in the early part of the present century, estimated its contents at 1,311,187 acres; of which about 442,505 were then, and are still, mostly uncultivated moors. He divided the Riding into six districts, as follows:—

	Cultivated acres.	Uncultivated acres.
The Coast .....	64,920	
Cleveland.....	70,444	
Vale of York, Howardian Hills, &c.....	441,386	15,000
Ryedale, with the East and West Marishes .....	100,437	3,435
Eastern Moorlands .....	102,000	196,625
Western Moorlands .....	90,000	226,940
<b>TOTAL .. .. .</b>	<b>869,187</b>	<b>442,000</b>

Of the uncultivated lands, about 136,625 acres in the Eastern Moorlands, and 76,940 acres in the Western Moorlands, are incapable of improvement except by planting; but a great part of the remainder might be converted into arable or pasture land.

\* Colonel Mudge's Trigonometrical Survey.

Along the coast from Scarborough nearly to the mouth of the Tees, the face of the country is hilly and bold, the cliffs overhanging the beach being generally from 60 to 150 feet high, and in some places still higher, as at Stoupe Brow, or *Stow Brow*, which rises 190 feet above Robin Hood's Bay. The moors in the back ground rise to an altitude of about 1,000 feet, and the gradual slope from the moors to the sea renders the climate cold and stormy.

The *Eastern Moorlands*, which bound the narrow strip of coast land between Scarborough and Whitby, is a wild and mountainous district, about thirty miles in length from east to west, and twenty in breadth from north to south, and is intersected by several beautiful and fertile dales, some of which are extensive. The most remarkable object in the topography of these wilds is the singular peaked mountain called *Roseberry Topping*, which is situated at the north-west angle of the Eastern Moorlands, near the village of Newton, about one mile to the east of the road from Guisborough to Stokesley, and which will be described in the history of the parish to which it belongs.

At the west end of the East Moorlands, about three miles west of Helmsley, is a lofty range of hills called *Black* or *Bleak Hambleton* or *Hamilton*. This range, which has, at a distance, the appearance of but one elevation, rises between the open and luxuriant Vale of De Mowbray, and the romantic Ryedale, and commands from its summits varied and extensive prospects, in which are seen the towns of Northallerton, Thirsk, Kirbymoorside, Helmsley, the Catholic College of Ampleforth, the ancient Castle of Gilling, and the picturesque remains of the Abbeys of Byland and Rievaulx.

The northern heights of the East Moorlands are known as the *Cleveland Hills*; and the fine fertile tract which lies between them and the river Tees, is called the *Vale of Cleveland*. From the tenacity of its clays, or from its craggy cliffs, *Cleveland* is supposed to derive its name. The old local distich, "Cleveland in the clay brings us two soles and carries one away," alludes to the cleaving of the clays to the shoes of the traveller. The extensive *Vale of York*, which, according to Mr. Tuke, reached from the border of the Tees to the southern confines of the County, by Selby, Thorne, and Doncaster, has its northern portion in this Riding. It is bounded on each side by the Eastern and Western Moorlands, and has a gentle slope from the Tees southward as far as York, where it sinks into a perfect flat; not however before its ordinarily level surface is broken by several bold swells. A range of Highlands, called the *Howardian Hills*, separates this vale from *Ryedale*. The latter dale, and the *East* and *West Marishes*, form an exten-

sive level between the Eastern Moorlands and the river Derwent. This level, which consists of the Vales of Rye and Derwent, extends under the southern margin of the Eastern Moorlands from Helmsley to Scarborough and Filey. The Marishes are separated from Ryedale by the Pickering Beck.

*The Western Moorlands* lie to the west of the Vale of York, and extend westward from Richmond, Bedale, and Masham, to the borders of Westmorland and the County of Durham. These, which are of far greater elevation than the East Moorlands, form part of the mountainous range which terminates the West Riding, near the lofty mountains of Wharfedale, Ingleborough, and Pennigant, each rising to nearly 2,500 feet above the level of the sea. Though these moorlands are much higher than those at the east end of the Riding, they are generally more fertile than the latter; and among them are some of the richest valleys in England. There are several extensive *Dales* in the North Riding. *Wensleydale*, which is one of them, is watered by the serpentine stream of the Ure; *Swaledale* ranks next to it in extent, and both of these dales are very beautiful and romantic. *Teesdale* is of a similar character, and like the two former ones, has several steep acclivities and beautiful cascades. The smaller dales are very numerous, and are generally very fertile.

The *Climate* of the North Riding is various. On the coast it is cold; in the Vale of York the air is mild and temperate, except near the moors. The Howardian Hills are cold; the great altitude of the East Moorlands render their climate very cold, but the air of the West Moorlands is much colder, though the latter are more favourable to vegetation than the former, owing to their calcareous composition. Cleveland being exposed to the cold winds from the moorlands and the sea, has a climate somewhat severe.

*The Soil* along the coast consists of a strong brownish clay and loam. The district of Cleveland has mostly a strong clayey soil; but in some places a clayey loam prevails, and in others a fine red sandy soil. This is generally a fertile and well cultivated vale. On the East Moorlands, near the old enclosures, are some considerable tracts of loamy and sandy soils, producing furze, fern, thistles, and coarse grass. The subsoil is various, and the basis of the whole district is freestone. The surface of some of the higher hills is entirely covered with large masses of freestone; in other places are extensive morasses and peat bogs, very deep, frequently not passable, and highly dangerous. These morasses produce ling, and occasionally bent and rushes. The Hamilton Hills, which form the western end of these wastes, are, however, very different, having generally a fine loamy soil on a

limestone rock, which produces great quantities of coarse grass and bent, in some places intermixed with ling. Some of the mountains on the western side of the country are covered with fine sweet grass, and others with extensive tracts of bent. In the Vale of York, the level land near the Tees consists chiefly of a rich gravelly loam; upon the high grounds on the west side of the road from Catterick to Pierce Bridge, the soil is mostly strong, and generally fertile, but in some places cold and springy. Fine hazel loam is also occasionally met with. On the east side of the road from Greta Bridge to Catterick is much fine gravelly soil, with a considerable quantity of clay, and some peat; and to the north of Richmond is a mixed loamy soil, resting on lime or freestone; the latter excellent for building. On the east side of the Catterick and Pierce Bridge road is some cold thin clayey soil, of a ferruginous ochreous appearance, probably containing iron. About Barton, Melsonby, and Middleton Tyas, the soil is loamy, upon limestone; but about Hanlaby, and from thence eastward to the edge of Cleveland, and between the Wiske and the Eastern Moorlands, as far as Burrowby and Thornton-le-moor, is mostly a cold clay; though, in some places, less tenacious soils, mixed with various kinds of pebbles, are met with. On the west side of the road between Richmond and Leeming, a good gravelly soil prevails; towards Hornby, a fine gravelly clay; and at Langthorn, a fertile sandy loam, and some peat. The land on both sides of the brook which runs from Burton Constable to Bedale, &c., is mostly a rich loam; but in some places intermixed with cobble stones and coarse gravel. The soil between Catterick and Boroughbridge, on both sides of Leeming-lane, is generally fertile both in tillage and pasturage, being mostly a rich loam, and having in some places a mixture of gravel, and in others sand. The soil of the Howardian Hills is mostly a good strong loam upon clay, mixed with cobble stones, and in some places it is light and fertile, upon a limestone rock. The western end of these highlands, and from thence to Thirsk, is chiefly a dairy country. Ryedale and the Vale of Derwent are extremely fertile, having generally a hazel loam upon clay; or a deep warp or silt soil on gravel or clay. The Marishes, East and West, are a low swampy tract of *marsh lands*. The soil in these marshes is chiefly clay, with some sandy loam, gravel, and peat. The soil of Wensleydale, near the river, is generally a rich loamy gravel, and on the sides of the hills, a good loam, in some places a little stiff, upon a substratum of limestone. The soil of Swaledale and Teesdale is mostly a rich loam, though clay and peat moss appear in some places in ascending the hills.

*Agriculture*, throughout the greater part of the North Riding, has within

the last half century advanced as rapidly as in most parts of the kingdom, considering the circumstances of climate and soil. In the Vale of York more than one third is in tillage, and the rest in grass. Ryedale, the Marishes, and the northern part of the coast have about one third in tillage; the southern part of the coast about one-half. About one-half of Cleveland is in tillage. In the dales of the Eastern Moors only about one-fifth is in tillage, and much less in those of the Western Moors. The lower and better part of the moors are mostly stunted pastures, on which cattle are kept in summer; but the high moors are generally unlimited pastures. Cleveland is as remarkable for the culture of wheat as Ryedale is for that of oats. Barley is not much cultivated in the North Riding, nor rye, except on poor and sandy soils; but *mestlin*, or a mixture of wheat and rye, was, till a few years ago, very common; and from it was made nearly all the household bread used in the district. Great quantities of rape are grown in Ryedale and other districts; and mustard is grown near York, and prepared for use in that City. The latter is equal in quality to the Durham mustard. The enclosed lands in many parts of the dales are chiefly appropriated to meadow. The farms are generally large.\*

*The Woodlands* of the North Riding are only estimated at about 80,000 acres, dispersed in all directions, the moorland and Cleveland having the smallest proportion. Oak, ash, and broad-leaved or wych elm, are the spontaneous produce of the woodlands. "The oak timber, though not large, is of excellent quality," writes White, in his *Gazetteer*, "being produced on sound and often rocky ground, its growth is slow, which renders it extremely hard and durable, and to the use of it the ship-builders of Whitby owe their

\* *Agricultural Statistics of England*.—The area of England in statute acres, is 82,590,429. Mr. Queen's *Statistics of the British Empire*, gives the quantity of cultivated land in England at 25,632,000 acres; of these he computes that 15,379,200 acres were pasture and meadow land, and 10,252,800 were garden and arable. He calculates the average value to be 25s. per acre. It is calculated that at least 1,200,000 acres of land in England are taken up with hedges; half of which without inconvenience might be dispensed with. From the last *Census Report* we learn what follows:—Farms occupy two-thirds of the land in England. The number of the farms is 225,318, the average size 111 acres. Two-thirds of the farms are under that size, but there are 771 above 1,000 acres. The large holdings abound in the south-eastern and eastern counties, the small farms in the north. There are 2,000 English farmers holding nearly 2,000,000 acres; and there are 97,000 English farmers not holding more. There are 40,650 farmers who employ five labourers each; 16,501 have ten or more, and employ together 311,707 labourers; 170 farmers have above 60 labourers each, and together employ 17,000.

wealth, and the ships their celebrity." There is a great quantity of large timber trees in the hedge rows in various parts of the Riding.

This district is said to produce some of the finest and largest *Cattle* in England, the breed having of late years been greatly improved. The *Tees-water* or *Holderness Breed* of cattle are considered the largest in the kingdom, and they fetch very high prices in the market. "They are handsome animals, distinctly marked with red or black blotches on a white ground; their backs level; throats clean; necks fine; carcass full and round; quarters long; hips and rumps even and wide; stand rather high on their legs; handle very lightly; are light in the bone; and have a very fine coat and thin hide." We may add to this graphic description, that this breed is short-horned, and is bred chiefly in the northern part of the Vale of York. In the southern part of the same vale the breeding of cattle is not so much attended to as in the north; the chief object of the graziers there, being the dairy. Towards the western extremity of the Riding some long-horned cattle are met with, and also a mixed breed between the two. Ryedale, the Marishes, and the Howardian Hills are also celebrated for fine short-horned cattle; and a great number of good cattle are bred on the East Moorlands and along the coast.

The *Tees-water* breed of sheep, the old stock of Cleveland and the northern parts of the Vale of York, are large, coarse boned, and slow feeders, and their wool is harsh and dry. But most of this stock has been improved by a mixture of the Leicestershire and Northumberland breeds; as also have those in Ryedale, the Marishes, and the Howardian Hills, where a cross has likewise been obtained from the Lincolnshire long-woolled breed. The native moorland sheep are small and hardy.

Yorkshire has long been famed for its *Horses*, and the North Riding is particularly distinguished for its breed. The fame of the Yorkshire horses is deservedly spread, not only in this country, but also in France, Germany, Russia, America, &c., and dealers from those countries generally attend the great annual fair at Howden, and are frequently commissioned by Emperors and Kings to purchase horses there. The horses of the Vale of York, by the introduction of the racing blood, are rendered the most valuable breed for the saddle; and the Cleveland horses are well adapted to the coach or the plough. Other parts of the Riding produce excellent horses likewise, for the saddle and coach, and in the moorland dales is bred a hardy and useful description of horse, forming a medium between the Scotch galloway and the strong coach horse.

*The Minerals* of this district of the County consist chiefly of alum, lead,



freestone or grit, limestone, ironstone, and a very inferior kind of coal. Cleveland and the coast abound in all their hills with beds of aluminous strata; and there are extensive works for the manufacture of alum, near Whitby.

There are *Lead Mines* in Swaledale, Arkengarthdale, and the neighbouring valleys; and great quantities of *ironstones* are found in Bilsdale, Bransdale, and Rosedale, in the Eastern Moorlands, where iron seems to have been extensively manufactured in ancient times. The huge heaps of slag, and the remains of ancient works, with the appearance of the hearths where charcoal has been burned, show that iron was anciently wrought in several of the dales in this district, on an extensive scale. There is a great abundance of iron ore in the Cleveland Hills; and near Pickering there is a very large and singular deposit of this ore, as it is attracted by the magnet when powdered, and contains from seventy to eighty per cent. of metallic iron. Some ironstone is got on the coast near Whitby. A mine of very fine *copper*, near Middleton Tyas, was wrought for some years, about the middle of the last century, and veins of the same metal are supposed to lie concealed in various parts of the Western Moorlands. Near the bridge at Richmond, in 1798, copper of an excellent quality was discovered.

*Freestone* and *grit*, of an excellent quality for building, is found in many parts of this Riding, especially on Gatherley Moor, near Richmond; at Renton, near Boroughbridge; and in the quarries near Whitby and Scarborough; from whence are drawn the massive blocks used in the construction of the piers at these ports. In the Vale of the Tees and the Greta are found inexhaustible quarries of *Marble*, which is used, though in no great quantities, to ornament the mansions of the living, and to form the monuments of the dead. *Limestones* is very abundant on the Western Moorlands and on the Hamilton and Howardian Hills. Seams of *coal*, which is heavy, sulphureous, and burns entirely away to a white ashes, are wrought in different parts of both the Eastern and Western Moorlands, at Gilling Moor on the Howardian Hills, and in the Vale of York, between Easingwold and Thirsk. *Marble* of various kinds, together with a kind of *flag stones* used for covering roofs, and a sort of purple slate, are also dug up in this district. On the surface of some of the north-western hills large blocks of light red granite are seen.

The climate of the North Riding appears to be as favourable to *longevity* as that of most parts of the kingdom. The most remarkable in the list of departed venerables are *Henry Jenkins*, of Ellerton-on-Swale, who died in 1670, aged 169 years; *Mary Wilkinson*, of Romalldkirk, who died in 1783, aged 109; *Thomas Martin*, of Helmsley, who died in 1804, at the age of

130 years; *John Davidson*, (late a sergeant of the 5th regiment of foot), who died at Rawcliffe, November 11, 1854, aged 101 years; and *Jane Garbutt*, who died at Welbury, near Northallerton, on the 10th of December, 1856, after having completed her 109th year, in the month of May previous.\*

*The East Riding*, which comprises the south-east part of the County, is an irregular figure, resembling the outline of a shoulder of mutton, of which Holderness may be called the shank, terminating in a narrow point at the confluence of the Humber with the ocean, whence the Riding extends from 50 to 60 miles northward, varying in its widest parts from 30 to 40 miles in breadth from east to west. It is situated between the parallels of 53 deg. 35 min. and 54 deg. 15 min. N. latitude, and 1 deg. 10 min. W. and 0 deg. 10 min. E. longitude from the meridian of Greenwich. Its boundaries on the N. and N.W. are formed by the little river Hertford, and the Derwent, which divides it from the North Riding as far down as Stamford Bridge; and from a mile above that place, by an irregular boundary line which joins the Ouse, about a mile below York; from this point it is bounded on the W. and S.W. by the river Ouse, which separates it from the West Riding; on the S. by the Humber; and on the E. by the North Sea or German Ocean. It is a rich agricultural district, and contains seven Wapentakes, about 197 parishes, and about 400 townships. Its principal towns are Hull, Beverley, Bridlington, Driffield, Hedon, Hornsea, Howden, Market Weighton, Pocklington, and Patrington. Hull, or Kingston-upon-Hull, is an ancient town and county of itself, but attached to the East Riding in the election of two Knights of the Shire to serve in Parliament. Beverley, the capital of the Riding, is the only Parliamentary Borough in it—Hedon, an ancient borough, having been disfranchised in 1832. The coast of this Riding has two remarkable promontories—Flamborough Head, and Spurn Point—and has been much wasted by the incursions of the sea during the present century; † but on its southern border, several thousands of acres of fertile land,

\* **CENTENARIANS.**—At the last Census 111 men and 206 women have been returned of ages ranging from 100 to 119 years; and to the scientific inquirer in the districts where these old people reside, an opportunity is afforded of investigating and setting at rest a problem of much greater interest than some of the curious questions that engage the attention of learned societies. Two-thirds of the centenarians are women. Several of them in England are natives of parishes of Ireland or Scotland, where no efficient system of registration exists; few of them reside in the parishes where they were born, and have been known from youth; many of the old people are paupers, and probably illiterate: so that it would no doubt be difficult to obtain the documentary evidence which can alone be accepted as conclusive proof of such extraordinary ages.

† The "Wasting Cliffs of Holderness" are said to lose, in many parts, from two to three yards, annually, by the encroachments of the sea.

called *Swink Island*, have been recovered from the estuary of the Humber, by a system of warping and embanking, which was commenced in the reign of Charles I.

The East Riding is far less conspicuously marked with the bolder features of nature than the other parts of the County. It may be distinguished into three districts, the *Wolds*, and the two *Level tracts*, one of which lies to the east, and the other to the west and north of that elevated region. The high Wolds are lofty ranges of chalk hills, extending from the banks of the Humber, in the vicinity of Hessle, in a northerly direction, to the neighbourhood of Malton on the Derwent, where they range eastward within a few miles of the course of that river, to the coast, where they form the lofty promontory of Flamborough Head; and in the vicinities of the villages of Flamborough, Bempton, and Speeton, they rise in cliffs of from 100 to 150 feet. At Ripplingham Clump, and Hunsley Beacon, the Wolds are about 530 feet high; and at Garraby Beacon, where they reach their greatest elevation, they are 805 feet above the level of the sea. The ascent to the Wolds is somewhat steep, except on the eastern side, where they rise in gentle and successive swells, presenting a beautiful aspect towards the flat country. Many parts of the Wolds afford magnificent and delightful prospects. From several of the elevated points between the Humber and the high road from Kirk Ella, by Ripplingham, to Cave, York Minster, Howden Church, Flamborough Head, Bridlington Priory, Beverley Minster, and the Churches of Hull and Hedon, may be distinctly seen; and from some of these heights the Cathedrals of York and Lincoln are at once visible. The eastern parts of this elevated district, skirting the Humber, commands a splendid view of that vast estuary extending to the south-east till it is lost in the horizon; and the farther distances are filled up with a view of the shores of Holderness and Lincolnshire. The western hills towards Cave afford a very extensive prospect over an immense level, terminating in the high lands of the West Riding; and also of the rivers Ouse and Trent, which, at their junction, are overlooked by the fine promontory of Aukborough. From the western hills a good view is obtained of the southern part of the Vale of York, reaching far beyond that City into the West Riding; and from the northern edge of these hills the Vale of Derwent is seen extended below, and beyond it the black moors towards Whitby rise in sublime grandeur. The surface of the Wolds is, for the most part, divided into numerous extensive swells, by deep, narrow, winding valleys; and the whole extent of the Wold district is computed at about 400,000 acres. According to Professor Phillips, the extent of the chalk formation of the Wolds is about 376 square miles, and the thickness

of the chalk stratum is not less than 500 feet. "The Wolds of Yorkshire," says the same learned writer, in his *Illustrations of the Geology of Yorkshire*, "form one of the most remarkable features in this County. High, and bare of trees, yet not dreary nor sterile, they are furrowed as all other chalk-hills, by smooth, winding, ramified vallies, without any channel for a stream. Where several of these vallies meet, they produce a very pleasing combination of salient and retiring slopes, which resemble, on a grand scale, the petty concavities and projections in the actual channel of a river. No doubt these vallies were excavated by water, but not by the water of rains, or springs, or rivulets. Some greater flood in more ancient times, has performed the work, and left the traces of its extent in the pebbles which it has deposited along its course."

The level tract along the coast, on the east of the Wolds, begins near Filey, the northern limit of the East Riding. As far as Bridlington the face of the country is beautifully diversified with lofty swells, but at that place the country sinks into a flat, which continues for eight or nine miles to the southward with scarcely any variation. About seven miles south of Bridlington the Holderness district begins, the eastern part of which, towards the sea coast, is a finely varied country, in which is situated Hornsea Mere, the largest lake in the County; but the western edge is a fenny tract of about four miles in breadth, extending nearly twenty miles in length southward to the banks of the Humber. These fenny lands are provincially called *Carrs*. The southern part of this district, bordering on the Humber, also falls into marshes; and in most parts of Holderness, the views are enlivened by a prospect of the Yorkshire and in some places of the Lincolnshire Wolds. The third natural division of the East Riding extends from the western foot of the Wolds to the boundary of the North and West Ridings. This tract of land, which is commonly called *The Levels*, is flat and uninteresting, though generally fertile and well interspersed with villages and hamlets; indeed it is a continuation of the level tract about and around Selby, Thorne, and Goole, on the opposite side of the Ouse.

*The Soil* on the Wolds is commonly a free and rather light loam, with a mixture of chalky gravel, and some parts are very shallow. The flat country extending between the Wolds, the Ouse, and the Humber, towards the Spurn Head, along the side of the Humber, presents a soil of a strong nature; and the soil of the Levels is in most parts clayey, with an extensive sandy, and, in some places, moorish tract running through the middle. Near the banks of the Ouse and Derwent it is entirely a clayey loam.

One of the most important agricultural improvements in the County is

the drainage of the carrs and marshes in this division of it, together with those of the North Riding bordering on the course of the Derwent. The *Beverley and Barmston Drainage*, executed under the provisions of an Act of Parliament passed about the year 1792, extends from Barmston on the sea shore, a few miles south of Bridlington, along the course of the river Hull, on the western side of that river, nearly to Kingston-upon-Hull, a distance of about 24 miles. Its northern part contains more than 2,000 acres, and has an outfall into the sea at Barmston; and the southern division, extending southward from Foston, contains upwards of 10,000 acres, and has its outlet into the river Hull at Wincolmllee. The *Holderness Drainage* lies on the eastern side of the river Hull, and extends from north to south about eleven miles, and contains 11,211 acres. In 1762 an Act was obtained for draining this level, much of which before that period was of small value, being usually covered with water for above half the year. The *Keyingham Drainage*, lying between Sunk Island and the mainland, was originally completed under an Act passed in the year 1722; but a new Act was obtained in 1802, under which the course of the drainage was partly altered, and an additional tract of land included, making a total of 5,500 acres. The *Hertford and Derwent Drainage* contains upwards of 10,000 acres, of which, 4,500 are in the East, and the remainder in the North Riding. This drainage was completed under the powers granted to three Directors, and three Commissioners, by an Act passed in the year 1800. *Spalding Moor and Walling Fen*, a district lying westward of the southern part of the Wolds, were drained, allotted, and enclosed, under the provisions of the same Act of Parliament.

The *Climate* of the East Riding varies; it being colder on the eastern than on the western side of the Wolds, as they break the force of the winds from the German Ocean. The Levels in the Western part of the Riding enjoy a mild climate. Near the coast the country is exposed to fogs from the sea and from the Humber. On the Wolds the air is sharp.

Every kind of agricultural crop is cultivated in Yorkshire; and the systems of tillage, on account of the great diversity of soils and situations, are extremely various; but greater improvements have been made in *agriculture*, and it has been brought to a higher degree of perfection, and conducted on a more extensive scale in the East Riding, than in any other portion of the County. Even in the low grounds called the Carrs, adjoining to the river Hull, such improvements have been made by drainage, as less than a century ago would have been deemed impossible. Extensive tracts of land, formerly flooded a great part of the year, and producing scarcely anything but rushes and a little coarse grass, are now covered with abundant crops of grain; and

the value of the soil has been increased in a tenfold proportion. The farms, especially on the Wolds and in the southern parts of Holderness, are generally very large, and small farmers are rarely to be found, except in the Levels on the western side of the Wolds towards York. Wheat is grown to a great extent on all the lower and more fertile lands; and on the Wolds, where about a century ago it was almost unknown, the valleys and declivities of the hills now wave with plentiful crops of wheat; and the farm servants and labourers, who formerly lived on barley bread, now use good wheaten flour. The quantity of land annually sown with barley is nowhere remarkably great, except on the Wolds, the soil of which is peculiarly adapted to its culture. The rabbit warrens, which, in the more uncultivated state of the Wolds, formed a prominent feature, have nearly all disappeared; and in proportion to the extirpation of rabbits, the breed of sheep has been improved, especially by crosses from the Leicestershire. The sheep walks are generally on the more elevated parts of the Wolds. The extensive level, extending from the foot of the Wolds to the western limits of the Riding, has received many great improvements by drainage, enclosure, and the newest modes of agriculture. The vast commons of Walling Fen and Bishopsoil, containing upwards of 9,000 acres, which, fifty or sixty years ago, was a dreary waste, full of swamps and broken grounds, and which in foggy or stormy weather could not be crossed without danger, are now covered with well-built farm houses, and intersected in various directions with good roads. In the rich and strong lands about Howden, large quantities of flax, and also of beans, are produced; and the whole of the level land in the East Riding yields fine crops of corn of all kinds.

There is little grass land in this district, except on the banks of the Derwent above Malton, and again at Cottingham, where there are low tracts of marshy meadows, which produce abundant crops of coarse flaggy hay, of which that obtained from the last-mentioned district is of a peculiarly nutritive quality.

The East Riding is famous for the breeding and "making up" of horses, for which there is one of the most noted fairs in the world, at Howden. Holderness, and some other districts, are distinguished for superior breeds of horned cattle, as well as sheep. Holderness cows are remarkable for their large size, abundant supply of milk, and short horns. They are well formed, and distinctly marked, being variously blotched with large patches of deep red or black, or with a dun or mouse colour on a clear white ground. They are rarely of one uniform colour, and are never brindled or mixed. There are several Agricultural Societies and Farmers' Clubs in Yorkshire, liberally

supported by the landowners and farmers. The Yorkshire Agricultural Society, formed October 10th, 1837, and constituted on the model of the Highland Society of Scotland, may be considered the chief of them. It need scarcely be added that the object of these associations is the encouragement and improvement of agriculture in all its branches. There are no extensive Woods in the East Riding. The only woods east of the Wolds are those at Rise and at Burton Constable; but there are abundance of plantations, and trees in the hedge rows of old enclosures. Since the beginning of the present century, the fine elevation of the Wolds have been greatly improved by enclosures and plantations. Nearly all the fields are now encompassed with quickset hedges, and different parts of the heights are ornamented by extensive plantations of Scotch and spruce firs, larch, beech, ash, &c. Several tracts have also been planted in the low country to the west of the Wolds.

Chalk and limestone are the principal mineral productions of the East Riding;—chalk chiefly on the Wolds, and limestone in the Vale of Derwent. Near the coast the chalk extends from Hessle, on the banks of the Humber, to Reighton, near Hunmanby. The chalk is occasionally used in building, and frequently for burning into lime; and the limestone, being coarse and hard, is of little value either for building or burning. The springs in the chalk are very powerful, and many of them, breaking out through the gravel at the eastern foot of the Wolds, combine to form the river Hull. In the gravel beds resting on the chalk, very perfect remains of large animals have been found; and vertebræ, eighteen feet in length, and from eight to ten inches in diameter, have been exhumed; as are frequently teeth, measuring from eight to ten inches in circumference. “At Hull the gravel depository of animal remains is about 90 feet from the surface, and the workmen employed in boring for water near the North Bridge, describe their tools to have smelt as if they had been cutting fish, so that it is probable that not only the bones, but also the fleshy part of the animal remains. The coast from Spurn to Bridlington forms a section of all the beds above the chalk; and as it is not in the line of dip, two beds are generally seen at the same time. A bed of dark red clay commences at Kilnsea, containing rounded boulders, mixed with pebbles, both of which are composed of *granite, gneiss, mica, slate, porphyry, granodacks, quartz, mountain limestone* containing organic remains, all the *sandstones and coal shales, coal, fullers' earth, chalk, and flint*. In this bed the chalk pebbles are in the greatest quantity. On the south-western side of Holderness, along the edge of the chalk hills, a very extensive tract of rich land has been formed in the course of ages, called *Warp Land*, which consists of the clay and sand deposits of the Humber. The greatest breadth of this

tract is from Hull to Hedon, a distance of six miles, and its length from Hull to Lowthorpe, a distance of twenty miles. A narrow piece of newly-formed warp extends from Hedon to Spurn, including Sunk Island, and is called the *Marshes*. How long this operation of land making has been proceeding in this quarter, human penetration and local records are alike incapable of determining; but that its date is many centuries is obvious, as Drypool, which stands upon the present bank of the Humber, is mentioned in the Domesday Survey, and a causeway, extending from Beverley to the newly built town of Hull, at nearly its present level, existed in the time of Edward I. The depth of the warp at Hull is 48 feet; beneath it is a bed of moorland, consisting principally of peat earth, two feet in thickness. The warp land extends beyond Driffild, but it is there much shallower than at Hull, and its width does not exceed four miles. That this moor, now covered with warp, was formerly upon the surface, is shown by the nature of its composition being evidently peat, which could not be formed in any other situation; and that it extended across the Humber into Lincolnshire, is proved by pieces of wood, exactly the same as those found in the moor, having been washed up at Hessele after a high wind.\* All along the eastern side of the Wolds, from Bridlington to Beverley, and from thence to Hessele by the Humber side, the sandstone, and the chalk which rests upon it, dip and vanish under an extensive bed of alluvial soil, which forms the whole district of Holderness. The extensive plain on the north, the west, and the south of the Wolds, is covered with an alluvial deposit. "It may be observed, as a peculiarity, that the whole of the extreme edge or margin of the Wolds, to the north and to the west, with one exception, continues in a regular and entire state along the surface, without any of those depressions which take place at a very little distance within. It is very probable that the Wolds have been the last deposit of all the great masses of simple and homogeneous matter in this part of the world. There are scattered all over this elevated tract *nodules of pyrites*, of a round form, composed of iron and sulphur, which the country people call *bullets*; there are also great quantities of loose fragments of sandstones, which are perfectly foreign to the calcareous matter of which the Wolds are formed, and they have, doubtless, been brought here by the action of the sea, after the chalky stratum had been deposited and hardened, or they would have sunk into the pulp."†

The sea coast of the East and North Ridings is about one hundred miles in extent from the mouth of the Humber to the mouth of the Tees. The

\* White's Gazetteer of the East and North Ridings of Yorkshire. † Ibid.



principal harbours on the coast are Hull, Bridlington, Scarborough, and Whitby; to which may be added, Filey Bay, Robin Hood's Bay, and several other creeks and fishing stations. The principal *Bathing Places* on the coast are Scarborough, Whitby, and Redcar, in the North Riding; and Bridlington, Filey, Hornsea, Aldborough, and Withernsea, in the East Riding.

The *West Riding* is bounded on the N. by the North Riding; on the E. by the river Ouse to its junction with the Trent; on the W. by Lancashire; and on the south by Cheshire, Derbyshire, and Nottinghamshire. As regards extent, population, trade, and manufactures, it is the most important division of the County. Its greatest length from E. to W. is about 95 miles, and its extreme breadth from N. to S. is 48 miles. It is situated between the parallels of 53 deg. 18 min. and 54 deg. 23 min. N. latitude, and 0 deg. 43 min. and 2 deg. 40 min. W. longitude from Greenwich.

The most important towns in the West Riding are Bradford, Leeds, Sheffield, Halifax, Huddersfield, Dewsbury, Barnsley, Wakefield, Rotherham, Doncaster, Pontefract, Goole, Bawtry, Selby, Tadcaster, Tickhill, Wetherby, Knaresborough, Otley, Keightley, and the City of Ripon.

The *Surface* of this part of the County is diversified, and gradually varies from a level and marshy, to a rocky and mountainous region. That part of the Vale of York, which lies along the borders of the Ouse, is a flat and marshy district, intersected by the rivers Ouse, Aire, and Don. The middle parts of the Riding contain a variety of beautiful scenery, but the country westward of Sheffield, Bradford, and Otley, is rugged and mountainous. The western part of the district of Craven presents a confused heap of rocks and mountains; among which Pennygant, Wharnside, and Ingleborough, are particularly conspicuous. The latter, which is one of the most majestic mountains in the County, rises from a base of nearly ten miles in diameter, to an elevation of 2,360 feet. The scenery in the picturesque vales of the Wharfe, the Aire, and the Ribble, is beautifully diversified. In the middle district of this Riding the air is sharp, clear, and healthful; in the western the climate is cold, tempestuous, and rainy; and in the eastern parts, towards the banks of the Ouse, damps and fogs are somewhat prevalent.

The *Soils* of the West Riding vary from a deep strong clay or loam to the worst peat earth. Almost all the arable land is enclosed with hedges or stone walls; the former in the eastern, the latter in the western parts. A great part of the Riding is exclusively kept in grass. In the arable land, a greater quantity of wheat is raised than of any other grain. The quantity of oak and ash wood is very considerable, and both meet with a ready market at the shipping and manufacturing towns.

The *Mineral* productions are of peculiar value, as they create and supply the manufactures of the district. They consist of coal, iron, stone, and lead. "The West Riding," writes the editor of the Parliamentary Gazetteer (1843), "yields in geological interest to no equal space in the kingdom. In this portion of the island, four clearly marked divisions present themselves. The Levels on the east rest on the stratum of red sand and clay, with gypsum or alabaster in varying quantity. The magnesian limestone range is one great plain rising from beneath the Levels, and terminating toward the west in a regular well-defined edge, forming the partial summit of drainage. In the south is the great Yorkshire and Derbyshire coal field, which rivals, or even surpasses in importance, that of Northumberland. The mining district is, in some parts of the north, exceedingly variable in features, occupying either high or low ground, producing or not producing metallic ores."

The *Manufactures* of the West Riding are most valuable and extensive; they consist chiefly of woollen and stuff goods and cutlery. The seat of the former is the district including the towns of Leeds, Halifax, Huddersfield, Bradford, and Wakefield; and that of the latter, Sheffield and its vicinity. Besides broad and narrow cloth of various qualities, quantities of ladies' cloths and shawls are also manufactured in this district, as well as camblets, shalloons, duroys, everlastings, shags, serges, baize, carpets, canvas, linen, sacking thread, &c. The Leeds pottery enjoys a very considerable reputation both at home and abroad. Besides the manufacture of cutlery, there are, also at Sheffield, foundries for iron, brass, and Britannia metal, and extensive works for the refining of steel; and at the neighbouring town of Rotherham are celebrated iron works, at which all kinds of articles in cast iron are produced.

The *Wastes* of Yorkshire are very extensive, and about the end of the last century were calculated in the whole at 849,272 acres; but they have, since that period, being considerably lessened by numerous Inclosure Acts; obtained both for the detached wastes, and for parts of the moorlands.

The geographical features of the County are strongly marked, and render the whole province one of the most interesting in the kingdom; parts of the moors in the North Riding rise 1,444 feet above the level of the sea, and there are many other highlands and peaks in various parts of the district.

The chief *Port* of the County is Hull, which may be deemed the third in England; and the ports of the smaller class are those of York, Selby, Goole, Thorne, Bridlington, Scarborough, Middlesborough, and Whitby.

The *Commerce* is of a very extensive and diversified character. The foreign and coasting trade is wholly centred in the above mentioned ports,

but more particularly in that of Hull, through which is poured an immense quantity of manufactured goods, coal, stone, &c., from the West Riding. Corn is exported from Hull, Bridlington, and Scarborough, to London and the collieries of the north; and from the principal markets of the East and North Ridings, great quantities of grain are sent into the western division of the County.

**RIVERS.**—The principal rivers in Yorkshire are the Ouse, the Swale, the Ure, the Wharfe, the Derwent, the Aire, the Calder, the Don, the Hull, the Tees, and the Esk, all of which, except the two last, pour their waters through the great estuary of the Humber.

The *Tees* rises in the mountains of Cumberland and Westmorland, and pursues a serpentine course along the south margin of the County of Durham, which it divides from the North Riding of Yorkshire throughout the whole extent. It flows through the fine Vale of Teesdale, where it receives several tributary streams, and after passing Barnard Castle, Yarm, and Stockton, falls into the German Ocean, below the latter town. The Tees is navigable for vessels of sixty tons burthen up to Stockton, but the channel is serpentine and intricate, and the current rapid. Below Stockton the river expands into a large bay about three miles broad. The estuary of the Tees is a place of great safety for vessels in stormy weather.

The *Swale*, which is the next in geographical position, has its source in the western extremity of the North Riding of Yorkshire, and after watering the romantic dale to which it gives name (Swaledale) and passing Richmond and Catterick, it enters the Vale of York, where it receives the small river Wiske, and continues its course till it joins the Ure at Myton, a few miles below Boroughbridge. The Swale is navigable only for a very few miles. Lambard, Bede, and other early writers tell us, that Paulinus, the first Archbishop of York, baptised 10,000 persons in this river in one day,—“by cause at that tyme theare weare no churches or oratories yet buylt.” The river is supposed to have been called *Swale* from the Saxon word *Swalew*, “by reason of the swift course of the same.”

The *Ure* or *Yore*, which is one and the same river with the Ouse, directs its course eastward from its source on the elevated moorland between Yorkshire and Westmorland, and below Askrigg it forms a remarkably fine waterfall called *Aysgarth Force*. The whole waters fall over a rugged limestone rock into a narrow channel, and form a succession of picturesque waterfalls. After passing through Middleham, Masham, Ripon, Boroughbridge, and Aldborough, it joins the Swale at Myton, and the united waters then continue their course to about six miles below Boroughbridge, where they take the

name of the Ouse, from an insignificant rivulet with which they there form a junction.

The *Ouse*, or the *Northern Ouse* as it is sometimes called, to distinguish it from the river of the same name in Buckinghamshire, is formed, as we have just shown, by the union of the Swale and Ure, and runs southward, receiving the waters of the Nidd, at Nun-Monkton; thence it flows gently to York, where it is joined by the Foss. It bounds the North and West Ridings from its junction with the Nidd to the City of York, and the East and West Ridings from York to its junction with the Trent. At Nun-Appleton it is increased by the waters of the Wharfe; and after passing Selby to its successive junctions with the Derwent, the Aire, and the Don, it falls into the Humber, at its confluence also with the Trent. This fine river is navigable throughout its whole course, and is the great drain of all Yorkshire.

The *Humber*. This noble river—the Thames of the midland and northern counties of England—divides the East Riding of Yorkshire from Lincolnshire during the whole of its course. It is formed, as we have just observed, by the junction of the Ouse and Trent. At Bromfleet it receives the little river Foulness, and rolling its vast collection of waters eastward, in a stream enlarged to between two and three miles in breadth, washes the town of Hull, where it receives the river of the same name. Opposite to Hedon and Paull, which are a few miles below Hull, the Humber widens into a vast estuary, six or seven miles in breadth, and then directs its course past Great Grimsby, to the German Ocean, which it enters at Spurn Head. No other river system collects waters from so many points, and connects so many important towns, as this noble stream. “The Humber,” says a recent writer, “resembling the trunk of a vast tree spreading its branches in every direction, commands, by the numerous rivers which it receives, the navigation and trade of a very extensive and commercial part of England.”

The Humber is navigable up to Hull for ships of the largest burthen; the Humber and the Ouse, up to the port of Goole, for vessels drawing not more than sixteen feet of water; and to York for those of 140 tons burthen. The distance from Hull to York by water is about eighty miles. Above the City of York the Ouse is navigable as far as Boroughbridge, a distance of twenty miles, for barges of thirty tons. The whole course of the Ure, Ouse, and Humber, is about 160 miles.

The *spring tides* rise at Hull more than twenty feet, and at York from two to two and a half feet, but they formerly rose at that place four feet. In 1643, it is recorded that a spring tide at Ouse Bridge rose to the height of five feet. Some of the “land floods” have risen here to a very great height.

In 1732, the Ouse at York rose in one night nearly nine feet, and filled the streets in the lower parts of the City; and in December, 1768, the water rose at the same place twenty inches higher, and was seventy-five feet above the low water mark of dry seasons.

Of the river Humber—the *Abus* of Ptolemy—that quaint old author, Lambard, writes thus:—“Humber is not the name of any one water within Englande, but is a name that is gyven to the metinge of many waters, and therefore Lelande contendeth reasonablye that it should be called Aber, which in the Bryttishe is the same that the Saxons and we nowe calle the mouthe of a ryver; for it hath not the name of Humber till it approche neare Kingston-on-Hull, before which tyme it hath receyved Ouse, Ure, Done, Trent, Hull water, and some other smal brokes, and so openeth into the sea; and therefore Humber hath not as a ryver of itselfe anye begynninge, (as Polydor and others describe) but may wel inoughe be said to begynne withe the head of any of those ryvers which it receyveth. It should seme that Ptolemy ment this ryver when he speaketh of Abus, so callinge the same that the Bryttons called Aber. Geffrey of Monmouthe, the leader of our Englishe Chroniclers, sayeth that it was called Humber by occasion that Loctrine, the eldest son of Brutus, chased Humber, the Kinge of the Hunnes (that arryved in his country) into this water, wheare he was drowned.

Dum fugit obstat ei flumen, submergitur illie,  
Deque suo tribuit nomine nomen aquae.

After that the Saxons weare come in great nomber into this ile, they fel at variance among themselves, in so much that Ethelbert, King of Kent, (which receyved Augustine) warringe upon the rest, enlarged his dominion to this water; herof began the people beyonde the same to be called Northumbers, and their Kingdome Northumberland. This ryver, and the Thamis, (as Polydor observeth) do not so comonly overflowe their banks, as other waters within the realme, which he imputeth probablye to the qualitie of the ground underneathe, which being gravel soketh muche; but the cause of the groweth no lesse, by reason that these twoe waters be not neighboured with so many hilles, as Severn and others be, from which every sodeine rayne descendinge into the ryvers, causeth them to swell sodenlye also.

The river *Hull* rises in the Eastern Wolds, near Driffield, and pursues a southern course to the eastward of the town of Beverley, with which it is united by a canal; and it falls into the Humber at Kingston-upon-Hull, where it forms a secure but contracted haven. This river serves to drain the whole country between the Wolds and the sea; and historians tell us

that the portion of this river between the Humber and "Sculcotes gote" was originally cut by Sayer de Sutton, to drain the Marshes within his lordship of Sutton. In a charter of Richard II., this part of the river is said to have previously been named Sayer Creek. Mr. Frost, author of *Historic Notices of Kingston-upon-Hull*, thinks that the drain called Sayer Creek was cut by Sayer de Sutton so early as the reign of King John. The river Hull is navigable to Frodingham Bridge, several miles above Beverley; and thence to Great Driffield by means of a canal. Another canal extends eastward from the river Hull to Leven, a length of about three miles.

The *Wharfe* rises at the foot of the Craven Hills, winds its course through the district of Wharfedale, and passing Tadcaster, joins the Ouse at Nun-Appleton. It is navigable as far as Tadcaster.

The *Derwent* has its head in the Eastern Moorlands, in the North Riding, within about four miles of the sea. After running in a line almost parallel with the coast to the foot of the Wolds, it takes a westerly direction till it receives the Rye, from Helmsley; thence by Malton, Gate-Helmsley, and Stamford Bridge, to the Ouse, near Barmby, from which it is navigable for vessels of twenty-five tons burthen, to Malton, and above which town the navigation has been continued to Yedingham Bridge, a further distance of about nine miles. From its junction with the small river Hartford, near its source, the Derwent divides the North and East Ridings till it approaches near Stamford Bridge, where it enters the East Riding.

The *Aire*, one of the most considerable rivers in Yorkshire, takes its rise in some wild moors near Malham, in the north west quarter of the West Riding, and runs past Skipton and Bingley to Leeds. Twelve miles below the latter town, near Castleford, it receives the Calder, and passing Snaith, it joins the Ouse three miles south west of Howden, a little below Armin. The Aire becomes navigable at Leeds, where it forms a junction with the Leeds and Liverpool Canal. Camden says, the course of the Aire is so extremely crooked, that he crossed it seven times in travelling half an hour in a straight line.

The *Calder* rises on the eastern border of Lancashire, not far from Burnley, and pursues an eastward course through Todmorden valley, to Wakefield; it then turns to the north till it joins the Aire, at Castleford. In 1758, an Act was passed for extending the navigation of the Calder to Sowerby bridge, in the parish of Halifax, and for making the Hebble navigable from Brooksmouth to Salterhebble Bridge. In 1825, an Act was passed for making a cut from this canal at Salterhebble, to Bailey Hall, near Halifax. This river is connected with various canals, which form a water communi-

cation across the kingdom from Hull to Liverpool, as well as a junction between the eastern and western seas.

The *Don* has its source in the western moors beyond Penniston, and flows by Sheffield, Rotherham, Doncaster, and Rawcliffe Bridge, to Goole, where it falls into the Ouse. In its course it is joined by the Hodbeck, the Wente, the Rother, and other tributaries, and by several canals. The lower part of the channel of the Don, from the vicinity of Snaith, is artificial, and is usually called the Dutch river. In 1751 this river was made navigable to Tinsley, three miles below Sheffield; and by an Act of Parliament passed in 1815, this navigation has been continued by a cut, called the Tinsley Canal, to Sheffield.

The *Esk* has many sources in the centre of the Eastern Moorland dales, and flowing eastward, receives various streams, until it falls into the North Sea at Whitby, dividing that town into two nearly equal parts, which are connected by a draw-bridge. On the 17th July, 1761, the spring tides rose and fell here four times in less than half an hour.

The *Foss* rises near Craike Castle, and joins the Ouse at York. The channel of this river is believed to have been originally formed by the Romans, to effect the drainage of an extensive level tract lying between the Ouse and the Howardian Hills, near the western extremity of which it has its source. Leland, in enumerating the rivers which water the forest of Galtres, says, "The *Fosse*, a slow stream, yet able to bear a good vessel, ryseth in *nemore Calaterio*, or amongst the woody hills now called Galtres Forest, and in its descent from the highest ground, leaveth Crayke on the west side, thence it goeth by Marton Abbey, Marton, Stillington, Farlington, Towthorpe, Erswick, Huntingdon, &c., at York into the Ouse."

The *Nidd* rises in Netherdale, and passing by Knaresborough, enters the Ouse at Nun-Monkton.

The *Canals* of Yorkshire are numerous, but are chiefly in the West Riding; and the County is so intersected by *Railways*, that there are few towns or good villages without a railway station. There are 420 miles of railway in the West Riding, and the land occupied by railways is 5,392 acres. It appears from a return recently issued by the railway companies in England and Wales, that the total acreage of the parishes through which the various railways pass, is 9,177,190; and the acreage of the land occupied by the railways is 65,047, or 0.71 per cent. The aggregate length of railway in the various parishes is 5,637 miles; and the average quantity of land occupied per mile of railway, is 11.58 acres. There is one mile of railway to every 162,802 acres of land.

*Antiquities.*—Besides the Roman remains which are noticed at subsequent pages, the most remarkable antiquities exist in the relics of ancient Castles and religious edifices. The only remains of Roman structures now to be seen at York are the polygonal tower, and the south wall of the Mint Yard. Roman urns have been discovered in several situations near the stations and roads of that people; and a vast variety of Roman antiquities have, at different times, been found in York and its vicinity, such as altars, sepulchral and other urns, sarcophagi, coins, signets, &c. Many ancient tumuli are discernable in various parts of the County, particularly on the Wolds; and besides the Roman encampments, others of the Saxons and the Danes may be traced in several places in the North and West Ridings. Near Borough-bridge are three gigantic obelisks of single stones, commonly called the *Devil's Arrows*, by some thought to be Druidical, and by others supposed to be of Roman origin. About nine miles north west of Ripon is a remarkable assemblage of rocks called *Bramham Craggs*, which are conjectured to have been a Druidical temple.

The chief remains of ancient *Castles* or *Fortresses* are Clifford's Tower at York; and in the West Riding, the Castles of Conisbrough, Harewood, Knaresborough, Pontefract, Great Sandall, Skipton, and Tickhill; in the North Riding, the Castles of Helmsley, Malton, Middleham, Mulgrave, Pickering, Richmond, Scarborough, Sheriff Hutton, Skelton, and Gilling; and in the East Riding, Wressell Castle, near Howden. There are likewise several ancient mansions in different parts of the County, but now converted into farm houses.

The number of ancient *Religious Houses*, or Monastic Institutions, in the County was, according to Benton's *Monasticon Eboracense*, 14 Abbeys, 44 Priors, 7 Alien Priors, 18 Cells, and 28 Friaries of various Orders. The beautiful and picturesque ruins of many of them denote their former splendour. The principal ruins of Abbeys are those of St. Mary's at York; Fountains, Roche, Kirkstall, and Selby, in the West Riding; and Byland, Rievaulx, Easby, Eggleston, and Whitby, in the North Riding. The chief ruins of Priors are those of Bolton and Knaresborough, in the West Riding; Guisborough, Mountgrace, and Wykeham, in the North Riding; and Bridlington, Kirkham, and Watton, in the East Riding.

*Mineral Springs, &c.*—The chalybeate and sulphureous springs of *Harrogate* are of great celebrity. They were discovered in 1571, and have rendered that once obscure hamlet one of the principal watering places in England. The springs of *Askern*, about eight miles north of Doncaster, much resemble those of Harrogate, both in smell and taste, but differ from them in their



operation. The chalybeate and saline springs of *Scarborough*, discovered early in the 17th century, have long been celebrated; and there is also a famous chalybeate spring at *Bridlington Quay*. There are, besides, mineral springs of various qualities at Aldfield, Boston Spa, Gilthwaite, Horley Green, Ilkley, and Knaresborough, in the West Riding; and at Malton, in the North Riding. A mineral spring was discovered near *Grasborough*, in May, 1822, the waters of which are diuretic. At Knaresborough is the celebrated *Dropping* and *Petrifying Well*; and at the bottom of Giggleswick Scar, near the village of Giggleswick, is a spring which ebbs and flows at irregular periods. On the Wolds, and near Cottingham, on their eastern side, are periodical springs, which sometimes emit very powerful streams of water for a few months successively, and then become dry for years.

Amongst the most remarkable *Waterfalls* in the County are Thornton Force, near the village of Ingleton, in the West Riding, and in the vicinity of Thornton Scar, a tremendous cliff of about 300 feet in height. The Force is formed by a small stream, which is driven down a precipice of about ninety feet in height. The cataract of Malham Cove, which is 300 feet high; and Aysgarth Force; Hardrow Fall; High Force, in the Tees; Mallin Spout; Egton; and Mossdale Fall; all in the North Riding.

There are several curious *Caves*, which may be classed among the natural curiosities of the County; of which, that near Ingleton, among the Craven mountains; Yordas Cave and Weathercote Cave, in the latter of which is a stupendous cataract of sixty feet fall; Hurtlepot and Ginglepot, near the head of the subterranean river Wease, or Greta; and Donk Cave, near the foot of Ingleborough, are the principal. In the same neighbourhood, at the foot of the mountain Pennigant, are two frightful orifices called Hulpit and Huntpit Holes, through each of which runs a subterraneous brook, about a mile in length, and emerging, one at Dowgill Scar, and the other at Bransil Head.

*Franchise, &c.*—Previous to the year 1832, when the Reform Bill became the law of the land, Yorkshire returned to Parliament two members for the County, and two each for the Boroughs of Aldborough, Beverley, Boroughbridge, Hedon, Kingston-upon-Hull, Knaresborough, New Malton, Northallerton, Pontefract, Richmond, Ripon, Scarborough, Thirsk, and York. Under that Act two members are returned for each of the three Ridings; the Boroughs of Aldborough, Boroughbridge, and Hedon, were disfranchised; those of Northallerton and Thirsk were deprived of one member each; Bradford, Halifax, Leeds, and Sheffield, were granted two members each; and Huddersfield, Whitby, and Wakefield, one member each; so that there

are now in Yorkshire *seven new*, and *eleven old*, Parliamentary Boroughs, which, with two members each for the three Ridings, returns no less than thirty seven Members to Parliament.

Yorkshire is included in the *Northern Circuit*. The *Assizes* are held in York, where is the County Gaol; the *Quarter Sessions* for the North Riding are held at Northallerton; for the East Riding, at Beverley; the Easter Quarter Sessions for the West Riding, at Pontefract; the Midsummer, at Skipton, adjourned to Bradford and Rotherham; the Michaelmas, at Knaresborough, adjourned to Leeds and Sheffield; and the Christmas Sessions, at Wetherby, adjourned to Wakefield and Doncaster.

The *Inhabitants* of Yorkshire are social, humane, industrious, frugal, and enlightened; and the familiarity that prevails amongst the different grades of society is an admirable trait in their character. The Yorkshire temple of fame records a numerous list of worthies, eminent in charity, literature, the arts and sciences, and in arms; most of whom are noticed in the histories of the towns and parishes where they were respectively born or flourished.

GEOLOGY.—Geology is by no means to be regarded as an isolated department of knowledge, but rather as a union of all those sciences which have for their object the study of nature, and the perfections of her Divine Author. Geology, as a science, offers a lucid reading of the structure of our globe. From the magnitude and importance of the great objects which it contemplates, it may be considered in grandeur and extent as inferior to none of the natural sciences; whilst in the varied and attractive character of its investigations, it will be found to surpass them all. "Geology," says a learned writer, "may be defined to be the enquiry into the natural history of the earth, extending through the animal, vegetable, and mineral kingdoms; and comprising, in its investigations, all time, past, present, and to come. The present explains to us the past; the past and present reveal to us the future. The examination into existing geological phenomena enables us to understand those which have occurred in past periods of our earth's history, to interpret nature by natural laws, and to appreciate agencies and results which are obscure and remote, by a comparison with such as are familiar and well known; while the study, both of the past and present, empowers us to deduce presages of the future, and to infer the nature of those changes which may occur on the surface of our planet in future eras of its history. It may be described, in fine, as an investigation of the structure of the earth, and of the animals and vegetables which have existed on its surface."

The science of geology is in perfect harmony with Divine Revelation, and the fears which many well meaning persons entertain of the possibility of a

collision between them, are groundless. In all essential points, the records of Scripture are completely confirmed by the evidence of physical fact. So far from lessening our belief in the deity, or our perception of His attributes, this admirable science tends materially to enhance and confirm our appreciation of both.

In the Book of Genesis—the most ancient historical record in the world—Moses, who was, doubtless, inspired by God, records the creation of the world, and the origin of man, with an account of the great events antecedent to the existence of man. “In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth,” is the simple but beautiful and sublime preface, which the great instructor and law giver of the Hebrew people sets in front of all his doctrines, laws and ordinances. Moses then proceeds to detail in order the works of the six days creation—how, on the first, God made the light; on the second, the firmament of heaven; on the third, the sea and the dry land, with plants, herbs, and fruit; on the fourth, the sun, moon, and stars; and the fifth, the living creatures that move in the waters, and fly in the air; on the sixth, the living creatures that inhabit the earth, and amongst them, last in the order of time, but first in the grand scale of creation, man. Such, in brief, is the sacred writer’s account of the creation—the only true, the only rational cosmogony that ever has been given. With the clearness of one who was thoroughly master of his subject; with the modest confidence of one who knew he was speaking the truth, he dispatches in one short chapter many physical questions which have furnished matter of speculation to the thoughtful in all subsequent ages, and upon which, probably, they would be thinking, and thinking to the end of time to no purpose, had not Moses given us the true system of the world in this one short chapter. In it the student of theology finds the fundamental principles of all religion, teaching him to look up from nature to nature’s God; and in it the student of nature finds epitomised in a few verses, the geology, and the botany and the zoology, and the astronomy of the physical world. Whether the Mosaic account of the creation be a complete system of the world, or only an outline, or how far as an outline it may or may not be full—be this as it may, one thing is certain—that anything contained in Scripture, is not, cannot be, at variance with any fact in nature, or with the conclusions of sound philosophy; and this because the Scripture is the word of God and must be true. Scientific enquirers, assuming the mantle of philosophy, have expended a vast amount of labour in order to shew that there exists discrepancies, nay, positive contradictions, between science and Revelation, and they have simply succeeded in shocking the world with their crude theories, as revolting to its sense and reason as they are

offensive to God's truth. To make philosophers was not the province of Moses, and had he used the exact terms of science he could not have been understood. It was not to give mankind an insight into the arcana of nature, though he does do so, that he penned his history of creation. No, his aim was to enlighten man in the knowledge of the one Supreme Being, their origin and destiny, their hopes and duties—to make men true believers, not adepts in philosophy. If questions or facts coming within the province of science are sometimes introduced, it is incidentally, and as they fall in with the main design of the sacred narrator. But when Moses, or any of the other sacred writers, introduces a physical fact, the student in science may be certain that it is historically and physically true—it cannot be at variance with any other fact in history or nature—it must be in strict accordance with the laws of nature, unless it be intimated that it is miraculous.

How is it that people have stumbled upon the pretended contradictions between Scripture and science? The sense put upon a particular text of Scripture may be true, and the man of science opposes to it a false theory; there is a contradiction, but the contradiction is between the true sense of Scripture and a false philosophy; or the sense put upon a particular text of Scripture may be false, and the theory opposed to it true; and there is a second contradiction, but the contradiction now is between a false sense of Scripture and a true philosophy; or again, the interpretation of the Scripture may be false, and the theory opposed to it false; and there is a third contradiction, but this third contradiction is between a false sense of Scripture and a false philosophy. But between the true sense of Scripture setting forth any thing for a fact in nature, and true philosophy, there never can be a contradiction, because truth is one and cannot contradict itself. It is of the utmost advantage in the pursuit of scientific truth to be able to rest on Divine Revelation, if happily it should say anything on the subject under consideration; but that it should lead us straightway into the penetralia of science; that it should lay open to us all the arcana of nature—that is what we have no right to expect—it would be a most extravagant expectation; it would be to revive a long abandoned chimera, to look for the philosopher's stone in the Scripture. Moses does not enter into the details of the natural sciences, nor investigate the particular causes that produce the visible phenomena of nature; but happily for the cause of philosophical as well as sacred truth, he dwelt so far upon the origin and order of this fair world, that we may say with truth that his master-hand has sketched the outline of the sciences, which the researches of future ages can do no more than fill up.

As has been intimated, all the physical sciences have their proper bearings

on Revelation, especially in the first chapter of Genesis. And this is what might be expected, for between God's word and His works there must needs exist a perfect harmony.

As the opening chapter of Genesis records that ordering of the world which was to regulate it to the end of time, the actual working of the vast machine throughout all its parts should be found to harmonise with the great plan of creation sketched by Moses; and therefore physical facts and physical laws, which are but the generalizations of such facts, and the physical sciences, which are but facts and laws reduced to a system, should one and all be found to accord with the order of the world as delineated in the first chapter of Genesis. The connexion, then, between physical science and Revelation is obvious, and the science of geology deserves particular notice, holding, as it does, a prominent place in the Biblical questions arising out of the history of the creation. Geology likewise possesses an interest peculiarly its own, for it opens up to view, from under our feet, a world peopled by the generations of long past ages, the discovery of which excited and excites a great degree of wonder. The startling nature of the discoveries made by geology, have gained for it an interest greater than any other of the sister sciences have been able to command; though, perhaps, on no other branch of science have the learned propounded theories more opposed to each other. "Of all the sciences," writes a high authority, "none has been more given up to the devices of man's heart and imagination than geology; none has afforded ampler scope for ideal theories and brittle though brilliant systems, constructed for the most conflicting purposes." According to Buffon, this world was first a fragment of the sun, detached from that central body by the collision of a comet, and that brilliant author develops his theory with singular ability; but whence came the sun and the comet, without which he could not construct his theory, he omits altogether to inform us. Then we have the theories of the Plutonians, as one class of geologists is called, and of the Neptunians, which is another, and the nebular hypothesis, to account for the earth's crust. The earth, says the Plutonian, was at first one vast ocean of liquid fire, which gradually cooled down until the surface was at length solidified into the earth's crust. No, says the Neptunian, the earth was at first invested with one universal chaotic ocean, holding the materials of all rocks in solution, from the waters of which they were by-and-bye precipitated. No, says a third, all space was at first filled with atoms of etherial matter, after a time condensed into nebulae, which nebulae were further condensed into the sun, the stars, and the planets, of which last the earth underwent a cooling process to fit it for

becoming what it is, the habitation of organized beings. Differing thus widely, our world builders are perfectly agreed in one thing—they assume the materials of the world as pre-existing, and ready at hand for each one to fashion the world out of them according to his own peculiar fancy—they condemn Moses of ignorance of philosophy. He says nothing of the igneous origin of the earth, says the Plutonian; he maintains a profound silence about the original sedimentary deposition of the earth's crust, says the Neptunian; he knew nothing about the nebular hypothesis, says a third; he was quite in the dark about the origin of things, say all three—he and his creation were ages behind the true date of the world's creation—he knew nothing about geology. So our geologists differ, and so they agree; and so they went on piling hypothesis upon hypothesis, theory upon theory, and system upon system. So rapidly has systems of geology come forth, and vanished one after another, that, in 1806, the French Institute counted so many as eighty and upwards.

But what are the main facts of geology, in so far as they bear on the first chapter of the book of Genesis? That portion of the exterior of the earth called its crust, is not more than ten miles in a vertical line, or about one eight-hundredth part of the earth's diameter. And this is the domain of geology. This crust is composed of a series of concentric layers, resembling the coats of an onion, with this difference, that the coats of the onion invest its nucleus quite around, whereas the layers or strata of the earth, though extending sometimes hundreds of miles in a horizontal direction, do not encompass it perfectly. Pursuing their beds in a vertical direction, we find them marked by very distinct mineral characters, from the half indurated clay, through chalk, oolite, sandstone, coal, down to the granite rocks, the lowest in the series, and unstratified. We find them also distinguished for their fossil contents, for they contain, though not all of them, the remains of plants and animals, aquatic and terrestrial, in a rather regular order of superposition. In the uppermost strata we meet with the remains of plants and animals of species now inhabiting the earth, with here and there, though at very few points, the fossilized remains of man. Lower down we come upon mammifera bearing analogy to extant animals, but of species considered to be now extinct. Still lower down we meet with strange quadrupeds, the mastodon, the paleotherium, and other strange creatures, with stranger names; then gigantic reptiles and monstrous birds; and beneath them the remains of oceanic creatures, the cetacea, fish, mollusci, in an order, generally speaking, the inverse of the scale of organization, if we proceed from above downwards; the most perfectly organized occupying the superior, the

least, the inferior strata. Moreover, immense masses of rock, composed of the *debris* of marine shellfish, are found in every possible situation, even at very great heights above the level of the ocean—at an elevation of 8,000 or 9,000 feet in the Alps and Pyrenees, of over 13,000 feet in the Andes, and 16,000 feet in the Himalayas—and these indestructible monuments of former ruin remain to attest the sovereignty of the ocean over the now dry land, even where it is a great distance from, and elevated high above, its swelling tide. Such are the leading facts of geology bearing on the Mosaic history of creation.

Some of our geologists tell us that if we examine the pages of the great book of nature spread out under our feet; if we know how to decypher its characters and interpret its language, we shall find it directly at issue with the history of the creation by Moses; for, say they, Moses assigns to this world a duration of not more than about six thousand years, whereas this genuine record, inscribed on the earth's surface, furnishes incontrovertible evidence that the world must have existed ages upon ages before the very brief space of time assigned by Moses as the period of its duration. In answer to this it might be observed that the ablest geologists, De Luc, Kirwan, Andrieu, Brocchi, Buckland, Constant, Prevost, and others, deny there is any discrepancy between the Mosaic narrative and geological discoveries. But suppose geological phenomena are inexplicable, on the assumption that the world has existed only 6,000 years; suppose the animals whose remains are entombed in the earth, were its living inhabitants, long long ages before the existence of man, still the great antiquity of the world is perfectly compatible with the truth of the Mosaic narrative. That only about 6,000 years have elapsed since the *creation of man* is clearly deducible from the chronology of Moses; but that only 6,000 years have rolled over this earth since first it came from nothing into existence, is what Moses nowhere clearly says, nor is it clearly deducible from anything he says. Saving the entire truth of his narrative, there is room for an antiquity of the world as high as any geologist may require, which Moses neither affirms nor denies; for we must observe that, after recording, in the first verse of Genesis, the simple primeval act of calling forth the rude matter of the world from nothing into actual existence, he then, without alluding, as it was beside his purpose, to the changes it underwent for ages and ages, if such there were, passes on at once to the ordering of the world as it now is, to render it a fit habitation for man. These two great epochs in the world's history, the creation from nothing and the present disposition of its parts, it was most material that Moses should mark out distinctly;—the creation from nothing,

because otherwise he would have been silent about one half of the substance of the great act of creation, and mankind might have been ignorant of the world's origin, or might have thought it eternal; the present disposition of the earth to render it a fit habitation for man, because it was intimately connected with the origin and history of man. But between these two great epochs of the world, its original creation from nothing, and its present order, for aught that Moses says to the contrary, there may have intervened (and probably has) an indefinitely long period of time, during which the already created materials of the world may have undergone various modifications, and different races of beings, adapted to the then condition of the earth, may have had their existence.

With this indefinitely long period of time, if such there ever was, Moses had nothing to do, and therefore is silent about it; but he, by no means denies there was such a period, unless his silence be taken for an equivalent denial, which it is not. He is silent upon the question whether the moon is inhabited; yet who impeaches either his inspiration or veracity because he does not say "yes" or "no" to that very interesting question? So, we find that without offending in the least against the Mosaic narrative, we may hold that between the first creation from nothing, and the ordering of the world as it now is, there was a vast interval of time concerning which, because it did not come within the scope of his history, Moses was silent; and so, should geological phenomena require it, the geologist may assign to the world an antiquity as high as he pleases, by taking the days of creation to mean indefinite and immensely long periods of time—an interpretation warranted by the usage of Scripture itself, in which the word day sometimes signifies an indeterminate space of time. Indeed, in the very context under consideration, the word "day" occurs in a sense different from its ordinary acceptance. The three first days of creation would not appear to be days in the ordinary sense of the word—days of twenty-four hours each—measured by the real or apparent motions of the heavenly bodies, because it was not until the fourth day that the sun was made to rule the day, and the moon to rule the night. St. Augustine, in his work on *Genesis* says, "we must not boldly judge of the nature of the days of creation, nor affirm they were like those of which an ordinary week is composed;" and in his work called the *City of God*, he observes, "It is very difficult, or rather impossible, to imagine, much more to say, what is the nature of those days."

Professor Phillips, in his *Illustrations of the Geology of Yorkshire*, after having considered the internal structure of our planet, and shewn how the rocks succeed one another in a fixed order, and rise successively to the sur-



face; and how variously they are filled with the monumental reliquæ of organic beings which existed during the remote ages; and also examined the effects of convulsions within the solid substances of the earth, then directs his attention to the external features of the earth, and observes that, "though it cannot be supposed that, by investigation of its present appearance, we should be able to determine completely its former condition, enough is known to assure us that after the earth was dried and made habitable, its whole surface was again submerged and overwhelmed by an irresistible flood. Of many important facts which come under the consideration of geologists." continues this great authority, "the *Deluge* is, perhaps, the most remarkable; and it is established by such clear and positive arguments, that if any one point of natural history may be considered as proved, the deluge must be admitted to have happened, because it has left full evidence in plain and characteristic effects, upon the surface of the earth." After referring to the mistakes which geologists made respecting fossil shells and other organic remains, when the science was in its infancy, the Professor alludes to the visible traces of this great catastrophe—to the whole earth being covered by pebbles, the wreck of that Universal Deluge. "Filling the vallies," he writes, "over-spreading the plains, and covering the hills, rounded stones, of all sizes and all kinds, mixed together in as much confusion as pebbles on the sea-shore (fragments of all the known rocks which compose the interior of the earth) are profusely scattered on its surface." And referring to the visible traces of the flood in the north of England, he says, "it is impossible to account for the vast heaps of this gravel, by supposing that it might be laid in its present situation by any streams such as now water the earth. For it occurs abundantly in places where streams do not run, where, indeed, they never did run; neither is it confined to such narrow paths as serve for the passage of rivers, nor is it laid in such forms, but it is casually and equally spread over all the face of the country. The blocks of stone which have been thus rolled from their native sites, are, in some cases, of so vast a magnitude, and have been so strangely carried, even a hundred miles or more, over hill and dale, that in vain do we think to assign any other cause for the phenomena, than a great body of water moving upon the earth. With regard to the force of this water, various facts, which have fallen under my repeated examination, may give some idea. On Shap fells, in Westmorland, a reddish granite is well known, and its blocks are at once recognised by large interspersed crystals of felspar. Now, by the force of the great currents of water, blocks of this granite have been scattered over a large tract of country to the south, where masses, some tons in weight, rest on high ground near Sedbergh;

and, when the Lancaster Canal was made, such were found of great size in deep cutting, near the town of Lancaster. Eastward, this granite has been carried by other currents of the same water, over the deep vale of Eden, and the lofty range of hills which extend along the western border of Yorkshire and Durham, across Stainmoor Forest, down the vallies of Durham, and the northern dales of Yorkshire, across the Vale of York, and the hills of the eastern point of the County, to Scarborough and Flamborough Head, where it rests on the summit of the cliff one hundred miles from its ancient situation. This is one of many instances. The dispersion of sienitic rocks from Carrock fell, Cumberland, of granite from Ravenglass, and of whinstone from Teesdale, is not less remarkable. Such facts cannot be seen without astonishment, nor contemplated without full conviction. As to the height of this flood in our own country, the sides of Ingleborough, on which rest fragments of rocks transported from Keswick; the brow of Stainmoor, which supports large masses of granite; and the top of Carrock fell, from which so large a quantity of sienite has been removed, demonstrate that our proudest hills were overflowed; and as to the extent, all countries acknowledge the wide-spreading visitation;—the Deluge covered the whole earth."

Geology, independent of Scripture, renders it certain that the Deluge happened after the stratification of the earth was completed; and after parts of the earth were dry and inhabited by land animals—for in gravel accumulated by the flood, and in caves we find fragments of every known rock, and the bones of multitudes of creatures which have been extinct for some thousands of years, and whose living analogues dwell only in distant and different countries. "Cold as our climate, and now utterly unfit to maintain the existence of such animals," says Mr. Phillips, "the time has been, if we rightly understand the history of the earth, when elephants and hippopotami, tigers and hyænas, lived here (in England) together, and here together met the common doom of all the inhabitants of the earth, destruction by overflowing water. And not inconsiderable was the number thus destroyed; for almost every gravel-pit, and diluvial cliff, and limestone cavern, abound with their remains; some of which by their unusual proportions, indicate the gigantic size and formidable strength of antediluvian quadrupeds. By comparing them with existing species, we are enabled to conjecture the antediluvian condition of the world, with what vegetables it was clothed, and with what climate it was blessed. No scope need be given to fancy, the truth of analogy, the known conformity of nature, are sure guides to the geologist."

Another question arising out of this magnificent subject is, were any, and

what changes in the surface of our planet were occasioned by these devastating waters? Was the antediluvian earth diversified by the same hills, valleys, precipices, and cliffs, as we now behold, or was all this beautiful variety of surface occasioned by that flood, or is it the result of subsequent causes? In reply to this question, the authority already quoted, says, "No one can doubt that great alterations were occasioned in the features of the earth's surface, at the period of the Deluge, who considers the extensive tracts formed of the diluvial detritus. All the solid land of Holderness is an accumulation of this kind, from the ruins of other parts of England and Scotland, and perhaps Norway. If hills were known before the flood, their present peculiar shapes must be dated from that event; and if valleys were then in existence, they must have been deepened and widened, or possibly filled up and obliterated. But that the whole antediluvian surface of the world was even and uniform, is altogether improbable. For, to a very considerable extent, the great features of the earth's surface are determined by peculiarities in its internal construction. Its highest ranges of mountains are composed of one set of rocks, but its widely extended plains are based on another. Obviously, therefore, these great distinctions are not only antediluvian, but aboriginal."

It can hardly be doubted that many of our fine valleys were formed by the action of the waters of the Deluge, by being excavated through several strata, as limestone, clay, and sandstone, which appear on the opposite sides in most exact agreement as to thickness, composition, and mode of arrangement; or that such rocks were originally deposited in continued plains, and therefore, once connected across the chasm or valley which now divides them. Valleys of this description, cut out of the plains of the consolidated strata, are numerous and extensive. In Yorkshire, the great mining valleys of Teesdale, Swaledale, Yoredale, and Wharfedale, and the vallies of the Derwent, below Malton, Rievaulx, and Bilsdale, above Helmsley, Newton Dale above Pickering, and Hackness near Scarborough, are remarkable and beautiful instances.

Yorkshire affords interesting fields of study to the student in geology. Along the middle of the County, from north to south, runs a wide level vale, filled with gravel deposited on the upper red sandstone. Towards the west rises from beneath, an elevated undulated tract of carboniferous and calcareous rocks, which ascend to the summits of Micklefell, Ingleborough, and Pendle Hill; whilst above, on the east, appear the uniform ranges of the chalk-oolite. The hilly tract towards the west is grouped into two portions—the district south of the river Aire, in which, generally, sandstones and shales

with coal abound; and the region north of that river, whose romantic dales are sunk into the mountain limestone, and whose hills are capped by the lower members of the coal series.

The following *Tabular View of the Series of Yorkshire Strata* is extracted from Professor Phillips's work, "Illustrations of the Geology of Yorkshire," published in 1829; to which work we are indebted for much that is valuable in this essay.

		Utmost thickness.			
		feet			
Chalk formation.	1—White Chalk .....	500	}	The Wold Hills, from Flamborough to Hessele.	
	2—Red Chalk .....	5			
Clay vale formation (Smith)	3—Gault? .....	} 150?	}	Speeton, Knapton, Kirby-Moorside, Helmsley, Settrington, Elloughton.	
	4—Kimmeridge clay .....				
Coralline oolite formation.	5—Upper calcareous grit ..	60	}	Silpho Brow, Sinnington, Wass Bank. Scarborough Castle, Pickering, Malton. Scarborough Castle, Hambleton End, Malton, Leavening. Scarborough Castle, Saltergate Brow, Rievaulx Abbey. Scarborough Castle, Hackness, Rievaulx Abbey.	
	6—Coralline oolite .....	60			
	7—Lower calcareous grit ..	80			
	8—Oxford Clay .....	150			
	9—Kelloways rock* .....	40			
Bath oolite formation.	10—Cornbrash limestone . . .	5	}	Gristhorpe, Scarborough. Gristhorpe, Scalby. Gristhorpe, White Nab, Cloughton Wyke, Hawsker. Cloughton, Peak, Burton Head, &c. Peak, Whitby, Boulby, the Cleveland Hills.	
	11—Upper sandstone, shale, and coal .....	200			
	12—Impure limestone (oolite of Bath) .....	30			
	13—Lower sandstone, shale, and coal .....	500			
	14—Ferruginous beds (inferior oolite of Somersetshire) .....	60			
Lias formation.	15—Upper lias shale .....	200	}	Cliffs near Whitby, Hills near Guisborough, &c. Cliffs near Staiths, Head of Billsdale, Eston Nab, &c. Robin Hood's Bay, Boulby, Redcar.	
	16—Marlstone series .....	150			
	17—Lower lias shale .....	500			
New red sandstone formation (Werner).	18—Red marl and red sandstone .....	} thickness unknown	}	Yarm, Boroughbridge, and Ferrybridge. From Brotherton to Doncaster. Fairburn, Knottingley. Catterick, Knaresborough, Doncaster, &c.	
	19 } Brotherton limestone ..				45
	19 } Red clay and gypsum ..				50
	19 } Magnesian limestone . . .	120			
Carboniferous formation.	20—Coal measures .....	2000	}	Leeds, Barnsley, Sheffield. Swaledale, Yoredale, and Wharfedale.	
	21—Mountain limestone series .....	2000			
Slate formation.	22—Slate rocks . . thickness unknown			Ingleton, Sedbergh.	

# GENERAL HISTORY OF YORKSHIRE.

---

## British Period.

The Gaelic or Celtic race are said to have overflowed the continent of Europe, from the farthest shores of Ireland to the banks of the Danube at an early period of the world's history, and it is the opinion of those who have most elaborately examined the question, that several tribes of these Gallic Celts, had settled in Britain, fully a thousand years before the Christian era. Besides the testimony of the best ancient writers, the geographical position of Gaul and Britain, and the resemblance of manners and customs, we have the clear and strong testimony of language to prove the one people to have sprung from the other. The Celtic language, though in divided portions, is still known amongst us. One branch of it, called the Gaelic, is spoken by the native Irish, by the Scottish Highlanders, and in the Isle of Man; the other was formerly current in Cornwall, and is still spoken in Wales and in Lower Brittany.\* The whole of the southern coast of Britain appears to have been peopled before its more northern or the midland districts had been penetrated. As the descendants of the original settlers increased in number, and new bands of emigrants, or as they have been technically termed, waves of population, successively arrived from the mother country, the backwoods were gradually cleared, till at length the whole island became inhabited. The early Greek writers knew little of Western Europe, and Herodotus, who wrote in the middle of the fifth century before the coming of Christ, had but an indistinct notion of the British Isles, under the general term of Cassi-

\* The language in which Adam and Eve spoke is a subject of controversy among the learned, and there is scarcely any eastern tongue which has not aspired to the honour of being the original language. The majority of critics, however, decide for the Hebrew, or its cognate, the Arabic. The Hebrew is likely the oldest, but it is now considerably altered by time, by the captivity, and the subsequent dispersion of the people who spoke it. The first language appears to have remained unchanged until the confusion of tongues at the building of the Tower of Babel, for according to *Genesis xi. 1.*, "the earth was of one tongue, and of the same speech." This confusion of tongues and the dispersion of the human race gave rise to various dialects, which are now multiplied beyond numbering.

terides, or the Tin Islands, as the grand source from which the Phœnicians derived their supply of that metal. The earliest mention of our islands by their names, is made by the philosopher Aristotle, who lived a century later than Herodotus. In alluding to the ocean without the Pillars of Hercules, (the straits of Gibraltar) he tells us there were "two islands, which are very large, Albion and Jerne, called the Britannic, which lie beyond the Celtæ." Polybius, another Greek historian, who wrote about 150 years before the Christian era, speaks of the "Britannic Isles," but adds nothing to our knowledge of them. He tells us that from a very early period of the history of the world, the Phœnician merchants obtained their supply of tin (an article in use as far back as the time of Homer) from Britain. As this metal is found chiefly in Cornwall and the Scilly Islands, the parts of Britain which would first present themselves to the navigators from the Phœnician port on the coast of Spain, Gaderia, or Gades (the modern Cadiz) would be these places and the south of Ireland. Another Greek writer, Diodorus Siculus, informs us that the tin was carried from the district in which it was found, to an island "in front of Britain," named Ictis, apparently the Isle of Wight, where it was purchased by native merchants, who transported it to Gaul, and it was then carried overland on pack horses, a journey of thirty days, to the mouth of the Rhone. If we except the allusions made to the trade in tin, by the early Greek writers, everything relating to this distant region, almost unconnected with the world as then known, was wrapped in mystery, and continued so until the veil was at length drawn aside by the ambition of Julius Cæsar.

Ireland is supposed to have been peopled (at least in part) from the coasts of the west of Britain, at the same time that the aboriginal Celts emigrated to England. Three, at least, of the tribes who held the eastern coast of Ireland, the Brigantes, the Menapii, and the Voluntii, were, no doubt, colonies from the opposite shores of Britain. Ireland, known to the Romans by the names of Hibernia and Juverna, appears to have been tolerably well known in the age of Ptolemy, who gives us a description of its coasts, and enumerates the tribes and towns both in the maritime districts and in the interior.

It was to one of the Celtic bands of foreign invaders, who inhabited Ireland, that the epithet *Scots* was first applied. Different interpretations of this word have been given, but the most probable is the same with the modern Gaelic term *Scuit* or *Scaoit*, signifying a "wandering horde." From Ireland a branch of the Scots passed over into Scotland, and eventually gave their name to that country; though a part of it had long before been peopled by the

*Caledonians* or *Cavilldaoin*, that is, "men of the woods." The Gauls who first inhabited Britain\* were distinguished, not only for their good natural capacity, but for their valour, and their pledged fidelity to aid each other against the attacks and incursions of all foreign powers. Their persons were tall, their clothing was untanned skins, and they painted the naked parts of their body with a blue dye extracted from woad, decorating the skin with figures of various objects, particularly the heavenly bodies; and they shaved all their beard except on the upper lip, which they suffered to grow to a great length. The barbarous practice of tattooing was long in use among the more northern Britons; it was a custom amongst the Picts as late as the fifth century. Their towns were a confused assemblage of huts, covered with turf or skins, little superior to the kraals of the Hottentots, and for the sake of security, generally planted in the midst of woods and morasses, and surrounded with palisadoes of trees piled upon each other, like the fortification observed at this day among the New Zealanders. They seem to have been able to fabricate warlike weapons from metals. Their arms were small targets, and swords, and spears; and in battle they used a very formidable kind of chariot, which was armed with iron scythes, projecting from the axle.

They were governed by chiefs, and the great mass of the people, as we learn from Cæsar, were in a state of servile dependence, the mere slaves or serfs of a peering nobility. The general food of the tribes inhabiting the southern districts of England, was milk and the flesh of their herds, superstition having forbid the use of fish, and several kinds of animal food; but the poor savages of the north subsisted principally by hunting and the spontaneous fruits of the earth. These Ancient Britons had made some progress towards civilization in the southern parts of the island, prior to the period of the Roman invasion, but all the northern tribes were as wild and uncultivated as their native hills.

\* The original name of this island, Albion, is that by which it still continues to be designated in the language of our Scottish Gael. They call it *Albinn*. *Inn* is the Gallic term for a "large island;" *Alb*, though not now used by the Scottish Gael, anciently signified *white*: *Albinn* therefore means the "White Island," a name probably given to Great Britain from the chalk cliffs which it presented to the view of the people on the opposite coast. Numerous interpretations have been given of the word *Britain*; the most probable perhaps, of which, is that advanced by Whitaker, the historian of Manchester. *Brit*, he maintains, signifies "the divided" or "separated;" and the termination *in*, is nothing more than the sign of the plural according to the usual mode of declension in the Gaelic tongue. *Britin* therefore were the separated people or the emigrants, as we should say,—those who had removed from the rest of their countrymen in Gaul, and settled in *Albinn*; and thus it would appear that the name of Britain, which is now given to the island, was originally applied to its inhabitants.

Their religion, which formed part of their monarchical government, was Druidical. Its origin is not known with any degree of certainty; though some contend that it was first introduced into England by the Phœnicians; whilst others affirm that the Druids accompanied the Celts in early ages from the east. They adored under different appellations the same Gods as the Greeks and Romans. Pluto they considered as their progenitor; Apollo, Mars, Jupiter, Minerva, and Mercury, were severally worshipped. To these, the superior Gods, they added a multitude of local deities, the genii of the woods, rivers, and mountains. They worshipped in high places and in deep groves, and adored the God of Nature, and rendered him praise on the yearly succession of the seasons, which they kept as solemn festivals. They did not worship idols in the human or any other shape, but one of their tenets inculcated the invisibility of the deity, and that consequently he ought to be adored without being seen. They dwelt largely in allegory, and symbolical representations, and clearly explained their superstitious rites and mythological observances to the initiated, but to none else; initiation therefore became a point of primary importance with every individual who was ambitious of exalting himself to eminence in any station of life, whether civil, military, or religious.

On the oak they looked with peculiar reverence. This monarch of the forest, from its strength and durability, was considered as the most appropriate emblem of the divinity. The tree and its productions were deemed holy; and if it chanced to produce the mistletoe, the whole tribe was summoned to gather it; two white heifers were immolated under its branches; the chief Druid cut the sacred plant with a golden knife, with much pomp and ceremony; and a religious feast terminated the ceremonies of the day.

Their sacrifices in time of peace were the fruits of the earth; in war they devoted to the God of battles the spoils of the enemy; but in the hour of danger human sacrifices were deemed the most efficacious. To their belief in the immortality of the soul, they added the absurd fiction of metempsychosis, that man is placed in the circle of courses—good and evil being placed before him for selection. If he prefer the former, his soul, when it leaves the body, enters the circle of felicity; but if he chooses the latter, death returns him to the circle of courses, and he is made to do penance for a time in the body of a beast or reptile, and then permitted to re-assume the form of man. According to the predominance of vice or virtue in his disposition, a repetition of his probation may be necessary; but after a certain number of transmigrations, his offences will be expiated, and the circle of felicity will receive him among its inhabitants.



"The worship of the Druids," writes a learned author, "was of a nature that required silence, secrecy, and space for contemplation. This end could be obtained by no means so effectually as by placing their sacred temples in the bosom of an impervious grove of trees, intersected by a labyrinth of devious and inextricable paths and windings. The veneration for oaks was patriarchal; it is not, therefore, wonderful that the early Druids esteemed that tree holy, and solemnly consecrated it to one of their most powerful deities. The solitude of a grove of branching oaks gave an air of mystery to their proceedings, and the people were easily persuaded that it was the peculiar residence of the great and terrible God, who would not fail to inflict summary punishment on the profane intruder, whose unhallowed feet should violate the sanctuary, and unauthorized, attempt to penetrate the hidden recesses of the sacred enclosure, where the most holy temple was constructed."\*

The sons of chief personages were disciples in the ethic schools of the Druids, where the rules of moral life were inculcated as the foundation of human wisdom; and in order to guard the people against any possibility of sophistry and innovation, their maxims of justice were taught orally. Their dispensation of justice was not under any written code of laws, but on what they professed to be equitable principles, all their verdicts being determined by such a sense of impartial justice as the assembled delegates entertained; and in a discordance of opinion in the congress, appeal was made to the Arch-Druid, whose sentence was decisive.

\* One of the greatest festivals of the Druids was the *Winter's Solstice*, which they held about the same period of the year at which we celebrate the festival of Christmas; and hence the practice of adorning our houses with *Mistletoe* (a sacred plant with the Druids) has been derived from the use of that plant in the religious observances of that people. The mistletoe was dedicated to *Friga*, the Venus of the Scandinavians; and as she was the goddess of love, hence arose the custom of kissing under the mistletoe. The festival of the *Saturnalia* was introduced by the Romans, and was united with the winter festival of the Druids. The *Holly* was dedicated to *Saturn*; and as the fetes of that deity were celebrated at the same time, the Romans were accustomed to decorate their houses with holly. The Roman laurel was entwined with the Druidical mistletoe, and the Saxon evergreens with the holly and ivy, to form a garland wherewith to decorate the houses and temples of the people; and so has this custom of decorating our houses with evergreens remained with us to this day: the early Christians having used the same observances as their Pagan neighbours, while they were celebrating their festival at Christmas, in order that they might escape observation. The festival of the Winter's Solstice was meant to testify men's joy at the return of the sun, and it obtained the Anglo-Saxon name of *Juul* or *Yule*, a word for which several etymologies have been assigned. On the eve of the Winter's Solstice, the Anglo Saxons burnt a large block of wood as an emblem of returning light and heat, and hence may be traced the still observed custom in England, of burning the yule log.

In their civil government, capital offenders were sentenced to death, and publicly sacrificed in the most awful and solemn manner, whilst those convicted of smaller crimes were excluded from public worship, and deprived of all civil and religious benefits until they sincerely repented.

The British Druids exercised their utmost authority in opposing the usurpation of the Roman invaders, who, inflamed with resentment, determined on the utter extermination of the Druidic order, consequently its priests were sacrificed to this inhuman policy; and those who fled to the Isle of Anglesea perished in the flames by the orders of Suetonius, and subsequently great numbers of them were massacred in the unsuccessful effort of the Britons under Queen Boadicea. After this period the power and splendour of the Druids rapidly disappeared.

The original inhabitants of the eastern side of the island, extending from the Humber to the Tyne, at the period of the Roman invasion, were the *Brigantes*,\* the most numerous and powerful of all the tribes that then shared the possession of Britain. They were the last of the British tribes that bent the neck to the Roman yoke. Ptolemy, who wrote about A.D. 120, asserts that they reached from sea to sea, the Mersey being their southern, and the Frith of Solway their northern boundary on the western coast.

Under this general term, however, appear to have been included the *Voluntii*, to whom belonged the west of Lancashire, and the *Sistuntii*, who possessed Westmorland and Cumberland; as well as the *Parisi*, who occupied the southern district of Yorkshire, and who are supposed by Horsley to have been separated from the proper Brigantes by a line drawn from the Ouse or Humber to one of the bays on the sea coast north of that river. According to Richard of Cirencester, the Parisi lived on the eastern point of Brigantia, where the promontories of Ocellum (Spurn Head) and of the Brigantes (Flam-borough Head) stretch into the sea, and their cities were *Petuaria* and *Portus Felix*. Probably as the capital of the proper Brigantes was on the banks of the Ure, the river Derwent formed the boundary between the two kindred tribes, and the present East Riding may safely be assumed to include somewhat more than the extent of territory occupied by the Parisi.

The capital or metropolis of the Brigantes is termed by many writers, *Iseur*; by Antoninus, *Isu-brigantium*, afterwards *Isurium*, and its site is said to be the spot upon which now stands the small town or village of Aldborough, near Boroughbridge, in this County.

\* The Brigantes appear to have descended from the Helvetii, whose emigration is mentioned by Cæsar. *De Bell. Gall. lib. i.* The word Brigantia is derived by some writers from *bri*, a hill; *gan*, a lake; and *tia*, country.

Caius Julius Cæsar, a favourite Roman General, having in the short space of three years conducted his victorious legions from the foot of the Alps to the mouth of the Rhine, descried from the coast of Morini the white cliffs of the neighbouring island; and the conqueror of Gaul aspired to the glory of adding Britain to the dominions of Rome. The Britons, by lending aid to his enemies, the Veneti of Gaul, supplied him with a decent pretext for hostilities; and in the latter part of the summer of the 55th year before the Christian era (the exact day, according to Halley, the astronomer, was the 26th of August), being the 699th year after the foundation of the Roman empire, Cæsar sailed from Whitsand, on the French coast, between Calais and Boulogne, with the infantry of two legions (12,000 men in about 80 ships), and in a few hours he cast anchor before the spot now occupied by the town of Deal. The cavalry was directed to follow in eighteen vessels, which were stationed in a port about eight miles from that in which Cæsar embarked. The Roman fleet left the coast of France at day break, and about ten o'clock in the forenoon it arrived on the coast of Britain, here formed of low cliffs, which were covered with British warriors prepared for battle. After waiting in vain for the arrival of his cavalry until three o'clock in the afternoon, Cæsar took advantage of a favourable wind and tide, and running up about seven miles further, brought his ships upon an open and level strand, which was more favourable for the landing of his troops. The natives appeared in multitudes to oppose their landing, and the Roman troops were seized with alarm at the novel and formidable appearance of the British warriors, and, unacquainted with the depth of the water, they were unwilling to leave their ships. At length, after much hesitation, the standard bearer of the tenth legion, calling on his fellow soldiers to follow, jumped into the sea. It was some time before they could reach firm ground; for the depth of their ships had obliged them to anchor at a considerable distance from the shore, and they had to struggle through deep water, while their enemies rode into the water with their horses and attacked them, or overwhelmed them with missiles from the beach. As soon, however, as the soldiers obtained a firm footing, they gained the beach after a short struggle, and the untaught valour of the "naked barbarians," was soon made to yield to the superior discipline of their enemies. The Britons fled, and the invaders being destitute of cavalry were unable to pursue them.

Thus did the Romans, for the first time, place their feet on the soil of Britain. Cæsar had been four days in Britain before his cavalry could put to sea from the coast of Gaul, and then, although a favourable wind brought them within sight of the camp, the weather became so stormy that they were driven back

to the port they had left. The storm increased during the night, and Cæsar's ships, which rode at anchor, were destroyed or much damaged. This accident caused the British chiefs to form a new conspiracy, with the design of attacking the Roman camp. A general assault was soon made, and although it proved unsuccessful, it taught Cæsar to reflect on the evident danger of his situation, should the inclemency of the winter interrupt his communication with Gaul. He therefore gladly accepted an illusory promise of submission from a few of the native chiefs, and returned with his army to Gaul, after a short absence of three weeks. The ensuing winter was spent by each party in the most active preparations; and in the following spring, Cæsar, with an army consisting of five legions and 2,000 cavalry (30,000 men) sailed from the coast of Gaul, in a fleet of more than 800 ships. At the sight of this immense armament, the Britons retired with precipitation into the woods; and the invaders landed without opposition on the very same spot which they had occupied the preceding year.

The British chiefs having composed their differences, soon united against the invaders; and the latter were exposed to constant attacks, in the course of which they lost a considerable number of men; for the woods which covered or skirted the country through which Cæsar marched, gave a secure shelter to the Britons, and they were thus enabled to harass the Romans by sudden and unexpected attacks. At length, after conquering and receiving the submission of a very large tract of country, extending from sea to sea on the southern side of the island; Cæsar having agreed upon a tribute which the Britons were to pay annually to the Roman people, returned to Gaul, carrying with him the hostages which he had taken from the British chiefs, as pledges for the fulfilment of a treaty into which they had entered with him. Cæsar's expedition to Britain was considered one of the most remarkable events of the time; and the victorious commander was looked upon as one who had carried the Roman arms into a new world.

During the period of about a century, from the time of Cæsar to that of Claudius, we have scarcely any information relating to the island of Britain. But in the reign of the latter Emperor, Britain seems to have been disturbed with civil strife. One of the chiefs, called by Dion Cassius, Bericus, was compelled to fly from the island, and took refuge at the court of Claudius, to whom he explained the state of Britain, and the facility with which, at that moment, it might be conquered. It appears too, that at that time, the islanders had been very irregular in the payment of their tribute, so that Claudius was thus supplied with an excuse for hostilities. Accordingly, in the year 43, that Emperor sent over an army, under the command of a

senator of distinction, named Aulus Plautius, who perfected the conquest of a great part of Britain.

The first mention of the great tribe of the Brigantes occurs about A.D. 50, after Plautius was recalled to Rome, and when Ostorius Scapula was Governor or Proprætor of Britain. At that period Caractacus, the brave chief of the Silures (Welshmen), was defeated in battle by the Romans, and he fled for protection to Cartismandua, his stepmother, Queen of the Brigantes. But instead of assisting or protecting that great warrior against the common enemy, this unnatural woman delivered him up to the Roman power, from fear of drawing a victorious army into her country. The dignified appearance of Caractacus and his family at the court of Rome, is the theme of every schoolboy. From Tacitus we learn some particulars of the abandoned Queen Cartismandua. She had married one of her chiefs, named Venusius, who quarrelled with her because she would not surrender to him the supreme power over her people. She then not only deserted her husband, but consigned her person to the embraces of her menial servant Vellocatus. Avitus Didius Gallus succeeded Ostorius as Proprætor, in the year 52, and about the time of his arrival in Britain, a civil war broke out among the Brigantes. Many of the tribe, disgusted with the conduct of their Queen with regard to Caractacus, placed themselves under the leadership of Venusius, and cried out against the indignity of being ruled by a woman. Cartismandua's party appear to have been the strongest, and Venusius was driven from among the Brigantes. He now placed himself at the head of the party that was in arms against the invaders, and for some short time was pretty successful. In the meantime, Cartismandua captured and put to death a brother and other relatives of her husband; and he, in revenge, collected his allies, and being joined by a party of the Brigantes, proceeded to make war on the Queen, his wife; she now claimed the protection of the Romans, who immediately sent an army to assist her, and in a well-contested battle the enemies of the Queen were defeated. In A.D. 60 there was a general revolt of the Britons, under Boadicea, Queen of the Iceni, joined by Venusius with his Brigantian forces. This valiant princess led the British armies in person against the legions of Rome; and, in a dreadful fight at Battle Bridge, 80,000 Britons are said to have been left dead on the field. The reader of English history is aware that this noble lady died by her own hands to save herself from infamy or bonds. In the following year the combined army was routed by Suetonius Paulinus; and in the same year the Brigantes revolted against the authority of Cartismandua, who, after some severe conflicts, was only rescued with great difficulty by a body of Roman troops.

In the year 70 Venusius was sole monarch of the Brigantes; but after several hard-fought battles, in which the Romans were frequently defeated, a great part of the Brigantian territory was subdued by Petilius Cerealis, in the reign of the Emperor Vespasian.

**BRITISH REMAINS.**—There is hardly a corner of England in which the spade or the plough does not from time to time turn up relics of its earlier inhabitants; but the British antiquities consist chiefly in the places of sepulchre of that people—the barrows, cromlechs, stone circles, together with the instruments of stone and bronze, which are sometimes discovered in the sepulchral chambers, and frequently found in ploughed fields in most parts of the country.

From the remotest ages it was customary to mark to future generations the last resting place of the honoured dead, by raising mounds, more or less elevated, according to circumstances connected with the locality, or according to the power or influence of the deceased. To these sepulchral mounds our Anglo-Saxon forefathers gave the name of *low* (*hlaw*), and *barrow*, (*beorh*, *beorw*); of which the former is chiefly preserved in names of places, such as Bartlow, Houndslow, Lowesby, &c.; while the latter has been generally used as the technical term for all ancient sepulchral mounds: both are equivalent to the Latin *tumulus*. The British barrows are generally large mounds of earth covering a rude chamber of rough stones, often of colossal dimensions. Groups of large stones arranged in this manner have been found scattered over various parts of the British Islands, as well as in other countries. Our antiquaries have applied to them the name of *Cromlechs*, and have in many cases called them Druid's altars; but recent researches have left no room for doubt that they are all sepulchral chambers denuded of their mounds. The word *cromlech* is said to be Celtic, and to have a meaning not differing much from that of the name *dolmen*, given to them in France, which signifies a stone table; and the peasantry of that country often call them Fairies' Tables, and Devils' Tables. Some of our Celtic antiquaries not satisfied with the name of *Cromlech*, had named them *Kist-vaens*, or, as they interpret it, *stone chests*. The *cromlech*, in its simplest form, consists of four large stones, three of which raised on their ends form the sides of a square, while the fourth serves as the covering, so that the chamber thus formed is usually closed in only on three sides. In some instances, as they now stand, the back stone has been carried away, and the *cromlech* consist only of three stones, two standing like the portals of a door, to support the transverse cap-stone or lintel; in others, where the *cromlech* has fallen, only two stones are left, one upright, and the other leaning upon it with one edge on the ground;

and, in many instances, all that remains of the original cromlech, is a single stone standing upright or lying flat. We owe these forms doubtless to the dilapidations of time, and several examples are known of the destruction of whole *cromlechs* to break up the stones for roads or other purposes.

But the cromlech, or British sepulchral chamber, was sometimes made more complicated in its structure than that just described. In some instances it presents the form of a ponderous cap-stone, supported at its corners by four stones, and leaving the sides of the chamber more or less open. In other instances the chamber is made more complete, its sides being formed by a number of stones joined side by side with one or more very large cap-stones above. Sometimes more than one cromlech is found under the same mound; and in other cases these Celtic sepulchres contain galleries or a series of chambers under large mounds. Vast works of this kind are found in Brittany and in Ireland. The celebrated Celtic monument in New Grange, in the County of Meath, contains a chamber 20 feet high, by 80 feet in circumference, and is approached by a narrow passage from the side of the mound, the entrance to which was closed by a long slab of stone. The monument at Ashbury, in Berkshire, to which the Saxons attached the name of *Welandes Smiththan* (Weland's Smithy—Weland was the Saxon Vulcan), a name which has been corrupted to that of Wayland Smith's Cave, appears to have been originally a gallery, with chambers of this description.

In the year 1816 a very curious monument of the same kind, at Stoney Littleton, near Wallow, in Somersetshire, was opened, and an account of it published in the 19th vol. of the *Archæologia*. The barrow, which was composed of stones instead of earth, was of a very irregular form, measuring in length 107 feet, its extreme breadth being 54 feet, and its height 18 feet in its most elevated part. When opened it was found to contain a long gallery, with chambers on each side. The reason of the use of stones instead of earth, in the formation of the mounds or barrows, may be generally traced to the natural character of the locality, as such barrows are found most frequently on spots where stone was much more easily obtained than earth. In Scotland, where barrows formed of stone are numerous, they are called *cairns*. The Welsh call them *carnydd*; and in France the sepulchral mounds of stone are called *galgals*. The cap-stones of some of the cromlechs in England are of immense size; that of the cromlech in the parish of Morvan, in Cornwall, called Chûn-Quoit, is calculated to weigh about 20 tons; the covering stone of one at Lanyon, in the parish of Madron, in the same county, weighs about 15 tons; and that of the very remarkable cromlech on the hill between Maidstone and Rochester in Kent, known by the name of Kits-Coty

House, has been estimated at  $10\frac{1}{2}$  tons. Others are much smaller. The base of the larger sepulchral mounds, and very often of the smaller ones, was usually defined either by a shallow foss, or by a circle of stones, and sometimes the two were combined. In some instances, especially in Cornwall, instead of the circle of stones, the base of the barrow was supported by a sort of low wall. The circles of stones are frequently found with the cromlechs in various parts of England; and they are also often found without any cromlech in the centre. There are several good examples of the latter in Cornwall, which measure from 60 to 80 feet in diameter; and there are remains of these sepulchral circles on the summit of the lofty Pen-maen-mawr, in North Wales; at Little Salkeld, in Cumberland; at Rollrich, near Banbury; and in several other parts of England. The circle at Salkeld, called in that locality, *Long Meg and her Daughters*, consists of 67 *unheun* upright stones, forming a circle of 350 feet in diameter; some of the stones are 10 feet high, and 15 feet in circumference; and one, which stands about twelve yards from the others, is 15 feet in circumference, 18 feet high, and weighs  $16\frac{1}{2}$  tons, is called "Long Meg," and the others "her daughters." Near the principal stone, four others form a square, which is doubtless part of the ancient cromlech. This, like all these sepulchral circles, is situated on elevated ground; and indeed, in a great number of cases, the British cromlechs, like the barrows of other periods, are placed on lofty hills, commanding extensive views of the sea, if on the coast; or when inland, of the surrounding country. It seems always to have been the desire of the British chieftains to be buried in such commanding positions; and our astonishment is heightened on viewing the stones of many of the cromlechs and circles, by the consideration that there are no quarries in their immediate neighbourhood, from which the stones could have been obtained. A fine cromlech, with a circular base of stonework, at Molfra, in Cornwall, is situated on a bare hill, which commands a wide range of view over Mount's Bay. The above-mentioned circle on the top of Pen-maen-mawr, is another extraordinary instance of this kind; and a third is situated on a lofty hill commanding a view of the Scilly Isles. But the Britons must have possessed a mechanical art of which we are ignorant, by which these stones could be removed.

Dr. Stukely asserts that all the great stones forming Stonehenge, on Salisbury Plain, were brought from Marlborough Downs, a distance of 15 miles, and that one of them weighed 40 tons, and would require 140 oxen to draw it. The *Rollrich Stones* are perhaps the most interesting remains of the ancient Britons, in the central district of the kingdom; they form a



circle, the diameter of which is 107 feet. Within the circle are the remains of the cromlech now called the *Five Whispering Knights*, in consequence of their leaning position towards each other; and which cromlech, Stukely believed to have formed a *Kistavon*. The tallest of the five large Knights is now very nearly 11 feet in height. A stone circle, called *Arbor-low*, in the peak of Derby, is nearly 150 feet in diameter, and is surrounded by a deep intrenchment. Sometimes the stones forming the sepulchral circle are nearly equal in size, while in other cases they are very irregular. It does not necessarily follow that the mounds raised in all these circles, contained each a cromlech—the interments, may, in some cases, have been made without a chamber, as it has been found to be the case in some large barrows.

Antiquarians observed these circles before they noticed how often they accompanied cromlechs, or were aware that cromlechs are sepulchral monuments; and they generally gave them the name of *Druids' Circles*, imagining that they were the temples, or courts of justice, or places of assembly of that order; but it is now quite certain that the majority of them were originally made to support or inclose sepulchral mounds. The cromlechs, too, which it is now certain were sepulchral chambers, were until lately supposed to be Druidical altars. In the greater number of instances, the superincumbent mound or barrow has been removed, chiefly for the sake of the earth, or soil; but sometimes, perhaps, in the belief, prevalent during the middle ages, that treasure was contained under it, and the massive chamber of rough stones alone has been left standing. Hence the number of cromlechs without mounds.

With our scanty knowledge of the subject, it would be rash to assert that the whole of the stone circles still remaining on our own soil have been erected around sepulchral mounds. The greater number of these circles are not larger than the basis of ordinary large barrows, and there are sepulchral mounds known, whose basis are equal to the largest; yet some few of the circles may have been erected for other purposes. The gigantic monuments of Stonehenge and Abury, or Avebury, are amongst those to which it would be difficult to assign a cause for their erection. Stonehenge, an Anglo-Saxon term, meaning the hanging stones, is the most remarkable monument of antiquity in our island. It, "the great wonder of Salisbury Plain," consisted originally of an outer circle of 30 upright stones, 14 feet high above the ground, and 7 feet broad by 3 feet in thickness, sustaining as many others placed horizontally, so as to form a continuous impost.

This differs from other Celtic stone monuments, inasmuch as the stones

have been hewn and squared with tools, and each of the upright stones had two tenons or projections on the top, which fitted into mortices or hollows in the superincumbent slabs. Within this circle, which was about 100 feet in diameter, was another circle, 83 feet in diameter. This again enclosed two elliptical arrangements of large and small stones. This structure of stones occupies the centre of an area, inclosed by a circular entrenchment, consisting of a ditch and bank, 300 feet in diameter; and it was approached by a wide entrenched avenue from the north-east, which, at the distance of a few hundred feet, branched off in two ways, running north and east. Stonehenge—the Chorea Gigantum—Choir of Giants, is a mysterious monument, concerning which no one knows who built it, or how, or why it was built; and the tradition that Merlin, the magician, brought the stones from Ireland, is felt to be a poetical homage to the greatness of the work. The ground around Stonehenge is covered with barrows, and was evidently the cemetery of a very extensive tribe.

At the village of Avebury, about twenty miles distant from Stonehenge, is a series of remarkable circles, which consisted originally of an area of about 1,400 feet in diameter, inclosed by a deep ditch and bank. The space inclosed by the earthen embankment contains a village, with various fields and buildings, over which the stones that remain are scattered in apparent confusion. At no great distance from the outer circle is a fine cromlech with its attendant circle of stones.

In the British barrows the body is sometimes found to have been buried entire, while in many cases it had been burnt, and the ashes deposited in rude urns. When the body was interred without cremation or burning, it was sometimes stretched at full length, and at others doubled up and laid on one side, or sometimes placed in a sitting position. The urns, containing the burnt bones, are sometimes found in their natural position, and sometimes inverted, with the mouth downwards. When upwards, the urn is often covered with a flat stone. The different modes of burial seems to have been fashions adopted by different families, or by subdivisions of tribes or septs; though all the different modes of interment are often found in the same barrow, for some of the barrows seem to have been family graves, and it is rare to find only one interment, while the large barrows contain usually a considerable number of urns and bodies. Throughout these early barrows there appears much irregularity, and evidently a good deal of caprice in the mode of burial.

Most of the cromlechs, stone circles, and large stones, in various parts of this and other countries, and which, as we have said, have been classed erro-

neously among Druidic remains, have attached to them many popular names and legends; for when their meaning, or the object for which they were erected, were alike forgotten, the monuments continued to be regarded by the peasantry with reverence, which, combined with a certain degree of mysterious fear, degenerated into a sort of superstitious worship.

As we have seen, the peasantry of France denominate the simple cromlechs fairies' tables, and devils' tables, and the more complicated cromlechs are similarly named fairies' grottoes, or fairy rocks. The single stones are sometimes called fairies' or devils' seats. The people of Brittany declare that the multitude of stones arranged upright in lines at Carnac, was an army of pagans changed into stones by St. Cornilly. It is the popular belief in Anjou, that the fairies, as they descended the mountains, spinning by the way, brought down the great stones in their aprons, and placed them as they are now found. We have also seen that the Saxons believed that a cromlech in Berkshire was the workshop of their mythic smith, Weland. A sepulchral circle in Cornwall is called Dance Maine, or the Dance of Stones, and is said to be the representation of a party of young damsels, who were turned into stones because they danced on the Sunday. A cromlech on Marlborough Downs is called the Devil's Den; and the three gigantic stones near Boroughbridge are called the Devil's Arrows. According to legend, a party of soldiers who came to destroy Long Compton were changed into the Rollrich Stones, in Oxfordshire. These, and similar legends, are found in every part of our island, and they are generally good evidence of the great antiquity of the monuments to which they relate.

It does not appear to have been the custom with the Britons to inter with their dead many articles of value. By much the greater number of barrows are found to contain nothing but urns and burnt bones. In some cases a few instruments of stone or bronze are found; and in much rarer instances beads and fragments of other personal ornaments occur. Traces of a metal covering for the breast, very thin, and therefore more for ornament than protection, have also been found with skeletons apparently of this early date. The most remarkable discovery of this kind was made in the month of October, 1833, at Mold, in Flintshire. A barrow, which was called by the Welsh peasantry, *bryn-yr-elly-lon*, or the hill of fairies or goblins, and which was believed to be haunted, was cleared away for agricultural purposes. It was found to contain interments of urns, &c., and in another part of the mound was discovered a skeleton, round the breast of which was a corset of thin gold. This interesting relic is now in the British Museum. There is a curious circumstance connected with this barrow: before it was opened, a woman of the neighbour-

hood declared, that as she was going home late one night, and had to pass by it, she saw over the barrow a spectre "clothed in a coat of gold, which shone like the sun."

The implements made of stone, which are found in the barrows, are usually heads of axes or hammers, chisels, and arrow heads; and these, as well as stone knives, saws, &c., are also found abundantly in all parts of the British Islands, and indeed all over the world. The British urns are in general, though not always, very rudely made—not baked, but merely dried in the sun, and having none of the elegance of the Roman urns.

There are many ancient barrows in various parts of Yorkshire, especially in the south-eastern part of the county, or the wold district; several of which have been opened, and found to contain urns, burnt bones, skeletons, stone and bronze implements, &c.; and numerous relics of our British ancestors have been turned up by the plough and spade in various parts of the district.

There are several collections of British coins in the hands of private individuals, as well as in the museums, but our knowledge of them is as yet in its infancy; and comparatively little has been done towards classifying them in a satisfactory manner.

Of the domestic buildings of the early Britons there are no remains, nor are there any relics of those terrible war-chariots which Cæsar describes as striking terror into his legions; but a few British canoes (one of which is in the museum at York), a few circular shields, some spears, daggers, multitudes of axe heads, arrow heads, &c.; some coarse pottery, together with the sepulchral mounds, circles, and cromlechs, already noticed; and the mighty earthworks, which they erected for the defence of the country, are the only memorials we have of the original inhabitants of our island. And in speaking of those earthen ramparts, it is difficult to define the precise share of the Ancient Britons in their construction, as compared with the labours of the successive occupants of the country; for the Romans, being too wise a people to be destroyers, naturally improved the old defences of the island, and adapted them to their own notions of military science; and the same remark will apply to the Danish and Saxon invaders.

## Roman Period.

In the year 79 Julius Agricola received the submission of the whole of the Brigantes, having effected by policy what the Roman legions were unable to accomplish by coercion. His admirable prudence led him to introduce amongst the natives of Britain, the arts and manners of his own nation, and,

by instilling into their minds a taste for the elegancies and luxuries of civilized life, he accomplished more in a few years than his predecessors had done by arms for upwards of a century. The Britons were charmed with the mildness and the justice of his government, and publicly pronounced him their benefactor. From that period the Romans fixed their principal station at Eboracum (York), which place became the capital of the fourth Roman Province, called *Maxima Cesariensis*.

Agricola having reduced the north of England, and what is now termed the lowlands of Scotland, in order to secure his conquests, and to keep the latter district in subjection, erected a line of forts across what has been termed the upper isthmus, from the Forth to the Clyde; and in the reign of Antoninus, Lollius Urbicus raised on the same site a new chain of fortresses, and joined them together by an immense continuous rampart of earth and turf, which, from the name of the Emperor under which it was built, is usually termed the Wall of Antoninus. It is now called popularly Graham's Dike, and along its course are frequently found inscribed tablets, commemorating the portion built by the different troops and cohorts of the Roman army. Some writers assert that Agricola, in A.D. 84, also extended from Solway Frith to Tynemouth a chain of stations, which, in A.D. 124, were connected by a deep ditch, an earthen rampart, and a great wall raised by the Emperor Hadrian, or Adrian, as an obstruction to the sallies of the Caledonians, who, obstinately refusing to yield to the imperial eagle, frequently descended in rage from their mountains, notwithstanding the barrier raised by Agricola, and penetrating into the Roman territory, committed dreadful ravages.

After the departure of Agricola, in A.D. 85, this unbending people overran a great part of the country to the north of the Humber; and being joined by numbers of the discontented Britons, who were anxious to throw off their subjection to a foreign yoke, carried on a predatory war against the Romans. To quell the revolt, Julius Severus was appointed Governor of Britain, but was shortly afterwards recalled, and Priscus Licinius was sent to succeed him. But the Caledonians continuing their incursions, the Emperor Hadrian himself arrived in Britain, in A.D. 120, to oppose them in person, and fixed his residence at Eboracum. He brought with him the Sixth Roman Legion, styled *Legio Sexta Victrix*,\* which consisted of about 6,000 foot and 600 horse; but on his approach the invaders retreated. From what he had seen,

\* The title *Victrix*, or Conquering, was bestowed on those legions distinguished for some feat of extraordinary bravery. The first officer of the legion was called *Legatis Legionis*, and he acted under the superior order of the General of the army of which his legion formed a part, or the Governor of the province where it happened to be stationed.

Hadrian was convinced that the chain of forts erected by Agricola, was not sufficient to resist the assaults of these active and persevering barbarians; and he determined to confine their incursions by raising that formidable barrier across the island, from the Solway to the Tyne, of which we still trace the stupendous remains. An immense wall, nearly seventy miles\* in length, extending over plain and mountain, from Bowness, on the Solway Frith, to the now celebrated locality of Walls-End, near the mouth of the Tyne, accompanied on its southern side by an earthen vallum and a deep ditch. This celebrated wall was a massive work of masonry, varying from 6 to nearly 10 feet in thickness, and from 18 to 19 feet high. On the north side it was accompanied by a foss 86 feet wide, and 15 feet deep. To the south was another lesser foss, with a triple entrenchment of earth and stones. The wall was fortified with a formidable series of 28 stationary towns, with intermediate mile castles and watch towers. These towns or stations were a short distance apart along the line of the wall, and each consisted of a citadel, strongly walled, with streets and habitations within, and often extensive suburbs without. The smaller fortresses, as we have just observed, stood between these towns, at the distance of one Roman mile from each other; and between each of these again were four small subsidiary buildings, which for distinction have been termed watch towers. And for its defence were assigned four squadrons and fourteen cohorts, composing an army of 10,000 men. The remains of this great rampart at the present day rises in some parts six feet above the surface.

Until lately it was the custom of historians to consider the wall only as the structure raised by Hadrian, while the earthen vallum or rampart was ascribed to Severus; but the Rev. J. Collingwood Bruce, of Newcastle-upon Tyne, clearly proves, in his interesting volume on "The Roman Wall," recently published, that both are parts of one work, erected by the former Emperor. This immense erection seems to have been part of a system of circumvallation adopted by the Emperor Hadrian, for it appears that remains of similar walls are found on the distant frontiers in Germany.

Having thus made provision for the future security of the province, and having also restored order, and driven back the Caledonians into their fastnesses, Hadrian returned to Rome, leaving the Sixth Legion at York, where its head quarters continued for three hundred years.

The expedition of Hadrian to Britain, which was commemorated by several

\* The word "mile" is derived from the Latin word *mille*, a thousand—a thousand steps or paces making a Roman mile. The mile varies in different countries.

coins in large and middle brass, seems to have been followed by a period of profound tranquillity. In A.D. 138, Hadrian was succeeded by the Emperor Antoninus Pius, whose Proprætor in Britain was Lollius Urbicus, a man of energy and talent, which he was soon called to exercise in suppressing a new irruption of the northern tribes.

The Caledonians appeared in a state of insurrection on the south of Hadrian's wall, aided by a remnant of the Brigantes, who seem to have preserved a precarious independence, perhaps in the rugged country extending from the wilds of Lancashire over the lake district, and who had frequently made predatory outbreaks. The latter were quickly overwhelmed, and the greater part of the tribe destroyed. The northern insurgents were driven into their mountains, and Lollius Urbicus caused the new barrier to be raised for their restraint, which we already noticed under the name of the wall of Antoninus. The energetic measures of Urbicus restored tranquillity for a time.

The Romans had now begun to treat the natives with more respect, and to consider them as component parts of the empire; the Britons were allowed to become participators of the laws, privileges, and immunities of the Romans; they became eligible to every situation and office for which they were qualified, and they no longer endured a disgraceful exclusion from intermarrying with their conquerors. By this wise act the Romans gained some of her best commanders and Emperors. The ancient British habits too began to be disesteemed by the chiefs, and regarded as a badge of barbarism. Tacitus, describing the change which the manners of the Britons underwent, says, "They, who a little while before disdained the language, now affected the eloquence of Rome; this produced an esteem for our dress, and the *Toga* came into general use, by degrees they adopted our vicious indulgences, porticoes, baths, and splendid tables; this among those uninformed people was called cultivation, whereas, in fact, it was only an appendage to slavery."

In the reign of Commodus, about the year 183, the Caledonians again took up arms, routed the Roman army, and ravaged the country as far as York. To repel these invaders, the Emperor immediately sent over as Proprætor, Ulpius Marcellus, a soldier of approved valour, with a great body of troops, who quickly restored peace. But it was of short duration, owing to the revolts of the natives, the incursions of the Caledonians, and the insubordination of the Roman army. In the reign of Severus, Virius Lupus, then Proprætor in Britain, wrote to that Emperor "informing him of the insurrections and inroads of the barbarians (as the native inhabitants were called), to beg that he might have either a greater force, or that the Emperor would come over

in person." Severus chose the latter, and in 208 (the 14th year of his reign), attended by his two sons, Caracalla and Geta, and a numerous army, he arrived in Britain, and immediately advanced to York, which was besieged by the Britons, under Fulgenius, a Scythian General, whom the natives had drawn over to their assistance. The Emperor, now sixty years old, and sorely afflicted with gout, resolved to conduct the war against them in person. He rejected all overtures for peace, except on their entire submission to his mercy, which hard condition they rejected. They accordingly raised the siege, and retired north of Hadrian's wall, whither the Emperor, with his son Caracalla, and a great force proceeded, leaving his other son, Geta, in company with Papinius, an eminent Roman lawyer in York, to administer justice until his return. Severus having at length, in A.D. 209, subdued or concluded a treaty with these hitherto unconquered people, at a loss, according to Dion and others, of no less than 50,000 men, took hostages of them, and returned to York. It has been popularly supposed, as we have already observed, that the following year was employed in the construction of that immense line of fortification from the Solway to the Tyne, which recent examinations, and the careful consideration of ancient testimonies, have left little doubt was the sole work of the Emperor Hadrian; though the historian of Severus has not hesitated to pronounce that stupendous erection the principal glory of his reign. Severus carried his conquests as far as the Highlands of Scotland, and it is not probable that after having added so much to the Roman territory towards the north, he would raise a barrier on the limits to which the Roman power had been confined when almost at its lowest ebb.

It is possible, however, that Severus may have repaired the wall, and it seems that during his stay at York he often visited its towns and garrisons.

After the Emperor's return to York from Caledonia, it is related that he went to offer sacrifice at the Temple of Bellona, and whilst there, news suddenly arrived that the Mæatæ and the Caldonii (the two great tribes into which all the other tribes of Britain had in a manner merged) had again united, and recommenced their predatory inroads. Furious at the faithlessness of the barbarians, and incensed at the renewal of a war, by an enemy whom he had considered as completely subdued, Severus resolved on their entire extermination; but his own death, which occurred on the 4th February, 211, averted the accomplishment of his sanguinary design. A short time previous to his death, he addressed his sons, Caracalla and Geta, thus:—"I leave you Antonines (a term of affection) a firm and steady government, if you follow my steps, and prove what you ought to be; but weak and tottering,



if you reject my council. Let every part of your conduct tend to each other's good; cherish the soldiery, and then you may despise the rest of mankind. I found the republic disturbed, and everywhere distracted, but to you I leave it firm and quiet—even the Britons. I have been all, and yet I am now no better for it." Then calling for the urn in which his ashes were to be deposited, he exclaimed, "Thou shalt hold what the whole world could scarcely contain." The Roman historian, Eutropius, informs us that this Emperor died at York—he expressly says, "*decessit Eboraci*; and Spartian also says, "*perit Eboraci in Britannia*." The Saxon Chronicle confirms this testimony, by stating that "he reigned seventeen years, and then ended his days at York." (Efer-wick.)

After his death, according to the custom among the Romans, his remains were reduced to ashes. Dion Cassius and Herodian tell us that his body was borne by the soldiers to the funeral pile, about which the army and the two sons of the deceased Emperor made several processions in honour of his memory; that abundance of presents were cast upon it, and that the fire was put to it by Caracalla and Geta; and that the ashes were collected and received into an urn of porphyry, carried to Rome, and deposited in the tomb of the Antonines.

All the writers who have described York have dwelt with much exultation on the magnificence of the funeral obsequies of Severus. The funeral pile is stated to have been erected beyond the village of Holgate, about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  mile west of the City, and the eminence now called *Severus Hill* is doubtless indebted for its present appellation to its connection, in some way, with that funeral ceremony.\* Drake is of opinion that this mount or tumuli, where the funeral rites were performed, was raised by the soldiers that the memory of their great captain might survive in Britain; but other historians maintain that the hill is a natural elevation on the face of the country; and recent excavations, for the purpose of forming the large reservoir for the new water-works, have confirmed that opinion.

\* When a Roman died, his body was laid out and washed, and a small coin was placed in his mouth, which it was supposed he would require to pay his passage in Charon's boat. If the corpse was to be burnt, it was carried on the day of the funeral in solemn procession to the funeral pile, which was raised in the place set apart for the purpose, called the *ustrinum*. The pile, called *rogus*, or *pyra*, was built of the most inflammable wood; and when the body had been placed upon it, the whole was ignited by the relations of the deceased. Perfumes and spirituous liquids were often poured over it; and objects of different kinds, which had belonged to the individual when alive, were thrown into the flames. When the whole was consumed, and the fire extinguished, wine was scattered over the ashes, after which the nearest relatives gathered what remained of

After the death of Severus, his two sons, in compliance with the will of their father, jointly assumed the imperial purple; but the elder brother, Caracalla, a man of vile disposition, perceiving that his half-brother, Geta, was in much favour with the army, on a slight pretence of mutiny, ordered no less than 20,000 soldiers and persons of both sexes, whom he considered as Geta's friends, to be put to death; and with his own hands he murdered Geta in the arms of his mother.\* This monster then returned to Rome, from whence he went to Syria, where he was assassinated at the instigation of Opillius Macrinus, by Martialis, a desperate soldier, who had been refused the rank of centurion.

For a considerable time no occurrence of importance took place in Britain, though the Sixth Legion continued at York. But the country north of the Humber, where the Romans had settled in great numbers, began to assume a beautiful aspect. They cleared the woods, drained the marshes, built or improved all the principal towns; the cheerless cabin of the British chief was exchanged for the Roman Villa, with its decorated porticoes and tessellated pavements; and some of the most important Roman stations were scattered over the once wild haunts of the fierce Brigantes.

In the year 287, during the reign of the Emperor Dioclesian, Carausius, a Briton, who had the command of a fleet on the Belgic coast, passed over into Britain; assumed the imperial purple, and set at defiance the whole power of Rome. He is said to have been proclaimed Emperor at York. This usurper overcame, with the assistance of the Picts and Scots, with whom he leagued, Quintus Bassianus, a Roman Lieutenant, who was sent over by the Emperor, to dispossess and destroy him. After reigning for seven years, an independent Emperor of Britain, he was treacherously mur-

dered, and the bones and the cinders of the dead, and placed them in an urn, in which they were committed to the grave. The site of the *ustrinum* has been supposed to have been traced in the neighbourhood of several towns in Roman Britain. Persons of rank were burnt with greater ceremonies than were observed on ordinary occasions, and on a spot chosen for the purpose instead of the ordinary *ustrinum*. The Romans had other modes of sepulture besides that of cremation. The bodies were sometimes buried entire, but in several different manners.—*The Celt, the Roman, and the Saxon*, by Thomas Wright, Esq., M.A., F.S.A., &c.

\* Although it has been generally agreed by local historians, that the murder of Geta and Papinius by Caracalla took place at York, Gibbon, in his *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire* (chap. vi. pp. 52, 53), seems to be quite unconscious that any difference of opinion prevailed as to whether it happened at York or at Rome. The silence of such an authority, on a question incidentally so important to the accuracy of his history, is very ominous of the invalidity of the claim of York to have witnessed the assassination, as well as the death and deification of some of the masters of the world.—*York Guide*.

dered at York, by his friend Alectus, who appears to have caused himself to be proclaimed Emperor in that City. Both of these usurpers were of plebeian origin. Some authors assert that Alectus was murdered by Asclepiodotus, who also seized on the government of Britain, whilst others contend that Alectus reigned until Constantius, surnamed Chlorus, was elected Emperor at Rome, in A.D. 304, when the latter came over immediately to Britain, and slew him with a sword of his own making—he (Alectus) having been, as it is asserted, in early life a whitesmith. Constantius, though but a Senator of Rome in the reign of Aurelian, was of imperial descent; and having some years before visited this island in the character of Proprætor, is said to have married Helena, or Helen, a British Princess—but that Helen was of British origin, appears to be a mere fable. Constantius and Helena were, however the parents of *Constantine the Great*, the first Christian Emperor of Rome, who was generally supposed to have been born at York, in the year 272, until Niebuhr published his “Lectures on the History of Rome,” wherein he shows that in all probability, Naissus, in Mœsia, was the place of his birth.

Drake and other local historians seem very desirous to prove that Constantine was born in York during one of the expeditions of his father to Britain, but little reliance is to be placed upon many circumstances of this nature, connected with history so many centuries ago—especially when historians are found vieing with each other in giving, as they think, an importance to the City to which, in many instances, it has no claim. In the instance before us, Gibbon, in a note to the fourteenth chapter of his *Decline and Fall*, destroys any lingering inclination, which a partial citizen might retain, to believe that such was the case.

Constantius resided at the Imperial Palace at York for two years, and died there on the 25th of July, 306, “fifteen months after he had received the title of Augustus, and almost fourteen years and a half after he had been promoted to the rank of Cæsar.”\* The ceremony of the deification of the remains of Constantius was performed with the usual splendour at York;—Drake has collected, with great diligence, an account of the costly character of the solemnities.† Several medals in memory of Constantius were struck on this occasion, which have the head of the Emperor *velatum et laureatum*; and this inscription, “DIVO CONSTANTIO PIO.” On the reverse is an altar with an eagle on each side of it, holding a label in their beaks between them, inscribed “MEMORIA FELIX.”

\* Gibbon's *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, xiv. p. 159.

† Eboracum, p. 43.

There was a local tradition that the urn containing the ashes of Constantius was deposited in a vault beneath the Church of St. Helen-on-the-Walls, York; that it was discovered about the time of the Reformation; and that the urn was preserved for some time in that church.

Constantine the Great, the son and successor of Constantius, is said to have taken great pains to be present at his father's death, the better to secure the favour of the British legions. Gibbon relates the arts by which he induced the imperial authorities in Eboracum to proclaim him Emperor of the West. However, it is certain that he assumed the imperial purple at York, with the titles of Cæsar and Augustus, and that there he was presented with a *Tufa*, or golden globe, as a symbol of his sovereignty over the island of Britain. He prized this emblem highly, and upon his conversion to Christianity, had a cross placed upon it, and had it carried before him in all his processions. The *Tufa* has been the usual sign of royalty in England, since that period, and is considered part of the regalia.

Soon after the inauguration of the Emperor Constantine, he not only left Britain, but Europe also; and removed the seat of empire from Rome to Byzantium, called afterwards from him, Constantinople.

In 312, Constantine renounced paganism, and embraced Christianity, and in the following year, after the conquest of Italy, he made a solemn declaration of his sentiments in the celebrated edict of Milan, restored peace to the Christian church, and promulgated the principle of religious liberty.

Eusebius ascribes the conversion of Constantine to the miraculous sign of a cross, which was displayed in the heavens, with the legend, "*In hoc Signo Vincis*" (By this sign thou shalt conquer), while he meditated and prepared the Italian expedition.

The Britons remained quiet till the year 326, when they revolted, and the Scots having come to their assistance, the Romans, under the command of Traherus, their Lieutenant, were defeated, and Octavius, the British chief, was crowned King of all Britain, at York.

After this, Octavius ungratefully sought to dispossess his benefactors, the Picts and Scots, of that part of the country allotted to them by Casarius; but the King of Scotland being informed of his intention, came suddenly upon him, and compelled him to flee to Norway.

The Romans continued to hold their sway in Britain for nearly a century after the death of Constantine the Great, but their writings afford but scanty materials for illustrating the history of Yorkshire.

The Emperor Constantine having taken the flower of the British youth to his wars in Gaul, Britain was left open to the devastating incursions of the

Caledonians, or Picts and Scots,\* who in 364 renewed their attacks; and the country was at the same time harassed by the Saxons, whose predatory descents on the coast indicated their intention of seizing on a dominion, which imperial Rome now held with a feeble hand.

Internal dissensions, and external assaults were now hastening fast the downfall of the empire of Rome, and in A.D. 426, the Romans finally relinquished all possession, power, and authority, in Britain, in the 481st year after Cæsar's coming over. "The tyrants had left none but half foreigners in our fields," writes William of Malmsbury, "none but gluttons and debauchees in our cities; Britain robbed of the support of her vigorous youth, and the benefit of the liberal arts, became a prey to her neighbours, who had long marked her out for destruction. For immediately after, multitudes lost their lives by the incursions of the Picts and Scots, villages were burnt, cities demolished, and all things laid waste by fire and sword. The inhabitants of the island were greatly perplexed, and thought it better to trust to anything than a battle: some of them fled to the mountains, others having buried their treasures, many of which have been dug up in our age, betook themselves to Rome for assistance."

The *Roman Government* in Britain was vested in a Prefect, or Proprætor, who possessed the whole administrative power, judicial and military; a Quæstor or Procurator, appointed by the Emperor to arrange the affairs of the revenue; and a numerous army of legionaries and auxiliaries secured the obedience of the people, and protected the country from foreign invasion. In the reign of Constantine, both the form of government and the territorial divisions were altered. That monarch divided his vast dominions into four prefectures—Italy, Gaul, the East, and Illyria. Britain was included in the

\* Scotland, the ancient name of which was Caledonia, was first inhabited by a people who came from Scythia or Scandinavia, which now includes Norway, Sweden, and part of Denmark, and took the name of *Picts* or *Pehits*, from a country so styled in the north of Norway. In the time of the Saxons they were called *Peohits*, and their country *Peohitland*. They were called Caledonians from *Celyddon*, which in the ancient British language meant the coverts. Some say they were descendants of Scythiac, or Gothic colonists, who conquered North Britain some ages before the Christian era. The Scots were originally Gallic Celts, who in early ages migrated from the western shores of Britain into Ireland. They made many marauding incursions into the Roman territories on the south-west coast of Scotland. At length they settled in Kintyre, and had colonized Argyle, fifty years after the Saxon Conquest, when a bloody struggle ensued between them and the natives, which, at the end of 340 years, terminated in the extinction of the Pictish government, and the union of the Picts and Scots, under Kenneth Mac Alpin, in A.D. 843.

prefecture of Gaul, and the deputy of that prefect resided at York, and was called the Vicar of Britain. His subordinates were the Consulars of *Valentia* and *Mazima Cesariensis*; and the Presidents of the sub-divisions called *Flavia*, *Britannia Prima*, and *Britannia Secunda*. The superintendence of the army was committed to three Dukes; the first commanded from the north frontier to the Humber; the second, with the title of Count of the Saxon Shore, the troops on the coast from the Humber to the Land's End in Cornwall; and the third, the Count of Britain, commanded the garrison in the interior.

Throughout the provinces were scattered a great number of inhabited towns, and military posts, the names of which are still preserved in the Itineraries of Richard and Antoninus. They were partly of British and partly of Roman origin; and were divided into four classes, gradually descending in the scale of privilege and importance. The *Colonies* claimed the first rank, and were inhabited by veterans rewarded by the lands of the conquered nations. Each colony was a miniature representation of the parent city. It adopted the same customs and was governed by the same laws. In Britain there were nine of these establishments, two of civil and seven of a military description, namely, Richborough, London, Colchester, Bath, Gloucester, Caerleon, Chester, Lincoln, and Chesterfield. The towns of the second class were called *Municipia*, and were occupied by Roman citizens. The advantages enjoyed by the Colonies were nearly equalled, and in some respects surpassed by the privileges of these municipal cities, the inhabitants of which were exempted from the operation of the imperial statutes, and possessed the right of choosing their own magistrates, and of enacting their own laws. Privileges so valuable were reserved for the reward of extraordinary merit, and Britain could only boast of two *Municipia*—Verulam (near the present town of St. Albans), and York. The *Latin Cities* were the next in rank, and their inhabitants had the right of electing their own magistrates annually; and the *Stipendiary Towns* were charged with the imperial tribute from which the other towns were exempt. These distinctions were however gradually abolished. Antoninus granted to every provincial of rank and opulence, the freedom of the city; and Caracalla extended the indulgence to the whole body of the natives.

The science of agriculture seems to have made great progress about this time, for Tacitus observes, that, except the olive, the vine, and some other fruits peculiar to the hotter climates, this country produced all things else in great plenty; and that the fruits of the earth, in coming up, were forward, but

very slow in ripening; the cause of which was the excessive moisture of the earth and air; and Strabo observes, that the air was more subject to rain than snow.

Camden says, that so happy is Britain in a most plentiful product of all sorts of grain, that Orpheus, (or more truly *Onomacritus*) hath called it the very seat of Ceres; and, continues the same writer, "former times this was as it were the granary and magazine of the Western Empire, for from hence the Romans were wont every year, in 800 vessels larger than barks, to transport vast quantities of corn for the supply of their armies in garrison upon the frontiers of Germany." He also quotes an encomium on Britain, from an old orator, in a panegyric to Constantine, thus, "O fortunate Britain, the most happy country in the world, in that thou didst first behold Constantine our Emperor. Thee hath Nature deservedly enriched with the choicest blessings of heaven and earth. Thou neither feelest the excessive colds of winter, nor the scorching heats of summer. Thy harvests reward thy labours with so vast an increase, as to supply thy tables with bread, and thy cellars with liquor. Thy woods have no savage beasts; no serpents harbour there to hurt the traveller. Innumerable are thy herds of cattle, and the flocks of sheep, which feed thee plentifully, and clothe thee richly. And as to the comforts of life, the days are long, and no night passes without some glimpse of light. For whilst those utmost plains of the sea shore are so flat and low as not to cast a shadow to create night, they never lose the sight of the heavens and stars; but the sun, which to us appears to set, seems there only to pass by."

*Isacius Tzetes*, a famous Greek writer, affirms that the fertility and pleasantness of Britain gave occasion for some to imagine, that these were the *Fortunate Islands*, and those the *Seats of the Blessed*, where the poets tell us the face of nature smiled with one perpetual spring.

Many striking evidences of the stupendous public works accomplished by the Romans during their residence in this country still remain. "Like a conqueror of modern times, they bestowed extraordinary attention on their public roads and walls, and at a distance of 1,400 years, we can trace in legible characters around us, the labours of the mistress of the world." The Roman veterans were no less famed for their valour in the field than for their knowledge and assiduity in architecture and sculpture, for they fought and laboured with equal skill and vigour, and it is much to be regretted that this wise policy of keeping the soldiery usefully employed in time of peace, should have been abandoned by the modern European nations.

The Sixth Legion, called *Legia Sexta Victrix*, remained at York, until the

final desertion of the island by the Romans. This legion was brought out of Germany by the Emperor Hadrian, and its station at York may easily be traced for a period of more than 300 years. The ninth legion was also stationed at York, but is generally supposed to have been early dissolved, and incorporated with the sixth. This legion consisted of six to seven thousand troops, of which about one-tenth part was horse, and the remainder foot soldiers.

The Roman soldiers employed much of their leisure hours in perpetuating their names, or complimenting their victorious leaders by monumental inscriptions; and also by inscriptions commemorative of the completion of buildings and public works; and in erecting and inscribing statues in honour of their principal deities; but after the introduction of the Christian religion these statues were destroyed. Many Roman coins have been found in the neighbourhood of the great stations, where they had been secreted either by the Roman soldiers, or by the affrighted Britons, when the northern tribes or the Saxon invaders burst in upon their country, and rased their towns to the ground.

ROMAN ROADS.—The roads of the ancient Britons were nothing more than tracks which led through the dense forests, and even part of the morasses, and pointed to those parts of the rivers where they were fordable, or where they had something of a ferry. The Romans bestowed very great attention, labour, and expense on their public highways, and they never thought a country subdued until they had roads for the purpose of marching their legions through it. They made roads in this country many of which remain even now, and when they came to *streams*, they spanned them by arches of masonry. The Roman roads generally consisted of a regular pavement, formed by large boulder stones or fragments of rock, embedded in gravel, and varied in width from four to fourteen yards, and were carried over *rivers*, not by bridges but by fords; and, being thus firmly paved with stone, they were commonly called Streets. *Stratum* is the word made use of by Bede, quite through his work, to denote a Roman road.

The four principal Roman military roads which traverse Britain were the *Walling*, or *Watheling Street*; the *Ermine*, or *Hermin Street*; the *Fosseway*; and the *Icknild Street*. The Roman roads are generally very direct. They seem seldom to have turned out of their course to avoid a hill; and in some instances we find them proceeding direct up acclivities which we should not encounter at the present day. A Roman road runs over the top of one of the mountains of Westmorland, almost 2,000 feet above the level of the sea, which is named from its elevation, High Street.



The *Watling Street*,\* which divided England in length, commenced at the port of Rutupia, now Richborough, in Kent, and extended to the limits of the Roman Wall on the Tyne. It is probable that this great highway entered Yorkshire somewhere in the neighbourhood of Bawtry, but the exact point is not ascertainable. It is certain, however, from traces, that it passed through *Danum*, or Doncaster, over Scawsby and Pigburn Leas to Barnsdale, through Pontefract Park to Castleford, the ancient *Legiolium*. From this station it continued to *Calcaria*, now Tadcaster, and from thence to *Eboracum* (York), the chief seat of the Roman power in Britain. From York it was carried on to *Isurium* (Aldborough), where it crossed the river, and thence by Leeming Lane to *Cattaracton*, now Catterick Bridge. Crossing over the Swale, it turned more to the northward, and passing over the Tees at *Ad Tisam* (Piersebridge), it entered the County of Durham, and thence continued to the above mentioned Roman Wall.

The *Ermine Street* extended from London to Lincoln and Warrington, crossing Northamptonshire at Castor, and passing through Yorkshire. The *Fosseway* led from Bath to Lincoln and Newark; and the *Ickneld*, or *Icknild Street*, extended from Caistor, in Norfolk, through Colchester to Lincoln.

Besides the Watling Street and Ermine Street, several other Roman roads ran through the *Ager Eboracensis*, or Province of York, in various directions, and for the discovery of some of them, as also many other Roman works, we are mainly indebted to the industry of Francis Drake, Esq., the learned historian of the City of York, and the late Rev. Thomas Leman. A military road led from *Mancunium*, or Manchester, to York, passing through the

\* The etymology of this, the greatest of the Roman roads, has caused much discussion amongst antiquarians. Hoveden thinks that it was called the Watling Street, from Wathe or Wathla, a British King. Whittaker, the Manchester historian, and Stukeley, are of opinion that it was the Guetheling road—Sarn Guethelin, or the road of the Irish, the G being pronounced as W. Camden thinks that it derives its name from an unknown Vitellianus, but that its etymology is from the Saxon Wadla, a beggar, because this road was the resort of such people for the charity of travellers. Spelman fancies it was called Werlam-Street, from its passing through Verulam. Somner derives the name from the Belgic Wentelin, while Baxter contends that it was made by the original Britons. Dr. Wilkes says, that it was more indented and crooked than other Roman roads usually are, and supposes that it was formed of *wattles*, which was the idea also of Pointer. A learned writer in the *Mirror* of 1829, contends that it was made from station to station, and hence its deviation from a straight line, which in many parts is so apparent. He is also of opinion that it was planned and formed by Vespasian, the celebrated Roman general in Britain, after the various stations through the kingdom were finished, and that he named it, in compliment to the Emperor Vitellius, *Viteliki Strata Via*, Watling-Street Way.

township of Stainland, near Halifax, by the way of *Cambodunum*, supposed to be Almondbury, near Huddersfield. It kept the Calder on its left till it crossed that river about a mile below Dewsbury, where it fell in with the turnpike road to Wakefield. From this place it kept the direction of the present highway, half the way to Pontefract, and then inclining to the left, joined the great military road from Doncaster to York.

Another of these Roman ways ran from Chesterfield, by way of Sheffield, Barnsley, Hemworth, and Acworth, and joined the Watling Street at Pontefract; and a vicinal way appears to have passed through Pontefract, in a southerly direction, to the villages of Darrington, Wentbridge, Smeaton, Campsall, and Hatfield. There was also a road from Manchester, by *Cambodunum*, Wakefield, and the Street-houses. A Roman military way ran from York to Derventio, near Stamford Bridge, where it divided into two branches, the one leading to Dunsley Bay, the *Dunus Sinus* of Ptolemy; and the other to Scarborough and Filey. The branch leading from Stamford Bridge to Dunsley Bay is now called Wade's Causeway, and is supposed to have derived its name from the Saxon Duke, Wada, who is said to have resided at a Castle near the coast. Drake, in his History of York, tells us that he "had his first intelligence of this road, and the camp upon it, from T. Robinson, Esq., of Pickering, a gentleman well versed in this kind of learning." Mr. Hinderwell, on the authority of Mr. Robert King (who discovered the vestiges of the *Dunus Sinus* road, in the fields near the village of Broughton, where eleven Roman urns were dug up in making fences for the enclosure, and the stones of the road have been frequently ploughed up), gives a clearer idea of this highway, in the following passage:—"There was also another Roman road which passed westward, through the range of towns called Street towns, viz:—Appleton-le-Street, Barton-le-Street, &c. The great Roman road, or Ermine Street, continues by the town of Barugh, and not far from Thornton and Risborough, to the barrows near the little village of Cawthorn, or Coldthorn, where there is a small spring; and a house in the village still retains the name of Bibo, supposed to be derived from having been a drinking house of the soldiers from the barrow camps. Hence the road proceeds to Stopebeck, which it crosses in the line of the Egton road, and then continues, at a small distance from that road, to a stone cross, called Malo Cross, which it passes at about the distance of forty yards on the west of the cross. It then runs northward to Keys-ec, which it crosses about sixty yards east of the Egton road, and pursues the northern direction, until it crosses Wheel-dale-ec, at the point of junction of that ec and Keys-ec, whence it proceeds by the Hunt-house to July or Julius Park, to the ancient Castle of Mulgrave,

situate near *Dunus Sinus*, or Dunsley Bay, in the neighbourhood of Whitby, where several Roman urns have been found.”\*

Another Roman road ran from York to Bridlington Bay or Filey. This celebrated bay is called by Ptolemy *Gabrandtovicorum Sinus Portuosus*, or *Salutaris*. From it a Roman ridge, commonly called the Dykes, is apparent for many miles over the Wolds, directing in a straight line for York. The late Sir Christopher Sykes discovered a vestige of this road at Sledmere, in levelling a high bank, forming one side of the *Slade* near the *Mere*. “The workmen came upon a very distinct layer of small gravelly stones, at almost two feet six inches from the surface, laid in a convex form, nine feet wide, and six or seven inches thick, in the direction of a line between York and Hummanby; but after it ascends the hill from Sledmere, it is more in the form of an intrenchment than a road, and has probably been used at different periods for both purposes.”† Drake traces this road from Sledmere, by Wharram-le-Street and Settrington, to Malton and York.

There was a Roman way from York to the Prætorium of Antoninus, which Camden places at Patrington. Drake fixes the first military station from York, on this road, at *Derventio*, or Stainsfordburgh, now called Stamford Bridge, and the next station at *Delgovitia*, now Londesborough. From the latter station, part of the Ermine Street, called Humber Street, ran south to the village of Brough (*ad Petuarium*) on the Humber; and from the station *ad Abum* on the opposite side (Wintringham), was continued to *Lindern*, now Lincoln.

The great military road from York to Lincoln, as marked out in the fifth and eighth iter of Antoninus, was by *Danum* (Doncaster), and crossed the Trent at Littleborough, the ancient *Argolicum*. Thus did the military roads converge in every direction from the extremities of the province to Eboracum, or York, their common centre.

When the Romans retired from Britain, and the country fell into a state of anarchy and confusion, the roads were neglected and went into ruin, and became almost impassable, so that a journey of a few miles could not be made without guides.

*Roman Stations.*—Besides the great Roman station of *Eboracum*, or *Eburacum*, at York, this County contained also in the West Riding, the stations of *Iserium*, at Aldborough; *Legiolum*, near the junction of the rivers Aire and Calder; *Danum*, at Doncaster; *Olicana*, at Ilkley; and *Cambodunum*,

\* Hinderwall's History of Scarborough, pp. 19, 20.

† Allen's History of Yorkshire, p. 14.

at Aldmonbury, near Huddersfield. The stations in the North Riding were those of *Cataractonium*, at Catterick; and *Derventio*, at Stamford Bridge, or at Alby, or Aldby, a mile farther northward; and in the East Riding, *Peturaria*, at Beverley, or Brough; *Delgovitia*, at Londesborough; and *Prætorium*, at Patrington.

Traces of *Roman Encampments* are found in several places, and will be noticed under their proper heads in this work. (*For a further account of Roman Remains, see the History of York, at subsequent pages.*)

## Anglo-Saxon Period.

While under the dominion of the Romans, England and Wales contained thirty *Civitates*, or Seigniories, governed by their own magistrates; and it is supposed that the Britons, when left to themselves, established the same number of republics. But civil discord very soon established military tyrannies; and to aggravate these evils, the Picts and Scots were continually renewing their attacks on the divided Britons. In a few years every trace of popular government had vanished, and the ambition, the wars, and the vices of the petty Chieftains, or Kings, together with the frequent incursions of the above-named depredators, inflicted on the country more permanent and extensive injuries than had ever been suffered from the incursions of foreign enemies. In the north, district after district became the scene of devastation at the hands of the northern tribes; and the approach of danger admonished the more southern Britons to provide for their own safety. Vortigern, the most powerful of the British Kings, learning that a Saxon squadron of three *Chiules*, or long ships, was cruising in the channel in quest of adventure, under the command of the brothers Hengist and Horsa, hastened to solicit their assistance in banishing the northern invaders. The Saxon chiefs eagerly accepted the invitation of the British Prince to aid in fighting his battles, and depend for their reward upon his gratitude.

The Saxons were confederated tribes, consisting of the Angles, the Jutes, and the genuine Saxons, who had long been settled on the shores of the German Ocean, and extended from the Eyder to the Rhine. They were a bold and warlike people, trained to arms from their boyhood, and their only profession was pillage by land and piracy by sea. Their whole time was devoted to indolence and to rapine. Every warrior attached himself to the fortunes of some favourite chieftain, whom he followed in his piratical expedition; whilst the culture of their lands, and the care of their flocks, were consigned to the women and slaves.

Zosimus tells us, that they were in general a warlike nation ; and were looked upon to be the most valiant of all the Germans, both for greatness of mind, strength of body, and a hardy constitution. Marcellinus observes, that the Romans dreaded them above all others, because their motions were always sudden ; and Orosius says, that "for their courage and activity they were terrible." They were eminent for their tallness, symmetry of parts, and exactness of features. Wittichindus, a monk, has left us this description of them, "the Franks were amazed to see men of such vast bodies, and so great souls. They wondered at their strange habit and armour, at their hair hanging down upon their shoulders, and above all, at their courage and resolution."

Sidonius, the eloquent Bishop of Clermont, in describing these barbarians, says, "We have not a more cruel and more dangerous enemy than the Saxons. They overcome all who have courage to oppose them. They surprise all who are so imprudent as not to be prepared for their attack. When they pursue they infallibly overtake ; when they are pursued, their escape is certain. They despise danger ; they are inured to shipwreck ; they are eager to purchase booty with the peril of their lives. Tempests, which to others are so dreadful, to them are subjects of joy. The storm is their protection when they are pressed by the enemy, and a cover for their operations when they meditate an attack. Before they quit their own shores, they devote to the altars of their Gods the tenth part of the principal captives ; and when they are on the point of returning, the lots are cast with an affectation of equity, and the impious vow is fulfilled."

The Saxons, according to Lingard, were invited to Britain by Vortigern in the year 449. Ancient writers, however, are at variance respecting the exact year ; "but," writes Camden, "at what time soever they came over, it is certain they showed wonderful courage, and this tempered with great prudence ; for in a short time they became so considerable, both for numbers, discipline, and conquests, that they were in a most prosperous and powerful condition, and their victory in a manner entire and absolute." All they conquered, except some few who took refuge in the uncultivated western parts, yielded, and became one nation, and embraced their laws, name, and language.

Such is the character of the auxiliaries invited by Vortigern to resist the invaders. For six years they served him with fidelity, but the Picts and Scots were no sooner driven back to their native hills, than the Saxons, in their greedy desire to possess the fertile country for which they had been fighting, obtained large reinforcements from their own country, and turned

their swords upon the Britons, who made an obstinate resistance, in which they fought many great battles under Vortigern and the renowned King Arthur.

The Picts and Scots having succeeded in subduing all the country north of the Humber, and in rendering York little short of a heap of ruins; Hengist, the Saxon general, attacked and defeated them with great slaughter near the City. After rescuing York, and all the country south of the river Tees, and, as has just been observed, banishing the invaders to their native mountains, the Saxons received large reinforcements, and turned their weapons against the Britons. Several bloody battles were fought, and Kent was conquered by Hengist. Such is the account given by the Saxon chronicle; but the British writers tell a different tale. They attribute the loss of Kent to the infatuation of Vortigern and the treacherous policy of Hengist. They tell us that the British King having become enamoured of the beautiful Rowena, daughter of Hengist, divorced his Queen, took the former to his bed, and bestowed on his father-in-law the Kingdom of Kent. The Britons being satisfied that the Saxons intended to settle in this country, sent for Aurelius Ambrosius, Prince of Armorica, who is described as of Roman origin, the son of parents who had worn the purple, and a brave and unassuming warrior, to assist in defending them. Hengist, hearing of their embassy, privately sent his sons Ohta and Abisa to secure all the northern fortresses; who, strictly observing their father's instructions, feigned accusations against many of the leading characters at York and its vicinity, charging them with a design of betraying their countrymen into the hands of those enemies whom the Saxons had defeated; and under this pretence put many of them to death, some secretly, others openly, as actually convicted of the treasons laid to their charge.

Vortimer, the son of Vortigern, now placed himself at the head of the Britons, attacked the Saxons before the arrival of Ambrosius, and defeated them in four successive battles. Shortly afterwards Ambrosius arrived, and slew Hengist in an obstinate and bloody battle at the village of Coningsborough, about five miles from Doncaster. His two sons, Ohta and Abisa, fled with the shattered remains of their army; the former to York, and the latter to Aldborough, but they were quickly pursued by Ambrosius, to whom they surrendered, and by whom they were pardoned. According to Gildas, Ambrosius perished in a domestic quarrel with Guitolin. Uter, surnamed Pendragon, succeeded his brother Ambrosius as Sovereign, in 490. Ohta and Abisa soon after revolted, and wasted all the country from the borders of Scotland to York, which City they invested. The British King defeated them in battle and took them prisoners.

At the early age of eighteen, Arthur ascended the throne of Britain; and the Saxons taking advantage of his youth, made an attempt upon his kingdom. Ochta and Abisa, having escaped from their captivity, fled home, and returning with a powerful army, again conquered the northern parts of the kingdom, which they divided into two sections, or kingdoms; the northern portion, which was situated north of the Roman Wall, was called *Bernicia*, and its capital was Bamburgh; and the more southern, *Deifyr*, or *Deira*,\* of which York was the capital. Arthur, notwithstanding his youth, attacked the two brothers, and defeated them in several battles; and the following summer he gained a decisive victory over the Saxons, slaying 90,000 of them on Mount Badon,† including all the Saxon generals and the flower of their army. The City of York was delivered up to him immediately on his approach.

After all his conquests this renowned monarch was slain in a rebellion of his own subjects, and by the hands of his own nephew, in 542. Though some writers assign dates to the exploits of this great chieftain, who is said to have fought and to have gained twelve battles; yet Dr. Lingard says, respecting him, "if we divest his memory of that fictitious glory, which has been thrown around it by the imagination of the bards and minstrels, he will sink into equal obscurity with his fellows. We know neither the period when he lived, nor the district over which he reigned. \* \* \* Perhaps when the reader has been told," continues the same author, "that Arthur was a British chieftain, that he fought many battles, that he was murdered by his nephew, and was buried at Glastonbury, were his remains where discovered in the reign of Henry II., he will have learned all that can be ascertained at the present day, respecting that celebrated warrior."‡ The manner of the discovery of his remains is said to be as follows:—King Henry II., whilst in Wales, heard an ancient song of the martial deeds of Arthur, accompanied with the music of the harp, in which it was declared that Glastonbury was the place of his burial. Henry repaired to the spot, and having ordered the ground in the church yard, between two pyramids, to be excavated, at the depth of seven feet a broad stone was discovered, to which was fastened a leaden cross, with this inscription in rude characters:—*Hic Jacet sepultus Rex Arturius in Insula Avalonia*. Nine feet deeper, we are told, his body was found, enclosed in the trunk of a tree hollowed for that

\* The Kingdom of Deira comprehended Yorkshire, Durham, Lancashire, Westmorland, portions of Northumberland, and Cumberland.

† Badon has been generally supposed to have been the City of Bath.

‡ Lingard's History of England, vol. i., pp. 71, 72, *sup.* 8vo.

purpose. Arthur must have been a powerful man, for the chroniclers of the discovery of his remains assert that his shin bone being set on the ground reached up to the middle of the thigh of a tall man; and that the space of his forehead between his eyes was a span broad. His Queen, Guenhera, whom he had married at York, had been buried near him; and both their bones were, by order of the Abbot *Stephen*, translated into the great church, and there royally interred under a marble tomb. The time of King Arthur is generally supposed to be from the year 506 to 542.

Dissensions having arisen and become multiplied among the British Princes, the Saxons gained an entire conquest over all the Britons, save a miserable remnant that would not submit to their yoke, and who sought shelter in the Cambrian mountains, where their posterity, according to Welsh history, have ever since remained.

The conquest of the northern part of the country by the Saxon chieftains was not achieved until the year 547, that is ninety-eight years after the arrival of Hengist and Horsa in Britain.

Besides England, the Saxons possessed themselves of the greater part of Scotland, and the Highlanders, who are the true Scots, call them *Sassons* to this day. The name of England was established in A.D. 800, when Egbert assumed the sovereign authority. Several of the counties are mentioned before the extinction of the Saxon Heptarchy, the smaller provinces or kingdoms of which became counties, as Kent, Sussex, Surrey, and Essex. Hampshire, Somersetshire, Wiltshire, and Berkshire (portions or shires of the kingdom of Wessex) are mentioned before the accession of King Alfred, A.D. 871; Devon and Cornwall about the same time; Gloucestershire soon after, and most of the other countries from north to south are named in history previous to the Norman Conquest, where they use the same language with us, only varying a little in the dialect. And this language we and they kept in a manner uncorrupted, together with the kingdom, for 1,150 years.

"Notwithstanding the primitive barbarism of the Saxons," says a learned writer, "they are the people of whom we have the greatest reason to be proud. The Romans introduced into this island the arts of civilization, and the comforts of domestic life, but the Saxons did more. They not only gave to this kingdom salutary laws, by which the rights and liberties of its inhabitants were defined and made secure, but they laid the foundation on which the fabric of our glorious constitution is built; and by the union of wisdom and piety, they succeeded in gradually forming the minds and manners of society to an intercourse of superior polish, and conducive to the best interests of morality and virtue."



*The Religion of the Saxons*, which was a more barbarous superstition than that of Druidism, which it superseded, prevailed till nearly the close of the sixth century. It was chiefly founded on traditional tales received from their fathers, not reduced to any system. The votive sacrifices of the Britons were addressed to Hu, the god of peace, but those of the Saxons were chiefly offered up to Mercury, whom they called *Woden*, and upon whom they looked as the deity of war, and the ancestor of their princes. His sacrifices were men, and the day consecrated to him was the fourth of the week, which we therefore at this day call *Wednesday*. They believed that if they could only propitiate this deity by their valour, they should be admitted after death into his hall, and there repose on couches, and satiate themselves with strong drink from the skulls of their enemies whom they had killed in battle. The sixth day they consecrated to *Venus*, whom they called *Frea* and *Frico*, from whence we call that day *Friday*; as Tuesday is derived from *Tuisco*, the founder of the German nation; and Sunday, Monday, and Saturday, from the gods *Sunnan*, *Monan*, and *Seater*, to whom those days were dedicated. *Thor*, whom they looked upon as another powerful god, they took to be the ruler of the air, and to him they dedicated the fifth day of the week, or Thursday, and they had also a goddess called *Eoster*, to whom they sacrificed in the month of April; which, observes Bede, they call *Eoster Monarh*, and we at this day call the paschal feast *Easter*. Besides being idolatrous, they were likewise strangely superstitious. Camden tells us that they much used the casting of lots. After cutting a branch from some fruit tree, they divided it into little slips; each of which they distinguished by certain marks, and then cast them promiscuously upon a white cloth. If the consultation was upon public affairs, the priest, but if upon private, the head of the family, after worshipping the gods, took each of the pieces up three several times, and then gave an interpretation according to the mark set upon them. To foretell the events of war, they used to take a captive of the nation against which their design was, and compel him to fight a duel with one of their own country, and by the issue of this, they concluded which side would conquer.

The Saxon conquerors divided Britain into seven portions or kingdoms, since called the *Heptarchy*, over each of which a monarch presided. They lived for a long time in a flourishing condition under their Heptarchy, till at length, as we shall see, all the other kingdoms, shattered with civil wars, were subdued to that of the West Saxons; and Egbert, the ambitious monarch of that kingdom, united them, and published an edict, ordering the whole Heptarchy to be called *Engelond*, i. e., *The Land of the Angles*.

Camden gives the following Chorographical table of the SAXON HEP-TARCHY :—

1.—The Kingdom of Kent contained	} The County of	{ Kent.
2.—The Kingdom of the South Saxons contained		
3.—The Kingdom of the East Angles contained	} The Counties of	{ Norfolk. Suffolk. Cambridge, with the Isle of Ely.
4.—The Kingdom of the West Saxons contained		
5.—The Kingdom of Northumberland contained	} The Counties of	{ Lancaster. York. Durham. Cumberland. Westmorland. Northumberland, and Scotland to the Frith of Edinburgh.
6.—The Kingdom of the East Saxons contained		
7.—The Kingdom of Mercia contained	} The Counties of	{ Essex. Middlesex, and part Hertfordshire. Gloucester. Hereford. Worcester. Warwick. Leicester. Rutland. Northampton. Lincoln. Huntingdon. Bedford. Buckingham. Oxford. Stafford. Derby. Salop. Nottingham. Chester, and the other parts of Hertfordshire.

CHRISTIANITY.—The Saxon idolatry remained in the ascendant throughout the greater part of Britain for more than a century, but was then happily superseded by the Christian religion. The exact date of the original introduction of Christianity into Britain, is involved in obscurity, and has been

the subject of much dispute. Some writers place the date of its introduction at a very early period after the death of Our Lord. A manuscript in the British Museum says, "In the 81st year after the Crucifixion, Twelve disciples of St. Philip the Apostle, of whom Joseph of Arimathea was the head, came into this land, and preached the doctrines of Christianity to King Arviragus, who denied them. But they obtained from him this spot (Glastonbury), with twelve hides of land, whereon they erected the first church in the kingdom." Gent, Speed, Camden, and others, assert that the Gospel was preached in Britain, by Joseph of Arimathea, in the time of Suetonius, and by Simon Zelotes in the time of Agricola; whilst some authors pronounce that Christianity was planted here by St. Paul, and some of the other Apostles. The chronicler of Dover Castle says, "In the year of grace 180, reigned in Britain, Lucius. He became a Christian under Pope Eleutherius, and served God, and advanced Holy Church as much as he could. Amongst other benefits he made a church in the said Castle, where the people of the town might receive the Sacraments."\* The same chronicler then goes on to tell of the dreary period of the Saxon invasion under Heugist, when "the Pagan people destroyed the churches throughout the land, and thrust out the Christians."

William of Malmesbury records as a remarkable piece of ecclesiastical antiquity, that when St. Philip the Apostle was in Gaul, promulgating the doctrines of Christianity, he received information that all those horrid superstitions which he had observed in the inhabitants of that country, and had vainly endeavoured, with the utmost labour and difficulty, to overcome, originated from a little island at no great distance from the continent, named Britain. Thither he immediately resolved to extend the influence of his precepts, and despatched twelve of his companions and followers, appointing Joseph of Arimathea, who, not long before, had taken his Saviour from the Cross, to superintend the sacred embassy. On their arrival, the Roman General, Vespasian, who was tarrying at the court of Arviragus and Givenissa, interested himself very warmly in their behalf with both the King and Queen; and at his request the royal protection was granted to the strangers, and they were hospitably entertained by Arviragus; who, to compensate them for their hard and toilsome journey, bestowed on them, for a place of habitation, a small island, which then lay waste and untilled, surrounded by bogs and morasses. To each of the twelve followers of St. Joseph, he appointed there a certain portion of land called a hide, sufficient for one family to live upon,

\* See Appendix, No. I., to Dugdale's Account of the Nunnery of St. Martin.

and composing altogether a territory to this day, denominated "the Twelve Hides of Glaston."

Mrs. M. Hall, in her recently-published *Lives of the Anglo-Saxon Queens*, says, "The account of the first introduction of Christianity into Britain, singular and romantic as it may seem, is not undeserving of attention, as it is well known that St. Paul preached to the utmost bounds of the west; and we have excellent authority for believing that some of the Apostles actually preached to the Britons. Theodoret, who asserts this, declares the Britons were converts to St. Paul; and states that Aristobulus, a Bishop ordained by St. Paul, and sent to Briton as a missionary, was martyred A.D. 56. There is, indeed, every reason to believe that the Christian faith was promulgated in Britain, and many converts made prior to the defeat of Queen Boadicea. If Vespasian was at all instrumental in establishing it here, it is singular enough, as his son Titus was the destroyer of Jerusalem, and disperser of the Jews throughout the world."

The Fabyan Chronicle says, "Lucius, or Lucy, the sone of Coilus, was made King of Brytons in the yere of our Lord, C. lxxx. The whiche in all actes and deydes of goodness followed his forefaders in suche wyse, that he of all men was beloued and drad. Of this is lytell or nome act notable put in memory, except that all wryters agree that this Lucuis sent to Eleutherius, then Pope of Rome, certayne pistles or letters, prayings hym that he and his Brytons myghte be receyved to the faythe of Christ's Church; whereof the Pope beyng very joyous and gladde, sent into Brytayne .ii. noble clerkes, named Faganus and Damianus, or after some, Fugacions and Dimianus; these .ii. good and virtuous clerkes were honourably receyued by Lucius, the whiche, by their good Doctryne and vertuous ensamples gyuynge, conuertyd the Kinge, and a great part of the Brytons."\*

The Venerable Bede, who wrote his *Ecclesiastical History* in the eighth century, "and whose learning would make his authority respectable in any age," tells us, that the Christian faith was preached in Britain, and the first hierarchy established by the missionaries sent in A.D. 170, by Pope Eleutherius, at the request of Lucius, a British King.† This statement is confirmed by St. Gildas the Wise, who flourished A.D. 495; and who observes, like Bede, that the Britons preserved the faith in tranquillity from that time

\* Fabyan Chronicle, p. 38.

† *Eccles. Hist.*, Book i., chap. iv. Bede informs us that in the fourth century the Monastery of Bangor, near Chester, contained more than two thousand monks.

until the persecution of the Roman Emperor Diocletian in 303, when St. Alban and so many others suffered martyrdom.\*

Three British Bishops,—Eborius of York, Restitutus of London, and Adelphius of Richborough—attended the first ecclesiastical Council at Arles, which was called by Constantine the Great, to condemn the heresy of the Donatists, in A.D. 314. According to the accounts of that Council, published by Simon of Paris, the Bishop of York signed himself "*Eborius Episcopus de Civitate Eboracensi.*"† British Bishops, we are likewise told, attended the Council of Nice in the year 325; and at that of Sardica in 347. The first direct evidence of the existence of structures, dedicated to the Christian worship in York, is to be found in the records of the events which occurred in that City during the struggles between the Britons and the Saxons. York was then frequently taken and re-taken, and suffered severely in various sieges, for the different conquerors took but little pains to keep in repair the various buildings erected by the Romans.

Ambrosius, the British King, held a Council of his Princes and nobles at York, and ordered, we are told, the churches, destroyed or injured by the Pagans, to be rebuilt. King Arthur, who is said to have celebrated the first Christmas ever kept in this country, at York in A.D. 524, gave similar directions.

Now, on the other hand, some writers deny the whole of the above evidence altogether. Mr. Thomas Wright, a most zealous and skilful antiquary, in his excellent work on the early inhabitants of Britain,‡ tells us, that amongst the immense number of altars and inscriptions of temples, and with so many hundreds of Roman sepulchres and graves as have been opened in this country, not a single trace is to be found of the religion of the Gospel. "We seem driven by these circumstances to the unavoidable conclusion," he writes, "that Christianity was not established in Roman Britain, although it is a conclusion totally at variance with the preconceived notions into which we have been led by the ecclesiastical historians." The same learned writer, after examining the subject, is of opinion that the few allusions to Britain in the earlier Christian writers, ought to be considered as little better than flourishes of rhetoric. "Britain," he says, "was the western extremity of the known world, and when the zealous preacher wished to impress on his hearers or readers, the widely extended success of the Gospel, he would tell them that it extended from India to Britain, without considering much whether he was

\* Bellarm. de Scrip. Eccles.; also Usher Eccles. Brit. Antiq., cap. v.

† Camden's Britannia, Gough's Edition.

‡ *The Celt, the Saxon, and the Roman*, pp. 296, &c.

literally correct in saying that there were Christians in either of these two extremes. We must probably consider in this light certain passages in Tertullian, Origen, Jerome, and others." With respect to the alleged presence of British Bishops at the Council of Arles, he thinks that the lists printed in the Collections of Councils is extremely suspicious, and looks very like the invention of a later period. "In the year 360, under the Emperor Constantius, a Council was called at Arminum (Rimini), in Italy, on account of the Arian controversy, and it is said to have been attended by four hundred Bishops. The prelates assembled on this occasion were to be supported at the public expense, but we are told by the ecclesiastical historian, Sulpicius Severus, who wrote about forty years afterwards, that 'this seemed unbecoming to the Bishops of Aquitaine, Gaul, and Britain; and they choose rather to live at their own charge, than at the public expense. Three only from Britain, on account of their poverty, made use of the public provision; for, though the other Bishops offered to make a subscription for them, they thought it more becoming to be indebted to the public purse, than to be a burden upon individuals.' If this account be true, and three Bishops really went from Britain, they were perhaps only missionaries, whose converts were too few and too poor to be able to support them." Mr. Wright thinks it not unlikely that the three names of British Bishops "pretended to have been at the Council of Arles, had been made to answer to the three Bishops mentioned by Sulpicius Severus;" and he treats the above accounts in which occur the names of Joseph of Arimathea, St. Paul, King Lucius, and Pope Eleutherius, as legendary stories resting upon no authority, and which will not bear criticism. He also refuses to believe in the "pretended persecution in Britain under Diocletian;" but we think his reasons for denying it are not very strong. "A persecution of the Christians," he argues, "is not likely to have taken place under the orders of the tolerant Constantius, who was Governor of Britain when the persecution of Diocletian commenced, and who became Emperor two years later, and in another year left his title to his son Constantine." Constantius may have been tolerant, but he was a Pagan, and the representative and servant of the persecuting tyrant Diocletian; and that he (Constantius) became Emperor two years afterwards, and that after his death his son became a Christian, seems but a poor cause for supposing that he refused to carry out the rule of his master in persecuting the Christians.

Our antiquary entertains strong doubts of the authenticity of the work attributed to Gildas, on which chiefly our notions of the establishment of Christianity into Roman Britain are founded. "If the authority of such

writers be worth anything," he adds, "we must take it for granted that at least after the age of Constantine, Roman Britain was a Christian country; that it was filled with churches, clergy, and bishops, and, in fact, that Paganism had been abolished throughout the land. We should imagine that the invaders, under whom the Roman power fell, found nothing but Christian altars to overthrow, and temples of Christ to demolish. It is hardly necessary to point out how utterly at variance such a statement is with the result of antiquarian researches; not a trace of Christianity being to be found among the innumerable religious and sepulchral monuments of the Roman period found in Britain."

But at whatever period the doctrines of the Christian religion were first preached in this kingdom, it seems certain, that Christianity had been quite extirpated, and that idolatry had spread itself entirely over the land, when Pope Gregory the Great sent hither Augustine and his fellow labourers, to spread the faith of the gospel, about the year 596.

In alluding to this illustrious Roman Pontiff, the Rev. George Oliver, in his History of Beverley, says "This excellent personage sustained a character of much estimation, both as an ecclesiastic and a politician; and ample justice has been done to his merits, as well by his cotemporaries, as by succeeding generations. To his extraordinary zeal and perseverance, the Anglo-Saxons were most essentially indebted for their conversion from the horrible system of idol worship; and the whole tenor of his conduct, with few exceptions, was exemplary as a Christian Bishop. He was a gentleman by birth, education, and manners; being nobly descended, and the great grandson of a Pope.\* His distinguished talents had been improved in the best manner of the times; and he devoted his earlier services to the public, in a civil station, as Governor of Rome. Early in the prime of his days he formed an irresistible bias towards monastic retirement. How well calculated soever he might have been for civil employments, to which his inducements were more numerous and weighty, he voluntarily relinquished the splendid offers of ambition, and attached himself solely to the calm pursuits of learning and religion. His paternal fortune, which was very considerable, he distributed with a liberal hand amongst his kindred, and, with the small remains of his property, he built and endowed churches and monasteries. His gradations, from monkish seclusion to the papal throne, were few, but honourable to himself, and beneficial to those who employed him.

Before his pontificate he had desired to come over to Britain, and obtained

\* Felix II., who died A.D. 492, the 47th Bishop of Rome.

permission from the reigning Pope, but was prevented by the people with whom he was very popular, and who would not suffer him to leave Rome. This undertaking he had always at heart, and it rose from the following incident:—Passing through the market-place at Rome, sometime before his elevation to the papal throne, he saw some Saxon youths from Britain exposed for sale, whom their mercenary parents had sold to the Roman merchants, according to the custom of all the Teutonic peoples. We are told, that struck with their fine features and fair complexion, he enquired the name of the country which could produce such perfect specimens of the human frame, and was answered that they came from Britain. Finding that they were still heathens, he sighed deeply, and said, “it is a lamentable consideration that the Prince of Darkness should be master of so much beauty, and have so many comely persons in his possession; and that so fine an outside should have nothing of God’s grace to furnish it within.” Bede adds, that he again asked, what was the name of that nation, and being told that they were called Angli or Angles, “Right,” said he, “for they have angelical faces, and it becomes such to be companions with the angels in heaven.” “What is the name of the province from which they are brought,” continued he, and upon being told it was *Deira*, a district of Northumbria, “Truly, *Deira*, because they are withdrawn from wrath, and called to the mercy of Christ,” said he, alluding to the Latin *De ira Dei eruti*. “What is the name of the King of that province?” *Ella* or *Alla*, was the reply. “Alleluia,” cried he, “the praise of God, the creator, must be sung in those parts.” Soon after his elevation to the pontifical chair, he turned his thoughts to this abandoned part of the vineyard, and dispatched his friend Austin, or Augustine, the Superior of his own monastery, with forty other zealous monks, to spread the truths of the Gospel in Britain; and by their preaching, the Christian religion made such rapid progress that it soon became the prevailing faith of the country, and Augustine was created Archbishop of Canterbury, in the year 600, and Paulinus, another Roman missionary, Archbishop of York, in 628. So great was the crowd of converts to Christianity, that Paulinus is said to have baptized 10,000 persons in one day in the river Swale, in Yorkshire.\*

\* Speed Brit., p. 313. Camden says, that the Bishop, after having consecrated the Swale, commanded that they should go in two by two and baptise each other in the name of the Holy Trinity. This feat was performed at Belperby. The river Swale was held sacred by the Saxons, and termed the *Jordan of England* on account of this wonderful baptism by St. Paulinus. The same exploit is related of St. Augustine, and both the rivers are called Swale, though the one runs into the Thames, and the other into the Ure.



The English no sooner received the truths of Christianity, than with a most fervent zeal they gave up themselves to it, and employed their best endeavours, to promote it, by discharging all the duties of Christian piety, and by erecting churches and monasteries, so that no part of the Christian world could either show more, or richer religious establishments. Even Kings, who frequently find the greatest obstacles to virtue, often set their subjects the strongest examples of the most heroic virtues. Several monarchs exchanged their purple and sceptres for hair cloth, their palaces for poor mean cells in the monasteries, and their power and command for the humility of obedience. So many persons of high and low degree, eminent for sanctity, did England produce, that the country was justly styled *The Island of Saints*.

Under the Heptarchy York was the capital of the Kingdom of Northumbria, or Northumberland,\* and its first Saxon King was Ida, of whom William of Malmesbury writes thus, "The most noble Ida, in the full vigour of life and strength, reigned in Northumbria. But whether he himself seized the chief authority, or received it by consent of others, I by no means venture to determine, because the truth is unrevealed."

Ida died in A.D. 559, and on his death-bed he divided his dominions between his two sons; giving the part called Deira to Ella, or Alla; and Bernicia to Adda. It was during this reign that some youths, carried from this country for sale to Rome, attracted the attention of Gregory, a monk, afterwards Pope, and which circumstance was in some measure connected with the re-introduction of the truths of Christianity into Britain, as already related. Ella, the first Anglo-Saxon King of Deira, left at his death his son named Edwin, an infant of three years old, for his successor. Ethelfrith, or Ethelfrid, a grandson of Ida, soon after succeeded to the throne of Bernicia, and after rendering himself formidable to all his neighbours, particularly the Picts, Scots, and Welsh, he invaded Deira, from whence he expelled the infant King, and united that kingdom to his own dominions. Edwin was carried to North Wales, and educated by Cadvan, a Prince of that country. For the space of twenty-seven years Edwin wandered, a fugitive Prince, through the different kingdoms of the Heptarchy, without being able to recover his paternal dominions, or even to find a secure asylum, as the power of Ethelfrith deterred the Saxon Princes from provoking his resentment by protecting a forlorn orphan. At length, at the age of thirty years, his many excellent qualities, and majestic deportment, gained him the favour of Red-

\* The Kingdom of Northumberland was so called from its situation north of the river Humber—the land north of the Humber.

wald, King of East Anglia, and his royal consort; and for a short period he enjoyed, at the East Anglian court, the sweets of tranquillity and repose.

The consequence of this generous act of hospitality on the part of Redwald, were two hard-fought battles with the tyrant Ethelfrith, in the latter of which victory was declared in favour of the East Anglians, the Northumbrians having thrown down their arms, and betaken themselves to flight. Redwald advanced into Northumbria without opposition; the three sons of the usurper, Eanfrid, Oswald, and Oswy, having fled into Scotland, and the Northumbrians submitted to Redwald, who not only restored Edwin to the throne of Deira, his patrimonial inheritance, but also gave him the Kingdom of Bernicia.

"Edwin obtained the Kingdoms of Deira and Bernicia in 617," writes Allen, "and in 624 he acquired, though not without much opposition, a decided pre-eminence over the other Princes of the Heptarchy, and assumed the title of Monarch of the Anglo-Saxons, which Redwald had enjoyed during his life. He claimed an absolute authority over the other Kings; and by an ensign carried before him in the form of a globe, as a symbol of the union of the Heptarchial government in his person, he gave them to understand that he was not only their head but their master."\*

Edwin now demanded in marriage Ethelburgha, daughter of the late Ethelbert, the first Christian King of the English, and sister of Ebald, Eadbald, or Ethelbald, King of Kent, a Princess of great beauty and virtue; but his proposal met with a refusal which he, then in the acme of his power, had not expected. She was a Christian, and he yet an idolater. She would not renounce her faith for the splendour of a throne; nor would she become the consort of Edwin, unless she might be allowed the free exercise of her own religion. Edwin submitted to this, and Ethelburgha brought with her Paulinus, a Roman Missionary and Christian Bishop, as well as Christian attendants. On Easter eve, in 626, the Queen was delivered of a daughter; and on Easter day an assassin, named Eumer, sent by Quichelm, King of the West Saxons, being admitted into the presence of King Edwin, attempted to stab him with a poisoned dagger. He would have certainly killed him, if Lilla, his favourite and faithful minister, had not, for want of a buckler, interposed his own body, and so saved the King's life with the loss of his own.

\* Allen's History of Yorkshire, p. 28.

+ According to Camden, the word "King" is derived from the Saxon *Cyning*, or *Conyng*, which signifies the same; and that from *can*, "power," or *ken*, "knowledge," wherewith every monarch is supposed to be invested. The Latin *rex*, the Scythian *retz*, the Punic *pesch*, the Spanish *rey*, and the French *roy*, came all, according to Postel, from the Hebrew *rasch*, "chief head."

The dagger wounded the King through the body of his officer. The ruffian was cut to pieces upon the spot, but not before he had killed another of the courtiers. The King returned thanks to the gods for his preservation; but Paulinus told him it was the effect of the prayers of his Queen, and exhorted him to thank the true God, for his merciful protection of his person, and for her safe delivery. The King was pleased with this discourse, and soon after he began to examine the subject of religion. He consented that his infant daughter should be consecrated to God, and she was baptized on Whit-Sunday, and called Eanfleda, being the first fruits of the kingdom of Northumbria. These things happened in the royal residence upon the Derwent, says Bede; that is, near the Roman station Derventius, or Derventio, mentioned by Antoninus, in his Itinerary of Britain. The place is supposed to be near to Stamford Bridge, and is now called Aldby, that is, Old Dwelling; and near to it Camden noticed the ruins of an old Castle.

The King moreover promised Paulinus, that if God restored him his health, and made him victorious over those who had conspired so basely to take away his life, he would become himself a Christian. When his wound was healed, he assembled his army, marched against the King of the West Saxons, vanquished him in the field, and either slew or took prisoners all the authors of the wicked plot of his assassination. From this time he no more worshipped idols; yet he deferred to accomplish his promise of receiving baptism. Paulinus continued to exhort him, and to pray earnestly for his conversion; and Edwin was willingly instructed in the faith, often meditated on it by himself, and consulted with the wisest among his great officers. Pope Boniface sent him an exhortatory letter, with presents; and a silver looking-glass and an ivory comb to his Queen. At length a day was appointed when the subject of religion was to be discussed in the presence of the court; Paulinus was to point out the evidences of Christianity, whilst Cœfi, or, as it is written by Bede in the Northumbrian dialect, Coifi, Edwin's high priest, was to defend the idolatry of his fathers. The result of this discussion was that Coifi, the high priest of the idols, declared that by experience it was manifest that their gods had no power, and he advised the King to command fire to be set to the Pagan temples and altars. The King asked him who should first profane them. Coifi answered that he, himself, who had been the foremost in their worship, ought to do it for an example to others. Then he desired to be furnished with arms and a horse; for, according to their superstition, it was not lawful for the high priest to bear any arms, or to ride on a horse, but only a mare. Being thereupon mounted on the King's own horse, with a sword by his side, and a spear in his hand,

he rode to the temple, which he profaned by casting his spear into it. He then commanded those that accompanied him to pull it down, and burn it. The parish church of Godmanham, near Market Weighton, in the East Riding, now occupies the site of this temple. This place, says Bede, the venerable patriarch of Saxon history, writing in 731, is to the east of York, beyond the Derwent, and is called Godmundingham. Mr. Wright, in his *Wanderings of an Antiquary*, recently published, thinks it possible that Londesborough, may have been the site of King Edwin's residence, that place being but one mile distant from the Pagan temple.

On Easter Day (April 12th, 627), King Edwin and several of his nobles were baptized by Paulinus at York, in a small wooden church or oratory, hastily erected, and dedicated to St. Peter. Edwin afterwards began a large church of stone, in which this was enclosed, and which was finished by St. Oswald, one of his successors. Paulinus fixed his episcopal See at York, with the approbation of King Edwin, and continued to preach freely during the remaining six years of this Prince's reign. The people flocked in crowds to receive the sacrament of baptism, and, as we have seen at pages 19 and 80, the good Bishop baptized them in multitudes in the rivers. When the King and Queen were at their country palace of Yeverin, in Glendale, among the Bernicians in Northumberland, the Bishop was occupied thirty-six days together, from morning till night, in instructing persons, and baptizing them in the little river Glen. When Paulinus was with the court in the country of the Deira, he baptized in the river Swale, near Catterick. Edwin built a church near this place in honour of St. Alban, from which a new town arose, which was called Albansbury, and since Almondbury. The royal palace at that place was burnt by the Pagans after the death of King Edwin. His successors had their country palace in the territory of Loidis, or Leeds, where a town of that name was afterwards built.

Edwin's reign, of seventeen years, is the brightest in the annals of the Heptarchy. He reclaimed his subjects from the licentious life to which they had been accustomed, and was distinguished for his strict and impartial administration of justice. It was proverbial in his reign that a woman or child might openly carry from sea to sea a purse of gold without any danger of violence or robbery. As no inns or houses of public entertainment existed in those days, and as travelling was difficult and tedious, he caused stakes to be fixed in the highways near unto clear springs, and brazen dishes to be chained to them, to refresh the weary sojourner, whose fatigues Edwin had himself experienced. The English enjoyed so perfect tranquillity and security throughout the dominions of King Edwin, that his peace was proverbial.

And his Christian virtues were very remarkable. He was equally zealous to practise himself, and to propagate on all sides the maxims and truths of Christianity, and after having spent six years in the practice of the Christian virtues, God was pleased to visit him with afflictions to raise him to the glory of martyrdom.

Penda, the Pagan King of Mercia, united with Ceadwalla, King of Gwynes or North Wales, to destroy all the English Christians. Edwin met them at a place afterwards called Hevenfield\* (now Heatfield or Hatfield), a village seven miles from Doncaster, and in a most bloody battle, fought October 12th, 633, lost his crown and life, in the 48th year of his age.\* His head was buried in the porch of the church he had built at York, and the remainder of his body was deposited in the Abbey of Whitby.

The victors, now at the head of a vast army, ravaged the Kingdom of the Northumbrians, and York, its capital, in a most barbarous manner. His only son, Osfrid, being slain with his father, Osric and Eanfrid, the two nearest relatives of Edwin, were chosen Kings of Deira and Bernicia; but the former was defeated and slain in battle by the Welsh King, and his brother Eanfrid was cruelly and treacherously put to death by Ceadwalla, at York, in 634, though he came to that City with only twelve attendants, for the purpose of treating for peace. Osric and Eanfrid had formerly received baptism, the former from Paulinus, and the latter from the monks of St. Columba, at Icolmkill; but each relapsed into the errors of Paganism. The indignant piety of the Northumbrians expunged the names of these apostate Princes from the catalogue of their Kings, and the time in which they reigned was distinguished in their annals by the expressive term, "The unhappy year."

Oswald, the younger of the sons of Ethelfrid, and nephew of Edwin, whose sister Acca was his mother, was called to the united throne of the Northumbrians in 635. This Prince, who had in the preceding reign fled to Scotland, and embraced Christianity whilst in exile, assembled a small but valiant army, and marched into Northumberland against Ceadwalla, who had laid waste the country with fire and sword as far as the Picts' Wall. Oswald gave the tyrant battle at a place called by Bede, Denisburn, that is the brook Denis, adjoining the Picts' Wall on the north side, and gained a complete victory; Ceadwalla (who used to boast that he had been born for the extermination of the Angles), with the greater part of his army being slain on the field. Having thus firmly established himself on the Northumbrian throne,

\* This name was given to it on account of the great number of Christians there slain in this engagement.

\* On St. Edwin see Bede Hist. i. ii., c. 9, 10, 12, 15, 20.

Oswald set himself to restore good order throughout his dominions, and to plant in them the faith of Christ. He entreated the King and Bishops of Ireland, then called Scotia, to send him a Bishop and assistants, by whose preaching the people whom he governed might be grounded in the Christian religion, and receive baptism. Aidan, a monk of the celebrated monastery of Hij,—a man no less venerable for his virtues, than eminent for his learning,—was chosen for this great and arduous undertaking. The King bestowed on Aidan the Isle of Lindisfarne, since called Holy Island, for his episcopal seat, and thus was founded that ancient See which was afterwards removed to Durham. By the great labours of Aidan, aided by the piety and munificence of Oswald, Christianity was firmly established, and maintained its influence amid all the wars and revolutions which succeeded. Oswald filled his dominions with churches and monasteries; and his own virtues were so great and numerous, that many years after his death they procured for him the honour of canonization.

During eight years Oswald reigned in such prosperity, that the Welsh, the Picts, and the Scots are said to have paid him tribute. But the fate of Edwin awaited Oswald. During a progress which he made in Shropshire, attended but by a few friends besides his domestic servants, Penda, the barbarous King of the Mercians, who envied the greatness of Oswald, and detested his religion—and who nine years before had slain the pious King Edwin—secretly raised an army, and endeavoured to accomplish by stratagem and surprise, what he dare not attempt in open battle. The treacherous and cowardly wretch fiercely assaulted and killed Oswald at Maserfield, since called Oswestry, or Osweltre, that is, Oswald's Cross, about seven miles from Shrewsbury; and he had the ferocity to cause the head and limbs to be severed from the trunk, and fixed on high poles driven in the ground as trophies of his victory.\* This treacherous act was performed on the 5th of

\* Camden, Capgrave, and others think this is the place where St. Oswald was slain; but Alban Butler imagines the scene of his death to be Winwich, in Lancashire, which was anciently called Maserfield, or Maserfelth, and where is a well still called St. Oswald's, which was formerly visited out of devotion. There are many churches in England dedicated to God in honour of St. Oswald. The year after his martyrdom, his brother Oswy took his body off the poles upon which the tyrant had affixed them; he sent the head to Lindisfarne, and it was afterwards put in the same shrine with the body of St. Cuthbert, and was with it translated to Durham, as the Malmsbury historian and others assure us. The rest of St. Oswald's body was then translated to the monastery of Bardney in Lincolnshire. Part of the relics were afterwards translated to the Abbey of St. Winoc's Berg, in Flanders, in 1221, and deposited there with great solemnity by Adam, Bishop of Terouanne. St. Aidan, the first Bishop of Lindisfarne, was also canonized.

August, 642. Penda afterwards ravaged Northumbria, but the Royal Castle of Bebbaborough (Bamborough, in Northumberland) was the first place that ventured to stop his destructive progress. Situated on a rock, and protected on one side by a steep ascent, and on the other side by the German Ocean, it bade defiance to the tyrant. But here he displayed the ferocity of his disposition. By his order the neighbouring villages were demolished, every combustible material was collected from the ruins and reared up in an immense pile against the walls, and as soon as the wind blew fiercely towards the City, fire was set to the pile. But as the fire and smoke was being wafted over the heads of the trembling inhabitants, the wind suddenly changed, and the fire spent its fury in the opposite direction. Chagrined and confounded, Penda raised the siege, evacuated the kingdom, and turned his arms against the King of East Anglia. Soon after his retreat in 643, the Northumbrian Thanes placed Oswy or Oswio, the brother of Oswald, on the united throne, but in the second year of his reign appeared a dangerous competitor of the house of Ella, in the person of Oswin, the son of Osric; and prudence or necessity induced him to consent to a compromise, and Oswin was crowned King of Deira, whilst he reserved to himself Bernicia and the northern conquests.

Oswy, who was never pleased at this division of the kingdom, afterwards asserted his claim to the throne of Deira, and obliged Oswin to arm in his own defence. According to Bede, Oswin was of a religious rather than a martial disposition; and regarding it criminal to shed the blood of his subjects for the support of his throne, he privately withdrew from his army, with the intention of taking refuge in a monastery; but before he could execute his design, he was betrayed to Oswy, who inhumanly murdered him in the hopes of more easily seizing his kingdom. The people of Deira, however, dreading the dominion of so cruel a Prince, immediately elected his nephew, Adelwald, or Odilwald, son of his brother Oswald, as their King, and thus was Oswy foiled in his ambition.

Adelward commenced his reign in 652, and for three years the Kingdom of Deira experienced an interval of peace. Oswy still persevered in his claim to this kingdom, and Adelwald, fearing that his uncle would seize the first opportunity to execute his designs, listened to a proposal of a league with the Kings of Mercia and East Anglia against the King of Bernicia. The Mercian King, seeing himself supported by the armies of East Anglia and Deira, refused every overture of peace, and Oswy was obliged to try the fortune of war with three powerful enemies. The night before the eventful contest he fervently implored the assistance of heaven, and vowed if he was victorious to

devote his infant daughter Elfreda to the service of God in monastic seclusion. But while the two armies were advancing to the scene of action, Adelwald was forming new projects; he wisely considered that to whichever side the victory inclined, it would be equally dangerous to him, and that the ambition of Penda, as well as of Oswy, might hurl him from his throne. He therefore resolved to stand neuter during the battle, and save his own troops, in order to defend his dominions against the conqueror. Penda attacked the Bernicians with great impetuosity; but as soon as the Mercians saw Adelwald draw off his division they suspected some treachery, and began to give way, and no possible effort could rally them. The Kings of Mercia and East Anglia were slain, and their armies routed with terrible slaughter. Thus fell the cruel and treacherous Penda, after he had stained his sword with the blood of two Northumbrian Kings—Edwin and Oswald; and three Kings of East Anglia—Sigebert, Egric, and Annas. With this hoary veteran, who was eighty years old, and who had reigned thirty years, fell twenty-eight vassal chieftains, or commanders of royal blood. This derisive battle was fought at Winwidfield (Winmoor), or Field of Victory, situated on the northern bank of the river Winwald, now Aire, near Loyden, now Leeds, on the 15th of November, 655. After the battle Oswy overran the kingdoms of the fallen monarchs, and subdued the astonished inhabitants. Mercia he divided into two portions; the province on the north of the Trent he annexed to his own dominions; those on the south he allowed to be governed by Peada, the son of Penda, who had married his daughter. But Peada soon after perished by the treachery, it is said, of his wife, and his territory was immediately occupied by the Northumbrians.

In fulfilment of his vow, Oswy placed his child Elfreda, who was not yet one year old, under the care of the Abbess Hilda, at Hartlepool; and her dower was fixed at 120 hides of land in Bernicia, and at an equal number in Deira. This munificent donation enabled the sisterhood to remove their establishment to a more convenient situation at Whitby, where the royal nun lived the space of fifty-nine years in the practice of the monastic duties, during one half of which she exercised the office of Abbess. The King soon afterwards, stung with remorse for the murder of Oswin, founded and endowed another monastery at Gilling, on the very spot in which that Prince had been slain; and the community of monks were bound to pray daily for the soul of the murdered King, and for that of the royal murderer.\* Oswy had now under his control a greater extent of territory than had belonged

\* Bede, iii., 24. Nennius, c. 64.



to any of his predecessors ; but long before his death the tyrannical conduct of his officers caused the Mercians to revolt, and expel the Northumbrians ; and the sceptre was conferred on Wulphere, the youngest son of Penda, who had been anxiously concealed from the researches of Oswy.

A few years afterwards Adelwald died without issue, and Northumbria was again united in one kingdom under Oswy. But this re-union was of short duration, for Alchfrid, his eldest son, demanded a portion of the Northumbrian territory, with the title of King. It is not clear what means he used to oblige his father to give up to him the Kingdom of Deira, but this is certain that Oswy was induced to divide with him his dominions ; and thus did he resign that Crown which he so long and so anxiously desired to unite with his own.

Christianity had now been preached in all the Saxon kingdoms except Sussex, but as the missionaries had come from different countries, though they taught the same doctrine, they disagreed in several points of ecclesiastical discipline. Of these the most important regarded the canonical time for the celebration of Easter, a subject which had for several centuries disturbed the peace of the church. It was universally admitted that it depended on the commencement of the equinoctial lunation ; but the Roman astronomers differed from the Alexandrian, the former contending that the lunation might begin as early as the 5th, whilst the latter maintained that it could not begin before the 8th of March. The consequence of this diversity of opinion was, that when the new moon fell on the 5th, 6th, or 7th of that month, the Latin celebrated the feast of Easter a full lunation before the Greek Christians. Weary of the disputes occasioned by these computations, the Roman church, in the middle of the sixth century, had adopted a new cycle, which agreed in every important point with the Alexandrian calculation. But this arrangement was unknown to the British Christians, who at that period were wholly employed in opposing the invaders of their country ; and they continued to observe the ancient cycle, which was now become peculiar to themselves.

Hence it occasionally happened that Easter and the other festivals depending on that solemnity, were celebrated at different times by the Saxon Christians, according as they had been instructed by the Scottish, or by the Roman and Gallic missionaries ; and thus did Oswy see his own family divided into factions, and the same festivals solemnized on different days in his own palace. Wilfrid, afterwards Archbishop of York, having been instructed at Rome in the discipline of the church, was requested by Alchfrid, the son of Oswy, to instruct him and his people in ecclesiastical discipline ;

and Oswy, desirous to end the dispute and to procure uniformity, summoned the champions of the two parties to meet at the monastery at Streaneshalch, now Whitby, in 664. The Kings, Oswy and Alchfrid, were present at this conference. Wilfrid rested the cause of the Romans on the authority of St. Peter, and the practice of the universal church; and after a long debate it appeared clear to the great majority of the monks and ecclesiastics present, that those were in error who differed in this and other matters from the practice of the Roman Church. Rapin and some others pretend that the Scots or Irish and the Britons were for some time schismatics in consequence of these matters; but these writers are mistaken, for the Saxon Christians did not coincide with the Quartodecimans, who had been condemned by the church, nor had this difference between them and the universal church then proceeded to a breach of communion.\*

Soon after this conference the See of Canterbury became vacant by the death of Deusdedit; Oswy consulted with Egbert, the King of Kent, and by their concurrence the presbyter Wighard, who had been chosen to succeed to the Archiepiscopal dignity, was sent to Rome to ask the advice of the Apostolic See on the subject of discipline. But the new prelate died at Rome of a dreadful and fatal pestilence, which was then ravaging Britain and Ireland, and which he had escaped in his own country. In a letter from Pope Vitalian to Oswy, announcing his death, the Pontiff assures the King, that he would select for the See of Canterbury a person equal to so exalted a station; and, after some delay, the learned and virtuous Theodorus, a monk of Tarsus, was landed in Kent with the title of Archbishop of Britain. His authority was immediately acknowledged by all the Saxon prelates, synods were held, and uniformity of discipline was everywhere observed.

Oswy died in 670, in the 29th year of his reign, and the sceptre of Northumbria was transferred to the hands of Egfrid, or Ecgfrid, his son by Anflæda the daughter of Edwin. Some writers say that Alchfrid, his eldest son, was still alive, but rejected on account of illegitimacy, and that he ascended the throne after the death of Egfrid; others assert that he ruled in Deira up to about the time of his father's death, when his subjects revolted against him, and he retired to Ireland, where he devoted himself to learning and piety until the death of Egfrid. But Dr. Lingard tells us, that after a diligent examination of Bede, it appeared to him that these writers have confounded Alchfrid and Aldfrid, and made the two but one person. Aldfrid, who was illegitimate, and *thought* to be the son of Oswy, lived in spontaneous exile in

\* Bede iii., 25, 26.

Ireland, through his desire of knowledge, and was called to the throne after the decease of the legitimate offspring of Oswy.:

Though the royal families of Northumbria and Mercia were allied by marriage, the ambition of Egfrid led him to invade that kingdom in 679. A conflict took place on the banks of the Trent, but peace was restored by the interposition of Archbishop Theodorus.\*

In 685 this restless monarch, who laboured incessantly to preserve and enlarge his dominions, invaded the territories of the Picts, for the purpose of depredation or conquest, and was killed by them in battle in the fortieth year of his age, and the fifteenth of his reign. Egfrid dying without issue, the Northumbrian Thanes offered the Crown to Alfred, or Aldfrid, the reputed but illegitimate son of Egfrid. During the last reign, as has just been intimated, he had retired to the western isles, and had devoted the time of his exile to study, under the instruction of the Irish monks. His proficiency obtained for him from his contemporaries the title of the learned King. He displayed great moderation and virtue in governing his kingdom, and after reigning happily for nineteen years, he died in 705, and is said to have been buried at Little Driffield, in the East Riding of Yorkshire. Osred, the eldest son of Alfred, a child eight years of age, succeeded his father. During the minority of this Prince, a nobleman, named Eadulph, usurped the sceptre, and besieged the royal infant and his guardian in the strong fortress of Bamborough; but the nobles and people rising in the defence of their Sovereign, the usurper was taken prisoner, and put to death, after a tumultuous reign of two months. Osred, however, as he advanced towards manhood, lost, by his licentious conduct, the affections of the people, which Ceonred and Osric (two brothers, descendants of a natural son of Ida, the first Anglo-Saxon King of Northumbria), perceiving, formed a party against him, and were supported by the whole body of the clergy. At length they raised the standard of revolt, and Osred was defeated and slain on the banks of Windermere, in 716, being the nineteenth year of his age, and the eleventh of his reign. Ceonred, who then mounted the throne, died in 718, and was succeeded by his brother Osric, who reigned peaceably eleven years, but was slain in 730. The next King of Northumbria was Ceolwulf, the brother of his predecessor, who, in the eighth year of his reign, voluntarily retired to the Monastery of Lindisfarne, where he passed the remainder of his life. Ceolwulf was the patron of the Venerable Bede, the ecclesiastical historian. In the year 737, Eadbert, the cousin of Ceolwulf, was crowned, and, after

\* Bede iv., c. 21.

enlarging his kingdom, and reigning twenty-one years, he followed the example of his predecessor, by seeking the peaceful tranquillity of the cloister. This monarch's brother was Archbishop of York. Oswulf, the son and successor of Eadbert, was assassinated in 758, in the first year of his reign; his Thanes having conspired against him. The next Northumbrian Monarch was Mol Edilwold, who, though not of royal blood, was raised to the throne by the suffrage of the people. He too was conspired against, and put to death by Alchrid, a descendant of Ida, who usurped the throne in 765. This monarch reigned nine years; but in 774 he was expelled; and Ethelred, the son of Edilwold, was chosen in his stead. This Prince was obliged by his subjects to abdicate, and seek refuge in a neighbouring kingdom in 779.

Alfwold, the son of Oswulf, and grandson of Eadbert, was now placed on the throne; and though he reigned eleven years, honoured and beloved, yet he yielded up his life at the hands of the Ealdorman Sigan. The murderer put a period to his own existence five years later.

In 785 Pope Adrian sent two papal legates, the Bishops of Ostia and Tudertum, to England. Soon after their arrival they convoked two synods, the one in Northumbria, the other in Mercia. At the latter synod, which was attended by all the Princes and prelates in the country, the legates read a code of ecclesiastical laws, composed by the Sovereign Pontiff, for the government of the Anglo-Saxon Church. It was heard with respect, and subscribed by all the members.\*

In 789 Osred II., son of Alchred, was advanced to the throne of Northumbria, and the following year he was deposed by the Thanes, and he retired to the Isle of Man. Ethelred was then recalled, and returned with a thirst for revenge, and was replaced on the throne. Soon after his restoration he ordered Eardulf, one of his most powerful opponents, to be slain at the door of the Church of Ripon. The monks carried the body into the choir, and, during the funeral service, it was observed to breathe; proper remedies were applied to the wounds, and the future King of Northumbria recovered, and was carefully concealed in the monastery. This act of cruelty was followed by the murder of Elf and Elwin, the two sons of King Alfwold. Osred now returned from the Isle of Man, and braved his rival to battle; but he was deserted by his followers, and added another to the victims of Ethelred's ambition. This monster repudiated his own wife, and married the daughter of Offa, the powerful King of Mercia. In the third year of his reign a total

\* Saxon Chronicle, 64. Wilk. Con. p. 152, 164.

failure of the harvest reduced the inhabitants to famine, to which were soon added the ravages of pestilence; and to complete their misfortunes, an army of Danes landed on the coast, pillaged the country, and destroyed the venerable Church of Lindisfarne. All these calamities were attributed to the imprudence of Ethelred; and in the fourth year of his restoration he fell in a fruitless attempt to quell the rising discontent of his subjects.\* The adherents of Osbald now placed him on the throne; but after a short reign of twenty-seven days, the opposite faction gained the ascendancy, and Osbald was deposed, and found safety in a monastery.

Eardulf, whose life had been saved by the monks of Ripon, then grasped the sceptre, stained by the blood of so many Princes; but civil dissensions had now prevailed to an alarming extent, and in 808 he was obliged to fly from the fury of his rebellious subjects, and take refuge in the Court of Charlemagne. Alfwald, the head of the faction by which Eardulf was driven from his kingdom, undertook to sway this dangerous sceptre; but he reigned only two years, and his death left the Crown to Eanred, in whose reign the Anglo-Saxon Kingdom of Northumbria ceased to be independent.

During the last century Northumbria had exhibited successive instances of treachery and murder, to which no other country perhaps can furnish a parallel. The monarchs, with few exceptions, were restless and ambitious, and the inconstancy of the Thanes was fatal to the ambition of the Monarchs. Out of the fourteen Kings who had assumed the sceptre during that century, only one, if one, died in the peaceable possession of royalty; seven were slain, and six were banished from the throne by their rebellious subjects. And the same anarchy and perfidy prevailed till the Danes totally extinguished the Northumbrian dynasty, by the slaughter of Ella and Osbert, in the year 867.

Egbert, the only remaining Prince of the house of Cedric—deriving his descent from that Conqueror, through Inigils, the brother of Ina—having been compelled to quit this country, was well received at the Court of Charlemagne. For three years he had enjoyed considerable command, in the armies of that Emperor; and having improved the period of his exile in acquiring a proficiency in the arts of war and government, he returned to Britain, and was called to the throne of Northumbria; and by his eminent abilities and great experience, he was enabled to unite the seven kingdoms of the Heptarchy into one monarchy, about 390 years after the first arrival of the Saxons in this country.

\* Saxon Chron. 64, 65.

The authority acquired by Egbert over the tributary kingdoms was very soon weakened by the incursions of the Danes. Their invasions gradually became more frequent and formidable; and while the Kings of Wessex, successors of Egbert, were fully employed in defending their own dominions, they could only maintain a precarious sovereignty over the other kingdoms.

### Anglo-Danish Period.

Those rapacious, restless, and cruel spoilers, the Danes, in whom we do not find a single redeeming virtue, made their first appearance on our shores about the year 787,\* but they did not succeed in forming a permanent establishment until A.D. 867, in which year they fitted up a mighty fleet, and taking advantage of the party divisions of the inhabitants, during the inauspicious reign of Ethelred, invaded the kingdom, penetrated with complete success into the northern districts, and secured to themselves the sceptre of Northumbria. In proceeding through the country they burnt cities, destroyed churches, wasted the land, overturned everything in their way, and with the most barbarous cruelty murdered the Kings of the East Angles and Mercians. "Language cannot describe their devastations. It can only repeat the terms—plunder, murder, rape, famine, and distress. It can only enumerate towns, villages, churches, and monasteries, harvests, and libraries, ransacked and burnt. But by the incessant repetition, the horrors are diminished; and we read, without emotion, the narrative of deeds which rent the hearts of thousands with anguish, and inflicted wounds on human happiness, and human improvement, which ages with difficulty healed."† "Expunge the name of one King from their records," says a learned writer, in speaking of the Danes, "and their political existence in England exhibits nothing but a deformed mass of perfidy and slaughter, profligacy and crime."

The Northumbrians being the most remote from Wessex, at length recovered their independence, and Osbert, or Orbrightus, was raised to the throne. Discord and party spirit, which for such a length of time disturbed the kingdom, and which for a while seemed to be extinguished, was revived by the licentious tyranny of the new King, and the flames of civil war were soon enkindled in Northumbria. Returning one day from hunting, Osbert called at the mansion of one of his nobles, named Bruern Brocard, guardian of the sea coasts, and not finding him at home, violated by force the chastity

\* Hoveden, p. 40.

† Turn. Ang. Sax., vol. ii., p. 130.

of his wife. To revenge this insult, Bruern excited a revolt of the Bernicians; Osbert was declared unworthy to govern, and another King, named Ella, was elected to the throne of Bernicia. Thus was Northumbria once more divided between two Kings, and two factions, who were continually aiming at each other's destruction. No sooner was the Bernician monarch seated on the throne, than he, stimulated by Earl Bruern, endeavoured to dispossess Osbert of the Crown of Deira, and a sanguinary civil war ensued, in which the equality of the forces of the two Kings prevented the scale turning on either side. At length Bruern rashly and inconsiderately resolved to sail to Denmark, and to solicit assistance, which was but too readily granted.

Urged by ambition and revenge, the King of Denmark eagerly entered into the enterprise. His revenge is said to have been excited by the alleged cruel treatment of a Danish General, named Lothbroc, the father of Hinguar and Hubba, who being alone in a small boat, was driven by accident to the coast of Norfolk. Historians tell us, that he was well received and hospitably treated at the Court of Edmund, King of the East Angles; that he was an accomplished sportsman, and became so conspicuous for his dexterity, as to obtain a distinguished place in the royal favour. That Bern, the King's huntsman, growing jealous of him, took an opportunity of drawing him to a thicket, where he murdered him, and concealed the body. That the corpse was discovered by means of Lothbroc's dog; that Bern was tried and found guilty of the murder, and the sentence passed upon him was, that he should be put into the murdered man's boat, and without tackling or provision, committed to the mercy of the waves. That the boat, by a singular fatality, was cast upon the coast of Denmark, and that being known, Bern was apprehended, and examined concerning the fate of Lothbroc. That in order to exculpate himself, Bern told the Danish authorities, that Lothbroc had, by the King's command, been thrown into a pit, and stung to death by serpents. They add that Bruern arrived in Denmark shortly after this circumstance, and that measures were speedily concerted for the invasion of Deira. But Dr. Lingard gives a different version of the cause of this descent of the Danes, on the authority of Asser, Ingulphus, the Saxon Chronicle, Leland, and Turner. He tells us, that during the reign of Ethelbert, King of Wessex, the predecessor of Ethelred, one of the most adventurous and successful of the Sea-Kings, or pirate chieftains, named Ragnar Lodbrog, constructed a number of large ships for the purpose of invading England; that owing to the unskilfulness of the mariners, or the violence of the weather, the vessels were wrecked on the coast of Northumbria. That Ragnar, with several of his followers reached the shore, and heedless of the consequences, commenced

their usual career of depredation. That Ella flew to the coast, fought with the plunderers, made Ragnar prisoner, and put him to death; and that his sons, Inguar and Ubbo, who swore to avenge the murder, collected to their standard the combined forces of eight Sea-Kings, with twenty Jarls, consisting of several thousand warriors, and in the reign of Ethelred landed on the coast of East Anglia without opposition.\* It seems certain however that soon after the death of Ragnar, that a mighty fleet, commanded by the two brothers, Hinguar and Hubba, entered the Humber, and spread terror and dismay all over the country. The Northumbrians being wholly ignorant of their design, were not in readiness to dispute their landing, consequently they soon became masters of the northern shore, and having burnt and destroyed the towns on the Holderness coast, they marched directly towards York, where Osbert was preparing an army to oppose them.

In this great extremity Osbert was constrained to apply to his mortal foe, Ella, for assistance, and to the great credit of the latter, he willingly agreed to suspend their private quarrel, and join forces against the common enemy. Without waiting the arrival of Ella's reinforcement, Osbert sallied out of York, and attacked the Danes so vigorously, that they could hardly stand the shock. But pressing in their turn, the Danes compelled the British army to retire without any order into the City. Osbert, in endeavouring to rally his scattered troops, was slain in the retreat with a great number of his men. The victors now entered York in triumph, whilst Ella was advancing in hopes of repairing the loss Osbert had sustained by his impatience. Hinguar having conquered one of the Kings, went out to meet the other, and a battle no less bloody, and fatal to the English, ensued. Ella was killed, and his army entirely routed. Some historians state that Ella was not slain in the battle but taken prisoner, and that Hinguar ordered him to be flayed alive in revenge for his father's murder.

Hoveden thus describes the horrible sufferings of the inhabitants of York on this occasion:—"By the General's cruel orders they knocked down all the boys; young and old men they met in the City, and cut their throats; matrons and virgins were ravished at pleasure; the husband and wife, either dead or dying, were tossed together; the infant, snatched from its mother's breast, was carried to the threshold, and there left butchered at its parent's door, to make the general outcry more hideous." According to the same authority, as well as that of the Saxon Chronicle, this battle was fought on the 21st of March, 867.

\* Lingard's Hist. of England, vol. i. p. 155. Fcp. 8vo.



The Kingdom of Northumbria was thus conquered by the Danes, after it had been in the possession of the Saxons for 320 years. Hinguar now appointed his brother Hubba Governor of York, and gave him also the command of the newly-won kingdom. A deputy Governor, named Godram, with a garrison under his command, was left in the City, whilst the two brothers pushed their conquests southwards. In 870, Hinguar and Hubba returned to York, and constituted Egbert, a Saxon, devoted to their cause, King of Northumbria. He was, however, soon deposed, and Ringside, a Dane, was proclaimed King. The populace of York, being much enraged at this, murdered the Dane, and restored Egbert. His second reign was of short duration, for the Danes, increasing in power, divided the Kingdom of Northumbria amongst three of their own officers. Sithric, a Dane, and Nigel his brother, reigned beyond the Tyne in the year 877; and Reginald, also a Dane, governed the City of York, and all the country between the rivers Tyne and Humber, at the same period. The success of the Danes in Northumbria, as well as in the south, compelled the Anglo-Saxon Kings and Princes to confederate for mutual defence, and by the skill and wisdom of Alfred the Great, King of Wessex, the invaders were subdued in 880, after that renowned monarch had emerged from his retreat in a swineherd's cottage. To prevent the rapine and disorders which formerly prevailed in the realm, Alfred divided part of the Kingdom into Counties, Hundreds, and Tithings, caused the inhabitants of each district to be made responsible for the damage committed by lawless mobs, established trial by jury, and composed a body of laws on which the glorious superstructure of English liberty was finally erected. He was not less generous than brave, and by acts of kindness, sought to convert the Danes from deadly enemies to faithful subjects. Alfred may be considered as the first King of the Anglo-Saxons; but to Athelstan, as we shall see, belongs the credit of being the founder of the English monarchy, for after the battle of Brunanburh he had no competitor.

The restless spirit of the Danes not brooking restraint, they re-commenced hostilities, but after plundering Mercia, in 910, they were again defeated, in a desperate battle in the north, by Edward the Elder, son and successor of the Great Alfred, when two of their Kings, Halfden and Eowils, brothers of Hinguar, and several thousands of their soldiers were slain. At this period, Edward, with the Mercians and West Saxons, ravaged the principal part of Northumbria for nearly five weeks.

This decisive victory established the superiority of the Anglo-Saxon monarch over the ruthless Dane. Athelstan, the successor of Edward, compelled Sithric and Nigel to submit to his victorious arms; but upon doing

homage, they were allowed to keep their possessions. In 926, Sithric obtained the daughter of Athelstan in marriage, on condition that he would turn Christian; but dying the first year of his marriage, his sons, Godfrid and Anlaff, whom he had by a former wife, stirred up a rebellion among the Northumbrian Danes. This drew upon them the indignation of Athelstan, who attacked and reduced the whole of Northumbria, except the Castle of York, which was very strong and well garrisoned. One of the Danish Princes now fled to Scotland, and the other to Ireland, whence they returned in three years afterwards (in 937) with a great body of Norwegians, Danes, Irish, Scotch, and Welsh soldiers. Anlaff entered the Humber with a fleet of 615 sail, landed his forces, and marched to York before the King had any intelligence of it, and were soon joined by the confederated Scotch and British Princes. Athelstan, who not content with his own forces, had purchased the aid of several Sea-Kings, was soon approaching the north. As he passed through Beverley, he visited the Church, offered his dagger on the altar, and vowed to redeem it, if he returned victorious, at a price worthy of a King. In a few days afterwards the famous battle of Bromford, or Brunanburh, in Northumbria, was fought, in which Athelstan gained a complete victory, the army of the Princes being entirely destroyed.

This engagement, which is celebrated in the relics of Saxon and Scandinavian poetry, lasted from morning till sunset. A contemporary writer tells us that in the English army waved a hundred banners, and round each banner were ranged a thousand warriors. "Never," says the native poet, "since the arrival of the Saxons and Angles, those artists in war, was such a carnage known in England." Constantine, the King of Scotland, saved himself by a precipitate flight, after his son and most of his men had been slaughtered; and amongst the slain were six petty Kings of Ireland and Wales, and twelve general officers. To prevent future rebellion, Athelstan proceeded to York, and rased the Castle, which was the principal bulwark of the Danish power, to the ground. The conqueror, in his return from the battle, redeemed his dagger from the Church of Beverley, with a grant of ample and valuable privileges. This decisive victory confirmed the ascendancy of Athelstan; the British Princes no longer disputed his authority, and his power became predominant in Britain. To him, therefore, belongs the glory of having established what has ever since being called the Kingdom of England; and he, himself, undoubtedly, was the first Monarch of England. His predecessors, till the reign of Alfred the Great, had been styled the Kings of Wessex. Alfred and his son Edward assumed the title of Kings of the Anglo-Saxons; and Athelstan sometimes called himself King of the English,

but at other times he claimed the more pompous designation of King of All Britain. But in the course of a century the latter title fell into disuse, and the former has been retained to the present age.

Athelstan died, much regretted by his subjects and the surrounding nations, on the 27th of October, 941, and was buried in the Abbey of Malmsbury, where he had deposited the remains of Elfwin and Ethelwin, who fell at Bromford. This monarch, dying without heirs, was succeeded on the throne of England by Edmund, eldest son of Edward, the predecessor of Athelstan, then about seventeen years of age. The turbulent spirit of the Northumbrians, which Athelstan had kept under some restraint, soon broke out after his death. Anlaff, who had fled to Ireland, was invited to hazard a third time the fortune of war; and having by the promise of a large sum of money, obtained a considerable force from Olaus, King of Norway, the Humber, in a few weeks, was covered by a numerous fleet of foreign adventurers. The operations of the campaign are involved in much obscurity, but in a short time the whole of Northumbria submitted to his arms. In 942 Anlaff attacked the kingdom of Mercia, but Edmund gave him battle near Chester, and neither side being able to claim the victory, a peace was concluded through the mediation of Odo and Wulstan, the Archbishops of Canterbury and York. By this treaty Edmund gave up all the country north of the Roman highway, Watling Street, which divides England into two parts.

But the kingdom of Northumbria is once more about to be divided. The people, during the absence of Anlaff, sent for his nephew Reginald, and crowned him King at York. Anlaff prepared for resistance; but through the intervention of Edmund, who was backed by a powerful army, it was agreed that Anlaff should retain the Crown of Deira, whilst Reginald swayed the sceptre of Bernicia\* It was also stipulated that the two Kings should swear fealty to Edmund, and embrace the Christian religion; and the ceremony of their baptism was performed in the Cathedral by Archbishop Wulstan.

In 944 hostilities recommenced—Edmund again successfully opposed them, and obliged the two Kings to quit the island. Edmund died sole monarch of England in 946, and his sons being in infancy, he was succeeded by his brother Edred, whose reign was principally distinguished by the final subjugation of Northumbria. He proceeded to that country, and received from

\* Dr. Lingard says, that Anlaff died the next year after he concluded the treaty with Edmund, and that it was after his death that Northumbria was again divided. He states that after the kingdoms were divided, the two Kings were Anlaff and Reginald, but he does not tell us who they were, but he distinctly states that Anlaff was the second of that name in Northumbria. Lingard's Eng., vol. i., p. 200. Fep. 8vo.

the natives the usual oaths of fidelity; but the obedience of the Northumbrians lasted only as long as they were overawed by his presence. He was no sooner departed, than they expelled his officers, and set his authority at defiance. Anlaff was again invited to return to York, he obeyed the invitation, and obtained possession of the whole of Northumbria, which he retained for four years. In 950 another revolt took place, in which Anlaff was deposed; and Eric, who had been driven from Norway by his brother Haco, the King of that country, and who had wandered for years a pirate on the ocean, and landed on the northern coast, was saluted King, and called to the throne in his stead.

Now followed a civil war between the factions of Eric and Anlaff; and when all was in confusion, Edred, at the head of an army, marched to the north, subdued the contending parties, severely punished the perfidy of the rebels, obliged Eric to flee into Scotland, threatened to destroy the whole country with fire and sword, and even commenced the execution of his threat by burning the Monastery of Ripon. He, however, soon relented, pardoned the offending people, and replaced Eric on the throne of Northumbria.

When Edred left York, the Danes pursued him, and furiously attacked his forces on the banks of the river Aire (at Castleford), but were repulsed. Edred returned to York to chastise the people for rebellion, upon which the inhabitants, to save themselves from his just indignation, renounced Eric, and put him to death, and they also slew Amac, the son of Anlaff; these Princes having been the chief instigators of their treachery. Edred spared the City, but dissolved their monarchical government, and reduced the Kingdom of Northumbria to an Earldom, of which York was constituted the capital, and Osulf, or Osluff, an Anglo-Saxon, or Englishman, became the first Earl. This final subjugation of the great northern Kingdom took place in 951.

The chief residence of the Earls or Viceroys, like the ancient Kings of Northumbria, was at York. In this reign the north of England, like the rest of the kingdom, was divided into Shires, Ridings, and Wapentakes, and a number of officers appointed for their superintendence. Edgar, who succeeded Edred on the throne of England, appointed Oslac to join Osulf in the government of the north, but the authority of these two officers was subsequently united in the person of Waltheof, the second Earl.

During the reign of Ethelred, the Danes became so turbulent, that he attempted to destroy their power by secretly ordering them to be massacred on St. Brice's day, the 13th of November, 1002. The slaughter on that fatal day was great in the southern part of England, but in the north they were too numerously intermingled with the Saxons to be sentenced to assassination.

Among the thousands who fell was the Lady Gunhilda, sister to Sweyne, King of Denmark, who had been sent as hostage, on condition of peace, together with her husband, Palig. This detestable act, which will cover the name of Ethelred with eternal infamy, so inflamed the Danes with indignation, that in a short time the Saxons became the sport of a revengeful enemy. To revenge the wrongs of his countrymen, Sweyne, undertook the conquest of England. In 1013 he entered the Humber with a large fleet, and having destroyed the country on both sides of the river, he proceeded to York, and encamped on the banks of the Ouse. Ethelred, with an army augmented by a number of Scots, gave him battle, but the English monarch was defeated, and seizing a boat, fled to the Isle of Wight, and thence to Normandy, leaving his crown and kingdom to the conqueror.

Sweyne died at Gainsborough in 1014, and his son Canute was proclaimed King, but being obliged to return to Denmark, the English in his absence recalled their exiled monarch, who ruled by force of arms over the southern parts of the island till his death in 1016. Canute afterwards became the greatest and most powerful monarch of his time, and was surnamed "the great." Though he was Sovereign of Denmark and Norway as well of England, yet he was not so blinded by his good fortune, as to credit the flattery of his courtiers, who would fain have persuaded him that he was all but omnipotent. The well-known reproof given by him to his fawning courtiers is so just and impressive, that its memory has survived through eight centuries. Some of those flatterers breaking out into expressions of admiration of his power and grandeur, exclaimed, that in him everything was possible. Upon which Canute ordered his chair to be placed upon the sea-shore while the tide was rising. As the waters approached, he commanded them with a voice of authority to retire, and to obey the lord of the ocean. For some time he feigned to sit in expectation of their submission, but the sea still advanced towards him, and began to wash him with its billows; on which he turned to his courtiers, and said, "Behold how feeble and impotent is man. Power resideth in one being alone, in whose hands are the elements of nature, and who alone can say to the ocean—*Thus far thou shalt go and no further*, and who can level with his nod the most towering piles of pride and ambition." The chroniclers fix the locality of this great moral lesson at Southampton.

Canute died in this country in 1035, and was succeeded in his British dominions by Harold, his second son, surnamed Harefoot. This monarch was succeeded by Hardicanute, a licentious tyrant, who died two years after his accession, at the nuptials of a Danish lord, at Lambeth. The next

Danish claimant to the British Crown was named Sweyne, but Edward the Confessor, though not the hereditary descendant, was raised to the throne by the voice of the people.\*

History is almost silent concerning the first seven Earls of Northumbria—Osulf, Waltheof, Uthred, Hircus, Eadulf, Aldred, and Eadulf II.; but the last three—Siward, Tosti, Tosto, or Tostig, brother to Harold, and Morcar, make a conspicuous figure in the annals of the country. Siward, the eighth Earl, was a man of extraordinary strength and valour. He was appointed by Edward the Confessor to lead an army of 10,000 men into Scotland, to aid Malcolm against the usurper Macbeth, whom he slew, and set the former on the throne of Scotland.\*

When this brave old warrior was on his death-bed at York, and reduced to the last extremity by disease, he exclaimed, "Oh! what a shame it is for me, who have escaped death in so many dangerous battles, to die like a beast at last. Put me on my impenetrable coat of mail," added he, "gird on my sword, place on my helmet, give me my shield in my right hand, and my golden battle-axe in my left; thus as a valiant soldier I have lived, even so will I die." It is recorded that his friends obeyed this injunction, which was no sooner done than he expired. He died in 1055, and his body was buried in the Church of St. Olave, at York. Tosti, second son of Earl Godwin, minister of state, succeeded Siward in the Earldom of Northumbria, but his rule was so cruel and tyrannical, that, in 1065, as we read in the Saxon Chronicle, the Thanes and people revolted, and furiously attacking his house, he very narrowly escaped, with his family, and fled into Flanders. The Northumbrians seized his treasures, and appointed Morcar to be their Earl. Harold, brother of Tosti, being appointed by the King to vindicate the royal authority, and quell the insurrection, began his march, while Morcar, at the head of the Northumbrians, advanced southward. The two armies met at Northampton, but happily an arrangement was effected without bloodshed. Harold on being convinced of his brother's misconduct, abandoned his cause, and interceded with the King in favour of the insurgents. The Confessor confirmed Morcar in his Earldom; and Harold afterwards married Morcar's sister, and obtained from the King the government of Mercia for Morcar's brother, Edwin.

\* The surname of "the Confessor" was given to this Monarch from the bull of his canonization, issued by Pope Alexander III., about a century after his decease.

\* "Gracious England hath lent us good Siward, and ten thousand men.  
An older and a better soldier, none that Christendom gives out."

Shakspeare's *Macbeth*, Act iv. Sc. 3.

King Edward died on the 5th of January, 1066, and was buried on the following day in the Abbey Church of Westminster, which he had founded. During his reign the most approved Danish laws were incorporated with the customs, maxims, and rules of the Britons, the West Saxons, and the Mercians. This code became common throughout England, and were the laws so fondly cherished by our ancestors in succeeding ages, and so often promised to be adhered to by Princes, as the surest means of securing their popularity.

The Malsbury historian, speaking of the English at this remarkable period, says, "They wore clothes that did not reach beyond the middle of the knee, their heads were shorn, and their beards were shaven, only the upper lip was always let grow to its full length. Their arms were loaded with golden bracelets, and their skins dyed with painted marks."

The above-mentioned Harold was proclaimed King by an assembly of the Thanes and citizens of London, on the death of Edward, and the day of the Confessor's funeral witnessed the coronation of the new monarch. The ceremony of the coronation was performed by Aldred, Archbishop of York, Stigand, the Archbishop of Canterbury, being then suspended. The southern counties cheerfully acquiesced in the succession of Harold, but the Northumbrians in their pride refused to be bound by the act of those, whose military qualities they deemed inferior to their own. Harold, accompanied by Wulstan, Bishop of Worcester, hastened to the north, and soon won the affection of the Northumbrians. The news of Edward's death, and Harold's accession, no sooner reached William, Duke of Normandy, nephew to the deceased Monarch, than he assembled his Council, and expressed to them his determination to pursue by arms his pretensions to the Crown of England. Tosti (Harold's brother), the outlawed and exiled Earl of Northumberland, encouraged by the Duke of Normandy,\* and his father-in-law, Baldwin, Earl of Flanders, now attempted to dethrone him. With forty ships, well manned, supplied by the latter nobleman, he made a descent upon Yorkshire, entered the Humber, and committed the most horrible ravages on its banks.

Morcar, Earl of Northumbria, with his brother Edwin, Earl of Chester, marched expeditiously against the invader, and pursued him into Lincolnshire, where they defeated him and compelled him to flee to his ships. He then sailed to Scotland, and after vainly endeavouring to excite the King of that country to join him in the invasion of England, his vindictive spirit impelled him to apply for assistance to *Harrald* (surnamed *Hardrada*, or the

\* Daniel, *Hist. de France*, vol. iii., p. 90.

Stern), King of Norway, with whom he was more successful. That great warrior immediately equipped, for the invasion of England, the most mighty armament that ever left the coast of Norway. It consisted of two hundred sail, besides store ships and vessels of smaller size, to the number of five hundred in all. Harrald touched at the Orkneys, where he was joined by Tosti and a large reinforcement of adventurers. Having burnt and plundered the town of Scarborough, and received the submission of the people of the coast of Yorkshire, from the Tees to the Humber, the Norwegians entered the latter river for the purpose of obtaining possession of York. They landed at the village of Riccall, ten miles from York, and after ravaging the country in the most cruel manner, they commenced their march to the latter place. A desperate attempt to save the City was made near the village of Fulford, by the Earls Edwin and Morcar. The Norwegians were drawn up with their right flank to the river, and their left to a morass. The impetuosity of the English burst through the line; but they, in their turn, were overwhelmed by a fresh body of forces from the ships; and more of the fugitives perished in the water than had fallen by the sword. Edwin and Morcar escaped to York, whither Tosti and his forces followed, and the City was taken by storm. Harold, the English King, who had been preparing to meet the threatened attack of William the Norman, having heard of the unexpected invasion of Haradrada, lost not a moment in marching against the aggressor, and within four days after the late battle, he, at the head of a powerful army was in the north.

On the 29th of September, 1066, he arrived with his forces at Tadcaster, and the following day he marched towards York. At the King's approach the invaders withdrew from York, taking with them five hundred of the principal inhabitants as hostages, and leaving one hundred and fifty of their men to prevent the English from taking peaceable possession of the City; they moved about eight miles from York, to Stamford Bridge (long afterwards known as "the Bridge of Battle"), where they secured a very strong position with the main body of their army, on ground gently rising from the river Derwent—the river flowing in front, and a narrow wooden bridge forming the means of communication between the opposite sides. The river here runs nearly south, and is about eight miles distant from its junction with the Ouse. The position of the invaders had several advantages; it was easily defended, commanded a view of the country for some distance around, and it afforded a communication with the fleet, then lying in the Ouse.

"The order of the battle displayed considerable knowledge of the military art; with both wings bent backward until they met, the army formed a close



rather irregular circle, everywhere of equal depth, with shield touching shield, so as to form a rampart of bucklers. The royal standard, called very appropriately, 'The Land Ravager,' was planted in the centre, and by it the King and his chosen companions had generally their station. This arrangement was adopted as the best means of defence against the superior strength of the English in cavalry. The first, or outer line, presented to the enemy a complete circle of spears, which were held obliquely at a considerable elevation, their ends resting on the ground; this position required the soldiers to bend one knee; the second line stood erect, holding their lances in readiness to pierce the breasts of the horses, should they attempt to break through. The archers were placed so as to assist them in repelling these attacks. The Norwegian King, mounted on a black charger, with a white star in its forehead, rode round the circle, encouraging his men, and was rendered conspicuous by his dazzling helmet, and the sky blue mantle he wore above his coat of mail.\* The English King having pursued the invaders, resolved to attack them, notwithstanding all the advantages of their position.

On the 25th of September, at day-break, he commenced hostilities, and the battle raged with increasing fury until three o'clock in the afternoon. The armies were nearly equal in numbers, each consisting of about 60,000 men, most of them chosen warriors, full of the most savage bravery, and distinguished for their strength and courage. Harold, in his first attempt to force the passage of the river, appears to have routed a detachment on the western side, which was placed there to guard the bridge. Whilst the English were pursuing the fugitives, and attempting to cross the river, historians tell us, that a single Norwegian, of gigantic strength and power, placed himself upon the bridge, and there by his extraordinary valour opposed the whole English army for three hours, killing with his own hand forty of Harold's soldiers. After having scornfully refused an invitation to surrender, with an assurance of the amplest clemency from the English, we are told that a Saxon boatman rowed himself under the bridge, and thrusting his spear up through the woodwork, pierced the Norwegian terribly inwards, under his coat of mail.† The English then rushed on with resistless impetuosity, and the conflict that

\* Battle Fields of Yorkshire.

† It must be confessed, that the exploits of this huge and valiant warrior have more the appearance of romance than of sober history, though it is recorded by all who have written an account of this battle. Drake tells us, that the inhabitants of Stamford Bridge "have a custom, at an annual feast, to make pies in the form of a swill, or swine, tub, which tradition says was made use of by the man, who struck the Norwegian on the bridge, instead of a boat;" and Professor Phillips, speaking of this champion of the bridge, says, "an annual boat-like cake is the village monument to his fortunate enemy."

ensued was dreadful. No quarter on either side was allowed by this immense multitude in arms, so that it is with good reason said that this action is one of the most bloody that is recorded in the annals of England; and it is stated that after the lapse of fifty years the spot was still whitened with the bones of the slain. For a long time the issue of the contest appeared doubtful. The attack of the English was furious, and it was met with equal spirit by the Norwegians. At length the generalship of Harold proved superior in the field to the Norwegian chief. "He ordered his horsemen to retreat, in order to draw the enemy from their position and break their ranks; the stratagem had the desired effect; the Norwegians quitted their position; the English horsemen returned to the charge, and obtained a speedy victory over their now disordered and half armed enemies; for they had thrown aside their shields and breastplates to join in the pursuit. The King of Norway was pierced in the neck with an arrow, and instantly expired. Tosti was also slain, and the greater part of the army, with all the chiefs, perished, fighting like madmen."\* The English pursued the remains of the routed army in their disordered flight towards their ships, "and from behind hotly smote them." Many were pushed into the rivers and drowned; and others reached their vessels, some of which were boarded and burned, and the whole fleet was seized by the victors. Olaf, son of Hardrada, and Paul, Earl of Orkney, who had been left in command of the fleet, were taken prisoners; and here the magnanimity of the English King shines conspicuously, for after receiving back the citizens of York, who had been detained as hostages on board the Norwegian ships, he permitted all who had survived the slaughter, to depart to their own country in a part of their shattered fleet, having first obliged them to swear never to disturb the British dominions again. But twenty ships were sufficient to carry back the miserable remains of an army, which it took more than five hundred to convey hither. Camden tells us, that the spoil taken by the victors was immense; and that the gold alone which the Norwegians left behind them, was as much as twelve men could carry on their shoulders. It is stated that Harold disgusted his army, by refusing to distribute among them any portion of this spoil. But Harold's triumph was of short duration; for after his return to York, and whilst he was there celebrating his great victory, a messenger announced the arrival and descent of the Duke of Normandy and an immense army, at Pevensey, in Sussex. He immediately commenced his march southward, and encountered the enemy at Hastings.

\* Battle Fields of Yorkshire.

## Norman Period.

Some historians assert that Edward, surnamed the Confessor, named, with his dying breath, William, Duke of Normandy, his nephew, as his successor. At the time of that King's death, a report had been circulated, that on his death bed he had appointed Harold to succeed him; and the latter was called to the throne by the voice of the people. However this point may be settled, we have the fact that William of Normandy claimed the English Crown, fought for, and obtained it. He employed eight months in the most active preparations for the invasion, and by the beginning of August, he found himself at the head of 50,000 cavalry, besides a smaller body of infantry. To furnish transports for this numerous army, every vessel in Normandy had been put in requisition. But the supply was still inadequate, and many individuals sought the favour of their Prince, by building ships at their own expense, in the different harbours and creeks. The Normans landed without opposition, at Pevensey, on the 29th of September, 1066; marched immediately to Hastings, and threw up fortifications at both places, to protect their ships, and secure a retreat in case of disaster. In the beginning of October Harold was feasting and rejoicing at York; and on the 13th of the same month he had reached the camp of the Normans. The spot which he selected for this important and sanguinary contest was called Senlac, now Battle, eight miles north-west of Hastings, an eminence opening to the south, and covered on the back by an extensive wood. He posted his troops on the declivity, in one compact and immense mass. In the centre waved the royal standard; by its side stood Harold, and his two brothers Gurth and Leofwin; and around them the whole army, every man on foot. On the opposite hill William marshalled his host. In the front he placed the archers and bowmen; the second line was composed of heavy infantry in coats of mail; and behind these, arranged in five divisions, the pride of the Norman force, the knights and men-at-arms. Both men and horses were completely cased in armour, which gave to their charge an irresistible weight, and rendered them almost invulnerable to ordinary weapons.

William, we are told by an old writer, "out of a pious care for the interests of Christendom, and to prevent the effusion of Christian blood, sent out a monk, as mediator between both, who proposed these terms to Harold,—either to resign the government, or to own it a tenure in fee from the Norman, or to decide the matter in single combat with William; but he,"

continues our authority, "like one who had lost the government over himself, rejected all propositions, and foolishly flattering himself with success, because it was his birthday, promised to give them battle." Camden observes that the night before the battle was spent by the English in revels, feasting, and shouting; but by the Normans in prayers for the safety of their army, and for victory.

Next morning at break of day, the Normans, after a regular shout, sounded to battle, and both armies drew up. When they were ready to engage, the Normans raised the national war cry of "God is our help," which was as loudly answered by the adverse cry of "Christ's rood, the holy rood." The Normans charged first with a volley of arrows from all parts, and that being a sort of attack to which the English were strangers, proved exceedingly terrible. William then ordered the cavalry to charge, but the English, who resolved to die rather than attempt a retreat, kept their ranks, and repulsed them with great loss. The English in every point opposed a solid and impenetrable mass, and neither the buckler nor corslet of the Normans could withstand the stroke of the battle axe, wielded by a powerful arm and with unerring aim. After a pause the left wing of the Norman army betook themselves to flight, closely pursued by their opponents, and a report having now spread that William himself had fallen, the whole army began to waver. The Duke, with his helmet in his hand, rode along the line exclaiming, "I am still alive, and with the help of God I still shall conquer." The presence and confidence of their commander revived the hopes of the Normans. William led his troops again to the attack; but the English column resisted every assault, and maintained their ground with so much bravery, that the Normans were most miserably harassed, and were upon the point of retreating, had not their leader used the most extraordinary means to inspire them with courage and confidence. Harold, on his part used every possible exertion, and was distinguished as the most active and brave amongst the soldiers in the host. His brothers had already perished, but as long as he survived, no man entertained the apprehension of defeat, or admitted the idea of flight. The battle continued for several hours with great fury, the English resisting the almost overwhelming charges of the Norman cavalry. At length, William, disappointed and perplexed, had recourse to stratagem. He ordered his men to retreat and to give ground, but still to keep their ranks. The English, taking this for flight, thought the day was certainly their own, whereupon they broke their ranks, and, not doubting their victory, pursued the enemy in great disorder. But the Normans rallying their troops on a sudden, renewed the battle, and enclosing the English in that disorder,

killed great numbers, while they stood doubtful whether they should run or fight. At last, Harold was shot through the head with an arrow, and fell from his steed in agony, and was borne to the foot of the standard, where he breathed his last. The knowledge of his fall relaxed the efforts of the English. Twenty Normans undertook to seize the royal banner, and effected their purpose, but with the loss of half their number. One of them, who maimed with his sword the dead body of the King, was afterwards disgraced by William for his brutality.

It was now dusk in the evening, the English became dispirited, and having lost their King, fled to save their lives, after having fought without intermission from seven o'clock in the morning. During the engagement William exhibited many proofs of the most determined courage; he had three horses killed under him, and he had been compelled to grapple on foot with his adversaries. Harold's mother begged as a boon the dead body of her son, and offered as a ransom its weight in gold, but William's resentment having rendered him callous to pity, he refused, and ordered the corpse of the fallen Monarch to be buried on the beach; adding, with a sneer, "hé guarded the coast while he was alive; let him continue to guard it after death."

There is an old English tradition that Harold did not fall in this battle, but had retired to a hermitage, where he spent the remainder of his days; but the historical account is, that by stealth, or by purchase, his remains were removed from the beach, and interred at Waltham Abbey, which he himself had founded before he ascended the throne. It is said that a plain stone was laid on his tomb in the Abbey, with the expressive epitaph, "Harold Infelix." Some historians assert that on the evening of the battle William caused his pavilion to be pitched among the heaps of the slain, and there with his Barons, he supped and feasted among the dead.

Thus ended the memorable and fatal battle, which is commonly called the Battle of Hastings; and this day (14th October, 1066) ended the Anglo-Saxon monarchy, which had continued more than 600 years; and gave our island to the dominion of the Norman race. On the field of victory the Conqueror erected and endowed a splendid monastery, the remains of which still retain the name of *Battle Abbey*. It is said that the high altar stood on the very spot where the standard of Harold had been planted. The exterior walls embraced the whole of the hill which had been the centre of the battle, and all the surrounding country became the property of the Abbey. The community of this monastery were bound by its rule to offer prayer perpetually for the eternal rest of the souls who had fallen in the conflict; so that the Abbey itself was at once the monument of the Norman Duke's triumph, and

the token of his piety. Palgrave very happily concludes his description of this noble and richly-endowed Abbey thus: "But all this pomp and solemnity has passed away like a dream. The 'perpetual prayer' has ceased for ever,—the Roll of Battle is rent,—the shields of the Norman lieges are trodden in the dust,—the Abbey is levelled to the ground,—and a dark and reedy pool fills the spot where the foundations of the quire have been uncovered, merely for the gaze of the idle visitor, or the instruction of the moping antiquary." The foundation of this Abbey was soon followed by that of the town, which was afterwards called Battle or Battel.

"Whether we consider the Norman Conquest in its success, or in its consequences," writes the Rev. George Oliver, in his History of Beverley, "it is still an event equally stupendous and unprecedented. It was effected almost without a struggle. Never were such important results accomplished with so little sacrifice on the part of the conquerors. The rash attempt made by a provincial Duke to reduce this powerful island, would in any other age have been deemed preposterous, and its success contrary to all the chances of political calculation. William, himself, could scarcely anticipate, or even hope for that perfect good fortune with which it was accompanied. The native inhabitants appear to have been completely paralysed by the unexpected result of the battle of Hastings; which feeling, the superior genius of William well knew how to convert to his own advantage, that even the sacrifice of their liberties, their property, and innumerable lives was insufficient to rouse them to any effective resistance against the tyranny which trampled them underfoot, and reduced their ancient nobility to a state of servile thralldom."

William, who had hitherto been called "the Bastard," and was now surnamed "the Conqueror," was crowned in Wesminster Abbey, on the 25th of December next following the battle of Hastings, by Aldred, Archbishop of York; Stigand, of Canterbury, being suspended from the Archiepiscopal office. Having thus established himself on the Throne of England, William on his part, to confirm his authority, adopted the most bold and active measures. He expelled the English from their estates, reserving to himself about 1,400 manors, and he distributed the fair territory of Britain amongst his rapacious followers. This numerous train of military adventurers, who had accompanied him from Normandy under the promise of reward, held their new possessions of the King on the tenure of homage, and fealty, and military service; by which they were bound to attend him in the field with a certain number of retainers, armed, mounted, and provided for a specified number of days in every year. The Roll of Battle Abbey, given by Hollinshed, con-

tains the names of 629 Normans, who became claimants upon the soil of England, whilst the ancient nobility were stripped of their titles and property, and the humble classes of the inhabitants were reduced to the condition of miserable slaves.\*

Thus all the principal manors in the Kingdom, except those which the King had reserved himself, were held of him by tenants *in capite*, or in other words, by his Barons; and these, consisting of about seven hundred persons, were the legitimate Parliament, or Council of the realm. The lands thus acquired and maintained, the Barons again subdivided into Knight's fees, and let them to tenants on a similar tenure. The Conqueror laid aside the greater part of the English laws, and introduced the Norman customs, and even ordered all causes to be pleaded in French; and we are told by Ingulphus, who lived at that time, that he "obliged all the inhabitants of England to do homage, and swear fealty to him and his successors."

He made a seal also, on the side of which was engraven, *Hoc Normantorum Gulielmum nosce patronum*, by this the Normans own great William Duke; and on the other side *Hoc Anglis signo Regem fatearis eundem*, by this too, England owns the same their King. He erected numerous fortresses to overawe the insulted and oppressed inhabitants, and conscious of the detestation in which he was deservedly held, he entertained a perpetual jealousy of the English, and in the resistless apprehensions of his guilty mind, he compelled them to rake out their fires, and extinguish their lights at eight o'clock every night, and they were reminded of this duty by the toll of the *Curfew*.

The northern counties were slow to submit to the Norman yoke, which, however, at last fell on them with terrible weight. A violent struggle was made for some years to expel the invaders, and York was the rallying point

\* The grants of the landed property in England, made by the Conqueror to some of his nobles, were excessive. To Geoffrey, Bishop of Constance, he gave 250 manors; to William Warrenne, 208; to Richard de Clare, 171; to Ranulph de Baynard, 85; and to Roger de Bresli, 149 manors. His uterine brother, Odo, Bishop of Bayeux, and Earl of Kent, possessed in that County, and in several others, 439 manors. Robert, Earl of Montague, on whom he bestowed the Earldom of Cornwall, had in that and other counties, 973 manors; and Alan Fergant, Earl of Bretagne, had 442 manors. The manor of Richmond, in Yorkshire, had 156 lordships; besides which, the Earl possessed, by the gift of the King, 276 manors in other parts of the kingdom. The King himself possessed no fewer than 1432 manors in different parts of the Kingdom. A *Manor* was synonymous in the language of the Normans with *Villa* in Latin. It denoted an extensive parcel of land, with a house on it for the accommodation of the lord, and cottages for his villeins and slaves. The lord or owner generally kept a part of the land in his own hands, and bestowed the remainder on two or more tenants, who held of him by military service, or rent, or other prestations.

for the patriot army. "By the splendour of God," (his usual oath) said William, when the men of York rose and massacred his Norman garrison, "I will utterly root out these Northumbrian people, nor will I lay lance in rest for other cause, until I have done the deed." The gage was redeemed. St. Cuthbert, whose awe had caused meaner invaders to stand aloof, himself quailed before the withering glance of the Conqueror. The power of darkness for a time prevailed. William, as we shall see anon, marched from the Ouse to the Tyne, leaving behind him villages destroyed and without inhabitants, and scattering the mangled members of the people upon every highway. Slaughter gave place to famine, and famine to pestilence, under the stern severity of the Norman tyrant.

Having silenced the disaffected, and constrained the country to a state of sullen quietude, he caused a survey to be taken of all the lands in England, the four northern counties excepted, on the model of the Book of Winchester, compiled by order of Alfred the Great. This survey was registered in a national record called *Dom Boc*, *Doomsday* or *Domesday Book*, or judgment, alluding by metaphor to those books out of which the world shall be judged at the last day. It was to serve as a register of the possessions of every English freeman, to ascertain what quality of military service was owed by the King's chief tenants; to affix the homage due to him, and to record by what tenure the various estates in Britain were held. This survey was undertaken by the advice and consent of a great Council of the Kingdom, which met immediately after the false rumour of the Danes' intended attack upon England, in the year 1085, as it is stated in the Saxon Chronicle, and it did not occupy long in the execution, since all the historians who speak of it vary but from the year 1089 until 1087. There is a memorandum at the end of the second volume, stating that it was finished in 1086. The manner of performing the survey was expeditious: certain Commissioners, called the King's Justices, were appointed to travel throughout England, and to register upon the oath of the Sheriffs, the Lords of each manor, the Priests of every church, the Stewards of every hundred, the Bailiffs and six villeins or husbandmen of every village, the names of the various places; the holders of them in the time of King Edward the Confessor, forty years previous; the names of the possessors, the quantity of land, the nature of the tenures, and the several kinds of property contained in them. All the estates were to be then triply rated; namely, as they stood in the reign of the Confessor; as they were first bestowed by King William I.; and as they were at the time of the survey. The manuscript itself consists of two volumes, a greater and a less. The first of these is a large folio, containing the description of



thirty-one counties, upon 382 double pages of vellum, numbered on one side only, and written in a small but plain character, each page having a double column. Some of the capital letters and principal passages are touched with red ink, and others have red lines run through them, as if they were intended to be obliterated. The smaller volume is of a 4to size, and is written upon 450 double pages of vellum, but in a single column, and in a very large and fair character: it contains three counties, and a part of two others. Through all ages this "Book of Judicial verdict" will be held in estimation, not only for its antiquity, but also for its intrinsic value. To the present day it serves to show what manor is, and what is not ancient demesne.\*

The Normans were remarkable for their courage and valour: though seated in the midst of warlike nations, they never made submission without an appeal to arms. Their valiant behaviour in the wars of the Holy Land exceedingly increased their honour; and Roger Hoveden, extolling their deeds of arms, tells us, "that bold France, after she had experienced the Norman valour, drew back; fierce England submitted; rich Apulia was restored to her flourishing condition; famous Jerusalem, and renowned Antioch, were both subdued."

The Normans preserved most of the Anglo-Saxon laws and customs, but preferred their own trial by battle, as more worthy of warriors and freemen, to the fiery ordeals of the English. They separated the spiritual from the secular courts; and the old distinction of classes, viz: *Ealderman*, *Thanes*, *Ceorls*, and *Theowas*, were preserved under the names of *Count* or *Earl*, *Baron*, *Knight*, *Esquire*, *Freetenant*, *Villein* or *Villain*, and *Neif*.

In the Domesday Survey we find Yorkshire, as at present, divided into three Ridings, called the east, west, and north, and subdivided into Wapentakes, a division peculiar to this County. And here we shall make a digression, for the purpose of explaining some of the ancient titles, tenures, and terms, used in the admeasurement of land, beginning with the names of the divisions and subdivisions of this County.

\* The Domesday Book, supposed to be the most ancient of its kind of which any European nation can boast, and certainly the most ancient topographical record which is known in England, was, until 1695, kept under three locks, the keys of which were in the custody of the treasurer and two churchwardens of the Exchequer, but it is now deposited in the Chapter House at Westminster, where the fee for consulting it is 6s. 8d., and for transcripts from it, 4d. per line. Though it is now nearly 800 years old, it is in as fine a state of preservation as if it were the work of yesterday. In the 40th of George III. (1801), his Majesty, by the recommendation of Parliament, directed that it should be printed for the use of the members of the Houses of Lords and Commons, and the public libraries of the kingdom, which orders were duly obeyed.

*Riding* is a term derived from the Saxon *Trithing*, which implies a third part; a mode of division in England, as has just been observed, now only peculiar to Yorkshire, but common in Lincolnshire and some other counties in the Anglo-Saxon era. The *Trithing man*, or *Lathgrieve* (the chief magistrate of a *Riding*), presided over three or four or more *Hundreds*, formed into what was called a *Trithing*, *Lath*, or *Rape*; hence the *Laths* of Kent, the *Rapes* of Sussex, the *Parts* of Lincoln, and the *Trithings* or *Ridings* of Yorkshire.

*Wapentake*, or *Wapontake*, is equivalent to *Hundred*, and this division is likewise of Saxon origin, and was probably made in imitation of the *Centena* of Germany. The true origin of the application of the word *Hundred* to the division of a County is uncertain. Some authors have considered the *Hundred* as relating to the number of the heads of families, or the number of dwellings situated in the division; others to the number of hides of land therein contained. Other writers are of opinion that the *Hundred* was formed by the union of ten tithings, and was presided over by a *Hundredary*, who was commonly a *Thane*, or nobleman, residing within the *Hundred*. The word *Wapentake* is evidently of warlike origin. In the northern counties the frequent occasion for military array, predominating over the peaceful purposes of civil jurisdiction, before the union of England and Scotland, the subdivision of these counties received warlike titles, as *Wards* and *Wapentakes*. The Court of the chief officer, or *Hundredary*, commonly met once a month, and all the members came to it in their arms, from which it obtained the name of *Wapentac*, or *Wapentaks*, which literally signifies "To Arms," from *Wapen*, weapons, and *tac*, touch. When any one came to take upon him the government of a *Wapentake*, upon a day appointed, all that owed suit and service to that *Hundred* came to meet their new Governor at the usual place of meeting. "He, upon his arrival, alighting from his horse, set up the lance on end (a custom used amongst the Romans by the *Prætor*, at the meetings of the *Centumviri*), and according to custom, took fealty of them; the ceremony of which was, that all who were present touched the Governor's lance with their lances, in token of confirmation, whereupon the whole meeting was called a *Wapentake*, inasmuch as by a mutual touch of each other's arms, they had entered into a confederacy or agreement to stand by one another."\*

*Tithings* were so called because ten freemen householders, with their families, composed one; and a number of these tithings (probably ten, or perhaps

\* Bawdwen's Domesday Gloss., p. 22.

one hundred) originally composed a superior division, called a Hundred, Wapentake, Ward, &c., in each of which a Court was held yearly for the trial of causes. An indefinite number of these divisions form a County or Shire, the civil jurisdiction of which is confined to the *Shire-reeve*, or Sheriff, who is appointed annually. Anciently the *Shire-genot*, or Folk-mote, as the highest court in the County was then called, was held twice a year, and presided over by the Bishop or his deputy, and the Alderman or his vicegerent, the Sheriff.

Judge Blackstone says that King Alfred the Great divided England into Counties, Hundreds, and Tithings, to prevent the rapine and disorders which formerly prevailed in the realm; the inhabitants of each district being then made responsible for the lawless acts of each other. But Shires and Counties are mentioned before the accession of that monarch. Soon after the introduction of Christianity in the seventh century, the Kingdom was divided into *Parishes* and *Bishoprics*.

The principal titles of honour amongst the Saxons were *Etheling*, Prince of the blood; *Chancellor*, assistant to the King in giving judgments; *Alderman*, or *Ealderman*, Governor or Viceroy. This word is derived from *ald* or *old*, like senator in Latin. Provinces, Cities, and sometimes Wapentakes, had their Aldermen to govern them, determine law suits, &c. This office gave place to the title of Earl, which is Danish, and was introduced by Canute. The *Sheriffe*, or *Shir-reeve*, the Alderman's deputy, and chosen by him, sat as judge in some courts, and saw sentence executed. *Heartoghan* signified Generals of armies or Dukes. Hengist, in the Saxon Chronicle, is *Hear-togh*. *Reeve*, among the English Saxons, was a steward. *Witan* or *Wites* (i.e. wise-men) were the magistrates or lawyers. *Thanes* (i.e. servants) were officers of the Crown, whom the King recompensed with lands, to be held of him, with some obligation of service or homage. There were other lords of lands and vassals, who enjoyed the title of Thanes, but were distinguished from the King's Thanes. The Aldermen and Dukes were all King's Thanes. These were the great Thanes, and were succeeded by the Barons, which title was brought in by the Normans. Mass Thanes were those who held lands in fee of the church. Middle Thanes were such as held very small estates of the King, or parcels of land of the King's greater Thanes. They were called by the Normans, *Vavassors* or *Vavassories*. *Ceorl* (whence our word *churl*) was a countryman or artizan, who was a freeman. *Ceorls*, who had acquired possession of five hides of land with a large house court, and bell to call together their servants, were raised to the rank of Thanes of the lowest class. The *Villeins*—"Ascripti villæ seu glebæ"—were labourers bound to the soil, and transferred with it from one owner to another; in this and

other respects they were little better than slaves. According to the enumeration in the Domesday Book, these *Ceorls*, under the names of villeins, cottars, and bordars, amounted in England to 183,024; whilst the freemen were only 30,005; and the slaves, 26,552. The Burghers, many of whom were *Ceorls* of the same description, were numbered at 17,105.

A *Hide*, or a *Carucate* of land, is generally estimated at 120 acres, and was considered to employ one plough for a year—hence it is sometimes called a *Plough-land*. It is, by some, derived from the Saxon *hyden-tectum*, the roof of a house; this quantity of land being considered as a proper annexation to a farm house. Under the feudal system most lands were held under a military tenure. All the lands in the kingdom, soon after the Conquest, were said to be “held of the King;” and the great vassals of the Crown, both lay and clerical, were forced to have a certain number of horsemen completely armed, and to maintain them in the field for the space of forty days. England was so distributed by these means, that William the Conqueror had always at his command an army of 60,000 Knights. By the term *Knights* must be understood those who held *Knights’ fees*, not persons who had obtained the Order of Knighthood. A Knight’s fee consisted of two hides of land, or two hides and a half; and a *mesne* tenant, who had more than a single Knight’s fee, was called a *bavasar*, a term applied to any vassal who held a military fief of a tenant in chief to the Crown. He who held of a *bavasar*, was called a *balvasini*, and each of these might enfeeoff another to hold of him by Knight’s service. A *Barony* was *Knights’ service embaroned*, or enlarged. Thus every nobleman was by tenure a soldier; his military duty was not confined within the Kingdom, but extended abroad at the command of the King; and not singly, but with such a number of Knights as his barony, by its several fees, maintained. All the great landowners were soldiers, paid and maintained by the lands they possessed, as they likewise paid and maintained those freeholders of an inferior rank, who held Knight’s fees under them. The military tenure, or that by Knight service, consisted of what were deemed the most free and honourable services, but in their nature they were unavoidably uncertain, as to the time of performance; the second species of tenure, or *free socage*, consisted also of free and honourable services, but were reduced to an absolute certainty. This tenure subsists to this day, and in it, since the statute of Charles II., almost every other species of tenure has been merged.

The chief tenants of lords generally divided their property into two portions, one of which, the principal farm or manor, on which the rest depended, and to which they owed suit and service, was called the *Demesne*.

A *Virgate* or *Yard* of land differed in extent at various times, and in various parts of the Kingdom, from being measured with a rood (*virga*) of the length of a yard. An *Oxgang* or *Bowvate* was as much land as an ox could till, or about 28 acres. A *Perch* was  $5\frac{1}{2}$  yards; an *Acre*, 160 square perches; a *Carucate*, *Carve*, or *Plough-land*, was generally 8 oxgangs. *Berewicks* are manors within manors. *Heriot* is a fine paid to the lord at the death of a land holder or change of tenant.

The other terms, most common in connection with the tenure of land, were *Sac*, *Soc*, *Thol*, *Theam*, *Infangtheof*, and *View of Frank Pledge*. All these terms are in ancient law, and originated from the old Saxon. *Sac* and *Soc* means the jurisdiction of holding pleas, and imposing fines, and the right which a lord possessed of exercising justice on his vassals, and compelling them to be suitors at his Court. *Sockmen* were those who held land on lease, and their land was called *sockland*. They were comparatively free tenants, and held their land generally by the service of ploughing their lord's own demesne land, a certain number of days in the year. According to some, *Soc* in Saxon means the handle of a plough; but others tell us that it means liberty or privilege. *Socage* then, or free *socage*, denotes a tenure by any certain and determinate service.

*Britton*, describing land in *socage* tenure, under the name of *fraunke forme*, says that they are lands and tenements, whereof the nature of the fee is charged by feoffment out of *chivalry* for certain yearly services, and in respect whereof neither homage, ward, marriage, or relief can be demanded. Those who preserved their lands from the innovations of the Norman Conqueror were said to hold them in *free* and *common socage*.

*Thol* was the liberty to take, as well as to be free from, toll; and *Theam*, or *Thein*, was the prerogative of having, restraining, and judging bondmen, and villeins with their children, goods and chattels, in the Court of the person possessing the privilege of *Theam*. *Infangtheof* is a criminal jurisdiction, by which thieves, found in the territories of the possessor of this privilege, might be punished without appeal. By virtue of these powers offenders were tried for thefts and other misdemeanors, and sentenced in the lord's court, and even executed on the gallows belonging to the manor.

*View of Frank Pledge* meant that twice in the year, upon such days as the possessor of the privilege shall think fit, he shall have a view of all the frank pledges of his tenants.

*Wajs* were goods which had been stolen, and thrown away by the thief in his flight, for fear of being apprehended. These were given by law to the

King, as a punishment upon the owner for not himself pursuing the felon, and taking away his goods from him.

From the Domesday Book we learn that at the Conquest the County of York was divided among some of the most powerful and leading men of the Conqueror's government. Their names are entered in the following order:—

“I. Land of the King in Yorkshire. II. The Archbishop of York,\* and of the Canons, and of his men. III. The Bishop of Durham† and his men. IV. The Abbot of York. V. Earl Hugh, Robert de Eue, Earl of Eue, in Normandy. VI. Robert, Earl of Morton, half brother to the Conqueror, by whom he was created Earl of Cornwall, 1068. VII. Earl Alan, son of Flathald, obtained the Castle of Oswaldestre from the Conqueror. VIII. Robert de Todeni, Lord of Belvoir, County Lincoln, ob. 1088. IX. Berenger de Todeni. X. Ibert de Laci, Lord of Pontefract. XI. Roger de Busli held the Manor of Hallam (Sheffield) under the Countess Judith, anno 1080, ob. 1099. XII. Robert Malet, great Chamberlain of England, but subsequently disinherited and banished. XIII. William de Warren, Earl Warren in Normandy, created Earl of Surrey by William II., died 1089. XIV. William de Percy, surnamed Algernon, obtained divers lands from William I., ob. *circa* 1096. XV. Drago de Holderness, also called Drue Debeverer, who came into England with the Conqueror, and retired into Flanders some years afterwards. XVI. Ralph de Mortimer, who obtained the Castle of Wigmore. XVII. Ralph Paganel. XVIII. Walter de Aincourt. XIX. Gilbert de Gant, son of Baldwin, Earl of Flanders. XX. Gilbert Tison. XXI. Hugh, son of Baldric. XXII. Erneis de Burum, held thirty-two lordships in the County; he was the ancestor of the present family of Byron. XXIII. Osbert de Arcis. XXIV. Odo Balistarius. XXV. Richard, son of Erfast. XXVI. Goiafrid Alselin. XXVII. Alberic de Coci. XXVIII. Gospatric. XXIX. The King's Thaness.

A few centuries after the Conquest much of the land passed into the possession of the Church, and the religious fraternities, but at the Reformation most of it reverted to the Crown, and was subsequently granted for services to persons in royal favour, or sold for the use of the King.

Though it is a generally received opinion that England was divided into Counties and Shires, or Shrievalties, towards the ninth century, yet it does not appear that this change took place in the ancient Kingdom of Northumbria earlier than the middle of the eleventh century. At the time of the

\* Thomas, Canon of Baion, in Normandy, succeeded in 1070.

† Walcher consecrated *circa* 1072.

Norman Survey it contained six Shires, under the designation of *Eurewicksaire*, *Richmundeseire*, *Loncastreseire*, *Caplande* (afterwards called the Bishopric of Durham), *Westmerlonde*, and *Cumbrelonde*.

In 1068, Earl Morcar, who was still Governor of York, with his brother, the Earl of Chester, and their nephew, Blethevin, King of Wales, finding that Duke William's policy was to root out the ancient nobility, and to degrade the native inhabitants to the condition of slaves, resolved to oppose him. On hearing of their designs, he created one of his cruel satellites, named Copsi, Earl of Northumbria, and despatched him down to Durham with a guard of 1,200 men. But the Northumbrians, headed by Earl Cospatrick, and Edgar, the Etheling (the latter being the lawful heir to the Crown of England), marched to Durham by night, and attacked and slew Copsi and all his men. The insurgents then proceeded to York, where they were received with joy and gladness by Earls Morcar and Edwin, as well as by the citizens. William once more drew his conquering sword, and advanced rapidly towards York, at the head of a powerful army. The Northumbrian chiefs, finding themselves unable to withstand him, sent Edgar back to Scotland, and submitted themselves to the Conqueror, by whom they were readily pardoned. The citizens, too, hearing of his lenity, went out to meet him, and delivered to him the keys of the City. They also were apparently received into favour, but a heavy fine was levied upon them, and two Castles in the City were shortly after fortified by the Conqueror, and strongly garrisoned with Norman soldiers. On the arrival of William, the Saxon nobles, who had manifested a disposition to shake off the Norman yoke, fled into Scotland for protection. Among these were Morcar, Edwin, and Cospatrick. Elated by his success, William sent a herald into Scotland to demand the Etheling, and the English lords; but Malcolm refusing to comply with the mandate, and knowing that the Conqueror would revenge the denial, invited the King of Denmark to unite with the English and Scotch in an attempt to expel the Norman. The Danish monarch soon united in the confederacy, and sent a fleet of 250 ships, well laden with troops, commanded by his brother Esborn, or Osbern, with the two sons of the King, Harold and Canute, as well as other distinguished personages. This fleet entered the Humber in 1069, and the forces being joined by the English and Scotch, they marched direct to York, where they were met by the Etheling and a large number of the English exiles, who had arrived from Scotland for the purpose. The Norman garrison in the Castles prepared for a siege, and on the 19th of September, 1069, they set fire to some houses in the suburbs, to prevent them being made useful to the besiegers. But the wind being high,

the flames spread farther than was designed, and burnt down a great part of the City, including the Cathedral, and the invaluable library placed there by King Egbert, in A.D. 800. During the great confusion, into which the unexpected ravages of the fire threw the garrisons, the Danes and English valiantly attacked the fortresses, entered the City sword in hand, and cut the Normans (about 3,000 in number) to pieces. All who escaped this dreadful slaughter were the Sheriff of the County, his wife, and two children, with a few others who were found in the Castle.

Waltheof, the fifth Earl of Northumberland, and son of Siward, was now appointed Governor of the City, with a strong garrison of English and Scotch soldiers under his command; and the Danes retired to a good situation, between the Humber and Trent, to wait the Normans. William, who was hunting in the forest of Dean when he received the first news of this disaster, swore his favourite oath (See page 112) that he would destroy all the people of the north. Hearing that the garrison of York had been taken by his enemies, he was much exasperated, and hastened at the head of a powerful army into the north. He spread his camps over the country for the space of 100 miles, and then the execution of his vow began.\* Alured, a monk of Beverley, who wrote in the twelfth century, states, "that the Conqueror destroyed men, women, and children, from York, even to the western sea;" and the historian of Malmsbury tells us, that no less than 100,000 persons perished at that time in a district sixty miles in length. The whole country between York and Durham was laid waste so effectually, that for nine years afterwards the ground remained untilled; and many of the wretched inhabitants, who had escaped the slaughter, were reduced to the necessity of eating dogs, cats, and even their own species, to prolong a miserable existence. This account is confirmed by Roger de Hoveden, and Simon of Durham, as well as by the concurrent testimony of all the historians of those times. When the Conqueror arrived before the City, he summoned the Governor to surrender, but Waltheof sternly refused, and set his threats at defiance. The wily Norman now had recourse to bribery: for a large sum of money and permission to plunder the sea coast, the faithless and corrupt Danish General, Osbert, agreed to quit the country as soon as the spring would permit. William lost no time in pushing forward the siege. He attempted to take the City by storm, after making a large breach in the wall with engines, but was repulsed with great loss; Waltheof, himself, according to William of Malmsbury, having stood singly in the breach, and cut down several of the

\* Holinshed. See also Turner's Hist. Eng., vol. i., page 79.



Normans who attempted to mount it. From the same historian we learn that about this time a severe battle was fought near York between the Normans and a powerful army, probably of Caledonians, who came to the relief of the besieged; in which the Normans, however, were victorious.

After a gallant defence of six months, York was obliged through famine to capitulate; and though the conditions of the surrender were favourable to the besieged, yet the Conqueror attributing the first success of the Danes to the treachery of the citizens, took signal vengeance upon them, put the soldiers to the sword, and burnt the City to the ground. York never entirely overcame this shock, nor recovered its ancient splendour. The Conqueror professed great friendship for Waltheof, the Governor, who had so nobly resisted him; and the more firmly to attach him to his interest, he being a man of pre-eminent note, he gave him in marriage Judith, his niece, daughter of Maud, Countess of Albermarle, his uterine sister, and at the same time restored to him the Earldoms of Northampton and Huntingdon, which belonged to Siward, his father. Waltheof having become involved in the revolt of the Barons, for the expulsion of the King, in the tenth year of this reign (1076), was arraigned for conspiracy, and condemned and executed at Winchester, in the same year, and his decapitated trunk was treated with every possible indignity. The body having lain for some time in the cross-way, where it was buried, was afterwards removed to Croyland or Crowland Abbey, in Lincolnshire, where it was honourably sepulchred. And thus perished the brave Waltheof, the last of the Saxon Earls. The execution of this nobleman is observed to be the first instance of beheading in this Kingdom. His widow, the Countess Judith, not being a participant in her husband's treason, was allowed to retain his lands, manors, and Earldoms. Historians, however, have accused her of treachery towards her lord; for though his innocence was attested by Archbishop Lanfranc, yet at her instigation, who is said to have effected a second marriage, he was condemned. Ingulphus, a monk of Croyland, and her contemporary, has not scrupled to describe her by the execrable appellation, *impiissima Jezebel*.

York, before it was burnt by the Norman, was considered by Hardinge, superior to London; and was, according to the author of the Polichronicon, "as fair as the City of Rome, from the beauty and magnificence of its buildings." Harrison very justly styled it *Altera Roma*; and Leland tells us that it was so large, that its suburbs extended to the villages a mile distant.

In 1071, the embers of civil war being rekindled by the jealousy of William, the influence of Edwin and Morcar was judged dangerous; and the King thought it expedient to secure their persons. Edwin, whilst endea-

vouring to escape towards the borders of Scotland, was betrayed by three of his vassals, and fell with twenty of his faithful adherents, fighting against his pursuers. The traitors presented his head to William, who rewarded their services with a sentence of perpetual banishment. His brother Morcar fled to the standard of Hereward, erected in the "Camp of Refuge," in the Isle of Ely, Cambridgeshire; and with the Bishop of Durham, and many Saxon Nobles, was afterwards condemned by William to perpetual imprisonment. In 1072, the Conqueror being at Durham, summoned before his tribunal, Cospatrick, the Earl of Northumberland, and charged him with old offences, which it was supposed had been long ago forgiven—the massacres of the Normans at Durham and York. He was banished by the sentence of the Court; and having retired to Scotland, Malcolm gave him the Castle and demesne of Dunbar.

The people of England finding further resistance to the Norman useless, submitted to his yoke in sullen despair. Even Edgar the Etheling consented to solicit a livelihood of the man whose ambition had robbed him of a Crown. William granted him the first place at Court, an apartment in the palace, and a yearly pension of 365 pounds of silver.

Nothing of importance is recorded of Yorkshire from this period until the year 1137, when on the 4th of June in that year, the City, which had partially risen from its ashes, was destroyed by an accidental fire, which burnt down the Cathedral, the Abbey of St. Mary, St. Leonard's Hospital, thirty-nine parish churches in the City, and Trinity Church in the suburbs, besides many streets and public buildings.\*

Whilst the civil war between King Stephen and the Empress Maud, or Matilda, raged with destructive fury, David, King of Scotland, uncle to the Empress, espoused her cause, and with a powerful army of Normans, Germans, Saxons, Cumbrian Britons, Northumbrians, Picts, and Scots, three times invaded the northern provinces of England, and laid waste the country as far as the City of York. In these expeditions the army of the Scottish King conducted the war with the ferocity of savages. They profaned the churches, burnt the monasteries and villages, promiscuously slaughtered children, aged people, and the defenceless; and exercised the most unheard of barbarities upon the natives in general. Pregnant women were ripped up, and the infants cut to pieces. The fair females which they spared in their route, and which were generally distinguished by their birth or beauty, were

\* On the previous day, the Cathedral of Rochester had been burnt; and on the 27th of the same disastrous month, the City of Bath was nearly destroyed by fire.

stripped of their clothes, tied to each other with thongs, and driven at the point of the spear to Scotland; where after suffering every kind of indignity, they were retained as slaves to their captors, or bartered by them for cattle to the neighbouring chieftains.

This conduct so incensed the powerful Norman Barons, that they resolved, unanimously, at the suggestion of Thurston, Archbishop of York, who was then Lieutenant-Governor of the North, to repel the invaders; and even the Saxon-English were so exasperated against the Scots, that they forgot their hatred of the Normans, in the pleasing hope of taking vengeance upon such cruel enemies. The aged Archbishop succeeded in uniting all to fight for their country, their families, and their God. David, hearing of their intentions, drew his army from before York, and retired northwards. The chief of the Barons who joined in this struggle, were William le Gros, or de Albermarle, Walter de Gaunt, Robert and Adam de Brus, Roger de Mowbray, Walter L'Espece, Gilbert and William de Lacy, and William de Percy. At the appointed time, the nobles, with their vassals, repaired to York, and were met by the parochial clergy, with the bravest of their parishioners; and after spending three days in fasting and devotion, and swearing before the Archbishop that they would never desert each other, they marched against the enemy, under the command of that prelate, as far as Thirsk Castle, then a stronghold of the Mowbrays. There Thurston resigned his authority to Ralph, Bishop of the Orkney Isles, William le Gros, and Walter L'Espece.

On the 22nd of August, 1138, the two armies met on Cuton Moor, near Northallerton, and a terrible battle ensued. This engagement is called the *Battle of the Standard*, from a high standard round which the English assembled, and which was a tall mast of a vessel, strongly fastened into the frame work of a carriage upon wheels, having at the top a crucifix, a silver pix containing a consecrated host; and from which were suspended the consecrated banners of the three patron saints—St. Peter of York, St. John of Beverley, and St. Wilfred of Ripon. The standard was guarded by a chosen band of knights, who had sworn rather to die than yield it to the hands of the enemy. After the Bishop had made an oration to the army, from the carriage, and had given them the blessing, which they received on their knees, they all shouted "Amen," and rose to receive the shock of the enemy.

But the spirit of discord and disunion reigned in the Scottish camp, and this is not surprising, considering the many different races of which it was composed. David had intended that the battle should be commenced by the men-at-arms and archers, in whom his chief strength consisted, but the men

of Galloway, who fought with long slender spears, and who displayed great bravery during the campaign, insisted upon taking that post of honour. After an angry discussion, the King was obliged to yield the van to the Galwegians. The English drew up in a compact body, the spearmen and archers in front, and the heavy armed chivalry in the rear, the sacred banner towering bright above them all. The Scots were formed in four lines, the men of Galloway (or Picts) in front, who began the battle, wildly rushing on their opponents, and throwing themselves, like a tempest, upon the English spearmen. For a moment the English were staggered, but whilst thus held at bay, the matchless archery of the native English was brought to bear with tremendous effect upon the enemy. The naked Galwegians were on the point of turning before these terrible discharges of barbed death, when the Scottish men-at-arms, commanded by Prince Henry, coming to their rescue, dashed with such impetuosity upon the English ranks, that they were torn asunder, and victory appeared to smile upon the Scottish monarch. The conflict now grew hotter; it was "Lance to lance, and horse to horse"—when lo! the Scottish forces waver—they are seized by a panic—a rumour had spread through the ranks that the King was slain; and though he himself, helmet in hand, hastens from rank to rank, to reassure them that he is yet alive—he fails in rallying them—they fly, and are ruthlessly slaughtered by their pursuers; and the battle is lost. In vain the King and his brave son Henry, and a few faithful nobles, maintained the combat; notwithstanding the astonishing proofs of valour and intrepidity which they displayed, they were nobly defeated by the newly-raised army of the "chariot-mounted banners." The Scottish army consisted of 27,000 men, and nearly one half are said to have perished in the battle and flight on that fatal day; and, as we have no account of prisoners, it is probable that no quarter was given. The loss on the English side is not stated; that of the Scots is most probably guess work.

There are no indications of hillocks or mounds to be seen in the neighbourhood, to mark the graves of the slain; and the only name of a place bearing a reference to such an event, is "Scot Pit Lane," applied to a green lane, a little to the north of the spot where stood the consecrated banner of the English army, and which is still known as "Standard Hill." Some writers suppose that the dead, excepting a select few, were never buried. The field of this—one of the most bloody battles recorded in the history of this Kingdom—was an open level common, upon which little advantage could be gained over an enemy by selection of ground, as it afforded no strong posts, or easily defended positions.

This signal defeat so overawed the Scots, that the people of the north of England appear to have been secure from their incursions for a long period. For seven centuries York had exhibited a series of sanguinary wars, and repeated desolations; but from the date of this battle, it enjoyed for some ages the blessings of peace, and again rose to wealth and importance.

In A.D. 1160, just twenty-two years after the terrible conflagration in the reign of Stephen, Henry II. held in York the first meeting said to be distinguished in history by the name of Parliament.\* Malcolm, King of Scotland, accompanied by all his Barons, Abbots, and Prelates, attended and did homage to Henry, in the Cathedral, for his Kingdom of Scotland, and acknowledged him and his successors his superior lords. In 1171 Henry called another convention of Bishops and Barons at York, to which he summoned William, the successor of Malcolm, to do homage for his Kingdom;

\* The word Parliament is derived from *Parler la ment*—to speak one's mind. Some say that this word *Parliament* does not occur until the above year, and that before that time it was usually denominated the King's Court, or Great Council. Drake's Ebor., p. 93. Camden, however, thinks that this word was used in the 16th of Henry I. Cur. Disc., vol. i., p. 304. Blackstone says it was first applied to general assemblies of the States, under Louis VII., in France, about the middle of the 12th century; and that the first mention of it in our statute law, is in the preamble to the statute of Westminster, i., 3, Edw. I., A.D. 1272. Com., vol. i., p. 146. Ingulphus, who died in 1109, used the word Parliament for a meeting of the Chapter of a Convent. When the Norman Conqueror of Britain distributed the landed property of the Kingdom amongst his numerous followers, the Barons, who held their land *in capite*, or directly under the King, formed the Council of the Realm, or the Parliament of that period. (See page 111.) But in process of time, when the lands became subdivided, and the number of Barons increased to a prodigious multitude, the great Barons only were summoned by the King, and the others assembled at the writ of the Sheriff, and were placed in a separate house. This was the origin of the two Houses of Parliament. (Blackst. Com. Archb., vol. i., p. 398.) When the towns of England had sprung into importance as marts of industry, the Crown, in order to neutralize the power of the nobility, called upon them to send members to Parliament—but at long intervals: and that may be considered the real origin of the third estate in the Realm. The Crown recognized a body which it called the Commons, because it feared the nobility, and, wishing to hold the balance of authority, it pitted the two extremes of society against each other. But these Parliaments, as regarded the true interests of the country at large, were mere mockeries—for they were only summoned when the Crown required the consent of the Commons to laws passed to strengthen itself, to levy taxes, to curb the power of the Church by the statute *de mortmain*; or of the nobles, by the statute *de donis*. This, until the Revolution of 1688, was all the share the Commons had in the government—for the tradition of an hereditary monarchy in alliance with an hereditary nobility was faithfully observed; and no commoner, except through the doors of the Church or the law, was ever raised to a high office in the state. A dozen of such elevations in six centuries will cover all these promotions from the ranks of the people.

and in memorial of his subjection, the Scotch King deposited his breast plate, spear, and saddle, on the altar of St. Peter, in the Cathedral church. About this period York appears to have been eminent for trade, for a few years later, the King, under pretence of raising money for the Holy Wars, imposed upon his subjects a contribution of one-tenth of their moveables, and demanded from the City of York, one-half of the sum that he required from London.

In the beginning of the reign of Richard I. (surnamed *Cœur de Lion*—the lion-hearted) a general massacre of the resident Jews took place, under circumstances of peculiar atrocity. The Crusades to the Holy Land, to rescue Jerusalem from the hands of the Saracens, tended to inflame the zeal of the nation against all men not bearing the name of Christian; besides, the prejudices of the age had stigmatized money lenders at interest, with the odious name of usurers. Another cause of the implacable hatred, and public hostility of the English people, to the Children of Israel, was, that they had been introduced by the Norman Conqueror, and a number of them settled in York soon after the Conquest, whose immense increase of wealth, eventually proved to them a source of terrible evil. The King, who was crowned with great pomp at Westminster, on the 3rd of September, 1189, with a view to obtain popular favour, strictly forbid the presence of any Jew whatever at his coronation. Notwithstanding this prohibition, two of the most wealthy Jews of York, named Benedict and Jocenus, repaired to London, with a pompous retinue, in order to meet their brethren, and to offer some valuable presents to the King, as a peace-offering at his coronation. On the day of the ceremonial, many of the Jews mixed in the crowd, and the populace, with a savage ferocity, commenced a general massacre of them in London, plundered their property, burnt down their houses, and destroyed numbers of their wives and children. Benedict and Jocenus were attacked: and the former being grievously wounded, was dragged into a church, where he was forced to renounce Judaism, and submit to the ceremony of baptism. But the next day, when the heroic Israelite was brought into the presence of the King, and asked whether he was a Christian or no, he boldly answered, that he was a Jew, and should die in the faith of his fathers. The King ordered him to be restored to his friends, but he soon afterwards died from the effect of his bruises. Jocenus returned unhurt to York, where a still more awful fate awaited him. During a very boisterous night, the City, either by accident or design, took fire, and the flames rapidly spread in all directions. This calamity was seized upon to renew the persecutions against the Jews; and while the citizens were engaged in extinguishing the flames, the house of Benedict was violently entered by the lawless rabble, who murdered the

widow and children of the deceased Jew, and seized all the property upon which they could lay their rapacious hands. Alarmed at this outrage, Jocenus sought refuge in the Castle, to which he removed his family, and the whole of his wealth; and his example was followed by nearly all the Jews in the City. In a few days the house of Jocenus shared the fate of that of Benedict. The Governor of the Castle having some business without its walls, left it for a short time in the possession of the Jews, who, fearing that he might have joined in the conspiracy with their enemies, refused to re-admit him on his return. The Sheriff, enraged at this indignity, issued his writ of *posse comitatus*, to raise the country to besiege and take the Castle. Though an innumerable company of armed men, as well from the City as from the surrounding country, rose simultaneously, and begirt the Castle, yet the wiser and the better sort of citizens stood aloof from a flood that might soon overwhelm themselves. Roger de Hoveden informs us that the Jews, now driven to extremities, held a Council, and offered a very large sum of money to be allowed to escape with their lives, but the offer was rejected. We are told by Matthew Paris, that the Council was then addressed by a certain foreign rabbi, or doctor of their laws, who had visited England for the instruction of the Jews, as follows:—"Men of Israel, our God, whose laws I have prescribed to you, has commanded that we should at any time be ready to die for those laws; and now, when death looks us in the face, we have only to choose whether we should prolong a base and infamous life, or embrace a gallant and glorious death. If we fall into the hands of our enemies, at their will and pleasure we must die; but our Creator, who gave us life, did also enjoin that with our own hands, and of our own accord, we should devoutly restore it to him again, rather than await the cruelty of an enemy." This invitation to imitate the example of the followers of Josephus, in the Cave of Jotapata, was embraced by many of the Jews, but others chose rather to try the clemency of the Christians, upon which the rabbi further said, "Let those whom this good and pious discourse displeases, separate themselves, and be cut off from the congregation! We, for the sake of our paternal law, despise this transitory life." Before the self-devoted victims began to execute the sentence upon each other, they set fire to the Castle, and committed all their property to the flames, to prevent it falling into the hands of their enemies. The rabbi then directed that the husbands should cut the throats of their own wives and children; and Jocenus began the execution, by applying the knife to the throats of his wife and five children. The example was speedily followed by the other masters of families; and afterwards, as a mark of peculiar honour, the rabbi cut the throat of Jocenus himself! The last of the

victims was the self-devoted adviser of the deed, who was probably the only actual suicide.

The survivors then announced the horrid catastrophe which had befallen their brethren, to the besiegers, casting the dead bodies of the victims over the wall to convince them of the reality of their story. At the same time they supplicated for mercy, promising to become Christians. Pretending to compassionate their sufferings, and promising pardon on the condition named, the merciless barbarians obtained admission into the Castle, and slew every one of the poor Jews, though to the last they cried out for baptism. The diabolical murderers then hastened to the Cathedral, where the bonds (for loans), which the Christians had given to the Jews, were deposited, and breaking open the chests, burnt in the midst of the nave of the church, all the documents they contained, thus freeing themselves and others from their obligations.\* This massacre, in which it is supposed that not less than from 1,500 to 2,000 Jews in York fell victims, occurred on the 11th of March, 1190. And in spite of a proclamation in their favour by the King, the same spirit of persecution manifested itself in many of the large towns of the Kingdom about that period. These horrors are uniformly reprobated by the historians of the time. When the King, who had embarked for the Holy Land, heard of these enormities, he sent orders to his Chancellor and Regent, William Longchamp, Bishop of Ely, to go down into Yorkshire, and execute strict justice upon the offenders, but many of the miscreants had fled from the City, and the remaining citizens declared that the inhabitants of the neighbouring towns were the principal offenders. However he deposed, and committed the Sheriff and Governor to prison; took away one hundred hostages; repaired the Castle; inflicted fines upon a few of the citizens;† and gave the government of the County to his brother, Osbert de Longchamp. Notwithstanding this sanguinary persecution, a new colony of Jews soon settled in York, where they remained till the time of Edward I.

The reader of English history knows that Richard I., so glorious to military fame, and so oppressive to his subjects, after performing prodigies of personal valour in Palestine, and becoming a hero of romance, had the misfortune to be trepanned in his way home, by Leopold, Duke of Austria, who sold him to the Emperor of Germany; and that he was transported by his new proprietor from Vienna to Mentz, and other places, where he was generally kept

\* Hoveden, 379. Dicets, 651. Brompton, 1172.

† Richard Malebisse paid ecc marks for his pardon, &c., on account of being concerned in the slaughter of the Jews at York. Again, xx marks to have his land restored, which was seized on that occasion.—*Maddox's Exchequer*, 800.



in rigorous confinement, till a treaty was concluded, by which the Emperor extorted from him, or rather from the people of England, 100,000 marks of silver, of the weight of Cologne.\* To raise this immense sum, as well as to replenish the exhausted treasury, recourse was had to the sale of offices of trust and honour; the situations of Sheriff and Justiciary were disposed of to the highest bidder; and Richard declared that he would sell the City of London if he could find a purchaser. The Corporation charters too, of the various boroughs, were renewed or confirmed, on payment of heavy fines. In 1195, Geoffrey Plantagenet, Archbishop of York, possessed himself of the shrievalty of the County of York, on payment of a fine to the King, of 8000 marks. Having by this means united the temporal and spiritual authorities, this prelate, who was the natural son of King Henry II., flourished with all the power and dignity of a sovereign Prince, in the north of England. The office of High Sheriff was, in these times, one of great trust and responsibility; as the keeper of the King's peace, he was the first man in the County, and superior in rank to any nobleman. He was the King's farmer or bailiff; the collector of all the royal rents and revenues within his district; to his custody were entrusted all the royal Castles and Manors lying within the bailiwick; and he provided the Castles and fortified towns with ammunition and other necessaries. He was dignified with the title of Viscount, and all the freeholders of the County, whatever might be their rank, were obliged to give their personal attendance, to swell out the magnificence of his train. From this service, even the richest and most powerful Barons were not exempt. Hence the retinue of a provincial Sheriff must have equalled that of a powerful monarch.

The reign of King John began in turbulence, and ended in disgrace. According to the custom of these times, when the monarch had no settled revenue, it was usual for him to renew the Borough Charters at his accession, for the purpose of recruiting his treasury; and John followed this example. In the beginning of his reign, his Majesty, accompanied by the Queen and many of his principal Barons, made a progress into the north. The royal party crossed the Humber from Grimsby, and proceeded to Cottingham and Beverley, and thence to York, where a Convention was held, which was attended by the King of Scotland and his nobles. It appears that, on this occasion, the citizens were not well affected towards John, for they refused to show him any marks of honourable greeting, or to display the usual tokens

\* The *mark* was an indeterminate sum, which varied in different ages. Some have stated it at 6 oz., others at 8 oz. Maddox says a mark of gold was equal to six pounds, or six score shillings; the mark of silver, 18s. 4d.

of joy and congratulation at the presence of their Sovereign amongst them. The irritable monarch was so highly incensed at this instance of neglect, that he amerced the City in the sum of £100. In the last year of this troublous reign (1216), the northern Barons laid siege to York, but granted a truce, and retired on receiving 1000 marks from the citizens.

In 1220, Henry III. attended a Convocation at York, in which Alexander, King of Scotland, swore to marry the Lady Joanna, or Jane, Henry's eldest sister; and in the following year, the marriage was solemnized in the Cathedral Church of this City, in the presence of the King, amidst very splendid festivities. This was the lady whom the Scots in derision called Joan Makepeace. "A name not in vain," says Buchanan, "for, from that time, there was a strict alliance between the two Kings." On the same occasion, was solemnized the marriage of Hubert de Burgh, the Justiciary, and Margaret, sister of King Alexander. In 1230, Henry and the King of Scotland, with the principal nobility, kept Christmas at York, in a most magnificent manner; and in 1237, Cardinal Otto, the Pope's Legate, negotiated a peace between the Kings of England and Scotland, who met at York for that purpose.

In 1251, the marriage of Alexander II. of Scotland, and Margaret, the beautiful daughter of Henry III., was celebrated at York, with all the magnificence and grandeur suitable to the nuptials of such exalted persons. All the peers of the realm accompanied Henry and his Queen; and the Scottish King was attended by his mother, and a large retinue of his nobility. On Christmas Day, Henry conferred the honour of Knighthood on Alexander and twenty of his nobles; and on the following day the royal pair were married in the Cathedral, by the Archbishop, Walter de Grey. As we have just stated, an immense number of military commanders, and other persons of rank, attended Henry; and Alexander was attended by more than sixty Knights, clad in a most superb manner. During the stay of these monarchs in York, the Archbishop several times entertained them with princely magnificence and grandeur; expending during the visit of the royal party more than 4,000 marks, or nearly £2,700. For one feast alone he had sixty fat oxen roasted and cooked in various ways.

In this chivalrous age, mock contests formed the principal amusements of the nobility. On all great occasions a tournament was formally proclaimed; and here the aspiring warrior had an opportunity of recommending himself at once to the notice of his Sovereign, and the recommendation of his superiors, which led the way to honourable distinction; and of exciting at the same time the admiration and esteem of the softer sex, by the display of

superior strength, activity, or military skill. On the present occasion, a grand tournament took place at York, in the presence of the two Kings, and all the principal nobility of England and Scotland. In 1291, Edward I. visited York on his way to Scotland; when the famous Welshman, the representative of the ancient Princes of South Wales, Rees-ap-Meredith, was tried and condemned here for high treason, and drawn through the City to the gallows, where he was hanged and quartered.\* In 1296, the Scots having made an inroad into England, this valiant monarch marched against them with a well appointed army, and joining in battle, he slew 28,000 of the enemy in the field, and put the rest to flight. Berwick, Dunbar, and Edinburgh, and other places, opened their gates to the conqueror; and John Baliol, the Scottish King, was forced to resign his Kingdom by a Charter, dated 10th of July, at Brechin. The sceptre, coronation stone, &c., were sent to London.†

In 1298, the same monarch summoned a special Parliament to meet at York, when the English Barons assembled in great numbers; those who disobeyed the order to be present, being accounted rebels. At this assembly, the King's confirmation of *Magna Charta* (or the Great Charter), with the *Charta de Forresta* (Charter of the Forests), was read, and the Bishop of Carlisle pronounced a curse upon all who should attempt to violate them. The Scottish lords, who were summoned to attend this Parliament, not making their appearance, the English lords decreed, that an army should be

\* Stowe's Annals. The word "Ap" is a Welsh prefix, equivalent to "Mac" in Scotland, and the "O" in Ireland.

† This famous stone, on which the inauguration of the Scottish Kings was performed, was removed from the monastery of Scone, in Perthshire, and is now inserted in the seat of the Coronation chair of the Sovereigns of England. It is a flat stone, nearly square, and is said to be the identical stone which formed Jacob's pillow, when he had those celestial and mystical visions mentioned in holy writ. Tradition says it was brought out of Palestine into Ireland, and was there used as the inauguration stone of the Kings of that country; that it was brought from Ireland by Fergus, the son of Eric, who led the Dabriads to the shores of Argyleshire; and was deposited in the City of Scone. An old antiquarian has described this stone, "the ancientest respected monument in the world; for, although some others may be more ancient as to duration, yet thus superstitiously regarded they are not." The antiquity of this "Stone of Destiny" is undoubted, however it may be questioned whether it be the same stone on which the ancient Kings of Ireland were crowned on the hill of Tara. The history of its being used for the Coronation of the Scottish Kings, and of its removal from Scone by Edward I., admits of no doubt. A record exists of the expenses attending its removal. The curious visitor to London, may inspect it, together with the ancient chair made for its reception in the reign of Edward I., in the Chapel of St. Edward the Confessor, Westminster Abbey.

sent under the command of the Earl of Surrey, to relieve Roxborough, which the Scots were at that time besieging. At this Parliament, the Commons of the Realm granted the King the ninth part of their goods; the Archbishop of Canterbury, with the Clergy of his province, the tenth penny; and the Archbishop of York, with his clergy, a fifth.

After the famous battle of Falkirk, in which the celebrated chieftain, Sir William Wallace, was defeated, King Edward returned to York, and held another Parliament there. In 1304, Edward completed the reduction of Scotland, though not its subjugation; and after disbanding his army, he ordered the Courts of Exchequer and King's Bench, which had continued during seven years at York, to resume their former station at Westminster.

York then ranked amongst the English ports, and furnished one vessel to Edward's fleet; but Hull had already begun to rise its fame as a maritime town, and when vessels were built on a larger scale, it absorbed a great share of the commerce which was formerly confined to this City.

Edward, having conquered and united the Principality of Wales to the Crown of England, and having constrained the Scots to swear fealty to him, spent the winter before his death at Carlisle, where he summoned his last Parliament. The Scots, taking advantage of the King's absence, and of his having dismissed his army, assembled their dispersed forces, attacked and obtained a signal victory over the English troops, and took prisoner the Earl of Pembroke, who commanded in Scotland. Exasperated at this unexpected revolution, Edward resolved to march into the heart of Scotland, and destroy the Kingdom from sea to sea; and to that end he summoned all the vassals of the Crown to meet him at Carlisle, about the middle of summer, on pain of forfeiting their fees. But, whilst "man proposes, God disposes;" no sooner had Edward assembled the finest army England had ever seen, than he was seized with a distemper, which put an end to his days, and all his projects. On his deathbed he earnestly recommended Prince Edward, his eldest son and successor, to prosecute the war with Scotland with the utmost vigour. He also advised the Prince to carry along with him his remains at the head of the army, not doubting but that the sight of his bones would daunt the courage of the enemies he had thrice conquered. After these last orders to his son, he caused himself to be carried by easy journeys to meet the enemy; but he had not advanced above five miles, to a village in Cumberland, called Burgh-upon-Sands, when his sickness was increased by an attack of dysentery, which carried him off on the 7th of July, 1307, in the 68th year of his age, and 35th of his reign. And thus ended the career of the warlike, politic, but unjust King Edward I., who has been deservedly called "the Hammer of

Scotland." His body was conveyed to Westminster Abbey, and laid by the remains of Henry, his father; and the memory of his death is preserved on the spot where he died, by a square pillar bearing an appropriate Latin inscription.\*

One of the greatest evils of the feudal system was, that when a feeble monarch filled the throne, the Kingdom was torn to pieces by domestic faction and civil war. The vast domains of some of the nobles, over which their authority was almost unlimited, gave them a power nearly equal to that of the King; and the reader of English history is well aware that these factious chieftains often raised the standard of rebellion, even against their monarchs. Edward II. was one of the most weak and unfortunate of the English Kings; and his idleness, incapacity, and passion for favourites, proved his ruin. His inordinate attachment to Piers de Gaveston, together with the haughty, arrogant, and insolent disposition of the favourite, led to a combination of the nobility against them. Gaveston, and some of his followers, had been banished from the Kingdom by Edward I., but in the year 1312, Edward II., in an evil hour, invited him to meet him at York, and, according to Stowe, "received him as a gift from heaven."

On this occasion the King kept his Christmas at York. The return of the favourite excited the resentment of the Barons, and, as we have stated, a powerful conspiracy was formed against him. Thomas, Earl of Lancaster, cousin-german to the King, first Prince of the blood, and one of the most opulent and powerful subjects in the Kingdom, was the chief of the party who had bound themselves, by an oath, to expel Gaveston; and he suddenly raised an army, and marched to York, the walls of which City Edward had caused to be strongly fortified, and put in a posture of defence, in anticipation of this outbreak.

The King, hearing of the approach of Lancaster, fled with his favourite to Newcastle, whither the Earl followed in pursuit of them; but before the arrival of the pursuers, Edward had just time to escape to Tynemouth, where he embarked, and sailed with Gaveston to Scarborough. The Castle of the latter place being deemed impregnable, the King left his favourite in it (some say that he made him Governor of that fortress), and returned to York, either to raise an army to oppose his enemies, or, by his presence, to allay their animosity. In the meantime the confederated nobles sent the Earl of Pembroke, with a strong force, to besiege Scarborough, which, after a gal-

\* The original monument was erected by Henry, Duke of Norfolk, in 1685; but it having gone to decay, the present pillar was raised by the late Earl of Lonsdale in 1808.

lant defence, capitulated upon merciful terms (afterwards flagrantly violated by the victor) which extended even to Gaveston himself, who was, however, taken prisoner. Pembroke, now master of the person of this public enemy, conducted him to the Castle of Deddington, near Banbury, where, on pretence of other business, he left him protected by a feeble guard. The Earl of Warwick, probably in concert with Pembroke, attacked the Castle; the garrison refused to make any resistance, and the unfortunate Gaveston was yielded up to him, and conducted to Warwick Castle. The Earls of Lancaster, Hereford, and Arundel, immediately repaired thither, and without any regard either to the laws or the military capitulation, they ordered the obnoxious favourite to be beheaded, and the execution took place on Blacklow Hill (now Gaversley Heath), on the 20th of June, 1312. Such was the miserable end of Edward's first favourite.

After the disastrous battle of Bannockburn, in 1314, in which Edward lost about 50,000 men, he narrowly escaped to York, where he held a great Council. At this time the prices of the following articles were fixed by the King's writs:—for a stall or corn fed ox, not more than £1. 4s.; for a grass fed ox, not more than 16s.; for a fat stalled cow, 12s.; for a corn fed mutton with wool grown, 1s. 8d.; a fat hog, two years old, not to exceed 3s. 4d.; a fat goose, 2½d.; a fat capon, 2d.; a fat hen, or two chickens, 1½d.; and 24 eggs, not more than 1d.

In the year 1315 there was a great famine and mortality; the flesh of beasts was corrupted; men were forced to feed on dogs and horses; many, it is said, eat not only their own children, but stole others to devour them also; whilst the old prisoners in some of the prisons fell upon those newly brought in amongst them, and greedily devoured them whilst half alive. In the year following, Sir Josseline Danville, and his brother Robert, who, with 200 men in the habit of friars, attacked the episcopal palace at Durham, and committed many notable robberies, were executed at York. In the same year the King issued orders from Beverl y, for arming the whole population of Yorkshire and Northumberland, between the ages of sixteen and sixty, both horse and foot; with directions that they should be prepared to march with him against the Scots; and he appointed officers to see that his commands were carried into execution.\* On the 15th of September he ordered

\* The regular and established modes of assembling armies in former times, when the constitutional military force of England consisted of feudal troops, and the *posse comitatus*, were as follows:—The tenant who held *in capite*, that is one who held immediately from the King, the quantity of land amounting to a Knight's fee, was to hold himself in readiness, with horse and arms, to serve the King in war, either at home or abroad,

the levy in the County of York to be inspected. The northern parts of the Kingdom were so exhausted that the King was compelled to recruit his forces from the southern and western parts; and on the 12th of August, 1318, he issued orders from Nottingham, to every City and Borough throughout England, to raise the number of men appointed in the respective summonses; and to have them well armed and accoutred, to resist the threatened invasion of the Scots.\* The campaign not having commenced till the following spring, the King issued orders early in the year for arming the population of the whole Kingdom between the ages of twenty and sixty.

By the King's order, according to Stowe, the Clerks of the Exchequer set out for York, on the 15th of October, 1319, with the Domesday Book and other records, which, with provision, laded twenty-one carts. The Judges of the King's Bench came at the same time, and continued to transact the business of the Court in the City of York for six months.

In 1318, the whole of the north of England, to the middle of Yorkshire, was ravaged with fire and sword, by an army of Scottish marauders, under the command of Bruce's famous Generals,—Thomas Randolph, Earl of Murray, and Sir James Douglas; and having burned the towns of Northallerton, Boroughbridge, Knaresborough, Skipton, and Scarborough, and imposed a contribution of 1,000 marks upon the inhabitants of Ripon, they

at his own expense, for a stated time; generally forty days in the year; and this service being accomplished, the tenant could either return home, or if he or his followers afterwards continued to serve with the army, they were paid by the King. The quantity of land, or sum of money, which constituted a Knight's fee, appears to have varied at different periods. In the reigns of Henry II., and Edward I., a Knight's fee was stated at £20. per annum; and the number of Knight's fees in the Kingdom was estimated at 60,000.—*Grose's Mil. Antiq.*, vol. i., p. 4. A tenant who had several Knight's fees, might discharge them by able substitutes. The *posse comitatus* included every free man between the ages of fifteen and sixty. The chief duty of this body being to preserve peace, under the command of the Sheriff, they differed from the feudal troops, inasmuch as they were not liable to be called out, except in case of internal commotion, or actual invasion; on such occasions they could legally be marched out of their respective counties, but in no case could they be sent to do military duty out of the Kingdom. Besides these means of raising armies, under the authority of the royal prerogative, on extraordinary occasions, districts, cities, burghs, and even particular persons, were obliged to find men, horses, and arms, at the will and pleasure of his Sovereign. After the 16th of Edward III. (1343), new forms and modes of raising men were adopted. The monarchs contracted with their nobility and gentry to find them soldiers, at certain wages, and their parliaments supplied them with the means.

\* The comparative proportion of men raised in different towns in the neighbourhood may be seen in the following list:—York, 100 foot; Beverley, 30; Scarborough, 30; Hull, 20; Grimsby, 20; Doncaster, 10; Stamford, 15; and Derby, 10.

returned to Scotland, laden with much plunder, and carrying with them a great number of prisoners. This calamity was followed next year by a famine and pestilent disease, which carried off great numbers of the inhabitants left in the plundered districts. In 1320, the army raised by Edward being at length organised, that monarch marched into the north at the head of it, and laid siege to the town of Berwick-upon-Tweed; but he had scarcely sat down before that place, when Randolph, the Scottish General, instead of attacking the King at Berwick, led his forces across the Solway, and laid the country waste with fire and sword, even to the gates of York; and after burning the suburbs of the City, returned northwards with their booty. William de Melton, at that time Archbishop, indignant at the insult thus offered to the City, took up arms, and hastily raised an army, composed of priests, canons, monks, husbandmen, artificers, and others, to the number of 10,000 men; and with this undisciplined band, he pursued the Scots, and unfortunately overtook them at Myton-upon-Swale, three miles east of Boroughbridge; where, with more zeal than skill, he attacked them on the 12th of October (1320).

"These able soldiers," says Holinshed, "had, as experienced commanders, the Archbishop, and the Bishop of Ely, who were much fitter to pray for the success of a battle, than to fight it." Aware of the pursuit, the Scots laid an ambuscade, and waited for the Archbishop's army, in the order of battle. According to the old chronicler, the scene of the battle was the "Myton meadow, near the Swale water." This would then be a large open field, now enclosed, and known by the name of "The Ings," extending about a mile along the east bank of the Swale, before its junction with the Ure, and an equal distance down the north bank of the Ouse. "Our idea of the battle," writes the editor of the *Battle Fields of Yorkshire*, "is, that the English were advancing, over the open field, towards the Swale, enclosed on two sides by rivers, when the Scots, 'among the hay kockes bushes,' on the higher ground to the north, above, and about the village of Myton, setting fire to the hay, rushed suddenly, under cover of the smoke, upon their unprepared antagonists, cooped up in a bad situation, and routed them with little loss on their own side; while that of the English amounted to between 3,000 and 4,000, of which 2,000 were drowned, most probably in the waters of the Ouse, opposite the village of Dunsforth, where the river is both wide and deep." It is however certain, that after a feeble resistance, the English were defeated, with the loss just stated, including Nicholas Fleming, who was then for the seventh time, Mayor of York.

In this battle such a number of ecclesiastics, in full canonicals, fell (three



hundred, according to Dr. Lingard), that it was, says Buchanan, for a long time called the *Whits Battle*; and is sportively recorded by the Scottish writers, under the title of the *Chapter of Myton* (or Mitton, as they erroneously call it). The Archbishop himself had a very narrow escape, and had business enough to fill up the vacancies in the church, on his return. The body of the Mayor of York was honourably interred in the parish church of St. Wilfrid, at York, and the Archbishop granted an indulgence of forty days to all the citizens, who, being truly penitent, should approach the sacraments, and say a Pater-noster and Ave-Maria for the repose of his soul. A chantry was also founded for him in the same church. The Scots returned home without further molestation, but with a large increase of spoil; and Edward, as soon as he heard of the event, raised the siege of Berwick, and hastily retired to York.

The King had now another great favourite, in the person of Hugh de Spencer, a man of considerable exterior accomplishments, but destitute of all prudence and moderation. His rapacity led to a combination of the nobles against him in 1321, and Edward was compelled to banish both him and his father beyond the sea. In a short time, the King found himself in a situation to bid defiance to his enemies, and the Spencers were recalled. Again the factious, turbulent, but powerful Earl of Lancaster headed a confederacy of the nobles, and raised an army to oppose the King; but having entered into an alliance with Bruce, King of Scotland, many of the English deserted him, and joined the standard of Edward. Lancaster, with the Earl of Hereford and a few other noblemen, having failed in an attempt to secure a position at Burton-upon-Trent, hastily retreated northward, to join the succours which were expected from Scotland. On the 16th of March, 1321, he arrived at Boroughbridge, where he found Sir Andrew Harcla, Governor of Carlisle, and Warden of the Western Marches, and Sir Simon Ward, Sheriff of Yorkshire, with a strong force, ready to bar his further progress. Harcla, who had received the honour of Knighthood at the hand of Lancaster, was now tempted to prove his gratitude to him, at the expense of his duty to his Sovereign. Lancaster promised to confer upon him one of the five Earldoms then in his possession, if he (Harcla) would help with the forces under his command, to remove the Spencers; but the Warden of the Marches was incorruptible; and the Earl had nothing left but to turn back, and fight the King's army, which was in pursuit of him, or force the passage of the river before it came up; and he chose the latter of these alternatives. The river, which is here about sixty yards wide, was at that time traversed by a wooden bridge, the small town of Boroughbridge standing on the south side.

The Earl's archers first begin the fight, but were repelled by the more potent discharge of their adversaries. The men-at-arms next attempted to force the passage of the river, and the Earl of Hereford was slain by the thrust of a lance below his armour, through a chink in the bridge, by a Welsh soldier, who had hid himself beneath. Sir William Sulley and Sir Roger Bernefield were slain, and Sir Roger Clifford was wounded on the head. During this attack, Lancaster had led a part of his army to a ford, a little lower down; but here again he was repelled by a shower of arrows from the opposite bank. Seeing all his attempts to pass the river by force baffled, his courage entirely failed him, and he retired into a chapel, where he was seized, stripped of his armour, and treated with great indignity. The rest of his party were dispersed, and a great many of them taken. Lancaster was conveyed to York, where he was insulted, pelted with dirt, and called in derision "King Arthur." He was then imprisoned in the Castle of Pontefract, in a dungeon, in a new tower, which he himself had recently made, and the only entrance to which was by a trap-door in the floor of the turret. Shortly afterwards the King being at Pontefract, the Earl was arraigned, in the hall of the Castle, before a small number of peers, among whom were the Spencers, his mortal enemies. As might have been expected, he was condemned, and sentenced to be hanged, drawn, and quartered; but through respect for his royal blood, the punishment was changed to decapitation; and the sentence was immediately put into execution. The fate of Lancaster involved that of many others. Never since the Conquest had such havoc been made among the ancient nobility; never since then had the scaffold been drenched with so much noble blood as on this occasion. No less than ninety-five Barons and Knights were taken prisoners, and afterwards tried for high treason. The Lords Warren de Lisle, William Touchet, Thomas Mandute, Fitz William the younger, William Cheney, and Henry de Bradburn, were executed at Pontefract; and the Lords Clifford, Mowbray, and Deynville, were executed at York, and their bodies hung in chains.

The wooden bridge, upon which the fate of the Lancaster faction was decided, has since been succeeded by a handsome one of stone. The ground occupied by the forces of Harcla and Ward, is now covered with houses, timber and coal yards; and partly by a short canal, belonging to the river Ure navigation. At a place called *The Old Banks*, below the bridge, many fragments of arms and armour were found in 1792, when the embankments of the river were formed. These were probably relics of this battle.

In 1322, the King, after having conciliated the Barons, held another Parliament in York, in which the decree, made in the preceding year in London,

for alienating their estates, was reversed, and the elder Spencer created Earl of Winchester. At this Parliament the several ordinances of the Barons, made at different times, were examined, and such of them as were confirmed, were, by the King's order, directed to be called statutes; the Clergy of the Province of York granted the King a subsidy of fourpence in each mark; Robert Baldock was made Lord Chancellor; and Edward, the King's eldest son, was created Prince of Wales, and Duke of Aquitain. After the dissolution of this Parliament, Edward raised an immense army to oppose Robert Bruce, who was then desolating the English border; and in the month of August, in the same year, at the head of this army, he marched into Scotland; and though the enemy had destroyed all the forage, he penetrated as far as Edinburgh, into this region of total famine. Being obliged to retire for want of provisions, this mighty host retreated to England, and so ravenous were the soldiers, after their late abstinence, that no less than 16,000 of them died of repletion. Bruce, aware of the retreat of the English, closely followed them, and then he became the aggressor. In order to end the war, he conceived the bold design of capturing the person of the King; and with that intention, he came up with the English army, encamped upon an advantageous piece of ground, near Byland Abbey, about fourteen miles from York, which Edward had made his head quarters, while he refreshed and recruited his men. The English were posted on the Abbey bank—a high ridge of land, extending from Cambe Hill, by Oldstead, to the village of Wass—a most favourable position. Bruce, who well knew how to encounter great obstacles in the field, sent his two associates in arms, Randolph and Douglas, to storm the narrow pass, which led to the top of the hill; whilst he turned the English position, by sending a body of Highlanders to scale the steep cliff, and thus surprised the enemy, by attacking them at once in flank and rear.

After a short fight the English were routed, and fled, leaving their strong position, and much spoil in the hands of the victors. Edward, who was at dinner in the Abbey when the battle began, made his escape to York with difficulty, but he was indebted for his safety to the swiftness of his horse. He left his privy seal, plate, money, and other treasures, behind him. The fugitives were chased towards York by Walter Stewart, before which City, it is said, he halted until the evening, with only five hundred men-at-arms, to see if the enemy would come out to the encounter. There is no record of the number slain in this fight, but several of the nobility were taken prisoners, among whom were John de Bretagne and Henry de Sully. The Scottish army returned unmolested, and laden with spoil. Byland Abbey, so close to

the scene of conflict, was no doubt plundered of all that was worth carrying away; but it was not destroyed, nor its inmates slaughtered, as were those of Dryburgh and Melrose by the English in their late incursion.

According to the expression of the old chronicle, the battle of Byland Abbey took place "fifteen days after Michaelmas, 1322." Sir Andrew Harcla, then Earl of Carlisle, was accused of having entered into a traitorous correspondence with the Scottish King, and of supineness and wilful inaction, in not interrupting the march of the Scots, and thus preventing them pursuing the retreat of Edward; and with all the savage barbarity of the times, he was tried, condemned, and executed. But even the guilt of that unfortunate nobleman (and that is doubtful) could not shift the blame of the shameful defeat and infamous flight of the English, their army being much more numerous than that of the Scots. After this battle a truce was agreed upon between the two nations, to continue for the space of thirteen years.

Edward was shortly after deposed and imprisoned by the direction of Mortimer, the paramour of his Queen, Isabella; and he was finally murdered with unparalleled cruelty. His son, then but fourteen years old, was crowned in 1327, under the title of Edward III.; and his reign, which lasted for fifty years and a few months, shines with much lustre in the annals of England, and constitutes a splendid period in the history of York. In the first year of his reign, the youthful King ordered his whole army to rendezvous in York, in order to oppose the Scots, who, with two powerful armies, including 20,000 light cavalry, under the conduct of the distinguished Generals, Randolph and Douglas, were ravaging the northern part of the Kingdom. While the King lay at York, preparing for the expedition, he was joined by John, Lord Beaumont of Hainault, and several other knights and gentlemen, who, with his retinue, composed a band of five hundred, or, according to Knightson, of two thousand men. Most of these foreigners were lodged in the suburbs, but to Lord John himself, the King assigned the Monastery of the White Monks in the City. The King, with the Queen-mother, made their abode at the Monastery of the Friars Minors. For six weeks Edward held his Court at York, whilst an army of sixty thousand men was being raised. On Trinity Sunday the King gave a splendid entertainment at the Monastery. To his usual retinue of five hundred Knights, he added sixty more; and the Queen-mother had in her suite sixty ladies of the highest rank and greatest beauty in England.

During the festivities a contest arose between the Hainaulters and a body of Lincolnshire archers, who lodged with them in the suburbs; and hostilities once begun, abettors successively came in on both sides, till nearly 8,000 of

the archers were collected. Many of the foreigners were slain, and the rest were obliged to retire. During the fray part of the City took fire, and it was with difficulty that the flames were subdued. On the following night the foreigners determined on revenge, headed by their officers, fell upon the Lincolnshire and Northamptonshire archers, and slew about 300 of them. This rash act induced the English to combine, to the number of 6,000, in the horrible resolution of sacrificing the whole of the Hainaulters; but this catastrophe was arrested, and the tranquillity of the City restored by the firmness and wise precautions of the King. The Scots being informed of the warlike preparations of Edward, sent ambassadors to York to negotiate a treaty of peace; upon the failure of which, Edward advanced against them with his army, in all the martial pomp of those chivalrous times. After a close pursuit the enemy was at last overtaken and surrounded at Stanhope Park, and would have surrendered but for the treachery of Lord Mortimer, who opened a road for their escape. The Scots then withdrew their forces, but Douglas assaulted the English camp at night, and nearly succeeded in killing the King. On the failure of this attempt the Scots, after doing what mischief they could, retreated within their own territories. Edward, excessively chagrined at the escape of an enemy whom he had so thoroughly in his power, returned to York, and afterwards to London. Lord John Beaumont, upon receiving £14,000.—the sum for which he and his foreign soldiers had been engaged, returned to the continent; and shortly afterwards a marriage was negotiated between his niece, Philippa, the most celebrated beauty of the age, and the young King of England. This marriage was solemnized in the Cathedral of York, by the Archbishop of that Province, and the Bishop of Ely, on the 24th of January, 1288, it being the Sunday before the eve of the festival of the Conversion of St. Paul.

The Court was then at York, and for three weeks the feasting, jousts, tournaments, maskings, revals, interludes, &c., were continued without intermission. "Upon these happy nuptials," says Froissart, "the whole Kingdom seemed with joy." But jealousies again arose between the Hainault soldiery, which formed part of the retinue of Beaumont, and the English; and the former took advantage of this carnival to treat the latter with outrage and violence. The foreigners not only set fire to the suburbs of the City, by which a whole parish was nearly destroyed, but they violently assaulted several of the wives, daughters, and maid servants of the inhabitants. The citizens, enraged by these proceedings, armed themselves, and challenged the Hainaulters to battle. In this desperate contest, which took place in the

street, called Watlingate (now Lawrence Street), no less than 527 of the foreigners, and 242 Englishmen, were slain, or drowned in the Ouse.

In 1332, Edward summoned another Parliament to York; and two years afterwards, the King, on his march to Scotland, stayed and kept his Christmas here. On his return from that country, he held another Parliament in this City, to which Baliol, whose cause he had embraced, in opposition to David Bruce, was summoned to attend him; but Baliol, not daring to trust himself, for fear of being seized by his Barons on his journey, sent the Lords Beaumont and Montecute to excuse him, and afterwards met the King at Newcastle. In 1335, Edward took up his residence at the Monastery of the Holy Trinity, in this City, and held a Council, in which the Bishop of Durham, then Chancellor, resigned the great seal into his hands, and he immediately gave it up to the Archbishop of Canterbury, who took the usual oaths of office in the presence of the Council, and on the same day proceeded to the "Church of the Blessed Mary," where he affixed it to several deeds. It appears in Cotton's Collections, that in this, and in the preceding reign, there were no less than twelve Parliaments assembled in York. During the wars in France, in which Edward and his renowned son, the Black Prince (so called from the colour of his armour), gained the memorable victories of Crecy and Poitiers, the Scots formed a resolution, suggested, most probably, by the French Monarch, to invade and ravage the northern Counties of England during Edward's absence. Accordingly, in 1346, David Bruce, with an army of 36,000 men, well armed and trained, entered by the eastern marches, and destroyed the country with fire and sword as far as York; and actually set fire to the suburbs, and then retired to a short distance from that City. Philippa, the heroic consort of King Edward, who then kept her Court at York, issued peremptory orders to arm the population, whether laity or clergy; which was soon accomplished under the active superintendence of Archbishop William de la Zouch, Lord Percy, and others. A gallant army was soon assembled before the gates of York, and the Queen headed it in person. The second division was commanded by the Archbishop, in which were found all the clergy of the diocese, who were able to bear arms. The two armies met at a place called Nevil's Cross, in the County of Durham, on the 17th of October, in the same year; and though the Scots were unprepared for immediate action, yet they thought it an easy matter to conquer an army of clerks and citizens, commanded by a woman and a priest. But they were miserably deceived. The English, fighting for their altars and their homes, entered the battle with a full resolution not to survive the loss of their

freedom. The carnage of that day was dreadful. The English gained a signal victory; David Bruce was taken prisoner; about 100 of the choicest Knights in Scotland lost their lives; and 20,000 men perished in the contest.\* The English lost 4,000 private men, and five Esquires. After the battle, the victorious Queen returned to York in triumph; and having seen the City strongly fortified, and then leaving the Lords Percy and Neville to the government of the north, she returned to London, carrying her royal prisoner in her train. William de Hatfield, the second son of Edward and Philippa, died in his infancy in York, and was buried in the Cathedral.

This reign was unhappily distinguished by a pestilence, called the "black death," which was uncommonly fatal and extensive. It broke out in 1349,† and raged at York for nine weeks, and considerably diminished the population. It took a wider range, and proved more destructive than any calamity of that nature known in the annals of mankind. Its effects continued, in some degree, even to the time that Walsingham wrote, which was about seventy years afterwards. In the last year of this long and eventful reign, the Parliament granted the King a capitation tax of fourpence from every lay person of either sex, in the Kingdom, above fourteen years of age; and twelpence from each beneficed clergyman. The only persons exempted from it, were the four mendicant orders of religious, and real known beggars. From the accounts of the produce of this tax, the entire population has been estimated. The City of London was rated at 35,000 souls; *York*, at 11,000; *Bristol*, 9,000; *Coventry* and *Plymouth*, each 7,000; *Norwich*, 6,000; *Lincoln*, 5,000; *Lynn*, 5,000; *Colchester*, 4,500; *Beverley*, *Oxford*, and *Newcastle-upon-Tyne*, each 4,000; *Ely*, *Canterbury*, and *Bury*, in *Suffolk*, each 3,500; *Gloucester*, *Leicester*, and *Shrewsbury*, each 3,000; and *Kingston-upon-Hull*, 2,000.‡ Thus England had but two towns containing a population of more than 10,000 souls; six only with a population exceeding 5,000; and but eighteen above 3,000.

Richard II., grandson to Henry III., was but eleven years old when he came to the throne. The late King had left the Kingdom involved in many dangerous and expensive wars, which demanded large and constant supplies. The capitation, or poll tax, levied at the close of the last reign, led the way to others in rapid succession. The ultimate consequence was an insurrection of the lower classes of the people; occasioned, perhaps, not so much from the nature of the tax itself, as from the brutal insults attending its collection. It

\* Knighton's Coll. 2500. † Walsingham, p. 118.

‡ M.S. penes me, calculated from the Subsidy Roll of 51st Edward III.

began in Essex, and the rebels were headed by a profligate priest, who had assumed the name of Jack Straw. The men of Kent, who were not long behind their neighbours in Essex, placed themselves under the leadership of a blacksmith, named Wat Tyler, or, according to some, a Kentish tyler, named Walter. The number of the rebels soon amounted to 100,000 men, and the discontent became general in the southern and midland counties. The flame of rebellion soon spread from the southern coast of Kent, to the right bank of the Humber; on the southern coast it reached as far as Winchester; and on the eastern, to Beverley and Scarborough.

Tyler, at the head of a large body of men, marched into London, and at Smithfield he was met by the King, who invited him to a conference, under a pretence of hearing and redressing his grievances. Tyler, ordering his companions to retire, presented himself before the King, and accordingly began the conference. Whilst stating his complaints, and making his demands, he now and then lifted up his sword in a menacing manner; and at length he laid his hand on the bridle of his Sovereign, which insolence so raised the indignation of William Walworth, Mayor of London, who was attending on the King, that he stunned Tyler with a blow of the mace, and Robert Standish, one of the King's Esquires, riding up, dispatched him with his sword. The rebels seeing their leader fall, bent their bows to take revenge, when Richard, though not yet quite sixteen years of age, appealing to them, told them that he would be their leader, and that they should have whatever they desired. The mob followed the King into the fields at Islington, and there he granted to them a Charter, which he soon after revoked in Parliament.

The Scots having entered Northumberland, and taken three Castles in the Marches, Richard, in 1385, set out from the south to oppose them, at the head of 80,000 men. The progress of the King was arrested at York, by an unfortunate circumstance, which cast a gloom over the sequel of the expedition. In the neighbourhood of the City (near Bishopthorpe), Lord Ralph Stafford, eldest son of the Earl of Stafford, one of the royal favourites, was basely assassinated by the hand of Sir John Holland. The father and relatives of the slain loudly demanded justice; and Richard confiscated the property of the assassin, and threatened him with the gallows, if he ever left the Sanctuary of St. John of Beverley, where he had taken refuge.

In 1389, King Richard visited York, for the purpose of adjusting a disagreement between the ecclesiastical and civil authorities; and during this visit he took his sword from his side, and gave it to be borne before William de Selby, the Mayor, and his successors, whom he dignified with the title of



Lord Mayor, which honour has ever since been retained, and is possessed by no other City except those of London and Dublin.\* Richard afterwards visited York several times, and granted the citizens some valuable charters, immunities, and privileges.

In the year 1390—1, a contagious disease, of the nature of a plague, raged with great violence throughout England; of which malady there fell a sacrifice to it, in the City of York alone, about 12,000 souls. In 1392, Richard, being displeas'd with the citizens of London, the Courts of King's Bench and Chancery were again removed to York, but they remained here only from Midsummer to Christmas. Thomas Arundel, Archbishop of the Diocese, was then Lord Chancellor. In the same year the King presented the first mace to the City, to be carried before the Lord Mayor, and a Cap of Maintenance to the sword bearer;† and in 1396, the same Monarch erected the City of York into a distinct County of itself, and appointed two Sheriffs, in lieu of the three Bailiffs that previously formed a part of the Corporation. In this reign, Edmund Plantagenet, surnamed De Langley, the fifth son of Edward III. and Queen Philippa, was created the first Duke of York.

In the year 1393, a quarrel arose between Henry Bolingbroke, Earl of Hereford, and Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk, who had accused each other of treason. Richard, by the advice of his Council, sent these two noblemen into exile, the first for six years, and the other for life. This arbitrary procedure rendered the King odious to his subjects in general, and especially to the discontented Barons. In 1399, Bolinbroke, then Duke of Lancaster, finding that the rebellious nobles were ready to dispossess Richard of the Crown, sailed from France with only three ships, attended by about sixty gentlemen and their servants, and landed at Ravenspur, or Ravenspurne, in Holderness, on the 4th of July, where he was joined by Lords Willoughby, Ross, Darcy, and Beaumont, with a great number of the gentry and commonalty. At Doncaster, the Duke was joined by the Earls of Northumberland and Westmorland, two of the most powerful Barons in England, and a great number of people from all parts of the country. The King himself during these commotions was in Ireland, and soon after he landed in England, his army deserted him, and he himself was betrayed, apprehended, and sent to

\* The Chief Magistrates of Edinburgh and Glasgow are styled *Lord Provosts*.

† The *Cap of Maintenance*, which is still worn by the sword bearer on all state occasions in the City of York, is traditionally the identical hat of King Richard II., who, upon some festive occasion, placed it upon the head of the nearest person, who happened to be the Lord Mayor's Esquire. It was originally crimson velvet, edged with gold; but it is now very much faded, and has only been held together by repeated re-linings.

the Tower, and Bolingbroke proclaimed King. Richard was soon after deposed by the two Houses of Parliament, and sent to Pontefract Castle, where he died or was murdered. Some historians assert that he was there inhumanly starved to death; whilst others inform us that Sir Piers Exton, with eight ruffians, entered his chamber, disarmed and attempted to lay hold of him, but that he, perceiving their deadly errand, so furiously attacked them, that he slew four of them with a weapon which he had seized from the first who entered; and that whilst combating with the rest of the murderers, Sir Piers mounted a chair behind him, and cut him down with a pole-axe.\* Scrope, Archbishop of York at that time, mentions his death by hunger, but adds *ut vulgariter dicitur*. When preparing for his expedition to Ireland, Richard made his will, in which he was very particular in ordering the ceremonials of his funeral, and for which purpose he allotted £4,000.† Within ten months the unhappy monarch was deposed, murdered, and buried without pomp. Such is the mutability of human greatness.

Soon after Henry Bolingbroke ascended the throne of England, under the title of Henry IV., Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland, who had lost a brother and son in the battle of Shrewsbury; Richard Scrope, Archbishop of York, whose brother Henry, the King had beheaded; and Thomas, Lord Mowbray, Earl Marshal of England, whose father died in exile, united with Lords Falconberge, Bardolf, Hastings, and others, in a conspiracy to depose him. Through the impatience of the Archbishop the plot was disclosed. Scrope framed several impeachments against the King, which he caused to be fixed against the doors of the churches of his own diocese, and sent them in the form of a circular into other counties, inviting the people to take up arms to reform abuses. Henry was charged by the conspirators with perjury, rebellion, usurpation, the murder of his Sovereign (Richard II.), irreligion, extortion, and the illegal execution of many clergymen and gentlemen. The Archbishop preached a sermon to three congregations in his own Cathedral, and raised 20,000 men suddenly to arms, who joined his standard (on which was painted the five wounds of our Saviour) at Shipton-on-the-moor, a few miles from York. To put down this rebellion, the King sent an army of 30,000 men into Yorkshire, under the command of the Earl of Westmorland and the Prince John. The Archbishop's forces were advantageously encamped on the Forest of Galtres, without the gates of the City, when the King's army arrived at York. Westmorland being weaker than the insurgents, did not consider it prudent to attack them; and having affected to favour

\* Boothroyd's Hist. Pontefract, p. 114. † Rymer's *Fœdera*, tom. viii., p. 76.

their views, he, by means of flattery and intrigue, obtained an interview with the Prelate. The meeting took place in sight of both armies, the Archbishop being attended by the Earl Marshal, and the Generals shook hands, and reciprocated other tokens of reconciliation and friendship. The Archbishop declared that he had come not to make war but peace, and particularized the different grievances which he thought it necessary to redress for the prosperity of the Kingdom. The wily Earl, by some specious pretences and promises, induced the Archbishop to dismiss his forces to their respective homes, which was no sooner done, then the Prelate and the Earl Marshal were arrested for high treason, and their lives paid the forfeit of their precipitancy and misplaced confidence. They were carried prisoners to Pontefract, where the King was, who ordered them to follow the Court to the primatical Palace at Bishopthorpe. There the King commanded Chief Justice Gascoigne to pronounce on them sentence of death; but that upright and inflexible Judge refused, on the plea that the laws gave him no jurisdiction over the life of a Prelate, and that both he and the Earl had a right to be tried by their Peers.\* The King, however, found a more obsequious agent in a Knight named Fulthorpe, who, at the King's command, without indictment or trial, condemned them, with Sir John Lamplough, Sir Robert Plumpton, and several others, to be beheaded. Scrope immediately exclaimed, "The just and true God knows that I never intended evil against the power of King Henry; and I beg you to pray that my death may not be revenged upon him or his friends." On the 8th of June, 1405, the Archbishop suffered with great firmness in a field between York and Bishopthorpe; his body was interred in the Cathedral, and his head was fixed on a pole and placed on the City walls, where it long remained a spectacle for vulgar eyes, and a standing jest for the enemies of religion. Being regarded in the light of a martyr, his tomb was visited by so many devotees as to attract the attention and interference of the King. The Earl Marshal's body was buried also in the Cathedral, and his head was fixed on a spike, and exhibited on the walls of the City. Henry then issued orders from Pontefract for the seizure of all

\* It is related of this upright Judge, that on another occasion, one of the associates of the King's eldest son (Henry, the eccentric "Prince Hal" of Shakespeare's "King Henry the Fourth"), had been arraigned before him for felony. The Prince imperiously required the release of the prisoner, and when that was refused, drew his sword on the Judge. But Gascoigne coolly ordered him into confinement in the prison of the King's Bench; and the young Henry had the good sense to submit to the punishment. When the incident was related to his father, he is said to have exclaimed, "Happy the Monarch who possesses a Judge so resolute in the discharge of his duty, and a son so willing to yield to the authority of the law."

the liberties and privileges of the City of York; many of the adherents of the Archbishop were tried and executed, but a general pardon, dated at Ripon, was soon after published, and York was reinstated in the enjoyment of its former privileges. Thus did the citizens testify their affection and gratitude for their royal benefactor, Richard II., even after his death.

In the second year of this reign (1401) Henry visited York, on his return from Scotland, and in that City witnessed a tournament between two English and two foreign Knights; the foreigners proved the victors, and the King was so pleased with the combat, that he gave Sir John Cornwall, one of the combatants, his sister in marriage.

In 1408, the Earl of Northumberland and Lord Bardolph, who, after the defeat of the insurrection in 1405, had retired into Scotland, raised a powerful force, and again appeared in arms against the King. Sir Thomas Rokeby, Sheriff of Yorkshire, assembled the *posse comitatus* to oppose the Earl, who was desolating the country as he passed along. The Sheriff took his post at Grimbold Bridge, near Knaresborough, but the Earl seeing the advantage of his position, made no attempt to force the passage, but turned aside, and directed his course towards Wetherby, closely pursued by the Sheriff. From Wetherby the rebels turned to Tadcaster, and finally both parties drew up their forces for battle, on Bramham Moor. The Sheriff fought under the standard of St. George, and the Earl under the standard of his own arms. The fight was contested with great fury for the time it continued, and "victory fell to the Sheriff." Northumberland was slain on the field, and Bardolph was taken prisoner, but so severely wounded that he died shortly afterwards. The King soon after went to York, and finding several of the Earl's adherents in the City, he completed his revenge by the execution of many of them, and the confiscation of their estates.\* The brave Rokeby was then granted the Manor of Spofforth (formerly belonging to the Earl), with all its appurtenances, during his life.

The people of England generally were as yet only half civilized, and could bear unmoved the recurrence of sights, as well as commit actions, which ought to be esteemed most shocking to humanity. Who could bear, in our more refined times, to behold the mangled limbs of a dismembered human being publicly exposed to the gaze and insult of the multitude. Yet in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, such scenes were of common occurrence. The body of the unfortunate Earl of Northumberland, after being slain in this battle, was quartered, and one part placed on a gate in London, another

\* Rymer, vol. viii., pp. 520, 580.

at Lincoln, a third at Berwick-upon-Tweed, and the fourth at Newcastle-upon-Tyne. The head, "full of silver hoary hairs," was also sent to London, and placed upon the bridge at the summit of a pole. We have just seen the head of an Archbishop treated with a similar indignity at York. But a still more horrible display took place during the same reign. The Earl of Huntingdon, Sir Thomas Blount, and Sir Benedict Seley, were executed for treason, and their quarters were carried to London, to be publicly exhibited. The procession through the City was headed by the Earl of Rutland carrying on a pole the head of Lord Spencer, *his brother-in-law*, which he presented in triumph to Henry, as a testimony of his loyalty.\* The people that were capable of enduring such scenes as these with satisfaction and delight, could have made but small progress towards civilization. Barbarism too might be ashamed of the extremes to which the indulgence of private hatred and revenge was carried. To pounce on an enemy in the dark, and to cut out his tongue, or deprive him of sight, was of such common occurrence, that an Act of Parliament was passed for its suppression. Henry IV., whose usurpation was the source of innumerable woes to England; and who preserved his Crown by shedding torrents of noble blood, died on the 19th of March, 1413, in the forty-sixth year of his age, after a reign of thirteen years. This Monarch used to say that so long as Englishmen have wealth, they are obedient; but when poor, they were liable to rebellion.

Henry V., the hero of Agincourt, being engaged during the chief part of his reign in his wars with France, made only one visit to York, during a progress to the north, in 1421. The Queen accompanied the King, and after a short stay at York, the royal pair proceeded to visit, and perform their devotions at the venerable shrine of St. John of Beverley, which had been reported to have exuded blood all the day on which the battle of Agincourt was fought, in 1415. During the stay of the King and Queen at York, news arrived of the death of the King's brother, the Duke of Clarence, who was slain in France.†

In the course of this reign, commands from the King were received by the Lord Mayor, to seize and confiscate the estates and effects of divers persons, who had been tried and executed for high treason; amongst whom was Henry, Lord Scrope, of Masham, beheaded at Southampton in 1413. His head was ordered to be placed on the top of Micklegate Bar, York. The Earl of Cambridge, who had married the heiress of the House of York, and Sir Thomas Gray, were executed with Lord Scrope. The latter was Lord

\* Hume's England, vol. iii., p. 64. † Walsingham.

Treasurer of England, and had married Joan, Duchess Dowager of York. The execution of these noblemen, we are told by Rapin; "was the first spark of that fire which almost consumed, in process of time, the two Houses of Lancaster and York." Henry died in France on the last day in August, 1422, and was buried near the Shrine of Edward the Confessor, in Westminster Abbey.

During the sanguinary dispute between these two Houses, commonly designated the *Wars of the Roses*,\* this City was occasionally connected with the contending parties, and though not actually the seat of war, several of the battles took place in the neighbourhood. All the foreign invasions this Kingdom had suffered, were never so destructive as this most unnatural intestine war, between two fierce factions, filled with such implacable hatred towards each other, that nothing but the utter extirpation of one of the parties could satiate this extraordinary thirst of power. During the space of thirty years, which this cruel conflict lasted, twelve regular battles were fought within this Kingdom by Englishmen only; above eighty royal Princes fell by each other's swords; and the ancient nobility and gentry of the Kingdom was almost annihilated. No less than 100,000 of the commons sacrificed their lives in these unnatural struggles.

Henry VI., a man better fitted for a monastic life than a regal one, was by no means competent to guide the helm of government at the turbulent period in which he reigned. The House of York seized this opportunity to assert its title to the throne, and after wading through an ocean of blood, at length obtained it. The incapacity of the King incited Richard Plantagenet, Duke of York, to urge his claim to the Crown of England, in right of his mother, through whom he descended from Philippa, only daughter of Lionel, Duke of Clarence, second son of Edward III.; whereas Henry VI. descended from John of Ghent, or Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, third son of the same Monarch. The Duke's illustrious descent, immense possessions, and superior attainments, gave him influence with the nobility, and procured him formidable connections; added to which, he stood plainly in succession before Henry. In presenting his claim to the Crown, he levied war against the King, and without material loss, slew about 5,000 of the royal forces at St. Albans, on

\* So called from the different symbols of party which the people took. Lord Campbell, in his *Lives of the Lord Chancellors*, vol. i., p. 352, says, "The claims of the rival houses being debated in the Temple Gardens, London, the red and white roses there plucked became the opposing emblems." The partisans of the House of York chose the *White* rose as their mark of distinction; and those of the House of Lancaster the *Red* rose.

the 22nd of May, 1454; amongst whom were the Duke of Somerset, the Earl of Northumberland, the Earl of Stafford, eldest son of the Duke of Buckingham, Lord Clifford, and many other persons of distinction. After this battle, the Duke's irresolution, and the heroism of Margaret of Anjou, Queen of Henry VI., caused a suspension of hostilities. The leaders on both sides assented to meet in London, and be reconciled. The Duke of York led the Queen in solemn procession to St. Paul's, and the chiefs of one party marched hand in hand with the chiefs of the other. It was a public demonstration of peace, with secret mutual distrust; and an accident aroused the slumbering strife. One of the King's retinue having insulted a retainer of the Earl of Warwick's, a partisan of the House of York, their companions fought, and both parties in every County in the Kingdom flew to arms. The battle of Bloreheath, in Staffordshire, on the 23rd of September, 1459, was won by the Lancastrians, the Duke of York being in Ireland, and the Earls of Warwick, Marche (afterwards King Edward IV.), and Salisbury, with many other noble adherents to the House of York, escaped to Calais.\* Parliament soon after declared the Duke of York, and all his partisans, guilty of high treason, their estates confiscated, and they and their posterity incapable of inheriting to the fourth generation. The Lancastrian party being now triumphant, determined to extirpate the Yorkists; and with this view, the Earl of Wiltshire and Lord Scales were empowered to search out and punish those who had borne arms for the Duke of York. But these severities had a different effect from what was expected; the discontents of the nation increased; the fugitive Lords returned from Calais, and erected the standard of rebellion; and the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of London, Lincoln, Ely, and Exeter, and a large number of the Barons, declared in their favour.

In the meanwhile, the King and Queen assembled their forces at Coventry. The Earls of Marche and Warwick, with a numerous army, hastened from London into the midland counties. The King's forces, commanded by the Dukes of Somerset and Buckingham, advanced to meet them, and on the 10th of July, 1460, a decisive battle was fought on the banks of the Nene, in the vicinity of Northampton. After an obstinate contest for five hours, the King's army was completely routed, the King himself taken prisoner, and upwards of 10,000 were soldiers slain, or drowned in attempting to cross the river. The slaughter fell chiefly on the nobility and gentry, the common people being spared by order of the Earl of Warwick and Marche;\* and the Duke

\* Hall's Chron., p. 174. Hollinshed, p. 1297.

of Buckingham, the Earl of Shrewsbury, the Lords Beaumont and Egremont, with Sir William Lucy, and several other nobles and officers of distinction, were left dead on the field. Henry was brought a prisoner into Northampton, and conveyed to London in a few days. The Queen, the young Prince of Wales, and the Duke of Somerset, fled into the County of Durham, and from thence to Wales, and afterwards to Scotland. After this success, the Duke of York returned from Ireland, and arrived in London soon after the meeting of the Parliament, which assembled on the 9th of October, and in which the claims of the two Houses of York and Lancaster were fully investigated. The Duke's title being indefeasible, it was decreed that Henry should enjoy the Crown during his life, and that Richard, Duke of York, should be his successor, as the true and lawful heir of the monarchy; and in this arrangement Richard acquiesced.† Though the King appeared satisfied with this decision, yet the Queen, a woman of masculine understanding, seeing her son, the Prince of Wales, deprived, by this settlement, of his succession to the throne, was not so passive. She soon returned to England, appealed to the Barons, and before the end of the year, drew together at York, an army of 20,000 men,‡ among whom were the Dukes of Exeter and Somerset, the Earl of Northumberland, and the Lords Clifford, Dacre, and Neville. The Duke of York, hearing of the Queen's designs, but not knowing that she had made such progress in raising an army, set out from London on the 2nd of December, with only about 5,000 men, giving orders to his son, the Earl of Marche, to levy forces in Wales, and then to join him; and left the King to the care of the Duke of Norfolk and the Earl of Warwick. As the Duke of York advanced northward, he received the mortifying intelligence of the Queen's success in levying troops; and at length being arrived in the neighbourhood of Wakefield, he was informed that she was approaching to give him battle. The Duke, resolving not to engage with numbers so greatly disproportionate, retired to his Castle at Sandal, to await the arrival of the Earl of Marche. The Queen soon appeared before the walls of Sandal Castle with the main body of her army, led by the Dukes of Somerset and Exeter, provoking her enemy to battle, sometimes by menaces, and at other times by insults and defiance, observing that it was disgraceful to a man who aspired to a crown, to suffer himself to be shut up by a woman. Up to this fatal moment the Duke had always displayed great prudence in his conduct, but this last taunt of the Queen was more than he could endure. He quitted

\* Stowe, p. 409. + Cotton's Abridg. pp. 665, 667. Stowe, pp. 410, 411.

‡ Hall, p. 182. Hollinshed, p. 1308.



the Castle, descended into the plain, and drew up his forces on the common between the fortress and Wakefield bridge, called Wakefield Green, on the 24th of December, 1460. The inequality of numbers was of itself sufficient to decide the victory, but the Queen having placed a body of troops in ambush, under Lord Clifford and the Earl of Wiltshire, they fell upon the rear of the Duke's army, while they were attacked by the main body in front, and in less than half an hour the Duke himself was slain, and his little army almost annihilated. The Duke's body was soon recognized amongst the slain, and his head was cut off by Margaret's orders, and placed over Micklegate Bar, at York, with a paper crown upon it, in derision of his pretended title.\* His second son, the Earl of Rutland, who had only reached his eighteenth year,† flying from the bloody scene, was overtaken on the bridge of Wakefield, by Lord Clifford, who, in revenge for his father, who had perished at the battle of St. Albans, plunged his dagger into his breast, notwithstanding his earnest entreaties to spare his life. The Duke of York, who was greatly and justly lamented by his own party, perished in the fiftieth year of his age, and left three sons, Edward, George, and Richard; and three daughters, Anne, Elizabeth, and Margaret. About 3,000 Yorkists fell in this battle; and the Earl of Salisbury, Sir Richard Limbrick, Sir Ralph Stanley, and several other persons of distinction were taken prisoners, and immediately decapitated by martial law at Pontefract, and their heads placed on Micklegate Bar, at York.‡

Rapin says, the only oversight of the Duke was in shutting himself up in a Castle, instead of retreating to join his son. Edward, Earl of Marche, and heir to the late Duke of York, was at Gloucester when he received the melancholy intelligence of the fate of his father and brother; and having completed his levies, hastened to interpose an army between the Royalists and the capital. Queen Margaret, after the success at Wakefield, advanced towards London, with design to secure that City. The Earl of Warwick, having had his army reinforced by a body of Londoners, and bringing King Henry with him, set out from London, and gave battle to the Queen's troops, on the 17th of February, 1461, on Barnards, or Barnet Heath, near St. Albans. Victory was again declared for this valiant Queen, and the Yorkists lost about 2,300 men.§ Night alone saved them from utter destruction. By this victory Margaret had the satisfaction to procure the liberty of the captive King. Though she had gained two battles, and released the King,

\* Beauties of England and Wales. † He was born 17th May, 1443.

‡ Hollinshed. § Hall.

yet it was not in her power to enter London, for her soldiers were principally borderers, from both sides of the Tweed, accustomed to live by rapine, and had been allured to the royal standard by the promise of the plunder of the country south of the Trent; and no entreaties or prohibition could prevail on them to desist from plundering the town of St. Albans, and the surrounding country. The Londoners therefore shut their gates against an army which they imagined came on purpose to plunder the country. The King and Queen then proceeded to York, and in the City or its vicinity, soon had 60,000 infantry and cavalry, commanded by the Duke of Somerset, the Earl of Northumberland, Lord Clifford, and Sir Andrew Trollop.

But this success of the Lancastrian party lasted not long; for soon after the death of the Duke of York, at the battle of Wakefield, Edward, Earl of Marche, his eldest son, now in his twentieth year, waived the title of Duke of York, and on the 5th of March, 1461, got himself proclaimed King, by the title of Edward IV., at London, and in several other places. On that day expired the reign of Henry VI., a Prince whose personal character commanded the respect of his very enemies, and whose misfortunes still claim the sympathy of the reader. Edward departed from London a few days after he had been proclaimed; and having collected a force of nearly 50,000 men, he marched into Yorkshire, and encamped at Pontefract, resolving to meet his competitors, and to decide the contest by the law of arms.

His first move was to despatch Lord Fitzwalter, with a detachment, to secure the pass at Ferrybridge, on the river Aire. The Duke of Somerset began his operations by sending Lord Clifford, with a body of his own retainers, "the flower of Craven," to dislodge the Yorkists from this post; and the attack, which took place at break of day, was so sudden and furious—the guards being all asleep, and not dreaming of an enemy so near them—that the bridge was easily won, and the Yorkists lost their position. Lord Fitzwalter,\* awakened by the noise, supposing it to arise from some quarrel amongst his own soldiers, rushed out amongst them unarmed, and was slain; and the Earl of Salisbury at the same time shared a similar fate. Thus Clifford secured the important pass of the river. Consternation now appeared to be becoming general in the camp of the Yorkists, when, according to Hollinshed, an act of heroism of the great Earl of Warwick, who was the soul of Edward's army, restored order and confidence to his soldiers. "For when the Earle of Warwike was informed hereof, like a man desperat on his hacknie, and hasted puffing and blowing to King

\* Rapin calls the commander of this detachment, Lord Fitzwalter; but it appears from Dugdale, that there was not at that time any person of the name and title.—Baronage, i., p. 223, and ii., p. 285.

Edward, saieing, 'Sir, I prairie God have mercie of their soules, which in the beginning of your enterprise have lost their lives. And bicause I see no succors of the world, but in God, I remit the vengeance to him our Creator and Redeemer.' With that he alighted downe, and slue his horse with his sword, saeing, 'Let him flee that will; for surelie I will tarry with him that will tarry with me;' and kissed the crosse of his sword, as it were for a vow to the promise." This determination of the Earl to share the fate of the meanest soldier, inspired great confidence in the troops; and to show the greater security, a proclamation was issued, giving to every one not well affected to the cause, full liberty to retire; but menacing the severest punishment to those who, having remained, were discovered exhibiting any symptoms of cowardice in the ensuing battle. Rewards and honours were offered to the comrade who should slay him who was caught turning his back on the foe.

Edward lost no time in sending William Neville, Lord Falconberg, with a detachment to cross the Aire at Castleford, about four miles above Ferrybridge, with orders to attack those who guarded the lost position. Falconberg executed his orders with such secrecy and promptitude, that he suddenly attacked Lord Clifford, who was at the head of a body of horse, which was completely routed, and obliged to retreat in confusion towards the main body of the army. In his retreat, Clifford, unawares, fell in with another party of Yorkists, and having his helmet off, either from the effects of heat or pain, a random arrow pierced his throat, and he fell dead to the ground. The brother of the Earl of Westmorland also was slain in this skirmish. Lord Clifford, who from his bloody deeds at Wakefield, was called "the Butcher," was a fierce soldier;—indeed, it might with truth be said of him, "that a braver warrior never drew a sword, or one whose heart was more tempered like the steel he wore." The post of Ferrybridge being thus recovered, Edward passed with his whole army over the Aire, and marched, by way of Sherburn, towards Tadcaster, in quest of the enemy. The two armies confronted each other on the following day, Palm Sunday, the 29th of March, 1461, on Towton Field, since called Palm Sunday Field, and immediately prepared for that bloody and memorable battle, the issue of which was to decide—what? "Something surely of the highest importance to the well-being of the nation!" writes the editor of the *Battle Fields of Yorkshire*, "No! only whether Henry or Edward was to be the ruler of England. And for a mere change of masters, the strength of the whole kingdom, its best and bravest sons were mustered in arms, the worst passions of human nature inflamed, and let loose in actions too horrible for recital. What madness of mankind! what folly! what reckless waste of God's great gifts!"

The site of this great battle is a long brow, or ridge of high ground extending between the villages of Towton and Saxton, the former village being situated about two miles nearly south of Tadcaster, and Saxton nearly two miles south of Towton. From this elevated ridge, now a well cultivated and pleasant region, the prospect of the surrounding country is both extensive and beautiful. Henry's army, according to Hall, consisted of 60,000 men, commanded by the Duke of Somerset; and that of Edward amounted to 48,660, and was led by himself in person. The two wings of the Lancastrian army is supposed to have extended from Grimston, beyond Towton, to a slight hollow in the high ground in the field called North Acres, being nearly two miles in length. The Yorkists occupied equally elevated ground in their front; a level space lying between the armies, and the land gradually declining in the rear of both. The great Earl of Warwick, one of the bravest warriors in England, commanded the right wing of Edward's army, Lord Falconberg the left, whilst the main body was led by Edward himself. Sir John Venloe and Sir John Denman, "two valiant commanders," had charge of the rear guard. The contest was most obstinate. Edward issued orders to his soldiers to give no quarter; and it will suffice to observe, that these mighty hosts—both strong, both valiant, both commanded by leaders animated against each other by all the hatred that faction and deadly thirst for revenge could supply, maintained the deadly struggle from seven in the morning till dusk in the evening—ten mortal hours of carnage and slaughter. "It is morning, yet the sun rises not! the air is gloomy and dark, thick clouds obscure the sky. A tempest is gathering—a storm is impending in the heavens as well as upon earth. Yet the wrath of man sleeps not. In the armies all is active preparation for the work of death. The trumpets have blown their loud notes of defiance. The impatient neigh and tramp of the war horse is heard, mingled with the loud and haughty voices of the commanders, exhorting their men to daring deeds, and vengeance for their kindred already fallen. The red rose and the white, the fatal colours of the striving houses, are about to be bathed in blood. All are eager for the combat, no slackness is found on either side. Falconberg confronts the army of Henry with young Edward's vanguard. They are nearly within an arrow's flight of each other; and the archers are measuring the distance with their eyes, knowing how far their feathered shafts can carry death. Suddenly the south wind in a roaring gust, rushes down with a storm of snow; the flaky tempest drives full in the face of the Lancastrians; blinds them, so that they cannot see their enemies. Not unobserved by the wily Falconberg; who instantly gives the command to his bold yeomanry, 'Each

archer from his bow send a flight arrow to the enemies' ranks, then back retire three strides and stand.' Quick as hand can follow thought the order is obeyed, for every mind sees advantage from the act. The bow strings twang, the whistling shafts, long and light, swifter than the tempest, rush against the distant foe; who, ignorant of the stratagem, bend their bows and ply the strings, until the quivers are exhausted. While the Yorkists in grim quiet stand idle; not one of their enemies' shafts has reached them. The English archer's boast, that he carried twelve enemies below his belt, is but idle breath for the red rose faction. Not so for their foes, who seeing all their enemies' efforts vain to reach them, advance, and with loud derisive shouts, send their thick volley like lightning on their foes. Struck down helplessly by hundreds with impunity; volley after volley is sent into their crowded ranks. Not only do the Yorkists empty their own quivers on the unresisting foe, but gather their enemies' arrows from the field, and send them winged with death unto their former owners. Impatient of the severe and deadly shower, Northumberland, Somerset, and Trollop, urge on their men to close combat, now their only hope of victory. The bow is laid aside, and spears, swords, and battle axes, decide the contest. A fearful scene of close and deadly fight ensued—no military skill is employed, no manœuvring of forces; nothing but brute force and physical endurance are required. As no prisoners are to be taken on either side, each man fights as though the battle depended upon himself alone—the determination of all seems to be to conquer or die upon the field.\*

There are so many confused and conflicting accounts of this battle, that it is impossible to give a full and particular description of it. But all agree that the air was darkened by the snow, which fell very thick, and was blown by the wind full in the faces of the Lancastrians, and that this more than balanced the advantage they derived from the superiority of their numbers. At length the forces of Henry began to give ground, at first in good order, not flying, but retreating as they fought, and making a stand now and then, so that their enemies could not be sure of the victory. The troops of Edward, encouraged by his own personal bravery, now made fresh efforts, and at last they so pressed the Lancastrians, as to oblige them to fly in disorder. Then it was that the dreadful slaughter ensued—that the flying troops were cut down without mercy. The retreating soldiers shaped their course for Tadcaster bridge in order to cross the Wharfe, but having first to pass the small river Cock, which runs through one of the most crooked of channels, along

\* Battle Fields of Yorkshire.

the west side of the battle field, and enters the Wharfe about a mile south-east of Tadcaster, so much confusion occurred that the Cock was quickly filled with their dead bodies, which served as a bridge for the pursued and pursuers to pass over, and the waters of the rivulet rolled a bloody current to the Wharfe. The slaughter at this point was so tremendous, that even the waters of the Wharfe were crimsoned with the blood of the victims. 28,000 of the Lancastrians were slaughtered in the battle and pursuit, and the total number that perished on that dreadful day is 37,776. A contemporary historian assures us, that besides those who perished in the waters, 38,000 men remained dead on the field.\* The whole distance between the battle field and the City of York (ten miles) was covered with the bodies of the slain. Edward himself, in a confidential letter to his mother, while he conceals his own loss, informs her that the heralds, employed to number the dead bodies, returned the Lancastrians alone at 28,000.†

Among the slain were Henry Percy, Earl Northumberland, the Earls of Westmorland, and Shrewsbury; Lords Dacre, Beaumont, Neville, Willoughby, Roos, Scales, Grey, Fitzhugh, Molineaux, Welles, and Henry Buckingham; Sir Andrew Trollope, Sir John Neville, Sir Richard Percy, Sir John Heyton, Sir Gervase Clifton, Sir Edward Harnis, Sir John Burton, Sir David Trollop, Sir Thomas Crakenthorpe, Sir John Ormond, and many other Knights. The Dukes of Somerset and Exeter were fortunate enough to escape the carnage; but Thomas Courtney, Earl of Devonshire, and several others were taken prisoners. This battle fixed the Crown on the brow of Edward. The snow storm of the battle day was succeeded by a frost, which congealed the blood upon the snow; and as the wounds were all made with arrows, swords, spears, and battle axes, the effusion of blood would be greater than in a modern battle. And when a thaw came and dissolved the mass, the field presented a most horrible spectacle, the furrows and water courses literally running with blood.

Thus did the folly of the nation exhibit itself; and thus did close upon 40,000 Englishmen sacrifice their lives in deciding the question whether an amiable and imbecile Sovereign, or a juvenile, but able, voluptuous, and sanguinary tyrant (as he afterwards proved to be), should be their master. No other object was involved in the struggle—no wrongs were redressed, no rights were obtained—it was not a combat for justice or freedom, for they were names and things unknown and forgotten amid the dissonant clash of arms, and the bloody vengeance of furious party spirit. The Earl of North-

\* Cont. Hist. Croyland, p. 558. † Fenn's Letters, vol. i., p. 217.

umberland reached York before he died; Lord Clifford was tumbled into a pit along with a heap of dead bodies; the Earl of Westmorland was buried in Saxton church; and Lord Dacre was interred in Saxton church yard, where is a "meane tomb" to his memory.

In a portion of the ground which formed part of the battle field, flourishes profusely a dwarf rose, which it is reported the Yorkists, either in affection, or in triumph planted on the graves of their fallen countrymen.

The author of the *Battle Fields of Yorkshire* tells us, that another beautiful and fanciful notion is, that this rose will not grow elsewhere; "and that Providence has caused it to spring from the blended blood of the victims of the red and white rose factions, which are typified in its white petals slightly tinged with red, and in the dull bloody hue of the leaves of the older wood. This pleasing piece of superstition," he adds "has caused many of those diminutive shrubs to be removed from their native soil, and carried far away to other places." Patches and clusters of these rose trees in full blow may be seen every year; and it appears very difficult to eradicate the plant, for whilst the least portion of the root remains in the soil, it will, in due time, shoot forth a plant, and bear its delicate white flower, upon which the rustic, happy in his legendary lore, traces in its slight tinges of pink, the blood of Lancaster.

On a part of the field north of the Saxton, Richard III. began to build a chapel, in which prayers might be said for the souls of the slain; but its completion was prevented by his death at the battle of Bosworth Field. No remains of this chapel are now to be seen; but the site is yet called "Chapel Garth." The battle of Towton Field is called among the country people, "the Towton Dale Fight;" and they also say that it took place on a Sunday, whilst the people were attending mass at Saxton church.

King Henry, his Queen, and their young son Edward, who had remained at York during the battle, retired into Scotland with the Dukes of Somerset and Exeter, and afterwards quitted the Kingdom. Edward entered York soon after their departure, and immediately took down from the Bar, the head of his father, and those of his friends, which had been upon the walls of the City since the battle of Wakefield, and in return ordered Thomas Courtney, Earl of Devon, the Earl of Kyme, Sir William Hill, and Sir Thomas Fulford, adherents to Henry, to be executed, and their heads to be placed on the vacant poles over Micklegate Bar. Edward soon after repaired to London, where he was crowned on the 29th of July next following. When the Parliament assembled, both houses were eager to display their attachment to their new Sovereign. They first pronounced the reigns of the three last Kings a tyrannical usurpation, and then followed a sweeping bill of attainder,

which extended itself to almost every man who had distinguished himself in the cause of the House of Lancaster. The unfortunate Henry VI., his Queen, and son, together with the Dukes of Somerset and Exeter, the Earls of Northumberland, Devon, Wiltshire, and Pembroke, and a large number of Viscounts, Knights, Priests, and Esquires, were adjudged to suffer all the penalties of treason. In defence of such unexampled severity, it was alleged the advantage of annihilating at once the power of the party; and to this motive was probably added another, the necessity of providing funds from which Edward might satisfy the expectations of those to whose services he owed the present possession of the Crown.

The cause of the red rose now appeared desperate; but it was still supported by the courage and industry of Margaret. To aid her cause, she visited the continent, and invited all true Knights to avenge the wrongs of an injured Monarch. The Duke of Bretagne made her a present of 12,000 crowns; and the King of France (Louis XI.) lent her 20,000 crowns, and permitted Brezé, the Seneschal of Normandy, to follow her fortunes with 2,000 men. After an absence of five months, she returned, and summoned to her standard the friends of her family on the borders; and with this army, composed of Scotch, French, and Northumbrians, she seized the three fortresses of Bamborough, Alnwick, and Dunstanburgh. But when the Earl of Warwick arrived with 20,000 men, and intelligence was received of the advance of Edward with an equal number, the Lancastrians separated to garrison their conquests, and the Queen, with her French auxiliaries, repaired to their ships. The winds and the waves now seem to have conspired against her; part of her fleet, with all her treasures, were dashed against the rocks; and Margaret and Brezé arrived in a fishing boat at Berwick. Warwick, dividing the royal army into three bodies, besieged at the same time the three fortresses, which surrendered after a brave and obstinate resistance.

The spirit and activity of Margaret exposed her during this winter campaign to numerous privations and dangers. After the loss of the above-named Castles, she, accompanied by the Duke of Exeter, Brezé, and two hundred exiles, sailed to Sluys, in Flanders. The Duke of Burgundy received her with every mark of outward distinction, but refused to listen to her solicitations in favour of her husband. He gave her a supply of money for her present expenses, and forwarded her in safety as far as the Duchy of Bar, in Lorraine, belonging to her father. There she fixed her residence, watching, with anxiety, the course of events, and consoling her sorrows with the hope of yet placing her husband or her son on the English throne.

In the beginning of the above campaign, Edward, with a numerous army,



and most of his nobility, on their march to the north against the unfortunate Henry, visited York. Edward proceeded no further than Newcastle, having been taken ill at that place; and the command of the entire army was undertaken by Warwick. Henry, who for security had been conveyed to the Castle of Hardlough, in Merionethshire, commanded by David ap Jevan ap Eynion, who, in defiance of repeated acts of attainder, refused to submit to Edward; was, in the same year, summoned to put himself at the head of a body of exiles and Scots. He was soon joined by the Duke of Somerset, Sir Ralph Percy, and their adherents. The Lancastrians encamped on the banks of the Dilswater, near Hexham; where they were soon attacked by a powerful army, commanded by Neville, Lord Montague, the Warden of the East Marches. Somerset, who was endeavouring to save himself by flight, was taken, beheaded the same day, and buried in the neighbouring Abbey. Two days later, the Lords Roos and Hungerford met with the same fate on the Sandhill, at Newcastle; and many of their followers were successively executed in that town, and at York. Henry saved himself by flight. Hollinshed tells us that here he showed himself an excellent horseman, for he rode so fast, that none could overtake him. His servants and equipage fell into the enemy's hands, and among the latter was found the royal cap, called Bycoket, or Abacot,\* with which Edward was again crowned on the 4th of May, in the same year, with great solemnity at York.

Lord Montague was now created Earl of Northumberland; and another list of attainders contributed to exhaust the resources of King Henry, and to add to those of Edward. The citizens of York, as well as the people of the north in general, had hitherto firmly attached themselves to the House of Lancaster; but they now seem to have espoused the cause of Edward, or he endeavoured to gain them to his favour, for before he left that City on this occasion, he, by patent dated York, June 10th, 1464, not only relinquishes his usual demands, or fee farm rent of the City, but assigned it for the twelve succeeding years, an annual rent of forty pounds to be paid out of his customs in the port of Hull. In this extraordinary document (which is now deposited in the Tower of London) the King expresses his great concern for the sufferings and hardships the City had undergone during these wars, and for the poverty they had occasioned.

After the flight from Hexham, Henry sought an asylum among the natives of Lancashire and Westmorland, a people sincerely devoted to his interests, and was during this time frequently concealed in the house of John Machell,

\* Spelman says that this word signified a royal cap ensigned with two crowns of gold, which doubtless were those of England and France.

at Crakenthorp, in Westmorland.\* For more than a year he eluded the vigilance and researches of the government; but he was at last betrayed by the perfidy of Cantlow, a monk of Abingdon, and taken by the servants of Sir James Harrington, of Brierley, in or near to Waddington Hall, in Yorkshire. At Islington the unfortunate monarch was met by the Earl of Warwick, who ordered by proclamation that no one should show him any respect, tied his feet to the saddle stirrups as a prisoner, led him thrice round the pillory, and conducted him to the Tower.

The Lancastrians having abandoned the contest after the battle near Hexham, Edward for some years kept quiet possession of the Crown. But at length he, who had driven Henry into exile, was in his turn obliged to share the same fortune himself, owing to the defection of "that setter up and puller down of Kings," the Earl of Warwick. Whilst that Earl was in France, negotiating a treaty of marriage between Edward and the French King's sister, it happened that Edward visited Wydeville, Lord Rivers, at Grafton (Northamptonshire), where he saw his daughter Elizabeth, relict of Sir John Grey, of Groby, (a Lancastrian), a woman of superior beauty and accomplishments. The Lady Grey, whose husband had fallen at the second battle of St. Albans, seized the opportunity to throw herself at the feet of her Sovereign, and solicit him to reverse the attainder of her late husband, in favour of her destitute children. The King pitied—nay, soon loved the beautiful suppliant, and in the end married her, after having vainly endeavoured to debauch her. But the connection proved calamitous, for the Earl of Warwick, disgusted with Edward's conduct in consequence of this alliance, espoused the cause of Henry, in which he united his two brothers, the Marquis Montecute and Lord George, one of whom was Lord President of the North, and the other Archbishop of York. Warwick was Governor of Calais; and it was agreed that whilst he at that place endeavoured to excite the inhabitants, the two brothers should stir up a commotion in the north of England. They soon entered into a correspondence with the eldest sons of the Lord Fitzhugh, and Neville, Lord Latimer, Sir John Conyers, and others, to dethrone Edward, and restore Henry. Their attention was directed to the City of York, where was an Hospital, dedicated to St. Leonard, to the Warden of which, certain *Thraves* of corn from every plough land, had been paid since the time of King Athelstan.† It was supposed that these thraves

\* Rymer, xi., p. 548.

† A *Thrave* was sometimes twelve, and at other times twenty-four sheaves. The King's thraves were called *Horstaffa*, *Herstraffa*, or *Herst Corn*, and were payments in

had originally been a voluntary contribution, but which, by custom, were at length considered a debt. In the beginning of the previous reign, in consequence of some of the farmers having withheld the thraves, it was deemed necessary to have them confirmed to the hospital by Act of Parliament.

The Government officers appointed to collect these thraves having at this time (A.D. 1469) attempted to levy their value by distress, the farmers and the peasants flew to arms, chose for their leader Robert Hilyard, or Huldern, commonly called Robin of Redesdale, and threatened to march to the south and reform the abuses of Government. The two brothers of the Earl of Warwick are said to have improved the opportunity to increase the spirit of revolt. By misrepresenting the affair, they are said to have exasperated the people to such an extent, that 15,000 men arose in arms, and marched towards York. The citizens of York were alarmed by the approach of the insurgents; but the Earl of Northumberland, Warwick's brother, to prevent the destruction of the City, attacked and defeated them with considerable slaughter; and executed their leader on the field of battle. This circumstance would seem to acquit one of the Nevilles from all share in the insurrection; but it must be borne in mind that he could, if he pleased, have instantly extinguished the flame before it grew into a general conflagration; and his inactivity subsequent to their attack upon York, together with the conduct of his two brothers, prove that, whatever were its original cause, they were willing at least to convert it to their own purposes.

The rebels had lost their leader, but they found two others of more illustrious names in the before-mentioned sons of Lords Fitzhugh and Latimer—the one the nephew and the other the cousin-german of Warwick; and these young men, though nominally at the head of the rebels, in reality obeyed the commands of Sir John Conyers, an old and experienced officer. The claim of the hospital was now forgotten, and their avowed object was to remove from the King's councils the Wydevilles (the Queen's family, of whose influence with the King the Nevilles were jealous), the authors of the taxes that impoverished, and of the calamities that oppressed the nation. At the name of Warwick, his tenants crowded from every quarter; and in a few days the insurgents reached a very large number. On the first intelligence of the rising in Yorkshire, Edward summoned his retainers, and fixed his head

lieu of the King's right to pasturage and forage for his horses; and it appears that King Athelstan endowed St. Leonard's Hospital with some of his thraves in this County. The same Monarch endowed the Collegiate establishment at Beverley with four thraves of corn annually from every plough in the East Riding; and for one plough, or a plough land, being according to some, 120, and to others 160 acres.

quarters at the Castle of Fotheringhay. The King's forces and the rebels met in the neighbourhood of Banbury; the former under the joint command of the Earls of Pembroke and Devon. The two Earls entered Banbury together, but quarrelled in an evil hour about their quarters. "The Earl of Pembroke," says Hall, "putte the Erle of Devon out of an Inne, wherein he delighted muche to be, for the love of a damosell that dwelled in the house; contrary to their mutuall agreement by them taken, whiche was, that whosoever obtained first a lodgyng, should not be deceiued nor remoued."

The Earl of Devon, after a hearty quarrel with his brother general, retired with his division; and the rebels, profiting by this opportunity, attacked the remaining forces. The day was for some time doubtful, but the insurgents at length prevailed, and beheaded the Earl of Pembroke, either in the town, or its immediate neighbourhood, together with his brother, Sir Richard Herbert, and ten other gentlemen. This conflict is said to have taken place at Danesmoor, or Dunsmoor, as it is now called. Hall, Grafton, and Hollinshed state that above 500 Welshmen, of which the Earl of Pembroke's forces were principally composed were slain in this battle; and William of Worcester states, that at least 168 of the nobility and gentry of Wales fell in it. About 1,500 of the insurgents were slain on the same field, among whom were Sir Henry Latimer, Sir Roger Pigot, knt., &c. The Nevilles then proceeded in search of Edward, whom they found at Olney, in Buckinghamshire, plunged in the deepest distress at the defeat of Pembroke. Here he was taken prisoner, and placed in the custody of the Archbishop of York, who sent him to Middleham Castle. And then did England exhibit the extraordinary spectacle of two rival Kings, each confined in prison—Henry in the Tower, and Edward in Yorkshire. At the command of Warwick, the insurgents returned to their homes, laden with plunder. Edward soon after escaped from Middleham, and fled into France.\*

The poor, passive King Henry was now brought out of the Tower, where he had been a prisoner for nearly nine years, and amidst great rejoicings, once more reinstated in his kingly dignity. A Parliament was called, which confirmed Henry's title to the Crown with great solemnity; Edward was pronounced an usurper, and all Acts passed by his authority repealed; and Warwick was received among the people under the title of the *King Maker*. But Henry's evil fate suffered him not to enjoy his honours long, for Edward having prevailed with the Duke of Burgundy, his brother-in-law, to lend him

\* There are several accounts of the escape of Edward, but that which is generally given is, that the Archbishop allowed him to hunt, and that one day while he was employed in that exercise, he was carried off by his friends. Hall, 203.

an aid of men and money, set sail, and after an absence of nine months, landed at Ravenspurn, on the 14th of March, 1471, on the spot where Bolingbroke had previously landed to dethrone Richard II.

Edward, who was attended by 2,000 men, sent some of his followers to sound the affections of the people; but finding all the parts of the country from where he had landed to York, very much averse to his title, and perfectly satisfied with Henry's rule, he artfully pretended that he came but to claim his patrimonial estate of York only, and not the Crown. This dissimulation had the desired effect upon the people, who admired his moderation, and thought it the highest injustice to keep him from his Dukedom. But this politic artifice was disbelieved by Warwick, who sent strict orders to the City of York and the town of Hull that he should not be admitted. On his way towards York, he everywhere proclaimed Henry King, and styled himself only Duke of York; and he wore in his bonnet an ostrich feather, the device of Edward the Lancastrian Prince of Wales. On his near approach to the City he was met by two Aldermen, who informed him that he could not be received there, but that the citizens would oppose him to the utmost.

Notwithstanding this message, however, on his coming to the gates, and repeating his former professions of loyalty to King Henry, and swearing to be true and faithful to him, he was admitted. He rode immediately to the Cathedral, and there in a most solemn manner confirmed his oath on the high altar.\* This, however, was an act of base hypocrisy; for no sooner had he performed this ceremony, than he seized the guards, assumed the regal title, raised a considerable loan in the City, and leaving it well garrisoned, marched to London, where, on his arrival the gates were thrown open to him, and the like acclamations heard as Henry had enjoyed but six months before.

The sequel is known to every reader of English history—the decisive battle of Barnet soon followed, in which Edward defeated Henry's forces; the Earl of Warwick was slain, together with his brother and 10,000 of their adherents.† This battle took place on Easter Sunday, 1471; and on that very

\* Historians remark that though the due punishment of this wilful perjury was withheld from Edward himself, yet it fell in full measure upon his children.

† The great Earl of Warwick, who has been styled "The King Maker," and "The Last of the Barons," was one of the most extraordinary characters of his time, and one of the bravest warriors, and most rich and powerful nobles in England. He owed his popularity as much to his hospitality as to his personal qualities. It was of the most unbounded and profuse kind. It is said that 30,000 persons were regularly maintained in his numerous Castles, and any man might walk into his kitchen at pleasure, and take away as much beef or mutton as he could carry on his dagger.

day Queen Margaret landed at Weymouth with a body of French auxiliaries. When she heard the fatal news of the death of the brave Warwick, and the total destruction of her party, she gave way to her grief, for the first time it is said, in a torrent of tears. She sank to the ground in despair, and as soon as she recovered her composure, hastened with her son for safety to the Abbey of Cerne. But the Lancastrian Lords, who still remained faithful to the cause, induced her to quit her asylum, conducted her to Bath, and raised a considerable body of troops to fight under her banner. A few days after the battle of Barnet, Edward was summoned to the field of Tewkesbury, where his good fortune again prevailed. Margaret's forces were routed, though the Lancastrians fought to the last with undaunted bravery. Immediately after the battle, Prince Edward, the son of Henry, was murdered in cold blood, by the Dukes of Clarence and Gloucester, aided by Lord Hastings and Sir Thomas Grey, in the presence of Edward, who, it is said, struck the brave youth the first blow with his gauntlet. Henry was thrown into the Tower, where he expired in a few days, or, according to some, was put to a violent death by Richard, Duke of Gloucester. Margaret was imprisoned, first in the Tower, afterwards at Windsor, and lastly at Wallingford, with a weekly allowance of five marks for the support of herself and her servants. After a captivity of five years, she was ransomed by Louis, King of France, for 50,000 crowns, and retired to Anjou, where she closed her eventful life, in the year 1482. This extraordinary woman, who sustained the cause of her amiable but truly unfortunate husband, in twelve battles, died very miserable indeed; but with few other claims to our pity, except her courage and her distresses.

Some years subsequent to the battle in Tewkesbury Park, Edward IV. visited York for the last time. He was met at a village called Wentbridge, some distance from the City, by John Ferriby, then Lord Mayor, the Aldermen, and commonalty on horseback, and many of the principal citizens, who conducted him with loud acclamations to the City. He departed in a few days, having first made the Corporation a present of a large sum of money.

This King is said to have been the most accomplished, and till he grew too unwieldy, the most handsome man of the age. The love of pleasure was his ruling passion; and few Princes were more magnificent in their dress, or more licentious in their amours. His excesses at last incapacitated him for active exertion, and he entirely abandoned the charge of military affairs to his brother Richard, the Duke of Gloucester. A slight ailment, induced by the debaucheries in which he indulged, suddenly exhibited the most dangerous symptoms, and in a few days put a period to his existence, in the forty-

first year of his age, and twenty-third of his reign. Edward might have promised himself a long and prosperous reign, had not continued indulgence enervated his constitution, and sown the seeds of that malady which consigned him to the grave. He left two sons, Edward, in his twelfth year, who succeeded him, and Richard, Duke of York and Earl Marshal, in his eleventh year. Of his five daughters, who had been in their youths affianced to foreign monarchs, Elizabeth was afterwards married to King Henry VII.; Cecily, to the Viscount Welles; Anne, to Thomas Howard, Duke of Norfolk; Catherine, to William Courtenay, Earl of Devon; and Bridget became a nun in the Convent of Dartford.

Having the command of the army against the Scots, Richard, Duke of Gloucester, was employed in the marches at the time of his brother's death; but the moment he heard of that event, he repaired to York, with a train of six hundred Knights and Esquires, dressed in deep mourning, and ordered a solemn requiem mass to be celebrated in the Cathedral of that City, for the repose of the late King's soul. Gloucester was a Prince of insatiable ambition, who could conceal the most bloody projects under the mask of affection and loyalty. After the funeral obsequies had been performed with royal magnificence, he summoned the nobles and gentlemen of the County to swear allegiance to Edward V.; and to give them an example, was himself the first who took the oath. Having been appointed Protector of the realm, he assumed the lofty style of "Brother and Uncle of Kings, Protectour and Defensour, Great Chamberlayne, Constable, and Lord High Admiral of England." About this time the Corporation of York begged of Gloucester to move the King for a diminution of their yearly payments to the Crown, in consideration of the expenses they had incurred in the public service.

It is well known that Gloucester's ambition soon afterwards led him to usurp the sovereignty, and to cause his nephews (the youthful King and his brother Clarence) to be secretly murdered in the Tower, and that he was crowned at Westminster, under the title of Richard III., together with his consort Anne, the daughter of the late Earl of Warwick, in the year 1483. In the latter end of August in the same year, the King, accompanied by his Queen, and the youthful Prince Edward, made a journey to the north, and visited York. It appears that Richard was most anxious to appear in an imposing manner before his northern subjects on this occasion, as we find his secretary writing from Nottingham to York, urging "the gude masters, the mair, recorder, and alderman, and sheriffs," to make splendid preparations for their Majesties' reception, "for there," says he, "be comen many southern lords, and men of worship, which will mark greatly your resaying thar graces;" and in the

same letter he assures them of the singular love which the King bore to the City of York "afore all others." And in a letter written by Richard himself (preserved in the Harleian MSS.) from York to Piers Courties, keeper of his wardrobe, he orders him to send hither an almost incredible supply of gorgeous state apparel.

Most historians assert that on this occasion Richard was crowned at York by Archbishop Rotherham ; but in this they are in error, as Mr. Davies, late town-clerk of York, has shown conclusively—there being no record of such coronation, either in the archives of the Corporation, or in the official Acts of Archbishop Rotherham.\* Nor is there any account of a coronation given by any contemporary chronicler. But what has led writers of a later date into error is, no doubt, the extraordinary splendour with which the ceremony of knighting the young Prince Edward was conducted here during the royal visit. On the 8th of September, the Prince was not only knighted, but he was invested with his full title and dignity as Prince of Wales. On this occasion, says Hall, "the whole clergy assembled in copes, richly revested, and so with a reverent ceremony went into the City in procession, after whom followed the King, with his crown and sceptre, apparelled in his circot robe royal, accompanied with no small number of the nobility of his realm ; after whom marched in order Queen Anne, his wife, likewise crowned, leading on her left hand, Prince Edward, her son, having on his head a demy crown appointed for the degree of a Prince. The King was had in that triumph in such honour, and the common people of the north so rejoiced, that they extolled and praised him far above the stars.†

Tournaments, masques, plays, and other diversions, in which all the peers in the Kingdom joined, took place on this occasion, and so luxurious was the feasting, and so prodigious were the sums of money expended, that the royal treasury was nearly exhausted, though about that period wheat sold for 2s. a quarter, barley for 1s. 10d, and oats for 1s. 2d. This Monarch distinguished the City of York by various marks of royal munificence, and the citizens showed their gratitude by a steady adherence to his interests. Soon after the accession of Richard, the Duke of Buckingham took up arms against him, and a proclamation from the King, declaring the Duke a traitor, was publicly read at York. There were named with him in the proclamation the Marquis of Dorset, Sir William Noreys, Sir William Knevet, and some others of the Duke's adherents ; and a reward of £1,000. in money was offered in

\* Extracts from the Municipal Records of the City of York, by Robert Davies, F.S.A., pp. 280, 288.

† Hall's Chronicle, p. 380.



the proclamation, or £100. a year in land, to any person who should bring the Duke to justice; and 1,000 marks, or 100 marks a year, for the Marquis. In 1485, Richard, and Anne his Queen, visited Scarborough, and resided for some time in the Castle. The King was very liberal to that town, not only adding to its security by a wall and bulwark, but also granting a charter, with more extensive privileges than those of his predecessors.

But the Crown which Richard had so iniquitously obtained, was not preserved to him long. On the 7th of August, 1485, Henry, Earl of Richmond (the representative, in right of his mother, of the House of Lancaster), landed from Harfleur, in Normandy, with an army, at Milford Haven, in South Wales, and proceeded to Lichfield, his army being augmented on the way. The forces of the King met those of the Earl near Bosworth, in Leicestershire, on the 22nd of the same month, where the battle, which determined the quarrel of the two contending Houses of York and Lancaster, was fought. Richard was slain, and his army totally routed. His Crown, which was found in the field, was immediately placed by Lord Stanley on the head of the Earl of Richmond, and the army saluted him King. Richard's body was stripped, thrown across a horse behind a pursuivant-at-arms, and in that manner conveyed to Leicester, where it was exposed for two days to public view, and then interred with little ceremony in the Church of the Grey Friars.

The accession of Henry VII. to the throne and his subsequent marriage with the Princess Elizabeth, daughter of Edward IV., and heiress of the House of York, united the interests of the Houses of York and Lancaster, and blended the "two roses." Shakespeare writes—

"The Houses now of York and Lancaster,  
Like bloody brothers fighting for a birthright,  
No more shall wound the parent that would part 'em.

\*            \*            \*            \*

We'll twine the roses, red and white, together,  
And both from one kind stalk shall ever flourish."

The Princess Elizabeth had been sent by Richard, as a captive to Sheriff Hutton Castle, near York; and it is said that the tyrannic Prince intended to marry her himself (though she was his niece) as a matter of policy. She was conducted publicly to London, by a numerous body of nobility, and her marriage with Henry was soon after solemnized. After his marriage the new monarch resolved to make a progress through the Kingdom. The natives of the northern counties had been much devoted to Richard; and Henry hoped, by spending some time amongst them, to attach them to his interests.

Accordingly he set out with a numerous and splendid retinue, and visited Lincoln, Nottingham, and many other places. At Pontefract he received intelligence that Lord Lovel, formerly Chamberlain to Richard, had raised a force in the neighbourhood of Ripon and Middleham, and was preparing to surprise him at his entry into York. The Duke of Bedford, at the head of a pretty numerous body of forces, prepared to meet the insurgents; but upon the publication of an offer of pardon to all who should return to their duty, the rebel army immediately dispersed. Lovel himself escaped from the Kingdom, and a few of his followers were executed by the Earl of Northumberland. The King made his entry into York with royal magnificence. Three miles from the City he was met by the Lord Mayor and Aldermen on horseback; at Micklegate Bar he was received with a procession of the clergy, the acclamations of the populace, and the exhibition of pageants. He spent three weeks in the City, dispensing favours, conferring honours, and redressing grievances; a conduct, the policy of which was proved by the loyalty of the country during the invasion of the following year. Amongst other favours granted to the citizens of York, he diminished the yearly rent of £160., which they paid to the Crown, to the small sum of £18. 5s.\*

The perpetuation of the Crown in the family of Henry was now threatened by the birth of a Prince; and this event urged the enemies of the King to one of the most extraordinary attempts recorded in history. After the death of the Duke of Clarence, brother to Edward IV., his only child, Edward Plantagenet, was created Earl of Warwick, the title borne by his grandfather. When Henry VII. ascended the throne, this youthful Earl had only reached his fifteenth year; and he had been for some time a prisoner in the Castle of Sheriff Hutton, in which place he had been confined by Richard III., who feared that he might one day become a dangerous competitor for the Crown. One of the first acts of the new King was to transfer the young Prince, from his prison in Yorkshire, to a place of greater security—the Tower of London, he too viewing him with peculiar jealousy; and thus was this innocent child made a victim to satisfy the ambition of others.

One Richard Simons, a young priest of Oxford, landed in Dublin with a boy about fifteen years of age, and presented him to the Earl of Kildare, the Lord Deputy, and the chief of the Yorkists in Ireland, under the name of the Earl of Warwick, and implored the protection of that nobleman for a young and innocent Prince, who, by escaping from the Tower, had avoided the fate similar to that of his unfortunate cousins, the sons of Edward

\* Rot. Parl. vi., 300.

IV. The boy was in reality Lambert Simnel, the son of a baker at Oxford, a youth of handsome exterior, good address, and endowments of the mind above his years, who had been well instructed in the part which he had to perform, as he could relate, with apparent accuracy, his adventures at Sheriff Hutton, in the Tower, and during his escape.

The Earl of Lincoln, who had been declared by Richard III., heir presumptive to the Crown, and whose hopes were blighted by the accession of Henry, was one of the first that openly espoused the cause of the impostor. The Earl embarked for Flanders to concert with his aunt, Margaret of York, Duchess of Burgundy, the means of dethroning Henry, and to solicit her support in the undertaking. The Duchess, who was sister to the two late Kings, and a mortal enemy to the House of Lancaster, immediately agreed to furnish the Earl with 2,000 Burgundian soldiers. The boy Simnel was introduced under his assumed name, to the citizens of Dublin and the nobility of Ireland, by Lord Thomas Fitzgerald, the Chancellor, brother to the Lord Deputy. With the exception of the Butlers, the Bishops of Cashel, Clogher, Tuam, and Ossory, and the citizens of Waterford, the rest of the population, relying on the authority of the Earl of Kildare, admitted the title of the new Plantagenet without doubt or investigation; and having been joined by the Earl of Lincoln and his Burgundians, as well as by Lord Lovel and others, he was proclaimed in Dublin by the style of Edward VI., King of England and France, and Lord of Ireland.\* The ceremony of coronation was performed by the Bishop of Meath, with a diadem taken from a statue of the Madona; writs were even issued in his name; a Parliament was convoked; and legal penalties were enacted against his principal opponents in Ireland. When the intelligence reached Henry, he conducted the real Earl of Warwick from the Tower to St. Paul's, that he might be publicly recognized by the citizens; and took him with him to the Palace of Shene, where he conversed daily with the noblemen and others who visited the Court. This prudent measure satisfied the people of England. They laughed at the imposture in Ireland, whilst the Irish maintained that theirs was the real, and that the boy at Shene was the pretended Plantagenet.

The rebels now resolved to make an attempt on England, and the Earl of Lincoln being appointed Commander in chief, landed with an army of 8,000 German and Irish troops, at the Pile of Foudray, in Lancashire. At Swartmore, near Ulverstone, the rebels were joined by the tenantry of Sir Thomas Broughton, and here the impostor was again proclaimed. The Earl expected

\* Bacon, 14, 15. Polydor, 563.

that the people of the north would rise and join him as he marched along, but in this he was disappointed, but not dismayed, for he resolved to march directly towards the King and give him battle. They now commenced their march towards York, after sending a letter addressed to the Lord Mayor and Corporation of that City, commanding that lodgings, victuals, &c., should be provided for them. This was immediately communicated to Henry, who without delay proceeded to York, where an attempt was made to seize his person whilst he was solemnizing the festival of St. George, and it certainly would have been successful had not the Earl of Northumberland rescued him. This rebellion was not repressed until an obstinate contest took place at the village of Stoke, within a few miles of Newark, on the 6th of June, 1487. During a space of three hours the victory was doubtful, but at length the rebels were entirely routed with a loss of half their number; and the Earl of Lincoln, Sir Thomas Broughton, and most of the other leaders, were slain on the field of battle.\* Several of the principal insurgents were afterwards hanged upon a gibbet at York. Simons and his pupil surrendered to one of the King's esquires. The priest was made to confess the imposture, and then thrown into prison, in which he perished; but the pretended Edward VI. obtained his pardon, was made a scullion in the royal kitchen, and afterwards, in reward of his good conduct, was raised to the office of falconer.

The real object of this most serio-comic proceeding must for ever remain a mystery. There is no doubt of its having been a deeply laid plot to annoy if not to dethrone the King, on the part of the adherents of the House of York. But why personate a Prince who was still living, and who might any day be confronted with the impostor? The Earl of Lincoln had seen and conversed with the real Earl of Warwick at Shene; and the Earl of Kildare and many others were doubtless in the secret. Several reasons have been assigned for these strange proceedings, but "the least improbable is," writes Dr. Lingard, "that which supposes that the framers of the plot designed, if it succeeded, to place the real Warwick on the throne; but that, sensible how much they should endanger his life, if they were to proclaim him while he was in the Tower, they set up a counterfeit Warwick, and by this contrivance made it the interest of Henry to preserve the true one.†

In the Parliament held in the fourth year of this reign, the King was granted a subsidy for carrying on the war in Bretagne. This land tax was found so heavy in this part of the Kingdom, that the people of Yorkshire and

\* Rapin, vol. i., pp. 658, 659. Hall, fol. 9. Bacon, 586, 587. Hollinshed, p. 1431, &c.

† Hist. Eng., vol. v., p. 285, fcp. 8vo.

Durham refused to pay it. The Earl of Northumberland, then Lord Lieutenant, wrote to inform the King of the discontent, and praying an abatement, but that avaricious monarch would not abate a penny. The message being delivered by the Earl with too little caution, to the inflammable populace, who had assembled in a tumultuous manner around his house, at Cock Lodge, near Thirsk, to complain of the grievance; the incensed rabble, supposing him to be one of the chief advisers of that measure, immediately broke into the house, and murdered the unfortunate Earl with many of his servants. This sad catastrophe occurred on the feast of St. Vitalis the Martyr, April 28th, 1489; and thus perished Henry Percy, the fourth Earl of Northumberland, a most exemplary nobleman, and one who enjoyed a high degree of popular favour. How truly has a witty writer said lately, that "popularity is a popular error." The murdered Earl was buried at Beverley Minster, with great pomp and ceremony. But the matter ended not here; for being inflamed by one John à Chambre, a man of mean extraction, but who was much esteemed by the common people, they chose for their leader Sir John Egremont, and openly erected the standard of rebellion, declaring their intention of marching against Henry himself. His Majesty hearing of this insurrection, sent Thomas, Earl of Surrey, with a competent force, to repress the rebels. The Earl defeated them, and John à Chambre, and several of his adherents, were executed at York, with great solemnity; the former on a gallows of extraordinary height, and the others were suspended around him. The rest of the malcontents dispersed, while Sir John Egremont was fortunate enough to escape into Flanders, where he obtained protection from Margaret, Duchess of Burgundy. Henry, on this occasion, visited York, in order to pacify that City and County; he appointed the Earl of Surrey, President of the North, and Sir Richard Tunstal, his Chief Commissioner, to levy the tax without any abatement. The firm conduct of the King so damped the spirits of the northern malcontents, that, in all the future rebellions during this reign, they approved themselves faithful and loyal subjects.

One would have imagined that from the ill success of Simnel's imposture few would be willing to embark in another of a similar kind; but this was indeed a reign of plots, treasons, insurrections, impostures, and executions, though no Prince ever loved peace more than Henry did. The old Duchess of Burgundy, the fomenter and promoter of the King Simnel enterprise, procured a report to be spread that the young Duke of York, said to have been murdered in the Tower by command of Richard III., was still living. This rumour being greedily received—the English being ever ready to give

credit to absurdities—a young man about twenty years of age, of handsome features, graceful air, easy manners, courtly address, and elegant conversation, was landed at the Cove of Cork, now Queenstown, from a merchant trading vessel from Lisbon. It was soon whispered about that the mysterious stranger was, Richard Duke of York, the second son of Edward IV. The English settlers in Ireland were warmly attached to the House of York, and hence had that country been selected as the theatre upon which was to be performed the first act in the exploits of this pretender, as well as the opening scene of the Simnel farce. After the Earl of Desmond and the citizens of Cork had declared in his favour, he accepted an invitation from the ministers of Charles III. to visit France, and place himself under the protection of that Monarch. For some time he was treated by Charles as the real Duke of York, and heir to the English throne; and for his greater security, a guard of honour was allotted to him.

Leaving France, we find him under the protection of the Duchess of Burgundy, who received him with joy, appointed him a guard of thirty halberdiers, and gave him the surname of "The White Rose of England." Her conduct alarmed Henry, and revived the hopes of his enemies. Could the aunt, it was asked, be deceived as to the identity of her nephew, or could she countenance an impostor? Henry spared neither pains nor expense to unravel the mystery; and the Yorkists were equally active. The royal emissaries reported that the impostor was the son of a converted Jew, who had been over to England in the reign of Edward IV.; that he was a native of the City of Tournay, and that his real name was Perkin Warbeck. Sir Robert Clifford, the secret agent of the Yorkists, had seen "the white rose," and had heard from himself, and from his aunt, the history of his adventures; and he assured his employers in England, that the claim of the new Duke of York was indisputable. The spies of Henry discovered the English partisans of the pretender, and in one day Lord Fitzwalter, Sir Simon Montford, Sir Thomas Thwaites, several clergymen, and others, were apprehended on the charge of high treason. Their correspondence with the friends of the pretender in Flanders was considered a sufficient proof of their guilt; and all received judgment of death. Some of them suffered immediately, and the rest were pardoned. Sir William Stanley too, Henry's Lord Chamberlain, was convicted of the same crime, and decapitated.

Three years had now elapsed since the pretender first set forth his claim; and yet he had never made any attempt to establish it by legal proof, or to enforce it by an appeal to the sword. At length he sailed from the coast of Flanders, with a few hundreds of adventurers attached to his fortunes, and

made an unsuccessful descent in the neighbourhood of Deal. The inhabitants attacked the invaders, made one hundred and sixty nine prisoners, and drove the remainder into their boats. All the captives were hanged, by order of Henry. Warbeck then sailed to Ireland, and with the aid of the Earl of Desmond, laid siege to Waterford. Here again he failed, and then returned to Flanders. Soon after he sailed to Cork, but the natives of that "beautiful city" refused to venture their lives in his service. From Cork he passed to Scotland, and was received with great cordiality by James IV., the King of that country, who was seduced to believe the story of his birth; and who carried his confidence so far as to give him in marriage his near relation, Lady Catherine Gordon, daughter of the Earl of Huntley. But not content with these instances of favour, James resolved to attempt settling him on the throne of England. Warbeck had mustered under his standard 1,400 men, outlaws from all nations; to these James added all the forces it was in his power to raise; and the combined army crossed the border. They were preceded by a proclamation, in which the pretender was styled "Richard, by the grace of God, King of England and France, Lord of Ireland, and Prince of Wales." But the proclamation had no effect. It was expected that the country would rise, when called upon; but the adventurer's pretensions were now become stale—the novelty of the thing had worn away—and not a sword was unsheathed in favour of the "white rose." The Scots, to repay themselves, pillaged the country without mercy, and returned, laden with spoils, to their homes. We soon after find this restless adventurer, under the title of Richard IV., at the head of 6,000 of the men of Cornwall, before the gates of Exeter, where failure marked his progress. At Taunton he perceived the approach of the royal army, commanded by the Lord Chamberlain and Lord Brooke; and at midnight, leaving his followers to their fate, he rode away with a guard of sixty men to the Sanctuary of Beaulieu, in Hampshire. In the morning the insurgents submitted to the royal mercy, and the ringleaders were hanged. Upon receiving a promise that his life should be spared, Warbeck surrendered himself to the King, who ordered him to be confined within the precincts of the Palace.

Having grown weary of confinement in the Palace, he, at the end of six months, attempted to escape, but failed; and for this he was placed in the stocks at Westminster and Cheapside, and then committed to the Tower. The *real* Earl of Warwick, and the *pretended* Duke of York, were now fellow-prisoners in the Tower. They soon contracted a mutual friendship for each other. Warbeck and he entered into a conspiracy, with four of the warders, to murder the Governor, effect their escape, and make another attempt to

seize the Crown. This plot being discovered, they were both brought to trial, condemned, and executed. Whilst Warbeck and Warwick were plotting in the Tower, a person of the name of Ralph Wulford attempted to personate the young Prince, but he was soon apprehended, and he paid with his life the forfeit of his temerity.

The Princess Margaret, Henry's eldest daughter, a beautiful girl in her eighteenth year, when on a journey into Scotland, in order to consummate her marriage with James IV., visited York, on the 14th July, 1503, accompanied by a train of five hundred lords and ladies. On this occasion the citizens testified their loyalty to Henry by paying her the most marked attention. The Sheriff attended by about one hundred lords, ladies, and gentlemen, on horseback, met her at Tadcaster Bridge, and the cavalcade proceeded till it arrived within a mile of York. "So great were the preparations within the walls of the northern metropolis," writes Miss Strickland, in her *Lives of the Queens of England*, "that she found it necessary to change her dress; for which purpose she retired to her litter, where, assisted by her tirewomen, she performed her toilette by the wayside. All her ladies and maidens likewise refreshed their habiliments, and when they considered themselves sufficiently brightened and cleansed from the dust and stains of travel, York gates were opened, and a grand procession of civil magnates and gallant Yorkshire cavaliers poured forth to meet and welcome the royal train. The citizens were headed by their Lord Mayor and the chivalry of the Earl of Northumberland. In fair order did Queen Margaret enter York, her minstrels singing, her trumpets and sackbuts playing, and the high woods resounding, banners and bandroles waving; coats of arms unrolled to the light of the sun setting; rich maces in hand, and brave horsemen curvetting and bounding. York was crowded with the gentry from the East and West Ridings. My Lord of Northumberland and my Lord Mayor did their best to make Queen Margaret's reception expensive and splendid, but as they did not produce any striking variation in their pageantry, it need not be dwelt upon. The young Queen was received in the Palace of the Archbishop of York, after her fatiguing day was done. In the morning, that prelate led her to high mass in York Minster. Margaret was gloriously attired in cloth of gold on this occasion, her gown being belted with a precious girdle studded with coloured gems; the ends of her belt hung down to the ground; her necklace was very splendid, full of orient stones. As she went from the Palace to the Minster, the Countess of Surrey bore her train, and after them followed her ladies, all very richly attired, in goodly gowns tied with great gold chains or girdle belts, with the ends hanging down to the earth. When



mass was done, Queen Margaret gave reception in the great ante-room of the Archbishop's Palace, holding a drawing-room, as it would be called in modern phraseology. Here, my lady, the Countess of Northumberland was presented to her, being well accompanied with knights and gentlemen. The young Queen of Scotland kissed her for the welcoming she gave her."

Margaret remained at York from Saturday till Monday, and was presented with a silver cup ornamented with gold. Upon taking leave of the Corporation, when she reached Clifton, on her journey northward, she made the following courteous but laconic speech; "My Lord Mayor, your brethren, and all the whole City of York, I shall evermore endeavour to love you, and this City, as long as life itself."

York was the second of the ten *staple towns* which Henry VII. established in England, with a view to the promotion of trade. These ten towns were endowed with peculiar commercial privileges, as marts where foreigners might find the commodities of the country in abundance. During the remainder of the reign of this Monarch the annals of York contain no important transaction.

In 1509, Henry VIII., then only sixteen years of age, succeeded to the throne on the death of his father. In the course of this year, or, according to some authorities, in 1507, Hugo Bois, or Goes, the son of an ingenious printer at Antwerp, established a printing press at York; being shortly after the invention of printing, and contemporaneous with Wynkyn de Worde. According to some, Bois had his press in the Minster Yard, in or near St. William's College, on the same site upon which the royal printing presses were erected in 1642, whilst Charles I. was at York; but other accounts state that Bois's press stood in Stonegate, in the house formerly known as Mulberry or Mowbray Hall.

William Caxton, a London merchant, who had attached himself to the service of Margaret, Countess of Richmond, mother of King Henry VII., and had travelled much on the continent of Europe, first introduced the art of printing into England, about the year 1474.\* By the desire of his illustrious patroness, Caxton contrived to make himself acquainted with the mechanism of the art in Germany; from which country he returned to England, provided with types, presses, &c., which he erected in one of the chapels within Westminster Abbey (encouraged by Thomas Milling, the then Abbot), supposed by some to be the almonry, and there he produced the first specimen of English typography. The "Game and Play of Chesse" was printed in

\* Caxton died in 1491, and was buried in St. Margaret's Church, Westminster.

that year, and was the first book ever printed in these Kingdoms. In a few years after, the "mystery of printing," as it was then called, was introduced into Oxford and St. Albans. The first specimen of Oxford workmanship is dated 1478, and the first book printed at St. Albans is dated 1480. York, as we have seen, procured itself the advantage of the press in 1507 or 1509; Cambridge in 1521; Tavistock in 1525; and Canterbury and other towns, at periods considerably later. The press made very little progress in England during the latter end of the fifteenth and nearly the whole of the sixteenth century. The first complete version of the Bible was published on the 4th of October, 1535.

York and the Ainsty contributed five hundred men to the army that fought against the Scots, under the Earl of Surrey, and gained the memorable victory of Flodden Field, on the 9th of September, 1513. In this battle James IV., King of Scotland, Henry's brother-in-law, was slain. His body was conveyed to York, and there exposed to public view, till Henry's return from France, when it was presented to him at Richmond, in Surrey.

In 1531 the City of York obtained an Act of Parliament "for amending the rivers Ouse and Humber, and for pulling down and avoiding of fish-garths, piles, stakes, and other things set in the said rivers." Previous to this year there were fish-garths in these rivers, which were so injurious to the trade of York, by preventing the free passage of ships to that City, that the Lord Mayor and commonalty petitioned Parliament for this Act, for the removal of the obstructions.

In the 24th of this reign (1533), the price of provisions was fixed, as follows:—beef and pork, at a halfpenny a pound; veal and mutton, at a halfpenny and half a farthing; hens, a penny each; geese, two-pence each; butter, sixpence a stone; and cheese, eighteen-pence a stone; with all other articles in proportion. The shilling of that day was worth about five times that sum in our present money.

The suppression of the Monasteries, which commenced in 1535, excited a great sensation in Yorkshire, and all throughout the northern Counties. Before this period, the King was a disputant on tenets of religion, with Martin Luther, having written a book of controversy, still extant, entitled "A Defence of the Seven Sacraments, by King Henry VIII.;" for the merit of which the Pope and Sacred College granted him the distinguished title of *King Defender of the Faith*,—"Rex Fidei Defensor." Thus it is clear that Henry was originally a strenuous advocate of the Catholic Church; but the Pope's refusal to grant him a divorce from his lawful wife, Catherine, excited his ire to such a pitch, that he resolved to try whether Acts of Parliament

did not possess the talismanic power of deputing or constituting himself head of the church, instead of the Pope. Accordingly, in 1532, an Act was passed for extinguishing the payment of *Annates*, or first-fruits to the See of Rome, and was followed by another statute, prohibiting the Pope from interfering in the nomination of Bishops; and the Parliament, which met in 1534, ratified and established the King's claim of *Supreme Head of the Church*. Acts were also passed for taking away the benefit of Sanctuary; for giving the first-fruits to the King, and for making a provision for suffragan Bishops. Having now proved the flexibility of his Parliament, and being either aware that his revenues were not adequate to gratify his insatiable propensity for diversions, feasting, gaming, and public shows; or, prompted by inordinate avarice, he next turned his thoughts to the religious and charitable institutions of the country, and first obtained an Act for the suppression of the smaller Monasteries.\* He afterwards ordered *Articles of Alterations in Religious Doctrines* to be exhibited, and they were signed by eighteen Bishops, forty Abbots and Priors, seven Deans, seventeen Proctors, and one Master of a College. Most of the larger Monasteries were dissolved in 1540, and surrendered to the King; and thus the foundations, made by the piety and wisdom of our forefathers, for the benefit of religion, learning, and the relief of the poor, lost the stability of their settlements, and were laid at the mercy of a cruel, dissolute, and licentious Monarch; the "only Prince in modern times who carried judicial murder into his bed, and imbrued his hands in the blood of those he caressed."† No one surely can suppose that in Henry's newly-acquired taste for sacrilege and church plunder, he had any regard for religion or God's honour;‡ for, as Bishop Fisher truly said, "it is not so

\* Bishop Tanner, *Notit.*, p. 23, says, that the Act for the suppression of the lesser Monasteries was passed about March, 1535. Spelman, in his *History of Sacrilege*, p. 183, tells us, that the bill stuck long in the House of Commons, and would not pass, till the King sent for the members of that house, and told them he would have the bill pass, or have some of their heads.

† *McIntosh's History of England.*

‡ "Men gave their lands, as they declared in the deed of gift, 'for the glory of God,' and they charged what they so gave with the maintenance of masses; if reformation had been desired, this condition would have been repealed; but this would not have gorged that fatal covetousness, which, by confiscating the endowments, ran headlong into the guilt of sacrilege. But again, was all the confiscated property of the nature above described? Our own experience can answer. Were the tithes (now impropriated) of much more than half the parishes of England, given to superstitious uses? Were the glebe lands, and glebe houses, of our poor vicarages (now in the hands of laymen), superstitious and unholy things? This part at least of the spoil was taken strictly from the clergy."—*Wilberforce.*

much the *good* as the *goods* of the church, that he looked after." And although the confiscation was a deserved vengeance, if the gifts of the pious founders were being abused, yet it "was an increase of guilt in the King and Parliament, who by not preventing the abuse, had made themselves partakers in the sin."

In the reign of Henry V., York contained, besides the Cathedral, forty-one parish churches, seventeen chapels, sixteen hospitals, and nine monasteries, or convents, consequently the suppression of the religious houses inflicted a terrible blow on the grandeur of the City. "It cannot be denied," observes Drake, "that after the dissolution of the Monasteries by King Henry VIII., with the Chantries, Chapels, Hospitals, and other houses, for the sustenance of the poor, that this famous, and then flourishing City received a terrible shock, by the tearing up of those foundations. No sooner was this mandate given here, but down fall the Monasteries, the Hospitals, Chapels, and Priors, in this City, and with them, for company, I suppose, eighteen parish churches, the materials and revenues of all being converted to secular uses.

Lord Herbert, in his History of King Henry VIII., tells us that many of the visitors appointed to examine into the state of the monasteries, petitioned the King that some few of them might be suffered to remain for the benefit of the country at large; the poor receiving from them great relief, and the rich good education for their children; and Bishop Latimer also earnestly entreated that, at least, two or three might be left standing in every County, to be nurseries for charity, learning, preaching, study, and prayer. But Cromwell, by the King's directions, invaded all, nor could he be prevailed upon to leave one of them standing. Notwithstanding the immense riches which Henry had obtained from the suppressed Abbeys, Friaries, Nunneries, and Monasteries, and which he pretended was not to be converted to private uses, but to fill his exchequer and relieve his subjects, who were led to believe that they should never hereafter be charged with subsidies, fifteenths, loans, or other aids; yet his illgotten wealth was very soon lavished away, and the exchequer being reduced, he demanded subsidies both of the clergy and laity. Accordingly, the Parliament, which sat in November, 1545,\* granted him a subsidy of two shillings in the pound, and the convocation of the Province of Canterbury, granted him a continuation of a former subsidy of six shillings in the pound. Besides there were yet in the Kingdom several Colleges, Free Chapels, Chantries, Hospitals, and Fraternities; and as Henry had demanded a subsidy, this obsequious

\* Burnet.

Parliament, apprehensive that further demands might be made, very liberally and generously gave them all to him; with all their sites, buildings, riches, lands, possessions, &c., amounting to many thousand pounds a year. After his compliant Parliament had granted all this, Henry came to the House and thanked his "faithful Commons" for what they had done, telling them "that never King was more blessed than he was; and at the same time he assured them that he should take proper care for the supplying of the ministers, for encouraging learning, and relieving the poor."\* The Universities, however, it seems, rather suspected him; for they now made application to him, that they might not be included in the Act of Dissolution of Colleges and Fraternities; and Dr. Cox, tutor to the Prince of Wales, wrote to secretary Paget, requesting him to represent to the King the great want of schools, preachers, and houses for orphans; "that there were ravenous wolves about his Majesty, which would devour Universities, Cathedrals, and Chantries,† and a thousand times as much, so that posterity would wonder at such things; he therefore desired that the Universities, at least, might be secured from their spoils."‡ These solicitations produced the desired effect; for Henry, by confirming the ancient rights of the Universities, dispelled their fears, and assured them that their revenues should remain untouched. By way of atonement for the havoc made in the religious houses, in conjunction with other motives, partaking more of policy than retribution, Henry erected six Bishop's Sees, on the ruin of as many of the most opulent monasteries, and appropriated a part of the revenues of those Monasteries to the maintenance of the new prelates. But even these were at first so scantily endowed, that the new prelates for some years enjoyed little more than a nominal income.§

\* Burnet.

† It was the custom, in ancient times, for Lords of Manors, and persons of wealth and importance, to build small chapels or side aisles to their parish churches, dedicated in honour of some favourite saint, and these were endowed with lands sufficient for the maintenance of one or more chantors or priests, who were to sing masses at the altar erected therein, for the soul of the founder and those of his ancestors and posterity; these chantry chapels served also as a burial place for the founder and his family. There were frequently many chantries in one church, and they were generally separated from the rest of the church by a screen. Fuller says, "Chantries were *Adjectives*, not able to stand by themselves, and therefore united, for their better support, to some parochial, collegiate, or cathedral church." Before the Reformation, much of the property of the Universities was held on the condition of the performance of chantry services.

*Free Chapels*, though endowed for the same use and service as chantries, were independent of any church or other ecclesiastical edifice. "They had more room for priests," says Fuller, "and more priests for that room."

‡ Burnet. § Journals, 112. Strype 1, Rec., 275. Rymer, xiv., 709, 715, &c.

To soften the odium of these measures, much has been said of the immorality practised, or supposed to be practised, within the monasteries. "It is not in human nature," writes Dr. Lingard, "that in numerous societies of men, all should be equally virtuous. The monks of different descriptions amounted to many thousands; and in such a multitude there must have existed individuals, whose conduct was a disgrace to their profession. But when this has been conceded on the one hand, it ought to be admitted on the other, that the charges against them are entitled to very little credit. They were *ex parte* statements, to which the accused had no opportunity of replying, and were made to silence enquiry, and sanctify injustice. Of the commissioners, some were not very immaculate characters themselves; all were stimulated to invent and exaggerate, both by the known rapacity of the King, and by their own prospects of personal interest."\*

The suppression of the religious institutions, and the appropriation of the property of the church, and the patrimony of the poor to "the King's Majesty's use;" the turning out of so many priests, monks, nuns, sick and aged people, to starve, or beg their bread, so exasperated the people of the northern counties, who retained a strong attachment to the ancient doctrines, that in 1536 a large multitude rose in open rebellion, and demanded the redress of these grievances; that is, the re-establishment of the Catholic religion, and the monastic institutions.† The first who appeared in arms were the men of Lincolnshire, under the guidance of Dr. Mackerel, Prior of Burlings, who had assumed the name of Captain Cobler; and so formidable was their force, that the Duke of Suffolk, the royal commander, deemed it more prudent to negotiate than to fight. In the five other counties, the insurrection had assumed a more formidable appearance. From the borders of Scotland to

\* Hist. Eng. vol. vi. p. 226, fo. 8vo.

† The annual rents of the 380 lesser establishments, which were dissolved in 1535, amounted to £32,000.; and the goods, lands, plate, &c., belonging to these houses, were valued at £100,000., but are said to have been worth three times that sum. By the suppression of the greater monasteries, in 1530, the King gained a revenue of more than £100,000. a year, besides large sums in plate and jewels. The annual revenue of all the suppressed houses amounted to £142,914. 12s. 9½d., about one-and-twentieth part of the whole rental of the Kingdom, if Hume be correct in taking that rental at three millions, as the rents were then valued. Burnet says that they were at least ten times as much in real value; for the Abbots and Priors having some presentiment of the impending storm, had fixed the yearly rents very low, and raised the fines very high, that they might have something to subsist on when they should be expelled their houses. Besides the rents of the lands belonging to the monasteries, Henry received a considerable sum arising from the church ornaments, plate, goods, lead, bells, and other materials, which he thought it not proper to have valued at all.

the Humber, the inhabitants had generally bound themselves by oath to stand by each other.

Nor was the insurrection long confined to the common people. Rapin and others tell us that the nobility and gentry, the former patrons of the dissolved houses, had joined the standard of revolt.\* The Archbishop of York, the Lords Neville, D'Arcy, Lumley, and Latimer; Sir Robert Constable, Sir John Bulmer, Sir Stephen Hamilton, Sir Thomas Percy, brother of the Earl of Northumberland, and many other Knights and gentlemen of the north, were amongst the insurgents. The real leaders seem not to have been known, but the rebels, amounting in number to upwards of 40,000 men, were under the nominal command of Richard or Robert Aske, of Aughton, a gentleman of considerable fortune and influence in Yorkshire; and the enterprise was quaintly termed the *Pilgrimage of Grace*. The oath taken by the "Pilgrims" was, "that they should enter into this pilgrimage for the love which they bore to Almighty God, his faith, the holy church, and the maintenance thereof; the preservation of the King's person and issue; the purifying of the nobility, and expulsion of villein blood and evil counsellors from his grace and privy council; not for any private profit, nor to do displeasure to any private person, nor to slay or murder through envy, but to put away all fears, and to take afore them the Cross of Christ, his faith, and the restitution of the church, and the suppression of heretics and their opinions." On their banners were painted the Crucifixion of our Saviour, and the chalice and host, the emblems of their belief. A number of ecclesiastics marched at the head of the army, in the habits of their order, carrying crosses in their hands, and wearing on their sleeves an emblem of the five wounds of Christ, with the name of Jesus wrought in the middle. Wherever the pilgrims appeared, the ejected monks were placed in their monasteries, and the inhabitants were compelled to take the oath, and to join the army. Henry immediately issued commissions to several Lords to levy troops, but from the backwardness of the people, the army was not sufficiently strong to oppose the insurgents. Aske, in the meantime, did not remain inactive. He divided his army into separate divisions—one of which took possession of Pontefract Castle, whilst another division made themselves master of the City of York; and a third, under the command of one Hallam, took Hull by surprise. The strong Castles of Skipton and Scarborough were preserved by the courage and loyalty of the garrisons. The King issued a proclamation, in which he told the rebels that they ought no more to pretend to give judg-

\* Rapin, vol. i. p. 815.

ment with regard to government, than a blind man with regard to colours; —“And we,” he added, “with our whole council, think it right strange that ye, who are but brutes, and inexpert folks, do take upon you to appoint us, who be meet or not for our council.”

Aske, at the head of 30,000 men, then hastened to obtain possession of Doncaster. The Earl of Shrewsbury, though without any commission, armed his tenantry, and threw himself into the town; he was soon joined by the Duke of Norfolk, the King's lieutenant, with a small army of 5,000 men, and a battery of cannon was erected to protect the bridge. The Duke encamped near Doncaster, and entered into a negotiation with the rebels, who had taken their stand at Scawsby Leas. On the 20th of October, 1536, the Duke sent a herald with a proclamation to the insurgents; Aske, sitting in state, with the Archbishop of York on the one hand, and Lord D'Arcy on the other, gave the herald an audience, but on hearing the contents of the proclamation, he refused to allow it to be published to the army. Henry, who was now greatly alarmed, issued a proclamation, commanding all the nobility to meet him at Northampton. Meanwhile the insurgents advanced towards the detachment commanded by the Duke of Norfolk, which was stationed to defend the bridge which formed the pass between the two armies.\* A most fortunate circumstance for the King occurred at this juncture, the river Don, which was fordable in several places, was now so swollen by a heavy rain that it was impossible to effect a passage over it; had it been otherwise, the royal army must have been defeated; though, under the circumstances, it is impossible to say what might have been the consequence, for the Duke, though entrusted with the command of the forces of the King, was averse to the alterations made in religion, and it could not, therefore, be agreeable to him to oppose men who were defending a cause which he secretly approved.

During these protracted negotiations, the King was enabled to strengthen his army, which so alarmed many of the rebels, that they, suspecting they were betrayed by their leaders, withdrew themselves from the cause. Wearied at length by the delays in the negotiation, the main body of the rebels, which still remained in their camp, resolved to renew hostilities, and to attack the royal army at Doncaster; but this, however was prevented by another violent rain, which rendered the river impassable.

Henry now sent a general pardon for the insurgents who should lay down their arms, excepting only ten persons, six of whom were named, and four not named. This offer was rejected, and after many delays and tedious

\* Rapin, vol. i., p. 815. Hall, 239. Stowe, 574.



negotiations, the King proposed that the rebels should send deputies to treat for peace. This proposal was accepted, and at a conference held at Doncaster, on the 6th of December, the deputies made the following demands:—

1st.—That a general pardon should be granted without any exception.

2nd.—That a Parliament should be held at York.

3rd.—That a Court of Justice should be erected there, so that the inhabitants of the northern counties should not be brought to London on any lawsuit.

4th.—That some Acts of the late Parliament, which were too grievous to the people, should be repealed.

5th.—That the Princess Mary should be declared legitimate.

6th.—That the Papal authority should be re-established on its former footing.

7th.—That the suppressed monasteries should be restored to their former state.

8th.—That the Lutherans, and all innovators in religion, should be severely punished.

9th.—That Thomas, Lord Cromwell; Audley, the Lord Chancellor; and Rich, the Attorney General; should be removed from the Council, and excluded from the next Parliament.

10th.—That Lee and Leighton, visitors of the monasteries, should be imprisoned, and brought to account for their briberies and extortions.\*

This conference broke up without producing any effect, but the Duke of Norfolk advised the King to comply with, at least, some of their demands. Henry therefore promised that their grievances should be patiently discussed at the next Parliament, which, he agreed, was to be held at York; and he also offered a general pardon to the rebels. Aske and the other leaders accepted the King's offer, and the treaty being concluded, the insurgents immediately dispersed. But Henry, freed from his apprehensions, neglected to redeem his promise, and in less than two months the "Pilgrims" were again in arms; but the Duke of Norfolk, with a more numerous force overpowered them, after they had failed in two successive attempts to surprise Hull and Carlisle. Lord D'Arcey, Robert Aske, and many other leaders were taken, and executed. The Abbots of Fountains, Jervaux, and Rivaulx, the Prior of Bridlington, and others, were executed at Tyburn; Sir Robert Constable was hanged in chains, over Beverley gate, at Hull; Aske was suspended from a tower, probably Clifford's, at York; D'Arcey was bo-

\* Rapin, vol. i., page 810.

headed at Tower Hill, in London; and seventy-four of the officers were hung on the walls of Carlisle.

The several rebellions which occurred in the north having subsided, and the King's anger being satiated with the blood of the chief rebels, he issued out a general pardon to all the northern counties, excepting, however, twenty-two persons, most of whom were taken, and actually suffered in one place or another.

In the month of August, 1541, Henry, in order to quiet the minds of the people, receive their submission, and reconcile them to his government, made a progress to the north, accompanied by the Queen. Another motive for this journey was, that he proposed to have a conference at York, with his nephew, James V., King of Scotland, in order to settle, if possible, a lasting peace.\* "On his entrance into Yorkshire, he was met by two hundred gentlemen of the same shire, in coats of velvet, and four thousand tall yeomen and serving men, well horsed, who, on their knees, made submission to him by the mouth of Sir Robert Bowes, and gave to the King £900. On Barnsdale, the Archbishop of York, with more than three hundred priests, met the King, and, making a like submission, gave to him £600. The like submission was made by the Mayors of York, Newcastle, and Hull, and each of them gave the King £100."†

The Scottish nobility and ecclesiastics doubting the sincerity of Henry, prevailed upon James to forego the proposed meeting; and thus disappointed, the English monarch, after a sojourn of twelve days, left York abruptly on the 29th of September. During his stay here, he established a President and Council in the City, under the great seal of Oyer and Terminer, which continued till the reign of Charles I. The first President was Thomas, Duke of Norfolk. The power of this court was to hear and determine all causes on the north side of the Trent. In the same year, Sir John Neville, knt., and ten other persons, were taken in rebellion, and executed at York.

Soon after the King abolished the papal authority in England, the clergy were divided into two opposite factions, denominated the men of the old and the new learning. Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, and Lee, Archbishop of York, with the Bishops of London, Durham, and Bath and Wells, were at the head of the former; and the leaders of the latter were Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury; Latimer, Bishop of Worcester; and Shaxton and Fox, Bishops of Sarum and Hereford. And during the whole of the time, from the commencement of the revolt, until the death of the King, the creed of the

\* Hume, vol. iv., p. 183. † Hollinshed Chron., 1582.

Church of England depended on the theological caprice of its supreme head. Henry's infallibility continually oscillated between the two parties in the church. His hostility to the Court of Rome led him at times to incline to the men of the new learning; but his attachment to the ancient faith—which is most manifest throughout the work—quickly brought him back. The leaders of both parties, warmly as they might be attached to their own opinions, did not aspire to the crown of martyrdom; they were always ready to suppress, or even to abjure, their real sentiments at the command of their wayward and imperious master. Both parties carefully studied the inclinations of the King, and sought by the most servile submission to win his confidence. In 1536, the head of the church, with the aid of his theologians, compiled certain "Articles," which were ordered to be read to the people in the churches without any comment. The Book of Articles may be divided into three parts. The first declares that the belief in the three Creeds—the Apostles', the Nicene, and the Athanasian—is necessary for salvation; the second explains the three great Sacraments of Baptism, Penance, and the Holy Eucharist, and pronounces them the ordinary means of justification; and the third teaches that, though the use of images, the intercession of saints, and the usual ceremonies in the service, have not in themselves the power to remit sin, or justify the soul, yet they are highly profitable, and ought to be retained. Henry having by these Articles, fixed the landmarks of English orthodoxy, now ordered the Convocation "to set forth a plain and sincere exposition of doctrine" for the better information of his subjects. This task was accomplished by the publication of a book, entitled, "The Godly and Pious Institution of a Christian Man,"—a work which was subscribed by all the Bishops and dignitaries of the church, and pronounced by them to accord "in all things with the true meaning of Scripture." It explains the Creeds, the seven Sacraments, which it divides into three of a higher, and four of a lower order, the ten Commandments, the Paternoster and Ave Maria, Justification, and Purgatory. It denies the supremacy of the Pope, and inculcates passive obedience to the King; and that Sovereigns are accountable to God alone; and it is chiefly remarkable for the earnestness with which it refuses salvation to all persons out of the pale of the Catholic Church. By way of concession to the men of the new learning, as well as to replenish his coffers, the King ordered a number of holidays to be abolished, shrines to be demolished, and superstitious relics to be burnt. There is one proceeding in connection with this order, which on account of its singularity and absurdity deserves attention.

In the reign of Henry II., Thomas à Becket, Archbishop of Canterbury,

sometime Lord High Chancellor of England, and a great champion of the rights of the church, had been murdered in his own Cathedral by four gentlemen in the King's service, who mistook for a command a rash expression of their master.\* The prelate was afterwards canonized by the Pope, and the anniversary of his martyrdom was consecrated to God in honour of the saint. It was now suggested to Henry VIII., that so long as the name of St. Thomas of Canterbury should remain in the calendar, men would be stimulated by his example to brave the ecclesiastical authority of their Sovereign. The King's attorney was therefore instructed to exhibit an information against "Thomas Becket, sometime Archbishop of Canterbury;" and that individual was formally cited to appear in court, and answer to the charge. The saint having neglected to quit the tomb, in which he had reposed for more than three centuries and a half, would have been decided against for default, had not the King, by his special grace, assigned him a counsel. The court sat at Westminster; the Attorney-General and the advocate of the accused were heard; and sentence was finally pronounced that Becket had been guilty of rebellion, contumacy, and treason; that his bones should be publicly burnt, and that the offerings which had been made at his shrine should be forfeited to the Crown.† The sentence was executed in due form; and the gold, silver, and jewels, the spoils obtained by the demolition of the shrine, were conveyed in two ponderous coffers to the royal treasury. A proclamation was afterwards published, stating that forasmuch as it now clearly appeared that Thomas Becket had been killed in a riot excited by his own obstinacy, and had been canonized by the Bishop of Rome, the King's Majesty thought it expedient to declare that he was no saint, but rather a rebel and traitor to his Prince, and therefore commanded that he should not be esteemed or called a saint; that all images and pictures of him should be destroyed; the festivals in his honour be abolished, and his name and remembrance be erased out of all books, under pain of imprisonment.‡ Henry made his own judgment the standard of orthodoxy; and he executed the laws against those who

\* The Archbishop having frequently given offence to the King, by opposing his designs upon the rights and property of the church, the King, one day in a transport of fury, cried out, and repeated several times, that "he cursed all those whom he had honoured with his friendship, and enriched by his bounty, seeing none of them had the courage to rid him of one Bishop, who gave him more trouble than all the rest of his subjects." Hearing these words, Sir William Tracy, Sir Hugh Morville, Sir Richard Briton, and Sir Reginald Fitz-Orson, "who," says Butler, "had no other religion than to flatter their Prince," conspired privately to murder the Archbishop, and perpetrated the sacrilegious act on the 29th of December, 1170.

† Wilk. Con., iii., 835-6.      ‡ Ibid, 841.

differed from him, with equal rigour, both before and after his quarrel with the Court of Rome. Before that event the teachers of Lollardism excited his ire; and after it he was not less eager to light the faggot for the punishment of heresy. A number of German Anabaptists landed in England in 1535; they were instantly apprehended, and fourteen of them, who refused to recant, were condemned to the flames. In 1538 more missionaries of the same sect followed, and a similar fate was awarded to them. Henry's own relations and friends were sacrificed on the plea of high treason or heresy; and even Cromwell, his Vicar-General and factotum, who, by cunning and servility, had raised himself from the shop of a fuller to the Earldom of Essex, and the highest seat in the House of Lords, died on the scaffold.

In 1541 the King published six articles of belief, in the form of an Act of Parliament. The 1st article declared that in the Blessed Eucharist is really present the natural body of Christ, under the forms and without the substance of bread and wine. 2nd. That communion under both kinds is not necessary *ad salutem*. 3rd. That priests may not marry by the law of God. 4th. That vows of chastity are to be observed. 5th. That private masses ought to be retained. And 6th. That the use of auricular confession is expedient and necessary. This statute declares that if any person preach, write, or dispute against the first article, he shall not be allowed to abjure, but shall suffer death as a heretic; or if he preach, write, or speak openly against any of the other five, he shall incur the usual penalties of felony. Thus it appears that Henry was still opposed to the Lutheran doctrines of Justification by Faith alone, &c. By law the Catholic and Protestant were now placed on an equal footing in respect to capital punishment. If to admit the papal supremacy was treason, to reject the papal creed was heresy. The one could be expiated only by the halter and the knife; the other led the offender to the stake and the faggot. On one occasion Powel, Abel, and Featherstone, who had been attainted for denying the supremacy of the King; and Barnes, Garret, and Jerome, for maintaining heterodox opinions, were coupled, Catholics and Protestants, on the same hurdles; drawn together from the Tower to Smithfield, and while the former were hanged and quartered as traitors, the latter were consumed in the flames as heretics.

The King had formerly sanctioned the publication of an English version of the Bible, and granted permission to all his subjects to peruse it; but in 1543, he had discovered that the indiscriminate reading of the holy volumes had not only generated a race of teachers who promulgated doctrines the most strange and contradictory, but had taught ignorant men to discuss the meaning of the inspired writings in alehouses and taverns, till, heated with

controversy and liquor, they burst into injurious language and provoked each other to breaches of the peace. And in his last speech to the Parliament, he complained bitterly of the religious dissensions which pervaded every parish in the realm. After observing that it was partly the fault of the clergy, some of whom were "so stiff in their old mumpsimus, and others so busy in their new sumpsimus," instead of preaching the word of God, they were employed in railing at each other; and partly the fault of the laity, who delighted in censuring the proceedings of the clergy, he said: "If you know that any preach perverse doctrine, come and declare it to some of our Council, or to us, to whom is committed by God the authority to reform and order such causes and behaviours; and be not judges yourselves of your own fantastical opinions and vain expositions; and although you be permitted to read holy Scripture, and to have the word of God in your mother tongue, you must understand it is licensed you so to do, only to inform your conscience, and inform your children and families, and not to dispute, and to make Scripture a railing and taunting stock against priests and preachers. I am very sorry to know and hear," he added, "how irreverently that precious jewel, the word of God, is disputed, rhymed, sung, and jingled, in every ale-house and tavern, contrary to the true meaning and doctrine of the same; and yet I am as much sorry, that the readers of the same follow it in doing so faintly and coldly. For of this I am sure, that charity was never so faint among you, and virtuous and godly living was never less used, nor God himself among you never less served."\*

Tyndal's and Coverdale's versions of the Bible were this year (1543) ordered to be disused altogether, as "crafty, false, and untrue;" and permission to read the authorised translation, without note or comment, was confined to persons of the rank of lords or gentlemen. A new work was published in the same year, with the title of "A necessary Doctrine and Erudition for any christned man," or the "King's Book." This book, the composition of which occupied two committees of prelates and theologians for three years, contains a more full exposition of the doctrines to be taught, than that given in a previously published book, called "The Institution," with the addition of Transubstantiation, and the sufficiency of communion under one kind. The doctrines contained in this book were approved of by both Houses of Convocation; and the Archbishop ordered them to be studied and followed by every preacher.

Towards the latter end of his reign, Henry became more arbitrary, both

\* Hall, p. 160.

in spirituals and temporals. The Archbishops of Canterbury and York, the Bishop of London, and several other prelates, were obliged to make conveyances in his favour, of many manors belonging to their different dioceses, upon very slight considerations, and these deeds were confirmed by Parliament.\*

After having long indulged without restraint, in the pleasures of the table, Henry at last became so enormously corpulent, that he could neither support the weight of his own body, nor remove without the aid of machinery into the different apartments of his Palace. Even the fatigue of subscribing his name to the writings which required his signature, was more than he could bear; and three Commissioners were appointed to perform that duty. An inveterate ulcer in the thigh, which had more than once threatened his life, and which now seemed to baffle all the skill of his surgeons, added to the irascibility of his temper; and in the latter part of the year 1546, his health was rapidly declining. In his last illness, according to one account, he was constantly attended by his confessor, the Bishop of Rochester; he heard mass daily in his chamber, and received the communion under one kind. Another account states that he died in the anguish of despair; and a third represents him refusing spiritual aid till he could only reply to the exhortation of the Bishop by a squeeze of the hand. As the awful hour of his dissolution approached, we are told by Burnet, that he became more froward, imperious, and untractable, than ever. His courtiers durst not remind him of the change he was shortly to undergo, or desire him to prepare himself for it. At length, Burnet says, Sir Anthony Denny had the courage and honesty to disclose it to him; the King expressed his sorrow for the sins of his past life, and said he trusted in the mercies of Christ, which were greater than his sins. He died at Westminster, on Friday, the 28th of January, 1547, in the fifty-sixth year of his age, and thirty-eighth of his reign, leaving behind him the terrible character, that throughout his long reign he neither spared man in his anger, nor woman in his lust. By his will he provided for the interment of his body, the celebration of masses, and the distribution of alms for the benefit of his soul.† This will is now deposited in the Chapter House, Westminster.

\* Vide the Act 27th Henry VIII., c. 16.

† The body of Henry lay in state in the Chapel of Whitehall, which was hung with black cloth; eighty large wax tapers were kept constantly burning; twelve lords mourners sat around within a rail; and every day masses and a dirge were performed. At the commencement of the service, Norroy, King-at-Arms, called aloud: "Of your charity, pray for the soul of the high and mighty Prince, our late Sovereign Lord, Henry VIII."

Henry VIII. was succeeded on the throne by his only son Edward VI., (by Jane Seymour, his third Queen), being then just nine years old. His coronation was solemnized on the 20th of the following month (February), a new form having been drawn up for it, by his uncle, the Duke of Somerset, now called the Lord Protector, and the ceremony was concluded with a solemn high mass sung by Archbishop Cranmer.\* Somerset, and the other guardians of the youthful Monarch, were favourable to the new doctrines, and to the professors of the new learning, though they deemed it prudent to conceal such predilection during the life time of Henry; and now that they were freed from restraint, they openly professed themselves the patrons of the new Gospel. They then undertook to establish a different religious creed, and with that view they entrusted the education of Edward to the most zealous though secret partisans of the reformed doctrines; and in a short time the royal pupil believed that the worship so rigorously enforced by his father was idolatrous. The diffusion of the "new learning" was now aided by all the influences of the Crown. The zeal of the King's guardians was the more active, as it was stimulated by the prospect of reward; for though they were the depositories of the sovereign authority, they had yet to make their private fortunes; and the church, notwithstanding the havoc which had been made in its possessions during the last reign, had yet some gleanings left. Accordingly, Edward's first Parliament, held in the first year of his reign, caused a survey and inquisition to be made and taken, of all the lands designed for the maintenance of Chantries, Free Chapels, and Colleges, which had not been fully effected in the reign of his father, and all the revenues given for obits, anniversaries, lights in churches, together with all the lands belonging to Guilds or Fraternities, on the same account.† This Act did not

On the 14th of February the body was removed to Sion House, on the 15th to Windsor, and the next day was interred in the midst of the choir, near the body of Jane Seymour. Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, preached the sermon, and read the funeral service, which concluded with the Psalm "De profundis." See Sandford, 492; Strype, 2; Rec. iii., 17; Hayward, 275.

\* Strype's Cranmer, p. 141.

† For Chantries and Free Chapels, See note at foot of page 181. The Obit was the anniversary of any person's death; and to observe such a day, with prayer, alms, or other commemorations, was called keeping of the obit. *Anniversaries* were similar to the obits, inasmuch as they were the yearly returns of the death of persons, which the religious registered in their obitual or martyrology, and annually observed in gratitude to their founders and benefactors. *Guild* signifies a fraternity or society, many of which existed formerly for religious or charitable purposes. The name is derived from the Saxon Gildan, to *pay*, because every member paid something towards the expenses of the society.



pass without great difficulty; Cranmer and others of the Reformers opposed it, knowing well, that when once these revenues were in the Sovereign's hands, the Church would be deprived of them for ever; and they (the Reformers) hoped for some favourable opportunity to convert them to uses beneficial to the reformed religion. The people, too, in general continued to murmur at these proceedings. Many towns petitioned against them. We have not met with the record of a petition from the City of York on the subject; but the people of Hull petitioned and complained, "That the Church was ruined, the clergy beggared, all learning despised, and that the people began to grow barbarous, atheistical, and rude.\*

Finding that they were likely to be disappointed in their expectations, the rapacious courtiers induced the young King, either to give to them, or otherwise to sell greatly below their real value, most of these forfeited houses, and to pay the said endowments out of the Crown's revenues, as is done, in part at least, even to this day. There was a clause in the Act, purporting that these revenues should be converted to the erecting and maintenance of Grammar Schools, and to the better provision for preachers, curates, and readers; and this seems, in part, to have been put in practice, for many schools in different parts of the Kingdom were founded at that period, and mostly endowed out of the Chantry lands, disposed of as they had been at so much below their value. By this act 90 Colleges, 110 Hospitals, and 2,734 Chantries and Free Chapels, were destroyed.

In the beginning of this year (1548) the Council made great alterations in church offices. By an order, dated January the 28th, carrying candles on Candlemas day; making the sign of the cross on the forehead with ashes on Ash Wednesday; and bearing palms on Palm Sunday, were forbidden; as also were the rites used on Good Friday and Easter Sunday. Confession was left optional, and it was ordered that all images and pictures should be removed from churches. In the Parliament which met on the 24th of

\* Records of Hull. It must be ever lamented that the destroyers of the religious houses did not spare the learning of the nation, collected through so many centuries, and deposited in the libraries of these institutions. No—all was sacrificed during the exterminating period, which put an end to the existence of the Catholic Church as a national establishment. Manuscripts, which can never be renewed, were consigned to profane uses; whole ship loads were transported to the continent; history, topography, biography, records, were alike bartered for a base equivalent, and petty tradesmen were furnished with paper for common purposes, which was worth its weight in gold.—*Coll. Eccl. Hist.*, vol. ii. Bale asserts, that he knew a merchant, who received as many manuscripts from monastic libraries for forty shillings, as would serve him for all the purposes of his business for twenty years.

November, in the same year, a bill was introduced for the purpose of authorizing the uses of a new liturgy, or a book of common prayer, in the English language, which had been compiled by Cranmer and Holgate, Archbishops of Canterbury and York, and upwards of twenty other commissioners. This bill, which imposed very serious penalties upon any minister who should refuse to use it, or who should preach or speak in derogation of it, passed through the lower house without much difficulty; but in the higher house it met with a warm opposition. It was carried however by a majority of 31 to 11. The non-contents were the Earl of Derby, the Bishops of London, Durham, Norwich, Carlisle, Hereford, Worcester, Westminster, and Chichester, and the Lords Dacres and Wyndsor.\*

Though the new liturgy was compiled chiefly from the Roman Missals and Breviaries (such parts being omitted as were deemed objectionable, and numerous additions and corrections introduced, to meet the wishes of the new teachers, without shocking the belief or the prejudices of their opponents), yet such was the attachment of the people to the ancient service, that in many counties they rose in open rebellion against it. Insurrections broke out almost at the same time in the Counties of Wilts, Sussex, Surrey, Bucks, Hants, Berks, Kent, Gloucester, Somerset, Devon, Oxford, Norfolk, Essex, Suffolk, Hertford, Leicester, Rutland, Worcester, and other counties. These rebellious risings, some of which were very formidable, were finally suppressed with the aid of the foreign troops—the bands of adventurers that had been raised on the continent to serve in the war against Scotland. In connection with these risings was an insurrection at Seamer, near Scarborough, in the second year of this reign. It was promoted by William Dale, the parish clerk; William Ambler, or Omblor, of East Haslerton, yeoman; and John Stevenson, of Seamer. They set fire to the beacon at Staxton in the night, and thereby assembled a rude mob, to the number of 3,000, whose avowed object was the restoration of the ancient faith.

This rabble, before they were suppressed, committed several outrages; a party of them went at night to the house of a person named White, and seizing him and all who were in the house, carried them to the Wolds near Seamer, where they stripped and murdered them. Many apprehensions were at that time entertained that their numbers might swell to a formidable body, for discontent was pretty general among the people; but the Lord President of the North sent a detachment from York against them, and the King issued a proclamation, offering a general pardon to all who would sub-

\* The King's Journal, G. Journals, 331. Strype ii., p. 84.

mit; on which the greater number of them immediately dispersed, but the leaders were apprehended and executed at York.

Among the other changes in the forms and ceremonies of religion, in 1548, was the total abolition of Sanctuaries. In 1552 altars were ordered to be removed from churches, and tables substituted; and in the same year the marriage of priests was declared good and valid.

In 1551 the City of York suffered considerably from a severe nondescript epidemic, called the *Sweating Sickness*, which extraordinary disease was then prevalent in England. This frightful plague made its first appearance at Shrewsbury on the 15th of April, in this year, and spreading towards the north, continued till the month of October following. People in perfect health were the most liable to be seized with it, and, in the beginning of the distemper, it was almost certain death in a few hours. Stowe instances its awful fatality, by seven householders, who all supped cheerfully together over night, but before eight o'clock the next morning, six of them were dead. So great was the fear generally excited by this alarming disorder, that large numbers fled out of the Kingdom, hoping to escape the contagion; but, however incredible it may appear, the most veritable historians positively assure us that the evil followed them, and was peculiar to the English; for in various parts of the continent, though breathing a purer air, amongst men of different nations, the infection seized them, and them only. It first manifested itself in a sudden chilliness, immediately followed by violent perspiration, which brought on sleep, and terminated in death. Few escaped who were attacked with full stomachs. How many died in York of this singular distemper is not known, but it appears in Mr. Hildyard's Collections that the mortality was great. This disease, says Hollinshed, made the nation begin to repent, and give alms, and remember God, from whom that plague might well seem to be sent, as a scourge for the sins of the people; but the impression, it seems, very soon wore out; for as the contagion in time ceased, so, continues he, our devotion decayed.

In the beginning of the year 1553, the King was seized with an illness, which ended in a consumption, of which he died on the 6th of July following, in the sixteenth year of his age, and seventh of his reign. During his illness, the rapacious courtiers, not yet content with the spoils of the church which they had received, prevailed upon him to sign an order for visiting the churches, to examine what riches, plate, or jewels, belonged to them in general; and to seize all the superfluous plate, ornaments, and linen, for the alleged purpose of providing for the poor. "Calling in these superfluous ornaments," says the Rev. J. Tickell, "which lay in the churches more for pomp than use,

and converting them into money to be given to the poor, deserved no blame; but the misfortune was, the poor had by much the least share of it, the greater part being appropriated to other uses."\*

When Mary, the daughter of Henry VIII. and Catherine of Arragon, and a Catholic, ascended the throne, in 1553, things were in great confusion, as might be expected, in consequence of the sacrilegious robberies and spoliations committed by her licentious father and his harpies; and in the endeavour to restore the plundered property, as well as the ancient faith, many cruelties were perpetrated in her reign. She certainly had great difficulties to encounter, considering the task which she had taken upon herself to perform; for although her ministers professed deep sorrow for what had been done, and implored forgiveness, yet, such as were in possession of the spoils of the Monasteries, held them with an iron grasp; they liked not that paying back again—it was double trouble.

In the first Parliament of this reign (held soon after the accession of the Queen) all the statutes with regard to religion, which had been passed during the reigns of her father and brother, were repealed, so that the national religion was again placed on the same footing on which it stood at the death of Henry VII. Intrigues were now set afoot and fomented by the Reformed preachers. In the same year a marriage was projected between the Queen and Philip, Prince of Spain, and son of the celebrated Emperor Charles V. An insurrection ensued, headed by Sir Thomas Wyatt, the object of which was to force Mary to marry Courtenay, the young Earl of Devon (whom she had recently liberated from the Tower, to which he had been confined from his infancy by the jealousy of his father and brother); and failing in that, the conspirators resolved that he, in defiance of the Queen's authority, should marry the Princess Elizabeth, and repair with her to Devonshire and Cornwall, where the inhabitants were devoted to his family; and where he would find the Duke of Suffolk, the Earl of Pembroke, and many other Lords ready to join his standard. These and other plans were suggested and discussed, but Courtenay, though ambitious, was timid and cautious, and all their attempts failed. Of the participation in the treason of the insurgents of the Princess Elizabeth, there could hardly exist a doubt; and for several weeks Renard, the Spanish Ambassador, endeavoured to extort the Queen's consent that the Princess should be condemned, and sent to the scaffold. She was a competitor for the Crown, he argued; she had accepted the offer of the rebels, and ought to suffer the penalty of her treason. However, that Queen, to

\* History of Kingston-upon-Hull, p. 217.

whom we are accustomed to apply the opprobrious epithet of "bloody," disregarded these and other well-founded arguments, and contented herself by proposing to her Council that some one of her Lords should take charge of the Princess in a private house in the country; but no man being found willing to incur the responsibility, she was sent to the Tower, and afterwards to Woodstock. Some of the leaders of this rebellion, including Wyatt, were condemned and executed; others obtained pardon, and out of four hundred taken in the act of rebellion, but sixty suffered the penalty of their crime. A learned and impartial historian justly observes, that if on this occasion sixty of the insurgents were sacrificed to the justice and resentment of Mary, we shall find in the next reign, that after a rebellion of a less formidable aspect, some hundreds of victims were required to appease the offended majesty of her sister. And if we look at the conduct of government after the rebellions of 1715 and 1745, we shall not find that the praise of superior lenity is due to more modern times.

During the insurrection referred to (which was chiefly confined to the County of Kent) a party of the insurgents attempted, by stratagem, to take the Castle of Scarborough, which at the time was but slightly garrisoned. Mr. Thomas Stafford, second son of Lord Stafford, collected some fugitives in France, which he disguised in the habits of peasants and countrymen, and took with him to Scarborough on a market day, under the most unsuspecting appearances. He, with about thirty of his little troop, strolled into the Castle at intervals with a careless air, apparently to gratify their curiosity. Embracing a favourable opportunity, they, at the same moment, secured the different sentinels, took possession of the gate, and admitted their remaining companions, who, under the exterior garb of countrymen, had concealed arms. They retained possession of the Castle, however, but for three days, for the Earl of Westmorland, with a considerable force, recovered it without loss. Mr. Stafford was, on account of his quality, beheaded; and three other of the leaders, Strelley, Bradford, and Proctor, were hanged and quartered; hence the origin of "A Scarborough warning; a word and a blow, and the blow comes first."

On the festival of St. James, in A.D. 1554, the marriage of Philip and Mary was celebrated, in the Cathedral Church of Winchester, before crowds of the nobility of every part of Christendom, and with a magnificence which has seldom been surpassed.\* And in the Parliament which assembled in the same year the Papal supremacy was restored, and the Church of England

\* See a full description of the ceremony, in Rosso, p. 61.

was re-united with that of Rome. The motion for the re-union was carried almost by acclamation. The dissolution of this Parliament was followed by an unexpected act of grace. The Lord Chancellor and several members of the Council proceeded to the Tower, and, in the name of the King and Queen, released the state prisoners still confined on account of the insurrection of Northumberland and Wyatt.

From the sufferings of the Reformers, or the men of the "new learning," in the reign of Henry VIII., it might perhaps have been expected that they would have learned to respect the rights of conscience; but experience proved the contrary. They had no sooner obtained the ascendancy during the short reign of Edward, than they displayed the same persecuting spirit which they had formerly condemned.

Unhappily this was an age of religious intolerance, when to punish the professors of erroneous doctrine was inculcated as a duty, no less by those who rejected than by those who asserted the Papal authority; and this is equally true of foreign religionists.\* Archbishop Cranmer had compiled a code of ecclesiastical discipline for the government of the Reformed church, by which it was declared to be heresy to believe in Transubstantiation, to admit the Papal supremacy, or to deny Justification by Faith only; and it was ordained that individuals accused of holding such heretical opinions should be arraigned before the spiritual courts, should be excommunicated on conviction, and after a respite of sixteen days, should, if they continued obstinate, be delivered to the civil magistrate, to suffer the punishment provided by law. Fortunately for the professors of the ancient faith, Edward died before the new canon law obtained the sanction of the legislature.

By the accession of Mary the sword passed into the hands of the men of the "old learning," and Cranmer and his associates perished in the flames which they had prepared for the destruction of their opponents. After the passing of the Act for re-uniting the churches, the Reformed preachers acted in numerous instances with great imprudence, and really provoked chastisement by the intemperance of their zeal. Fanaticism became rampant, and a new conspiracy was organized in the Counties of Cambridge, Suffolk, and Norfolk, and then the storm burst on their heads; and if anything could be urged in extenuation of the cruelties which they afterwards suffered, it is the provocation given by themselves. They heaped on the Queen, her Bishops, and her religion, every indecent and irritating epithet which language could

\* See Calvin, de supplicio Surveti; Beza, de Hæreticis a civili magistratu puniendis; and Melancthon, in locis Com., c. xxxii., de Ecclesia.

supply. Her clergy could not exercise their functions without danger to their lives. A dagger was thrown at one priest in the pulpit; a gun was discharged at another; and several wounds were inflicted on a third, while he administered the communion in his church. Some congregations prayed for the death of the Queen; tracts of the most libellous and abusive character were transmitted from the exiles in Germany; and successive insurrections were planned by the fugitives in France. "For the better preservation of the peace of the realm," several of the preachers, with the most zealous of their disciples, were tried and executed for heresy; and amongst them Cranmer, Ridley, and Latimer, each of whom had been concerned in the rebellion of Wyat. Many of the Reformed clergy sought an asylum in foreign climes, but the Lutheran Protestants refused to receive them, styling them heretics, because they rejected the corporal presence of Christ in the Eucharist. They, however, met a cordial reception from the disciples of Calvin and Zuinglius, and obtained permission to open churches in Strasburg, Frankfort, Geneva, Zurich, Basle, and Arau.

The Reformed writers have described in glowing colours the sufferings, and sought to multiply the number of the victims of persecution in this reign; while the Catholics have maintained that the reader should distrust the exaggerations of men heated with enthusiasm, and exasperated by oppression. The most impartial writers state that, after expunging from the catalogue of the martyrs the names of all who were condemned as felons or traitors, or who died peaceably in their beds, or who survived the publication of their martyrdom, or who would for their heterodoxy have been sent to the stake by Reformed prelates themselves, had they been in possession of the power, the number of persons that suffered for religious opinion in the space of four years, was nearly two hundred. And yet these deductions and allowances take but little from the infamy of the measure. The persecution continued at intervals till the death of the Queen, which occurred in 1558.

Mary's successor on the throne was the Princess Elizabeth, another daughter of Henry VIII., by his second wife, Anne Bulleyn, or Boleyn. During the reign of her sister, Elizabeth professed to be a most zealous Catholic. She attended mass and could count her beads with the rapidity and devotion of a saint. Yet, notwithstanding these outward appearances, Queen Mary knew the treachery and deception of her heart, and was never confident of her actions. She long suspected Elizabeth's conduct, and when dying, requested that she would no longer deceive her as to her real character. With a great oath, Elizabeth said, she hoped "the earth would open and swallow her up, if she were not in heart and soul a Catholic."

No sooner, however, was Elizabeth Queen, than she dismissed from office all those who were not after her way of thinking, and re-established the Protestant religion.

In the second session of Parliament in this reign, the obligation of taking the oath of supremacy (the administration of which had hitherto been confined to persons seeking preferment in the Church, or accepting office under the Crown) was extended to others; and the first refusal was made an offence punishable by premunire, and the second by death, as in cases of treason. This measure, which evidently aimed at the total extinction of the ancient creed, met with considerable opposition from many Protestants, who questioned both its justice and its policy; but after a long struggle it was carried by the efforts of the ministers; and had its provisions been strictly carried into execution, the scaffolds in every part of the Kingdom would have been drenched with the blood of the sufferers. The Convocation, which had assembled, according to ancient custom, at the same time with the Parliament, now drew up a new creed, chiefly founded upon that formerly published by the authority of Edward VI. This important work, called the *Thirty-nine Articles*, as they now exist, received the subscriptions of the two Houses of Convocation in 1562. But what a strange and inconsistent being is man! The framers of the *Thirty-nine Articles* could not have forgotten the persecution of the last reign—many of them having suffered imprisonment or exile for their dissent from the established church; and yet, as if they had succeeded to the infallibility which they condemned, they refused to others the liberty of religious choice which they had arrogated to themselves. Instead of considering the newly drawn up articles, as merely the distinguishing doctrines of the church, recently established by law, they laboured to force them upon the consciences of others, by making it a crime, subject to the penalties of heresy, to question their truth. But the attempt was opposed by the Council, as being unnecessary as far as regarded Catholics, since they could at any moment be brought to the scaffold under the Act of Supremacy. The cruel penal laws, enacted in this reign for the extirpation of the Catholic religion, awarded the punishment of death in its most hideous form to him who should ordain a Catholic priest within the Kingdom. It was also death to a Catholic priest to enter the Kingdom from abroad; death to harbour such a priest; death to confess to such a priest; death for a priest to celebrate mass; and death for a Catholic to attend at mass.

But in addition to the Catholics, the Puritans (who derived their origin from some of the exiled ministers, who, during the reign of Mary, had imbibed the opinions of Calvin) were a perpetual cause of disquietude to the



Queen. They approved of much that had been done, and urged her to a further reformation. They objected to the superiority of the Bishops, and the jurisdiction of the episcopal courts; to the repetition of the Lord's Prayer, to the responses of the people, to the sign of the cross in the administration of baptism, to the ring and the words of the contract in that of marriage, to the observance of festivals, the chants of the psalms, the use of musical instruments in churches, and to the habits, "the very livery of the beast," worn by the ministers during the celebration of divine service.\* The Queen who had a rooted antipathy against the doctrines of the Puritans, and an insuperable jealousy of all their proceedings, erected a tribunal, called the High Commission Court, for the purpose of enquiring, on the oath of the person accused, and on the oaths of witnesses, of all heretical, erroneous, and dangerous opinions, &c. Catholics and Puritans alike felt the vengeance of this tribunal; many of the Puritan clergy being imprisoned and suspended. In 1571, not fewer than seven bills for a further reformation, were introduced into the House of Commons. To the Queen such conduct appeared an act of high treason against her supremacy; and on the dissolution of the Parliament the Lord Keeper, by her command, informed the Puritans, that she "did utterly disallow and condemn their folly, in meddling with things not appertaining to them, nor within the capacity of their understandings."†

A slight glance at the events of this reign reveals to us, that the subjects of the Queen were required to submit to the superior judgment of their Sovereign, and to practice that religious worship which she practised. Every other form of service, whether it were that of Geneva, in its evangelical purity, or the mass, with its supposed idolatry, was strictly forbidden, and both the Catholic and the Puritan were made liable to the severest penalties if they presumed to worship God according to the dictates of their consciences. But the experience of ages has shown that religious opinions are not to be eradicated by severities.

In 1569, the Catholics made a fruitless attempt in the north to restore their religion by assembling, to the number of 1,000 horse and 4,000 foot, under the command of Thomas Percy, Earl of Northumberland, and Charles Neville, Earl of Westmorland. The first object of the insurgents was to release the Queen of Scots from Tetbury, and endeavour to extort from Elizabeth a declaration that she (Mary) was next heir to the throne. The proclamations which they published, stated that they did not intend to attempt anything against the Queen, to whom they vowed unshaken allegiance.

\* Neal's Puritans, c. 4, 5. † D'Ewes's Journal, 161, 177.

Her Majesty is surrounded, says one of these documents, "by divers newe set-upp nobles, who not onlie go aboute to overthrow and put down the ancient nobilitie of the realm, but also have misused the Quene's Majistie's owne personne, and also have by the space of twelve yeares now past set-upp and mayntayned a new-found religion and heresie, contrary to God's word." Wherefore they called upon all true Englishmen to join with them in their attempt to restore the crown, the nobility, and the worship of God, to their former estate. "They saw around them examples of successful insurrection in the cause of religious liberty," says an impartial historian. "The Calvinists of Scotland had established their own creed in defiance of all opposition; the Calvinists of France had thrice waged war against their own Sovereign; both had been aided with men and money by the Queen of England. If this were lawful to other religionists, why might not they also draw the sword, and claim the rights of conscience."

The first meetings of the chief insurgents were held at the seat of the Earl of Northumberland, near Topcliffe; and they there entered into a correspondence with the Duke of Alva, Governor of the Low Countries, and obtained his promise of a reinforcement of troops, and a supply of arms and ammunition. Rumours of the intended insurrection having gone abroad, the two Earls were summoned to appear at Court to answer for their conduct. This order from the Queen precipitated the rising before they were fully prepared; for the leaders had already proceeded so far in their designs, that they dare not trust themselves in the Queen's hands. They determined to begin the insurrection without delay; and their first demonstration was made at Durham, where they had a mass celebrated in the Cathedral before several thousand people, and where they threw down the communion table, and tore the English prayer books into pieces. Thence they marched forward to Staindrop, Darlington, Richmond, and Ripon, restoring the ancient service in each place. At the latter town they assembled round the market cross on the 18th of November, and after putting Sir William Ingilby, who had opposed them, to flight, they proceeded to Knaresborough and Wetherby, and thence to Clifford Moor. They then marched towards York, but hearing that the Earl of Essex, Lord President of the North, was there with 5,000 effective men, they retired and laid siege to Barnard Castle. That fortress was under the command of Sir George Bowes and his brother, who, after a gallant defence of eleven days, capitulated on condition that the garrison should be allowed to march, with their arms and ammunition, to York; which they accordingly did. The Earl of Sussex, the Earl of Rutland, Lord Hunsdon, William, Lord Evers, and Sir Ralph Sadler, with their forces, to

the number of 7,000, now marched from York, against the rebels. On their approach, the leaders, through fear, fled into Scotland; the insurgents dispersed, but most of them were killed or captured in their flight. The failure of this enterprise involved many of the conspirators in ruin; and on Good Friday, the 27th of March, 1570, Simon Digby, of Aiskew, and John Fulthorpe, of Iselbeck, Esqrs.; also Robert Pennyman, of Stokesley, and Thomas Bishop, jun., of Pocklington, gentlemen (all of whom were taken, and imprisoned in York Castle), were drawn to Knavesmire, and there "hanged, headed, and quartered," and their heads, with four of their quarters, were placed on the four principal gates of the City, and the other quarters were set up in different other parts of the country. The Earl of Westmorland found means to escape from Scotland to Flanders; but the Earl of Northumberland was betrayed and given up by the Earl of Moreton, Viceroy of Scotland, and Lord Hunsdon, Governor of Berwick. He was conducted a prisoner to York, and beheaded on a scaffold erected for that purpose, in Pavement in that City, opposite the Church of St. Crux, on the 22nd of August, 1572, and his head was set upon a high pole over Micklegate Bar, where it remained about two years. His head appears not, however, to have been taken down by official authority; for, from a curious old MSS., written about that period, Allen quotes the following memorandum, "In the year 1574, the head of the Earl of Northumberland was stolen in the night, from Micklegate Bar, by persons unknown.† The Earl died avowing the Pope's supremacy, denying that of the Queen, and affirming the land to be in a state of schism, and her adherents no better than heretics.\* His body was buried in the Church of St. Crux, without any memorial, attended only by two of his men-servants, and three women. This was the last open attempt made to restore the Catholic religion in this Kingdom. Hume says great severity was exercised against such as had taken part in these rash enterprises; no less than sixty-six of them were hanged in Durham;‡ and about eight hundred persons are said, in the whole, to have suffered by the hands of the executioner. Between Newcastle and Wetherby, a distance of sixty miles in length by forty in breadth, there was not a town or village in which some of the inhabitants did not expire on the gibbet.

During the progress of this rebellion the City of York was in daily ex-

\* In the same manuscript it is stated that during this year a very considerable earthquake was experienced at York. It further states that about the same time a prison was erected on Ouse bridge, in the same City.

† Speed.

‡ Dr. Lingard says that no less than 800 suffered in the *County of Durham*.

pectation of a siege, as is abundantly proved by many curious entries in the Corporation Records. For example, on the 18th of November, it is ordered "that the Wardens do bring into the Citie all sties and ladders that may lie in the suburbs thereof, and the inhabitants do make their abode in the Citie thys troublesome time." On the 21st, it is directed, "that whensoever any alarm shal hapen within this Citie, no manner of men, women, ne children, shall make any showteyng, crying, nor noyse, but to keep silens."\* A City guard of one hundred men is also spoken of.

The many warm contests, with respect to trade and commerce, which took place between the City of York and the town of Kingston-upon Hull,—being for many years rivals in this respect—were amicably terminated by an agreement made and entered into on the 28th of June. 1577. On that day articles were agreed on between Hugh Greaves, the then Lord Mayor of York, and the citizens of the said City, on the one part; and John Thornton, Mayor of Kingston-upon-Hull, and the burgesses of the same, on the other part; by the mediation and before the Hon. Henry, Earl of Huntingdon, Lord President of the North. By this agreement all differences and disputes between the two parties finally terminated.

In the year 1568 an investigation into the charges made against the unfortunate Mary, Queen of Scotland, was held at York, before Commissioners appointed by Queen Elizabeth. These Commissioners were the Duke of Norfolk, the Earl of Sussex, and Sir Ralph Sadler. Mary was represented by Lesley, Bishop of Ross; the Lords Livingstone, Boyd, and Herries, and three others. During these conferences, which continued for several days, the City of York was the scene of active and intricate negotiation; but at length the proceedings were transferred to London. In 1585 many of the churches of York were united. In 1600 the City was again visited with a very serious earthquake, which greatly alarmed the inhabitants. On Thursday,† the 24th of March, 1603, Queen Elizabeth finished her long, prosperous, but rigorous and imperious reign. She died at her Manor of Richmond, in Surrey, in the seventieth year of her age, and forty-fifth of her reign, and was buried in Westminster, in the Chapel of Henry VII., where a stately monument is erected to her memory.‡

\* Memorials of the Rebellion of 1569, 8vo., London, 1840, p. 70.

† Stowe observes that this day of the week was fatal to King Henry VIII., and all his posterity; himself, his son Edward, and his daughters Mary and Elizabeth, having died on that day.

‡ The reign of Elizabeth was long and prosperous; and was somewhat conspicuous, too, for what Pennant calls its "romantic fooleries." Tilts and tournaments were the

Mary and her sister Elizabeth—two zealous promoters of rival creeds—are dead; and here we pause to ask, are the religions which these two Queens professed, to be charged with the excesses perpetrated in their reigns? By no means! far from it. This would be calumny of the blackest dye. If we attribute the persecutions in Mary's reign to the spirit of Catholicism, must we not, by the same rule, attribute the rigorous and protracted persecutions in the reign of Elizabeth, and all the diabolical penal laws, to the spirit of Protestantism? Assuredly we must. But both the Catholic and Protestant church equally deplore those direful persecutions, and most emphatically and unequivocally condemn the laws which countenanced them. To what then are these persecutions to be attributed? To the impiety of the age, the cruelty of individuals, and not to the religion of our forefathers, or the spirit of the reformed creed. And perhaps the cause may be discovered in the fact, that the extirpation of erroneous doctrine was inculcated as a duty, by the leaders of every religious party. Mary is called "bloody," but impartial writers tell us, that she only practised what the Reformers taught; and that it was her misfortune, rather than her fault, that she was not more enlightened than the wisest of her contemporaries.

The successor of Elizabeth was James VI. of Scotland (son of Mary Queen of Scots), who became James I. of England. That Monarch visited York in 1603, on his way from Scotland to London, to take possession of the Crown of England, and was received by the Lord Mayor and citizens with great magnificence, and splendid demonstrations of loyalty. The following quaint account of his reception at York, is from the pen of Mr. Edward Howes, the continuator of Stowe's Annals.

"On the 15th of April, 1603, his Majestie set forwards from Durham towards York, his train still increasing by the numbers of gentlemen from the south parts, that came to offer him fealty; whose love, although he greatly tendered, yet did their multitudes so oppress the country, and make provisions so dear, that he was fain to publish an inhibition against the inordinate and daily access of the people coming, that many were stopped in their way.

"The High Sheriffe of Yorkshire, very well accompanied, attended his Majestie to Master Inglebyes, beside Topcliffe, being about sixteen miles from Walworth, where the King had lain the night before, who with all joy and humility received his Majestie, and he rested there that night.

delight of "good Queen Bess." "At these, in her 66th year," says that author, "with wrinkled face, red perrwig, little eyes, hooked nose, skinny lips, and black teeth, she could suck in the gross flatteries of her favoured courtiers."

“The Lord Mayor and Aldermen of Yorke, upon certayne knowledge of the King's journey into England, with all dilligence consulted what was fittest to be done, for the receiving and entertayning so mighty and gracious a Sovereayne, as well within the Cittie, as at the outmost bounds thereof; as also what further service, or duteous respect, they ought to show his Majestie uppon so good and memorable an occasion as now was offered unto them; and thereupon they sent Robert Askwith, Alderman, unto Newcastle, and there in the behalfe of the Lord Mayor and citizens of Yorke, to make tender of their zealous love and dutie, for the which his Majestie gave them heartie thanks.

“And uppon Saturday, the 16th of April, John Robinson and George Bucke, Sherifes of Yorke, with their white roddes, being accompanied with an hundred citizens, and threescore other esquires, gentlemen, and others, the most substantial persons, being all well mounted, they received the King at the east end of Skip Bridge, which was the utmost boundes of the libertyes of the Cittie of Yorke; and there kneeling, the Sherifes delivered their white roddes unto the King, with acknowledgment of their love and allegiance unto his Majestie, for the which the King, with cheerfull countenance thanked them, and gave them their roddes agayne; the which they carried all the way upright in their handes, ryding all the way next before the sergeant at armes.

“And before the King came to the Cittie, his Majestie had sent Syr Thomas Challenor to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, to knowe who formerlye had borne the sworde before the Kinges of England at their coming to Yorke; and to whom of right that office at that tyme appertayned, because it had been anciently performed by the Earls of Cumberland, as hereditary to that house, but was now challenged by the Lord President of the North, for the tyme being, as proper to his place. But upon due search and examination it was agreed, that the honour to bear the sworde before the King in Yorke, belonged unto George, Earle of Cumberland, who all the while the King was in Yorke, bare the sworde, for so the King willed, and for that purpose sent Syr Thomas Challenor agayne to the Lord Mayor, and the Lord Mayor bare the great mace of the Cittie, going always on the left hand of the Earle.

“And when the King came to the Cittie, which was well prepared to give his Highness and his royal traine entertaynement, then the Lord Mayor, with the twelve Aldermen in their scarlet robes, and the four-and-twenty in crimson gownes, accompanied with many others of the gravest menne, met the King at Micklegate Bar, his Majestie going betweene the Duke of Lennox and Lord Hume; and when the King came near to the scaffold where the

Lord Mayor, with the Recorder, the twelve Aldermen, and the four-and-twenty, were all kneeling, the Lord Mayor said, 'Most high and mightie Prince, I and my brethren do most heartilie wellcome your Majestie to your Highness' Cittie, and in token of our duties, I deliver unto your Majestie all my authoritie of this your Highness' Cittie,' and then rose uppe and kissed the sworde, and delivered it into the King's hand, and the King gave it to the Duke of Lennox, who, according to the King's appointment, delivered it unto the Earle of Cumberland, to bear before his Majestie.

"The Lord Mayor also delivered up the keyes of the Cittie, which the Lord Hume received and carried them to the Manor. And when the Recorder had ended his grave oration on behalfe of the Cittie, then the Lord Mayor, as the King commanded, took horse, and bare the Cittie mace, ryding on the left hande of the Earle of Cumberland, who bare the sword of the Cittie, and so attended his Majestie to St. Peter's Church, and was there royally received by the Deans, Prebends, and the whole quyer of singing menne of that Cathedral church in their richest copes. At the entrance into the church, the Dean made a learned oration in Latin, which ended, the King ascended the quyer. The canapa was supported by six Lordes, and was placed in a throne prepared for his Majestie, and during divine service there came three sergeants at armes with their maces, pressing to stand by the throne, but the Earle of Cumberland put them down, saying, that place, for that tyme, belonged to hym and the Lord Mayor, and not to them.

"Divine service being ended, the King returned in the same royal manner he came; the canapa being carried over him into the Manor of St. Maryes, where the Lord Burleigh and Council gave their attendance, and received his Majestie, where Dr. Bennet having ended his eloquent oration, the King went into his chamber, the sworde and mace being there borne by the Earle and Lord Mayor, who left the sword and mace there that night; and when the Lord Mayor was to depart, the Lord Hume delivered him agayne the keyes of the Cittie.

"The next day, being Sundai, the 17th of April, the Lord Mayor, with the Recorder, the Aldermen and Sheriffes, and the twentyefoure, with all their chief officers, and the Preacher of the Cittie, and Town Clerk, in very comely order, went into the Manor, of whome, as soone as the King had knowledge of their coming, willed that so many of them as the roome would permit should come into the privy chamber, where the Lord Mayor presented his Majestie with a fayre cuppe, with a cover of silver and gilt, weighing seventie and three ounces, and in the same two hundred anjels of gold; and the Lord Mayor sayde, 'Most high and mightie Prince, I and my brethren,

and all the whole commonaltie of this your Highnesse Cittie, present unto your most excellent Majestie this cuppe and golde, in token of the dutifull affection wee bear your Highnesse in our hearts, most humbly beseeching your Highnesse favourable acceptance thereof, and your most gracious favour to this your Highnesse Cittie of York;’ the which his Majestie graciously accepted, and sayde unto them, ‘God will bless you the better for your good will towards your King.’ The Lord Mayor humbly besought the King to dine with him the next Tuesday; the King answered, he should ride thence before that time, but he would break his fast with him in the next morning.

“This Sundai the King went to the Minster, and heard a sermon, made by the Dean,\* who was Bishop of Limerick, in Ireland. The Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Sherifes, and foure and twentye attended upon the King, the Earle still bearing the sworde, the Lord Mayor the mace, and the Sherifes bearing their rodde, as well within the church as in the streets, marching before the King into the Manor. The next day, being Mondai, at nine o’clock, the Lord Mayor came to the Manor, being accompanied and attended by the Recorder, Aldermen, and foure and twentye, and others, and attended there; and at ten of the clock, the King, with his royal traine, went to the Lord Mayor’s house, and there dined; after dinner the King walked to the Dean’s house, and was there entertayned with a banquette, at the Deanerie; the King took horse, and passed through the Cittie forth at Micklegate towards Grimstone, the house of Sir Edward Stanhope, the Earle of Cumberland and the Lord Mayor bearing the sworde and mace before the King, until they came to the house of St. Kathren, at which place the Earle said, ‘Is it your Majesty’s pleasure that I deliver the sworde agayne unto my Lord Mayor, for he is now at the utmost partes of the Liberties of this Cittie?’ Then the King willed the Earle to deliver the Mayor his sworde agayne. Then the Mayor alighted from his horse, and kneeling, took his leave of the King, and the King pulling off his glove, took the Mayor by the hande, and gave him thanks, and so rode towards Grimstone, being attended by the Sherifes to the middle of Tadcaster bridge, being the utmost bounds of their Liberties. The next day the Lord Mayor, according as he was commanded by a nobleman, came the next morning unto the Court at Grimstone, accompanied by the Recorder, and foure of his brethren, viz.—William Robinson, James Birkbie, William Greenburie, and Robert Askwith, and certain chief officers of the Cittie; and when his Majestie understood of their coming, he willed that the Mayor, and Master Robinson, and Master Birkbie should be brought

\* Dr. Thornborough.



up into his bed-chamber; and the King saide, 'My Lord Mayor, our meaning was to have bestowed upon you a knighthood in your own house, but the companie being so great, we rather thought it good to have you here;' and then his Majestie knighted the Lord Mayor,\* for which honour the Lord Mayor gave his Majestie most humble and heartie thanks, and returned."

Hildyard, in his *Antiquities of York*, tells us that the King was much pleased with the loyalty and affection paid him by the Lord Mayor and citizens, and that at dinner with them, he expressed himself much in favour of the City, and promised that he, himself, would come and be a burgesse among them; and that their river, which was in a bad condition, should be made navigable. From another source we learn that before the King left York, he ordered all prisoners in the City to be set at liberty, "wilful murderers, traitors, and papists being excepted."

In the June following, his Queen, and their two eldest children, Prince Henry, and Lady Elizabeth, visited York on their road from Edinburgh to London, and met with a reception equally cordial. The royal party arrived in York on the Whitsun Eve, and on the following Wednesday departed for Grimston, &c. On this occasion the Lord Mayor and citizens presented to the Queen a large silver cup, with a cover double gilt, weighing forty-eight ounces, with eighty gold angels in it; to the Prince, a silver cup, with a cover double gilt, weighing twenty ounces, and £20. in gold; and to the Princess, a purse of twenty angels of gold. The King visited Pontefract in the same year, when he granted that Honour and Castle to the Queen, as part of her jointure.

In the second year of this reign (1604), the plague, which, during the preceding year had carried off 30,578 persons in London, raged to an alarming extent at York, no less than 3,512 of the inhabitants falling victims to it, though by the precautions used, it was not of long duration. To prevent the contagion from spreading into the country, stone crosses were erected in various parts of the vicinity of York, where the country people, without coming into the City, met the citizens, and sold them their commodities. Several of these crosses are yet remaining. The infected were sent to Hob Moor, and Horse Fair, where wooden booths were erected for them; and the Minster and Minster-Yard were close shut up. The Lord President's Courts were adjourned to Ripon and Durham, and many of the inhabitants removed from the City.

The year 1607 was remarkable for a severe frost, by which the river Ouse

\* Sir Robert Watter.

became almost a solid body of ice. Various sports were practised on it; and Drake says that a horse race was run on it from the Tower at Marygate end, under the great arch of the bridge, to the crane at Skeldergate postern. Seven years afterwards, there was so heavy a fall of snow in the month of January, during a frost of about eleven weeks, and when it was dissolved by a thaw, the Ouse overflowed its banks, and covered North Street and Skeldergate, so that the inhabitants were obliged to leave their houses. This inundation lasted ten days, and destroyed many bridges. It being the assize week, four boats were employed at the end of Ouse bridge to carry passengers across the river; and the same number were engaged in Walmgate to ferry over the Foss. A drought succeeded, which continued till August following, and caused a great scarcity of hay, beans, and barley.

In 1617 (August 10th), King James, with his nobles and knights, both English and Scotch, visited York, on his progress to Scotland. The Sheriffs of the City, clad in their scarlet gowns, and attended by one hundred young citizens on horseback, met his Majesty on Tadcaster Bridge, and escorted him to Micklegate Bar, where he was received and welcomed by the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commonalty, with the usual formalities; and a silver cup, value £36. 5s. 7d., was presented to him, and an elegant purse, of the value of £3., containing a hundred double sovereigns. The Recorder delivered a long oration, and on Ouse Bridge another speech was made to the King, by one Sands Percvine, a London poet, respecting the cutting of the river, and making it navigable. His Majesty then rode to the Minster, where he heard Divine Service, and thence retired to the Manor Palace, where he kept his Court.\*

The next day he dined at Sir George Young's house, in the Minster Yard, with Lord Sheffield, the Lord President, and after dinner, he created eight Knights, and examined the Cathedral and Chapter House, which he much admired. The following day his Majesty rode through the City, with all his train, to the Archbishop's Palace at Bishopthorpe, where he dined with Tobias Matthew, the Archbishop. After attending Divine Service in the Cathedral on Sunday, which was the 13th, "this sagacious Prince, the Solomon of the North, touched about seventy persons afflicted with the King's Evil." That day he, and his whole Court, dined with the Lord Mayor, and after dinner he knighted the Mayor,† and Serjeant Hutton, the Recorder. Next day the King rode to Sheriff Hutton Park, and there knighted several gentlemen. On Tuesday, the 15th of August, Dr. Hodgeson, Chancellor of

\* Nichol's Progresses of James I., vol. iii., p. 271. + Sir Robert Askwith.

the Church, and Chaplain to his Majesty, preached before him at the Manor Palace; and after sermon the King departed for Ripon, where he was presented with a gilt bowl, and a pair of Ripon spurs, which cost five pounds. On the 16th of April he slept at Aske Hall, the seat of T. Bower, Esq., whom he subsequently knighted at Durham. In March, 1625, James was seized with illness; his indisposition was at first considered a tertian ague; afterwards the gout in the stomach; but whatever was its real nature, under his obstinacy in refusing medicine, and the hesitation or ignorance of his physicians, it proved fatal, for he died on the 27th of the same month, in the fifty ninth year of his age; after a reign of twenty-two years over England, and over Scotland almost the whole of his life. Of his seven children, two only survived him; Charles, his successor on the throne, and Elizabeth, the titular Queen of Bohemia.

"James," writes Dr. Lingard, "though an able man, was a weak Monarch. His quickness of apprehension, and soundness of judgment, were marred by his credulity and partialities, his childish fears, and habit of vacillation. Eminently qualified to advise as a Counsellor, he wanted the spirit and resolution to act as a Sovereign. His discourse teemed with maxims of political wisdom, his conduct frequently bore the impress of political imbecility. If, in the language of his flatterers, he was the British Solomon; in the opinion of less interested observers, he merited the appellation given to him by the Duke of Sully, that of *the wisest fool in Europe*."\*

Charles I. ascended the throne when he was in his twenty-fifth year, and his disastrous reign will, through all time, occupy a distinguished place in the annals of England. During that eventful reign every part of the Kingdom was agitated by that mighty collision which arose between the monarchical and democratic branches of the legislature; but in the County of York, the shock was felt with greater violence than in any other county. Yorkshire was indeed shook to its centre by the contests which then took place between the prerogatives of the Crown and the privileges of the Parliament.

No county in England has witnessed more of the civil wars, to which the Kingdom, in former ages, was exposed, than this; and it is not a little remarkable that Yorkshire, which afforded the scene of action for the battle which decided the fate of the House of Lancaster, on the field of Towton, should have witnessed the overthrow of the House of Stuart on the field of Marston. Indeed, the military history of Yorkshire, from the earliest times to the end of the great civil war, which ended with the restoration of Charles II., is a study in itself well deserving of attention.

\* History of England, vol. ix., p. 232, Fep. 8vo.

A recent writer, in referring to the County of York as being the scene of numerous military encounters from the earliest ages, says, "It was in Yorkshire where the most powerful nation of the aboriginal Britons dwelt; where the Romans displayed their grandeur, and had their favourite station; where the Saxons first exhibited their valour against the Picts and Scots; where the roving Danes first gained a permanent establishment; and where the northmen sustained their greatest reverse, at Stamford Bridge. The Scottish invaders never sustained a more complete defeat than at Standard Hill. A more bloody battle never took place in England than that of Towton Field. Yet all these sink into insignificance, in their causes and consequences, compared with that of Marston Moor."\*

Entering upon the stage of action inexperienced and impolitic, at a period too in many respects highly unfavourable, Charles had difficulties of no ordinary character to encounter; yet, on the other hand, few Monarchs ever came to the Crown of England with a greater variety of favourable circumstances, in some respects, than he did. He saw himself in possession of a flourishing Kingdom—his right to that Kingdom undisputed—and strengthened by the alliance of the French King, whose sister he had recently married. But these circumstances were of little avail in the present critical posture of affairs. The supply granted by Parliament to his father, had not covered the moiety of the charges for which it had been voted, and James bequeathed to him debts amounting to £700,000. The accession, and marriage too, of the new King, had involved him in extraordinary expenses. It was, however, with cheerfulness and confidence that he threw himself on the bounty of his subjects. His first Parliament met on the 18th of June, and in this assembly he demanded the necessary supplies for carrying on the war of the Palatinate; but his request was answered with a petition for an enquiry into the grievances of the nation; and instead of granting the sums required, they employed their time in disputations and disagreeable complaints. To Charles those objections did not apply, which had always been opposed to the pecuniary demands of the late Monarch. It could not be said of him that he had wantonly plunged himself into debt, or that he had squandered among his minions the revenues of the Crown. The money which he solicited was required to carry into execution the vote of the last Parliament; and those who advised the war, could not reasonably refuse the funds necessary for the maintenance of that war. In the House of Peers many of the Lords, though not formally opposed to the

\* Battle Fields of Yorkshire.

Court, looked with an evil eye on the ascendancy of George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham, and they were ready to vote for any measure, which, by embarrassing the Government, might precipitate the fall of the favourite. In the Commons the Puritans formed a most powerful phalanx. Austere to themselves, intolerant to others, they sought to reform both church and state, according to their peculiar notions of scriptural doctrine and scriptural practice. The spirit of liberty, too, had been diffusing itself widely amongst the people, who, by consequence, were determined to oppose the ancient, and, in many instances, exorbitant claims of their Monarchs; and the principles of freedom, which they had been imbibing, would no longer allow them to be governed by precedents that had their origin in the times of ignorance and slavery. Such was the state and temper of the public mind when Charles met his first Parliament; which assembly he thought proper to dissolve as soon as he discovered their intention of refusing his just demands.

He then issued a Commission to raise money by borrowing of such persons as were able to lend; and privy seals were issued out to all persons of substance. The Commissioners (who were noblemen) appointed to collect the loan, visited the various towns in the Kingdom, and at the town halls, or other public buildings of each place, called the opulent inhabitants before them, and read the commission to them, setting forth the reasons which the King alleged for requiring the loan. The Commissioners then took the names of the parties, with the amount of their subscription, or sum imposed upon them, together with the names of those who exhibited a disposition to excuse the payment of the sums imposed. In many places the loan was reluctantly complied with, and occasioned considerable disgust, for though the proceeding was authorized by many precedents, it was not less a grievance. At that period the payment of all fees and salaries was suspended; and to such a state of destitution was the royal household reduced, that, to procure provisions for his table, the King was obliged to borrow £3,000. of the Corporations of Salisbury and Southampton, on the joint security of the Lord Treasurer and of the Chancellor of the Exchequer.\*

The second Parliament met, and was dissolved by the King, without granting the necessary supplies to carry on a war which was entered into by the advice, and at the request, of those very members who now refused to contribute to its proper support. The King was therefore again obliged to have recourse to loans; and a Commission was granted to the Archbishop of York, and others, to compound with the Catholics, and agree to dispense

\* Rushworth, vol. i., pp. 196, 197. Rymer, xviii., p. 181. Sydney Papers, iii., 363.

with the penal laws enacted against them, for stipulated sums of money.\* At that time the Corporations of the maritime towns received orders to provide a certain number of armed vessels, in order to equip a fleet. Many of the seaports complied with this request with great reluctance; and the fleet thus collected, and which consisted of about 100 ships, having on board 7,000 soldiers, sailed from Portsmouth on the 7th of June, 1627. But instead of being sent against the King of Spain, to the surprise of almost all his subjects, the King now resolving with a rupture with France, sent the fleet, under the command of the Duke of Buckingham, on a fruitless expedition for the relief of La Rochelle, a maritime town in that Kingdom.

In the third year of this reign, the Lord Lieutenants of all the counties of England had orders to put each province and district into a posture of defence; also to be careful that the trained bands (a species of militia) were perfectly instructed in the use of arms; and to see that all able men, from sixteen to sixty years of age, were enrolled, that on any sudden occasion, such levies might be made of them as should be required. They were likewise to take special care that every county provided its share of powder, ball, match, lead, &c., and to put them into magazines for the use of their respective counties and Corporations, to be ready whenever they were called for.

Soon after this the King and the Lords of his Privy Council received intelligence that the French were fitting out a great fleet, with which to invade England, and that the Dunkirkers were likewise making extraordinary preparations. Orders were now sent to the inhabitants of the different towns in the country, to put them into a proper state of defence, with all possible dispatch. The Duke of Buckingham, who had all along ruled the King's Councils, was about this time stabbed at Portsmouth, by John Felton, a lieutenant in the army, who immediately declared himself the murderer, and averred that he considered the Duke an enemy to his country, and, as such deserving to suffer.

A tax, called tonnage and poundage, was now levied by the King, on all merchant ships and goods, without the consent of Parliament, as a right belonging to the Crown. In London, where the spirit of resistance had already risen to a considerable height, many of the merchants refused to pay this tax, alleging that it could only be granted by the Parliament. For persisting in this refusal, some merchants had their goods seized by the officers of the King's customs, and were themselves thrown into prison. The contest between privilege and prerogative was now carried on with great acrimony.

\* Whitelock, p. 7.

The Parliament, on its being assembled, warmly remonstrated against the King's proceedings, and voted the following protestation:—That whosoever should bring in innovation of religion, popery, or arminianism, and any that should advise the taking of tonnage and poundage, not granted by Parliament, or that should pay the same, shall be accounted enemies to the Kingdom. This protestation was made on the last day of their sitting, and whilst it was being voted the door of the House of Commons was locked, and the Speaker was forcibly held in his chair. During this extraordinary proceeding the King had come to the upper house, and sent for the serjeant-at-arms, who was not permitted to obey; he then ordered the usher of the black rod to deliver a message from his own mouth; and that officer having been refused permission to enter the House of Commons, was commanded by the King to break open the door; but at that very moment the Commons adjourned to the 10th of March. The King, incensed at these proceedings, ordered the arrest of several of the most violent of the opposition members, and dissolved the Parliament without sending for the Commons. The opponents of the King now charged him, his ministers, and judges, with a design to trample under foot the liberties of the people; and Charles was firmly convinced that they had conspired to despoil him of the rightful prerogatives of the Crown. The Parliament had disobeyed, thwarted, and insulted him repeatedly, so he resolved to govern for the future without the intervention of the Parliament. And this intention he announced by proclamation. "We have showed," he said, "by our frequent meeting our people, our love to the use of Parliaments; yet the late abuse having for the present driven us unwillingly out of that course, we shall account it presumption for any to prescribe any time unto us for Parliaments, the calling, continuing, and dissolving of which is always in our power, and shall be more inclinable to meet in Parliament again, when our people shall see more clearly into our interests and actions."\* This measure served only to aggravate the discontents of the people, who justly considered many of his actions as the exertions of arbitrary power.

In 1630 the King sent forth a proclamation against vile insinuations, and lying, treasonable and rebellious reports, industriously spread to render his government odious to his people; and some time after he sent orders to the towns that the inhabitants should have a watchful eye over all factious persons, and take care of the safety of their towns. Both Charles and Laud, his adviser, had been accused by the Puritans of harbouring a secret design

\* Rymer, xix., p. 62.

to restore the ancient creed and worship; but the charge was groundless. Those who made it in their intolerant zeal, mistook moderation for apostacy. But Charles conceived it expedient to silence the murmurs of his enemies; so he carefully excluded all English Catholics from the Queen's Chapel at Somerset House; he offered in successive proclamations a reward of £100. for the apprehension of Dr. Smith, the Catholic Bishop; and he repeatedly ordered the Magistrates, Judges, and Bishops to enforce the penal laws against the priests and jesuits.

In the early part of the year 1633, Charles, in imitation of his father, resolved to visit his native country; more especially as some of his Scotch subjects had intimated that he thought their Crown not worth a journey; and as he had some reason to be apprehensive of secret designs amongst them. He was accompanied by a gallant train of English noblemen; and in his progress to the north he visited York, and there received a loyal and cordial welcome. He was met on the 24th of May, on Tadcaster Bridge, by the Sheriffs, with 120 attendants, who conducted him to the City. At Micklegate Bar the Lord Mayor, Recorder, and Aldermen, standing on a platform erected for that purpose, saluted him at his entrance, and the Lord Mayor, on his knees, at the same time delivered up the keys of the City, together with the sword and mace. These, however, were immediately returned, and the Lord Mayor, mounted on horseback, carried the mace before his Majesty; the Aldermen, richly dressed, and well mounted, made up the cavalcade, riding before the King to the Manor House, or Palace. The next day the King dined with the Lord Mayor, at his house in the Pavement, and knighted him,\* and the Recorder.† The following day he dined with the Archbishop, and knighted his son; and on the fourth day he departed for Scotland. During his stay at York, a large silver cup and cover, and a purse, containing £100., were presented to him. At Edinburgh he was solemnly crowned, with every appearance of affection and duty; and in a Parliament then held, though the Scotch strenuously defended the liberties of the Kirk, yet they voted a supply to Charles, who, after a stay of five weeks in Scotland, returned to the Queen, who then resided at Greenwich. During this tour Charles visited Pontefract, where he created Sir John Saville, knt., High Steward of the Honour of Pontefract; and by letters patent elevated him to the Peerage, by the title of Baron Savile, of Pontefract. His son was created Earl of Sussex, but the family became extinct in his grandson James.

During the six years which followed his return from Scotland, England

\* Sir William Allenson. † Sir William Belt.



appeared to enjoy a calm. Charles governed without a Parliament; and not only took no pains to allay, but he rather inflamed that feverish irritation which the illegality of his past conduct had excited in the minds of his subjects. Nor was he ignorant of their dissatisfaction; no, he saw it, and despised it; and believing firmly in the divine right of Kings, he doubted not that he would be able to bear down the force of public opinion by the mere weight of the royal prerogative.

About the year 1635, the coasts of England were very much infested by pirates from different parts, including the Dunkirkers, and some even from Salee and Algiers, who, every summer, committed great depredations, seizing ships, carrying off prisoners, and injuring the trade of the nation. The Dutch and French mariners, too, had assumed a right to fish on our coasts, a proceeding which occasioned much controversy. Charles determined to fit out a fleet, and end the dispute by force, and for this purpose, and acting on the advice of his Attorney-General Noy, he imposed a tax upon his subjects, under the denomination of *Ship-money*. Though all the judges declared this tax to be customary and legal, yet the nation murmured at it, and paid it with reluctance, considering it illegal, because it had not the sanction of Parliament. This was the tax that first roused the whole Kingdom, and determined numbers to fix the bounds, both of the King's prerogative, and their own freedom; and in reality was one of the chief causes of the King's ruin. Aided with this tax, however, Charles fitted out a fleet of forty sail of ships, under the command of the Earl of Lindsey, and a squadron of twenty ships, under the Earl of Essex. This fleet very effectually scoured the narrow seas, and protected the trade of England; and the merchants, whose commercial interests had of late so greatly suffered, submitted to pay the tax which they disliked.

In 1639 the Scotch were in arms against their Sovereign. They had in that Kingdom long embraced the Presbyterian form of church government, and though Bishops were still continued, yet they were treated with very little respect or attention. James I. had used his utmost endeavours to impose Bishops upon the Scots, but died before he could carry that design into actual execution; and Charles, in an unfortunate hour, resolved to complete what his father had begun. Whitlocke tells us, that this ill-judged attempt to force the rites and liturgy of the Church of England upon that people, "was the fountain from whence our ensuing troubles sprung." The Scots now entered into their celebrated League and Covenant, the great object of which was to suppress episcopacy, and, if necessary, to resist the King's authority in imposing it. Charles, looking upon this procedure as an open

declaration of war, immediately levied an army of 22,000 men, and marched on an expedition against the insurgents. He left London on the 27th, and arrived at York on the 30th of March, 1639, and there he was received with every demonstration of loyalty. He was met at Tadcaster Bridge by the Sheriffs, who conducted him to Micklegate Bar, where the trained bands of the City and Ainsty, clothed in buff coats, scarlet breeches, laced with silver, russet boots, black caps and feathers, and amounting to about six hundred in number, were drawn up and fired a volley at his entrance into the City. Here he was received by the Lord Mayor and Aldermen with the usual solemnity, and the Recorder, on his knees, having delivered one of those fulsome flattering orations so peculiar to that age, his Majesty was conducted with great pomp through the City to the Palace of the Manor. On the following day (Sunday) the trained bands formed a lane, rank and file, for the King to pass through as he went to the Cathedral; and their appearance and conduct so gratified him, that he distributed a sum of money amongst them, and also returned them his thanks in person.

York and its vicinity being the principal rendezvous for the royal army, the King spent nearly a month in that City. "He went to York," says Guizot, in his *History of the English Revolution*, "surrounded with extraordinary pomp, still infatuated with the irresistible ascendancy of royal majesty, and flattering himself that to display it would suffice to make the rebels return to their duty. The Lords, and a crowd of gentlemen, flocked to York as to a festival. The town and camp presented the appearance of a Court and tournament, not at all that of an enemy and of war. Charles's vanity was delighted with such display."

During this visit the King kept the festival of Maunday Thursday (the Thursday before Easter) in the Cathedral, when the Bishop of Ely washed the right feet of thirty-nine poor aged men, in warm water, and dried them with a linen cloth. Afterwards the Bishop of Winchester washed them over again in white wine, wiped and kissed them. This part of the ceremony was performed in the south aisle of the Minster. His Majesty then gave to each of the poor men several articles of wearing apparel, including shoes and stockings; also a wooden scale full of claret wine, a jole of salt fish, and a sixpenny loaf of bread. He likewise gave them a leathern purse each, containing twenty shillings in money, and in another thirty-nine silver pennies, being the number of his own years. On the following day (Good Friday), Drake tells us, that he touched for the King's evil no fewer than two hundred persons in the Minster; and, "during the tyme the King touched those that had the disease called the evil," writes that historian, "were read

these words, 'They shall lay their hands upon the sick and they shall recover;' and during the tyme the King put about every one of their necks an angel of gold, with a white ribbon, were read these words, 'That light was the true light which lighteneth every man which cometh into the world.'"\*

On Easter Monday the King ordered seventy pounds to be given to each of the four wards of the City, to be distributed amongst poor widows; and on the two following days he touched, each day, one hundred persons for the evil, but with what success the historian very discreetly chooses not to disclose.

Whilst at York Charles paid a visit to Hull, where he was received with the greatest demonstrations of loyalty and joy. The Mayor, Aldermen, and Recorder met him at Beverley Gate, and went through great formalities, the gentry and principal inhabitants being splendidly arrayed in their best attire. All exhibited the greatest marks of joy and sincere affection at that very gate where he afterwards met with a reception of very different nature. Mr. Thorpe, the Recorder (afterwards a Judge, and very inimical to the King), as the organ of the Corporation, addressed him in one of those hyperbolic and adulatory speeches which bodies corporate are so prone to offer to Majesty. He told him that the town of Kingston-upon-Hull was always faithful and true, and that in respect of the zealous and loyal affections of the people, it was "not only walled, but also garrisoned with fire; not dead, nor sleeping; not unanimated, like senseless flints, but continually vivacious, waking, ardent, apparent, and sensible in their courageous and boiling heat for his Majesty's long life, welfare, and happiness; so that as the town was not only his by name but also by nature, so it should ever remain to be."

After reminding him that he had there a magazine of all military provisions of his own royal collecting, he was told by the Recorder that he had at Hull, "a richer, a more noble, and safe prize, even a magazine of hearts, faithful and true, extending the whole town over, which renders it stronger for his Majesty's service, than if it was encompassed with walls of brass and iron." This fulsome address, in which the King was also told that it was more difficult to address him than to address the King of Kings, concluded thus:—"May your Majesty live for ever and ever, and may all the thorns in your travels grow up into crowns; may your battles be always crowned with laurels; and may good success always attend your actions and desires. May years be added unto your days, and length of time, till time shall be no more; and that your continuance amongst us may be still an ornament and blessing

to the present age, and an eternal admiration, blessing, and glory, to all that are yet to come."

This bombastic speech being ended, the Mayor welcomed his Majesty to his "royal town of Hull," and with much ceremony delivered up to the King that emblem of royalty, the mace, together with the sword and the keys of the town gates, all of which were, of course, returned with a suitably reply. The Mayor then presented him with a rich and elegant ribbon, several yards long, saying, "Vouchsafe, great Sir, to accept the emblematic bond of our obedience, which is tied as fast to your Majesty, your crown, and the church, as our souls are to our bodies, and we are resolved never to part from the former until we part from the latter." The King ordered the ribbon to be tied in a knot, and he afterwards wore it in his hat, calling it his "Hull Favour." A purse of curious workmanship, containing one hundred guineas, was also presented to his Majesty. The Mayor then on horseback, carrying the mace on his shoulder, escorted the King and his numerous retinue to the quarters prepared for them, amidst the loud acclamations of the people, the soldiery, and the trained bands, with which the streets were lined. The King was sumptuously entertained, and lodged that night at the house of Sir John Lister (now Wilberforce House, High Street), and in the morning he took an accurate survey of the fortifications of the town, and the defensive works which were then going forward. That night his Majesty lodged at Beverley, and the next day he reached York. Before he left the latter City, he and his whole Court dined with the Lord Mayor, on whom, together with the Recorder, he conferred the honour of Knighthood.

Having spent nearly a month at York, Charles, and his nobles, at the head of the army, proceeded against the Scots. Had the King at this juncture exerted himself with vigour and decision against the malcontents, his army being superior to theirs, it is probable that he might have prevented many of his succeeding misfortunes; but instead of fighting, he unwisely entered on a treaty at Berwick; and terms were agreed on, which neither side cared much to preserve. The Covenanters swore obedience to him, but the very next year, when the King had disbanded his forces, they raised the standard of rebellion, entered England under the command of General Leslie (created afterwards Earl of Leven), and the Marquis of Montrose, and proceeding to the borders of Yorkshire, they levied a weekly contribution of £5,600. upon the inhabitants of the northern counties, and threatened soon to occupy the City of York.

To arrest the progress of the invaders, the King came in three days from London to York, where he was again received with the usual gifts, speeches,

and ceremonies, and on the 7th of September (1640), he issued out writs to summon all the peers of the realm to a great Council to be held at York. The royal army, commanded by Sir Jacob Astley, and consisting of about 12,000 foot and 3,000 horse, arrived on the same day that the writs were issued; and being divided into divisions, one body was encamped in Clifton Fields and the other in Bishop Fields, on each side of the Ouse, and a bridge of boats was thrown over the river. About fifty pieces of cannon, with 132 waggons loaded with powder and ball, together with several carriages filled with pick axes, spades, shovels, &c., were brought at the same time from the magazines at Hull. This proceeding naturally spread an alarm through the country, that the King intended to lay aside one of the three estates of the realm, and to govern the nation without a House of Commons. The King's position at this juncture was exceedingly unpleasant and critical. Twice had the Commons refused to grant him supplies to carry out his wars. Twice had he abruptly dissolved that assembly, measures which greatly increased the discontent of the people. Ship money and some other arbitrary taxes had been exacted with severity, and many of his subjects made large advances to him from their private fortunes, and amongst this number was the celebrated Earl of Strafford, Lord Lieutenant of the North, who gave his Majesty £20,000.; but these resources were still insufficient to carry on the war against the presumptuous Scots. Such was the distressed condition in which Charles found himself when he returned to York and called a general Council of his nobles; the nation was discontented, the army discouraged, the treasury exhausted, and every expedient for supply tried to the uttermost. On the 10th of September the King assembled the gentlemen of Yorkshire, and proposed their paying the trained bands for two months, to which they assented. Petitions now poured in upon his Majesty, beseeching him to summon a Parliament, and the gentry of this County pressed the measure upon him as the only means of restoring and ensuring a continuance of tranquillity. On the 24th of the same month, the great assembly of Peers met at the Deanery in York, the hall of which "was richly hung with tapestry for the purpose, and the King's chair of state was placed upon the half pace of the stairs at the upper end of the hall."\* In the opening speech the King announced his intention to call a Parliament in the course of the present year, and he asked council at the same time of the Peers, in what way to treat a petition for a redress of grievances which he had received from the Scotch invaders, and how his army should be kept on foot and main-

\* Drake's Eboracum, p. 140.

tained until the supplies from Parliament might be had for that purpose. During the sitting of the Council at York, which continued till the 18th of October, a negociation was entered into with the Scots, and Ripon was appointed as the place of conference.

This negociation was conducted by sixteen English peers and eight Commissioners appointed by the Covenanters. Under the pretence that this conference would prevent them from seeking more abundant quarters, the Scots boldly demanded a monthly subsidy of £40,000. The English Commissioners seeing that the King must ultimately yield, concluded separate bargains—one with the gentlemen of the north, who, on the faith of a solemn promise that they should be reimbursed out of the first supply granted by Parliament, consented to raise the weekly sum of £5,600. by county rates on the inhabitants of the four northern counties; and another with the Scots, who engaged as long as that subsidy were paid, to abstain from all acts of hostility, and from every species of compulsory demand. The treaty was immediately transferred to London, and the King and the Peers also hastened thither, that they might arrive in time for the opening of Parliament.

At this juncture, when the accumulated evils of thirty years of misgovernment brought the kingdom to the verge of a great revolution, Charles, on the 3rd of November, 1640, met that memorable assembly, which is called in history the *Long Parliament*, and which was speedily to contend with him for the sovereign authority. Its first acts were to oppose the King in the election of a speaker; to vote down the Council Court at York; and to present articles of impeachment against the President of that Court—the famous Wentworth, Earl of Strafford, and Archbishop Laud, the King's chief advisers; and to pronounce the commissions for the levy of ship-money, and all the proceedings consequent on those commissions, to be illegal. The Scottish Commissioners were received by the opponents of the King as friends and deliverers; and most of the demands of the Covenanters were granted; and while the patriots in the House of Commons engaged to support the Scottish army during its stay, and to supply it with a handsome gratuity on its departure, the Covenanters stipulated to prolong the treaty, and to detain their forces in England till the reforms in church and state, projected by the Puritans, should be fully accomplished. It soon appeared that the Scottish Commissioners acted not only in a political, but also in a religious character; and while they openly negotiated with the King, they were secretly but actively intriguing with the Puritans, to procure in England the abolition of the episcopal, and the substitution of the Presbyterian form of Church government.

The House of Commons not only refused to supply the King's necessities for the suppression of the insolence of his Scotch subjects, but it actually approved of the conduct of the rebels, and voted two sums, one of £125,000., for the charges of the Scottish army during five months, and another of £300,000., under the denomination of "a friendly relief for the losses and necessities of their brethren in Scotland."\*

"The government, which, in the hands of Charles, had assumed the character of an absolute monarchy, soon became democratical to a degree incompatible with the spirit of the Constitution. Lieutenants and Deputy Lieutenants of Counties, who had exercised powers for the national defence, not authorized by statute, were declared *delinquents*. Sheriffs who had been employed to assess ship money, and the jurors and officers of the customs, who had been employed in levying tonnage and poundage, as well as the holders of monopolies by patents, were brought under the same vague charge, and the latter were expelled from Parliament. The judges who had given their votes against Hampden, in the trial of ship-money, were accused before the peers, and in a few weeks such a revolution was produced in the Government, by the House of Commons, seconded by the Peers, that the kingly power, which had been almost omnipotent, was in danger of being reduced to insignificance. These measures naturally placed the Parliament at issue with the King, and the differences between the conflicting authorities continued to increase during the years 1640 and 1641, till an open rupture became unavoidable."†

In the year 1641 the King, accompanied by the Prince of Wales, afterwards Charles II.; the Palsgrave of the Rhine; the Duke of Lennox; the Marquis of Hamilton; and several other noblemen, visited York on his way to Scotland, where he had summoned a Parliament on the 15th of July, in order to ascertain their dispositions towards him. On the day after his arrival at York, he dined with the Lord Mayor,‡ and knighted both him and the Recorder.§ Conceiving that his person was in danger, the King demanded a guard from the freeholders of Yorkshire, for his protection, which was readily granted.

The Commons had already stripped him of many of those prerogatives which he had oppressively exercised; and the royal authority was so reduced, that its total abolition seemed inevitable. The King was even deprived of the power of appointing Governors, Generals, and, in short, whatever related

\* Baillie, i., p. 240. † Baines's Gazetteer of Yorkshire.

‡ Sir Christopher Croft. § Sir Robert Berwick.

to the army; and that they might deprive him even of the shadow of his former authority, they demanded that the power of raising the militia, and the nomination of its officers, might be vested in them. To this last demand Charles gave a peremptory denial, and both parties from this time prepared for war.

Amongst the extraordinary events which excited the public mind at this period, was the commitment of twelve Bishops. The populace having become infuriated against the bench of Bishops, frequently assailed them with abuse and menaces on their way to the House. On one occasion the cries of vengeance in the Palace yard were so loud and alarming, that the prelates remained after the other lords, till the darkness of the night enabled them to steal away to their homes. The next day, Williams, Archbishop of York, prevailed on eleven other prelates to join with him in a declaration, which was read in the Upper House. It stated that the Bishops could no longer, without danger to their lives, attend to their duty in Parliament, and that they therefore protested against the validity of any proceedings which might be passed during their absence. This protest was heard with surprise and indignation. To retire or remain was at their option, but to claim the power of suspending by their absence the proceedings of Parliament, was deemed an assumption of sovereign authority. The Lower House ridiculously impeached the twelve prelates with high treason, Williams boldly professed his readiness to meet the charge, but the others, intimidated by the violence of the times, apologised for their conduct. Ten were committed from the House to the Tower; and two, the Bishops of Durham and Lichfield, on account of their age and infirmity, to the Usher of the black rod.\*

In the early part of the year 1642, the King gradually withdrew himself from the vicinity of the metropolis, first to Newmarket, then into the more northern counties, and on the 18th of March in the same year, he, with his son Prince Charles, his nephew the Prince Elector, and several noblemen, not without considerable risk, arrived in York, where most of the nobility and gentry of the north of England, and many from London and the southern parts of the Kingdom, came to testify their loyalty and offer him their services. On this occasion Charles resided and held his Court at York for five months, and then, in the month of August following, he and his partizans hurriedly left the City, and proceeded to raise his standard at Nottingham. During this stay at York, the state printing presses were erected in the house of Sir H. Jenkins, formerly St. William's College, in the yard near the

\* Rushworth, iv., p. 466. Clarendon, i., p. 350.



Minster. Notwithstanding the loss of the Courts of Presidency, which the Parliament had lately abolished, York was now the resort of the nobility and gentry, and it derived no small degree of its lustre from being the asylum of the legitimate Sovereign.

One of the principal objects of the King's journey to the north, according to Lord Clarendon, was to seize upon Hull, and to secure the vast magazine of that fortress, which consisted of all the arms and ammunition of the forces levied against the Scots, which far exceeded the collection of warlike stores in the Tower of London. With this view he sent the Earl of Newcastle to Hull to take possession of the town in his Majesty's name, but the authorities declined to receive the Earl. The two Houses of Parliament seemed to have penetrated into the King's design, for as soon as it was known that he was actually gone to York, they began to apprehend the town of Hull would be in danger, and therefore Sir John Hotham, the Governor, received the strictest orders not to allow foreign ships to enter the port without strict examination into their strength, burden, &c.; and to see that no English or other forces whatever should enter the town, but those already appointed to be the garrison there.

The 23rd of April, 1642, is a memorable period not only in the annals of Yorkshire, but in the history of the Kingdom, as on that day the Parliamentary party committed the first act of open hostility towards their Sovereign—an act which precluded that great civil war, which for the space of four years desolated England, and brought her Monarch to the block. Early in the morning of that day, the King, attended by his son Prince Charles, and about three hundred of his servants, as well as a great number of the County gentlemen, set out from York to Hull, and when he was within about four miles of that place, he despatched an officer (Sir Lewis Davis) to inform the Governor that he intended that day to dine with him. On receipt of this unexpected message, Sir John Hotham consulted with Mr. Pelham, the M.P. for Hull, and others of his friends, and the result of their conference was a fixed determination not to suffer the King to enter the town. They therefore sent a messenger “humbly to beseech his Majesty to decline his intended visit, since the Governor could not, without betraying the trust committed to him, set open the gates to so great a train as he was at present attended with.” The King incensed at this message continued to advance, and Sir John ordered the bridges to be drawn up, the gates to be closed, the soldiers to stand to their arms on the walls, the cannons to be charged, and the inhabitants to be confined to their houses till sunset. About eleven o'clock the King arrived at the Beverley Gate, and surprised to find all things in

readiness for the reception of an enemy, called for the Governor, who appearing on the walls, he commanded him, on his allegiance, to open the gate, and admit his Sovereign. But the Governor, with many professions of duty and several expressions of fear, told his Majesty "that he durst not open the gates to him, being entrusted by the Parliament with the safety of the town." The King told him, "that he believed he had no order from the Parliament to shut the gates against him, or to keep him out of the town;" to which he replied, "that his Majesty's train was so great, that if it were admitted he should not be able to give a good account of his trust to those that employed him." Charles then proposed to enter with twenty of his attendants only, and that the rest should stay without the gates, but this proposal was refused. The King then desired him "to come out of the gates that he might confer more particularly with him, and assured him, on his royal word, of safety and liberty to return," but this request also the Governor refused to comply with; whereupon his Majesty, in a spirited remonstrance, told him that for this gross act of disobedience, which was likely to cause much bloodshed and many calamities, he would immediately proclaim him a traitor, and proceed against him as such. Sir John, then falling upon his knees, talked confusedly of the trust he had received from the Parliament, and prayed "that God would bring confusion upon him and his, if he were not a faithful and loyal subject;" but in conclusion he plainly denied his Majesty admission into the town. The King continued before the gate till four o'clock, and having given Sir John one hour to take his final resolution, his Majesty returned to the gate, and receiving the same answer as before, he ordered two heralds at arms to proclaim the Governor a traitor, and all those who obeyed him guilty of high treason. Here was a change indeed! Three years since, the people of Hull were frantic with joy at the sight of their "royal master." The English language was found almost inadequate to the supply of words necessary for the formation of the fulsome compliments with which he was then greeted. Now he stood a suppliant before that same gate at which he then so proudly received the "Hull favour," and he craved admittance into his "royal town" in vain! Charles, being thus repulsed, lodged that night at Beverley, and the next morning he sent a herald to Sir John, summoning him once more to open the gates on pain of being proclaimed a traitor, but the herald, like his royal master, proved unsuccessful, and the King, filled with mortification and disappointment, was obliged to return to York.

Highly incensed at the affront put upon him, Charles immediately sent an express with a message to both Houses of Parliament, explanatory of his motives for going to Hull, and demanding justice against the Governor of

that place for his treasonable refusal to obey the royal commands; but instead of punishing that officer, or replying to the King's complaint, Parliament bestowed upon him and his supporters a vote of thanks; and passed a resolution to the effect, that as Sir John Hotham had done nothing but in obedience to the commands of the Houses of Lords and Commons, that the King's declaring him a traitor—being a member of the Lower House—was a high breach of the privilege of Parliament; and without due process of law was against the liberty of the subject and the law of the land. The Parliament then ordered two ships of war immediately to Hull, under the command of the Earl of Warwick; and a Committee of both Houses was sent into the north, to take care of those parts, and of Hull; and in particular to thank Sir John Hotham, the commanders and soldiers under him, together with such of the inhabitants as had shown a favourable disposition to the cause in which they were engaged; and to assure them that particular care should be taken to reward them according to their deserts.\*

On the 28th of April the King sent from York to both Houses of Parliament another message, demanding satisfaction against the Governor of Hull, and on the 5th of May a reply to his two messages was read in the House, and afterwards delivered to his Majesty with great formality. In this reply the Parliament attributed its conduct towards the King, to the influence, which they affected to fear, the wicked councils of "some in near trust and authority about him," would have upon his Majesty. They charged the King's friends, which they termed the malignant party, with drawing him into places of strength, remote from his Parliament; with exciting the people to commotions, under pretence of serving his Majesty against his Parliament; and they told the King that, "lest this malignant party, by the advantage of the town and magazine of Hull, should be able to go through with their mischievous intentions," that they commanded the town of Hull to be secured by a garrison, under the government of Sir John Hotham, requiring him to keep the same for the service of his Majesty and his Kingdom. Upon these grounds they justified Sir John Hotham's refusal to admit his Majesty, and declared him clear of the odious crime of treason. The garrison of Hull was then much augmented, so that there was little ground for hope that the King could obtain possession of it; indeed the probability was greater that Sir John Hotham should take York, than his Majesty could recover Hull. Charles, therefore, resolved to put himself in a posture of defence. In order to do this, he summoned the gentry of Yorkshire to meet him at York, and to

\* Parliamentary History, vol. x., p. 461.

them he declared his apprehension of danger, and his wish to have a guard for his person, "but of such persons, and with such circumstances, as should administer no occasion of jealousy to the most suspicious; and wished the gentlemen of quality who attended, to consider and advise of the way." A guard of honour of two hundred gentlemen was immediately formed, under the command of the Prince of Wales, whose Lieutenant-Colonel was Sir Francis Wortley. His Majesty had also a regiment of six hundred foot of the trained bands, commanded by Sir Robert Strickland.

The Parliament then declared "that the King was levying forces to subdue them," and fears and jealousies were instilled into the minds of the people, by means of various pamphlets, which were dispersed throughout the Kingdom. One of them, published by the authority of Parliament, had this singular title—"Horrible news from York, Hull, and Newcastle, concerning the King's Majesty's intent to take up arms against the Parliament; with his Majesty's threatenings to imprison the Lord Fairfax, Sir Philip Stapleton, and the rest of the Committee appointed by the Parliament to sit at York; and the joint vote of both Houses concerning the same." Another pamphlet was styled—"More news from Hull; or a most happy and fortunate prevention of a most hellish and devillish plot, occasioned by some unquiet and discontented spirits against the town of Hull, endeavouring to command their admittance by casting balls of wild fire into the town, which by policy and treaty they could not retain." Amongst the curious reports fabricated about this time, and industriously circulated, to inspire terror and keep the town of Hull in a constant state of alarm, was, that Lord Dunbar kept a great number of horses and armed men in spacious vaults under the ground, in order to surprise the town at night; that a Lincolnshire gentlemen, of the name of Terwhit, was ready to assist them, with three hundred men in complete steel armour; and that the Spaniards were expected, with a fleet, to their assistance. This extraordinary report furnished grounds for considerably increasing the garrison, and parties were sent out to plunder the Royalists, under pretence of searching for arms and getting intelligence. The Parliament determined to remove the magazine from the town of Hull to the Tower of London, and a warrant was sent down to Sir John Hotham to deliver it to the Admiral, the Earl of Warwick, for that purpose; but the captains of the ships in the port received a command from the King at York, directing them, "on their allegiance not to put on board any part of the magazine, &c.;" consequently the military stores were not then removed.

The King finding that the Parliament openly supported Sir John Hotham; and not being in a position to take Hull by a regular assault, for want of

artillery, arms, and ammunition, attempted to gain possession of the town by a speedier and more easy way—by private application to some of the officers who had command in the town. In execution of this design he made use of Mr. Beckwith, of Beverley. That gentleman sent a letter to his son-in-law, an officer, named Fowkes, who was Lieutenant to Captain Lowenger, a Dutchman, then in command under Sir John Hotham at Hull, requesting him to come to Beverley, as he had something of concern to advise him about. Fowkes handed this letter to Mr. Robert Stockdale, secretary to Sir John, begging him to shew it to that officer, and to request permission for him to attend to the invitation contained therein, and promising at the same time to give a particular account of what had passed. Sir John readily granted what was desired, and on the Lieutenant's return from Beverley, he stated to him that in Mr. Beckwith's parlour he was introduced to fourteen or fifteen gentlemen, who proposed to him to conspire with his Captain to deliver up Hull to the King, by secretly opening the gates at some convenient time to be fixed upon; and promised that his Captain should have £1,000. per annum settled on him and his heirs for ever, and £1,000. in ready money; and that £500. per annum should be settled upon him (Fowkes) and his heirs, and £500. in money.

The Lieutenant seemed to comply with their request; and it was arranged that he should correspond with Mr. Beckwith. With many thanks and promises of great reward for his fidelity to the Parliament, Sir John ordered him to proceed in the plan; and he drew up a letter, which was transcribed by Fowkes, addressed to Beckwith, the purport of which was, "that he found his Captain very compliable, and should give them advice as they proceeded, how the business might best be accomplished." Several letters then passed, to humour the design till the Governor thought fit to bring the affair to an issue, and this was done by a letter written as usual, by Sir John, and transcribed by Fowkes, to this effect:—That on Tuesday next his Captain would command the main guard, and he the north gate, his Majesty would that afternoon send from York 1,000 horse, and 500 foot to be mounted behind the horsemen for the sake of expedition, and that they should be at Hull at two o'clock in the morning. They were, moreover, with a small party to give the alarm at Myton-gate, and with the main body to advance to the North gate, where he would give them entrance, so that they might march to the main guard, which Captain Lowenger would deliver into their hands, and thus the town become theirs without hazard. On this proposal being agreed to by Mr. Beckwith, the Governor called a council of war, and opened the whole matter to them. Most of the members who composed this council

were for permitting the King's forces to enter the town, and then to cut them to pieces, but Sir John would not agree to this bloody proposal, humanely remarking "that he would never wantonly shed blood when it was in his power to save it." At one o'clock on Monday night, Sir John dispatched his secretary with a letter to the King at York, informing him of the discovery of the design, and also intimating that "he might spare himself the trouble of carrying on the contrivance." Parliament now passed a vote of thanks to Sir John Hotham, and declared Beckwith a delinquent, and guilty of a crime little less than high treason. Accordingly an officer was despatched who seized him at York, but he was immediately rescued by the King's directions, his Majesty at the same time observing, "that when the Parliament gave him justice against Sir John Hotham, he would deliver Beckwith up to them." Clarendon observes, "that it was thought very ridiculous to standers by, that Sir John Hotham should be justified for keeping the town against the King, and another gentleman be voted a delinquent for designing to recover it to its allegiance.

The Parliament then published a very voluminous remonstrance—"a kind of war with the pen, which preceded that of the sword," addressed to the people at large; which, according to Clarendon, wrought more upon the minds of men than all the Parliament had before done; and notwithstanding the King's prohibition to the contrary, and without the least regard paid to his remonstrances and complaints, the magazine at Hull was conveyed to London, and deposited in the Tower. In a few days after the publication of the above remonstrance, Charles issued a lengthy reply. Messages, remonstrances, and declarations between the King and the Parliament, were now frequent; and so conscious was Charles that he had a decided superiority, that he dispersed everywhere the papers of the Parliament together with his own, that the people might be more enabled by comparison to form a proper judgment between them; whilst, on the other hand, the Parliament, while they distributed copies of their own, were anxious to suppress the King's compositions.

In a long answer to one of the last declarations of Parliament, the King reproached the two Houses for their illegal proceedings against him. He said that the keeping him out of Hull by Sir John Hotham, was an act of high treason; and that taking away his magazine and ammunition from that place, contrary to his express command, was an act of violence against him; and, in both cases, he told them that by the help of God and law he would have justice, or lose his life in requiring it. He maintained that the military stores at Hull were his private property, he had bought them with borrowed

money previously to the Scottish invasion; that the town was his, for it had belonged to the Crown, and was still held by royal charter; and that the fortress was his, because to him belonged all the fortresses within the Kingdom. But it was idle to talk of legal rights at a time when few, if any, hopes of peace were entertained; when a real though disguised war was already raging between the parties; and when each side was endeavouring to throw on the other the odium of commencing a civil war.

The King, who remained at York, employed himself with great activity in rousing his adherents to arms. Numbers of the nobility, gentry, and clergy, with the members of both Universities, lent him money; and the Queen departed the Kingdom, and sold the Crown jewels in Holland to purchase a cargo of ammunition. The whole Kingdom was now thrown into confusion. In every shire, almost in every township, were persons raising men at the same time for the opposite parties. In the southern counties the interest of the Parliament was generally predominant; but the King, however, mustered an army of about 4,000 troops, of which about 3,000 were foot, and 1,000 horse. Negotiations still proceeded. There were many at York, and in the Parliament, who still laboured hard to effect an accommodation—for though the King's unhappy predilection for arbitrary power, had raised him a host of enemies; his moral virtues had procured him a great body of zealous supporters. The Parliament, in answer to the King's demand for a reply to certain proposals, which he had made at the commencement of the year, presented for his acceptance nineteen articles, in which the privileges of the Parliament so far outweighed the prerogatives of the Crown, that they were deemed wholly inadmissible:—Should I grant these demands, said the King, in reply, I may be waited on bare-headed; I may have my hand kissed; the title of Majesty may be continued to me; and the King's authority signified by both Houses, may still be the style of your commands; I may have swords and maces carried before me; and please myself with the signs of a crown and a sceptre; but as to true and real power, I should remain but the outside, but the picture, but the sign of a King.\*

Shortly after Charles took up his residence at York, the Parliament appointed a Commission to reside in that City, to strengthen their party and to watch the movements of the King; and on their passing an ordinance for embodying the militia, the King ordered his friends to meet him at York, whither he directed the several Courts to be in future adjourned. The Lord-Keeper Littleton being ordered by the Parliament not to issue the writs,

\* Rushworth, iv., pp. 722, 735. Clarendon, i., 634, 647.

made his escape to York, and bringing with him that important mark of sovereignty, the great seal, he joined the royal party, for which he was afterwards proclaimed by the Parliament a traitor and a felon. On the 27th of May, 1642, Charles issued a proclamation, dated from his Court at York, appointing a public meeting of the nobility and gentry of the neighbourhood, to be held on Heworth Moor, on the 3rd of June. At this meeting, at which 70,000 persons were present (40,000 according to Guizot), the King, who was accompanied by his son Prince Charles, and 150 Knights in complete armour, and attended with a guard of 800 soldiers, was received with the loudest acclamations of loyalty and respect. In a short address he thanked the meeting for the assurances of loyalty and attachment which he had received, and explained the particulars of the situation in which he was placed. Every attempt at negotiation having failed, he had resolved, he said, to support his authority by arms. His towns, his ships, his arms, his money, were taken from him, but there still remained to him a good cause, and the hearts of his loyal subjects, which, with God's blessing, he doubted not would recover all the rest. Having constituted Sir John Glemham Governor of York, and appointed the Earl of Cumberland supreme commander of his forces, he removed his Court to Beverley, with a view of preparing for an attack upon the fortress of Hull. But after an abortive attempt to get possession of that place, he returned to York.

Hostilities soon after commenced with the siege of Portsmouth. Colonel Goring, the Governor of that place, an officer of distinguished merit, having refused to act on the side of the Parliament, a strong force, under the command of the Parliamentary General, the Earl of Essex, appeared before the town and besieged it. The King immediately proclaimed that general and the officers under him traitors, unless they should return to their duty within the space of six days; the Parliament on their part declared the royal proclamation a libellous and scandalous paper, and retorted the crime of treason on all those by whom it had been advised, and by whom it should be afterwards countenanced.\* In these circumstances Charles summoned all his loving subjects north of the Trent, and within twenty miles to the south of that river, to meet him in arms at Nottingham, and on the 22nd, or according to some the 25th of August (1642), the royal standard floated from Nottingham Castle. On the standard was painted a hand pointing to a crown, with this motto, "Give to Cæsar his due." It was carried by a guard of 600 foot, from the Castle into a large field; the King following

\* Rushworth, vi., pp. 761, 773. Clarendon, i., 711, 715.



with a retinue of 2,000 men; and the people crowded around to hear the proclamation read by the herald-at-arms. This ceremony, called the raising of the standard, was deemed equivalent to a declaration of hostilities. From Nottingham Charles dispatched to the Parliament, the Earl of Southampton, Sir John Colepepper, and Sir William Uvedale, with some fresh propositions to incline them to a treaty, but in vain; and after a few more messages and answers all hopes of peace entirely vanished, and the nation saw itself involved in all the horrors of intestine war, the most direful of national calamities.

The reader of English history is aware that at this stage of the controversy between the King and his opponents, the real liberties of the people could no longer be regarded as the cause of quarrel. These liberties had already been established by successive acts of the legislature. The dispute was now confined to certain concessions, which the Parliament demanded as essential to the preservation of those liberties, and which the King refused as subversive of the royal authority. The Parliament now possessed the control of the public money, the power of impeachment, and the right of meeting every third year; and these powers, it was contended by some, formed a sufficient barrier against the encroachments on the part of the Sovereign; but others insisted that the command of the army, and the appointment of the officers of state, the councillors, and the judges, ought also to be transferred, for a time at least, to the two Houses. Who then were the authors of the civil war? is a question that is often asked. That learned and impartial historian, Dr. Lingard, says, in reply to this question, "The answer seems to depend on the solution of this other question—were additional securities necessary for the preservation of the national rights? If they were, the blame will belong to Charles; if not, it must rest with his adversaries."

That there were faults on both sides seems unquestionable; and it is to be especially lamented that the good sense of the Monarch had not taught him to go along with the general feelings of his people; but Princes in all ages, as Dr. Lingard truly remarks, have been slow to learn the important lesson, that the influence of authority must ultimately bend to the influence of opinion. "In most of the conflicts which have divided nations against themselves," says a distinguished writer, "one side or other has been so wicked, or both so worthless, or the points at issue so personal and valueless, that the recital of their progress and results, merely amuses by variety of incident, or disgusts by sameness of depravity; but in the principles and fortunes of the Cavaliers and Roundheads, we still experience a real and vital concern. The warmth of passions, though abated, is not extinguished; we feel as if our

own liberty, our own allegiance, our own honour and religion were involved in the dispute."

The long and fruitless altercations being at an end, and war being inevitable, the Parliament placed the command of the militia, and authority to raise forces in every County, in such hands as they esteemed trustworthy. Each army in its composition resembled the other. The command of the Royalists was entrusted to the Earl of Lindsey; and that of the Parliamentary forces, as we have seen, to the Earl of Essex. In the mean time, Sir William Waller had reduced Portsmouth, while Essex concentrated his force, amounting to 15,000 men, in the vicinity of Northampton.

The first pitched battle between the adherents of the King and the Parliament, was fought on the plain of Kineton, near Edge-hill, in Warwickshire, on Sunday, the 23rd of October, 1642, when both armies claimed the honour, but neither reaped the benefit, of victory. Among the distinguished persons who took part in that bloody conflict, were the King, Prince Rupert, the Earls of Lindsey and Essex; Lords Saye, Digby, Roberts, Carnarvon, Brooks, Byron, Wharton, Wilmot, Mandeville, Fielding, Willoughby, Goring, &c.; Sirs W. Fairfax, John Meldrum, Philip Stapleton, James Ramsay, W. Balfour, Jacob Astley, Edward Verney, George Lisle, William Constable, &c.; Hampden, Holles, Ballard, Grantham, and, according to some writers, Oliver Cromwell. The Earl of Lindsey was slain, fighting on foot at the head of his men. This brave old General's prayer, before the advance to the conflict, is said to have been as follows:—"O Lord, thou knowest how busy I must be this day,; if I forget thee, do not thou forget me. March on boys!" Essex withdrew to Warwick, and thence to Coventry; and Charles, having compelled the garrison of Banbury to surrender, marched onwards to the City of Oxford.

Our limits will not admit of even a passing notice of the battles which took place in several of the southern counties; we must therefore confine our remarks to the proceedings which occurred in the district to which this work is devoted. Alas! that the fair plains of this fine County should be again the scene of bloody strife between Englishmen only; that her fertile fields should be once more deluged with the blood of thousands of its best nobles and hardiest sons.

The majority of the northern nobles were attached to the King's party, and probably Ferdinando, Lord Fairfax, was the most powerful adherent of the Parliament in those parts.\* Accordingly, he received their commission

\* Sir Thomas Fairfax, of Denton (father of Lord Ferdinando Fairfax), was created Lord Fairfax in 1627.

(still running in the King's name) to be General of the forces in the north, and his son, Sir Thomas, was appointed General of horse under him. Sir Thomas Fairfax, who appears to have been endowed with a never-tiring zeal for the cause in which he was engaged, performed his first exploit in the autumn of 1642, by driving a small detachment of Royalists from Bradford to Leeds, whither, in conjunction with Captain Hotham, he marched a few days after, and compelled the enemy to retire upon York. The great strength of the Parliamentarians lay in the large manufacturing towns of the West Riding, and the chief supplies of their army were drawn from that district; and that army having increased, 1,000 men were marched to Tadcaster and Wetherby to guard the passes of the Wharfe, and thus protect the friendly districts of the west.

The Earl of Newcastle, who had raised a considerable force in the north, for the protection of the northern counties, now marched to the assistance of the loyal party, and on the 30th of November he arrived at York with 6,000 men and ten pieces of artillery. The Earl of Cumberland then resigned his commission to Newcastle, who, after having stayed only three days in York to refresh his troops, marched out with 4,000 men and seven pieces of cannon, to attack the enemy at Tadcaster, where Lord Fairfax was posted with 700 troops.\* At the same time the Earl sent his Lieutenant-General, the Earl of Newport, with 2,000 men, to attack Wetherby. At Tadcaster the battle was contested with equal obstinacy, but with much less bloodshed, than the memorable one fought near the same place, between the fierce adherents of the rival houses of York and Lancaster. (See page 155.) The action took place on the 3rd of December, 1642. The town being untenable, the Parliamentarians resolved to draw out, and select a post of more advantage; but before they could do so, the King's forces attacked a position above the bridge, in which was a small body of foot to cover the retreat, in so brisk a manner, that the whole force drew back to maintain that ground. The Earl began his attack about eleven o'clock in the forenoon, and the fighting continued till dusk without intermission, during which time 40,000 musket shots were discharged, besides the fire from the artillery; but the slaughter bore no proportion to the shot expended; as the number killed on both sides did not exceed 300. The disparity of numbers caused Lord Fairfax to draw off his forces to Selby and Cawood in the night, and the following morning the Royalists marched into Tadcaster without opposition. The only person of note who fell in this battle was Captain Lister, who was shot by a bullet in

\* Memoirs of Sir Thomas Fairfax.

the head.\* He was a valuable officer, and a great loss to his party. The garrison of Wetherby consisted of 300 foot and 40 horse, commanded by Sir Thomas Fairfax; and this small force was surprised early one morning by a body of 800 men, under Sir Thomas Glemham. Under the cover of darkness and the woods around, the Royalists arrived close to the town without giving any alarm, until they were ready to enter. The guards were found sleeping at their post, "for," says Sir Thomas, "at the beginning of the war men were as impatient of duty as they were ignorant of it." The General however was awake, and, with the assistance of a few men, held the enemy at bay till more of the guards were got to arms. A smart engagement then ensued, in which the assailants were repulsed. The attack was soon renewed, but in the midst of the conflict Fairfax's magazine was blown up, and produced so tremendous an explosion, that the Royalists believing that the enemy had cannon, began to retreat, and retired towards York, and were pursued by Sir Thomas with his small body of horse, who took some prisoners. Sir Thomas Glemham returned to his garrison at York. In this engagement Major Carr of the Royalists, and Captain Atkinson and a few of the Parliamentarians were slain. Seven men were blown up by the powder explosion. The Earl of Newport, on arriving at Wetherby, found no enemy to contend with, Sir Thomas Fairfax having previously joined his father at Tadcaster.

In the beginning of the year 1643, Leeds, Wakefield, Halifax, Skipton, Knaresborough, and several other towns and garrisons against the King, were reduced to his Majesty's subjection, by the valorous conduct of the Lord General (the Earl of Newcastle). Bradford stood two vigorous sieges, but surrendered when the ammunition of the fortress was exhausted. Then, but not till then, did Sir Thomas Fairfax, who conducted the defence, offer to capitulate; but Newcastle having refused to grant the conditions, Sir Thomas, with fifty mounted troopers, cut his way through the lines of the Royalists, and made his retreat, but his wife and most of the soldiers were taken prisoners.†

\* Thoresby, in his *Ducatus*, mentions the following instance of filial affection relating to the death of this gentleman:—Some years after the battle, the Captain's son was passing through Tadcaster, and finding the sexton digging in the choir, enquired where his father, Captain Lister, was buried. To which the sexton replied by showing him a scull just dug up, which he averred was the head of the Captain. On examining the scull, a bullet was found lodged in it, and this testimony to the truth of the gravedigger's words, so struck the young man, that he sickened at the sight, and died soon after.

† Lady Fairfax was shortly after sent back to her husband, by the Marquis of Newcastle, in his own coach.

By the various chances of war, several of these towns were lost and won again, sometimes by one party, sometimes by another, so that in spite of every precaution, Yorkshire was for some years a scene of bloodshed and misery.

It was chiefly owing to the indefatigable exertions of the Queen (Henrietta Maria, daughter of Henry IV. of France) that Charles had been enabled to meet his opponents in the field. When the King left the south, in the spring of 1642, her Majesty departed for Holland, where she pledged her own and the Crown jewels, for the purpose of procuring arms and ammunition for her husband's adherents. During her residence in Holland she had repeatedly sent the King supplies of military stores, and, what he equally wanted, of veteran officers to train and discipline his forces. The Queen having embarked at Schuiling, near the Hague, under convoy of seven Dutch ships of war, commanded by Admiral Van Tromp, arrived at Bridlington Bay on the 20th of February, 1643, and after remaining at anchor three days, the squadron entered the harbour. Her Majesty brought with her thirty pieces of brass and two of iron ordnance, with small arms for the equipment of 10,000 men; and though four of the Parliament's ships had been cruising, with a view to intercept her, yet she was so fortunate as to effect a landing whilst the enemy's ships were riding at anchor off Newcastle. Batten, the Parliament's Vice-Admiral, having notice of her Majesty's arrival, immediately weighed anchor, but did not gain the bay until the night after the Dutch vessels had entered the port. Chagrined at his disappointment, he drew his vessels directly opposite to the quay, and, on the morning of the 24th, commenced a heavy cannonade, in hope of firing the ammunition vessels, and the house in which the Queen was lodged. Some of the balls actually penetrated the room in which her Majesty reposed, and compelled her, with the Duchess of Richmond, and the other ladies of her retinue, to leave their beds, and, according to some authorities, "barefoot and bareleg," seek for safety beneath the precipitous bank of the stream now known as Bessingby Beck, which empties itself into the harbour.

No action of the war was more bitterly condemned by the gallantry of the Cavaliers, than this unmanly attack on a defenceless woman, the wife of the Sovereign. In order to secure the Queen from any further indignity, Lieut.-Gen. King erected a battery on each side of the port, but the danger and insult not having been repeated, the utility of the works were happily never proved. In expectation of the Queen's arrival, the Earl of Newcastle had drawn a part of his army in that direction, in order to protect her; and immediately upon her arrival, she was waited upon by the Marquis of Montrose,

and Lord Ogilby with two troops of horse, Sir Marmaduke Langdale, Sir John Ramsden, and others of the King's friends.

After remaining at Bridlington for about nine days, the Queen was safely conducted to York. She slept at North Burton on the first night, at Malton the second night, and arrived in York on the 8th of March, with three coaches, and an escort of eight troops of horse and fifteen companies of foot. The military stores were conveyed from Bridlington *en route* to York, in a long train of 500 carts and 1,000 horses. For his attention to the Queen on this occasion, as well as for his devotion to the cause of the King, the Lord General, as the Earl of Newcastle was called, was created a Marquis. When the Queen arrived at York, the King was staying at Oxford, and to pursue her journey thither at that time, would be to throw herself into the hands of her opponents. She accordingly remained in Yorkshire, winning the hearts of the inhabitants by her affability, and quickening their loyalty by her words and example. She afterwards marched without opposition to Oxford, bringing to her husband, who met her at Edge-hill, a powerful reinforcement of men, artillery, and stores.

In Yorkshire several important military events took place in the course of the year 1643. The Earl, now Marquis of Newcastle, made a kind of triumphal march through the County. He took Bradford and retook Wakefield for the King. Rotherham was in possession of the enemy, and refusing to yield, he commenced an attack upon it, and took it by storm. Sheffield too, which had previously been taken possession of for the Parliament, by Sir John Gell, was re-captured by him, and he defeated Lord Fairfax at Atherton or Adderton Moor. He then recovered Gainsborough, in Lincolnshire, from the army under Cromwell; and intended to proceed southward, but, we are told by Lingard, his followers refused to accompany him any further in that direction. They had, he says, been embodied for the defence of the northern counties, and could not be induced to extend the limits of that service for which they had been originally enrolled. Had they advanced and joined the King's army in the south, in all probability an end would have been put at once to the war, by the reduction of London; but in consequence of their refusal to march southward, the King was deprived of one half of his expected force, and was compelled to adopt a new plan of operations.

In the north, success and defeat appeared to alternate between the contending parties, and no decisive advantage had as yet been gained by either; yet, on the whole, the balance of victory seemed to incline in the King's favour.

The siege, or properly speaking the second siege, of Hull took place in the

latter end of this year. The Marquis of Newcastle commenced operations before the town on the 2nd of September, and after prosecuting the siege with great vigour, almost every day being marked by some active operation, he was obliged to abandon the town on the 11th of October—all his efforts to carry it being unavailing.

From the commencement of the difference between the King and the Parliament, a thorough understanding existed between the chief of the Scottish Covenanters, and the principal of the English Reformers. Their views were similar, their object the same. The Scots had indeed fought and won, but they held the fruit of their victory by a doubtful tenure, as long as the fate of their "English brethren" depended on the uncertain chances of war. Both policy and religion prompted them to interfere; the triumph of the Parliament would secure their liberties. The Parliamentarians first invited them to interpose their mediation, which they knew would be so little favourable to the King; then Commissioners were sent to Edinburgh with ample powers to treat of a union and confederacy with the Scottish nation; and a League and Covenant was framed, in which the subscribers engaged mutually to defend each other against all opponents.

This formidable union struck alarm into the breasts of the Royalists. They had found it difficult to maintain their ground against the Parliament alone; they felt unequal to the contest with a new and powerful enemy. By means of £100,000., which they received from England, the Scottish levies were soon completed; and in the early part of the year 1644, an army of 20,000 men, under the command of their old General, the Earl of Leven, crossed the Tweed at Berwick, and attempted to surprise the town of Newcastle before it could be put in a posture of defence. But in this they were disappointed, for the Lord General had arrived at that fortress the day before it was summoned by Leven; and the Scots, leaving six regiments before the place, crossed the Tyne, and entered Sunderland on the 4th of March. The Royalists, to the number of 14,000, hovered upon their march.\*

Yorkshire being left with but 3,000 or 4,000 men for its protection, the Parliament ordered Sir Thomas Fairfax, with Lord Fairfax his father, to attack this small force, which was commanded by Colonel Bellasis, the son of Lord Falconberg. The two parties encountered each other at Selby on the 11th of April, and in the action the Royalists were entirely defeated. The Parliamentarians had their army in three divisions; the first was led by Lord Fairfax, the second by Sir John Meldrum, and the third by Colonel Bright.

\* Rushworth, vol. v., p. 606.

The cavalry was commanded by Sir Thomas Fairfax. After some hard fighting, the Royalists (who had possession of the town) were beaten from their defences, and Sir Thomas, having forced open a barricade, obtained an entrance between the houses and the river, where he met with a body of the enemy's horse, which he charged and routed, when they fled across the river by a bridge of boats towards York. Another body of horse quickly charged Sir Thomas's party, and after a desperate struggle, the Royalists were beaten back, and Colonel Bellasis taken prisoner. The main body of Parliamentarians now entered the town, and the greatest part of the King's forces were either slain or taken prisoners. This victory made the Parliament masters of the midland parts of Yorkshire. The inhabitants of York, hearing of the capture of Selby, were in great fear and consternation, and implored the Marquis of Newcastle, who had been keeping the Scots at bay, to march speedily to their assistance, or their important City would be lost to the royal cause. The Marquis at once fell back to its relief; and the Scots having joined the forces of Lord Fairfax at Wetherby, the united army marched to York, and commenced the siege or blockade of that City, on the 19th of April, 1644.

The combined forces of the Parliament and the Scottish General being quite inadequate for the siege of this well-fortified and strongly-manned City, a deputation, composed of the Earls of Crawford and Lindsey, and Sir Thomas Fairfax, was sent to the Earl of Manchester, desiring his co-operation, to which he willingly consented. Previous to the arrival of Manchester the besiegers numbered 16,000 foot and 4,000 horse—a force not sufficiently numerous to invest the place; but that General brought with him an army of 6,000 foot and 3,000 horse, of which last the famous Oliver Cromwell was Lieutenant-General; and three sides of the City were completely invested, the north side remaining open. The besieging force had now three Generals, Manchester, Leven, and Fairfax, who occupied different positions around the walls; Manchester's division, with twelve pieces of cannon, took a position near Bootham Bar, towards Clifton, and the siege was soon vigorously prosecuted. Several batteries were opened against the City, and especial mention may be made of those on the rising grounds called *Garrow* and *Lamel Mill Hill*, out of Walmgate Bar, where four pieces of cannon played almost incessantly on the Tower, Castle, and town; while the garrison and armed citizens, from their different platforms, kept up a heavy fire on the works of the besiegers. There were also batteries on the Bootham side. The Earl of Manchester made an attack near Walmgate Bar, and took possession of the Church of St. Nicholas, but was soon obliged to retire;



the Scots seized, near Micklegate Bar, a convoy of cattle, which was about to enter the City; and many smart skirmishes took place, through the exertions of the besiegers to preserve the houses in the suburbs for their own convenience (the inhabitants having withdrawn within the walls), which the besieged set fire to.

For some time the work of destruction was carried on "with great gallantry and spirit," and with varied success. Charles, who was at that time in the south, at the head of an inferior force, endeavouring, by some skilful manœuvres, to escape from the two divisions of the Parliamentary army, under Essex and Waller, saw with dismay the danger which threatened him in the north. The fall of York would most certainly deprive him of the northern counties, and the subsequent junction of the besieging army with his opponents in the south, would constitute a force against which it would be useless to struggle. His only resource was in the courage and activity of his nephew, Prince Rupert,\* who had recently driven the Parliamentarians from before Newark, and reduced Stockport, Bolton, and Liverpool. He therefore ordered that commander to collect all the force in his power, to hasten into Yorkshire to fight the enemy, and to keep in mind that two things were necessary for the preservation of the Crown, both the relief of the City of York, and the defeat of the combined army. On the receipt of the royal command, Rupert took with him a portion of his own men, some regiments lately arrived from Ireland, and reinforcements joined him on his march. Newcastle, who was in daily expectation of the arrival of Rupert, had recourse to a *ruse* to gain time. That wily General endeavoured, by a pretended treaty with the besiegers, to direct their attention from further attacks. A cessation was agreed upon, Commissioners met, and after a week's deliberation, hostilities recommenced on the 15th of May. The besiegers renewed their assaults on the City with redoubled vigour. The Earl of Manchester's forces undermined St Mary's Tower at the north-east corner of the Manor; and Colonel Crawford, a Scotchman, sprung the mine, which demolished the Tower, and buried a great many persons in the ruins. He then with his cannon made a breach in the wall lower down in Marygate, and having entered, many of the soldiers scaled two or three walls, and took possession of the Manor.

This occurred on Trinity Sunday, when most of the officers were at the Cathedral; but the alarm given by the explosion of the mine, caused them to run from the church to their posts. A party of the garrison, too, issued out by a private sally-port, entered the Manor House, and cut off the retreat

\* Prince Rupert was a younger son of Frederick, Prince Palatine of the Rhine, by the Princess Elizabeth, sister of King Charles I. of England.

of the enemy. A smart conflict ensued, in which about fifty of the Parliamentarians were killed, and 250 made prisoners. Sir Philip Byron, Colonel Huddleston, and Mr. Samuel Breary, were slain on the side of the garrison. The latter gentleman was Captain of a company of volunteer citizens, and son of one of the Aldermen. On the 24th of June, a party of the garrison, consisting of about 600 men, sallied out from Monk Bar, and furiously assaulted the Earl of Manchester's quarters; but they were soon driven back with considerable loss. The siege still continued with all possible vigour, an almost incessant fire was continued day and night, both by the besiegers and the besieged; and so loyal were the people of York to their Sovereign, we are told by Drake, that the women assumed a masculine courage, and, despising fatigue and danger, contributed much to the defence of the City. The supply of fresh provisions having been cut off by a line of circumvallation drawn round the City, the prices were excessively high before the end of the siege. Mutton sold for 16s. a quarter; beef, at 4s. per stone; pork, at 7s.; bacon, at 4s.; eggs, at 3d. each; fresh butter, at 2s. 8d. per pound; and oatmeal, 2s. 8d. per peck. But the magazine was well stored with salt provisions, grain, and liquors.

On the evening of the 30th of June, the besiegers to their surprise and consternation, received intelligence that Prince Rupert, with an army of 20,000 men\* was advancing to the relief of the place, and would quarter that night at Knaresborough and Boroughbridge, within eighteen miles of York. Conscious of their inability to contend with him in that situation, the Parliament's leaders held a Council of War, at which it was resolved to raise the siege. Accordingly, on the 1st of July they drew off from their entrenchments, and marched to Hessay Mocr, about seven miles west of York, and there the army was drawn up in order of battle, expecting the Prince would make that his way to the City. But his Highness, aware of the movement, avoided the conflict by an exertion of great military skill. He caused only a party of horse to face the enemy at Skip-Bridge, where they might secure their retreat over the Ouse at Nun-Monkton; and interposed the Ouse between the enemy and the main body of his army. The latter spent that night on the north side of the river, in the Forest of Galtres, near Poppleton ferry; whilst the Prince, with about two hundred horse, rode on to York, where his arrival produced the greatest demonstrations of joy. A Council of War was immediately held—and here we would pause to remark—that had the Prince not been too precipitate, he might not only have relieved the City,

\* Rushworth, vol. v., p. 681.

but he might have established the royal cause on a basis too strong for rebellion to shake. In the Council the Marquis of Newcastle gave it as his decided opinion, that it was inexpedient at that moment to hazard an engagement with the enemy; especially as in two days he expected Colonel Clavering, with a reinforcement of 3,000 men from the north, and 2,000 drawn out of several garrisons. Besides, he added, that he had certain intelligence that dissension prevailed amongst the Parliamentary Generals, and that they were about to separate.\*

The Marquis proved correct in his remarks, but the daring and impetuous Prince, whose subsequent rashness was the cause of so many misfortunes to the Monarch, and whose martial ardour was not sufficiently tempered with prudence, stated that he had received positive orders from the King, then at Oxford, to bring the enemy to immediate action.† Accordingly, Rupert, with his forces, marched out of York on the following day, the 2nd of July, and his van came up with the enemy just as they had broken up with the intention of proceeding to Tadcaster.‡ Rupert is said by some to have passed a part of his army over the Ouse at Poppleton, by means of a bridge of boats made by the Scots,§ and to have entered with his whole army into Hessay Moor, which the Parliamentarians had hardly quitted. He, however, pur-

\* Mem. Sir T. Fairfax. *Newcastle's Life*, by the Duchess.

† The following extract from the letter of the King, and which Rupert would seem to have regarded as containing an imperative command to fight the enemy at York, certainly exculpates the latter from the charge usually brought against him, of fighting without orders:—"But now I must give you the true state of my affairs, which, if their condition be such as enforces me to give you more peremptory commands than I would willingly do, you must not take it ill. If York be lost, I shall esteem my crown little else, unless unsupported by your sudden march to me, and a miraculous conquest in the south, before the effects of the northern power be found here; but if York be relieved, and you beat the rebels' armies of both kingdoms, which are before it, then, but otherwise not, I may possibly make a shift upon the defensive to spin out time, until you come to assist me. Wherefore I command and conjure you, by the duty and affection which I know you bear me, that, all new enterprises laid aside, you immediately march, according to your first intention, with all your force to the relief of York; but if that be either lost, or have freed themselves from the besiegers, or that for want of powder, you cannot undertake that work, that you immediately march with your whole strength to Worcester, to assist me and my army, without which, or your having relieved York, by beating the Scots, all the successes you can afterwards have, most infallibly will be useless unto me.—*Evelyn's Memoirs*, vol. v., *Octavo edition*, p. 121.

‡ Sir Thomas Fairfax says, "we were divided in our opinions what to do; the English were for fighting, the Scots for retreating, to gain, as they alleged, both time and place of more advantage; this being resolved upon, we marched away towards Tadcaster."

§ Others assert that the army crossed the ferry, which at the time was fordable.

sued them with such rapidity, that his vanguard almost overtook their rear near the village of Long Marston. Both parties soon began to draw up in order of battle; the Prince possessing himself of the principal part of the Moor, the Parliamentarians were obliged to range their forces in a large field of rye, at the end of the village of Marston, fronting the Moor. This being a rising ground, Rupert sent a party to dislodge them, but the Royalists, were driven back, and that corn-field remained in the possession of the enemy. Both armies, in accordance with the military tactics of the age, were drawn up in line, the infantry in three divisions, with strong bodies of cavalry on each flank. The King's forces amounted to 14,000 foot, 9,000 horse, and twenty-five pieces of ordnance; and the number on the other side is variously estimated. Some writers state that it was nearly equal in number to the Royalist army. Sir Thomas Fairfax says that its number was somewhat greater than that of the King's forces; whilst others tell us that it reckoned 40,000 soldiers. There was this peculiarity in the arrangement of the Parliamentarians, that in each division the English and the Scots were intermixed, to preclude all occasion of jealousy and dispute. The right wing of the Parliament's army was placed near Marston town end, having the village on their right, fronting the east; and as their horse and foot came up, they formed their battalia and left wing, endeavouring to gain as much to the left as they could; so that at last their lines extended from Marston to Tockwith, and, as has been intimated, fronted the Moor. The position chosen by the Parliamentarians was an advantageous one. On the right, the village of Marston secured them against being outflanked on that side; extending westward, the array passed across Marston field, a large enclosure cultivated in common, where many of the farmers held pieces of land, at that time bearing a crop of rye, which would then be nearly ready for the harvest. This ground is considerably elevated above the Moor, to which it slopes gently down, but so easily, that a horseman might gallop up or down without any inconvenience. Close to the village of Marston, a place is shown where it is said that the hedges were cut down to make a way for the Parliamentarian army to pass, and this spot is now called "Cromwell's Gap."

A little further west from Marston, where the land has its highest elevation, is the spot where tradition points out the position held by Cromwell; a clump of trees stood there some time since, now all felled but one, which has been left (though dead) to point out the station of the grim Ironsides. The position more to the left, towards the village of Tockwith, being nearly level, presented fewer points of advantage, and this latter place secured the left

flank from being turned. The troops, standing with their backs to the south, would have an extensive view of the country to the north and east, over the level plain and rural villages of the Ainsty, to the towers and walls of York. The right wing of the Parliamentary army consisted of the Yorkshire horse (but newly raised), commanded by Sir Thomas Fairfax, a man of known valour and resolution; three regiments of Scottish horse, commanded by the Earl of Dalhousie, the Earl of Eglinton, and Lord Balgony, forming his reserve. Next to them was a body of infantry consisting of Lord Fairfax's foot, and two brigades of the Scottish horse for a reserve. The main body, consisting chiefly of musketeers and pikemen, was commanded by the three Generals, Lord Fairfax, and the Earls of Manchester and Leven. The left wing was composed of the whole of Manchester's cavalry, under the command of Lieut.-Gen. Cromwell, among whom were his tried and trusty *Ironsides* (a name first bestowed upon them in this battle), with three regiments of Scottish horse, commanded by Major Gen. Lesley; and upon their left, near a cross ditch, where the Royalists had a regiment of foot, were the Berwickshire dragoons under Colonel Frizell. This wing extended to the village of Tockwith, and the whole army was drawn up in large bodies well supported by artillery. The field word of the Parliamentary troops was "God with us." Previous to the attack they were heard singing psalms.

The King's army was drawn up in a line opposite, on the open moor, partly protected by broken ground, ditches, and furze bushes. The left wing, fronting the position of Sir Thomas Fairfax, was led by Prince Rupert in person.\* The right, opposed to Cromwell, was led by Sir Charles Lucas and Col. Hurry; the main body by the Generals Goring, Porter, and Tilliard. It is not certain what particular charge the Marquis of Newcastle had this day, though it is certain he was engaged very valiantly in the battle. Some writers state that he had no command, but acted merely as a volunteer, with many more gentlemen equally disgusted with Rupert's haughty conduct. The field word of the Royalists was "God and the King."

"When both armies were completely drawn up, it was after five in the evening, and nearly another hour and a half passed with little more than a few cannon shots. Newcastle considered all was over for that day, and had retired to his carriage to prepare himself for rest for whatever might betide on the morrow. Even Rupert and Cromwell are believed to have expected that their armies would pass the night on the field. It was a bright summer

\* Some writers assert that the left wing was led by the Marquis of Newcastle, whilst the right wing was commanded by Prince Rupert.

evening, and the calm beauty of the heavens above left light enough still for the work of destruction to proceed, and that mighty host, 46,000 men,—children of one race, subjects of one King,—to mingle in bloody strife, and lay thousands at rest, 'to sleep the sleep that knows no waking,' that lovely night of June, on Long Marston Moor. It has been surmised, with considerable probability, that a stray cannon shot, which proved fatal to young Walton, Oliver Cromwell's nephew, by rousing in him every slumbering feeling of wrath and indignation, mainly contributed to bring on the general engagement. Certain it is, that he was the first to lead his men on to the attack. It was within a quarter to seven on that calm evening, when the vast array that spread along the wide area of Marston Moor began to be stirred by rapid movements to the front. Along a considerable part of the ground that lay immediately between the advanced posts of the Parliamentary forces and the Royalist army, there ran a broad and deep ditch, which served to protect either party from sudden surprise. Towards this, a body of Cromwell's cavalry was seen to move rapidly from the rear, followed by a part of the infantry. Prince Rupert met this promptly by bringing up a body of musketeers, who opened upon them a murderous fire as they formed in front of the ditch, which protected Rupert's musketeers from the cavalry, while a range of batteries, advantageously planted on a height to the rear, kept up an incessant cannonading on the whole line.\*

"Suddenly the left wing of the Parliamentarians was stirred by a rapid movement;" says a recent writer, "had the eagle eye of Cromwell seen the moment of advantage? or, was it the death of his nephew, struck down by a cannon shot, that awakened his slumbering wrath, roused the lion spirit within him, and now hurried him to the combat, and with him the whole army, for a single charge must inevitably bring on a general engagement. His heavy armed curassiers were already chanting their vengeful psalm of battle, while their eyes were lighted up with martial joy. Not one of them but carried a bible, as well as a carbine, pistols, and a heavy broad sword."† The small ditch, which lay between the contending armies, had an embankment on one side of it; and though they had drawn up within musket shot of one another, yet it must incommode the party that passed it, and lay them more open to their enemy. In the ditch the Royalist leader placed four brigades of their best musketeers, which at the first were gallantly assaulted by the enemy, and forced to give ground. The front divisions of horse mutually charged, the respective opposite right and left wings meeting. Crom-

\* Wilson's *Cromwell and the Protectorate*, p. 96. † Battle Fields of Yorkshire.

well, with his trusty Ironsides, dashed off rapidly to the right, and clearing the ditch beyond the enemy's flank, he swept down upon their right wing with such irresistible force, that the cavalry, who were then under the command of General Goring, were completely broken soon after the first onset. For a short time the fighting here was truly terrific. Some of the King's bravest men attacked Cromwell's troopers in front and flank, and every inch was disputed at the sword's point. For a while all was close and deadly conflict; the cannon's roar, the clashing of arms, the ringing of pistol shots, the sound of trumpets, mingled with the yells, shouts, and cheers of the troops, making up a dreadful battle chorus. The Royalists fought bravely, rallying when broken, and again rushing to the charge. Goring and Newcastle exerted themselves like tried and trusty soldiers; what generalship and personal courage could do, was done, and done in vain. The whole right wing of the King's army was dispersed; and such of them as escaped the swords of Cromwell's Ironsides, wheeled about, and fled to join the cavalry, under Prince Rupert's own command. The guns were silenced, and the artillerymen fled, or were sabred at their posts; while Cromwell, recalling his men from the pursuit, led them back in perfect order towards their first point of attack.

But a different scene had been enacted meanwhile on the left wing. Prince Rupert, who commanded there in person, poured a tremendous fire into the right wing of the enemy, led by Sir Thomas Fairfax, and dashed in upon them with his usual impetuosity, and swept through their broken ranks with tremendous slaughter. Nevertheless Sir Thomas, with a body of four hundred horsemen, passed the ditch, and charged furiously upon the royal ranks, and after a dreadful struggle, cut his way through, despite all their efforts to hinder him; the Royalists flying towards York, closely pursued to prevent their rallying. Rupert, seeing the disorder of that wing, dashed forward at the head of his men, driving, scattering, and destroying all before him. In vain the leaders struggled to stem the tide—on sped the Prince over the dying and the dead, pursuing the routed squadrons towards Tadcaster and Cawood. Instead of pursuing them with his whole strength, had Rupert merely ordered a detachment to keep them from rallying after they were pushed from the field, and fallen with the rest of his force upon the naked flank of the Parliamentary foot, the victory might have been his own, and his rashness in fighting been justified by success. Thus one wing of each army was routed, and the main bodies closely engaged in an even balanced and desperate struggle, when Cromwell, with his troopers flushed with victory, dashed impetuously upon the naked flank of the Royalist in-

fantry, overturning all before them. It was at this time that the Marquis of Newcastle's own regiment—called "White Coats," from their clothing, consisting of more than a thousand stout Northumbrians, being deserted by the horse, yet scorning either to fly or to ask quarter, were cut to pieces by the enemy, all bravely falling in rank and file as they stood. This brigade, which was well armed and disciplined, strong and valiant, was commanded by a Scotchman named King, the Marquis's Lieutenant, a man of considerable military experience.

The three Generals, Manchester, Leven, and Fairfax, appear to have considered the battle as lost, and were hastening out of the field, when the victory they despaired of unexpectedly fell into their hands. For General Porter, after having forced back part of the Parliamentary foot, even beyond their first position; and after three hours of hard fighting, and when he thought the success of the Prince was established, found himself attacked with greater fury than ever, and that unexpectedly in the rear. Here the order of the battle was completely reversed, each party occupying the ground held by the other at the beginning of the fight. Cromwell having rallied his men, advanced towards the centre of the action just as Rupert returned from his headlong and mad pursuit, at the head of his exulting cavalry, confident that the field was already won. But a short time was sufficient to convince him that his enemies were the victors; for though the second battle was equally furious and desperate with the first, yet, after the utmost efforts of courage by both parties, victory wholly turned on the side of the Parliament; for, hemmed in on nearly all sides, on difficult and broken ground, without hope of succour, and almost without means of retreat, Porter and his brave band surrendered themselves prisoners. Rupert's whole train of artillery was taken, and those Royalists who had survived, and were not taken prisoners, were pursued to within a mile of the walls of York, by their relentless enemies, Rupert himself only escaping by the fleetness of his horse. Thus ended this sanguinary conflict between the most numerous armies that ever were engaged during the course of these unnatural wars. About ten o'clock the Royalists had pursued the main part of the enemy from the scene of the battle; but before midnight the best and bravest of the friends of royalty were lying dead on the field, or prisoners in the hands of the foe, or helpless and despairing fugitives on the roads to York and other places, pursued with great slaughter. The victory was complete. What a contrast between the going out and the return of the Royalist army. The number of the slain on both sides is said to be about 8,000, though authors vary much in this as in other particulars of the battle; but the villagers, who were commanded to bury the



dead, asserted that they interred only 4,150 bodies, two-thirds of whom appear to have been men of rank; and their graves are yet to be seen near Wilstrop Wood, at the end of a long green lane, on the western side of the moor. This is supposed to be the place where Cromwell beat the Royalist's right wing, and afterwards mowed down Newcastle's valiant regiment, for they would probably bury them "where the battle's wreck lay thickest."

Among the Royalists who fell were Sir William Wentworth; Sir Francis Dacres; Sir William Lambton; Sir Charles Slingsby, Knight, who was interred in the Cathedral; Colonel John Fenwick, whose remains could not be identified among the heaps of dead; Sir Marmaduke Luddon; Sir Thomas Metham; Sir Thomas Gledhill; Sir Richard Graham; and more than 4,000 others. Upwards of 1,500 were taken prisoners on that dreadful day, amongst whom were General Sir Charles Lucas, General Porter, General Tilliard, Lord Goring's son, and many more field officers. The Prince likewise lost besides his 25 pieces of artillery, 130 barrels of gunpowder, 10,000 stand of arms, 47 colours, two waggons loaded with carbines and pistols, and all his bag and baggage.

The principal persons slain among the Parliamentarians were Charles, brother of Sir Thomas Fairfax, who was buried at Marston; Major Fairfax, Captain Micklethwaite, and Captain Pugh. From the circumstance of the battle being at one time so much against them, they must undoubtedly have lost a number of adherents nearly equal to the vanquished; but they themselves would not acknowledge the loss of more than three hundred subalterns and privates.\*

Prince Rupert, to whose want of sufficient coolness and prudence, the disasters of this day were attributed, has been accused by some of wanting courage, a charge which by others is believed to be completely unfounded. Cromwell, too, is taxed with cowardice by Hollis, who says that he withdrew very soon from the fight, for a slight wound in the neck; but he is, however, by most writers considered the main instrument in gaining this important victory. It was late in the evening when the Royalists arrived at Micklegate Bar, and as none but the garrison were suffered to enter, many of the wounded, fainting under fatigue and anxiety, filled the air with sounds of distress, and the scene of confusion and misery that ensued, was beyond description.†

This disastrous battle extinguished the power of the Royalists in the

\* For this battle see Rushworth, v., 632. Clarendon, iv., 503. Thurloe i., 39. Whitelock, 89.

† Hargrove's History of York, vol. i., pp. 169, 178.

northern counties, and opened an immediate way to Cromwell's assumption of the vacant throne, when Charles fell a sacrifice to violence and political rancour. Among the many battle fields of Yorkshire, at Marston Moor only was there any great principle depending on the issue. In the other battles the object had been to repel, perhaps a provoked invasion; to crush a rebellion of ambitious and discontented nobility; or oftener for a mere change of rulers. The people shed their blood for men from whom they could receive no benefit, and for objects in which they had no interest; but at Marston Moor only the spirit of civil and religious freedom was manifested. There it was that King and people contended; the one for power unlimited and absolute; the other for justice and liberty—man's birthright. Liberty and privilege on the one side, and prerogative and despotic power on the other, were on the field of Marston brought into open conflict, and the sequel is well known.

The day after the battle the brave Marquis of Newcastle, and several of his friends, either despairing of the royal cause, or disgusted with the arrogant conduct of Prince Rupert, resolved to quit the country, and immediately went to Scarborough, and thence embarked to Hamburg. Rupert himself drew his army from the City of York, and hastily retreated into Lancashire; and thus were the affairs of the unfortunate Charles irretrievably ruined by the imperious and injudicious conduct of his froward kinsman. Had he left a sufficient garrison in York, it might be held out against the Parliamentarians, as great dissensions prevailed among the leaders; but encouraged by the intelligence of the departure of the two royal commanders, and knowing that Sir Thomas Glemham, the Governor, was left with only a very small garrison, and in a great measure defenceless, in consequence of the loss of artillery at the late battle, the Parliament's Generals appeared before the walls, and renewed the siege. The Governor was summoned to surrender unconditionally—to which a negative answer was returned. However, thirteen days after the battle of Marston, and after a siege of nearly thirteen weeks, during which time the garrison had repulsed twenty-two attempts to carry the place by storm, and four countermines; and between 4,000 and 5,000 of the enemy had perished before its walls, the Governor was reduced to the painful necessity of surrendering the City, on the following conditions, which, owing to the existence of considerable dissensions amongst the forces of the Parliament, were extremely favourable.

1. That Sir Thomas Glemham, as Governor of the City of York, shall surrender and deliver up the same, with the forts, tower, cannon, and ammunition, and furniture of war belonging thereto, on the 16th of July, 1644, at

eleven o'clock in the forenoon, to the three Generals, or to whom they shall appoint, for the use of the King and Parliament, in the manner, and upon the conditions following:—

2. That all the officers shall march out of the City with their arms, drums beating, colours flying, match lighted, bullet in mouth, bag and baggage.

3. That they shall have a convoy, that no injury be done them in their march to Skipton.

4. That sick and maimed soldiers shall not be hindered from going, after their recoveries.

5. That soldiers' wives and children may have liberty to go to their husbands and fathers, to their own homes and estates, and to enjoy them peaceably, under contribution.

6. That no soldier be enticed away.

7. That the citizens and inhabitants may enjoy all their privileges, which formerly they did at the beginning of those troubles, and may have freedom of trade, both by sea and land, paying such duties and customs as all other Cities under obedience of Parliament.

8. That if any garrison be placed in the City, two parts in three shall be Yorkshireman; no free quarter shall be put upon any without his own consent, and the armies shall not enter the City before the Governor and Lord Mayor be acquainted.

9. That in all charges the citizens, residents, and inhabitants, shall bear only such part with the County at large, as was formerly in all other assessments.

10. That all citizens, gentlemen, residents, sojourners, and every other person within the City, shall, if they please, have free liberty to remove themselves, family, and goods, and to dispose thereof, and their estates, at their pleasure, according to the law of the land, either to live at their own homes or elsewhere; and to enjoy their goods and estates without molestation, and to have protection and safeguard for that purpose, so that they may rest quietly at their abodes, and travel safely and freely about their occasions; and for their better removal, may have letters of safe conduct, and be furnished with horses and carriages at reasonable rates.

11. That all gentlemen, and others, that have goods within the City, and are absent themselves, may have free liberty to take, carry away, and dispose of them, as in the foregoing articles.

12. That neither churches nor other buildings shall be defaced, nor any plunderings, nor taking of any man's person, nor any part of his estate, suffered; and that justice shall be administered within the City, by the

magistrates, according to law, who shall be assisted therein, if need require, by the garrison.

13. That all persons whose dwellings are in the City, though now absent, may enjoy the benefit of these articles, as if they were present.

*Signed,*

FERDINAND FAIRFAX, MANCHESTER, ADAM HEPBORNE, LORD HUMBEE, WILLIAM CONSTABLE,	} THOMAS GLEMHAM, GOVERNOR.
---	--------------------------------

The forces of the King, amounting to more than one thousand, besides sick and wounded, accordingly evacuated the City on the following day, through Micklegate Bar, marching through the victorious army (which had been previously drawn up on each side, without the Bar, and formed into a line of about a mile in extent), with arms in their hands, drums beating, colours flying, &c., towards Skipton. On their departure, the three successful Generals, the Earls of Leven and Manchester, and Lord Fairfax, with their forces, entered the City in solemn procession, and went directly to the Cathedral, where they returned thanks to the Almighty for their success—prayer being offered up by the Earl of Leven's chaplain, a Presbyterian; and the following Thursday was appointed a day of general thanksgiving.\*

York suffered severely from this calamitous siege. Its walls were sadly shattered; several houses were in ruins, and the suburbs completely destroyed.

Lord Ferdinando Fairfax was now made Governor of York, and that City became the seat of a standing Committee, whereby the affairs of the whole County were conducted with almost absolute power. Lord Fairfax and his son, Sir Thomas, now surnamed the *Hero of the Commonwealth*, received commissions from the Parliament to reduce all the garrisons that still held out for the King in this County; and Sir Thomas was soon after appointed Commander-in-Chief of all the forces of the Parliament. The City walls were put in a state of repair, and no time was lost in attempting to subdue the spirit of loyalty, which still existed in many of the fortresses of the County. Detachments of troops were sent to besiege them. The siege of Pontefract Castle commenced on Christmas day, Sir Thomas Fairfax having taken possession of the town in the beginning of December.† On the 19th of January, 1645, after an incessant cannonade against the ramparts of the Castle, the Pix Tower gave way, and by its fall carried part of the walls along with it. The siege continued till the garrison was reduced to great distress for want

\* Hargrove's Hist. York, vol. i. p. 187. † Whitelock, p. 102.

of provisions. At this period, Sir Marmaduke Langdale, one of the Royalist Generals, making a rapid march, at the head of 2,000 horse, arrived at Pontefract; attacked the besiegers, who were commanded by Colonels Lambert and Forbes; and after an obstinate engagement, the Parliamentarians retired in disorder to Ferrybridge, and from thence towards Sherburn and Tadcaster, closely pursued by the Royalists.

On General Langdale's departure, the Parliamentary troops collected, and on the 21st of March, 1645, they took possession of the town, and again laid siege to the Castle. For four months the besieged gallantly withstood incessant cannonades, attacks, and sorties of the enemy; but at length reduced to a state of famine, the garrison surrendered the Castle, by an honourable capitulation, on the 20th of July. Sir Thomas Fairfax was appointed Governor; but as he was subsequently employed in the field, he placed Cotterell in the Castle as his substitute. In 1648, when the war was drawing near to a conclusion, the royal party being nearly subdued, and the garrison of Pontefract consisted of only one hundred men, the King's friends regained possession of this important fortress by stratagem. On the 6th of July, in that year, the Governor having given orders for bringing some beds and provisions out of the country, Colonel Morrice, accompanied by nine others of the King's officers, disguised like peasants, having concealed arms, appeared at the Castle gate with carts laden with beds, provisions, &c. These things being delivered to the main guard, money was given to some of the soldiers to fetch ale; but scarcely had these departed, when Morrice and his party attacked and mastered the main guard, made way for their confederates to enter, took the Deputy-Governor prisoner, and made themselves masters of the Castle. Sir John Digby was then appointed Governor, and a part of the King's scattered troops, thirty horse and five hundred foot, formed the garrison. The third siege of Pontefract Castle commenced the following October, under the command of Oliver Cromwell, who, after endeavouring in vain for a month to make an impression on its massy walls, retired and joined the grand army under Fairfax. On the 4th of December, General Lambert took charge of the forces before the Castle, and pushed the siege with the greatest vigour; and when the news of the execution of the King, in the following January, reached the place, the garrison, still besieged, proclaimed his son, Charles II., and made a vigorous sally against their enemies. On the 25th of March, 1649, the garrison being reduced to one hundred men, and some of these unfit for duty, surrendered by capitulation. The walls of the Castle being much shattered, the Parliament ordered its demolition, and within two months after its reduction, the buildings were unroofed, and all the valuable

materials sold. Thus was this princely fortress reduced to a heap of ruins.

Soon after the battle of Marston Moor, Major Beaumont, Governor of Sheffield Castle, was summoned to surrender that fortress to the Parliamentarians, but the demand was answered by a volley of shot, and a reply that the garrison "would hold no parley." The besiegers then erected two batteries, and kept their cannon playing upon the fortress for twenty-four hours without any visible effects. Major-General Crawford, who conducted the siege, finding that it was likely to be protracted, sent to Lord Fairfax for the "Queen's pocket pistol," and a whole culverin, which, being brought to the spot, played with such fatal effect, that the garrison was obliged to capitulate, and the Castle was surrendered on the 11th of August. On the 30th of April, 1646, the House of Commons directed that the Castle of Sheffield should be rendered untenable; and on the 13th of July in the following year, the same assembly passed a resolution for the "sleighting and demolishing" that ancient structure. On the 23rd of April, 1648, the work of demolition had begun, and so completely have the ruins themselves been obliterated, that the site of this once noble stronghold of feudal times—in which the unfortunate Mary Queen of Scots was for some time detained a prisoner—~~is~~ only distinguished by the name of Castle Hill.

In 1644, Leeds and Ripon having previously fallen into the hands of the Parliamentarians, that party besieged the Castle of Scarborough. On the 18th of February the town, with the Church of St. Mary, was taken by assault, and Sir Hugh Cholmley, the Governor, retired into the Castle. Sir John Meldrum then made a lodgment in the Church, and opened a battery on the Castle from the east window. The garrison, at the same time, kept an incessant fire on the Church, by which the choir was demolished. On the 17th of May, 1645, the besiegers made a general assault on the Castle, but were repulsed with great loss. In this assault, Sir John Meldrum received a mortal wound, of which he died on the 3rd of June. Sir Matthew Boynton was then appointed by the Parliament to the command of the forces before Scarborough Castle, and after a siege of more than twelve months, the fortifications being ruined by incessant battering, the stores nearly exhausted, and the garrison worn out by excessive fatigue, the brave Governor surrendered the fortress upon honourable terms. During this memorable siege, square-shaped silver coins, of the value of 5s. and 2s. 6d. each were issued. One side bore a representation of the Castle, with the inscription, "*Obsidium Scarborough, 1645,*" and the reverse the nominal value of the piece.

In the autumn of 1644 the Castle of Helmsley, which was then garrisoned for the King, and commanded by Colonel Crosland, was besieged by Sir

Thomas Fairfax, with a body of the Parliament's forces. The place was boldly assaulted, and as bravely defended; and during the siege Sir Thomas was shot through the shoulder with a musket ball, and was removed to York in a very dangerous state. The Castle was afterwards surrendered to Sir Thomas, and was dismantled by an order of the Parliament.

In the latter part of 1645 Skipton Castle surrendered to the Parliamentarians, after sustaining a siege of three years. Its defenders were permitted to retain their arms, and retire either to Newark, Oxford, or Hereford. The Castle was partly demolished in 1649, by an order of Parliament, but the Countess of Pembroke, the great restorer of ruined edifices, repaired, and rendered it habitable, though not perhaps tenable as a fortress.

Bolton Castle, in Wensleydale, was also a garrison for the King, and withstood a long siege, in which it was gallantly defended by Colonel Scrope and a party of the Richmondshire Militia. Colonel Henry Chayter, of Croft, was afterwards appointed Governor of this fortress, and he held it until reduced to eat horse flesh. Towards the close of the year 1645, he capitulated.

“Cromwell began now to entertain in his own breast those ambitious views which subsequently placed him on the throne,” writes the Rev. Geo. Oliver, “and he hid them from the world under the cloak of religion. He was a professed *Independent*; a sect which pervaded alike the City, the country, and the camp. All ranks of society were full of its professors. Soon, in every town and village, the spirit of fanaticism was prevalent, and superseded the chaste and sober practice of genuine religion; and when the Independents perceived the superiority they had acquired over the minds of the people, they threw off the mask, and adhered in practice no longer to the principles they had formerly professed in theory. The flame, long suppressed, now burst forth with an irresistible violence that carried all before it. They openly challenged the superiority, says Hume, and even menaced the Church with that persecution which they afterwards exercised against her with such severity. They had a majority in the House, and voted the liturgy an abomination to the godly, and even prohibited the use of it under heavy penalties. They were not respecters of persons; and it was one of Cromwell's sayings, that if he met the King in battle, he would fire a pistol in his face as readily as against any other man.\* Slaughter and spoliation were preceded by long prayers; and murder, as Holles expresses it, was no sin to the visible saints. Even the subversion of the altar and the murder of the King were esteemed acts of piety and devotion to God, and were ac-

\* Hume's England, vol. viii., p. 224.

accompanied by the outward forms of religion. With the Bible in their hands, the impious regicides brought a virtuous Monarch to the block; with a text of Scripture in their mouths, they overthrew the altar and the throne.\*

In 1645 the liturgy of the Church of England being abolished, the fanatical soldiers, quartered in the different towns, robbed the churches of the Books of Common Prayer, and amidst the loudest and most savage acclamations of joy—drums beating, and trumpets sounding—committed them to the flames.

In 1646, after a series of defeats, the royal army was disbanded; and the unfortunate Monarch, despairing of a reconciliation with his enemies, and finding his personal safety insecure, voluntarily placed himself under the protection of the Scottish forces, then at Newark-upon-Trent. The Lords and Commons immediately joined in a vote, unprecedented in history, "That the person of the King shall be disposed of, as both Houses of Parliament should think fit."

By the more moderate party the war was now considered to be virtually at an end; they expected that the King would agree to the original proposals of the Parliament, and be content to hold the Crown as his predecessors held it; but the moderate party had entirely lost its influence in Parliament, and a new party had arisen in the state, which became an instrument in the hands of the bold and ambitious Cromwell. This latter party was equally formidable to Royalists, Presbyterians, and Independents. Its founders were a few fanatics in the army, who enjoyed the reputation of superior godliness. They called themselves Rationalists, but this name was soon exchanged for the more expressive appellation of *Levellers*. In religion they rejected all coercive authority; men might establish a public worship at their pleasure, but if it were compulsory, it became unlawful and sinful; and these fanatics pretended to have discovered in the Bible that the government of Kings was odious in the sight of God; and they contended that, in fact, Charles had now no claim to the sceptre.

The Scots having delivered up the person of the King, he was detained as a captive, successively at Holdenby, or Holmby House, near Northampton; Hampton Court, near London; and in the Castles of Carisbrook and Hurst, in the Isle of Wight. But to return to the annals of York.

In January, 1646, the great convoy, under the conduct of Major-General Skippon, arrived at York with the sum of £200,000., which was paid to the Scottish receiver at the Guild-Hall; it being the first payment for the arrears of the Scottish army.

\* History of Beverley, p. 227.



In 1647, when the whole country became under the subjection of the Parliament, York was dismantled of its garrison, with the exception of Clifford's Tower, of which the Lord Mayor was appointed Governor; and his successors continued to hold that commission for several years.

On the 13th of March, 1648, Lord Ferdinando Fairfax died at York, and was succeeded in his title and estates by his son, Sir Thomas. Guizot, in writing of the latter personage, says that, "while the civil war was at its height, he afforded a most useful protection to literature and literary institutions. By his care," he adds, "the libraries of York and Oxford were partially at least preserved from pillage."\*

At the Lent Assizes in 1648, held in the City of York, a woman was tried and condemned for crucifying her mother; and it is added that after perpetrating the horrid deed, she had offered a calf and a cock for a burnt sacrifice. Her husband also was hanged for being an accomplice; and at the same time twenty-one men and women were executed here for various crimes. Judge Thorpe (the Recorder of Hull, mentioned at page 219 of this vol.), in his charge to the jury at these Assizes, endeavoured to vindicate the Parliament in all their proceedings, and to justify the execution of the King, which was probably then in contemplation.

The Levellers, now a powerful faction, were spreading their pernicious doctrines through all ranks in the army. The King, they said, had bound himself, at his accession, by oath to protect the liberties of his subjects; and as they maintained that he had violated that oath, they argued that they were released from their allegiance to him. For the decision of the question he had appealed to the God of battles, who, by the result, had decided against his pretensions. He therefore, they maintained, was answerable for the blood which had been shed; and it was the duty of the representatives of the nation to call him to justice for the crime, and in order to prevent the recurrence of similar mischiefs; as well as to provide for the liberties of all by founding an equal commonwealth on the general consent. The fanatics went still further. That had read in the Book of Numbers that "blood defileth the land, and the land cannot be cleansed of the blood that is shed therein, but by the blood of him that shed it;" and hence they inferred that it was a duty imposed on them by the God who had given them the victory, to call the King to a strict account for all the blood which had been shed during the Civil War.

It was now some time since the King had begun to fear for his safety.

\* Guizot's *Monk's Contemporaries*.

He saw that the violence of the Levellers had daily increased ; and that the government of the Kingdom had now devolved in reality on the army. There were two military Councils, one consisting of the principal commanders, the other of the inferior officers, most of them men of levelling principles ; and when any measure had received the approbation of the general council of the army, the House of Commons scarcely dare refuse to impart to it the sanction of their authority. Indeed no man could be ignorant that the Parliament, nominally the supreme authority, was under the control of the Council of Officers. It had long been the conviction of the officers that the life of the King was incompatible with their safety ; and that if he were restored, they would become the objects of royal vengeance. In this state of things we are not surprised to find the House of Commons declaring by vote, that it was high treason for the King of England to levy war against the Parliament and Kingdom of England ; and granting an ordinance for the erection of a High Court of Justice to try the question of fact, whether Charles Stuart, King of England, had or had not been guilty of the treason described in the preceding vote. The Lords, seeing the approaching ruin of their own order in the fall of the Sovereign, rejected both the vote and the ordinance without a dissentient voice ; whereupon the Commons voted that the people, or rather they, as the representatives of the people, are the origin of all just power ; and on the 20th of January, 1649, the King of England, Scotland, and Ireland, was arraigned in Westminster Hall, before sixty-six Commissioners, and charged with being a " tyrant, traitor, murderer, and a public and implacable enemy to the Commonwealth of England." The sequel is well known ; on the 30th of January—ten days after his arraignment—he was beheaded. Thus fell this unfortunate King, who, with all his faults, was worthy of a better fate, and after his death the monarchy of England was abolished.

Charles was by nature a man of peace, and his bitterest enemies could not pronounce him a tyrant from a vicious disposition, or from depraved habits. It was an error in his education, that he had, unhappily, imbibed false ideas of the royal prerogative, which he endeavoured to stretch to its utmost limit ; and to this source may be traced all the calamities which deformed his reign. They were purely the fault of his education, and not of his principles.\*

Henriette Marie de Bourbon, his Queen, who was, after the death of Charles, privately married to Jermyn, Earl of St. Albans, lived to see the

\* Macpherson says that England's wealth and commerce at the time of the Civil War of the seventeenth century must have been very considerable, since notwithstanding the interruptions which a six years' war had occasioned, the Parliament raised forty millions sterling for the war against the King.

restoration of her son to the English throne. She died in the month of August, 1660, at the Castle of Colombe, near Paris, her last years being chiefly spent in acts of charity and exercises of devotion.

York has little share in the annals of the Commonwealth, or Cromwellian protectorate. The Lord General does not appear to have ever been in that City, except at the time of its capture after the battle of Marston Moor, and another time, being on a progress to Scotland. "On the 4th of July, 1650," writes Whitelock, "Cromwell came to York, on his expedition into Scotland, at which time all the artillery of the Tower were discharged; the next day he dined with the Lord Mayor, and on the following day set forward to Scotland. To compliment his Excellency, and to show their zeal for the cause, the magistrates then thought fit to take down the King's Arms at Micklegate and Bootham Bars, through both of which he must needs pass in his journey, and put up the States' Arms in their stead."

On the 3rd of September, 1658 (a day of all others he esteemed the most fortunate), Cromwell died of a tertian ague at Whitehall,\* and was succeeded by his son Richard, who was proclaimed "the rightful Protector of the Commonwealth of England, Scotland, and Ireland, and the dominions and territories thereunto belonging." Adulatory addresses, too, were presented from most of the Boroughs in England, filled with high-sounding panegyrics of Richard's wisdom, greatness of mind, and many other qualities which were entirely foreign to his moderate unambitious character.

During the Commonwealth, two of the Assizes at York were rendered remarkable by the attendance of that wonderful instance of human longevity, Henry Jenkins. In the first trial, which was heard in 1655, Jenkins was brought forward as a witness to prove an ancient road to a mill one hundred and twenty years before. The positive terms in which this venerable man spoke, and the apparent improbability of his memory being able to take such a distinct retrospect, struck the judge in so unfavourable a light, that he severely reprimanded him. But the veteran boldly maintained his assertion, stating, in further proof of his depositions, that he was then butler to Lord Conyers, of Hornby Castle, and that his name might be found in an old register of the menial servants of that nobleman. It is not a little remarkable, that there were on the same trial, engaged as witnesses on the opposite side, four men, each about one hundred years old; who, on the judge ob-

\* Cromwell was buried in Westminster Abbey, with regal pomp, but Charles II. had his remains disinterred and thrown into a hole under Tyburn. A tradition has been preserved that some of the friends of the Protector secretly removed the body, and interred it in a spot in the neighbourhood of the present Red Lion Square, London.

jecting to the evidence of Jenkins, positively declared that he had been called Old Jenkins as long as they could remember.

In two years after (1657) the same venerable personage was again at York Assizes, as a witness on a trial between the Vicar of Catterick and William and Peter Mawbank. Jenkins deposed to the tithes of wool, lambs, &c., having been paid, to his knowledge, more than one hundred and twenty years before.

On the night of the 8th of December, 1659, there was a remarkably high wind, such as had never before been experienced in the country. The Cathedral and many of the dwelling houses at York were seriously injured.

When the plan for the restoration of the monarchy was nearly complete for execution, the County of York was well disposed to promote it. Lord Fairfax was become a convert to the cause of monarchy; to him the numerous Royalists in Yorkshire looked up as a leader; and he, on the solemn assurance of General Monk, afterwards Duke of Albemarle (who had been chiefly instrumental in the re-establishment of kingly government) that he would join him in twelve days, or perish in the attempt, undertook to call together his friends, and to surprise the City of York. On the 1st of January, 1660, each performed his promise. The gates of York were thrown open to Fairfax by the Cavaliers confined within its walls; and Monk, who had been with his army in Scotland, crossed the Tweed, and marched against the advanced posts of the enemy, then commanded by General Lambert. Thus the flame of Civil War was again kindled in the north; but within two days it was extinguished. Lambert's army was ordered by the Parliament to retire, and Monk continued his march to York, where he spent five days in consultation with Fairfax. On the arrival of an invitation to Westminster, Monk resumed his march, and Fairfax having received the thanks of the Parliament, disbanded his insurrectionary force.

Charles II. was proclaimed in London on the 8th, and at York, with the greatest solemnity, on the 11th of May, 1660. On that day the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, &c. on horseback, in their richest habits, preceded the cavalcade; next followed the Chamberlains and Common Councilmen on foot, in their gowns; these were attended by more than a thousand citizens under arms; and lastly, came a troop of country gentlemen, near three hundred, with Lord Fairfax at their head, who all rode with their swords drawn, and hats upon the points of them. When the proclamation was read at the usual places, the bells rung, the cannon roared from the Tower, and the soldiers fired several volleys; and at night were bonfires, illuminations, &c., with every other demonstration of joy.

His Majesty made his public entrance into London on the 29th of the same month, it being his birthday; and on that occasion the inhabitants of York expressed their loyalty by suspending upon a gallows, erected in the Pavement for that purpose, the effigies of Cromwell, clothed in pink satin, and Judge Bradshaw, habited in a Judge's robe, and then burning them in tar barrels; together with the arms of the Commonwealth and the Scotch Covenant. Never perhaps did any event in the history of this nation produce such general and exuberant joy as the return of Charles to the throne of his fathers. The people attributed to the abolition of monarchy, all the evils which they had suffered; and from its restoration they predicted the revival of peace and prosperity.

Three years after the Restoration a number of fanatics, headed by Conventicle preachers, and old Parliamentary soldiers, attempted to revive the old party feeling, which had then gradually subsided. The objects of this remnant of the Parliamentary faction, as expressed in their printed declarations, were to establish a gospel magistracy and ministry; to restore the Long Parliament; and to reform all ranks and degrees of men, especially the lawyers and clergy. They assembled in arms in great numbers, at Farnley Wood, in Yorkshire, but the time and place of their rendezvous being known, a body of regular troops, with some of the County militia, was sent against them, and several of them were seized and further mischief thereby prevented.

The principal leaders were shortly after tried by a Special Commission at York, and twenty-one of them were condemned and executed; two of them were also quartered, and their mutilated bodies placed over the several gates of the City. The heads of four of them were placed over Micklegate Bar; three over Bootham Bar; one upon Walmgate Bar; and three over the gates of the Castle. At the trial of these insurgents, one of them, named Peregrine Corney, had the boldness to tell the judge that he valued his life no more than his handkerchief.

In the year 1665, during the time that the plague raged violently in London,\* James, Duke of York (afterwards James II.), and his Duchess spent nearly two months in the City of York. They were met on their arrival at Tadcaster Bridge by the Sheriffs, and at Micklegate Bar by the Lord Mayor

\* This dreadful epidemic made its appearance in London in the month of June, 1665, and continued till the beginning of the year following, during which time more than 100,000 persons are said to have died of it. The houses of infected families were ordered to be shut up for a month, and a flaming red cross, one foot in length, was painted on the doors of such houses, with the words, "Lord have mercy on us," placed above it; and the wretched inmates were doomed to remain under the same roof communicating

and Corporation, and conveyed through the City with every demonstration of loyalty and affection. At their departure the Duke and Duchess expressed the highest satisfaction at the honour and attention paid them. Three years afterwards, the Duke, who had hitherto been an obedient and zealous son of the Church of England, had his religious credulity shaken, we are told, by reading Dr. Heylin's History of the Reformation; and the result of an enquiry which followed, was a conviction that it became his duty to reconcile himself with the Church of Rome. In 1679, when the Bill of Exclusion was brought forward in Parliament, the Duke, judging it expedient to retire from Court, went to Edinburgh, and in passing through York he was received with much less cordiality than on the occasion of his former visit. Although the Sheriffs met him at Tadcaster, the Lord Mayor and Aldermen did not receive him at the gate of the City; and this defect of ceremony drew on the Magistrates the resentment of the King, and the offending parties received a reprimand signed by the Secretary of State.

It having been discovered that several Boroughs, by the exercise of those exclusive privileges which had been conferred on them by ancient grants from the Crown, had grown into asylums of public malefactors, and on that account were presented as nuisances by the grand jurors at the County Assizes. Writs of *quo warranto* were issued, and the old were replaced by new charters, which, while they preserved to the inhabitants the most useful of their former liberties, cut off the great source of the evil, by giving to the County magistrates a concurrent jurisdiction with those of the Borough.

In January, 1684, a *quo warranto* was granted against the Corporation of York. In this instrument the members of that body were commanded to show how they came to "usurp" to themselves several liberties which they enjoyed; and their charter, which was demanded for perusal, was suspended. Some of the historians of York pretend that this proceeding on the part of the King towards the Corporation, was intended as a punishment on the citizens for the coolness which they exhibited towards the Duke of York in 1679; but we cannot understand how this opinion can be entertained, seeing that the Corporations of several other Boroughs were treated in a similar manner. The year in which the charter was demanded, the notorious Jeffreys attended at York as one of the Judges of Assize, and being interrogated

death one to the other. The pest-cart went round at night to receive the victims of the last twenty-four hours. No coffins were prepared; no funeral service was read; no mourners were permitted to follow the remains of their relatives or friends. The cart proceeded to the nearest cemetery, and shot its burden into the common grave, a deep and spacious pit, capable of holding some scores of bodies.

by the Lord Mayor and Aldermen concerning the King's intentions relative to the City, he remarked that his Majesty expected to have the government of the City at his own disposal; hence it is thought that the citizens were considered disaffected. The Judge however recommended that an address or petition should be prepared by the Corporation, which he would get presented to the King. This advice was complied with, and in reply Charles ordered Jeffreys to communicate to them his intention of granting them a new charter, in which he should reserve to himself only "the nomination and approbation of the Magistrates, and persons in office therein." The death of the King, in February, 1685, however prevented the fulfilment of his promise.

James, Duke of York, now succeeded to the throne, under the title of James II., and on the day of his accession, in a speech to the Privy Council, he promised to preserve the government, both in church and state, as it was then by law established; and to take care to defend and support the principles of the Church of England, knowing, as he did, that its members have shown themselves good and loyal subjects. On the petition of the citizens of York, the new Monarch restored or renewed their charter.

In 1687, according to an ancient record, "begun lamps to be hung up in the chief streets of the City; viz., at the Minster gates, the west end of Ouse bridge, in the Pavement, &c.;" but it is on record that in the reign of Charles II. the City was lighted by twenty-four large lanterns hung at the corners of the principal streets. The shock of an earthquake was experienced in Feasegate, in this City, on the 12th of February, in the same year. At Gate-Fulford, about a mile and a half from York, it was more seriously felt; and a subterraneous noise was heard on the occasion, similar to the roaring of a cannon.

In 1688, it appears that James, not approving of all the members of the Corporation, and in virtue of a power which he had reserved to himself, in the last charter, of regulating that body, despatched a messenger to displace the Lord Mayor, Thomas Raynes, and several of the Aldermen, and others; and on the 5th of October he appointed in their place men professing the Catholic religion, but who were not even freemen of the City. The latter circumstance afforded the Lord Mayor a pretext for not delivering up the sword and mace; but the office, nevertheless, was declared vacant till the 24th of the same month, when James thought it expedient to adopt a different course. Sir John Reresby, the Governor of York, in his *Memoirs*, tells us of the very peculiar situation in which the City at that time was placed. "It was," he says, "an Archbishopric without an Archbishop; a City without a Mayor; and a garrison without a soldier." "But," he adds, "these defects were soon

supplied—the old charter was restored, and the old Lord Mayor therewith—the Bishop of Exeter, who fled from that City upon the Prince of Orange's landing, was made Archbishop of York—and I had one company of foot sent to continue with me.”

York was connected with several of the proceedings which lead to the Revolution towards the close of this year. It was now fully believed that his zeal for the religious tenets he professed, was leading the King into measures subversive of the English Constitution. He had attempted to introduce the Catholic religion into this City, and for that purpose had converted one of the large rooms of the Manor House into a chapel, in which the services of that creed were celebrated. This attempt, together with some arbitrary proceedings on the part of the Court, gave great offence to the people; still James had many enthusiastic admirers and loyal subjects in the City and County of York. Rumours were being daily spread that William, Prince of Orange, nephew and son-in-law of the King, was preparing to land in this country with a considerable force, as the decided champion of the Protestant religion. The ten Deputy-Lieutenants of Yorkshire then resided at York, and after a consultation, a meeting of the gentry and freeholders of the County was appointed to take place at York, on Thursday, the 19th of November, for the purpose of voting a loyal address to the King in this season of danger; as well as for considering the best means to pursue for the preservation of the peace.

At this juncture the Clerk of the West Riding received a new Commission, in which the names of about thirty gentlemen in the neighbourhood, who had previously acted as Magistrates, were omitted. This circumstance greatly exasperated these Magistrates, and none, perhaps, felt it more keenly than Sir Henry Goodrick, the proposer of the above-mentioned meeting. It was now resolved to add to their address a petition to the King, for a free Parliament, and redress of grievances. The Duke of Newcastle, Lord Lieutenant of the County, arrived in the City to preside at the County meeting, but finding that several of the Deputy-Lieutenants had joined with the citizens and dismissed Magistrates in their petition, he left the City in disgust. The meeting took place in the Guild-Hall, on the 22nd of November, 1688, and the Governor, in his Memoirs before quoted, informs us that in the midst of about one hundred gentlemen who met, Sir Henry Goodrick delivered himself to this effect, “That there having been great endeavours made by Government of late years to bring Popery into the Kingdom, and by many devices, to set at nought the laws of the land, there could be no proper redress of the many grievances we laboured under, but by a free Parliament; that now



was the only time to prefer a petition of that sort; and that they could not imitate a better pattern than had been set before them by several Lords, spiritual and temporal."

During the proceedings a false rumour was raised "that the Papists were risen; and that they had actually fired upon the Militia troops." Alarmed at this, the party rushed from the hall, and Lord Danby, Lord Lumley, Lord Horton, Lord Willoughby, and others, who, together with their servants, being mounted, formed a body of horse consisting of about one hundred in number, rode up to the troops of Militia, at that time on parade, crying out, "A free Parliament, the Protestant religion, and no Popery." The Captains of the four troops of Militia were Lord Fairfax, Sir Thomas Gower, Mr. Robinson, and Captain Tankard, and being in the secret of the false alarm, immediately cried out the same, and led their troops to join them. They then made prisoners of the Governor and his inferior officers, took possession of the guard house, placed guards at the several entrances leading into the town; none were suffered to enter or leave the City; and every person was secured who displayed any disapprobation of their proceedings.\* On the following day they summoned a public meeting, passed resolutions, and issued a declaration explanatory of their proceedings. On the 29th of the same month, a mob assembled in the City, and attacked, plundered, and destroyed the houses of the principal Catholics, and committed great outrages in their chapels. They threw down the altars, destroyed all the pictures and statues, and burnt the books and vestments of the priests, in Coney Street and the Pavement.

It is well known that James II. sought an asylum in France, and had the Palace of St. Germain placed at his disposal by King Louis XIV., and that he died in less than three years afterwards, at the age of sixty-eight. His remains were interred in St. Germain, and were re-entombed with great ceremony in 1824, when King George IV. erected a handsome monument to his memory. James was the father of James Francis Edward, the "Old Pretender," who died in Rome in 1766, leaving two sons, Charles Edward, the "Young Pretender," and James, the Cardinal of York, and the last of the Stuarts.

The Lord Mayor and Commonalty of York followed the example of the rest of the Kingdom, by openly recognising the Prince of Orange as Sovereign of England, under the title of William III., and offered him their cordial and grateful acknowledgements in an address of congratula-

\* Sir John Reresby's Memoirs.

tion, dated December 14th, 1688; and William, together with Mary, his Princess, were proclaimed King and Queen of England, France, and Ireland, in this City, on the 17th of February, 1689, in the presence of many thousands of spectators.

In the month of October following, the river Ouse so much overflowed its banks, that during three successive days the use of boats was necessary at the west end of the bridge.

A number of Danish soldiers, amounting to 5,000 foot and 1,000 horse, commanded by the Duke of Wirtemberg, were quartered in York and its neighbourhood during the winter of this year, and they took their departure for Ireland in the following spring.

Nearly thirty houses were consumed by fire in High Ousegate, on the night of Monday, the 2nd of April, 1694. The fire broke out on the premises of Mr. Charles Hall, a flax dresser, and in a short time it raged with such violence, that the houses on both sides of the way were enveloped in one tremendous conflagration. The loss was computed at £20,000. In 1696, one of the King's mints was erected in the Manor House, at York, and bullion and plate was there coined to the amount of £380,621.

In the month of May, 1722, a great flood happened at Ripponden, in the parish of Halifax. Between the hours of three and five in the afternoon, the water rose twenty-one feet perpendicular, and bore down in its course many bridges, mills, and houses, and several lives were lost. Part of the churchyard was washed away, the graves were laid open, and a coffin floated down the stream a considerable distance. The church was so much damaged, that a new chapel was built soon after the flood.

The summer of the following year was remarkable for a great and general drought. At York, the river to the base of the middle arch of Ouse Bridge was completely dry for several yards round.

No public transaction of material consequence occurred in the City or County of York, from the period of the accession of William and Mary till the memorable rebellion of 1745. In the annals of England there have been many struggles for the Crown, sometimes terminating favourably on one side, sometimes on the other; that which took place between the Pretender, the lineal descendant of our Scottish Kings, and the House of Hanover, is one of the most memorable, and is the last that we have had in England in the shape of civil war and bloodshed. Many of the most powerful of the Scottish chieftains—renowned for the antiquity of their families, their extensive domains, and the affection borne them by their dependents—were arrayed on the side of the Pretender. The attachment of the highland clans to their

chieftains, and which is undying, is transmitted from generation to generation, and to this time it remains in nearly all its patriarchal purity. Relying upon the ancient affection which subsisted between his family and these hardy mountaineers, the Chevalier, Prince Charles Edward Stuart, eldest son of the Pretender—and, as he is generally called, the “Young Pretender”—resolved to try his fortune amongst them, and regain for his family that rule which had formerly resided with his progenitors. For this purpose, after escaping the vigilance of the English cruisers, which, from information received by the English Government, had been sent out to intercept him, he landed on the coast of Scotland, on the 25th of July, 1745.

The first account of his landing was scarcely credited; and when the news had become fully established, all Europe was astonished at the daring enterprise. Upon promulgating his intentions, the brave clans assembled around him, hoisted their banners, and early in November he marched southward, and entered England with the Duke of Perth, the Marquis of Tullibardine, the Earl of Kilmarnock, and an army of about 8,000 or 9,000 men. On the 9th of that month they laid siege to Carlisle, which was feebly garrisoned; and on the 15th, the gates were thrown open to the rebel army, and Charles Edward was proclaimed King of England at the cross in the Market-place. The Corporation attended the ceremony in their robes, with the mace and sword carried before them, and on their knees they presented the keys of the City to the Prince. From Carlisle the Scots marched southward as far as Derby, at which point divisions arose amongst them; they hesitated, retreated, and arrived at Carlisle on the 19th of December, in great confusion, the Duke of Cumberland's horse pressing upon their rear. Next day, the Prince moved northward, leaving four hundred men in the garrison of Carlisle. The Duke reached the latter City on the 21st, at the head of his army, and commenced the siege. The rebel garrison, animated with great courage and fidelity to their Prince, made a gallant but unavailing defence, for, on the 30th of December, the Castle was surrendered to the King's troops, and the garrison was made prisoners of.

Of the Manchester regiment who surrendered themselves prisoners, there were Colonel Townley, five Captains, six Lieutenants, seven Ensigns, one Adjutant, and ninety-three non-commissioned officers; and in addition to the Governor and Surgeon, there were sixteen officers, and two hundred and fifty-six non-commissioned officers and private men of the Scotch, making a total number of three hundred and ninety-six prisoners, including Coppock, commonly called the “*Mock Bishop*.” Many of the officers, including Townley, Governor of the City, and Hamilton, Governor of the Castle, were

executed in London, with all the revolting and disgusting details observed in cases of high treason ; and their heads were exhibited on Temple Bar, London Bridge, and in public situations in Carlisle, Manchester, and other places. Many others who were concerned, afterwards died on the block, including the Earl of Derwentwater ; about fifty were executed as deserters in different parts of Scotland ; and eighty-one suffered as traitors after the decisive battle of Culloden, which was fought in the month of April following, and which sealed the fate of Charles Edward, who then became a fugitive, and at length escaped to France, after the failure of the second attempt of the expelled House of Stuart to restore themselves to the throne of their ancestors.

During this rebellion, the City as well as the County of York gave the most unequivocal proofs of loyalty to the reigning dynasty. The Archbishop projected an Association, consisting of more than eight hundred of the principal nobility, gentry, and clergy, of the County, which was formed at the Castle of York, on the 24th day of September, 1745. A subscription was immediately entered into, and the sum of £81,420. was raised for the support of the Government and the defence of the County. John Raper, the Lord Mayor, convened a meeting of the inhabitants for the same purpose, when the subscription in the City amounted to £2,240., and to £220. in the Ainsty. With these sums four companies of infantry, of seventy men each, exclusive of sergeants, corporals, and drummers, were raised, and designated the "Yorkshire Blues." They remained embodied about four months, the superior officers serving without pay, and the sergeants receiving 14s., the drummers, 10s., and the privates, 7s. per week. Another military body, called the "Independents," was formed for the defence of the City, by the gentlemen and other principal inhabitants. Their uniform and accoutrements were purchased at their own expense, and the corps remained under arms ten months.

On the 29th of May, 1746, the Prince of Hesse passed one night in York, on his way from Scotland to London. On the 23rd of July, in the same year, his Royal Highness the Duke of Cumberland, on his return to London from the defeat the rebels at the battle of Culloden, visited York, and was received with all the honours due to his illustrious rank and eminent services. On this occasion the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Sheriffs, presented him with the freedom of the City in a gold box. A number of the rebels were tried and convicted at York, and of these twenty-two were executed. The heads of two of them, William Conolly and James Maynes, were fixed upon poles over Micklegate Bar, from whence they were stolen in the night of the 28th of January, 1754, by a tailor of York, named William Arundell, assisted

by his journeyman. Arundell was tried and convicted for the offence at the Spring Assizes following, and sentenced to pay a fine of five pounds, and to be imprisoned two years.

In 1757 the new regulations for levying the Militia, which obliged the poor to contribute equally with the rich, produced a spirit of insubordination in the North and East Ridings of Yorkshire, and on the 15th of September, a large body of the country people, from more than thirty parishes, assembled at York, with intent to prevent the constables from presenting the lists of men subject to the ballot. Armed with clubs and other unlawful weapons, they proceeded to the Cockpit-house, without Bootham Bar, where the Deputy Lieutenants and Chief Constables were to have assembled; and not meeting with the first named officers as they expected, they forced the lists from such constables as were in attendance, and after drinking all the liquors, they demolished the house. They then plundered and destroyed the house of Mr. Bowes, on the opposite side of the street, and threatened to pull down the houses of other persons whom they considered as promoters or favourers of the Militia Act. At length the rioters were prevailed upon to disperse, by the Lord Mayor and High Sheriff; and at the ensuing Assizes several of them were tried and acquitted. Only one, named George Thurloe, received sentence of death, but his punishment was afterwards commuted to transportation for life. A man of the name of Cole was condemned and executed for being the leader of a riot, on the same occasion, in the East Riding.

On the 18th of July, 1761, Edward, Duke of York, passed through this City on his way to Scarborough, whither he was going for the benefit of his health. During his sojourn at the latter place, the Lord Mayor (Thomas Bowes, Esq.), the Recorder (Peter Johnson, Esq.), and two senior Aldermen, waited upon his Royal Highness, to request that he would honour York, on his return, by spending some time in the City. The Duke was pleased to accept the invitation, the Manor House was offered for his accommodation, and on the 19th of August he arrived at York. He alighted at the Minster, surveyed that splendid edifice, and then proceeded to the Mansion House, the streets being lined with Colonel Thornton's militia. At the Mansion House the royal visitor was received by the Lord Mayor, Recorder, Aldermen, and Sheriffs; and the freedom of the City was presented to him, in a gold box of the value of one hundred guineas. The Duke dined with the Lord Mayor, the Earl of Gainsborough, and a great number of the gentry, at the Mansion House; and in the evening he opened a ball at the Assembly Rooms, with the sister of Sir John Lister Kaye, Bart., then High Sheriff of the County. He lodged that night at the Mansion House, and on the

following morning repaired to the race-ground, where he reviewed Colonel Thornton's militia. He breakfasted at the Grand Stand, and after communicating the usual compliments of satisfaction, &c., proceeded to London.\*

The King of Denmark, attended by many of his nobles and a numerous retinue, favoured York with a short visit on the 31st of August in the same year. His Majesty was pleased to receive the formalities of the Corporation; and the following day he left York, after viewing the Cathedral and the Assembly Rooms; and he returned by way of Leeds and Manchester to London.

On the 8th of January, 1762, war was formally declared in York against the King of Spain; and on the following day a similar declaration was read at the Castle, by the under Sheriff, in the presence of the High Sheriff of the County, attended by two regiments of militia and several gentlemen.

In the same year a violent hurricane was experienced at York. It commenced at nine o'clock on the evening of Saturday, the 1st of December, and continued till eight the next morning. Part of the battlement at the west end of the Minster was blown down, and many houses in the City were very much damaged.

Edward, the royal Duke, who derived his title from this ancient metropolis, again visited York on the 18th of August, 1766; and on that occasion he patronized the national sport, by honouring with his presence the races on Knavesmire. Never was a more brilliant race meeting at York than this. On Sunday, his Royal Highness attended Divine service at the Cathedral, at the west door of which he was received by the residentiary Canons and choir, as well as by the Lord Mayor, Recorder, and Aldermen, and conducted to the Archiepiscopal throne. On Monday he set out for Mr. Cholmley's seat, at Housham, on his way to Scarborough; and on the 6th of September he left Scarborough, and passed through York, en route to the Earl of Mexborough's seat at Methley, from whence he proceeded to London.

Count de Guignes, the French Ambassador, being on a tour to the north, passed through York on the 22nd of October, 1772. He was honoured with a guard of General Mordaunt's dragoons; but not approving of the formality, he gave the men twelve guineas, and dismissed them. In the month of September, 1777, a slight shock of an earthquake was experienced at York; but it was felt more violently at the same time at Leeds and Manchester.

In the year 1779, the inhabitants of the Yorkshire coast were frequently thrown into a state of alarm by that intrepid Anglo-American buccaneer,

\* Hargrove's History of York, vol. i., p. 236.

Paul Jones. "This man had formerly been in the service of the Earl of Selkirk, whence he was expelled with disgrace," writes Allen,\* "and having repaired to America, he volunteered to make a descent on the British coast. Being at first entrusted with the command of a privateer, he landed on the coast of Scotland, and, in resentment, plundered the mansion of his former master; he also burnt several vessels at Whitehaven, and performed a number of other daring exploits. These services insured his promotion, and procured him the command of a small squadron, consisting of the *Bon Homme Richard*, and the *Alliance*, each of forty guns; the *Pallas*, of thirty-two guns; and the *Vengeance*, armed brig. With this force he made many valuable captures, insulted the coast of Ireland, and even threatened the City of Edinburgh. On Monday, the 20th of September, 1779, an express arrived at Bridlington, from the bailiffs of Scarborough, with intelligence that an enemy was cruising off the coast. The same night the hostile squadron was descried off Flamborough, and it was soon discovered that Paul Jones was the commander. In the night of Tuesday, a large fleet of British coasting vessels sailed into the bay of Bridlington, and the harbour became so completely crowded, that a great number could only find security in being chained to each other on the outside of the piers. Two companies of the Northumberland Militia, then quartered in the town, were called to arms by beat of drum after midnight, and the inhabitants, armed with such weapons as could be most readily procured, proceeded to muster at the Quay, while a number of the more opulent were making preparations for sending their families into the interior. Business was now completely at a stand, and the attention of all was directed to the expected invasion. On Thursday a valuable fleet of British merchantmen, from the Baltic, under the convoy of the *Serapis*, Captain Pearson, of forty-four guns; and the Countess of Scarborough, Captain Piercey, of twenty-two guns, hove in sight, and were chased by the enemy. The first care of Captain Pearson was to place himself between the enemy and his convoy; by which manœuvre he enabled the whole of the merchantmen to escape in safety into the port of Scarborough. Night had now come on, but the moon shone with unusual brightness. About half-past seven o'clock the thunder of the cannon announced that the engagement had commenced, and the inhabitants of the coast, on hastening to the cliffs, were presented with the sublime spectacle of a naval engagement by moonlight. The battle raged with unabated fury for two hours, when at length Captain Pearson, who was engaged by the two largest of the enemy's frigates, was

\* History of Yorkshire, pp. 194, 195.

compelled to surrender. Captain Piercey made also a long and gallant defence against a superior force, but he was in the end obliged to strike to the Pallas. The enemy purchased the victory at a prodigious price, not less than three hundred men being killed or wounded in the *Bon Homme Richard* alone, which vessel received so much injury, that she sunk the next day with many of the wounded on board."

In 1782 orders were issued by Government for a general Association, to enable the inhabitants of Britain to resist an invasion, said to have been intended by the Monarchs of France and Spain, assisted by the Dutch. In answer to this order, a corps of gentlemen volunteers were embodied at York, who provided their own arms and accoutrements, but were under no other control than that of the civil magistrates; and four companies of men in humbler life were embodied, supported, and paid out of a general subscription raised for the purpose, and to which the Corporation generously voted the sum of £500.\* The latter corps, however, were under military law, and were liable to be marched out to any part of the Kingdom, in case of actual invasion or rebellion.

On the 20th of July, 1782, that celebrated statesman, the Marquis of Rockingham, Lord Lieutenant of the County, was buried in the Cathedral with much ceremony and solemnity. Several members of a political society formed in York, under the patronage of this distinguished nobleman, and in honour of him called the "Rockingham Club," assembled in the Minster Yard, and thence proceeded in a body to Dringhouses, about one mile and a half from the City. At this place they met the corpse, attended by a numerous cavalcade, which they joined; and the procession, which consisted of about two hundred citizens on horseback, two and two; several gentlemen bearing banners, bannerols, &c., attended by pages; the hearse, bearing escutcheons, and containing the body, in a coffin covered with crimson velvet superbly ornamented; six mourning coaches with six horses each, and twenty carriages with the principal gentlemen of the County and City; moved with slow and solemn pace to the Cathedral. The body was placed in the choir during evening prayers, and then deposited in the vault with great solemnity.

In the winter of 1784, which was exceedingly severe all over Europe, the river Ouse was firmly frozen during eight successive weeks. The labouring classes of society suffered much, but a subscription was raised, and bread and coals were distributed gratis to upwards of 6,000 indigent individuals. The price of coals was so enhanced with the carriage by land, that they were

\* Hargrove's History of York, vol., p. 257.



sold at thirty shillings per chaldron. The effects of the thaw were very unpleasant. The Ouse rose so high that the houses in many parts were inundated, and the inhabitants were obliged to move about in carts.

On Monday, the 31st of August, 1789, the Prince of Wales, afterwards King George IV., accompanied by his royal brother, the Duke of York, visited the races of this City. Their Royal Highnesses arrived in their carriage, and alighted at some distance from the Grand Stand, where they rode about on horseback, to gratify public curiosity with a sight of their persons. At the conclusion of the day's sport they entered the carriage of the Earl Fitzwilliam, and proceeded towards the City. At Micklegate Bar the populace took the horses from the carriage, and drew them through the streets amidst loud congratulations. The following day the Corporation presented the Heir-apparent with the freedom of the City, in an elegant gold box; and on Thursday in the same week, his Royal Highness dined with the Lord Mayor, at the Mansion House, in company with the Dukes of Norfolk, Bedford, and Queensberry; the Earls of Derby, Kinnoul, and Fauconberg; the Lords Clermont, Downe, Loughborough, Henry Fitzgerald, Rawden, Grey, Fitzroy, Fielding, and George Henry Cavendish; Sir William Milner, Sir Thomas Dundas, Sir James Sinclair, Sir George Armitage, &c. On the following Saturday these two royal personages proceeded to Castle Howard, the seat of the Earl of Carlisle, having previously ordered Lieutenant Colonel St. Leger to pay into the hands of Walter Fawkes, Esq., High Sheriff of the County, two hundred guineas for the relief of debtors in the Castle. They also gave twenty guineas for the purpose of clothing some female convicts, who had been ordered for transportation; and, in addition to these benevolent donations, the Prince of Wales discharged the debts of three prisoners in Ouse Bridge Gaol, and performed several other acts of charity.

That eminent statesman, Charles James Fox, visited York on Monday in the August race week, 1791, and whilst approaching the City, seated in a carriage with the Earl Fitzwilliam, the populace took the horses from the carriage, and drew it through the principal streets to the Deanery. A grand dinner was given to him, and many noblemen and gentlemen, at the Mansion House, and he was presented with the freedom of the City, in a gold box of the value of fifty guineas.

On the 13th of January, 1792, a singular meteoric appearance—an aerial army—was observed near the village of Stockton-in-the-Forest, about four miles from York, by many persons of credit and respectability. This strange atmospherical phenomenon resembled a large army, in separate divisions, some in black and others in white uniforms; one of these divisions formed a

line that seemed nearly a mile in extent, and in the midst of which appeared a number of fir trees, which moved along with the line. These aerial troopers moved with great rapidity and in different directions.\*

In the month of June, 1794, the country at large being in a very unsettled state, the respectable inhabitants of York enrolled themselves in different corps of infantry, and provided themselves with uniforms, arms, &c.; but the non-commissioned officers were regularly paid, by a general subscription raised for that purpose, towards which the Corporation contributed £500. This loyal body of infantry assembled on Knavesmire, on the 28th of December following, when they were presented with colours by the Lady Mayoress, in the name of the ladies of York.

In November, 1795, Prince William Frederick of Gloucester visited Scarborough, and, on his return to the south, spent some time in York, and was presented with the freedom of the City in a gold box, with the usual formalities. He left York on the 12th of January, 1796.

In 1805, the Right Hon. John, Earl of St. Vincent, the great naval commander, honoured this City with a visit, and received its freedom in a box of "Heart of Oak."

At the Assizes held at York, in March, 1809, Mary Bateman, a celebrated

\* On the 23rd of June, 1744, about seven o'clock in the evening, troops of horsemen were seen riding along the side of Souterfell (Cumberland) in pretty close ranks, and at a brisk pace. Opposite Blake Hills they passed over the mountain, after describing a kind of curvilinear path. They continued to be seen for upwards of two hours, the approach of darkness alone preventing them from being visible. Many troops were seen in succession, and frequently the last but one in a troop quitted his position, galloped to the front, and took up the same pace with the rest. About twenty-six persons in perfect health saw these aerial troopers.—*Clarke's Survey of the Lakes*. Similar phenomena were seen at Harrogate, on the 28th of June, 1812; and near St. Neots, in Huntingdonshire, in 1820. Aerial phenomena of a like nature are recorded by Livy, Josephus, and Suetonius; and a passage in Sacred History seems to refer to a like circumstance. (See Judges, ix., 36). Philosophers account for these appearances on the principle of atmospherical refraction. Many in this country considered them as ominous of the great waste of blood spilt by Britain in her wars with America and France. Shakespeare says, in the tragedy of *Julius Cæsar*,—

"There is one within,

Recounts most horrid visions seen to night:  
Fierce fiery warriors fought upon the clouds,  
Which drizzled blood upon the Capitol;  
The noise of battle hurled in the air,  
And ghosts did shriek and gibber in the streets.

\* \* \* \* \*  
When these prodigies do so conjointly meet,  
Let no man say they are natural; for I believe  
They are portentous things unto the climate that they point upon."

"Yorkshire Witch," was tried and condemned for murder. This wretched creature had previously lived in York as a servant, but left it in disgrace, being charged with a petty theft, and retired to Leeds, where she married. For a long period she practised the art and mystery of fortune telling at Leeds, deluding multitudes, defrauding them of their property under the false pretence of giving them a "peep into futurity." To enable her to accomplish her villany, and in order to prevent detection of the fraud, there is reason to believe that, with the aid of the poisonous cup, she closed the mouths of many for ever. For one of these murders she was committed to York Castle, tried, found guilty, and on Monday, the 20th of March, she was executed, at the new drop behind the Castle, in the presence of an immense concourse of people; and such was the stupid infatuation of the crowd, that many are said to have entertained the idea, that at the last moment she would evade the punishment, about to be inflicted, by her supernatural powers. And to view her lifeless remains—perhaps with a view of proving that she was of a verity dead—crowds of people assembled at Leeds, though the hearse did not arrive there till near midnight, and each paid threepence for a sight of the body; by which thirty pounds accrued to the benefit of the General Infirmary.

On the occasion of his Majesty George III. having entered the fiftieth year of his reign, the anniversary, October 25th (1809), was celebrated throughout the country as a day of jubilee. At York, several hundred pounds were collected at a public meeting, and expended—not in wasteful and unmeaning illuminations—but in feeding the hungry, and relieving the indigent. Public breakfasts, ward dinners, private treats, and balls were "the order of the day." The Archbishop treated sixty-four debtors in the Castle with beef, bread, ale, and coals; and even the felons shared in the festivity. There was a partial illumination in the City; and the soldiers in the barracks fired a *feu de joie*, and illuminated their apartments.

On the 26th of August, 1822, the City of York was honoured with a visit from his Royal Highness the Duke of Sussex, brother to the reigning Monarch of that day, George IV. The Royal Duke partook of the hospitalities of the Corporation at the Mansion House, where a public dinner was given to him. The freedom of the City was presented to him in a gold box, accompanied by an address expressive of the admiration of that "splendid career of useful beneficence and spirited patriotism which gave a brilliant lustre to his exalted birth." The Duke was on this occasion the guest of Robert Chaloner, Esq., M.P. for the City. In the year 1841 the same noble Duke paid a second visit to York, for the purpose of holding a grand masonic

lodge. He then sojourned at the York Tavern (now Harker's Royal Hotel), which for some time afterwards was called the Royal Sussex Hotel.

Since the reign of Charles I., York, which was, as we have seen, in former times the residence of Emperors and Kings, had not been visited by any English Sovereign (though it had often been honoured with the presence of different branches of the Royal family) down to the time of our present Queen. In September, 1835, her Majesty, then the Princess Victoria, and her mother, the Duchess of Kent, visited York and were received with the most unbounded loyalty. The Royal party attended the musical festival at the Minster on each of the four days upon which it was held, and during their stay at York, they were the guests of the Archbishop at Bishopthorpe Palace. For his attention to these illustrious visitors, the Lord Mayor (the late Sir John Simpson) received the honour of knighthood from his late Majesty, William IV., in 1836.

On the 21st of July, 1846, the Archeological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland held their annual meeting at York, under the presidency of Earl Fitzwilliam. The members visited the different objects of interest in the City and neighbourhood, and an exhibition of British Antiquities was held in St. Peter's schoolroom in the Minster Yard.

In July, 1848, his Royal Highness the late Duke of Cambridge, accompanied by his son George, the present Duke, and other illustrious personages, attended the annual show of the Royal Agricultural Society at York, and dined with the company in the large pavilion erected for that purpose in St. George's Close.

On the 28th of September, 1849, the Queen, the Prince Consort, and the Royal children stopped at York on their return from Balmoral (their Highland residence) to London, on which occasion the royal party partook of luncheon at the Station Hotel; a loyal address was presented by the Lord Mayor, and great rejoicings were made on the occasion.

On Friday, the 25th of October, 1850, York was the scene of a magnificent festival, which must be remembered as one of the most interesting events in civic history; whether regarded for the splendour of the assembly, or in connection with the great event which it was mainly designed to propitiate; namely the great Industrial Exhibition of the products of all nations in the Crystal Palace, erected in Hyde Park, London, in 1851.

The Lord Mayor of London having given a grand entertainment with the same patriotic object; and at which his Royal Highness Prince Albert and the Mayors and chief magistrates of the principal towns in the Kingdom were

present; it was thought but natural that this example should be followed by the great Corporations of the country. It was, accordingly, agreed at a meeting of the Mayors and other civic authorities held at Derby, to carry out the proposition of the Lord Mayor of York, the Right Hon. George H. Seymour, to give a return banquet in this City. A subscription was entered into for the purpose of enabling the Lord Mayor of York, in conjunction with the municipalities of the United Kingdom, to receive the Prince Consort and the Lord Mayor of London, at a banquet of becoming magnificence. The preparations were on the most splendid scale, and, as was well remarked by the leading journal of the day, "York, the home of the Roman Emperors, when London was comparatively neglected by the masters of the ancient world, made a display worthy of the far-famed City, that gave a grave to Severus and to Constantine Chlorus, and afforded a rallying cry to the haughty factions which fought for the English throne."

The Guild-Hall was fitted up for the occasion in most superb style; and invitations were issued for 248 guests, the full extent of the accommodation afforded by that splendid room. Prince Albert arrived by railway from London, and was received at the York station by the Lord Mayor of York, attended by a guard of honour, and was conducted to Lord Wenlock's carriage, which was in waiting, and in which the Prince drove to the Mansion House, attended by an escort. His Royal Highness was received at the Mansion House by a guard of honour of the Second, or Queen's Dragoon Guards, under the command of Col. Campbell, the band of the regiment playing the National Anthem. The Prince was conducted to the state room of the building, where several persons were presented to him. At the Reception, the Lord Mayor of York appeared in a crimson silk robe, lined with shot-pink satin; this being, according to Dugdale, the peculiar robe of the privileged Chief Magistrate of this ancient City when appearing before royalty.

Amongst the distinguished company at the banquet were his Royal Highness Prince Albert, the Right Hon. the Lord Mayor of London, the Right Hon. the Lord Mayor of York, the Lord Provost of Edinburgh, the Archbishop of York, Lord John Russell, the Marquisses of Clanricarde and Abercorn, the Earls of Carlisle, Granville, Fitzwilliam, and Minto, Lords Beaumont, Feversham, and Overstone, Sir George Grey, Bart., Sir Charles Wood, Bart., the Hon. Beilby R. Lawley, the High Sheriff of Yorkshire, Sir C. Tempest, Bart., Hon. O. Duncombe, General Sir W. Warre, Sir J. V. B. Johnstone, Bart., the Members of Parliament for the City, the Recorder, the Sheriff of York, Richard Cobden, Esq., and nearly one hundred Mayors and

heads of Boroughs. The general appearance of the fine old Gothic hall was elegant in the extreme. The great west window was covered with crimson cloth, in order to secure a better effect to a magnificent ornamental design of M. Soyer's, erected in front of the window, and immediately behind the great circular table, at which sat the chief guests. It consisted of a large emblematic vase, twenty feet in height, painted and modelled by Mr. Alfred Adams. Around the vase was Britannia receiving specimens of industry from the four quarters of the globe. Round a palm tree, which sprung from the centre, were the Arms of London and York. Medallion portraits of the Queen and Prince Albert, surrounded by the shields of the principal cities and towns in the United Kingdom, formed the body of the vase. Two figures of Ireland and Scotland formed the handles; the Prince of Wales's emblem, the neck; and the Royal Arms, the apex. Appended were graceful wreaths of flowers, in which predominated the symbols of the Houses of York and Lancaster, the red and white rose; and when a brilliant flood of gas-light, aided by powerful reflectors, was thrown upon this splendid decoration, the effect was very beautiful. The whole of this part of the hall was profusely and elegantly adorned with crimson drapery, vases of flowers, evergreens, banners, &c.

In front of the principal table, on a raised platform, covered with purple cloth, was a collection of maces, state swords, and valuable civic insignia, belonging to the various Corporate bodies; and these ancient maces, which had been wielded by generations of Mayors, with the velvet sheaths and gaudy mountings of the gigantic swords of state, formed a picturesque group. The walls of the hall were hung with crimson cloth to the height of about ten feet, as were also the oak pillars. Above were suspended several of the full length portraits from the Mansion House. The banners of the several Mayors, suspended from the roof arcades, the gallery, &c., were characteristically splendid; they bore the Arms of the several Cities and Boroughs whence they were sent; the banner of York, worked by the Lady Mayoress, was conspicuous to the right of the chair, and the banner of London to the left. At the east end of the hall was erected a handsome gallery, for an orchestra and a limited number of ladies to witness the banquet. It was ornamented with crimson drapery, oil paintings, banners, evergreens, flowers, &c. Besides the ordinarily pendant gas lights between the pillars of the arcade on each side, there were in the body of the hall eight variegated Gothic lanterns; three suspended from the roof in the north aisle; three in the south aisle; one at either end of the middle aisle, in the centre of which there was a chandelier, its pendant stem entwined with the figure of a serpent formed in gas. The two pillars of the Hall nearest the royal table were

wreathed with evergreens and flowers, and serpentine gas-lights, and the gallery was lit with pillars of gas and Gothic lanterns. The tables shone with epergnes, plateaux, centre pieces heaped up with pines, grapes, and the richest fruit, with silver plate beneath innumerable lights. Among the embellishments were various productions in patent glass silvering, prepared expressly for the occasion, as being peculiarly appropriate to a festival to celebrate the approaching congress of the artistic industry of all nations. These specimens consisted of gilt, silvered, and bronze figures, bearing large globes of silvered glass. There were also three drinking cups, one for the Prince, and one each for the Lord Mayors of London and York; the first in ruby glass, portions of the rim and base internally checkered with silver, and on the sides bearing sunken medallions of her Majesty and his Royal Highness Prince Albert, and the Royal Arms of England. The other two cups were of the same size and shape, but instead of being ruby and silver, the colours were emerald and silver; and on the sides were the private arms of each of the Lord Mayors, together with the usual heraldic emblazonments of the Cities of London and York respectively. The uncertainty of the Lord Mayor of Dublin's arrival prevented a cup being prepared for him.

After grace had been pronounced at the close, as at the beginning of the banquet, "the loving cup" was passed round after the customary welcome was delivered in the name of the Lord Mayor to all his guests, in the usual civic fashion, by Mr. Harker, the London toast master, amid a flourish of trumpets.

The banquet was prepared under the superintendence of M. Soyer; and one dish alone on the royal table cost the immense sum of one hundred guineas. The chief items in this Apician group were turtle and ortolans. The wines for the royal table were ordered at an unlimited price from Messrs. Chillingworth and Son, of London, wine merchants to the Queen.

There was a grand concert and ball in the Assembly Room during the evening, and the whole City was brilliantly illuminated. Prince Albert, who was the guest of the Lord Mayor of York on the night of the banquet, retired from the company at midnight, and left the Mansion House at eight o'clock on the following morning. He was accompanied to the Railway Station by the Lord Mayor, the Marquis of Abercorn, Colonel Grey, Colonel Seymour, and others; and upon his departure for London he thanked the Lord Mayor in the most flattering terms for the very satisfactory arrangements which had been made for his comfort and accommodation.

On Thursday, the 14th of September, 1854, her Majesty the Queen, accompanied by the Prince Consort, and five of the youthful Princes and Princesses (including the Prince of Wales), and the ladies and gentlemen of

the royal household, stopped at York *en route* for Balmoral, and partook of luncheon at the Station Hotel. The whole of the Railway Station was entirely cleared of carriages, and the ground between the rails being re-laid with gravel, gave it a neat and clean appearance. The arrival platform, for nearly its entire length, was covered with a beautiful tapestry carpet of splendid colours and design. On this platform were placed tables covered with suitable drapery, and upon them stood elegant vases of flowers. The platform entrance of the Hotel was decorated with flowers and evergreens, and immediately in front of it, in the pit of the Station, stood the band of the Seventh Hussars, while a detachment of the same regiment took up a position along the southern side of the pit. Lower down, and on both platforms, were stationed three hundred of the Second West York Light Infantry, under the command of Colonel Smyth, M.P.; the band of that regiment occupying a position at its head. About one o'clock the royal train entered the Station, and the royal party were received by the Lord Mayor (George Leeman, Esq.), the Archbishop of York, the Earl of Carlisle, and the Railway Directors. The excitement of the hundreds who thronged the opposite platform attained its highest pitch when they caught a glimpse of the royal party. The heads of the gentlemen were uncovered, the soldiers presented the royal salute, while from the whole mass there rose one general, thrilling "huzza," which, mingling with the National Anthem, struck up at first by the Militia band, and caught up afterwards by that of the Hussars, formed one grand and enthusiastic oblation to Royalty, amid which the Queen, leaning on the arm of her royal consort, followed by five of her children in a row, and her suite, walked along the carpeted path to the hotel, and on her way repeatedly acknowledging the loyal plaudits of her subjects. The Lord Mayor walked along with the royal couple to the hotel, where they were conducted into a handsomely furnished room set apart for the purpose of refreshment, and from which a good view of the Minster, the Museum, St. Mary's Abbey, &c., is obtained.

The room was decorated at one end by a device, consisting of the initials "V. R." and "P. A.," formed of white artificial flowers, arranged on a crimson ground, the whole being surrounded with flowers and evergreens; and over the door was placed a representation of the Prince of Wales' feathers, also encircled with dahlias and evergreens, and bearing the motto, "*Ich dien*."\* The table was provided with the most sumptuous viands, wines,

\* The Bohemian crest, viz:—three ostrich feathers, and the motto *Ich dien* (I serve), was adopted by Edward the Black Prince, at the Battle of Cressy, in 1346, the King of Bohemia being slain in that battle.



grapes, pines, &c. Two or three of the Royal suite partook of refreshments with her Majesty, while the remainder were accommodated, in suitable style, in an adjoining apartment.

The interval of half an hour, during which the royal visitors remained in the hotel, was enlivened by the performance of the two bands. The royal party then re-appeared on the platform in the same order as that which characterized their arrival, and proceeded towards the train, which consisted of nine carriages, the one occupied by her Majesty being in the centre. The bands struck up once more "God save the Queen"—the spectators cheered their loudest—the soldiers again gave the royal salute, and after a few words with the Archbishop and the Earl of Carlisle, her Majesty, the Prince, and the Royal family, entered the train. The Lord Mayor and several others of the North-Eastern board of directors then took their places in one of the carriages, and the train proceeded towards the north amidst the loud plaudits of an immense number of human beings who had assembled on the City walls, Tanner-row, Toft-green, and the entire district abutting on the line. The train was accompanied by electrical telegraph apparatus, so that in case of an accident, a communication could be made immediately for aid.

On her return from Scotland, on the 13th of the following month, her Majesty *en suite* visited the towns of Kingston-upon-Hull and Great Grimsby. The royal party arrived in the former town on the evening of that day, and were received by the Mayor and Corporation, the Magistrates and other civic officers of the Borough, as well as by the Earls of Carlisle and Yarborough, Lords Londesborough and Hotham, Sir Clifford Constable, the Lord Mayor of York, the Mayor of Beverley, the foreign Consuls, and the elite of the town and neighbourhood. Her Majesty *en suite* were lodged that night at the Station Hotel, the town was brilliantly illuminated, and on the following morning the royal party made a progress through the principal streets of the town, and through the docks, amidst the hearty acclamations of many thousands of persons. After conferring the honour of Knighthood on the Mayor (Sir Henry Cooper), at the Corporation Pier, her Majesty departed in the royal yacht, the *Fairy*, about eleven o'clock on the same day for Grimsby. Thence the illustrious visitors proceeded by railway to London, and arrived at Windsor on the same evening.

Since the above-mentioned period, the Queen and royal family, en route to and from Scotland, have several times honoured York with their presence to luncheon (at the Royal Station Hotel), it being the most central station between the two great capitals of England and Scotland. The ceremony on each occasion was very similar to that already described.

CIVIL GOVERNMENT, TITLES, &c.—The civil government of Yorkshire was anciently lodged in the Earl or Count to whom it was committed by the King; and in time it was intrusted to a person duly qualified, who was called Shire-reve, i.e., Sheriff or Governor of a Shire or County. Before the 9th Edward II. (1316), this officer was elected by the freeholders; but since that time, the appointment has been made by the Sovereign. His office is to execute the King's writs, return juries, and keep the peace; and his jurisdiction is called a Bailiwick, because he is the Bailiff of the Crown. York has had its own High Sheriff from the 3rd of William the Conqueror, 1069.

The office of *Lord Lieutenant* appears to have been introduced early in the reign of Henry VIII. The statutes of Philip and Mary speak of them as officers well known at that time, though Camden mentions them in the time of Queen Elizabeth, as extraordinary magistrates, constituted only in times of difficulty and danger.\* The Lord Lieutenant is nominated by the Lord Chancellor, and is always a justice of the quorum, and to him the nomination of the Clerk of the Peace belongs. There are three of these officers for the County of York; one for each of the three Ridings.

The office of *Custos Rotulorum*, or Keeper of the rolls and records of the session of peace, is of considerable antiquity, but has been of late years annexed to that of Lord Lieutenant.

Before the Conquest the Comites, or Earls of Northumberland, were also Governors of the City and County of York. Morcar was the last Earl of Northumberland before the Conquest, and he remained so till in the year 1069 he revolted, and William gave this Earldom to Robert Copsi, or Comins; and he being slain, the Conqueror then bestowed it on Cospatric, who being deprived of it in 1072, he lastly gave the Earldom of Northumberland to Waltheof, the son of Siward. Some authors doubt whether the City and County of York were included in this grant; and seem rather to consider that it was only the present County of Northumberland and the Bishopric of Durham over which he presided. From this era Yorkshire was wholly discharged from the government of these Earls, and was placed under the jurisdiction of the vice-comites (anciently substitutes to the Earls), or High Sheriffs of the County.

William le Gros, Earl of Albemarle, a great commander, was, by King Stephen, after the victory over the Scots at the famous battle of the Standard, in 1138, made *Earl of Yorkshire*, or according to some, Earl of York. This is the first and only mention that we find in history of a titular Earl of

\* Manning and Bray's Surrey, vol. i., p. xxv. introduction.

Yorkshire. The first and only *Earl of York* was Otho, Duke of Saxony, son of Henry Leon, Duke of Bavaria, by Maud, the daughter of Henry II., King of England. This title was conferred upon Otho by his uncle, Richard I., during his sojourn in England in 1190. Whereupon some performed homage and fealty to him, but others refusing, the King gave him as an exchange, the County of Poitiers.

In the 9th of Richard II. (1385), amongst several other creations, Edmund of Langley, fifth son of Edward III. and Queen Philippa, was made the first *Duke of York*. This Prince died at his Manor of Langley, and was interred in the Priory there. Edward Plantagenet, Duke of Albemarle, his eldest son, after the death of his father succeeded to the Dukedom of York in 1406. He was slain at the famous battle of Agincourt, in 1415, and left no issue. The third Duke of York was the illustrious Richard Plantagenet, nephew of the second Duke, and son of Richard, Earl of Cambridge, who was executed for treason against Henry V. This nobleman having been restored to his paternal honours by Henry VI., and allowed to succeed to his uncle's inheritance, was one of the most powerful subjects in the Kingdom. Being a descendant of King Edward III., he claimed the Crown of England, and levied war against the King, which lasted for thirty years, and deluged the land with blood. (See page 153.) He was killed at the battle of Wakefield, and Queen Margaret caused his head to be cut off and fixed over Micklegate Bar, York.\* Richard was a brave man, but deficient in political courage, and was worthy of a better fate. Edward Plantagenet, the fourth Duke of York, the eldest son of the last Duke, prosecuted his father's pretensions, and after the battle of Towton, he was proclaimed King of England, under the title of Edward IV., and thus the Dukedom of York became merged in the royal dignity. This Monarch was remarkable for beauty of person, bravery, affability, and every popular quality, but in the end he defiled his fame and power by effeminacy and cruelty.

Richard Plantagenet, of Shrewsbury, fifth Duke of York, second son of Edward IV., was created by his father when very young, on May 28th, 1474. This unfortunate Prince is supposed to have been murdered in the Tower of London, with his eldest brother, Edward V., by order of their uncle, the Duke of Gloucester, afterwards Richard III., in 1483.

The sixth was Henry Tudor, the second son of King Henry VII., who was created Duke of York on the 1st of November, 1491; and Prince of Wales, on the death of his brother Arthur, February 18th, 1503; and on the death of his royal father he succeeded to the throne, under the well

\* "So York may overlook the town of York."—*Shakespeare*.

known name of Henry VIII., and this dignity again became merged in the Crown. From this period it has been customary to confer the Dukedom of York on the second son of the Sovereign.

The next was Charles Stuart, second son of James I., who, when a child not full four years old, was created Duke of York. He was afterwards King of Great Britain, and the title again merged in the Crown.

The eighth Duke was James Stuart, the second son of King Charles I., who was declared Duke of York at his birth, by his royal father, and so entitled, but not so created till January 27, 1643, by letters patent, bearing date at Oxford. Afterwards he ascended the throne of Great Britain, and the title merged in the Crown for the fourth time.

On the 29th of June, 1716, the 2nd of George I., that Monarch created his brother Ernest Augustus, Duke of Brunswick and Lunenburgh, Bishop of Osnaburgh (a nominal prelacy, to which the Elector of Hanover has the power of influencing the election alternately with another European power), Earl of Ulster in Ireland, and Duke of York and Albany in Great Britain; the honours to descend to the heirs male of his body, but he died without issue.

Edward Augustus, second son of Frederick Prince of Wales, born in March, 1738—9, was the tenth Duke of York, his Royal Highness having been raised to that dignity by his Majesty George II., on the 1st of April, 1760. On the 31st of March, 1761, he was appointed Rear Admiral of the Blue; and in the course of a tour through Europe, he visited Monaco, capital of the principality of that name, in the territories of Genoa, in Upper Italy, where he was seized with a malignant fever, of which he died on the 7th of September, 1767.

Frederick, the eleventh and last Duke of York, was brother of his Majesty King George IV., and second son of King George III., by whom he was advanced to the dignities of Duke of the Kingdom of Great Britain, and Earl of the Kingdom of Ireland, by the titles of Duke of York and of Albany in Great Britain, and Earl of Ulster in Ireland. His Highness was born on the 16th of August, 1763; and on the 27th of the following February he was elected Bishop of Osnaburgh. From his earliest age he was destined for the military profession, the study of which formed an essential part of his education. His first commission in the army was that of Colonel, which was dated November 1st, 1780; he was appointed to the command of the 2nd regiment of Horse Grenadier Guards on the 23rd of March, 1782; Major-General on the 20th of November following; and Colonel of the Coldstream Guards, with the rank of Lieutenant-General, on the 27th of October, 1784. On the 27th of the following month he was created Duke of York, &c., after these titles

had been extinct for seventeen years—from the period of the death of his uncle Edward, in 1767. On the 29th of September, 1791, he was married at Berlin to Frederica Charlotta Ulrica Catherine, only child of King Frederick William of Prussia, by his first consort, Elizabeth Ulrica Christiana, Princess of Brunswick-Wolfenbuttel. The royal pair were, on their arrival in England, re-married at the Queen's house on the 28rd of November following. On the occasion of his marriage the Duke had voted him by Parliament the sum of £18,000. per annum; and the King settled on him £7,000. for his Irish revenues, which, in addition to the £12,000. per annum he before enjoyed, constituted a yearly income of £37,000. At the same time the sum of £8,000. per annum was voted to the Duchess, in case she should survive.

In 1793 the Duke was called into active military service by being appointed to the command of an army ordered for Flanders, to form part of the grand army under the Prince of Saxe Coburg. After the campaign, which lasted for several months, the Duke proceeded to England to concert with the British government the plans and measures for the ensuing campaign. His Royal Highness returned in the month of February, 1794, from England to Courtrai—the British head-quarters, and in a few days the new campaign had begun. It is not within the scope or province of this history to follow the Duke through his numerous engagements, suffice it to say that after a series of successes, and a succession of disappointments, the allies were at length no longer able to oppose the enemy, and on the 14th of April, 1795, the different British brigades embarked for England.

In February, 1795, the Duke of York was appointed to the important post of Commander-in-Chief of the army, and in 1799 he again appeared in the field. He landed at Holland on the 13th of September, and the force under his command, including 1,000 Russians, amounted to nearly 35,000 men. An engagement with the French took place on the 8th of October, in which the enemy was entirely defeated, with a loss exceeding 4,000 killed, and 3,000 taken prisoners. The British lost about 1,500 men. In another engagement, which followed soon after, the Duke was again master of the field of battle, though the loss amounted to 1,200 British and 700 Russians. On the 17th of October a suspension of arms was agreed on, and it was stipulated that the English and Russians should be allowed to evacuate Holland, on condition that 8,000 seamen, either Batavian or French, prisoners in England, should be given up to the French.

In July, 1814, and again at the same period in the following year, both Houses of Parliament passed a vote of thanks to the Duke of York for the

benefits he had bestowed on the nation as Commander-in-Chief in the wars then concluded. After the death of Queen Charlotte, in 1818, the Duke was appointed custos of the person of his afflicted father, with a parliamentary grant of ten thousand pounds per annum. The last prominent act of this royal Duke's life, was his defence of the Protestant constitution of the country, delivered in the House of Lords, April 25th, 1825. His Royal Highness died on the 5th of January, 1827, and his remains lay in state in St. James's Palace for several days, and were deposited in the royal vault at Windsor on the 20th of the same month. On the decease of the Duke the title of York became extinct; but it is probable that Prince Alfred, the second son of our present Queen, will be created the next Duke of York.

The following is a list of such places in Yorkshire as have been the capital residences of Barons by tenure, or by writ of summons; or have given title to Peers created such by letters patent:—\*

Aske—*B* Sir Thomas Dundas, second Baronet by patent, August 13, 1794. Baron Dundas, of Aske.

Beverley—*M* James Douglas, second Duke of Queensbury, in Scotland, by patent, May 26, 1708. Extinct on the decease of his son, 1778.

2 *E* Algernon Percy, second Baron Louvaine of Alnwick, by patent, November 2, 1790.

Bingley—*B* Robert Benson, by patent, July 21, 1713. Extinct on his decease in 1730.

Bolton—*B* Thomas Orde, by patent, October 20, 1797.

Burlington—*E* Richard Boyle, second Earl of Cork, by patent, March 20, 1664. Extinct in 1735.

Carleton—*B* John de Bella Aqua, by writ of summons, June 8, twenty-second of Edward I., 1294.

2 *B* Henry Boyle, by patent, October 20, 1714. Died in 1725, when the title became extinct.

8 *B* Richard Boyle, second Earl of Shannon, by patent, August 6, 1786.

Cleveland—*E* Thomas Wentworth, fourth Baron Wentworth, by patent, February 5, 1626. Extinct on his death, 1667.

2 *D* Barbara Villiers, mistress of Charles II., by patent, August 3, 1670. Extinct 1774.

Cowick—*B* John Christopher Burton Downay, fifty Viscount Downe, by patent, May 28, 1796. Baron Downay, in England.

Craven—*E* Viscount Craven, of Uffington, Berks., by patent, March 15, 1663.

Danby—*E* Henry Danvers, first Lord Danvers, by patent, February 5, 1626. Extinct on his death, 1643.

2 *E* Thomas Osborne, first Viscount Latimer, by patent, June 27, 1674.

Doncaster—*V* James Hay, first Baron Hay, by patent, July 5, 1618. Extinct 1660.

\* *B* stands for Baron; *V*, for Viscount; *D*, for Duke or Duchess; *M*, for Marquis; and *E*, for Earl.

- 2 *E* James Fitz Roy (assumed the name of Scot), natural son of Charles II., by patent, February 14, 1663. Beheaded 1685, when the title became forfeited.
- 3 *E* Francis Scot, third Earl of Dalkeith, and heir to the last-mentioned Earl. Restored by Act of Parliament, March 23rd, 1743.
- Duncombe Park—*B* Charles Duncombe, by patent, July 14, 1826. Baron Feversham, of Duncombe Park.
- Eserick—*B* Thomas Knyvet, by writ of summons, July 4, 1607. Extinct at his death.
- 2 *B* Edward Howard, younger son of the Earl of Suffolk, by patent, April 20, 1628. Baron Howard of Eserick. Extinct 1714.
- Gisburne Park—*B* Thomas Lister, by patent, October 26, 1797. Baron Ribblesdale of Gisburne Park.
- Halifax—*V* Sir George Savile, Bart., by patent, January 18, 1668. *E* July 16, 1679. *M* August 22, 1682. Extinct 1700.
- 2 *B* Charles Montagne, by patent, December 4, 1700. *E* October 14, 1714. Extinct 1772.
- Harewood—*B* Edwin Lascelles, by patent, July 9, 1790. Extinct on his death in 1795.
- 2 *B* Edward Lascelles, by patent, June 18, 1796. *E* September 7, 1812.
- Holderness—2 *E* Odo, Earl of Champagne. Temp. William I.
- 2 *E* John Ramsay, first Viscount Haddington, by patent, January 22, 1621. Extinct on his death, 1625.
- 3 *E* Rupert, Count Palatine of the Rhine, by patent, January 24, 1644. Extinct on his death, 1682.
- 4 *E* Conyers D'Arcy, second Baron D'Arcy, by patent, December 5, 1682. Extinct 1778.
- Holme-in-Spalding-Moor—*B* Marmaduke Langdale, by patent, February 4, 1658. Extinct 1777.
- Kingston-upon-Hull—*E* Robert Pierrepont, first Viscount Newark, by patent, July 25, 1628. Extinct 1773.
- Kiveton—*B* Sir Thomas Osborne, by patent, August 15, 1673.
- Lanesborough—*B* Richard Boyle, second Earl of Cork, by patent, November 4, 1664. Baron Clifford, of Lanesborough. Extinct 1735.
- Leeds—*D* Thomas Osborne, first Marquis of Carmarthen, by patent, May 4, 1694.
- Leppington—*B* Robert Carey, by patent, February 6, 1662. Baron Carey, of Leppington. Extinct 1661.
- Long Loftus—*B* Charles Tottenham Loftus, first Marquis of Ely, in Ireland, by patent, January 19, 1801.
- Malton—*B* Thomas Wentworth, by patent, May 28, 1728. *E* by patent, November 19, 1734. Extinct 1782.
- Markenfield—*B* Fletcher Norton, by patent, April 9, 1782.
- Middleham—*B* Ribald, brother to Alan, second Earl of Brittany, by tenure. Temp. William I.
- Mulgrave—*B* Constantine John Phipps, second Baron Mulgrave in Ireland, by patent, June 16, 1790. His brother created *E* by patent, September 7, 1812.
- Normanby—*V* Henry Phipps, third Baron Mulgrave, by patent, September 7, 1812.
- Northallerton—*V* George Augustus, Prince Electoral of Hanover, afterwards George II., by patent, November 9, 1706. Merged in the Crown on his accession.

- Pontefract—*B* Ilbert de Lacy, by tenure. Temp. William I.  
 2 *B* John Savile, by patent, July 21, 1682. Baron Savile, of Pontefract. Extinct 1671.
- 3 *B* George Fitz Roy, natural son of Charles II., by patent, October 1, 1674. Extinct on his death, 1716.
- 4 *E* Thomas Fermor, second Baron Lempster, by patent, December 27, 1721.
- Ravensworth—*B* Bardolph, Baron Fitzhugh, by tenure. Temp. William I.
- Rawdon—*B* Honourable Francis Rawdon, by patent, March 5, 1783. *E* by patent, December 7, 1816.
- Richmond—*E* Alan Fergaunt, Earl of Brittany, created by William I. for his services at the battle of Hastings. Extinct 1536.
- 2 *D* Ludovick Stuart, second Duke of Lennox, by patent, May 17, 1623. Extinct on his death, 1624.
- 3 *D* James Stuart, second Earl of March, by patent, August 8, 1641. Extinct 1672.
- 4 *D* Charles Lennox, natural son of Charles II., by patent, August 9, 1675.
- Ripon—*B* James Douglas, second Duke of Queensbury, in Scotland, by patent, May 26, 1708. Extinct 1778.
- Ross—*B* Peter de Roos, by tenure. Temp. Henry I.
- Rotherfield—*B* Robert de Grey, younger son of Henry I., by tenure.
- Sandbeck—*V* James Saunderson, first Baron Saunderson, by patent, 1716. *E* 1720. Extinct on his decease, 1723.
- Scarborough—*E* Richard Lumley, first Viscount Lumley, by patent, April 15, 1690.
- Settrington—*B* Charles Lennox, natural son of Charles II., by patent, August 9, 1675.
- Sheffield—*B* John Baker Holroyd, first Baron Sheffield, by patent, July 29, 1802.
- Stittenham—*B* Sir John Leveson Gower, fifth Baronet, by patent, March 16, 1703. Baron Gower, of Stittenham.
- Skelton—*B* Robert Bruce, second Earl of Elgin, in Scotland, by patent, March 18, 1664. Extinct at his death.
- Tadcaster—*V* Henry O'Brien, Earl of Thomond, in Ireland, by patent, October 19, 1714. Extinct on his death, in 1741.
- 2 *B* William O'Bryen, by patent, July 3, 1826.
- Towton—*B* Sir Edward Hawke, by patent, May 20, 1776. Baron Hawke, of Towton.
- Waith—*B* Thomas Wentworth, by patent, November 19, 1734. Extinct 1782.
- Wakefield—*E* Robert Ker, son of John, first Duke of Roxburgh, in Scotland, by patent, May 24, 1772. Extinct 1804.
- Wentworth Wood House—*B* Sir Thomas Wentworth, second Baronet, by patent, July 22, 1628. *V* by patent, December 10, 1628. Extinct 1695.
- Wharnccliffe—*B* James Archibald Stuart Wortley Mackenzie, by patent, July 12, 1826.
- Whorlton—*B* Thomas Bruce, first Earl of Elgin, in Scotland, by patent, August 1, 1641.
- Wortley—*B* Mary, daughter of Edward Wortley Montague, by patent, April 3, 1761. Baroness Mount Stuart, of Wortley.
- Yarum—*B* Sir Thomas Bellasayse, second Baronet, by patent, May 25, 1627. Baron Fauconberg, of Yarum. Extinct 1815.



# The City of York.

This fine old City, the capital of the great County to which it gives name, and the See of an Archbishop, is, in point of dignity, the second City in the Empire. Its origin and the etymology of its name, are equally involved in the obscurity of upwards of twelve centuries. In Nennius' Catalogue it is called *Caer*,\* or *Kaer Ebrauc*, or the City of Ebraucus, and is the first of that list of cities. Geoffrey of Monmouth, Bishop of St. Asaph, a chronicler of the twelfth century, tells us that it was founded by Ebraucus, the son of Mempricius, a British King, the third from Brute, in the year of the world 2983, about the time when David reigned in Judea, and Gad, Nathan, and Asaph prophesied in Israel. It is also affirmed, chiefly on the same authority, that Ebraucus likewise built *Aclud*, supposed by some to be Aldborough, and by others Carlisle, as well as *Mount Agnea*, the Capital of Scotland; that he reigned sixty years, and had twenty wives, by whom he had twenty sons and thirty daughters; and that he died at York, and was buried in a Temple dedicated to the goddess Diana, which he had erected on the spot where now stands the ancient Church of St. Helen, in St. Helen's Square.†

Though this story of King Ebraucus, his cities, his children, and his wives, has been repeated by several antiquarians, yet the whole account is little regarded at the present day, and is generally believed to have long since passed into the catalogue of exploded errors, to which the ignorance or the credulity of every age makes some addition. According to Humphrey Llwyd, the learned Welsh antiquary, York is identified with the City termed by the Britons *Caer-Effroc*; and among the towns of the Brigantes mentioned by Ptolemy with the *Eboracum* of the Romans. Another writer conjectures that a colony of Gauls, which were driven by the Romans from Spain and Portugal, had seated themselves here in Mid-England, and made their chief station at York, to which they gave the name of Eboracum, from Eborā, a town in Portugal, or Eburā, in Andalusia.‡ The plain fact appears to have been, that the locality where York now stands, was called by the ancient Britons *Kaer*, and that in all probability it was as thickly inhabited as any

\* Nennius, Abbot of Bangor, wrote a History of the Britons in A.D. 620, which was published by Gale. *Caer* or *Kaer* is a British word, signifying Seat or City.

† Gent says that tradition assures us that the Minster was built on the site of this Pagan Temple of Diana.

‡ Sir Thomas Widdrington's MSS.

other part of the island. And with respect to its general appearance we suppose that it resembled the other fortresses or stations of the numerous tribes that inhabited the country. Cæsar (whose great boast was, and the glory that has been given to him, that he could wield his pen as well as his sword, and describe his battles as well as he could win them) tells us in his *Commentaries*, that when he came to Britain, the builders knew nothing of building with stone, but called that a town which had a thick entangled wood, defended with a ditch and bank, about it.

The Romans called this City *Eboracum* or *Eburacum*, but its present appellation, York, has given rise to much discussion, and a variety of conjecture prevails upon the subject. Leland and Camden are of opinion that the river Ouse was anciently called *Ure*, *Eure*, or *Yours* (but this point is not clearly established), and that the Saxons added the termination *wic*. According to the author of "Restitution of Decayed Intelligence in Antiquities," the City of York was called *Caer-Efroc* by the ancient Britons, but its appellation was changed by the Saxons to *Ever-wyk*, from the words *ever* or *eber* a wild boar, and *wyc* a place of refuge or retreat. Its present name, he says, is obviously derived from *Everwic*, which by vulgar abbreviation became *Voric* and lastly *York*. If it could be proved that the river had formerly retained the name of *Eure* as low as the City, it would appear almost unquestionable that the name was derived from *Eurewic*, a place of retreat or strength on the *Eure*; and the same might in popular pronunciation be readily corrupted to that of *York*. Worsac, the learned author of "The Danes and Northmen in Britain," gives the following derivation of the name *York*:—"The Briton called *York*, *Caer Eabhroig* or *Eabhroic*; the Anglo-Saxons, *Eoforwic*; and the Danes, *Jorvik*; whence it is plain that the form *York* now in use is derived."

In Domesday Book, *York* is called, *Civitas Eborum*, and *Eurwic*. Alcuin, a celebrated scholar in his time, and a native of *York*, writing near a thousand years ago, says, that the City was built by the Romans; and he has left his testimony in Latin verse, of which the following is a translation;

This City, first, by Roman hand was form'd,  
With lofty towers and high built walls adorn'd;  
It gave their leaders a secure repose,  
Honour to th' empire, terror to their foes.

Drake is of opinion that *York* was founded by the Romans. "It is probable to me," writes he, "that this City was first planned and fortified by *Agricola*, about A.D. 80, whose conquests in the island stretched beyond *York*; and that that General built here a fortress to guard the frontiers after his return."

The early importance of the place must unquestionably be attributed to the Romans who made it the Metropolis of their Empire in Britain. The builders of it were probably the Roman soldiers themselves, who were accomplished masons, being trained to use the pick-axe, spade, and trowel, as well as military arms. They called it *Civitas Brigantium*, (the title of *Civitas* applied to Rome itself), as well as *Eboracum* or *Eburacum*.

The resemblance which York bore to the form of ancient Rome is rather remarkable. Fabius's plan of Rome represents it in the form of a bow, of which the Tiber was the string, as the Ouse may be said to be the bow-string of York. Like Rome, *Eboracum*, although entirely a military colony, seems to have been governed both by military and municipal laws, for the Emperors themselves sometimes sat there in person in the *Prætorium*, and from this chief tribunal gave laws to the whole Empire. York, therefore, may be regarded as the picture of Rome in miniature, and as possessing a just claim to the titles of "*Brittanicæ Orbis, Roma Altera, Palatium Curia, and Prætorium Cæsaris*," with which it is dignified by Alcuin.\*

"From the circumstance of the Ebor, now called the Ouse, running directly through the City," says Allen, "York was more capable of augmenting its commercial concerns than *Isurium* (now *Aldbrough*, near *Boroughbridge*, the town or fortress supposed to have been the capital of the *Brigantes*, and afterwards a Roman Station), which was situated near the river *Ure*; and also of furnishing the Romans, who were peculiarly partial to their hot and cold baths, with an ample supply of water. Here then, doubtless, was the cause of preference; and hence it might receive a name indicative of its situation; for although *Urica* and York are not exactly the same, if we recollect the Romans were succeeded by the Saxons, the difference may be purely dialectic."†

When the Emperor *Hadrian* came into this island in A.D. 124, he took up his station at York. The Emperor *Severus* lived and held his Court in the *Prætorium* Palace for more than three years, and he died there in the month of February, 211. (See page 56.) A rescript of law is still preserved in the Roman Code, issued by this Emperor from *Eboracum*, on the 3rd of the Nones of May, in the Consulate of *Fustinus* and *Rufus*, corresponding to the year 211, relating to the recovery of the right of possession of servants or slaves.

Drake tells us, that at that period this City shone forth with meridian

\* Alcuin Ap. Leland Coll. 6. † Hist. Yorks., Book iii., p. 4.

splendour; and that the concourse of tributary Kings, of foreign ambassadors, and Roman nobles, which crowded the Courts of the Sovereigns of the world, when the Roman Empire was in its prime, elevated Eboracum to the height of sublunary grandeur.

There was a Temple dedicated to Bellona, the goddess of war, erected at York before the time of Severus, which is supposed to have stood without Bootham Bar, near the ruins of St. Mary's Abbey. Before the Temple stood a small column, called the martial pillar, whence a spear was thrown when war was declared against an enemy. It may here be observed that Temples dedicated to Bellona, who was the sister of Mars, were not allowed to be erected, except in Rome or in the principal Cities of the Empire.

In the next century Carausius caused himself to be proclaimed Emperor at York. Constantius or Constantine Chlorus, another Roman Emperor, held his Court for some time in the Imperial Palace at York, and died there in July, A.D. 306. His son and successor, *Constantine the Great*, has been erroneously believed by many writers to have been born at York. The precise place of the birth of Constantine is described by an ancient writer to be "*Paterna in Eboracensi civitate.*" Hence probably the tradition that the first Christian Emperor was a native of this City. However that may have been, it is quite certain that he received the commands of his dying father at York, and that immediately after the death of Constantius, he was proclaimed Emperor by the army, and his inauguration took place there. (See page 59.) This ancient residence of the "Lords of the Universe" began to decline after the departure of Constantine, and in the reign of Theodosius the Younger, Rome and York both declined together.

ROMAN REMAINS.—Of the splendour of the City during its occupation by the Romans, many vestiges have been discovered, and various remains of Roman architecture have been found; though, considering the long residence of that people here, these antiquities are less numerous than might have been supposed, if we did not, as Baines says, "take into consideration that fire, sword, ignorance, and superstition, have all contributed their assistance to the devouring hand of time, to erase the monuments which the imperial power had served to erect." "It may seem strange," continues the same writer, in his *Gazetteer of Yorkshire*, published in 1823, "that we have not to show any Temples, Amphitheatres, or Palaces, whose edifices must once have made Eboracum shine with distinguished lustre; but the wonder will cease when in the following pages we trace such horrid destruction of everything both sacred and profane. To our Christian ancestors we owe much of

this destruction; their holy zeal rendered them anxious to eradicate every vestige of paganism; and the Roman altars and votive monuments were naturally enough consigned to destruction under their Gothic hands."

Mr. Drake, in the appendix to his *Eboracum*, gives a catalogue of the coins, as well as many other Roman antiquities, found in York. Dr. Langwith sent Drake a catalogue of Roman coins from Augustus down to Gratianus, one hundred and twenty-four different sorts, all found in York. They are chiefly of the *Lower Empire*; and amongst them Geta's are the most common of any. A great quantity of signets, fibulæ, urns, and sarcophagi have been dug up and recovered here through a period of fifteen centuries. Camden, Burton, Drake, Thoresby, Hargrove, and other antiquaries, have described some of the most remarkable of them.

Almost all the memorials of the Romans, which have presented themselves here, have been found by digging; few of them have been discovered above ground; so that it may be justly said that modern York stands upon ancient Eboracum.

A part of a tower and wall are yet standing in York, which are undoubtedly of Roman erection. This building is now known as the Multangular Tower, and the wall which leads from it towards Bootham Bar. The tower and wall will be fully described at a subsequent page of this volume.

When digging in the north aisle of the Church of St. Cuthbert, and also on the north side of the churchyard, there have often been found Roman tiles and several fragments of sepulchral antiquities. In some parts have also been discovered, at the depth of five feet, quantities of ashes and charcoal, intermixed with human bones and broken urns, pateræ, &c. On the sepulchral tiles, which have been dug up here, was stamped LÆG IX. HISP. The foundations of a very strong wall have likewise been traced in this churchyard, in the direction from S.S.E. to N.N.W. This wall appears to be remains of a Roman or some very ancient building. The remains of a Roman wall were discovered by the workmen, whilst clearing a foundation for the present wall behind the Grand Jury room in York Castle, about fifty years ago, and upon the ancient foundation of that wall they raised the new one.

Nearly two centuries ago a *thesos* or repository for urns of a Roman family was dug up here, but it was so little regarded at York, that in time it found its way to Hull, where it served as a trough for watering horses at a public Inn! The inscription was partly obliterated, but it amounted to this—That Marcus Verecundus Diogenes, a native of Berri, in Gascoigny, and a Sevir

or Magistrate of the Roman Colony of York, died there; who, while living, made this monument for himself. The size of the theca was very large, being six feet long and three feet deep, and the stone was of a millstone grit. In digging the foundation of a house on Bishop-hill the Elder, in 1688, a small but elegant altar, with figures in *basso relievo* of sacrificing instruments, &c., on the side, was found, which was presented to Charles I., when at York, by Sir Ferdinando Fairfax. The altar bears a heathen inscription, which may be thus translated.—“To the great and mighty Jupiter, and to all gods and goddesses, household and peculiar, *Publius Aelius Marcianus*, prefect of cohort, for the preservation of his own health and that of his family, dedicated this altar to the great preserver.” The King ordered this interesting relic to be conveyed to the Manor House, where it remained some time; but Sir Thomas Widdrington, Recorder of the City, who resided at Lendal, afterwards had it in his possession; and it was lastly seen at the house of Lord Thomas Fairfax, in York, where it remained till the desertion of the house by his son-in-law the Duke of Buckingham, since which time no trace of it can be discovered. This is the earliest recorded discovery of a Roman altar at York.

In 1688 a very curious sepulchral monument was dug up in Trinity-Gardens, near Micklegate. The stone, which is almost six feet high and two feet broad and angular in form at the top, has carved upon it the figure of a Roman Signifer or Standard-bearer, standing in an arched recess, having in his right hand the Signum or Standard of a cohort, and in his left, probably, the vessel used in measuring the corn, which was a part of the Roman soldiers pay. Near the bottom is the following inscription:—

L·DVCCIVS  
L·VOLTFRVFFI  
NVS·VIEN  
SIGNIF·LEG·VIII  
AN·XXIIX  
H·S·E

which Horsley reads thus: Lucius Duccius Lucii Voltinia (Tribu) filius Ruffinus, Viennensis signifer Legionis nonæ annorum viginti octo, hic situs est. i. e. Lucius Duccius Ruffinus, son of Lucius, of the Voltinian tribe, of Vienna, standard-bearer of the Ninth Legion, aged twenty-eight, is placed (buried) here.

This remarkable relic was saved by Byran Fairfax, Esq., from demolition by the workmen who had broken it in the middle, and were about to make

use of it in a stone-wall which they were erecting. It was afterwards removed to Ribstone Hall, near Wetherby, by Sir Henry Goodrick, who first placed it in his own garden, and subsequently removed it to a more appropriate situation in the Chapel yard. It is now in the Museum of the Yorkshire Philosophical Society, having been presented by J. Dent, Esq., of Ribstone.

We are told by Mr. Drake that on the removal of a house in Friars' Gardens, near Toft Green, in the month of August, 1770, part of the foundation of a Temple of Roman brick-work was found about two feet beneath the surface of the earth. It was so firmly cemented by the mortar peculiar to Roman edifices, as to resist the stroke of a pick-axe, and its form was semi-circular; the other part being, as he supposed, under an adjoining dwelling. Upon or near to this foundation was discovered a dedicatory tablet of grit stone, three feet long, two feet one inch broad, and seven inches thick, bearing the following inscription, and some curious emblematic carved work in very fine preservation :

DEO'SANCTO  
SERAPI  
TEMPLVM'ASO  
LO'FECIT  
CL'HIERONY  
MIANVS'LEG  
LEG'VI'VIC

This inscription denotes that "Claudius Hieronymianus, Legate or Lieutenant of the Sixth Legion Victorious, had erected from the foundations a Temple to the Holy God Serapis.\* There is no doubt that this tablet had been fixed in the front of that Temple, and it was long supposed that the Temple itself stood on the spot where the foundations and the tablet were found—namely, the end of Tanner Row, near the spot now occupied by the entrance to the North Eastern Railway Station. Nothing more was discovered to further develop the site of the *Temple of Serapis* till the year

\* Serapis was a great Egyptian deity, known by the three names of Osiris, Apis, and Serapis. Memphis, Alexandria, Canopus, and Athens, had each a magnificent Temple dedicated to this idol, and his worship was introduced also at Rome, by the Emperor Antoninus Pius, A.D. 146; thence no doubt it had been brought into this country by the Romans, and thus had occasioned the erection of a Temple sacred to it in the then splendid City of Eboracum. Mr. Pegge refers the inscription on this tablet to the time of Hadrian or earlier; and adds that several coins of Nerva, Trajan, and Hadrian, were found along with it. This curious memorial of Roman idolatry, is now in the Yorkshire Museum.

1837, when the excavations were commenced for the York and North Midland Railway (now called the North Eastern) Station. At the beginning of these excavations Mr. Hargrove, the author of the *History of York*, feeling anxious to watch and keep an account of every discovery of the remains of other times, attended near the workmen early and late, and after having secured many valuable Roman relics, had the satisfaction to find and preserve a beautiful *tesselated pavement*, in the centre of which was the representation of a singular figure, the fore part of which portrayed the head, body, and forelegs of an ox, the hind part representing the twisted tail of a large fish.\* This interesting discovery at once removed every doubt respecting the Temple of Serapis. The blending of the worship of two gods in one Temple was no uncommon occurrence amongst the idolatrous nations, and here was evidently a blending of two heathen deities—*Serapis*, the God of Agriculture, and *Neptune*, the God of the Sea—the inference being exhibited in the position of each representation.

The remains of foundations of an oblong room, in which this pavement was found, were evident; the breadth of which was twelve feet, but the length could not be so clearly ascertained. At the north end was a large raised stone, forming a sort of table or altar, which was preserved. A passage at the south-west side of the room evidently led to the public baths behind. In an account of similar temples at Thebes, and other places, it is stated that there is always observable a small oblong room, which was the *adytum* or *sanctuary*, i. e., the apartment which contained the figure of the deity, and in which the priests performed those sacrifices and other rites, which were not meant for the public gaze. Its dimensions were very insignificant, but it was always surrounded by stupendous erections of various kinds, colonnades, courts, &c., with apartments for the abode of the priests.

The room and pavement of the Temple of Serapis were found opposite to Barker Lane, which is some distance up the street of Tanner Row, and nearly opposite to Trinity Church; and the remains of Roman foundations which Mr. Hargrove afterwards discovered and measured, as well as subsequent discoveries nearer to Micklegate Bar, prove beyond a doubt that the Temple had been very extensive; occupying the higher part of the ground where Tanner Row had been built in subsequent times, and ranging with its outbuildings from the bar to the place where the pavement above-described was found. It is possible that the fragment found in 1770 may have been a

\* A plate of this curious pavement from a drawing by Mr. William Wallace Hargrove, has been published.



part of the Temple of Serapis, but it was a very trifling portion comparatively speaking.

In 1814 a Roman tessellated pavement was discovered close to the rampart near Micklegate Bar, and another elegant floor of this beautiful Mosaic work was found in 1853, towards the upper part of Tanner Row.\* Mr. Hargrove thinks it highly probable that these pavements had been connected with the above-mentioned Temple or its appendages, for the remains of the public baths, which were afterwards found, were between the Temple and the Bar walls.\*

In excavating for a cellar in Ousegate, not far from what Mr. Wellbeloved supposes to be the south-east angle of the wall of ancient Eboracum, a fragment of a dedicatory Roman tablet was found, and is now in the Museum. The edifice to which it was affixed appears to have been dedicated to the deities of Augustus, and to a goddess whose name or title is lost. Of the name of the person who erected the Temple, the termination SIVS only remains.

NVMINIB AVG ET DEAE IOV...  
SIVS AEDEM PRO PARTE D...

At the same time, and in the same place, was discovered a fragment of a tablet, which recorded the restoration of a Temple, dedicated to Hercules probably by one Titus Perpetuus. The remains of the inscription are—

HERCVL...  
T'PERPET...  
AETER..  
EBVR..  
RES.

In the year 1716 a curious antique bust, five inches high by four in breadth, representing the head of a beautiful female, was found in digging a cellar near the ruins of St. Mary's Abbey. Gale, the antiquary, finding it bore the marks of Roman origin, and knowing that the Romans had not

\* These two pavements will be described at a subsequent page.

\* The pavement rescued by Mr. Hargrove—and to whose kindness we are indebted for the foregoing description of it—together with the other antique remains with which his labour and attention to the above-mentioned excavations have been repaid; as well as a large collection of other objects of interest which he had during twenty preceding years collected in York, have been transferred to the Museum of the Yorkshire Philo-sophical Society, of which he is a member. A minute description of his whole collection by himself would be interesting.

any goddess in their system of theology, supposed it had been designed to represent the head of Lucretia, the Roman matron, whose wrongs expelled the Tarquins.

In Clifton fields, without Bootham Bar, several sarcophagi, or stone tombs, and a great quantity of urns of different colours and sizes, have been found. Amongst them were two coffins, dug up in March, 1813, each containing a skeleton entire, with the teeth—the most imperishable part of man when dead, and the most liable to decay when living—completely perfect. These two last-mentioned tombs or coffins, which are unusually large, measuring seven feet four inches in length, two feet three inches in breadth, and one foot ten inches in depth, and of thick light-coloured grit, are now in the north aisle of the choir of the Cathedral. Each coffin is covered with a lid, curiously made in the form of the roof of a modern dwelling house.\* The field in which they were discovered is nearly opposite to Burton Stone, at Clifton, in which neighbourhood the principal burial-place of the Romans, who formerly inhabited this City, was situated. Campus Martus, anciently without the City of Rome, was the place where the funeral piles were lighted to consume the deceased Romans, and the presumption is that Clifton fields formed the Campus Martus of Eboracum. In Drake's Antiquities, Bootham Bar is mentioned as being the gate which led to some grand depository of their dead near Clifton village.

The various *sepulchral* remains have principally been found near Mickle-gate and Bootham Bars, in the neighbourhood of which respectively ran the old Roman roads to Calcaria (Tadcaster) and Isurium (Aldborough). These were probably therefore the principal cemeteries of Eboracum, the Romans invariably choosing the wayside of the principal thoroughfares, beyond the walls of their Cities, for the burial of their dead.

About the year 1734 a small figure of a *penate*, or household god (Saturn), was found by a person digging for a cellar in Walmgate; the composition of

\* Sepulchral chests made of stone are much more rare in Roman burial-places than those formed of tiles. They are generally very massive, formed out of a solid stone, and covered with a roof-shaped or flat lid. Massive chests or sarcophagi of this description appear, from their forms and inscriptions to have stood above ground, and they present a very peculiar mode of sepulture. After the body had been laid, apparently in full dress, on its back at the bottom of the sarcophagus, liquid lime was poured in until the whole of the body was covered, except the face. This becoming hard has preserved to a certain degree an impression of the form of the body, of which the skeleton is often found entire. Several fine examples of this mode of sepulture may be seen in the grounds and Museum of the Yorkshire Philosophical Society. It is remarkable that the Roman tombs with interments of this description found at York, generally contained the remains of ladies.

which the image is formed is a mixture of metal, and the workmanship exhibits all the elegance of a Roman mould.

About the year 1740 two very curious Roman urns were dug up near the Mount without Micklegate Bar. One of them was made of glass, and being by accident broken in pieces, the inside of it was found to be coated with a silver-coated substance, termed by philosophers, the *electrum* of the ancients. The other urn was of lead, and was sold by the workmen to an ignorant plumber, who immediately beat it together and melted it down. A pedestal of grit was also found in the same year, at no great distance from Micklegate Bar. It measured two feet high by ten inches in breadth, and bore the following Roman inscription :

BRITANNIÆ  
SANTOÆ  
PNIKOMEDES  
AUGG. N. N.  
LIBERTOS.

A Roman sepulchre of singular form was found in 1768, by some labourers who were preparing a piece of ground for a garden, near the City walls, west of the same Bar. It was formed of Roman tiles, built up in the form of a roof, and making a triangle with the ground below. On the top was a covering of semicircular tiles, of small diameter, so close as to prevent the least particle of earth from falling into the cavity, and each end of the dormitory was closed with a tile, on which was inscribed *LEG. IX. HIS.*, being doubtless the burying-place of a soldier of the *Legio nono Hispanica*.

A sculptured tablet, representing the sacrifice and mysteries of *Mithras*, was found in 1747, in digging for a cellar in a house in Micklegate, opposite St. Martin's Church. *Mithras* is the Greek form of the Persian word signifying the Sun, the chief object of worship among the Persians and other ancient eastern nations. This relic of idolatry is now in the entrance hall of the Museum.

In 1770, as some workmen were digging a drain from the north east corner of Davygate, to the corner of Lendal, they discovered the foundation of three walls or buttresses, about seven feet below the surface of the ground. They were from nine feet and a half to eleven feet and a half broad, about three feet distant from each other, and were composed of pebbles strongly cemented, the open space between the walls being securely filled with clay. Gough, the annotator of Camden says, that they were supposed to have been built by the Romans, to prevent the Ouse from overflowing the City.

In the same year were found in a gravel pit on the banks of the Ouse, about

one mile and a half east of the City, a number of ancient remains, consisting of fragments of Roman earthenware and pateræ (goblets), and within the compass of about fifty yards were likewise discovered a perfect urn with its cover, and many more pieces of pateræ and urns, some very large vessels, part of an urn of crystal, an iron flesh fork, &c. At the same time and place a strange discovery was made, of which Mr. Gough gives us the particulars. A stratum of oyster shells appeared to have been laid about two feet, in some parts three feet, and in others nearly five feet, below the surface, and above them was a sort of rich black earth, like soot mixed with oil, among which were found pieces of burnt wood. Upon this singular substance were scattered great numbers of bones of cattle, chiefly heads and ribs. Many heads of beasts were laid together in one part; and in several other parts were bones mixed with earth and fragments of earthen vessels. Near to these, about three feet below the present surface, the earth was discoloured and greasy, as though it had been soaked with blood to the depth of two feet. In the following year 1771, a similar discovery was made in another gravel pit not far from the former, and the particulars of which are also given by Mr. Gough. "Within this pit, between layers of earth and gravel," writes he, "was another of black earth intermixed with burnt wood, and under it a layer of oyster shells. In the middle of the pit was a hillock of the same strata, mixed with fragments of urns, some inscribed *Ofroni, Caius*, &c. Some of the larger ones and of the pateræ were adorned with vine and ivy branches, &c." In this pit were also found a number of antique remains, amongst which were a flesh fork, a brass needle, various fragments of urns, a large iron bolt, a whole patera with ears, some others broken, and a small urn of coarse red clay with a cover of blueish clay. These remains favour the opinion that a Roman Temple had stood in that locality, and that these were the remains of the sacrifices offered in the dark ages of pagan idolatry.

Drake mentions a Roman tablet which was discovered in digging a cellar in "Conyng Street," in the line of the Roman wall. It is now in the Museum, and is inscribed :

GENIO LOCI

FELICITER

that is, "To the Genius of the place, happily," or "prosperously." The Genius was the protecting spirit of a person or a place. The place in this instance was most probably that occupied by Eboracum; and the inscription is a short wish or prayer that the genius would be propitious to Eboracum. Mr. Thoresby, the Leeds antiquary, was living when this monument was found, and in an account of it which he sent to the Royal Society he says—

after describing it and its inscription, "If the name (of the genius) had been added, it would have gratified the curiosity of some of our *nocteric* antiquaries. But they must yet acquiesce, for aught I know, in their old *Dei*, who is said to be the tutelar deity of the City of the Brigantes. The author of this votive monument," he continues, "seems to have had the same superstitious veneration for the *genius of York*, as those at Rome had for theirs, whose name they were prohibited to mention or enquire after. Hence it is that upon their coins the name of this deity is never expressed but in a mere popular manner, by *Genius P.R.*, or *Pop. Rom.*"

A massive brass flagon was also turned up by the plough, in a field near York, weighing seventeen pounds four and a half ounces, and calculated to contain five modern pints. This vessel stood on three legs, and the top of the lid exhibited a head or face, apparently connected with the heathen mythology.

A small Roman votive altar of stone, six inches high, and six inches in breadth at the base, bearing a Roman inscription, somewhat impaired by time, but from which it appears that this relic was dedicated by a soldier of the Sixth Legion to the mother of the Emperor Antonius Pius, was found in Micklegate by the workmen, while digging a drain in the middle of the street. Several other Roman remains were discovered with this altar, about eight or ten feet below the surface; and the workmen met with two or three firm pavements of pebbles, one below another, beneath which were several fragments of beautiful red glazed pateræ, adorned with figures of gods, birds, and vines, and one of them inscribed *ianvf*; there were also several small altars and an earthen lamp, with some Roman coins of Constantine the Great.

The following remains have been found in the present century, and for ages yet to come the inexhaustible mines of antiquarian wealth on which the City of York stands, will doubtless yield their contributions to the cabinets of the curious. In June, 1802, the workmen, while digging for the foundations of the new gaol, near the site of the Old Bailie Hill, found about one hundred silver pennies of William the Devastator, in good preservation, though it is probable that they had lain in the ground nearly eight centuries. According to Leland, a Castle anciently stood on this site. The most venerable sepulchral remains which have been presented to the antiquary for many years, were discovered in September, 1804, by the workmen while digging a large drain in the Minster Yard, from south to west of the Cathedral. After passing through a stratum of human bones, under which were two coffins, hollowed out of the solid stone, the workmen came to eleven or twelve coffins, each formed of stone (apparently from the quarries of Malton), loosely placed

together, without cement or fastening. Each of these coffins was covered with a rough flag, four inches thick, under which skeletons were found laid on the bare earth, the coffins being without bottoms. The situation being wet, some of the coffins contained a quantity of clear water, through which the skeletons appeared entire, but when the water was removed, and the bodies were exposed to the air, they crumbled into dust. The singular form of these coffins; the rough manner in which they were constructed; and their depth in the earth, prove their great antiquity, and confirm the belief that they were vestiges not merely of Roman or Saxon times, but that they contain remains of our aboriginal ancestors.

On Monday, the 17th of August, 1807, while the workmen were preparing the foundation for a building near the Mount, in the suburbs of York, a Roman sepulchral vault or chamber was discovered about four feet from the surface, which was eight feet long by five feet wide, and six feet high, built of stone and arched over with Roman brick. A coffin of rag-stone grit, about seven feet long, occupies nearly the whole of the vault, and in the coffin is a human skeleton entire, with the teeth complete, supposed to be the remains of a Roman lady, consigned to the mansion of the dead from fourteen to seventeen centuries ago. Near the skull, which is remarkably small, was found a small phial or *lachrimatory*, in which vessels the ancients are said to have deposited the tears which they shed for their departed friends. The workmen also found at the same time, not far from the vault, a large red coloured urn, in which were ashes and the partially burnt bones of a human body. This ancient sepulchre, together with the skeleton, is still preserved in its original state, for the inspection of the curious, and the house which contains it is now in the occupation of Mr. George Flower.

About the beginning of the present century several Roman fragmentary remains were found at the Mount, near York; amongst them was part of a coffin bearing the following inscription:—

ME....AL'THEODORI  
ANI' .OMEN'VIXIT'ANN  
XXX'V'M'VI. EMI'THEO  
D...A' MATER'E'C

We learn from this inscription, though it contains some difficulties to an interpreter, that it was designed to preserve the memory of Theodorianus, of Nomentum (probably), who lived thirty-four years and six months, by his mother Theodora. Also a fragment of a monumental tablet, containing the following portion of the original inscription:—

....O'C FIL  
 ...O'VARIA  
 .....X'HISP'HERE  
 ....PATRONO  
 ...ENTI'FECERVNT

A grateful tribute, it is probable, paid to a patron by some person who had received from him their freedom. An infant's feeding bottle was also found near the Mount, and is now in the Museum.

In 1813 two stone coffins, seven feet in length, three feet wide, and six inches thick, were dug up in a gravel pit near Fulford Church, in each of which was a human skeleton, and a small quantity of a white substance resembling lime saturated with grease. These coffins are each cut out of a solid block of stone.

In excavating for the Railway, near the bridge in Holdgate Lane, a Roman altar was found. It has no inscription, but as it bears the figures of three females, it is supposed to have been dedicated to the *Deæ Matres*, or *Matronæ*, female deities, three in number, supposed to have been introduced into Britain by the German auxiliaries. These three figures are represented on the front of the altar, sitting in a recess; on the right side of the altar is a single male figure, and on the left two male figures. These are thought to have been designed to represent the Emperor Septimus Severus, and his sons Caracalla and Geta. The fourth side, which is much defaced, seems to have been the representation of an altar, and an animal standing before it. This antique relic of pagan Eboracum is now deposited in the Museum. In the excavations at the same place a coffin was found, bearing the following inscription:—

D'M'SIMPLICIAE FLORENTINE  
 ANIME INNOCENTISSIME  
 QVE VIXIT MENSES DECEM  
 FELICIVS SIMPLEX PATER FECIT  
 L'E'G'VI'V

“To the Gods, the Manes.\* To Simplicia Florentina, a most innocent being, Felicius Simplex, her father, of the Sixth Legion Victorious, dedicated this.” No mother's name appears, says Mr. Wellbeloved, “a circumstance which suggests the probability of the birth of this darling child having been marked

\* The word *Manes* denotes the souls of the departed, “but as it is a natural tendency to consider the souls of departed friends as blessed spirits, they were called by the Romans *Dii Manes*, and were worshipped with divine honours.”

by a lamentable event that gives still greater interest to this tribute of paternal affection." This altar, together with the whole of the following antiquities, forms part of the valuable collection in the Museum at York. In the excavation for the same railway, part of a sepulchral monument was turned up. The letter M alone, denoting "Manibus," remains.

An altar was recently discovered in the rubble foundation under one of the pillars of the Church of St. Dennis, Walmgate, York, inscribed:—

DEO.  
ARCIACON  
ET N° AVGSI  
MAT VITALIS  
ORD V° S° LM°

Which may be read thus, DEO Arciacon et Numini Augusti Simatius Vitalis Ordovix Votum solvit libens merito, i. e. "To the God Arciacon and to the Divinity of Augustus, Simatius Vitalis, one of the Ordovices, discharges his vow willingly, deservedly,"—namely, by dedicating this altar. There is nothing in the inscription to indicate its date.

An altar was found in the Roman Baths, discovered in excavating the site of the Railway Station. The inscription is—

DEAE  
FORTVNAE  
SOSIA  
IVNCINA  
Q° ANTONI  
ISAVRICI  
LEG° AVG°

Rendered thus—"To the Goddess Fortune, by Socia Juncina, the daughter of Quintus Antonius Isauricus, of the Legion Augusta." This altar must have been erected here during the first half of the second century of the Christian era, as the Legion Augusta, which came into Britain with Claudius, took up its head-quarters at Caerlon, in South Wales, after it had been in the north with Hadrian and Antoninus Pius.

In 1835 two coffins were found in the Castle yard, York, one of which bears this inscription:—

D°M  
AVR° SVPERO° CENT  
LEG° VI° QVIVIXITANIS  
XXXVIII° MIIII° DXIII° AVRE  
LIA° CENSORINA° COIVNX  
MEMORIAM° POSSVIT



“ To the Gods, the Manes. To the memory of Aurelius Superus, a Centurion of the Sixth Legion, who lived xxxiii. years, iv. months, xiii. days, Aurelia Censoria his wife set up this.”

In 1810 several fragmentary remains of the Roman period were found below one of the piers at the south end of the old bridge over the Ouse, in York. A very singular and remarkable Roman tomb was discovered in 1848, not far from the entrance through the City wall to the Railway Station. It was composed of ten large slabs of grit stone, and contained the remains of a body, which had been placed in a coffin of wood, and covered with lime. The coffin had almost entirely perished, but the lime remained, exhibiting a cast of the body, over which it had been poured. This cast is deposited in the Museum, and the tomb is in the ruins of the Chapel of St. Leonard's Hospital.

In 1833 a tomb was discovered near Dringhouses, on the road to Tadcaster, formed of roof tiles and ridge tiles, which bear the impress of the Sixth Legion; erected, it is probable, over the ashes of a soldier of that Legion. It contained nothing but a layer of the remains of a funeral pile, consisting of charcoal and bones, with several iron nails. A tomb of the same kind, but of smaller dimensions, was found not far from the City walls, near the entrance to the Railway Station. It was probably the tomb of a soldier of the Ninth Legion, the tiles being stamped LEG IX.

In 1831 a Roman tomb or coffin was discovered in Heslington field, about a mile from York. It contained some few remains of the body of a female, which had been covered with lime in a liquid state. This lime, which exhibits a cast of the body, together with some trinkets imbedded in it, may be seen in the Museum. The coffin is deposited in the Multangular Tower.

A plain altar was found in a garden in Lord Mayor's Walk, some years ago; and another small plain altar was discovered in 1851, by a person digging for sand, in a lane on the south side of Dunnington Common, near York.

Amongst the many relics of the Roman period which were discovered during the excavations for the Railway, are the remains of Roman baths, which presented themselves whilst clearing the site of the Station. There is a curious model of these remains in the Museum. In 1841 the relics of a human body, which had been deposited in lime in a liquid state, was found in a stone coffin near the entrance through the rampart to the Railway Station. The remains of another body, with the leaden coffin in which it had been buried, were also found near the terminus of the Railway, as well as three smaller coffins of lead, containing the bones of children; and the whole were deposited in the Museum. In 1849 some burnt wheat was found in

Jubbergate, at the depth of sixteen feet below the surface, on the site, it is supposed, of a Roman granary which had been destroyed by fire.

In July, 1851, a Roman coffin was found about three feet below the surface, near Skeldergate Postern, by the side of the road leading to Bishopthorpe. It contained a cast of the bodies of a female and a child, now deposited in the Museum. The body of the child appears to have been placed, as the impression of the lime represents it, between the legs of the woman, who was probably its mother. The garments in which they were buried appear to have been ornamented with crimson or purple stripes, of a texture something like velvet or plush; portions of the coloured fibre being found adhering to the lime.

On the site of the office of the Yorkshire Insurance Company, amongst the foundations of buildings, was found, some years ago, part of a drain, which is interesting as a specimen of Roman sewerage; and as being illustrative of the Roman method of constructing walls of alternate courses of brick and stone.

At Aldborough, the site of the ancient *Isurium*, numerous specimens of tessellated pavements have often been found, but it was not till the year 1814 that any remains of this kind were discovered in York. In the month of April in that year a beautiful specimen of this Mosaic work was laid bare, adjoining the rampart, in Bar Lane, near Micklegate Bar. It appeared to have been four yards square, and for some years it was enclosed and preserved on the spot upon which it was discovered, and exhibited to the curious. This being the first Roman tessellated pavement found in this ancient Roman City, a beautiful coloured engraving of it was published by Mr. Fowler, of Winterton, and well it was that he did so, for the Corporation (having purchased the property upon which it stood) presented it to the Yorkshire Philosophical Society, and it was broken into fragments in its removal to the Museum, and but very little of it was preserved. The spot upon which it was laid is now the soil pit of the Jolly Bacchus public house. Mr. Hargrove; as we have already observed, thinks that this and the next pavement to be noticed had been connected with the great Roman Temple of Serapis.

In Toft Green, not far from the site of the last-mentioned ancient flooring, another beautiful Roman tessellated pavement was discovered, fourteen feet below the present surface, in 1853. It is nearly perfect, and measures fourteen feet three inches square. When perfect, the pattern was chiefly composed of the common labyrinthine fret, and five heads; one in the centre representing Medusa, and four in the corners personifying the four Seasons of the year—*Spring*, with its feathered songster; *Summer*, with its flowers

and fruit; *Autumn*, with its hay rake; and *Winter*, with its dry and leafless branch. Immediately beneath it were found an empty urn, covered with a square tile; a coin, first brass of Hadrian, and a third brass coin of Claudius Gothicus, with the legend DIVO. CLAVDIO on the obverse; proving that this pavement was not laid down before A.D. 270, the year in which Claudius died. About twelve or fourteen inches below this pavement, a floor, composed of cement, was found, on which were scattered many tessellæ, finished and unfinished, and a piece of iron, conjectured to be a tool used in shaping them.

So partial were the Romans to tessellated pavements, that it was customary with them, when on a march, to be accompanied with a man, who was styled *tesserarius*, or chequerman, from carrying a sack with tesserae, or chequered dies of coloured stones, with which he paved or inlaid the platform where the commanding officer thought fit to pitch his tent.

Near the line of the York and Newcastle Railway, on the site of the house erected for the residence of the Secretary, was found, in the year 1840, upwards of two hundred Roman silver coins, which, with the vessel in which they were deposited, are now in the Yorkshire Museum. Five of them are of the Consular or Family series, much worn, and illegible; eighteen are denarii of some of the early Emperors; the rest range from Septimus Severus to M. Jul. Philippus. Many belonging to the later Emperors appear to have been cast in moulds, and not to have been in circulation.

In the month of September, 1854, the workmen employed in sinking a shaft for constructing a deep drain in Church Street, cut through what was considered to be a Roman Wall, and in the centre discovered a leaden pipe six feet long, about four inches and a half diameter inside, made of very thick lead, in a peculiar manner, with a socket on the outside to join to the pipe. A few days afterwards, whilst excavating for a branch drain in the same street, the workmen laid bare the remainder of the supposed Roman Wall, when it was found to be a mass of concrete, about four feet thick, extending round the leaden pipe, in all probability to keep the pipe from settling unevenly and to protect it from injury. About nine feet more of the lead piping was obtained. It has no doubt been used to convey water. Near it some Roman draining tiles were also found, which were very probably to take away the waste water from some bath. The pipe and tiles, together with the above-mentioned specimen of Roman drainage, may be seen at the Museum.

In a few days after the discovery of this leaden pipe, the workmen employed in digging a large and deep drain from Monk Bar to the river Ouse,

discovered, at the junction of Goodramgate and Petergate, at the depth of twenty-three feet below the surface, a slab of grey limestone, measuring in its present state three feet nine inches square, bearing the following inscription:—

P·CAESAI  
 ERVAE · FIL · NI  
 NVS · AVG · GER  
 NTIFEX · MAXIMV  
 TESTATIS · XII · IMP · V  
 PER · LEG · VIII · HI

The Rev. C. Wellbeloved, in a communication to the Yorkshire Philosophical Society, pronounced the inscription, when perfect, to have been—

IMP · CAESAR  
 NERVAE · FIL · NER · TRA  
 IANUS · AVG · GERM  
 PONTIFEX · MAXIMVS · TE  
 POTESTATIS · XII · IMP · VI  
 PER · LEG · VIII · HISP



and he translates it thus:—"The Emperor Cæsar, son of Nerva, Nerva Trajanus Augustus Germanicus, High Priest, invested for the sixth time with the Tribunitian power, saluted for the sixth time Imperator, erected, (this building) by the Ninth Legion, called Hispanica (Spanish)." "The investment of Trajan with those honours," he adds, "synchronizes with A.D. 109, 110. At that time then, as we learn from this tablet, the Ninth Legion, which came into Britain with Claudius in the year 43, and formed part of the forces of Agricola when he subdued the Brigantes in the year 79, was at Eboracum employed by Trajan, who never was in Britain, in the erection of public buildings."

In the *Pictorial Bible*, at page 469 of vol. iv., is a representation of the triumphal arch of Trajan, at Benevento, on which is a very similar inscription. It runs thus:—

IMP CAESAR · DIVINERVAE · EILIO  
 NERVAE · TRALANO · OPTIMO · AVG  
 GERMANICO · DACICO · PONT · MAX · TRIB  
 POTES · XVIII · IMP · VII · CONS · VII · PP.  
 FORTISSIMO · PRINCIPI · SENATVS · P · O · R

To what public building the stone found at York was affixed, cannot now

be ascertained. Mr. Wellbeloved thinks that it may have been that gate of the ancient Roman station which is supposed to have stood very near the spot in which it was found. And this suggests an important question—Was the ancient Eboracum, or Eburacum, as Mr. Wellbeloved has it, fortified with a wall at that early period? The place in which this tablet was discovered is the one which tradition has assigned as part of the site of the Roman Prætorium or Palace at York. The precise spot at which it was found was formerly called King's Court, and still more anciently, Konyng Garth (the word Konyng signifying royal or kingly); and at this point was probably in the time of Trajan the grand entrance to the Imperial Palace. The period of the erection of the tablet is fixed by the inscription itself at the year of our Lord 110, or thereabouts, and shews indisputably that the Emperor Trajan was then acknowledged as Emperor at York. It is deserving of remark that the letters on the first line of the inscription are six inches long, and that they have been cut by a first-rate artist, and the grandeur and importance of the building, to which the tablet was once attached, may be judged of from the care and skill which have obviously been devoted to the inscription. Trajan was one of the best, and most just and lenient of the Roman Emperors. May we not then, with some show of reason, suppose that this elegant tablet once graced or surmounted the entrance to the Court yard of the Palace? The inscription is not dissimilar to that which adorns the famous "Trajan column" at Rome; and it has been well remarked by one of the local journals, that time and the effects of atmospheric variations have contributed to tarnish the original perfection of the inscription at Rome, whilst the lettering of what remains to us at York, upon the newly discovered tablet, is as clear, and as fresh, and as perfect, as it was on the day when, upwards of seventeen hundred years ago, it left the hand of the talented engraver, and was put up at York by the gallant Ninth Legion of imperial Rome. This tablet is the most ancient, as well as the most authentic, of the records which have ever yet been discovered of the Roman occupation of this City. It is a valuable discovery, inasmuch as it fixes a precise period when the *Legio Nono Hispanica* (Ninth Spanish Legion) was in York. But little is known of that corps. In the reign of Nero it was nearly destroyed at Camuldunum (Colchester), by the British forces under the celebrated Queen Boadicea. Tacitus informs us that it was afterwards recruited from Germany, but it again suffered severely in the fierce attack of the Caledonians, at the time when Julius Agricola was Proprætor and Legate at York. The inscription upon the recently discovered tablet shows pretty plainly that this legion was stationed at York in the time of the Emperor Trajan, and that the tablet

itself was raised by that legion. This corps being weak in number at the time of the arrival in York of the Sixth Conquering Legion, it is supposed to have been incorporated with that legion.

In the course of the excavations near the place where the above-mentioned tablet was found, the workmen turned up many Roman tiles, some of which bear the stamp of the Ninth Legion. The tablet and tiles are deposited in the Museum. In the year 1855, the workmen employed in draining operations found two stone coffins in Monkgate, near the bottom of Lord Mayor's Walk.

A Roman leaden coffin was lately discovered in a brickyard in Layerthorpe, near the spot in which, a few years ago, a Roman stone coffin was found. It lay seven feet below the surface, and from the nails and fragments of wood found with it, appears to have been enclosed in a coffin of that material. It is five feet six inches long, and very narrow, containing a skeleton, at present enveloped in mud, supposed to be that of a young person. It has a leaden lid, but there is no soldering nor any description of ornament in any part of it. This coffin is now in the Museum.

Besides the relics of the Roman period already noticed, a great many fragments of monumental and other tablets, urns, pillars, sculptured stones, domestic ware and other utensils, pottery, bricks, tiles, &c., have been found in York from time to time; and a goodly collection of them may be seen in the Yorkshire Museum.

"Although the Saxons had possession of York during more than three hundred years," writes the Rev. Curator, in his Descriptive Account of the Antiquities in the Museum, "and undoubtedly added greatly to the extent of the Roman-British City, yet few remains of Saxon York have been discovered. Their domestic buildings may have been generally constructed of timber, but their public, and especially their ecclesiastical edifices were built of more durable materials. The first Christian Church indeed, hastily erected by Edwin, in the beginning of the sixth century, was of wood; but it very soon gave place to one of stone; and about the end of the eighth century this was rebuilt and enlarged by Archbishop Albert, of whose magnificent structure, portions, as it is supposed by some, may be seen in the crypt beneath the choir of the present Minster. It appears from Domesday, that at the time of the Norman Conquest there were in York no fewer than nine parochial Churches; but in these, as they exist at present, no traces of Saxon workmanship are left. The tower of another Church (St. Mary, Bishophill Junior), not mentioned in Domesday, has been referred to the Saxon era; but it has most probably been constructed by later hands, of Saxon and even of Roman

materials. A recent breach in the City rampart, near the Railway Station, brought to light a portion of the fortifications of Eoferwic; the searching eye of an antiquary may detect tombstones, capitals, and other fragments of Saxon work built into the walls of our mediæval Churches; and an excavator may occasionally turn up a relic of Saxon times, yet the memorials of their long occupation of our ancient City, left by the Saxons, are far less numerous and important than might have been expected.

A portion of a Saxon cross or pillar, with several rude wooden coffins, and some other Saxon remains, were found in excavating for the New Market or Parliament Street; a curiously ornamented fragment of a stone cross was discovered in the excavations, preparatory to the building of St. Leonard's Place; and several Saxon coffin lids have been found in other parts of York.

A hoard of Saxon silver coins, consisting chiefly of those denominated Saints', the production of the ancient York Mint, was discovered in Walmgate in the month of April, 1856.

The City of York partook largely of the vicissitudes to which the country was exposed during the period between the evacuation of Britain by the Romans, and the Conquest of this island by the Normans. The Picts and the Scots, the Saxons and the Danes, each in succession erected their standards before its gates, and obtained possession of it, as we have shown in the preceding pages of this work. Though shorn of that splendour which imperial Rome conferred, still York maintained, after the departure of that people, a distinguished rank as a metropolitan City, and as the centre of commercial attraction. When Arthur, the most celebrated of the British Monarchs before the Conquest, had expelled the Saxons almost from the island in the year 521, York was delivered up to him, and from it he proceeded on his expedition into Scotland, with a determination to destroy that ancient seat of enmity from one end to another. But from this purpose he was dissuaded by his spiritual guides, and having abandoned his purpose, he returned to York, and there with his clergy, nobility, and soldiers, celebrated the festival of Christmas in feasting, mirth, and rejoicings. This is said to have been the first festival of the kind ever celebrated in Britain, and from which all those ever since held have taken their model. "The latter end of December," says Buchanan, "was spent in mirth, jollity, drinking, and the vices that are too often the consequences, so that the representations of the old heathenish feasts, dedicated to Saturn, were here again revived. Gifts were sent mutually from one to another, frequent invitations passed between friends, and domestic offenders were not punished. All this was to celebrate the Nativity of Christ, then, as they say, born."

Edwin, King of Northumbria, made York the metropolis of his Kingdom, and upon his conversion to Christianity, erected it into an Archiepiscopal See, of which he appointed Paulinus, Ethelburga his Queen's confessor, Primate. On the death of Edwin, who was killed in battle in 633, while resisting an attack of the Britons, under Cadwallon, assisted by Penda, King of Mercia, York suffered severley from the ravages of the confederated armies, who devastated it with fire and sword, and massacred the inhabitants. Ethelburga and Paulinus fled into Kent, and the scarcely-finished Church, which Edwin had erected, lay neglected for some time, till it was restored by Oswald, Edwin's successor. When the Kingdom of Northumbria was divided into two Kingdoms—Deira and Bernicia—York was the capital of the former.

Upon the union of the several Kingdoms of the Heptarchy, in the reign of Egbert, York again became a place of importance. At this period (the ninth century) it was the seat, not only of commerce, but of literature, as far as they then prevailed in the country; and the library collected by Archbishop Egbert, and placed in the Cathedral, ranked amongst the first in Christendom. The Malmsbury historian, speaking of this library, says, "it is the noblest repository, and cabinet of arts and sciences, in the whole world;" and Alcuin, the celebrated instructor of Charlemagne, in one of his letters to his royal pupil, requests that scholars may be sent from France to copy the works deposited here, "that the garden of letters may not be shut up in York, but that some of its fruits may be placed in the paradise of Tours." Many copies of some of the most valuable works in this library were obtained by Alcuin, even after he took up his residence in the Court of Charlemagne; and these were afterwards copied again, and dispersed through the various Monasteries in the dominions of that Monarch. Thus is France in part indebted for her literature to the ancient City of York; and to a certain extent also is Germany, for several of the books belonging to her first Apostle, Boniface, were sent to him in that country by Archbishop Egbert.

York suffered much during the ninth and tenth centuries from the incursions of the Danes, who spread destruction everywhere, spoiling the City, and burning and wasting the country around it for miles. During this period many of the Danish chieftains found, near York, a grave, among whom was the brave Earl Siward.

When the Danes fitted up a mighty fleet, and entered the Humber, in 867, under the command of Hinguar and Hubba, their first operation was against York, where a sanguinary battle was fought, partly in the midst of the City; when the two Saxons Kings of Northumbria, Osbert and Ella, were slain, and York was reduced to a heap of ruins by the enraged barbarians,



“who spared neither palace nor cottage, age or sex.” (See page 96). Having being rebuilt, it was for ages the centre, and frequently the scene of the struggles which were maintained between the Saxons and the Danes; and when Sweyne, the Danish King, defeated Ethelred, the King of England, in a bloody and well contested battle near York, and the latter fled to Normandy, leaving his Crown and Kingdom to the conqueror, it became one of the principal settlements of those rapacious invaders. Whilst the throne of England was filled by Danish Kings, their Viceroys, or *Comites Northumbria*, took up their residence at York; and the Sovereigns themselves not unfrequently made it the royal residence.

When the Norwegian armada landed their forces at Riccal, they took York by storm, after a desperate battle fought at Fulford. On the approach of Harold, the last Anglo-Saxon Monarch of England, at the head of a powerful army, the invaders quitted the City, and took up a strong position to the east of York, whither they were followed by Harold, and the battle of Stamford Bridge ensued. (See page 104.) In the intervals of peace which the citizens experienced, York gradually recovered, and continued to flourish till the Conquest.

From the Domesday Survey we learn that at the period succeeding the Norman Conquest, York was of considerable size, and worthy the rank of being the principal City of the North. From that valuable record, as translated by the Rev. W. Bawdwen, we extract the following:—

“In Eboraco civitate (City of York) in the time of King Edward (the Confessor), besides the ward of the Archbishop, there were six wards: one of these was destroyed when the Castles were built. In five wards there were 1418 inhabited mansions. The Archbishop has yet a third part of one of these wards. In these no one, but as a burgess was entitled to any customary payments, except Merlesuain, in one house, which is below the Castle; and except the Canons wherever they reside, and except four Magistrates, to whom the King granted this privilege by his writ, and that for their lives; but the Archbishop was entitled to all customary payments in his ward. Of all the above-mentioned mansions, there are now in the King's possession 391 inhabited, great and small, paying custom; and 400 uninhabited,\* which do not yield customary services, but some only one penny rent, and others less; and 540 mansions so uninhabitable, that they pay nothing at all; and foreigners† hold 145 houses.

\* These were such as had no constant inhabitant tied to residence, but such as went and came as they pleased.

† Francigenæ, or perhaps, *non redentes consuetudinem*.

“ St. Cuthbert has one mansion, which he always had, as many say, quit of all custom; but the burgesses say that it had not been quit in the time of King Edward, unless as one of the burgesses, or for this reason, he had his own toll,\* and that of the Canons. Besides this the Bishop of Durham has, of the King's gift, the Church of All Saints, and what belonged to it; and all the land of Uctred, and the land of Ernuin, which Hugo the Sheriff quit-claimed to Walcherus, Bishop of Durham, by the King's writ; and the burgesses who rent it say that they hold it under the King. The Earl of Morton has there fourteen mansions, and two stalls in the butchery, and the Church of St. Cruz; Osbern, the son of Boso, had these, and whatever belonged to them, granted to him. They had been the mansions of Sonulfus, the priest (one), Morulfus (one), Sterrus (one), Esnarrus (one), Gamel with four drenches (one), Archil (five), Levingus the priest (two), Turfin (one), Ligilfus (one). Nigel de Monneville has one house of a certain Monier. Nigel Fossart has two houses of Modera, and holds them under the King.† Waldin usurped two houses of Ketel the priest for one house of Sterre. Hamelin has one house in the City Ditch; and Waldin one house of Einulfus, and another of Alwin. Richard de Surdeval two houses of Turchil and Ravechil. Nigel Fossart usurped two houses, but it is said he restored them to the Bishop of Constance.‡ William de Percy has fourteen mansions of Bernulfus, Gamelbar, Sort, Egbert, Selecolf, Algrim, Norman, Dunstan, Adolfus, Weleret, Ulchel, Godolent, Soneva, Osbert, and the Church of St. Mary. Of Earl Hugo the same William has two mansions of two bailiffs of Earl Harold; but the burgesses say one of them had not been the Earl's but the other had been forfeited to him. The Church of St. Cuthbert the same William also claims of Earl Hugo, and seven small houses containing fifty feet in width, besides one house of a certain person named Uctred. The burgesses declare that William de Percy included one house within the Castle, after he had returned from Scotland. But William himself denies that he had had the land of this Uctred; but he affirms that the house was laid to the Castle by Hugo, the Sheriff, the first year after its destruction.§ Hugo, son of Baldric, has four houses of Adulphus, Hedned, Turchil, and Gospatric, and twenty-nine small mansions|| at a rent, and the Church of St. Andrew, which he bought. Robert Malet has nine houses of these men; (viz.) Tume, Grim, Grimchetel, Ernuin, Elsi, and another Ernuin, Glanier, Halden, Ra-

\* For things bought and sold in the market. † Probably in *capite*, and therefore quit.

‡ Chief Justiciary of England. He was possessed of 280 manors.

§ Anno 1070.

|| Therefore *mansiones* might be large inns or dwelling places, perhaps *messuagia*.

venchel. Erueis de Buran has four houses of Grim, Alwin, Gospatric, and the Church of St. Martin: two of these mansions pay fourteen shillings. Gilbert Maminet has three houses of Meurdock. Berenger de Todenie has two houses of Gamelcarle and Alwin, and eight houses at rent. A moiety of these is in the City Ditch. Osberne de Archis has two houses of Brun the priest and his mother, and twelve houses at a rent, and two houses of the Bishop of Constance. Odo Balistarius has three houses of Forne and Orme, and one of Elaf at a rent, and one Church. Richard, son of Erfast, three houses of Alchemont, and Gospatric and Bernulf, and the Church of Holy Trinity. Hubert de Montcanisi, one house of Bundus. Landric, the carpenter, has ten houses and a half, which the Sheriff made over to him.

“In the time of King Edward the value\* of the City to the King was fifty-three pounds; now one hundred pounds by weight.† In the time of King Edward there were in the Archbishop's ward‡ 189 inhabited houses at a rent. At present there are 100 inhabited, great and small, besides the Archbishop's palace and the Canons' houses. The Archbishop hath as much in his ward as the King in his wards.

“Within the geld of the City there are fourscore and four carucates of land, and every one of them taxed as one house in the City, and they with the citizens did the three works for the King.§ Of these the Archbishop has six carucates, which three ploughs may till. These compose the farm belonging to his palace. This was not improved and let at a rent in the time of King Edward, but here and there cultivated by the burgesses; it is the same now. Of the land described, the King's pool destroyed two new mills of the value of twenty shillings, and overflowed one carucate of arable, meadow, and garden ground. Value in King Edward's time sixteen shillings, now three. In Osboldeuic (Osboldwick) there are six carucates of land belonging to the Canons, where there may be three ploughs. The Canons have now there two ploughs and a half, and six villanes and three bordars having two ploughs and a half. Likewise in Mortun (Morton) the Canons have four carucates of land, where they may be two ploughs; but it is waste. These two villages are one mile in breadth, and one in length. In Stockhun

\* This is to be understood of the annual value.

† The ancient way of paying money by weight, opposed to the payment of the same *de numero*, importing twenty shillings.

‡ If the ward, shire, or district, meant only the close of the Cathedral, it is plain there were more houses in it before the Conquest than there are now, or indeed wall could stand in the compass.

§ Burgbote, Brigbote, and Expeditio, called *trinoda necessitas*.

(Stockton) there are six carucates, where they may be three ploughs. They are waste; of these, three belongs to the Canons, and three to Earl Alan. These are half a mile in length, and half a mile in breadth. In Sabura (Sauburn) there are three carucates, where they may be one plough and a half. Waste. Ralph Paganel holds it. The Canons say that they themselves had it in the time of King Edward. In Heuarde (Haworth) Orme had one Manor of six carucates of land, where they may be three ploughs. Hugo, son of Baldric, has now one vassal and one plough; value in King Edward's time ten shillings, now five shillings. In the same village Waltef had one Manor of three carucates of land; Richard now has it of the Earl of Morton; value in King Edward's time ten shillings, now ten shillings and eightpence. This village is one mile long, and half a mile broad. In Fuleford (Fulford) Morcar had one Manor of ten carucates of land. Earl Alan now has it; there may be five ploughs. There are now in the demesne two ploughs, and six villanes have two ploughs there. It is in length one mile, and in breadth half a mile. Value in King Edward's time twenty shillings, now sixteen. In the circuit of the City Torfin has one carucate of land, and Torchil two carucates; these two ploughs may till. In Cliftune (Clifton) there are eighteen carucates of land subject to the tax geld or gelt; these nine ploughs may till; it is now waste. Value in King Edward's time twenty shillings. Of these Morcar had nine carucates of land, and one half to be taxed, which five ploughs may till. Earl Alan has now there two ploughs, and two villanes and four bordars with one plough. In it are fifty acres of meadow; of these twenty-nine belong to St. Peter, and the other to the Earl. Besides these the Archbishop has eight acres of meadow. This Manor is one mile long, and one broad. Value in King Edward's time twenty shillings; the same now. The Canons have eight carucates and a half; they are waste. In Roudcliffe (Rawcliff) there are three carucates of land to be taxed, which two ploughs may till; of these Saxford, the Deacon, had two carucates, with a hall (now St. Peter), and the value ten shillings. And Turber had (now the King) one carucate with a hall; and the value five shillings; now both are waste. There are three acres of meadow there. In the whole, half a mile long, and as much broad. In Ouerton (Overton) there are to be taxed five carucates of land, which two ploughs and a half may till; Morcar had a hall there. Earl Alan has now there one plough and five villanes, and three bordars with three ploughs, and thirty acres of meadow, and wood pasture one mile long, and two quarentens broad. In the whole, one mile in length, and half a mile in breadth; value in King Edward's time, and now, twenty shillings. In Sceltun (Skelton) there are nine carucates of land to be taxed,

which four ploughs may till; of these St. Peter had, and has, three carucates in King Edward's time; and the value six shillings; it is now waste. Torber held two carucates of this land, with a hall, and six oxgangs. Now one farmer (*unus censorius*) has it under the King; and there are two ploughs and six villanes; value in King Edward's time six shillings, now eight. Two carucates and six oxgangs of the same land belonging to Overton. Earl Alan has there one vassal with one plough. In the whole, half a mile in length, and half in breadth. In Mortun (Morton) there are to be taxed three carucates of land, which one plough may till. Archil held this land, and the value was ten shillings; it is now waste. In Wichistun (Wigginton) there is to be taxed one carucate of land, which one plough may till. Saxford, the Deacon, held it. Now St. Peter has it. It was and is waste, There is coppice wood there. The whole length, half a mile, and the breadth half.

"These had Soke, Sac, Toll, Thaim, and all customs, in the time of King Edward; Earl Harrold, Merelesuen, Ulfenisc, Torgod Lageman, Tochi (son of Otra), Edwin and Morcar, upon the land of Ingold only.

"Gamel, son of Osbert, upon Cottingham only, Copsi upon Coxwold only, and Cnut. Of those which he forfeited he made satisfaction to no one but to the King and the Earl. The Earl has no right whatever in the Church Manors; neither the King in the Manors of the Earl, excepting what relates to spiritualities which belong to the Archbishop, in all the land of St. Peter at York, and St. John, and St. Wilfrid, and St. Cuthbert, and the Holy Trinity. The King likewise hath not had any custom there, neither the Earl, nor any other. The King has three ways by land, and a fourth by water. In these all forfeitures belong to the King and the Earl, whichsoever way they go, either through the land of the King, or of the Archbishop, or of the Earl.

"The King's peace given under his hand or seal, if it shall have been broken, satisfaction is to be made to the King only by twelve hundreds; every hundred eight pounds. Peace given by an Earl by whomsoever broken, satisfaction is to be made by six hundreds; every hundred eight pounds. If any one shall have been exiled according to law, no one but the King shall pardon him. But if an Earl or Sheriff shall have exiled any one from the country, they themselves may recall him, and pardon him if they will. Those Thanes who shall have had more than six manors pay relief of lands to the King only. The relief is eight pounds. But if he shall have had only six manors or fewer, three marks of silver shall be paid to the Sheriff for the relief. But the burgesses, citizens of York, do not pay relief."

The chief entries respecting the City of York, are thus summed up by Sir

Henry Ellis,\*—"In the time of Edward the Confessor, there were six Shires in York besides the Shire of the Archbishop. One of these Shires at the time of the Survey, had been demolished to make room for the Castles. In the other five Shires there were 1,418 'Mansiones Hospitatæ.' In the Shire of the Archbishop there were, in the time of King Edward, 189 'Mansiones Hospitatæ,' so that the full number of these mansions was 1,597, besides the Shire sacrificed to the Castles. The whole number may be presumed to have been 1,800 or thereabouts; the Curia of the Archbishop and the houses of the Canons not included in this estimate. The whole number of 'Domus Hospitatæ,' at the time of the Survey, may be reckoned at 1,036."

Drake supposes that in all there were 2,000 inhabited houses in York in the reign of the Confessor, containing a population of 10,000; and allowing the suburbs to be as extensive as Leland represents, he says, "we may reasonably suppose above as many more inhabitants to have resided in them."\* Sir H. Ellis, taking his figures from Domesday itself, makes the population of the *whole County* 8,055 persons. If this contrast be correct, the devastation in Yorkshire caused by the Conquest must indeed have been terrific. As has been shown at page 121 York, long the "Athens of the North," was, at the period of the Conquest, as fair and beautiful as the City of Rome, and its buildings were as magnificent. But its splendours were doomed. The citizens unfortunately refused to yield obedience to the Conqueror, and after a siege of six months they surrendered, and their City was razed to the ground. It never entirely recovered this shock.

In 1187 York was again burnt accidentally, including the Cathedral, St. Mary's Abbey, St. Leonard's Hospital, and forty parish Churches. From being the metropolis of an Empire, and the chief residence of the Northumbrian Kings, York had now gradually reduced to the capital and seat of an Earldom; the limits of the district under this term being for a long time co-extensive with the boundaries of the Kingdom of Northumbria.

"One of the first Parliaments mentioned in history," says Drake, "was held at York about the year 1160, in the reign of Henry II." The same Monarch held another Parliament here in 1171, at which William, King of Scotland, did homage for his Kingdom.

In the beginning of the reign of Richard I., a great massacre of the Jews took place here, the details of which are of a most shocking character. (See page 126). In 1290 King Henry III. with Alexander, King of Scotland, and an immense number of the nobility and gentry of both Kingdoms, kept

\* Sir H. Ellis's Domesday, vol. ii., p. 509. † Eboracum, p. 284.

Christmas at York; and again in 1251 the City was honoured by the same illustrious personages, to celebrate the marriage of the Princess Margaret, daughter of Henry III., and the Scottish King. In 1291 Edward I. visited York, on his way to Scotland; and in 1298 the same Monarch held a Parliament here, to which he summoned the King of Scotland. This was the beginning of the wars between the two Kingdoms, which raged during that and the following reign. Several Parliaments were held at York during the reigns of the first three Princes of the House of Plantagenet. In 1389 Richard III. was at York, and conferred the title of *Lord Mayor* on William de Selby, who then filled that high municipal office. During the "Wars of the Roses" York experienced many calamities. Richard III. soon after his accession visited York, where, according to Drake, he caused himself to be crowned a second time, his first coronation having taken place previously in London. But though the ceremonials connected with Richard's visit were exceedingly gorgeous, yet Mr. Davies, in his recent work on the City Records, has adduced evidence which goes a great way to prove that his own coronation was certainly not one of them. (See page 168.) In 1541 Henry VIII. established the Great Council of the North, at York, and directed its sittings to be held at the Manor House, then newly erected out of the ruins of St. Mary's Abbey, which, with the rest of the Monastic Institutions of the realm, had been previously suppressed. In 1603 York was visited by James I. In 1604 the plague raged here to an alarming extent. (See page 209). In the reign of Charles I. that Monarch retired to York at the commencement of the commotions between him and his Parliament. In April, 1644, the City was besieged by nearly 40,000 men of the Parliament's forces under Sir Thomas Fairfax and the Earls of Manchester and Leven.\* During this siege was fought the battle of Marston Moor, on the 2nd of July, and York was surrendered on honorable terms on the 11th of the same month. At the Restoration, Charles II. was proclaimed here amid great rejoicings. During the period preceding the Revolution in 1688, this City was noted for its opposition to the King; and in the very year of the Revolution, James II. took away its charter, and declared the office of Mayor to be vacant. Immediately after the Revolution the charter was restored and the civic offices were re-established.

From this period the most noticeable occurrences have been the visits of illustrious personages. Towards the end of the last century his Royal Highness, the Prince of Wales (afterwards George IV.), and his royal brother, the Duke of York, visited York; and Charles James Fox, the Earl

\* For an account of this siege see page 240 of this volume.

St. Vincent, Prince Leopold, the Duke of Sussex, and the great Duke of Wellington, "the Iron Duke," have also been here. As we have seen at page 276 of this volume, her present Majesty, when Princess Victoria, accompanied by her mother, the Duchess of Kent, attended the musical festival at York in 1835; and her Majesty, her royal consort, and the juvenile members of the royal family, *en suite*, have visited and lunched at York, on their way to and from London to Edinburgh, in the 1849, 1854, 1855, and 1856. (See pages 276 and 279). An account of the great dinner to Prince Albert and the Lord Mayor of London, in the Guild Hall, in 1850, will be found at page 276.

After the two years of war between the allied Monarchs of England, France, Sardinia, and Turkey, against the Emperor of Russia, the treaty of peace was signed at Paris, on the 30th of March, 1856, and the same was ratified within a month from that date. Sunday, the 4th of May following, was appointed by Parliament as a day of general thanksgiving, and Peace was proclaimed at York on the following day (Monday), with much ceremony. On the latter occasion a grand procession consisting of the Lord Mayor and Corporation, the clergy of the City of all denominations, the gentry and other principal inhabitants, accompanied by detachments of the Seventh Hussars, and the West York Light Infantry, paraded through the principal streets; and on the evening of the same day, the City was brilliantly illuminated, and the streets were crowded till a late hour with many thousands of the citizens, and the inhabitants of the surrounding country.

TOPOGRAPHY.—In proceeding to describe York "as it is to day," the contrast between it and York of the "olden time" forces itself strongly upon the mind, and serves to exhibit the vicissitudes to which the affairs of places as well as of persons are subject. But though York—Imperial York—once the capital of Britain—the residence of Emperors and of Kings—has been shorn of some of its brightest beams; though in remote periods it has been three times razed to the ground, by the Saxons, the Danes, and the Normans; and though in modern times it has been deprived of its commerce by Hull, and of its manufactures by Leeds and other towns in the West-Riding, it is still an interesting and venerable City. Contrasting modern York with its ancient imperial dignity, Sir Thomas Widdrington has written:—

York's not so great as old York was of yore,  
 Yet York it is though wasted to the core;  
 It's not that York which Ebrank built of old,  
 Nor yet that York which was of Roman mould;  
 York was the third time burnt, and what you see  
 Are York's small ashes of antiquity.



*The City of York*, the County town of Yorkshire, is situated near the centre of Great Britain, in one of the richest and most extensive plains or valleys in England, at the confluence of the rivers Ouse and Foss, and at the junction of the York and North Midland and the York, Newcastle, and Berwick Railways (now amalgamated, and known as the North Eastern Railway), as well as at the point where the three Ridings or districts of the County meet, though the City is independent of either of them. It is distant by the York and North Midland and Midland Railways, 220 miles; and by the Great Northern Railway 191 miles, N. N. W. from London. The distance from York to the following places (by Railway) is as follows:—to Newcastle-upon-Tyne, 84 miles; to Leeds, 32; to Scarborough, 42½; to Whitby, 57; to Malton, 22; to Hull, 58; to Selby, 23; to Low Harrogate, 29; to Market Weighton, 23; to Normanton, 24½; to Derby, 88; to Birmingham, 129; to Manchester, 75; to Berwick-upon-Tweed, 151; and to Edinburgh, 208 miles.

WALLS, GATES, &c.—The ancient City of York, which is about three miles in circumference, is almost surrounded with walls or ramparts; but there are no existing records to show when these walls were first erected, though there is a strong series of historical evidence to prove that York was fortified both during the Saxon and Danish periods, as well as under the Roman power. There is no doubt that under the Roman Prætors the ancient Eboracum was well fortified, and there appears to be little doubt that the form and direction of three of these Roman walls has at different times been discovered. Combining the evidence furnished by the position of the portions of the three ancient walls which have been found, the Rev. C. Well-beloved, of York, one of the best living authorities on the subject, thinks we are warranted in concluding that the Roman City was of a rectangular form, of about 650 yards by about 550, enclosed by a wall, and rampart mound of earth on the inner side of the wall, and perhaps a fosse without. According to his ideas, the four angles of the Roman wall were at the present Multangular Tower in the gardens of the Museum; near the end of Jubbergate (now called Market Street), where it adjoins Coney Street;\* near the bottom of Aldwark; and somewhere in the vicinity of the present angle of the City walls on Lord Mayor's Walk. There is however no dispute as to the Roman origin of the Multangular Tower and the wall adjoining. From its long defence against the Norman Conqueror it is certain, that according to the military science of the time, York was a formidable station, and must have been completely defended by walls and ditches. Henry III. granted a patent

\* In 1832 the foundations of an angular tower were discovered while making excavations in Market Street (late Jubbergate).

to the Lord Mayor to levy certain tolls in specie on certain goods entering York, which was to be applied to the maintenance of the fortifications of the City; and Drake, in his *Eboracum*, copies at length three writs of *mandamus* issued to the Dean and Chapter, the better to enforce the tax.

It is generally supposed that these ramparts were rebuilt in the reign of Edward I., with a view to rendering the place better able to resist the incursions of the Scots, whose invasions he had but too much reason to expect. In the reign of his son and successor Edward II., the Scots made such inroads into the country as to penetrate even to the very gates of York, but without daring to undertake the siege. (See page 135). In the *Fœdera* of Rymer we find the following mandate from Edward III. to the "Mayor and Bailiffs of the City of York," directing them to repair the fortifications, and provide ammunition for the defence of the place; and the method of defraying the expense is characteristic of the lawlessness of the times.

"Since the Scotch, our enemies and rebels, have thought fit to enter our Kingdom in an hostile manner near Carlisle, with all their power, as we are certainly informed," says the mandate, "and kill, burn, destroy, and act other mischiefs as far as they are able, we have drawn down our army in order, by God's assistance, to restrain their malice, and to that end turn our steps towards that country and those enemies.

"We, considering our aforesaid City of York, especially whilst Isabel, Queen of England, our most dear mother, our brother and sisters,\* abide in the same, to be more safely kept and guarded; least any sudden danger from our enemies' approach should happen to the said City; or fear affright our mother, brother, and sisters, which God avert, for want of sufficient ammunition and guard; we strictly command and charge you, upon your faiths and allegiance, and on the forfeiture of everything you can forfeit to us, immediately at sight of these presents, without excuse or delay, to inspect and overlook all your walls, ditches and towers, and ammunition, proper for the defence of the said City; taking with you such of our faithful servants as will be chosen for this purpose; and to take such order for its defence that no danger can happen to the City by neglect of such safeguards.

"And we, by these presents, give you full power and authority to distrain and compel all and singular owners of houses or rents in the said City, or merchants, or strangers, inhabiting the same, by the seizure of their bodies or goods, to be aiding towards the security of the walls, bulwarks, or towers, as you in your own discretion shall think fit to ordain for the making other

\* Prince John of Eltham, and the Princesses Joan and Elinor.

useful and necessary works about it; punishing all those that are found to contradict or rebel against this order, by imprisonment, or what other methods you think fit. Study therefore to use such diligence in the execution of the premises, that we may find it in the effects of your works; and that we may have no occasion from your negligence, should danger happen, to take severe notice of you. Dated at Durham, July 15. A. 1327.

“BY THE KING.”

In 1538 Leland visited York, and in that ancient record called his *Itinerary*,\* gives us the following account of the state of its fortifications at that period:—“The towne of Yorke standeth by west and est of Ouse river running through it, but that part that lyeth by est is twice as grete in building as the other. Thus goeth the waul from the ripe (or bank) of Ouse of the est part of the cite of York. Fyrst, a grete towre with a chaine of yron to cast over the Ouse, than another towre and soe to Bowdamgate; from Bowdamgate or bar to Goodramgate or bar x towres; thens four towres to Laythorpe a postern gate, and soe by a space of two flite shottes, the blind and deep water of Fosse coming out of the forest of Galtres, defended this part of the cite without waules; then to Waumgate three towres and thens to Fishergate, stoppid up sins the communes burnid it yn the tyme of King Henry the seventh. Thens to the ripe of Fosse have three towres, and in the three a postern; and thens over Fosse by a bridge to the castelle. The west part of the cite is thus ynclosed; first a turrit, and soe the waul runneth over the side of the dungeon of the castelle on the west side of Ouse, right agayne the castelle on the est ripe. The plotte of this castelle is now called Ould Baile, and the area and ditches of it doe manifestly appeare. Betwixt the beginninge of the first part of this west waulle and Micklegate be ix towres; and betwixt it and the ripe agayne of Ouse be xi towres; and at this xi towres be a postern gate, and the towre of it is right agayne the est towre, to draw over the chain on Ouse betwixt them.”

The Siege of York in 1644 damaged the walls very considerably; and the three following years were employed in repairing them. Walmgate Bar and the walls around it had suffered more than any of the rest, on account of the

\* John Leland was one of the Chaplains of King Henry VIII., and was keeper of the King's library. He had the title of the “Royal Antiquary,” and was commissioned by the King, to peregrinate England and Wales, in search of objects of antiquity in the libraries of all the Cathedrals, Abbeys, and Colleges. He commenced the collection of materials for his *Itinerary* in 1538, and completed it in 1545; and after his death, which occurred in 1552, his MS. collections came into the Bodleian Library at Oxford, and furnished Camden, Dugdale, Burton, and others with very valuable information.

batteries on Lamel Mill Hill. The Bar was moreover undermined and much shaken by the explosion. The date of the completion of the repairs of this part (1648) stands above the arch of the outer Barbican. The walls between Monk Bar and Layerthorpe Postern were restored in 1666; and in 1669, those near Bootham Bar were repaired at the cost of the City. In 1673 the walls from Walmgate Bar to their termination at the Red Tower, on the banks of the Foss, were repaired, but they are now in a state of dilapidation. About the year 1700 the whole circuit of the walls was paved with brick, and thrown open to the public as a promenade. It appears that soon after this date they began to fall into decay, and as no means were taken to prevent the dilapidation, the time did not appear far off when they would be entirely destroyed. But in the year 1831 the Corporation granted a donation of £100. towards their restoration, and a considerable sum was raised by subscription for the same purpose. The length of the wall between North Street Postern and Micklegate Bar was restored at a cost of £1,067. 17s. 6d.; and from that Bar to Skeldergate Postern, for £1,725. 1s. 6d. The walls also from Fishergate Postern, on the opposite side of the river, a little beyond Fishergate Bar, were likewise restored. Walmgate Bar and Barbican, and the remainder of the wall between that point and Fishergate, were restored with the sum of £500. (increased by several subscriptions) which the Corporation received from the Great North of England Railway Company, for permission to erect the gateway to their coal depot near North Street Postern.\* Nearly the whole circle of the ancient fortifications is now open to the public, and forms a most delightful promenade, at once commanding the advantages of the purest air and most pleasing prospects; embracing—within the walls—the noble Cathedral in some of its finest points of view; the picturesque ruins of St. Mary's Abbey; the Roman Multangular Tower; the classical building (the Museum) and elegant grounds of the Yorkshire Philosophical Society; the venerable Guild-Hall, rising from the water's edge; and the Castle and Clifford's Tower, its ancient keep. And beyond the walls the views are extensive and delightful, embracing the beautiful Ouse, Severus's Hill, and other interesting objects. The walls completely encompass that

\* "Probably it is not generally known," says Mr. Wallbeloved, in one of his notes to the author of *York and its Vicinity*, "that the last reparation of the walls originated with a few persons anxious to walk in the 'old ways,' who formed an Association called 'The Foot-path Association.' At a meeting of the associators, one member proposed that the walk on the walls should be considered as a *common foot-path*. A resolution to that effect brought the state of the walls under the notice of the Association, and successful measures were taken, terminating in a general and complete repair."

part of the City which is situated on the western side of the river Ouse. Commencing near the river, at Skeldergate Postern, the promenade is perfect, and the walk delightful—passing Micklegate Bar and the Railway Station—till we reach again the bank of the river at North Street Postern. Here the wall terminates with a picturesque old tower, from which a chain was formerly attached across the river to Lendal Tower on the opposite side. From the latter tower the wall may be traced in the Museum gardens, running towards the entrance lodge; and from St. Leonard's Hospital (adjacent to the lodge) to the Multangular Tower, from whence it takes an easterly direction past the Manor House, now the Wilberforce School for the Blind. From hence there is an interruption, till we arrive at Bootham Bar, from whence it extends in a south-easterly direction to Monk Bar. This part of the wall is in good repair, but has no public walk upon it; and a good view of it may be obtained from Lord Mayor's Walk. From Monk Bar the wall sweeps in a southern direction to Layerthorpe, and is in good preservation, and open to the public. From Layerthorpe Postern, which stood near Layerthorpe Bridge, to the Red Tower, the river Foss and the marshy ground adjoining it, sufficiently protected the City, and rendered a wall unnecessary. As before intimated, the wall from the Red Tower to Walmgate Bar is much decayed; but from the latter place to its termination at Fishergate Postern, it is in good repair, and the promenade is open.

The dilapidated walls from Walmgate Bar to the Red Tower, a distance of nearly 350 yards, are about to be restored, and when this is effected, the whole of the walls will be in a state of perfect repair. Though this latter portion of the ramparts is particularly interesting, owing to its being the oldest part of the time honoured walls of this ancient City, and to its having peculiarities which no other portion possesses—being built on a series of rude and irregular arches, on account of the unsound nature of the soil—an attempt to destroy it has been lately made. The Local Board of Health Committee, at the instigation, it is said, of an interested individual, recently recommended that this portion of the walls should be pulled down; and the chief reason given by the despoilers for the proposed act of Vandalism, was that their removal would improve the health of the locality (a sheer fallacy), and that the site of the walls being made available for building purposes, might be sold for from £2,000. to £3,000.

Such a recommendation, and coming from such a quarter, very naturally aroused the feelings of the citizens, who are justly proud of the antiquities they possess, and anxious carefully to preserve them. The Yorkshire Anti-

quarian Club, the Yorkshire Architectural Society, and others interested in the protection of the ancient remains of the City, lost no time in memorializing the Council. The memorial of the latter Society was signed by the Archbishop of York, and no less than eight peers of the realm, besides a great number of influential gentlemen connected with the City and County. At the Quarterly Meeting of the City Council, on Monday, February 12th, 1855—a day to be held memorable by the local antiquarian—these memorials were read, and the whole subject of the proposed act of desecration was ably discussed. Honour to those members of the Council who supported the resolution, that the minutes of the Board of Health Committee, recommending, the removal of the walls, be *not* confirmed, but that the walls be repaired and retained, provided their restoration can be effected by public subscription. Honour to Mr. Alderman Leeman, and the other gentlemen who ably pointed out the great value of these relics of antiquity, and justly contended that if they were allowed to be removed, the demolition of the other portions of the walls might soon follow.

To the delight of all the lovers of antiquities in Yorkshire, that spirit of Vandalism, which at former periods sanctioned the destruction of the beautiful ruins of the Abbey of St. Mary, even by allowing its elegantly carved stone-work to be burnt into lime; that same spirit which had contemplated the removal of Clifford's Tower, and the cutting down of the magnificent trees on the New Walk; and which would now sweep away these venerated ramparts, was suppressed at the above-mentioned meeting by a majority of twenty-two. Those who voted for the retention of the walls were Mr. Ald. Leeman, Mr. Ald. Meek, Mr. Ald. Wood, Mr. Ald. Evers, Mr. Ald. Richardson, the Sheriff, Messrs. Parkinson, Woollons, E. R. Anderson, G. Steward, Clark, Bell, Craven, Shilleto, Hunt, Watkinson, Hands, E. Calvert, Wilkinson, Husband, E. Allen, Douglas, Smith, Scholefield, Clark, John Meek, Lambert, Yallow, and J. Allen. And the parties in favour of the demolition of the walls were Mr. Ald. Seymour, Mr. Ald. Rowntree, Messrs. F. Calvert, Wilberforce, Thompson, Scott, and Mann. It was then agreed that a subscription should be at once entered into, in order that the vote which had been come to might be carried out, and the walls repaired.

The circumference of the ramparts or walls of York, according to Drake, from a survey made in August, 1665, is two miles, three furlongs, and ninety six yards (an extent little inferior to that of the old walls of London, which was only three miles), made up of the following distances between the principal entrances :—

	PERCHES.
Red Tower to Walmgate Bar ....	60
Thence to Fishergate Postern ....	99
Thence to Castlegate Postern ....	58
Thence to Skeldergate Postern ..	34
Thence to Micklegate Bar.....	136
Thence to North Street Postern ..	140
Thence to Bootham Bar .....	86

	PERCHES.
Brought forward ....	613
Bootham Bar to Monk Bar .....	116
Thence to Layerthorpe Bridge ....	66
Thence to the Red Tower .....	80
TOTAL.....	875

The fortified walls round York, and those at Chester, are the only remains of this kind of military architecture on so extensive a scale in the Kingdom. The Corporation of York are invested with an annual income for the maintenance of the ramparts, and at Chester a specific duty on certain merchandise is levied for a similar purpose. Professor Phillips, in speaking of York and its ramparts, says, "Innumerable battle plains surround her Roman camp; and from her walls we may see three decisive fields—where Hardrada fell at Stamford Bridge, and Clifford died at Towton Dale, and Rupert fled from Marston Moor—sixteen centuries of historical renown dignify the winding streets and narrow pavements by which we reach the feudal walls, the Benedictine Abbey, the Northumbrian Church, the camp of the victorious Legion."\*

The entrances into the City of York are by four principal Gates or Bars, viz., Micklegate Bar on the south-west, Bootham Bar on the north-west, Monk Bar on the north-east, and Walmgate Bar on the south-east. There are also three smaller entrances thus distinguished—Fishergate Bar, Victoria Bar, and Fishergate Postern. There were formerly posterns at Skeldergate, Castlegate, North Street, and Layerthorpe.

*Micklegate Bar*, the principal gate and chief entrance of the City from the south is the most magnificent, and previous to the destruction of the Barbican or out-work, in 1826, must have made a very imposing and venerable appearance. It is a square tower with a fine circular arch, and embattled turrets at the angles. Each of these turrets are adorned with a stone figure in a menacing attitude. Drake conceived that the centre arch was Roman, and strenuously maintained his opinion, in which he was supported by the Earl of Burlington; but James Essex, the Architect, contradicted this opinion; and Sir Henry C. Englefield, in a paper read before the Society of Antiquaries, in 1780, satisfactorily points out the identity between the style of architecture displayed in this Bar, and that of several undisputed Saxon and Norman edifices; so that it is now generally agreed, that so far from the arch being a Roman erection, it is most likely a Norman work. The lower parts of the structure are built of a grey stone of very coarse grit, whilst the

\* Phillips's Rivers and Mountains of Yorkshire.

upper walls and turrets are constructed of a fine white limestone, and the difference of style as well as of materials, shows that the work is of two different periods. Above the gate is a shield of arms, suspended from a garter, of Sir John Lister Kaye, who was Lord Mayor in 1737, and beneath is the inscription, now nearly defaced, "Renovata, A.D. MDCCLXXXVII." Higher up on the building are the royal arms of Old France and England, quarterly, between those of the City of York, all emblazoned in colours. Over each shield is a small Gothic canopy, and above the royal arms is a helmet crested with a *lion passant gardant*, the whole gilt. These arms and crest were painted and gild anew in 1827, and are now much in want of similar treatment. On the City side are the arms of France and England quarterly. The adjacent walls are supposed to have been erected in the time of Edward I., and the upper part of the present Bar probably belongs to the same period. It has, however, been objected that the shields on it show that it was not built earlier than the days of Edward III., but the origin of these ornaments is not sufficient evidence of the date of the Bar itself. "Whatever may be the obscurity as to the precise origin, there can be no doubt," says a good authority, "but that the fortification, which was once a work of considerable magnitude and importance, was erected when the use of artillery was unknown."

"It appears by a record in the Pipe Office," writes Mr. Drake, "that one Benedict Fitz-Engelram gave half a mark for license to build a certain house upon this Bar, and sixpence annual rent for having it hereditary, the eighth of Richard I. (1197). But this does not ascertain the age of the present structure. Yet I observe the *fleurs de lis* in the royal arms are not confined to the number of three, which puts it out of doubt that they were placed there before the time of Henry V.; who was the first that gave that particular number in his bearing."

The Barbican was of more recent origin than the Bar itself, and by its removal the latter now stands nearly as it was when first it was built. The two small doors which opened from the lateral turrets upon the battlements of the Barbican, are still visible, and since the alterations in 1826, they have had a very singular appearance. Sir Walter Scott is reported to have said that if walking from Edinburgh to York would induce the Corporation of York to preserve this Barbican, he would gladly undertake the journey.

Mr. Drake, describing this entrance when he wrote in 1736, says, "This Bar is strengthened by an outer gate, which had a massy iron chain that went across, then a portcullis, and lastly a mighty strong double wooden gate, which closed in every night at the usual hour. It has the character



altogether, as to ancient fortification, to be as noble and august a port as most in Europe." Since Drake's time, various alterations and mutilations have occurred in this venerable pile. The outer gate, the massy chain, and the portcullis, which was a large wooden grate, with iron spikes at the bottom, have all disappeared. In 1754, the gate or arched footway on the west side of the Bar was erected, and the archway on the east side of it was part of the alteration of 1826.

Many historical events are connected with this Bar, and many of the Monarchs of England, who have honoured York with their presence, have passed beneath its portals. It was here that they were generally received by the Corporation in all the civic state and splendour of those days. This is the Bar upon which it was customary to expose the heads and mutilated remains of traitors after execution. The top of the tower is covered with lead, and commands a most interesting prospect of the surrounding country. The ascent to the tower, and to the walls adjoining it, is by a double flight of stone steps on both sides of the street. The apartments in the tower of this, as well as in the towers of Monk Bar and Walmgate Bar, are now inhabited by some of the police of the City, and their families. The tower of Bootham Bar is unoccupied.

*Bootham Bar*, the entrance from the north, is an ancient structure, chiefly built of the grit stone generally used by the Romans, and has a circular arch similar to Micklegate Bar. "The structure of this port," says Drake, "is very ancient, being almost wholly built of grit, but wanting that symmetry so very conspicuous in Micklegate Bar. It is certainly Gothic, though built of Roman materials. The inside was rebuilt with free stone in 1719." The Barbican was removed in 1831, and the whole structure narrowly escaped removal; the interference of the citizens, in public meeting assembled on the 16th of February, 1832, alone preserved the venerable relic. A sum of £300. was raised by subscription (the Corporation gave £100., provided the inhabitants would raise £200.), and the exterior and interior was substantially repaired. At the same time the street at the west side of the Bar was widened, and a new and excellent approach to the City formed, called St. Leonard's Place. The Barbican had embattled turrets at the angles. On the top of the outer front of the tower are the remains of three stone figures, similar to those on Micklegate Bar. Previously to the reparations in 1831, there was in the inner front, facing the City, a large niche over the arch, which contained a stone figure of a King, much mutilated. By some it was supposed to represent Ebrauc, the presumed founder of York; but it was evidently of more modern costume, and was most probably a statue of King

James I. There are arches on each side of the gate for foot passengers, and the portcullis still retains its ancient position over the outer arch.

*Monk Bar*, which forms the approach from Scarborough, Malton, and the east, is a stately gate, with a circular arch. The foundation is of grit stone, and on the exterior of the tower front are the arms of Old France quartered with those of England; which circumstance bespeaks its antiquity. Above the shield is a mutilated helmet beneath a Gothic canopy; and on the battlements of the turrets are stone figures in a menacing posture. The doors and Barbican were removed in 1815, but the ancient portcullis is still remaining. Mr. Britton considers this gate as probably the most curious and perfect specimen of this sort of architecture in the Kingdom; and therefore very interesting to the antiquary and architect. *Monk Bar* is the loftiest of the four, and is a beautiful specimen of the castellated architecture which prevailed in the fourteenth century. This Bar, we are told by Drake, was formerly made use of as a prison for freemen of the City; and the two stories of vaulted chambers in the tower were formerly used for that purpose. The gateway roof is groined, and the City front displays several windows with mullions and plain arched heads. There is a thoroughfare for foot passengers on each side of the Bar, of modern erection. The prospect of the surrounding country from the top of the tower is truly delightful.

*Walmgate Bar*, situated at the end of Walmgate, is the entrance into York from Beverley, Hull, &c., and is supposed to derive its name, by corrupt pronunciation, from the great Roman Road, called Watling Street. This Bar still retains its Barbican and portcullis, as well as a great portion of the old oak door and wicket of the main gateway, and is now a faithful representation of the defences placed near the principal entrances of fortified towns in the middle ages. It is built in the same manner as the others, being square, with embattled turrets at the angles. Towards the foundation are some large blocks of grit; but the arches, &c., are modern, having undergone a thorough repair in 1648, after this gate had been almost demolished by the Parliamentary army during the Civil War of that period.

The main building of the Bar belongs to the time of Edward I.; and the Barbican, which has a pointed arch, to the time of Edward III. Over the outer gateway are the arms of Henry V., and an inscription denoting that the whole building was restored by the Corporation of York, in 1840, Sir William Stephenson Clark, knight, being Lord Mayor; and over the gate of the Barbican are the City Arms, and the date "1648," shewing the time of its repair after the siege of 1644. The cost of the restoration in 1840 was £500. Attached to the City front is an extraneous erection of wood and

plaster of two stories. The lower story is supported by two Tuscan columns; the front of the first story is also adorned with two columns of the same order; and the second has Ionic pillars with an architrave and cornice.

*Fishergate Bar*, which stands at the end of St. George Street, was walled up from the time of Henry VII. to the month of October, 1827, when, in consequence of the formation of the new market for cattle on the outside of this part of the walls, it was again opened. It consists of a plain centre arch, with two narrow arches for foot passengers. There is no tower over the gate, and the arch is in a great measure new. Leland tells us that this Bar was burnt in time of Henry VII. by the peasantry of Yorkshire, who took the City, and would have beheaded Sir Richard Yorke, then Lord Mayor; and that the Bar was then blocked up.

Over this gateway on each side are sculptures and inscriptions. On the exterior is one representing Sir William Todd, merchant, who was a great benefactor to the reparation of the walls, on which is the following inscription: "A. Dm. CCCC. LXXXVII. Sr. Willm. Tod, knyght & mair jou—ates some tyme was schyriffe did this cost himself." Over this inscription was formerly a piece of rude sculpture, representing a senator in his robes, and a female kneeling by him. The other inscription is on the City side, and placed under the arms of the City. It is as follows: "A. DOMINE M. CCCC. LXXXVII. Sir William Tod knight L.....mayre this wal was mayde in his dayes IX yerdys."

*Fishergate Postern*, the only one of the old posterns now remaining, is situated at the termination of the walls in Fishergate, and is a solid square stone building with a tiled roof. It was erected at the beginning of the sixteenth century, and is singular for its beauty and exactness of symmetry, as well as an admirable specimen of the species of defence placed near small gates and sally ports. The only openings in the walls towards the exterior are two narrow windows immediately beneath the roof, which is made as far as possible to defend them. From these elevated windows boiling oil, pitch, stones, and every description of deadly missile, were showered down upon the besiegers near the gate. It has a low pointed arched footway, and was so contrived with a view to prevent ingress except in a stooping attitude, which would, of course, give the defenders an advantage. Adjoining to this gateway are some remains of Roman masonry, principally arches of grit stone.

*Skeldergate Postern* formerly stood on the opposite side of the river, but the building was removed in 1808. This postern has been in some measure replaced by a new circular arch over the road leading to the City Gaol, erected in 1831. There is a ferry boat kept near the site of this postern, which

opens a communication with the New Walk. This ferry is rented from the Corporation by a person whose duty it is to be constantly in attendance during the day.

*North Street Postern*, at the termination of the walls at North Street, has been replaced by a new and handsome arch for carriages, and two side arches for foot passengers, erected in 1840, by the Great North of England Railway Company. For permission to build this entrance and obtain a road into North Street, this company paid the Corporation £500., which sum has been expended in restoring Walmgate Bar and Barbican. The tower of North Street Postern, which is still in existence, was the connecting link between the west and east lines of fortification. Its form is circular, and it was used for the double purpose of a postern and a watch tower for the river. There is a ferry at this postern, which communicates with the opposite bank of the river, and the person who rents it from the Corporation resides in the ancient tower.

*Lendal Tower* stands on the opposite side of the river, and as has been shown by the quotation from Leland at a preceding page, when the fortifications of the City were complete, a strong iron chain passed across the river from each of these towers.\* In the directions issued by the Corporation in 1569, when they expected a siege by the rebel Earls, "all boats, pinks, and lighters," were ordered to range themselves within this chain. Sir Thomas Widdrington mentions a postern at Lendal, but no remains of any such building are now to be seen.

The ancient Castle or Keep on Baile Hill, was intended to serve a somewhat similar purpose as a corresponding station to Clifford's Tower, on the west bank of the river.

*Victoria Bar* is the name given to the arch through the walls from Bishop-hill to Clementhorpe, which was erected by subscription in 1838. On opening the wall a small gateway was found to have been anciently in the same place.

*Castlegate Postern*, which stood very near the ruins of Clifford's Tower, and in the direct road to the village of Fulford, possessed no peculiar feature. It

\* *Lendal Tower* was formerly converted into a warehouse, and in 1682 it was thoroughly repaired, and an engine was placed in it for the purpose of supplying the inhabitants with water. In 1830 the engine was placed in a new engine house; and in 1840 the waterworks were altogether removed to Acomb Landing. This tower was raised by the late Waterworks Company, and is considerably higher than that on the opposite side, being about fifty-eight feet above the level of the ground. It is still in the possession of the present Waterworks Company.

was taken down in May, 1826, on commencing the new works at the gaol. Mr. Davies, in one of his interesting lectures at the York Institute, told us, that in the garden of some cottages close to this postern "there once was kept that instrument of punishment—the ducking stool—which was brought into requisition for the purpose of punishing females who might be called common scolds, this being effected by placing them in the stool, and plunging them three times overhead in the river. This custom was not disused until about one hundred years ago; but now we live in more gallant times," he continued, "when any one might indulge their loquacity with impunity."\*

*Layrthorpe Postern* was situated at the end of *Layrthorpe Bridge*, with the river Foss running in front. It was defended by a portcullis, and when the City was in a fortified state, was an important and well guarded post. It was removed when the present bridge over the Foss at this point was erected in 1839, in the place of the old and inconvenient arches, which previously stood here.

The extensive and beautiful Tudor arch, through which the railway enters the City, was erected in 1840, and from the City Walls near it may be seen, on the outside, the original depth of the scarp and counter scarp, in other words, of the ditch which defended the base of the wall. This is the only place where these features of the circumvallation are preserved entire.

Besides these Bars and Posterns, there were at different distances in the walls several small rooms or cells, and numerous towers, a few of which yet remain. The most remarkable of these is called the *Multangular Tower*, in the gardens of the Museum. This interesting relic of the Roman era consists of a portion of the wall of a large tower, having ten sides of a nearly

\* The punishment of the *Cucking* or *Ducking Stool*, or *Tumbrell*, was anciently inflicted upon persons for minor transgressions. The culprit was placed in a stool or chair, and immersed overhead and ears, in *stercore*, in some muddy or stinking pond. The Burrow laws consign men to the pillory, and women to the cucking stool or tumbrell. These laws particularly refer to the frauds committed by brewers and bakers, and orders justice to be done upon them by subjecting them to the discipline of the cucking stool for their third offence. In the "Actes Marie" it is expressly provided "that the women perturbatouris for skafrie of money or vtherwyse, salbe takin and put vpon the eukstules of eurie burgh or towne." In the Saxon tongue *cuck*, or *guck*, signifies to scold or brawl, taken from the bird cuckoo, or guckoo; and *ing* in that language signifies water. In the north of England the common people pronounce it *ducking-stool*, which perhaps may have sprung from the Belgic or Teutonic *ducken*, to dive under water. This machine, which has also been called the trebucket or trap-door, was exhibited *in terrorem* to keep that unruly member, the female tongue, in due subjection, but many instances occur of hardy females, who have undauntedly braved the punishment rather than surrender the invaluable privilege which a woman holds most dear.

regular thirteen sided figure, forming nine obtuse angles, whence it derives its name. Antiquarians nearly all agree that this tower and the wall adjoining it, is a portion of the fortifications of the Roman station of Eboracum; and though built probably about the middle of the third century of the Christian era, they are in a remarkably good state of preservation, considering the danger to which they have been exposed amidst the various vicissitudes which the City of York has experienced during the long and often much troubled period that has elapsed since Britain was abandoned by the Romans.

Dr. Lister, in describing these remains to the Royal Society, says, "Carefully viewing the antiquities of York, the dwelling of at least two of the Roman Emperors—Severus and Constantius—I found part of a wall yet standing, which is undoubtedly of that time. It is the south wall of the Mint Yard, and consists of a multangular tower, which did lead to Bootham Bar, and part of a wall which ran the length of Coning Street, as he who shall attentively view it on both sides may discern. The outside to the river is faced with a very small *saxum quadratum* of about four inches thick, and laid in levels like our modern brickwork. The length of the stones is not observed, but they are as they fell out, in hewing. From the foundation twenty courses of these small squared stones are laid, and over them five courses of Roman bricks. These bricks are placed some lengthways, some endways in the walls, and were called *lateres diatoni*; after these five courses of brick, other twenty-two courses of small square stones, as before described, are laid, which raise the wall some feet higher, and then five more courses of the same Roman bricks; beyond which the wall is imperfect, and capped with modern building. In all this height there is not any casement or loop-hole, but one entire and uniform wall; from which we may infer that this wall was built some courses higher, after the same order. The bricks were to be as thorough, or as it were so many new foundations, to that which was to be superstructed, and to bind the two sides firmly together; for the wall itself is only faced with small square stone, and the middle thereof filled with mortar and pebble."\*

The exterior of the tower exhibits the rude repairs it has received in later times, and the portion may be plainly discerned, which was raised upon it when it was made part of the wall of York in the middle ages. The masonry of the interior of the tower is remarkably fresh and perfect, owing to its having been concealed for many ages by an accumulation of soil, which has

\* Dr. Langwith, who tells us that this method of building with brick and stone was originally African, observes that as Severus was an African by birth, it is highly probable that it was introduced here by that Emperor.

only recently been removed. A small portion of a wall is remaining, which appears to have divided the tower into two equal portions. The diameter of the whole interior at the base or floor, is about 33½ feet. The lower compartments had a mortar floor laid upon sand, and having no light but from the entrance, Mr. Wellbeloved thinks that they may have been used as depositories of stores or arms. There seems to have been a timber floor at the height of about five feet above this, and a third floor about nine feet higher up. These upper apartments had each a narrow window or aperture, so placed as to enable those within to observe what was passing without on the line of each wall; and this circumstance leads to the supposition that they had been used as guard rooms. The opening of these apertures externally was not more than six inches in width, but within it expanded to about five feet. The Roman wall directs its course from the angle tower in a north-easterly direction, and has been traced as far as Bootham Bar, where the foundations and some interesting fragments of the old Roman gate were discovered. Between the Multangular Tower and the ancient gate, remains of two wall towers and one entire small chamber have been found buried with the modern wall of the City. These towers, and the wall connected with them, were removed when the new entrance into the City through St. Leonard's Place was formed. The other Roman wall ran from the angle tower in the direction of Lendal and Coney Street.

"The Multangular Tower with the wall adjoining it," writes Mr. Wellbeloved, "is the only portion of the fortifications of Eburacum or Roman York, existing above ground. But in excavating for sewers and other purposes, various portions of the foundations of such fortifications have been found; by means of which the exact extent of one side, and the direction of two other sides of the Roman Station have been satisfactorily ascertained. No distinct traces of a fourth side have yet been found, or if found, noticed by any antiquary. It can only be conjectured that it nearly coincided with the rampart and wall connected with Monk Bar and Layerthorpe Bridge. If this conjecture, justified by what is certainly known of the three other walls of the Roman Station, be adopted, it appears that Roman York occupied comparatively a small portion of the site of modern York, and that it was entirely on the north side of the river Ouse; the south side being occupied as recent discoveries have clearly shown, by extensive baths, temples, villas, and places of burial; on the road leading from Eburacum to Calcaria (Tadcaster), the next station towards the south."

The same learned antiquary places the Roman bridge over the Ouse higher

up the river than the present one. He thinks that it was thrown across from about St. Helen's Square to Tanner Row.

For ages the Roman Multangular Tower remained in a neglected state, until it came into the hands of the Yorkshire Philosophical Society in 1826, and when the accumulation of rubbish, which had been collected for centuries, was cleared away, several English coins of various dates were discovered near the surface, while many Roman coins were found in the bottom. And if any doubt existed of its Roman origin, it has been entirely removed by the discovery of Roman legionary inscriptions on some stones in the lower courses of the interior. Sir H. C. Englefield is the only person who has disputed the Roman origin of this tower, but he has not been so successful in establishing his opinion in this case as in that of the arch of Micklegate Bar.

*The Red Tower*, so called from having been chiefly built of red brick, is an erection of great antiquity. It is situated on the south bank of the river, and there is no doubt of its having originally been a portion of the fortifications of the City, for it is connected with Walmgate Bar by a continuation of the bar walls up to it. This tower, in the time of the Romans, commanded a grand bay, the basin or dock of which was more than a mile in circumference, and thus completed the protection of the City on that side. It, however, has undergone so many alterations, and been devoted to such a variety of uses, that its original features are gone. Still the foundations are of the same stone as the bar walls, and stone loopholes the same as those in the Bar walls are remaining. The brick work is composed of bricks of various ages and manufacture—the oldest being broader and thinner than any of the others, and not unlike those which appear mixed with the stone work of the Multangular Tower. The present appearance of this ancient structure conveys but a very imperfect idea of the once stately square tower, through the loopholes of which the engines of war were pointed to protect the navy of the port of York from hostile attack. In modern times the Red Tower was used as a manufactory of brimstone (from which circumstance it is sometimes called the Brimstone House), and that has aggravated the dilapidations of time. Where the brick walls are perfect they are about four feet thick. The port-holes are now mostly filled up, and the building is at present used as a pig-stye.

*Lendal Tower* has been already noticed. Besides the towers of the City ramparts, there are the remains of two other towers which belonged to the walls of St. Mary's Abbey. One of these, called *St. Mary's Tower*, is situated



in Bootham at the end of the street called Marygate, and was blown up by a mine during the Siege of York (See page 241); and the other stands at the lower end of Marygate on the bank of the river. Of the small rooms or cells in the ramparts mentioned above, there are several still remaining.

In the south-east corner of the City, and just within the walls, is a large mound, the origin of which is not known. In ancient deeds it is called *Vetus Ballium*, or *Old Bayle*, signifying a place of security; and probably forms the platform, as Leland and Camden suppose, of an ancient ruined Castle. The mound, which is now called *Old Baile Hill*, is ornamented with a small plantation of trees, and from its summit is a fine view of York, and of the rich country by which it is surrounded.

The general opinion of historians is that there was a Castle on this artificial tumulus in the time of the Saxons, and that William the Conqueror erected upon it a tower to serve as the chief garrison for that part of the City not lying on the same side as the Castle. It is known to have been, at a subsequent period, a prison belonging to the Archbishops, who possessed the jurisdiction of the places now called *Bishophill*, but the time of the origin and cessation of their authority in this part of the City is not known. The incorporation of their peculiar here with the rest of the City must have been later than 1326, for in that year a cause was tried before Queen Isabel, between the Archbishop, William de Melton, and the citizens to settle a dispute whether the Archbishop, as Lord of the Manor, was not bound to preserve the fortifications hereabouts. The verdict affirmed his liability. All traces of the Castle upon this hill have long since disappeared. Immediately opposite the Old Baile Hill, on the other side of the Ouse, is a similar mound, upon which stands the ruins of Clifford's Tower, of which more anon.

**YORK CASTLE.**—According to Drake, the historian of York, there was a Castle in this City long before the Conquest, and its supposed site is, as above intimated, the *Old Baile Hill*; but that fortress has now disappeared, and the present Castle was, as our author conjectures, built on a Roman foundation. It was erected by the Conqueror, near the confluence of the Foss and the Ouse, and made of great strength, so as to serve for the chief Norman garrison in Northumbria, and to keep the people in awe of their tyrant. It continued in the hands of the Crown for many subsequent reigns, and was used as the official residence of the High Sheriffs of Yorkshire in succession, as the Mansion House is now the residence of each successive Lord Mayor. It was also used as a store house for the revenues and munitions of the Crown in the northern counties, and there was a Constable of

the Castle whose duty it was solely to attend to this department. This fortress was entirely surrounded by a deep moat, the course of which may yet be clearly traced, the buildings being thus rendered inaccessible except by two draw-bridges. The principal gate or entrance from the County, down to the early part of the last century, was on the east side, near the Castle Mills Bridge; and the City entrance was on the north side. A small arch under the walls in front of the latter gate, where the arms of the City were placed, shewed the spot where the ancient draw-bridge was erected; whilst the bridge, gate, towers, and sally port, on the eastern side, have all been cleared away. The remains of the towers and sally port were removed about the beginning of this century; at which time the moat on that side of the Castle, which had formerly been supplied with water from the river Foss, was filled up, and a wall built, surmounted with iron palisades, in lieu of it.

About the time of Richard III. the fortress had fallen very much into decay, and was then very extensively repaired. Leland, however, in the reign of Henry VIII., found it in a very ruinous condition, and says of it, "The area of this Castle is no very great quantitie—ther be five ruinous towers in it." These towers, however, presented a very interesting and picturesque appearance.

Sir Thomas Widdrington, in his MSS., says, "That part of the Castle which remains of the old foundation appears to be only the gate-house to the old building, by the proportion of the gates yet showing themselves in the east side, towards Fishergate Postern, where the great door is walled up, and where the main building of the Castle was, as is manifest by the foundations of walls all over the said place, if it be tried with the spade or hack." After the Castle ceased to be a military post, it was converted into a County Prison; and in 1701, being in a very dilapidated condition, the part now called the *Old Buildings* was erected chiefly with stone brought from the ruins of St. Mary's Abbey. Other additions were at the same time made, in pursuance of an Act of Parliament, which levied a tax of threepence in the pound on the County to defray the expenses.

Within the walls of the Castle stands the beautiful ruin called *Clifford's Tower*, which is considered one of the most graceful specimens of mediæval architecture in the City. It stands on a lofty mound of earth, which, at some remote period, has been thrown up by immense labour. This tumulus and ruin exactly correspond with Old Baile Hill on the opposite side of the river. Drake supposes that the mound was cast up by the Romans, and that a tower was standing on it during their residence in York. Others think it probable that the present tower was erected by William the Conqueror when

he built the Castle, and that it was intended for the "Donjon Keep," that is, the central and strongest part of the fortress. Dr. King, in his *Munita Antiqua*, conjectures that it was originally built by the Conqueror, and that it is one of the Castles mentioned in Stowe's Annals as built in 1068; "For," says he, "Norman Castles were built on high artificial mounds, and nearly covered the whole of the summit. The Castles built by the Saxons," he continues, "were on high mounds, or ancient barrows, and had a great plain or area surrounding them."

There is, however, no record of this tower being rebuilt, but the architecture bears evident marks of a date much later than the reign of the Norman Conqueror. It is certainly not older than the time of Edward I., and Mr. Britton thinks it was probably erected in the reign of his warlike successor, Edward III.\* Though it was the Keep of the Castle, it was totally distinct from it, and was completely separated from it by a moat, which surrounded it. The entrance to the tower, however, was from the Castle by means of a drawbridge, and a flight of steps up the side of the mount; but these steps were removed some years ago to repair the wall near the spot.

Clifford's Tower derives its name from the circumstance of a member of the noble and once powerful family of Clifford having been appointed its first Governor by the Conqueror. Sir Thomas Widdrington remarks, that the Lords Clifford were very anciently called Casteleyns, Wardens, or Keepers of the Tower. Though the Lord Mayor certainly cannot have any superior in dignity to him within the walls of the City, except the King himself or the presumptive heir to the English Crown, yet the Clifford family have repeatedly claimed a right of carrying the City's sword before the King when he visited York. When Leland was at York, the tower, drawbridge, &c., were in ruins. "The Arx (or Keep) is all in ruine," he says, "and the roote of the hille that it standeth on is environed with an arme derived out of Fosse-Water." In the reign of Queen Elizabeth, the Corporation of York addressed two petitions to the Lord Treasurer Burleigh, and to Clifford, Earl of Northumberland, praying that measures might be taken for preventing the Keeper of the Castle from injuring the tower and converting its stone into lime, inasmuch as they deemed it to be of surpassing beauty and imparting more ornament to the City than anything else beside, save the Minster. These petitions had their due effect, and the work of demolition was stopped; but it remained in an untenable state until the commencement of the war between Charles I. and the Parliament, when Drake says, "by

\* Picturesque Antiquities of English Cities, p. 5.

the direction of Henry, then Earl of Cumberland, Lord Lieutenant of the northern parts, and Governor of York, this tower was repaired; a considerable additional square building put to it, on that side next the Castle, on which, over the gate, in stone work, are placed the Royal Arms and those of the Cliffords, viz. chequee, a fess, ensigned with an Earl's coronet, supported by two wiverns, and this motto—*Desormais*." These arms, &c., may still be seen over the gate.

After being thoroughly repaired, a platform was constructed on the top, on which were mounted two demiculverins and a raker, and a garrison was appointed to defend it. During the Siege of York, in 1644, this garrison was under the command of Sir Francis Cobb, who succeeded to the office of Governor of the City at the death of Henry, the last Earl of Cumberland. When the City came into the hands of the Parliamentarians, the Castle was entirely dismantled, with the exception of this tower, in which, according to a resolution in the House of Commons, dated 26th of February, 1646, a detachment of sixty infantry soldiers were stationed, "Resolved that Clifford's Tower (York) be kept a garrison with three score foot in it." The command was then given to the Lord Mayor of York, in whose hands it continued till 1683, when Sir John Resesby was made Keeper by Charles II. It was however blown up the following year by the ignition of the magazine, and reduced to its present condition. The circumstance is thus related in an old MSS. diary of those times:—"About ten o'clock on the night of St. George's day, April 23rd, 1684, happened a most dreadful fire within the tower called Clifford's Tower, which consumed to ashes all the interior thereof, leaving standing only the outshell of the walls of the tower, without other harm to the City, save one man slain by the fall of a piece of timber, blown up by the force of the flames, or rather by some powder therein. It was generally thought a wilful act, the soldiers not suffering the citizens to enter till it was too late; and what made it more suspicious was, the gunner had got out all his goods before it was discovered." "Whether this was done accidentally or on purpose," says Drake, "is disputable; it was observed that the officers and soldiers of the garrison had removed all their best things before; and it was a common toast in the City to drink to the *Demolishing of the Minceed Pye*." The ruin and adjacent grounds then passed into private hands, and in 1825 they were purchased by the County Magistrates, with other property in the immediate neighbourhood, to enlarge the County Gaol, for £8,800.; of which sum £300. was the price of the ruins.

At that time it was proposed by some *Vandals or Goths* to destroy the ruin, and level the mound with the surrounding ground, but the good taste of the

majority of the magistracy rejected such an act, and instead of so doing, they, much to their credit, erected around it a strong stone wall, sloping with the declivity of the mound, which binds the base of the entire tumulus, and will protect it for some centuries. One of the Magistracy, G. Strickland, Esq., of Hildenby, in a pamphlet published at that time, called *Reasons for not pulling down Clifford's Tower, &c.*, very truly observed, "that many persons are too apt to despise or to pass over in neglect those objects which are habitually presented to them, and hold in veneration such only as are distant, and with which they are comparatively little acquainted. Upon this principle we must account for the fact of so many of our countrymen travelling to distant regions, and returning home, expressing wonder, astonishment, and delight, at the ruins, mountains, and valleys, which they have seen, while they remain ignorant of the merits of their own country, insensible to its beauties, and affecting to despise its remains of antiquity.

"Such persons can see a thousand charms in every broken arch, and in every ruin near the Tiber, however small the remnant—while they can find nothing to admire upon the banks of the Thames, or of the Ouse,—while they load with epithets of reproach and execration, the names of Alaric, the leader of the Goths, and of Genseric, the King of the Vandals, and call their myriads of followers barbarians—because the one overran Greece, and plundered and destroyed the public buildings and works of art at Athens, and Corinth, and Sparta; and the other, after taking Rome, laid waste the City, and reduced to ruin its temples and its bridges;—in England, with unsparing hand, would level to the ground our best remains of ancient buildings; which have resisted the destructive efforts of time, and for ages been held up to the admiration of all persons of education and taste, to make a foundation for a gaol or a manufactory.

"That Clifford's Tower is an object not unworthy of some share of respect and of care, may perhaps be made evident by a comparison between it and some of those remains of similar form, which, because they are in Italy, are held sacred, and are preserved from destruction. Of this kind is the Castle of St. Angelo, in Rome (anciently the Mausoleum of Adrian.) Of a similar form is the sepulchre of the Plautian family, upon the bank of the Tiverone and the far-famed tomb of Cecilia Metella. Excepting the first, each of these is greatly inferior in size to Clifford's Tower, and all inferior in elevation of site and picturesque beauty." Thus we have seen that this ancient tower has had many escapes, having been burnt and exposed to the attacks of war, "but still it stood," says Mr. Davies, "its walls bidding defiance to age, nor upon them 'Time writes no wrinkle' with his antique hand."

The plan of this beautiful specimen of feudal grandeur consists of four segments of circles joined together; the largest diameter, from periphery to periphery, being sixty-four feet, and the shortest, from intersection to intersection, being forty-five feet. The walls are between nine and ten feet thick. The mound is mounted by a flight of steps, and the ruin is entered through the modern square tower mentioned before, over which are the arms of the Clifford family. On the left of the entrance are the remains of a winding staircase, beyond which was the original entrance; of the latter the remains of a ruined archway may still be seen, and near it may be traced the grooves of a portcullis, and other requisites for offence and defence.

In the interior of the ruin is a draw-well of excellent water, about sixty feet deep, which in Drake's time was choked up, but is now open and well preserved. The area of the ground floor has a singular but venerable aspect. In the centre is a large walnut tree and a few small shrubs, which being surrounded with the massy but desolate looking walls of the ruins, have a curious but picturesque appearance. Proceeding round the interior of the ground floor several recesses will be observed in the walls, which have been designed for various purposes at present unknown. The walls may be safely ascended by a flight of stone steps, passing a small room in the square modern tower, which was formerly used as a Chapel, and at the top of the tower the wall is sufficiently broad to walk upon all round. From this eminence an extensive and interesting view of the neighbouring district is obtained. There is a neat and broad grass lawn round the base of the tower, and the sides of the mount on which the building stands are planted with trees and shrubs. The moat which formerly surrounded it is now filled up, so that the entire space forms a garden, which is tastefully laid out and kept in excellent order. The whole property is held, with other holds near the City, by grants from James I., to Babington and Duffield; and the words of the grant are, "Totam illum peciam terræ nostram scituat. Jacent, et existent in civit. nost. Ebor. vocat. Clifford's Tower."

The whole area of York Castle, including this tower, the old and new gaols, the County Hall, &c., is now enclosed by a very fine lofty stone wall, with an embattled parapet, and the great gate of entrance is flanked by two massy circular towers.\* The modern buildings designated *York Castle*, and used as the County Gaol, will be described at a subsequent page.

\* The number of Castles of which there are known to be existing remains is, in England, 461, Wales, 107, Scotland, 155, Ireland, 120; total, 843.

ANCIENT MANSIONS, HALLS, &c.—The site of the PRETORIUM PALACE—the ancient residence of the “Lords of the Universe”—during the occupation of the Romans, is placed by Burton, Drake, and Wellbeloved, on the space of ground extending from Christ Church, Colliergate, through the houses and gardens on the east side of Goodramgate and St. Andrewgate, through the Bedern to Aldwark. The royal baths would, in all probability, occupy a considerable part of the extent. After the departure of the Romans, the imperial Palace was made the residence of the Saxon and Danish Kings of Northumberland, and then of the Earls till the Conquest; for Tosti, Earl of Northumberland, had his Palace at York plundered and burnt by the enraged populace. After the Conquest it became the possession of our English Kings; and in ancient records the King’s House at York is called *Manerium suum de Toft*; and *Aula Regis*. From the Kings it probably came to the Dukes of York, as there was formerly a house in the neighbourhood of Christ Church called Duke Guildhall. Christ Church in ancient writings is generally termed *Ecclesia S. Trinitatis in aula, vel curia, regis*, or in old English, *Sainct Trinityes, in Conyng-garthe*; “which title,” observes Drake, “plainly denotes that the old courts of the imperial or regal Palace at York reached to this place.”

THE MANOR PALACE, now called the *Manor House*, which is situated on the south side of Bootham, just without the Bar, and within the walls of St. Mary’s Abbey, is the principal private mansion connected with the early history of York now standing. At the dissolution of the Abbey, in the 31st of Henry VIII., that Monarch ordered it to be dismantled, and a house to be built out of the materials, to be called the *King’s Manor*; and as King Henry, for the purpose of keeping the northern counties quiet, found it necessary to establish what was called the Great Council of the North, he appropriated the Manor for the residence of the Lord Presidents of that Council. During the twelve days which Henry spent at York in 1541, he probably resided at this mansion. When James I., on his journey to London to take possession of the Crown, after the death of Queen Elizabeth, arrived at York, he resided at the Manor, and was entertained with great splendour by the Lord Mayor and Corporation. (See page 205). He then, we are told by some, ordered the Manor to be repaired and enlarged, and converted into a Royal Palace, for his own accommodation upon his journeys between London and Scotland; but the Rev. C. Wellbeloved is of opinion that instead of repairing or enlarging the old building, he must have ordered the erection of a new one, as the residence of the Lord Presidents stood on the site now occupied by the Museum, and the large cellars of that building

may now be seen at the rear of the present Manor House; whilst the present mansion occupies the site of the house of the Abbot of St. Mary's, which stood north of the spot upon which the mansion of Henry VIII. was built. There can be no doubt that the building which now stands was erected by King James; and it is an interesting specimen of the style of architecture which prevailed in that Monarch's time. Besides, there are many testimonials of his design, in arms and other decorations about the several portals of the building. The monastic buildings on the spot are said to have furnished abundant materials for this mansion, as well as for that which preceded it. As this building continued to be the residence of the Lord President of the North as long as that office was continued, the original mansion was probably demolished, or suffered to go to ruin.

The celebrated but unfortunate Thomas Wentworth, Earl of Strafford, the last Lord President, inhabited this Palace, and one of the articles of his impeachment, drawn up by John Pym, was that "he had the arrogance to put up his own arms in one of the King's Palaces." These arms still remain over one of the doorways in the inner court. In the reign of Charles I. several Parliaments and Councils were held in this mansion. During the Siege of York in 1644, the Manor was materially damaged by the forces of the Parliament, under the command of the Earl of Manchester. After undermining and blowing up St. Mary's Tower, they made a breach in the wall lower down in Marygate, and took possession of the Palace, whilst the Royalist commanders were attending divine service at the Cathedral, it being Trinity Sunday; the Republicans "deeming that the Lord's day," says Allen, "was the best time for doing what they denominated the Lord's work."

When Charles II., in consequence of the continual bickerings between the Court and the Corporation, appointed a military Governor of the City, the Manor Palace was his official residence. Lord Fretchville, Baron of Stavely, was the first Governor, and after his death Sir John Resesby succeeded him. He was the last Governor of York, and the Manor does not seem to have borne any public character since that period. James II. granted it to the Catholics as a seminary, under the care of Bishop Smith, and a large room in it was fitted up and used as a Catholic Chapel, where mass was celebrated openly; but this consecrated room was in 1688 attacked and dismantled by a violent mob, who at that period entertained great fears lest the ancient faith should be re-introduced into this country. In 1696-7 the Manor was converted into a Royal Mint, and the gold and silver coin struck here was marked with the letter Y under the King's head. After this period the King's Manor appears to have been used by private individuals. Soon after



the Revolution, the Abbey or Manor was leased from the Crown for thirty-one years, to Robert Waller, Esq., who was Lord Mayor of York, and one of its representatives in Parliament. It was subsequently leased to Tancred Robinson, Esq., second son of Sir William Robinson, Bart., and ancestor of the Grantham family, in which it long continued. Part of the building was converted into an Assembly Room, and was used for the public balls, &c., until the present suite of rooms for these purposes were erected. Time and depredation have reduced even the walls of this venerable fabric within narrow limits; part of the enclosure is in the possession of the Philosophical Society, the rest is leased for gardens, and the greater part of what remains of this once regal dwelling has been, since 1834, in the possession of the Trustees of the Wilberforce School for the Blind.

The entrance to the outer court is through an old archway, once the entrance to St. Mary's Abbey from Bootham. On the right is a stone wall, probably built prior to the abdication of James II.; having in it recesses enriched with arabesque work, apparently designed for images. The mansion is built in the quadrangular form, usual at the period of its erection. The front has two entrances, one of which—formerly the principal one—displays over the doorway, carved in stone, the Royal Arms, supported by carved columns, bearing devices, with the initials J. R. near the bottom, and surmounted with a Crown. This was formerly the entrance to the inner quadrangle or court yard; but as this end of the building is now let out as a private dwelling, the court yard is entered by another doorway, near the centre of the building. This latter doorway is now ornamented with carved figures of Justice, and other emblematical devices, which formerly adorned the inner doorway of the original passage to the quadrangle. From the inner court yard are two ancient grand entrances into the Palace. The one on the east side, which was reached by a large flight of stone steps, and which has over it the Royal Arms, with the initials C. R., led to an apartment, eighty-one feet long and twenty-seven broad, which is by some supposed to have been the Banqueting Room, but in which tradition states several of the Parliaments held at York had assembled. In the centre of this room (which is now used as a National School) is a large ventilator. The other principal doorway is on the south side of the quadrangle, and over it still remains the arms and several quarterings of the Earl of Strafford, finely carved in stone. This outer doorway conducts into a hall or vestibule, from which a second door conducts to a broad and handsome flight of stone steps, which leads to a spacious, lofty, and comfortable apartment, by some deemed the Council Chamber. The doorway already mentioned, from the vestibule to the stone stair-

case, has a circular arch ornamented with curiously carved stone-work, above which is a massy stone frieze, supported by three singular brackets.

There was formerly a communication between the Council Chamber and the Banqueting Room, by a long gallery. Adjoining the large room, at the top of the great staircase already mentioned, is a suite of apartments, in one of which is a large fire place with a curiously carved mantel piece, and this, as well as some of the other rooms, exhibits a carved moulding along the walls near the ceiling, in which is represented the bear and rugged staff and other grotesque figures. The large room, supposed by some to have been that used as a Catholic Chapel\* by King James, has a panelled ceiling, and it, as well as the apartment with the curious fire place, is now used as bed rooms for the boys of the School for the Blind. The supposed Council Chamber is now a school room for the same pupils, and beneath the reputed banquet hall seems to have been a spacious kitchen, as an immense fire place and chimney yet remain. There is a large room beneath the supposed Chapel (now the sale room for the articles manufactured by the blind pupils) which is said to have been the royal library. The ceiling is empanelled with massy oak mouldings. At the rear of the buildings is a space now used as a playground for the blind pupils, which has on its south side the ruins of the kitchen and out offices of the original residence of the Lord Presidents, and beneath which are two large vaults. The ascent to each of these cellars is by a flight of stone steps.

An account of the Wilberforce School for the Blind, and the Manor Central National School, now held in these buildings, will be found at subsequent pages of this volume.

On the north side of Walmgate, opposite the Church of St. Dennis, near Mr. Dixon's warehouses, formerly stood *Percy's Inn*, the Palace of the Earl of Northumberland, who fell, fighting for the House of Lancaster, in the memorable battle of Towton Field. In an account of the property of Henry, Earl of Northumberland (father of the above mentioned Earl), who was slain at the battle of St. Albans, in the 33rd of Henry VI. (1454), a certain mansion in Walmgate, in the parish of St. Dyonis in York, called *Percy's Inn*, is included. Dugdale, in alluding to this house, says that on the ground where it stood, there was found by a labourer, several years before, one arm

\* Some suppose the large room with the panelled ceiling, over the sale room for the articles manufactured by the blind pupils, to have been the one used as a Catholic Chapel; but others are of opinion that it was in the large room now occupied as a National School—the reputed Banqueting Room—and for some time the Assembly Room, that the services of the Church of Rome were celebrated.

of a gold cup, so heavy as to be sold for the sum of £50. Percy's Inn seems to have been occupied by other families after the Earls of Northumberland forsook it. The Rev. Marmaduke Fothergill was born there in 1652.

The ARCHIEPISCOPAL PALACE stood on the north side of the Cathedral, Having fallen into decay it was demolished, and the materials used in the construction of the choir of that church, the first stone of which was laid on the 19th of July, 1361.

Within Layerthorpe Postern formerly stood a spacious residence belonging to the ancient family of Bigod, of Settrington, which is mentioned by Leland, and near it was a Hospital founded by them; but that author remarks, that Sir Francis Bigod suffered both the Hospital and the mansion to go to ruin, and there is not now a vestige of either to be seen.

Adjoining the Church of St. Mary Bishophill the Elder, until lately existed a open piece of ground, which is now occupied partly by Mr. Cook's Optical, &c., instrument manufactory, and partly by a new street formed to connect Bishophill with Skeldergate, formerly stood a mansion called BUCKINGHAM HOUSE or *Duke's Hall*, it having obtained those names from the unfortunate George Villiers, second Duke of Buckingham, of that name, who married the daughter of Lord Fairfax, and resided here in the reign of Charles II. The mansion was originally built by the Fairfax family.

DAVY, or LARDINER HALL, an ancient building which stood in Davygate, was part of the possessions held by grand serjeanty of the King, *in capite*, by David le Lardiner. Leland says that, "Davy's Haul" in York was assigned as a place of punishment for offenders in the Forest of Galtres. Sir Thomas Widdrington drew out a genealogical table of this family, and the pedigree is published in Drake's Eboracum, page 326. From this it appears that the family came to England with the Norman Conqueror, and enjoyed many privileges in York by royal grant during many successive generations. In enumerating the privileges of the Lardiner family, Sir Thomas gives the following particulars:—"In the pleas of assize in the County of York, the morrow after the feast of St. Michael, before Silvestor, Bishop of Carlisle, Roger de Thurkleby, and their companions, Justices itinerant in the 35th and the beginning of the 36th year of Henry II., the King gave command to those Justices to enquire, by jury, what liberty the ancestors of David le Lardiner had used in the City of York; and how and what liberties the said David claimeth by the charters of any of the King's predecessors. Thereupon David came in, and said that it did belong to the serjeanty which he holds in York, to receive, &c.; as enumerated in the following reply:—

"And the jurors found that the ancestors of David le Lardiner, had really

used the following liberties:—To make the larder of the King—To keep the prisoners of the forest—To have the measure of the King for corn; and to sell the King's corn. That they had daily, out of the King's purse, fivepence; and for these his ancestors had charters. Sometimes they used this liberty, to take, every Saturday, from every window of the bakers where bread was set to sale, a loaf or an halfpenny—Of every brewer of ale, a gallon of ale or an halfpenny—Of every butcher's window, a pennyworth of flesh or a penny—Of every cartload of fish sold at Foss Bridge, four pennyworth of fish as they were bought at the sea side; and of every horseload of fish, a pennyworth or a penny. That they used to make distresses of the King's debts, and to take fourpence for every distress; and that they were Aldermen of Minstrels.\* The ancestors of David le Lardiner have used these liberties in the time of King Henry, grandfather to the King which now is, and in the time of King Richard, till they were hundred; and they used all these liberties in the name of the serjeanty which they held of the King. The record was sent to the King."

These extraordinary privileges, which were extremely unpleasant and oppressive to the citizens of York, continued till the 37th of Henry III. (1253), "when," says Drake, "a fine was levied at Westminster, before the King's Justices, between David le Lardiner, plaintiff, and John de Selby, Mayor, and the citizens of York, deforciant; by which the said David did remit and

\* Fraternities of *Minstrels* or *Gleemen* were established in most towns of consequence even so early as the reign of King Athelstan, and they were well supported by their profession for many ages after the Norman Conquest. The Minstrels seem to be the descendants of the ancient bards, for they exhibited in one person the musician and the poet. It is stated that the Courts of Princes swarmed with poets and minstrels. The King and most of the nobility retained their own minstrels, who wore their respective liveries. The minstrels were generally governed by stated rules, and played at weddings, feasts, fairs, cross days, &c., under the direction of their leader, who was of necessity an Alderman of the borough. They waited for no invitation, but considering admission into the halls of the nobility as an undeniable privilege due to their talents, they entered without ceremony, and seldom departed without a liberal reward. The excessive privileges which the minstrels enjoyed in all parts of the Kingdom, and the long continuance of public favour, with the gratuities collected by them, induced great numbers of loose and dissolute persons to join the fraternity, and its reputation became much diminished in the public estimation. These evils became at last so notorious, that in the reign of Edward II. it was found necessary to restrain them by a public edict. In little more than a century afterwards these grievances again became the subject of complaint to the King. In the reign of Elizabeth, the professors of minstrelsy were ranked amongst rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars, and at a later period in history, the minstrels are generally identified with *Wattes* (a corruption of the word *watt*, to watch), and they were sometimes styled *Histriones*.

release to the Mayor and citizens all his right in the above articles, except the Keeper of the King's jail and larder, for the sum of twenty marks, paid him by the said Mayor and citizens." After the death of David Lardiner, the hall passed by marriage to the families of Leke, Thornton, Thwaites, and Fairfax; and was in time transferred to George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham, who married Mary, only daughter of Thomas, Lord Fairfax, to whom Sir Thomas Widdrington was related. As neither the Mayor or Sheriffs could arrest or take fines, nor disturb any person, though not a freeman, from carrying on his business on these premises, the Corporation purchased the hall with all its privileges, by which it became subject to their jurisdiction; and the building been greatly out of repair, was taken down in 1744, the materials sold, and the ground let on building leases to Mr. Charles Mitley, sculptor, reserving a street from Davygate into Coney Street.

Mr. William Carr, brother-in-law to Mr. Mitley, took down the old hall, and built a row of six good houses, which being roofed in July, 1746, on the very day when William, Duke of Cumberland, visited York after the battle of Culloden, were, through respect to him, called Cumberland Row. These six houses, with one built by the late Mr. Peckett, more immediately in Davygate, are all extra parochial. The title of Cumberland Row is now nearly lost, and the houses form part of New Street.

Near Coffee Yard, in Stonegate, was anciently a large house called MULBERRY HALL, supposed by Mr. Hargrove to be a corruption of the words Mowbray Hall; as in several early records the former name is often written *Mulbrai Hall*. Mr. Hargrove conjectures that it was formerly a house belonging to the powerful family of the Mowbrays. The house in Stonegate, now in the occupation of Mr. Sunter, bookseller, is said to be the hall, or a portion of the hall, in question. According to some, Hugo Bois, or Goes, set up his printing presses here in 1507.

In a yard in Coney Street, nearly opposite St. Martin's Church, is a very ancient brick building, with stone quoins and dressings, which has apparently been used as a Bagnio, the remains of one bath being yet visible. The building has, however, been devoted to such a variety of purposes of late years, that its original use cannot be ascertained with certainty. It is now converted into dwellings.

The GEORGE INN, *Coney Street*, is remarkable for its antiquity, and has been known to exist for 250 years as a hotel. The occupier of this once famous hostelry, in the reign of James I., has been immortalized by John Taylor, known as the "Water Poet," who in 1622 sailed in an open boat from London to York, and published a quaint description of the trip, under

the title of "A Very Merry Wherry-Ferry Voyage." The poet describes his arrival in York, at the assize time, in the midst of hangings, his interview with the Lord Mayor, and the ultimate sale of his boat to "honest Mr. Kay, of Conyngstreet."

The general plan of the George Inn, which, by the way, has lately been divided and sold, with its gateway and inner quadrangle, resembles some of those old hostelries of the middle ages, of which we have a few specimens yet remaining. Most of the front is modern. The house had formerly gable fronts to the street, elaborately ornamented in wood and plaster, with designs of similar age and character to the decorations of the interior. Amidst a profusion of scroll work and foliage and other fanciful devices, was a grotesque full length figure of a seated Bacchus grasping in each hand a cornucopia. The seven pillars in front of the house, were put up in 1716, by Mr. George Peckitt, and were intended to support the building and to ornament the street. A very curious porch was cut in half in making the alterations in the front; the portion which remains has several fine bosses, one of which a pelican feeding her young is in very good order, but much disfigured by paint. A large antique apartment in the house—the State Drawing Room—is worthy of notice. The carved wainscot which lines the walls, and the plaster work of the ceiling are richly decorated in the style that prevailed during the earlier part of the seventeenth century. But the most remarkable decoration in the room is—or perhaps we had better say, was—a singularly interesting group of five heraldic achievements, in painted glass, executed in the reign of Charles II., and consisting of the armorial bearings of that Sovereign, the Earl of Strafford, the Earl of Northumberland, &c. Mr. Davies, in one of his lectures at the York Institute, on the Antiquities of York, observed that if he might conjecture how this memorial of the "Merry Monarch" had got there, he would say that it was possible, and even highly probable, that he and his gay companions had frequently partaken of the good cheer of "mine host" of the George, and had in return presented him with this mark of their patronage.

Mr. Allen, who wrote in 1829, tells us, that till a few years previous to that time, there was an old and curiously carved gateway into the yard of this Inn, which well deserved preservation. In the yard may yet be traced the remains of strong stone walls, which tradition informs us were part of the buildings belonging to the ancient Guild of St. George.

In the lanes which run from Coney Street to the river Ouse, are the remains of strong stone buildings, which at some former period may have been important.

The old building in Newgate, and the ancient pile, called *St. William's College*, will be noticed at subsequent pages.

The CASTLE MILLS, which till lately stood near the bridge which took its name from them, were of very ancient origin, and were the property of the Castle, but alienated in the time of Queen Elizabeth. An old document states that in the fourth of Edward I. (1276), the Knights Templars had mills near the Castle of York, which afterwards belonged to the Kings of England. During the reign of Edward II. they were rented by lease for forty marks per annum; by which we may judge of their extent at that time; and as the situation is exactly described in the Register of Fountains Abbey, there is no doubt as to their identity. From the Crown they passed to Sir Thomas Hesketh, of Heslington, near York, for the support of an Hospital, which he founded in that village. The Foss Navigation Company afterwards requiring the water which worked the machinery, agreed with the trustees of the said Hospital to take the premises into their own hands, subject to an annual payment of £50. to the Hospital. The Mills ultimately became the property of the Corporation of York, and were pulled down in 1856, together with all the adjacent buildings, to make room for the construction of a basin, and the formation of a landing place for coals, &c., to be called *St. George's Wharfe*.

The extensive improvements, which of late years have been effected, are fast sweeping away those numerous specimens of ancient domestic architecture for which York was so very remarkable. Every year diminishes those curious exteriors, and it is probable that another generation will possess only drawings and elevations of the buildings now common. The etchings of Halfpenny and Cave, made towards the close of the last century, show many interesting objects which have now altogether disappeared.

Britton, in his *Architectural Antiquities*, gives the following quotation from Mr. Strutt, which explains very clearly the style of the kind of buildings most common in the old houses in the streets of York:—"From the reign of Edward I. to that of Henry VII., the common run of houses especially among the middling sort of people, were built with wood. They generally made large porches before the principal entrances, with great halls and large parlours. The frame-work was constructed with beams of timber of such enormous size, that the materials of one house, as they built anciently, would make several of equal size according to the present mode of building. The common method of making walls was to nail laths to the timber frame, and strike them over with rough plaster, which was afterwards whitened and ornamented with fine mortar, and this last was often beautified with figures

and other curious devices. The houses in the cities and towns were built each story jetting over the former story, so that when the streets were not wide, the people at the top from opposite houses, might not only talk and converse with each other, but even shake hands together. The houses were covered with tiles, shingles, slates or lead, except in the City of London, where shingles were prohibited, with a view to prevent fires."

Before the present Ouse Bridge was built, in 1810, and the approaches to it called Low Ousegate and Bridge Street widened, the houses answered so closely to this description, that the people in the top stories could in some cases converse, and almost shake hands together. The streets which still retain the greatest number of these houses are those leading from Castlegate to the banks of the river, and the Shambles. There are also some curious specimens in Petergate, Stonegate, and Fossgate. The houses out of Bootham Bar, with the curiously-designed brick-work, are not older than the seventeenth century.

**NAMES OF STREETS, &c.**—In the names of several of the streets of York, the termination *gate* is used to describe a street or lane, as Marygate, Petergate, Micklegate, Ousegate, &c., whilst the greater gates or entrances to the City are denominated *Bars*, as Micklegate Bar, Bootham Bar, &c.; the lesser ones *Posterns*, as Castlegate Postern, Fishergate Postern, &c. The word *gate* is probably derived from the Danish "gata," a street, as many of the names of the suburbs are of Danish-Norwegian origin, as Clementhorpe, Bishopthorpe, Middlethorpe, Layerthorpe, &c., the termination *thorpe* being derived from "dorp," a village. Several of the streets still retain the names they bore in mediæval times.

*Micklegate*, formerly called Micklelyth, which extends from St. John's Church near Ouse Bridge, to the Bar to which it gives name, merely implies a large, great, or spacious street; *Mickle* in the Anglo-Saxon language signifying great, and *Lyth*, a port or *gate*. This name also is derived from the Danish "Mykill," great, and "gata," street. Camden, in 1586, spoke of Micklegate as "a long street and broad," the houses having gardens and orchards, and fields for sports. Many of the houses in this street are of a better class, and were erected when numbers of aristocratic families lived in York during the winter months. Those at the upper end, we are told by Mr. Davies, belonged, chiefly, to Catholic families. According to the same authority, the aristocratic persons who resided in Micklegate a century ago, had not the conveniences which the present residents possess, as in 1750, they are found asking the Corporation to grant them two feet of flagging next to their houses, with posts and chains to protect foot passengers from the



incursions of horses.\* Micklegate was the widest and most elegant street in York a few years ago, and is now surpassed only by Parliament Street.

*Monkgate* leads from Monk Bar to Monk Bridge, and is supposed to be indebted for its name to a Monastery of Crouched Friars, which tradition informs us formerly stood in it at the corner of Barker Hill.

Beyond Monk Bridge lie the village and moor of Heworth; and towards the north, forming a boundary of the lands of Ulphus, is a lane which was anciently termed Goyse Lane. From a perambulation, made in the 28th of Edward III. (1355), it appears that the Forest of Galtres reached up to the walls on this side of the City. (See the second volume of this history).

*Walmgate*, leading from Foss Bridge to Walmgate Bar, is supposed by Mr. Drake and others to be a corruption of the ancient Roman name Watlingate, which the street immediately without the Bar bore even in modern times. This latter street (now called Lawrence Street) is supposed to have been the commencement of the Roman roads which led to the Humber, and to some of the ports on the German Ocean, and to have derived its former appellation from the great Roman road, Watling Street. It is now the direct road to Hull, Bridlington, &c. Some imagine that Walmgate merely implied Tripe Street. Mr. Hargrove considers the name but a corruption of Vallumgate—Vallum being the Latin name for a wall or bulwark for security, as this street not only leads to the present Walmgate Bar, but also to Fishergate Bar and the Red Tower.

*Bootham* is a fine, wide, open, airy street beyond the north gate of the City, communicating with the village of Clifton. The Romans having interred their dead out of Bootham Bar, as also without Micklegate Bar, Dean Gale supposes that the name of Bootham was derived from the British word *boeth*, to burn. The monks of St. Mary's Abbey held a fair in free burgage out of this Bar, on which occasion a hamlet of booths were regularly erected; and hence, according to some, the word Bootham. And here we shall make a digression for the purpose of showing the origin of fairs.

*Fairs* appear to have originated from the meetings of people at the anni-

\* Mr. Davies, in one of his interesting lectures on the Antiquities of York, stated that the house in Micklegate, now occupied by the Miss Cromptons, was erected by the family of the Bouchiers, one of whom, Sir John Bouchier, signed the death warrant of King Charles I. The house where Dr. Williams now resides once belonged to the family of Bathurst; it was also occupied by the Marchioness of Conyngham, a near relation of the present Lord Londesborough. The Thompsons, ancestors of Lord Wenlock, formerly resided in this part of the street. The house occupied by the late B. Hague, Esq., was once the town residence of the Garforths, of Wiganthorpe, who, two centuries ago, were amongst the first merchants of York.

versaries of the dedication of Churches. It was the custom in ancient times for religious people to meet together on the evening of the day preceding the anniversary of the dedication of the Church, or on the eve of the festival of the Saint in whose honour the Church was dedicated, and they sometimes continued to watch and pray in the Church all night. Hence the term *Vigil*, which is applied to the eve of great festivals. On the day of the dedication of the Church, or on the festival of the martyr whose relics were placed in the Church, it was allowed by Pope Gregory that the people might make *booths* of the boughs of trees, around the Church, and observe a religious feast. "In the beginning of holi churche," says an old document, "it was so that the pepull cam to the churche with candellys brennyng, and wold wake, and coome with light toward the chirche, in their devociions." These watchings, wakes, or feasts, having degenerated into riotous meetings, were at last suppressed, and regular fairs substituted for them—hence the most ancient fairs will be found to correspond with the dedication of the Churches of the places in which they are held. They were kept in the Church yards till restrained by Act of Parliament in 1285. In many rural parishes we have still a remnant of the ancient feasts or wakes observed, though entirely denuded of the religious element. And the carol singing by musicians, called *Waits*, in the streets before Christmas, is another remnant of those ancient wakes—the word *waites* being a corruption of wakes or watching.

Fairs were granted to religious houses as a source of profit as well as convenience, and, they were appointed to take place on festivals, that trade might attract those whom religion could not influence. The fair of the Abbot of St. Mary's, at Bootham, York, caused many serious disputes between the Abbots and the citizens, till Archbishop Thoresby, in 1354, effected an agreement between the parties, respecting the bounds of each jurisdiction. In the reigns of Henry III. and Edward I., the great fairs lasted fourteen days, and were the scenes where the principal part of the traffic of the Kingdom was transacted, as they were frequented not only by people of all the surrounding country, but by foreign as well as English merchants. They were held by prescription, and under the authority of royal charters, and yielded a considerable profit to the lords or owners who had jurisdiction in all matters of dispute, and administration of justice at Courts of *pie poudre* which were appurtenant, as a matter of common right to every fair. (Stat. 17 Edw. I. c. 2). A priest was also appointed on such occasions to celebrate Divine Service, and sermons were preached from a pulpit erected in the open air, at stated times during the fairs, for the benefit of strangers resorting to them. The fairs were sought because shops were rare, and stores for a whole year were then

laid in by housekeepers. In the expenses of the Northumberland household it appears that stores for the Earl's house at Wressil Castle for the whole year, were laid in from fairs. "He that stands charged with my lord's house for the houll yeir, if he may possible shall be at all fairs; where the groice emptions shall be boughte for the house for the houll yeir, as wine, wax, beiffes, multons, wheite, and maltie." (Beiffes and multons were salted oxen and sheep). The historians of York have not left us any description of the great fair in Bootham, but we may rest satisfied that it, as well as some of the other fairs in Yorkshire, was not all inferior to a fourteen days fair at Cambridge, which is described by Carter, in his account of Cambridgeshire in 1753. The shops, or booths, he tells us, were built in rows like streets, having each their name, as Bookseller's Row, Cook Row, &c., and every commodity had its proper place, as the Cheese fair, Hop fair, Wool fair, &c. In these places, streets, or rows, were all sorts of traders who sold by wholesale or retail. And as to the amount of business transacted, he says, that after the trade of the fair had begun to decline, £100,000. worth of woollen goods had been known to be sold in a week's time, in the Duddery, the draper's department. A prodigious trade had been carried on by the tailors from London, and it was not unfrequent for a wholesale man to carry back orders for £10,000. worth of goods. There was one booth of Norwich stuffs, he assures us, in which there were goods to the value of £20,000. The returns for wool at one fair, he adds, amounted to nearly £60,000., and for hops little less. This gives us an idea of the magnitude of the ancient fairs or marts in England.

Bootham, according to Drake was "the King's Street, and extended from Bootham Bar to a wooden gate, at the farther end of it, which anciently was called Galmhawlith; where the officers of the City used to stand to take and receive the toll and customs." The Dean and Chapter, we are told by Allen, claim jurisdiction on the north side of Bootham, as part of the territories, "De terra Ulphi;" but on the south side from the Abbey gate to St. Mary's Tower, the houses are in the County, being built where the ditch of the Abbey wall formerly was. At the end of Bootham, near the village of Clifton, is the basement of an ancient cross or boundary stone, now designated *Burton Stone*, and near it is *Burton Lane*, which led out of the suburbs into the ancient Forest of Galtres. The place probably derives its name from a family named Burton, who were possessed of property in the neighbourhood. *Burton Lane* was formerly called *Chapel Lane*, from the Hospital and Chapel of St. Mary Magdalene, which stood near it, but of which no remains are now visible. The mill in the lane existed in the time of Richard II. Near

Burton Stone, in the time of the Plantagenets, the City troops and trained bands assembled when called out to check the incursions of the Scots, and here they received their last inspection by the Mayor and citizens.\* The legal boundary of the City extends to Burton Stone, on the north side; but on the south side the City jurisdiction only commenced at Bootham Bar. In the field nearly opposite the Burton Stone, some stone coffins were found in 1813.

*Gillygate*, leading from Bootham to the north end of Lord Mayor's Walk, derives its name from the ancient Church of St. Giles, which, according to Mr. Hargrove, stood about half way down the street on the west side.

*Lord Mayor's Walk* was once called *Newbegin*, and is described in an old document as "Newbegin, alias Gillygate."

*Penley Grove*, commonly called The Groves—the district north of Lord Mayor's Walk—is a corruption of Payneley Crofts, and probably derives its name from a gentleman of the name of Payneley, who first enclosed the land in this locality from the ancient Forest of Galtres, to which it previously belonged.

*Horse Fair* was the name given to a piece of ground (now enclosed) at the north end of Lowther Street, Groves, it being the place where many of the York fairs were formerly held. At these fairs booths were erected for the purpose of trade, as was done at the Abbot of St. Mary's fair already mentioned. In ancient writings the district extending from the place formerly called the Horse Fair to Bootham, is called *Le Horse Ayre*.

*Marygate*, which runs southward from Bootham to the river, clearly implies that the street leads to the site of St. Mary's Abbey, the remains of the principal entrance to the Abbey being in this street. Marygate was anciently called Earlsburgh, from Earl Alan who founded the Abbey, or probably from the Danish Earl Siward, who resided here. Not far from the entrance to this street formerly stood an unshapely building known as the *Cockpits*, where in days of yore cockfighting was carried on as a favourite amusement of the gentry of the County. In 1748 Sir J. Lister Kaye fought twenty-eight battles with game cocks, and won eighteen. At present, however, the barbarous amusement has fallen into desuetude, and it must be regarded as an amelioration of manners, that there is no gentleman who now breeds birds for the purpose of fighting.†

\* "An Antiquarian Ramble through York,"—a lecture delivered by Robert Davies, Esq., F.S.A., at the York Institute, on the 14th February, 1854.

† Cock fighting is a vicious pastime, which has the sanction of high antiquity. It is said to have originated with the Athenians, and was exhibited before the soldiers

*Almrygarth*, a field near Marygate, in which the Abbots of St. Mary kept their cattle that were ready for killing. Here were also the Abbots' fish-ponds.

*Coney Street*, anciently "Conyng Strete," leads from St. Helen's Square to Spurriergate. This street has for some time been considered the principal street of the City for business. It is mentioned in Domesday Book. Coney is a corruption of the Saxon word *Conyng*, signifying *King*.

*Spurriergate*, a continuation of Coney Street, is so called because it was anciently the residence of the makers and dealers in spurs, when that appendage of the person was a much larger and more costly article than at present. Formerly it was usual for the members of one trade to live in the same street, and the derivation of Spurriergate, Colliergate, Fishergate, and Girdlergate, is to be ascribed to this circumstance. In the reign of King Edward III., the Church of St. Michael, Spurriergate, is described as being in *Conyng Street*; and it appears by the churchwarden's books of St. Michael's parish, that more than two hundred years ago, Spurriergate was called Little Coney Street; hence it is obvious that Spurriergate is a name given at a later date to that part of Conyng or Coney Street. Before the year 1769, Spurriergate must have been a narrow dirty lane, for we find that in that year half of the houses near the entrance from Ousegate were taken down, and rebuilt so far back as to make the street twice its original width. The expense of this improvement was defrayed by a general subscription, to which the directors of the Assembly Rooms contributed £370. Until 1841 this street, although one of the most frequented in the City, was one of the narrowest and most inconvenient. In that year one side was taken down and rebuilt, and the street widened.

*St. Helen's Square* is so denominated from the Church of St. Helen abutting upon it.

*Blake Street* is probably derived from the naval hero of the Commonwealth. Mr. Drake supposes it to have been originally Bleake Street, from its ex-

on the eve of an engagement, under an idea that it inspired them with extraordinary courage. The Romans imitated the Greeks in their fondness for this amusement, and from the Romans it passed into Britain. The refined and heightened cruelty of what the lovers of this barbarous diversion termed a *Welsh main*, need only be described to excite horror and disgust in a sensitive mind. Sixteen pairs of fighting cocks, after long training, were opposed to each other, until each bird had killed his antagonist. The remainder being equally divided were again pitted, in their exhausted state, until eight others were destroyed. The survivors, though fatigued, spent, and covered with dust and blood, were once more divided; and so on, until only one of these unfortunate creatures remained. This cruel sport has been totally suppressed under the Publican's Licensing Act.

posure to the north winds; but Allen thinks that this derivation seems incompatible with every principle of etymology, "for on such an explanation," says he, "every town and city in the Kingdom would have its Bleake Streets."

*Little Blake Street* was formerly called *Loup* or *Lap Lane*, most probably from St. Lupus, Bishop of Troyes, who came over to England with the concurrence of Pope Celestine, in company with St. Germain, Bishop of Auxerre, in 429, to resist the Pelagian heresy, then infesting this country. It is also conjectured that its original name was derived from the Belgic word *Loop*, signifying a range of bars joined together; this being closely contiguous to Bootham Bar, the Minster Gates, and Lendal Postern. This street, though still narrow, was much more so till the year 1786, when it was widened and paved on each side by subscription.

*Lendal*, the street leading from the Mansion House to the Museum gates, was anciently called Old Conyng, or Old King Street. It appears that this part of City, down to the river, was formerly called Lendall, which term, Drake supposed to imply Land-all; having originated from their being a staith or landing place there, but adds that he imagines the name arose from the hill near St. Leonard's Hospital, and was an abbreviation of Leonard's Hill. Mr. Allen thinks that as a declivity was anciently termed, both in England and Scotland, a dell, or in the Dutch language, dal; and as there is a strong declivity here, particularly below St. Leonard's Hospital, Leonard might for brevity be easily corrupted to *Lend*; and by adding to it the preceding word, the name would appear complete.

The landing place at Lendal Ferry was formerly known as *St. Leonard's Landing*, for here we find, in the reign of Henry V., when Lord Scrope was attainted for treason, the Lord Mayor, in his capacity of escheator, seized certain ships belonging to his lordship, lying "at St. Leonard's Landing, in the river Ouse."

The street at the end of Lendal, and extending from the end of St. Leonard's Place to the river, was until recently called Lendal Street, or Back Lendal; now it is denominated *Museum Street*. That portion of it between the ends of Lendal and St. Leonard's Place was once called *Finkle*, or *Finkle Street*, which appellation is derived, according to Mr. Hargrove, from the Danish word *Vincke*, which means an angle or corner. This was known as Finkle Street in the reign of James I. In 1782 a row of houses on the north west side was erected, which rendered it very narrow, but in 1846 these were taken down through the liberality and good taste of the Corporation, and thus the ruins of St. Leonard's Hospital were brought to public view.

A narrow street, leading from the corner of St. Sampson's Square into

Swinegate, is now called *Finkle Street*. It was till lately also called *Muckey Peggy Lane*, probably from some notorious character who resided in it. The space between St. Leonard's Cloisters and St. Leonard's Place was formerly called *Mint Yard*, from the fact of a royal mint having been established in its vicinity.

*Davygate* is a narrow street leading from St. Helen's Square to St. Sampson's Square. In ancient writings it is called *Davygate Lardiner*, from Davy or Lardiner's Hall, which formerly occupied the site of the first six houses at the top of New Street. (See page 347).

*St. Sampson's Square*, or *Thursday Market*, is a large open area in the vicinity of the Church of St. Sampson, in which formerly was held the principal market in the City, and in which is still held the Butcher's Market. The brutal and degrading practice of bull baiting used often to be exhibited here; and near the centre of the Market Place was formerly a large bull-ring, which constituted a privilege to every freeman who was a householder, and resided within sight of it, to right of stray over Knavesmire, and the other common land belonging to Micklegate Ward. A few years ago extensive improvements were effected in this locality. The square was enlarged and thrown into Parliament Street, and a new outlet formed from it through St. Sampson's Churchyard, called Church Street. The bull-ring was removed, but the privileges of the freemen still remain. At elections for Members of Parliament for the City, the hustings are always erected in this square.

*Parliament Street*, or *the New Market*, between St. Sampson's Square and Pavement, is a very wide and handsome street formed between the years 1834 and 1836. To effect the alteration in this locality a large mass of old and decayed tenements were removed. Parliament Street is certainly the best street in York.

*Jubbergate*, or *Jewbergate*, recently called *Market Street*, leads from Parliament Street to Spurriergate, and has lately been widened so as to afford additional facilities for traffic. The learned Dr. Langwith derived the name of Jubbergate from Bretgate or Jowbretgate, the names given to this locality in some ancient deeds. By the term Bretgate, he understood British Street, and considered that here was a street inhabited by the native Britons before the ancient Roman City was founded by Agricola. In process of time, he thinks, it became the residence of the Jews, or that part of York where they were permitted to settle (for in every City where they were tolerated they had a certain locality assigned them for their residence, which was separated from the rest by walls, gates, and bars, and hence styled Jews-burg), and was consequently Jew-bret-gate, which in succeeding ages might be written

Joubretgate and Jubbergate. One half of this street—the part north of the intersection of Feasegate and Peter Lane—was formerly called High Jubbergate, and the other end Low Jubbergate. It is now pretty well established that the piece of ground on the banks of the Foss, long known by the name of *Jewbry* or *Jewbury* was the place of interment of the Jewish population of the City, where, says Mr. Davies, “the Isaacs and Rebeccas of York have reposed for five or six centuries.” Hoveden informs us that King Henry II., in 1177, granted to the Jews the privilege of having a burial place without the walls of every City in England; prior to which they were obliged to convey their dead to London for interment. The Jews were a rich and numerous body in York during the twelfth century. They had formerly a Synagogue in Walmgate.\*

*Feasegate* extends from the south east corner of St. Sampson's Square to Market Street, and has also been very much improved. Dr. Langwith imagined that an image dedicated to St. Faith had formerly stood in this street, which in old French is written S. Fè; and hence remarks that the name should be Feesgate. Drake supposes that Feasegate took its name from the old English *fease* or *feag flagellare*, to beat with rods, and is thereby led to conjecture that offenders were whipped through this street and round the market. Allen thinks it probable that it was originally *Feastgate*, from its proximity to Jubbergate; and considering the peculiar religious customs of the people who resided there, he concludes that the Jews from the neighbouring towns and villages, might, at their periodical feasts held in York have been accommodated in this Street.

Previous to the alterations effected a few years ago on the west side of St. Sampson's Church, the street now called Church Street, but formerly *Girdlergate*, extended only from Petergate to Swinegate, or near to the east end of St. Sampson's Church. By the late alterations this street is continued through the churchyard into St. Sampson's Square, which is a great improvement. *Girdlergate* was so called from having been the general place of residence for persons of that trade; for though there are not any girdlers now in York, they were formerly so numerous as to form themselves into a company, which was governed by a master and other officers, who were annually chosen, and which held its periodical meetings at their common hall.

*Swinegate* and *Patrick's Pool*, in this neighbourhood, are very low places.

\* It is stated that the whole number of Jews now in England is only 30,000, 20,000 of whom are located in London, Russia contains 1½ millions. Constantinople, 80,000, and India, 17,000 Jews. It is also stated that out of the 20,000 in London, 2,000 are baptised Christians.



In Swinegate stood the ancient Church of St. Benedict, and on its site a number of houses were erected, which were known by the name of Bennet's-rents; but these houses have given way to recent improvements. Patrick's Pool is met with in documents as early as 1235.

*The Shambles* are so called from being chiefly inhabited by butchers. The ancient name of this street was *High Mangergate*, variously supposed to be derived from the French word *Manger*, to eat, and from the Saxon word *Mangere*, implying trade.

*Newgate* is a narrow street in this locality, so named from a prison in it, part of which is yet remaining. It is named in the fourteenth century, and has been an object of interest to Archæologists. It appears that the Vicars Choral possessed a house near the yard of St. Sampson's Church, where they lived together and had a common hall, and it is supposed that this was the building. In later times it was probably converted into a prison for offenders within the precincts of the Court, a royal residence having been in the neighbourhood. It is a large ancient looking stone building in bad condition. The windows are square headed, with labels, and the structure still retains the appearance of a place of confinement. In 1754 it was licensed as a place of worship for Protestant Dissenters. It is now occupied as a warehouse.

*Petergate*, a long street extending from Bootham Bar to King's Square, takes its name from its vicinity to the Cathedral. The south entrance of this street has been very much widened and beautified.

*King's Square*, formerly called the *Hay Market*, received its name doubtless from its proximity to the site of the ancient Palace of the Saxon and Danish Kings of Northumbria. In 1768 a part of the Church and a house were pulled down to improve the thoroughfare, making the open space which now exists.

*Goodramgate*, or *Gotherhamgate*, leading from King's Square to Monk Bar, is a long narrow street, supposed to have derived its name from the circumstance of its having once contained the residence of a Danish General named Goodram, *Gotheram*, or *Guthrum*, who was Deputy Governor of York.

*Uggleforth*, or *Ogleforth*, is a small street leading from Goodramgate to the east end of the Cathedral. Dr. Langwith conceives the derivation of this name to be from the British word *Uchel*, denoting *High*, and *Poth*, now written and pronounced *forth*, a gate, together meaning *Highgate*; and hence we may suppose that a principal gate entrance to the Close of the Cathedral formerly stood hereabouts. Mr. Wellbeloved says, "The remains of a rather large gateway to the Close of the Minster was found a few years ago about the middle of Ogleforth."

*College Street*, leading from the east end of the Minster to Goodramgate, is so named from the ancient College of St. William being situated in it. In an old house near the Goodramgate end, Mr. George Hudson, for some time called the "Railway King," at one time kept a linen draper's shop.

*Colliergate* is a continuation of Petergate and King's Square. This name was given to it from its having been the residence of several persons engaged in the coal trade.

*Fossgate* is a continuation of Colliergate to the Foss, and hence its name.

*St. Saviourgate*, which runs from the Church of St. Crux to Spen Lane, is so called from St. Saviour's Church standing in it. It appears that the upper part of this street was formerly known by the name of *Ketmangergate*, "probably," says a learned writer, "because it may have been the market for horses' flesh, for that is called *ket*, and used to be eaten about the time of the Conquest, particularly the flesh of young foals." Mr. Hargrove tells us that it is generally supposed that a Roman Temple formerly stood in or near this street, as in digging some foundations on the north side of it many years ago, large quantities of the horns of several kinds of beasts were discovered. Its proximity to the Imperial Palace increases the probability.\* Previous to the alterations and improvements in the neighbourhood of the Church of St. Crux, about eighteen years ago, there was an ancient stone in the wall of a house at the entrance to this street, which is now in the Museum, and on which is inscribed—"Here stood the image of Yorke, and remened in the year of our Lord God A.M. VC. I. unto the Common Hall in the time of the mairalty of John Stockdale."

King Ebrauc, the presumed founder of York, is believed to be what is here meant by the image of York; and it is supposed that the first stone was laid under his direction not far from the site of this inscription. The image is thought to have been of wood; and in the records of the City is the following curious entry relative to it:—"On January 15th, and the 17th of Henry VII., the image of Ebrauke, which stood at the west end of St. Saviourgate, was take down, new made, and transported from thence and set up at the east end of the Chapel at the common hall."

*St. Andrewgate*, leading from King's Square to Aldwark, received its name from the desecrated Church of St. Andrew, which stands in it.

At the east end of the Church of St. Crux was formerly a short narrow street named *Whipmawhopmagate*, formed by a row of houses, which ran on a line with the west side of Colliergate to the centre of Pavement; and on

\* History of York, vol. ii., page 330.

the south side of the Church was another row of houses, which formed a narrow and inconvenient lane, generally inhabited by hosiers, and consequently called *Hosier Lane*. The removal of these two lanes has very much improved this locality, by widening the east end of Pavement, and the north end of Fossgate, as well as by exhibiting to view the ancient Church of St. Crux, which had been completely surrounded. Mr. Hargrave imagines that as the House of Correction was anciently on Peasholme Green in this vicinity, Whipmawhopmagate may have been a boundary for the public whipping of delinquents. It was at one period the market for boots and shoes, but before its removal it was principally used as a basket market on Saturdays.

*Pavement* is a well built and pleasant street, extending from Fossgate to the north end of High Ousegate. "Whence it derived the name is doubtful, but we may with some degree of certainty consider it a token of the ancient and original superiority of this street over others of the City; for to designate one street 'The Pavement,' must naturally imply that the others were not paved at the time this name was given; and we do not find that it has borne any other from time immemorial."\* Previous to the removal of the row of houses which formed *Hosier Lane*, the Pavement extended only to the west end of St. Crux's Church.

*High Ousegate*, and its continuation, *Low Ousegate*, lead in a direct line south from Pavement and the east end of Parliament Street to Ouse Bridge. These are now well built and respectable streets, but previous to the building of the present bridge across the Ouse in 1810, they were so narrow, and each story of the houses projecting above the lower, brought the most lofty parts so nearly in contact, that two persons on opposite sides of the way could shake hands from their upper apartments. In High Ousegate is an antique looking house, in which Charles I. dined with the Lord Mayor, Sir Christopher Croft, November 21st, 1641, who was knighted on the occasion.

*Hungate*, which runs from St. Saviour's Church to the river Foss, was in former times of considerable importance, being the place of residence for many of the most opulent merchants. Drake attempts to transform *Hungate* into *Hungrygate*; Mr. Hargrove considers it probable that as *Hungate* extends to the very edge of the Foss, it may have been so called from the word *Unda*, implying water; and that, alluding to the situation, it may have been *Undagate*; and thence have become *Hundagate*, or *Hungate*, a street leading to the water.

*Peasholme Green* leads to Layerthorpe Bridge. The name of this street

\* Hargrove, vol. ii., page 266.

plainly enough indicates its derivation; *Holme* being an Anglo-Saxon word for a small island, or for any watery situation. Peasholme Green has been first gained from the river Foss for gardens, and next for buildings. In the centre of this green was the Church of All Saints, of which there are no remains. Crossing the river Foss at the end of Peasholme Green, we arrive in a long street called *Layrthorpe*, formerly called the *Village of Layrthorpe*. This ancient entrance to the Forest of Galtres bears in its name some allusion to circumstances connected with a forest; *Leer*, or *Layre*, being in old English a hunting term for the resting place of a beast of the chase. There are now no vestiges to be seen of the ancient parish Church of Layrthorpe.

*Barker Hill*, which conducts from Jewbury to Monkgate, was anciently termed *Harlot Hill*. Drake observes that "probably it had not its name for nothing, Love Lane being contiguous to it."

*Aldwark* is a mean street running from Goodramgate to Peasholme Green. The word *Ald* implies old, and *wark* a building. When we call to mind that the Roman Imperial Palace extended from Christ Church to this street, we shall not be surprised that our Saxon ancestors gave it this name.

*Stonegate*, anciently called *Staynegate*, extending from St. Helen's Square to Petergate, derives its name from the great quantity of stone formerly carried through, and no doubt strewed in it, during the various erections of the Minster. Stonegate now contains the most antique houses of any principal street in the City. The best specimen of them is that occupied by Mr. Sunter, supposed to be Mulberry Hall. (See page 349).

An open passage or thoroughfare near the top of Stonegate is called *Coffee Yard*. Drake supposes that in this yard formerly stood the first coffee house established in this City.\*

*Fishergate* is the name borne by the street, once considerable, immediately without Fishergate Bar. This ancient street, which had suffered much at various times previously, was almost wholly destroyed during the Civil Wars in the reign of Charles I. Three Churches anciently stood in Fishergate.

*St. George's Street*, now leads from Walmgate to Fishergate Bar. The north end of this street was formerly very narrow, and called *Neutgate Lane*; but a few years ago several old houses were pulled down, the street was widened, and the whole street received its present appellation, owing to its having been the street in which stood the ancient parish Church of St. George. St. George's Catholic Church is now situated in it. *Neutgate Lane* was

\* Coffee was first introduced into England by Nathaniel Canopus, a Cretan, in 1641. The first coffee house in England was kept by one Jacobs, a Jew, at Oxford, in 1650.

probably indebted for its name to the *Newt*, a small lizard often found in low marshy places; this lane was certainly very low and wet. St. George's Street was formerly one of the principal entrances to the City, and must at some time have being very populous, for we find the sites of three Churches very near together, viz:—St. George's, St. Andrew's, and St. Peter in the Willows; besides the Churches of All Saints and St. Helen, which stood without Fishergate Bar.

*Castlegate*, a name which explains itself, leads from the Castle to the City. A wind mill once stood in Castlegate Lane. *Nessgate* is a continuation of Castlegate. It derives its name from the Saxon word *Ness*, implying a projecting or an exalted situation. It was formerly so very narrow that two carriages could not pass each other in it, but in 1767 all the houses on the north east side were taken down, and rebuilt several feet further back, by which the street was rendered open and convenient. The expense of this alteration was defrayed by subscription. The three narrow streets leading from Castlegate to the river, and now generally known as the *Water Lanes*, were formerly called severally Carrgate, Thrush Lane, and Outergate. The first of these streets—formerly Carrgate—was subsequently called First Water Lane until the year 1851, when it was in great part rebuilt, and received the name of *King Street*, probably because it leads to the *King's Staitth*. Thrush Lane, afterwards known as Second Water Lane, is now called *Water Lane*; and Outergate, afterwards Far Water Lane, has been latterly called *Friargate*. These lanes and the adjoining Friar's Walls were the site of the old Monastery of the Franciscan Friars.

*Fetter Lane* is a corruption of Felter Lane, the lane in which felt makers resided.

*Long Close Lane* is so called from its being on the site of a field formerly called the *Long Close*, extending from Fishergate Bar to Walmgate Bar. In this field cattle used to be exposed for sale during the fairs.

*St. George's Field*, or *St. George's Close*, adjoining the entrance to the New Walk, is the site of an ancient religious house, and the property of the citizens, in which, by some old charters, they are authorized to hold pageants, games, dry linen, shoot with bows and arrows, &c. So early as the year 1596 this close is mentioned as being devoted to these purposes.

*Skeldergate* is a long street on the south side of the Ouse, running parallel with that river. This street was formerly occupied by merchants for the purposes of trade, and, according to Drake, derived its name from the old Dutch word *Kellar* or *Keldar*, signifying a cellar or warehouse, such places being numerous here when York was a more commercial City than at

present; but Mr. Davies is of opinion that this derivation of the word is not correct, as cellars were probably not more common in this street than elsewhere. He (Mr. Davies) thinks that the name of the street originated with the public weigh or crane, which has always been in the hands of the Corporation. In the northern counties a weigh was called a "skell," and hence it is not unlikely that the street in which this public weigh for heavy water borne goods was placed, should obtain the appellation of Skeldergate.

*Beedham's Court*, Skeldergate, was formerly called Hagworm's Nest.

*Bishophill* is so named from its having been specially under the jurisdiction of the Archbishop of York.

*Buckingham Street* is the name given to a new street leading from Bishophill to Skeldergate. (See page 347).

*Barker Lane*, which leads from Micklegate to *Tanner Row*, was formerly called *Gregory Lane*, the parish Church of St. Gregory having stood near the south-east angle of it.

*Tanner Row* derives its appellation from the tan-pits which formerly were situated between it and the City walls.

*Toft Green*, or Toft Field, from *Les Toftes*, or *Les Kinges toftes*, was so called from the number of houses destroyed here by William the Conqueror.

*The North Eastern Railway Station* occupies the sites of *Toft Green*, *Friar's Gardens*, &c. A new street, running from Micklegate to the Railway Station, was named *Hudson's Street*, in honour of Mr. George Hudson, late chairman of the Railway directors, a former Lord Mayor of York, and some time known as the "Railway King;" but when Mr. Hudson fell from power in the Railway world, the name of this street was changed to *Railway Street*.

*Old Baile Hill* is called in ancient deeds *Vetus Ballium*, signifying a place of security. This place is doubtless the site of an ancient Castle or place of strength.

*Priory Street* is the name given to a highway recently made through *Trinity Gardens*, connecting Micklegate with Bishophill. This street passes through the site and grounds of the ancient Priory of the Holy Trinity, and the fine old archway, which was the entrance to the Priory, and which stood for ages at the Micklegate end of the new street, has lately been ruthlessly demolished.

*Blossom Street*, extending from Micklegate Bar to the Mount, is a corruption of *Bloosmgate*. In the reign of Henry III. (fourteenth century) it bore the name of *Bloxamgate*, and in 1624, it was described as *Bloxamgate*, otherwise *Blossomgate*.

*Queen Street*, without Micklegate Bar, was formerly known as *Thief Lane*.

*The Mount* is probably so named from its comparative elevation. It is thought by Drake to have been a Roman work, but Mr. Wellbeloved says that "it is not artificial, but natural, and is a portion of the ridge, if such it may be called, to which Severus' Hills belong." In the Civil Wars it was used as an outwork to command the road leading to Tadcaster.

*Nunnery Lane*, without Micklegate Bar, is so called from its proximity to the Nunnery. It was anciently called *Beggargate Lane*, from the practice of distributing alms to the poor from a side-door of St. Thomas's Hospital in this lane.

*Clementhorpe*.—This suburb is situated without the walls towards the south-east angle of the City, and it derives its name from the patron saint of its ancient Church and nunnery. There are now no remains of these buildings. A number of small streets have been erected in this neighbourhood within the last few years.

*New York Street* is the name recently given to the east end of Nunnery Lane, that portion of it extending from the garden walls of the nunnery to Clementhorpe.

The *New Walk*, on the north bank of the Ouse, extends from the end of Friar's Walls (where there is a ferry across the river), to nearly a mile in length, beneath the shade of lofty elms, which at the lower end form a double row. This pleasing promenade was formed at the expense of the City in 1733 and 1734, as far as the junction of the rivers Foss and Ouse. In 1768 the walk was continued on the other side of the Foss; a swing bridge called the *Blue Bridge* connects the two portions. Prior to the forming of the Foss navigation the small rivulet which divided the walk was called *Brouney Dyke*; and over it was a draw bridge, which in 1736 was removed, and a handsome stone bridge substituted, to the great ornament of the walk, but this bridge being too low for vessels to pass, it was removed, and the present wooden swing bridge erected in its stead. Part of the Church of St. Crux having been taken down, the useless materials were removed here in 1782, and with them the walk was much improved. On the further division of the walk there is an excellent well of clear water, over which is an erection, built at the expense of the City in 1750, in imitation of a ruin. The late Dr. White, in a small tract which he published respecting the many fine springs in this neighbourhood, observes that they are generally saturated with silenites; but that "the Lady Well upon the New Walk" is entirely free from that property, but equally soft with the river water, and remarkably good. Mr. Hargrove tells us, that in March and April, 1816, an advertisement appeared for the sale of forty-one of the largest elm trees growing on

this walk, which excited considerable emotion in the City; whereupon a large number of the respectable citizens presented a memorial to the Lord Mayor, representing those trees to form the principal beauty of the walk, and requesting that they might remain undisturbed, and the result was that the sale was postponed, and the trees still continue to the credit of the City.\*

*The Esplanade*, another very beautiful walk, and agreeable resort for the citizens, has been formed a few years ago along the north bank of the Ouse, from Lendal Tower to Clifton Scalp, a distance of about a mile.

*The Suburbs of York* were extensive at an early period, but from a variety of causes were considerably reduced in population, and in the space they occupied. "Passing over the splendid or sanguinary scenes which the history of York presents, in connexion with the times of the Romans, Saxons, Danes, and even the Norman Conqueror, till we arrive at the reign of Edward III., when a great part of his army of 60,000 men was quartered in the suburbs," says Allen, "this alone will suffice to corroborate the statements of their having contained many noble buildings, and having extended to several villages, now more than a mile distant. All those fair edifices were consumed by fire in 1644, except a few houses out of Micklegate Bar, which were preserved by the royal fort."† The ruined suburbs are however rising rapidly, for there are now many good streets, and several handsome buildings and public institutions beyond the walls of the City.

**BRIDGES.**—The bridges of York are six in number, one of which, the principal one, crosses the Ouse near the centre of the City, and the remaining five span the Foss. It is unknown at what date the original bridge across the Ouse was erected, but in 1154 the wooden bridge then standing gave way under the weight of a large multitude, who had collected to witness the entry, of Archbishop William.‡ In 1235 Archbishop Walter de Grey granted a brief for the rebuilding of *Ouse Bridge*; and in 1268 there was an affray between the citizens and the retainers of John Comyn, a Scottish nobleman, on Ouse Bridge, which ended in the slaughter of several of the Scotchmen. The citizens would appear to have been unjust aggressors, for shortly afterwards they agreed to pay £300., and build a Chapel on the bridge, in which two priests should pray for the souls of the slain "for ever." In 1564 an immense flood, caused by a sudden thaw, carried off two arches of Ouse Bridge, and twelve houses which stood on them were overwhelmed in the ruin, and

\* Hargrove's History of York, vol. ii., p. 525.

† Allen's Yorks., book iii., p. 312.

‡ Bridges of stone were not built in England till after the Norman Conquest.



several lives were lost. The bridge remained in this ruinous state for nearly two years, when the late venerable structure was erected on its site. The last old bridge consisted of five arches, and was termed by Camden a very noble erection. The centre arch was one of the largest in Europe, and from its beautiful form, has been pronounced the finest in the world. It measured eighty-one feet span, and seventeen feet above the summer level; its width on the top between the walls was eighteen feet, including the causeways, which were very narrow. In addition to the carriage way and footpaths just described, were several buildings on the west side of the bridge; the principal of which was *St. William's Chapel*, an interesting specimen of the early English architecture, as may be seen by the plates of it in *Halfpenny's Fragmenta Vetusta*, and *Cave's Antiquities of York*. This Chapel, which contained several chantries, the original grants of which are still amongst the records of the City, is supposed to be the one already mentioned as having been originally built in 1268. After the Reformation it was converted into an Exchange for the Society of Hamburg Merchants of York, and subsequently into a Council Chamber for the Corporation, and a Record Room; and it was finally removed on the erection of the present bridge in 1810. On the opposite side of the bridge stood the old gaol for debtors, which was built in the sixteenth century, at which time another arch was added to the bridge in order to strengthen this new erection. In consequence of the high pitch of the central arch, the ascent and descent on each side were dangerously steep, and houses and shops encumbered it until within a few years of its removal. Amongst the contributors to this bridge was Lady Jane Hall, relict of Robert Hall, an Alderman, who gave by will the sum of one hundred pounds. Her liberality was commemorated by the following curious distich, engraved on a brass plate on the north side of the arch:—

William Watson, lord mayor, An. Dom. 1556.

Lady Jane Hall, lo ! here the works of faith doth shew,  
By giving a hundred pounds this Bridge for to renew.

The precarious state of the old bridge induced the Corporation, in the autumn of 1808, to build a new one. Accordingly an Act of Parliament was passed in that year for the erection of the present bridge; Mr. Peter Atkinson was chosen as the architect; and on Monday, the 10th of December, 1810, the foundation-stone of the structure was laid with much ceremony by the Lord Mayor. On the occasion there was a grand procession of the Corporation, the Provincial Grand Lodge of Freemasons, &c. A glass vessel was placed in the stone, containing the different and latest coins of that reign, with a

handsome medal, struck in commemoration of his Majesty having entered the fifty-first year of his reign. The vessel was covered by a brass plate, inscribed:—

“The first stone of this bridge was laid December 10th, in the year MDCCLXXI, and in the fifty-first year of the reign of George III., by the Rt. Hon. George Peacock, Lord Mayor. Peter Atkinson, Architect.

The Act of Parliament specified that £30,000. should be paid to the Commissioners by the Justices of the Peace for the three Ridings of the County, out of the county rates, by five equal yearly instalments of £6,000.; the West Riding paying £2787. 10s.; the North Riding, £1,862. 10s.; and the East Riding, £1,350.; being the usual proportions of all their county contributions. In addition the Lord Mayor and Commonalty of the City were obliged to contribute for the same period, the annual sum of £400. There was also a bridge toll, which had been peculiarly obnoxious, and indeed injurious to the City, which was finally abolished on the 18th of June, 1829, when there was a grand procession to celebrate the event. The new bridge was completed in March, 1820; and, by a singular coincidence, during the second mayoralty of Mr. Alderman Peacock, who laid the first stone.

The bridge is a handsome structure, consisting of three elliptical arches, with a battlement on each side, of a plain parapet wall, breast high. The span of the centre arch is forty-three feet, and the roadway is forty feet within the battlements. The flagged footways are each five and a half feet broad, leaving a carriage way of twenty feet. At each end of the bridge, on the south-east side, a handsome series of stone steps leads down to the staiths or wharfs for lading and unlading of goods, &c. That on the north side of the Ouse is called the *King's Staith*, and the *Queen's Staith* is on the opposite side. The word *Staith* was derived from a purely Saxon term signifying a bank or shoal, and is now a provincial term applied to a wharf or landing place. The King's Staith was mentioned in the days of Richard II., in connection with the fresh water fishers.

*Foss Bridge*, at the end of Fossgate, dividing that street from Walmgate, was erected in 1811, on the site of a very ancient stone bridge of three arches, built in the reign of Henry IV. It appears by an old Charter that Richard II. granted a license to the Mayor and Commonalty of York, to purchase lands of the yearly value of £100., for the support of the bridges of Ouse and Foss; but the latter having been rebuilt, the Mayor and citizens were empowered, in the fourth of Henry IV. (1403), to collect a toll upon it during five successive years, to defray the expenses incurred. A Chapel was erected

on the north side of the bridge, dedicated to St. Anne, though it was sometimes called the Chapel of St. Agnes. It was licensed on the 14th of November, 1424, for the celebration of divine service. Several of the piles which supported this Chapel, were drawn up so late as the year 1734. In Camden's time Foss Bridge was so crowded with houses as to render it difficult for a stranger to know when he was passing it—the line of street extending completely over it. The houses were however soon after taken down, though we find that in 1728 several fish stalls were again erected on the south side, a market for salt water fish being then held there every Wednesday and Friday.

The present bridge is a neat structure, consisting of one elliptical arch, with a balustrade. The foundation stone was laid on the 4th of June, 1811; and a brass plate was inserted in the stone, bearing the following inscription:—

“The first stone of this bridge was laid by the Right Hon. Lawrence Dundas,\* Lord Mayor, on the 4th of June, MDCCLXI., in the fifty-first year of the reign of George III., and on the day on which his Majesty completed the seventy-third year of his age. Peter Atkinson, Architect.”

*Castle Mills Bridge*, over the Foss, is so called from its proximity to certain mills anciently belonging to the Castle. There was a bridge here at a very early period, and as it was in some sort an outwork of the Castle, was well defended. The roadway was widened and the bridge much improved a few years ago.

*Layerthorpe Bridge*, which connects Peaseholme Green and Layerthorpe, was formerly remarkable for its extreme narrowness, and for the Postern that guarded it at one end. The present structure was erected in 1829.

*Monk Bridge*, which is a modern erection, forms an approach to York from Malton, Scarborough, &c. The span of its arch is wide enough to admit of the free passage of vessels of seventy tons burden.

The *Scarborough Railway Bridge*, a neat cast iron structure, erected in 1845, crosses the Ouse a little above Marygate, and affords communication for foot passengers between the two lines of rails.

The *Improvements and Alterations* of late years have almost changed the appearance of the City. Streets have been widened, new streets formed, and many handsome buildings erected. At the Assizes of 1852, Lord Chief Justice Campbell, in his charge to the City Grand Jury, complimented the inhabitants on the great improvements that had taken place in York within

\* Afterwards Earl of Zetland.

the last few years, and especially noticed the beautiful grounds attached to the Museum, and which he thought were not surpassed by any on the continent of Europe.

*Mortality.*—In former years York does not appear to have been so healthy a place of residence as many others, owing to defective drainage, and to the narrowness and irregularity of the street. As we have shown in the preceding pages, York was often grievously devastated by epidemics during the middle ages. In 1349 the “black death;” and in the years 1390, 1550, and 1604, grievous plagues or pestilences numbered their victims by thousands. Mr. Davies tells us, in his work on the *Municipal Records of the City of York*, that during the pestilence of 1550, it was ordered by the Corporation that all infected houses should have a red cross on their doors, and that all persons going abroad from such houses should carry a white rod.

But the Asiatic Cholera appears to have been less fatal here than in many other places. It made its first appearance in Beedham’s Court, Skeldergate—remarkable for being the place in which the plague first broke out which devastated the City in 1604—on Sunday, the 3rd of June, 1832, and by the 22nd of October the disease had entirely disappeared. In the beginning of July the malady had attained its height, when forty persons died in one week. The total number of cases in York was 450, and the total of deaths was 185. The malignity of the disease was, no doubt, considerably neutralized by the admirable sanitary arrangements of the Board of Health and the unwearied exertions of the medical profession of York:—upwards of £1,300., raised by subscription, having been expended by the board, in bread and beef for the relief of the poor.

In 1849 the visitation was less severe, and in 1854 there was not more than one or two real cases (if any) of Cholera in York. Dr. Laycock, in his Report to the Commissioners for enquiring into the sanitary condition of large towns, in 1854, says that “the average or mean age of all dying in York is six years and a half less than those dying in the country, and the deaths from epidemics are more numerous.” The average rate of mortality appears to be the greatest in the low lying districts of the City. The population of York is now upwards of 36,000, and the average number of deaths in York is about 1,200, per annum.

*Sanitary Measures.*—The sanitary condition of York has undergone considerable improvement of late years, and a system of thorough drainage is now being carried out, under the direction of the Local Board of Health.

One main sewer has lately been made through the heart of the City; beginning at Monk Bar, and passing through Goodramgate, Church Street, St.

Sampson's Square, Feasegate, and Market Street, and crossing Coney Street, it enters the Ouse at Waterloo Place. This great sewer varies in depth from fifteen to thirty feet. Several sewers of a similar character are being made in other parts of the City. They are all egg-shaped, and built with radiating bricks, made expressly for this work. This extensive drainage will cost the City several thousand pounds, but it will be a great boon to generations yet unborn.

The *Drainage of the Foss*, which has recently been effected, is another excellent sanitary measure. Hitherto this river has been a great elongated cess-pool for a great part of the City, and its immediate neighbourhood was in consequence rendered very unwholesome. In 1853 the river was purchased for £4,000. by the Corporation, for the purpose of making sewers for taking the drainage of that part of the City which flowed into it, and conveying it into the Ouse. An Act of Parliament was obtained for this purpose, as well as for empowering the Corporation to purchase and drain the marshy land on the banks of the river, called the *Foss Islands*. According to the terms of the Act, the river Foss must be kept open, so that its navigation will not be interrupted. Several plans for the drainage of the river were submitted, examined, and rejected by the Corporation, till at length at the meeting of that body on the 12th of February, 1855, they adopted the recommendation of Mr. Wicksteed, an eminent surveyor, that a line of intercepting sewers be constructed on the land for the drainage of the Foss district, commencing at the extreme boundary of the City near the Union Workhouse, passing Monk and Layerthorpe bridges to the Foss Island, thence across Walmgate and George Street, to Fishergate, and thence to the Blue bridge on the New Walk, the sewage matter to be conveyed into the centre of the river Ouse, by means of an iron pipe; also, to construct a sewer, commencing in Fossgate, crossing the river Foss, and proceeding to St. George's Terrace, where it joins the main sewer above alluded to. The pipe, or iron culvert is four feet six inches inside, in diameter, and weighs thirty tons. It is bolted together, and the bottom of it is thirteen feet below the summer level of the water in the Ouse, so that vessels can sail clear of it, and a buoy is fixed above it.

The cost of the drainage of the Foss Islands and the intercepting sewers, was about £11,000. These plans, which have just been carried out, have been found to answer perfectly, and to have greatly improved the sanitary state of the City. The works connected with these important improvements commenced on Monday, the 28th of May, 1855; the "first sod" being turned on that day by the Lord Mayor.

Another great sanitary measure lately carried into effect is the abolition of intramural interment in the City. All the burial grounds and vaults, in connection with the Churches and Chapels in York, have been closed,\* except the new part of the Church yard of St. Lawrence, which was allowed to continue as a burial place, in consequence of its having been but lately added. It is however ordered that this new ground "be properly drained, and no more than one body is to be buried in each grave, nor with a covering of less than four and a half feet of earth, measuring from the upper surface of the coffin to the level of the ground."

This great change has been made by order of the Secretary of State, in virtue of the powers given to him by a recent Act of Parliament. The Order in Council directs that from and after the 23rd of December, 1854, "no new burial ground shall be opened in the City of York, or within two miles of its boundary, without the previous approval of one of her Majesty's principal Secretaries of State; and that burials in the said City be discontinued" from the above date, with the modifications already stated.

The greatest necessity appears to have existed in York for the closing of the burial grounds. Dr. Laycock, a very competent judge in the matter, plainly shews, in his Report to the Health of Towns' Commissioners, the evil consequences of the practice of intramural burial in the City. "The state of the parochial burying grounds of York," he says, "must have a considerable and noxious influence on the atmosphere within the Churches, and on that of the City generally, and on the water. The greater number of these grounds are of extreme antiquity, and must have been buried over very often. In fact, many of them are raised above the street level from the accumulated remains of generations. The analysis of the water from wells near St. Cuthbert's and St. Sampson's Church yards, shows that the wells are tainted by the drainage from these burying grounds, and there can be no doubt that the air is also polluted, not only by the direct emanations, but as well from the drainage from the bodies in the public sewers."

\* The burial place of the Society of Friends was allowed to remain open until the 1st of August, 1855.

# The Archdiocese of York.

The Province of York comprises the Bishoprics of Carlisle, Chester, Durham, Sodor and Man, Ripon, and Manchester. It formerly included the whole of Scotland, but Pope Sixtus IV., at the end of the fifteenth century, granted the Primacy of Scotland to the Bishop of St. Andrews. The County of York is in the Province of York, and until a few years ago it was partly in the Diocese of Chester, and partly in that of York. The former part consisted of the Deaneries of Richmond, Catterick, and Boroughbridge, with part of Kirby Lonsdale, all in the Archdeaconry of Richmond; and the latter of the Deaneries of Cleveland, Ryedale, Bulmer, Ripon, and Ripon with Masham (a peculiar jurisdiction), all in the Archdeaconry of Cleveland; all the Deaneries of Dickering, Buckrose, Harthill and Hull, and Holderness, all in the Archdeaconry of the East Riding; and the Deaneries of Craven, York, the Ainsty, York City, Pontefract, and Doncaster, all in the Archdeaconry of York, or West Riding. By order in Council, of date 5th of October, 1836, those parts of the County previously in the Diocese of Chester, together with the Deaneries of Ripon, Ripon with Masham, Craven, and parts of York, the Ainsty, and of Pontefract, have, with the consent of the Archbishop of York and the Bishop of Chester, been transferred from their respective Dioceses, in order to form the new Diocese of Ripon; so that the Diocese of York now extends over the County of York, except those parts that have been included in the Diocese of Ripon.

Under the Archbishop, ecclesiastical matters are conducted by Archdeacons, an officer first introduced into this Diocese by Thomas the Norman, in 1070. Before the Conquest the Saxon prelates sat in the Courts for the administration of justice with the Earls and Sheriffs; but the Conqueror separated the ecclesiastical from the civil jurisdiction, by enacting "that no Bishop or Archdeacon should in future hold ecclesiastical pleas in the Hundred Court, nor suffer any cause of a spiritual nature to come under the cognizance of secular persons." Dr. Heylin tells us that the Archbishopric of York is the most ancient metropolitan See in England, having been so constituted in the reign of King Lucius, in the year 180, but this is a matter of great uncertainty, as will be seen by our remarks on the subject of the original introduction of Christianity into Britain, at page 74 of this volume. It is, however, certain that Christianity was not practised, if even known in the north of England in the beginning of the seventh century. When Edwin,

the Saxon King of Northumbria, embraced the Christian religion, and in some measure introduced it into the northern parts of Britain, he was baptised by Paulinus at York, in a small wooden oratory erected for the occasion, there being no place of Christian worship in this City at that time. This Monarch afterwards established, or according to some, re-established the Archbishopric, and Paulinus was made Archbishop.

The Archbishop of York is Primate and Metropolitan of England, and to him attaches the honour of crowning the Queens of England, and of preaching the coronation sermon. Warm and repeated contentions existed for many centuries for ecclesiastical supremacy between the Archbishops of York and Canterbury. In Sir Francis Palgrave's "Truths and Fictions of the Middle Ages—The Merchant and the Friar," there is a curious account of the predicaments in which my Lord of Canterbury used to place my Lord of York, when the latter went to London; and of the retaliation made by my Lord of York, when his spiritual brother came into the north. The dispute on this point was however settled in the reign of Edward III., by the Archbishop of Canterbury being styled "Primate of All England;" and the Archbishop of York, "Primate of England," which, though it seems "a distinction without a difference," really gave the supremacy to his Grace of Canterbury. The Archbishop of York, who is also Lord High Almoner to the Queen, takes precedency of all Dukes who are not of the blood royal, and of all the chief officers of state, the Lord High Chancellor alone excepted.

The total number of benefices returned in the Diocese of York, in 1838 was 690; the incumbents in 276 of which were non-resident. According to the Clergyman's Almanack the present number of benefices in the Diocese is 878, of which number 844 have glebe houses.

The yearly tenths of the Archbishopric of York, as returned in the Survey made by the Commissioners appointed by the Crown in the reign of Henry VIII., on the eve of the Reformation, were valued at £161.; and the value of the living, as stated in the King's Books of the same date, was £1,610. The average gross yearly income of the Archiepiscopal See in 1831, was £13,798.; net yearly income, £12,629.\* By order in Council, of date 21st

\* The following is the substance of the schemes and decrees to which the *Ecclesiastical Commissioners of England* obtained the sanction of the King in 1836:—That all parishes which are locally situated in one diocese, and under the jurisdiction of another, be made subject to that See within which they are locally situated; that certain new dioceses should be created, and that such appointment or exchange of ecclesiastical patronage should be made among the Archbishops and Bishops, so as to leave an average



of June, 1837, the income of the *future* Archbishops of York is limited to £10,000. per annum.

The ecclesiastical establishment in connection with the Cathedral consists of an Archbishop, Dean, Chancellor, Precentor, Sub-Dean, Succentor, three Archdeacons, four Canons Residentiary, twenty-four Prebendaries or non-resident Canons, a Chancellor of the Diocese, a Sub-Chanter, four Vicars Choral, seven Lay Clerks, six Choristers, an Organist, and other officers.

The *Deanery* of York was instituted by Archbishop Thomas, in 1090. The Dean, who is next to the Archbishop in rank, is elected by the Chapter, invested with a gold ring, and installed by the Precentor. The next in dignity is the *Precentor*, or *Chanter*, an office which also was founded in 1090. The duty of this dignitary is to superintend the choir, and install every person presented to any dignity in the Church. The next in order is the *Chancellor of the Church*. He has the custody of the seal of citations, collates to grammar schools, &c. His office was founded a short time before the Deanery. The College of the *Vicars-Choral* was founded by Archbishop Walter de Grey, in 1252, and at present consists of five members, who perform the musical part of the daily services of the choir.

The *Chapter*, which is composed of the Dean, and four Residentiary Canons under the title of the "*Dean and Chapter of York*," is the ruling body of the Cathedral establishment. The Archbishop has the power of holding visitations of their affairs. The Archbishop has the patronage of the Archdeaconries, the Chancellorships, Precentorships, the Non-Residentiary Canonries, and fifty-three Benefices. The Dean has the patronage of eleven Benefices. The Dean and Chapter have the patronage of the Residentiary and Minor Canons, with twenty-three Benefices, and possess a revenue of £1,650., divided into six shares, of which one is reserved for minor salaries. The Residentiaries must be chosen out of the Prebendaries.

At the Reformation the yearly tenths of the Deanery were valued at £90. 17s. 0½d. and the Living, which is in the gift of the Crown, at £307. 10s. 7½d. The Deanery has the Rectories of Pocklington, Pickering, and Kilham, of

yearly income of £15,000. to the Archbishop of Canterbury; £10,000. to the Archbishop of York; £10,000. to the Bishop of London; £8,000. to the Bishop of Durham; £7,000. to the Bishop of Winchester; £5,000. to the Bishops of Ely, Worcester, and Bath and Wells, respectively; £5,200. to the Bishop of St. Asaph and Bangor; and that out of the funds arising in the said dioceses, over and above the said incomes, the Commissioners should grant such stipends to the other Bishops, as should make their average annual incomes not less than £4,000., nor more than £5,000.

which the Dean is patron and ordinary.\* He likewise presents to Thornton, Ebberston, Ellerburne, Barnby Moor, and Hayton Vicarages.

The Sub-Chanter and four Minor Canons form a corporate body, with a revenue of £569., which is equally divided amongst them. The Treasurer-ship, erected in the year 1090, was dissolved and made a lay fee by King Edward VI., as were also the prebends of Wilton and Newthorpe, annexed thereto. It is understood that about £3,000. is applicable yearly to the repairs of the Cathedral and maintenance of its services.

The *Arms of York Cathedral* were anciently *azure*, a staff in pale *or*, surmounted by a pall *argent* fringed as the second, charged with five crosses pattee fitchéd *sable*, in chief another such a cross *or*. These arms are impaled in some of the windows of the Church, with the arms of Archbishops Bowett, Rotheram, and Savage; but they have since been changed for this bearing, *Gules*, two keys in saltire *argent*, in chief a *crown imperial or*, with the mitre. The crown was added to the shield on account of York having once been an imperial City.

ORIGIN OF TITHES.—Festus informs us that the ancients offered to their gods the tithes of all things, and this seems to have been the means by which religion was supported by all nations of antiquity. Parishes are supposed to have been first formed by Archbishop Honorius, who flourished about 636,\* as a necessary appropriation of ecclesiastical duties to certain responsible pastors, and to prevent those irregularities which might and did arise from the interference that frequently occurred by the intrusive visits of strangers on the scene of other men's labours, to the manifest injury of religion. In 673, Theodore, Archbishop of Canterbury, convened a Synod, at which, amongst other regulations, this was agreed on:—*Nullus Episcoporum alterius invadat*. In the first ages of Christianity, every man was at liberty to contribute his tithes to what parish or Church soever he pleased;\* but this privilege served as an existing means whereby any pique against the priest might be gratified by the alienation of his income. This inconvenience therefore was obviated; first, by the censures of the Council of Calcuth; then by the famous charter of Ethelwulf; and most effectually by the laws of Edgar, which provided, that all tithes should be paid in the parish where they arise. About the year 690, Ina, King of the West Saxons, made a code

\* "By an ancient custom of this Church, the Dean of it was obliged for ever to feed or relieve, at his Deanery, ten poor people daily.—This was for the soul of good Queen Maud; and for which purpose he had the Churches of Kilham, Pickering, and Pocklington, annexed to his Deanery."—*Drake*.

† Stow Chron., p. 77.

‡ Blackstone's Comment, vol. i., p. 112.

of laws, the fourth section of which is to the following purport, "The first fruits of seeds or Church due, arising from the product of corn, &c., are to be paid at the feast of St. Martin; and let him that fails in the payment forfeit forty shillings," as Lambeth reads it; or, according to Sir Henry Spelman, sixty shillings; and besides, pay the dues twelve times over. In the sixty-second section, "Church dues are to be paid where the persons owing them dwell in the midst of winter." These laws appear to be the first on record respecting such maintenance for the Church, and on this account are mentioned here. The gifts and oblations which the primitive Christians, in their devotedness and zeal for religion, made as acts of piety, were transformed by usage and custom, into a right, and are now advanced into the firmer title of ordinance. Hence modern lawyers say, that tithes are due of common right, as having existed since the first establishment of Churches, and made regular from the division of parochial limits.

At the first establishment of parochial clergy the tithes of the parish were distributed in a four-fold division; one for the use of the Bishop; another for maintaining the fabric of the Church; a third for the poor; and the fourth to provide for the incumbents. When the Sees of the Bishops became otherwise amply endowed, they were prohibited from demanding their usual share of these tithes, and the division was in three parts only, In 1828, by Act of Parliament, certain Tithe Commissioners were appointed to commute the tithes of England and Wales for a rent charge on the land, to vary according to the price of corn. From a Parliamentary Return we learn that the tithes connected and apportioned from December, 1847, to December, 1855, amounted to £4,050,227. 10s.; of which sum £678,345. was payable to clerical appropriators and lessees; £2,410,506. to parochial incumbents; £765,427. to lay impropriators; and £195,948. to schools, colleges, &c.

ORIGIN OF VICARAGES.—In early times all our parish churches were Rectories. Vicarages and Perpetual Curacies, which arose out of appropriations, are of subsequent date. Lords of Manors, or other wealthy individuals, erected parish Churches, and gave or appropriated them to religious houses as a source of income. Such Churches were therefore *Donatives*, and the monks collated themselves to the cures. Even Nunneries had *appropriations*, and the Superioreses obtained licenses to officiate by substitutes or Vicars. As early as the year 1108, Vicars or Curates were employed by the Rectors of Churches; and very soon afterwards came *Rectores sine cura animarum parochianorum*; or Rectors without cure or care of souls. In 1222 Archbishop Langton directed by a Canon, that every extensive parish should have two or three priests in it; and by this law the Monasteries were obliged to

appoint *Vicars* or *substitutes*, to officiate regularly in the Churches which had been given to them, in order that the lower classes of the people might have religious instruction. After this period a large number of Vicarages were endowed by property taken from the Rectories. In 1391 (fifteenth of Richard II.) it was enacted, that in all appropriations of Churches the diocesan Bishop should ordain, in proportion to the value of the Church, a competent sum to be distributed among the poor parishioners annually, "in aid of their living and sustenance for ever," and that the Vicarage should be well and sufficiently endowed. At the Dissolution of religious houses in the reign of Henry VIII., when the tithes and lands of these institutions were granted or sold on easy terms to the King's friends and favourites, who thereby became what is termed *lay impropriators*, many of the Vicarages were left with very insufficient endowments; and at the present day there are many poor Vicarages and Perpetual Curacies, whilst immense sums, arising from tithes, lands, &c., in these parishes, are appropriated to laymen, descendants of those to whom Henry VIII. granted or sold them.

*Rectories* are those parishes or livings which have not been appropriated, but in which all the tithes or other emoluments belong to the Incumbent.

QUEEN ANNE'S BOUNTY.—From a very early period every Bishop and clergyman has been required to pay the amount of his first year's incumbency into a fund, called from thence *First Fruits*, and every succeeding year as long as he is in possession of the living, he has been required to pay one-tenth part of his income into a fund, hence called *The Tenths*. In 1200, a valuation for this purpose was made of all the ecclesiastical livings in England; and the book containing that record is preserved in the Remembrancer's office, under the title of "Valor of Pope Nicholas IV." At the time of the Reformation there was a law passed, that the first fruits and tenths should be applied to the use of the State, and that any Bishop or clergyman neglecting to pay those imposts into the public treasury, should be declared an intruder into his living, and should forfeit double the amount; and, in order to ascertain the full amount, an accurate and full valuation was made of all the ecclesiastical livings in England and Wales. Except during a short period in the reign of Philip and Mary, the first fruits and tenths continued to be paid into the public exchequer, till the reign of Queen Anne, when that Monarch, deploring the wretched condition of many of the poor clergy, owing to the insufficiency of their livings, determined that the first fruits and tenths of the livings of all the Bishops and clergy should be paid into a fund, to be called *Queen Anne's Bounty*, and that the amount should be appropriated to the augmentation of the livings of the poor clergy. As there was no fresh

•

valuation instituted in the time of Queen Anne, the first fruits and tenths continue to be paid according to that made by Henry VIII. in 1535, and which was registered in what is called the King's Books (*Liber Regis*), to which, as well as to the augmentation from Queen Anne's Bounty, we shall frequently refer in the accounts of Church livings in this history. That this payment might not operate oppressively, the first year's income was to be paid by four annual instalments, and all livings of small value were entirely exempt, and hence called *Discharged livings*. The increase which has taken place in the value of Church livings since 1535 is enormous.

The receipts by the Governors of Queen Anne's Bounty in the year 1855, amounted to £220,939., of which, £14,192. accrued from first fruits and tenths; £26,989. from benefactions; £23,642. from sale of stock; £74,822. from income derived from capital; and £23,214. from the sale of land and buildings. The payments for the same year amounted to £230,559., of which, £72,132. was paid to the clergy, and the remainder was expended in the purchase of land and buildings, and in the erection of residence houses, and glebe houses.

SANCTUARIES.—The privilege of Sanctuary was introduced into the Christian Church about the time of Constantine. It had its origin in the laws of Moses, who, at the divine command, appointed Six Cities of Refuge, as a protection to the involuntary homicide against the summary vengeance of his incensed pursuers.—Numb. c. 35. It was used also in Pagan times. Some particular trees in the Druidical grove were Sanctuaries; and the altars of idolatry were decorated with horns, which were always reputed a sanctuary for crime; so that even murderers, fleeing for safety to the horns of the altar, esteemed themselves perfectly secure from the danger of apprehension until their crimes were legally investigated. This privilege having become quite a nuisance, through the number of the vilest malefactors, who remained in the temples of the gods with impunity, and set at defiance the operation of the laws; Tiberius Cæsar abolished the protection afforded by these Sanctuaries, and confined it to the two Temples of Juno and Esculapius. By the laws of the Saxon King Ina, A.D. 693, any person guilty of a capital crime, taking refuge in a Church, his life was spared, on condition that he made recompence to the friends of the deceased, according to justice and equity; and if one who had merely incurred the punishment of stripes took such refuge, his punishment was suspended.

York Cathedral was one of the Churches that possessed the great privilege of Sanctuary from a very early period—probably from the time of the Saxon King Athelstan, who granted this privilege to the Church of Beverley, and

who visited York and founded there the Hospital of St. Leonard in the same year, A.D. 936. Many of the Churches possessed the privilege of Sanctuary, and when kept under proper restraint was a public benefit, and moderated the rigour of the common law. It allowed time for criminals to make restitution, and for the falsely accused to prove their innocence, whilst without this respite they might have suffered immediate punishment or death. The *Leuga*, or privileged circuit, was comprehended within the circumference of a circle, of which the Church was the centre, and its limits were marked by stone crosses on the principal roads leading to each of these "Cities of Refuge.\*" The refugee, or *grithman*, generally arrived at the entrance to the Church under the cloak of night, and was admitted by the porter of the Church or Monastery into the porch or *Galilee*.\* In the morning a Chapter was assembled to hear and record the details of the case. The Sanctuary oath was then administered, and having paid the customary fee for registering the circumstances of his crime, he was seated in the *Fridstol*, and permitted to remain within the precincts until he was favoured with an opportunity of compromising with his adversary; or in case of murder, with the surviving relations and friends of the unhappy sufferer. "If a malefactor, flying for refuge, was taken or apprehended within the crosses, the party that took or had hold of them there did forfeit *two hundredth*;\* if he took him within the town he forfeited *four hundredth*; if within the walls of the churchyard, then *six hundredth*; if within the Church, then *twelve hundredth*; if within the doors of the quire, then *eighteenth hundredth*; besides penance as in case of sacrilege; but if he presumed to take him out of the stone chair near the altar, called *Fridstol*, or from among the holy relics behind the altar, the offence was not

\* "The King's peace extended three mila, three furlong, three *æora* bredæ, nine fote, nine *scefta munda*, nine *bere corna*."—Wilk. Leg. Ang. Sax., p. 63. The remains of three of these Sanctuary crosses may yet be seen in the neighbourhood of Beverley.

• Some of our Cathedrals and great Churches possess an appendage called the *Galilee*, or *Galilee porch*, probably considered as a part of the edifice less sacred than the rest, where preliminaries to admission, as in baptism, the churching of women, &c., were performed; and where great sinners doing public penance were exposed before being received back into communion with the Church. In conventual Churches this appendage was a small gallery or balcony open towards the nave of the Church, from which visitors, or the family of the Abbot, with whose residence it communicated, might view processions. Here also the female relatives of the monks were permitted to have interviews with them. From this last circumstance, Dr. Milner explains the origin and derivation of the appellation. On a woman applying for leave to see a monk, her relation, she was answered in the words of Scripture, "he goeth before you into Galilee, there you shall see him."—Britton's Archit. Ant., vol. v., Appendix xlii.

• Mr. Staveley, on the authority of Richard, Prior of Hagulstad, says that the *hundredth* contained *eight pounds*.

redeemable with any sum; but was then become *sine emendatione botelas*, and nothing but the utmost severity of the offended Church was to be expected, by a dreadful excommunication, besides what the secular power would impose for the presumptuous misdemeanor.\* The *Fridstol*, that is, *freed stool*, was a chair of refuge and safety from the immediate infliction of punishment for any crime whatsoever.\*

By a statute enacted in the ninth of Edward II. (1316), it was provided that "so long as the criminals be in the Church, they shall be supplied with the necessaries of life." Whilst the nature and circumstances of his crime were being investigated, the Church continued its protection, and the culprit remained in perfect safety within the limits of the Sanctuary; and in all cases the life of the criminal was safe, for having taken the oath of fealty to the head of the religious establishment, and being placed in the chair of peace, he could compel his adversary to accept of a pecuniary compensation.

The places of Sanctuary in process of time became much abused, and diverted from their original purpose; and in the reign of Henry VIII. they were entirely abolished.

*A Chronological List of the Archbishops of York, from the establishment of the See in the year 625, to the present time:—*

## ANGLO-SAXON DYNASTY.

No.	ARCHBISHOPS.	Consecrated.	Died or Translated.	Contemporaneous Kings.
1	St. Paulinus ..... <i>See vacant 34 years.</i>	625	631	Edwin.
2	Ceadda, or Chad .....	666	669	Oswyn.
3	St. Wilfrid .....	669	678	Aelfrid.
4	Bosa .....	678	685	Egfrid.
	St. Wilfrid (restored) ..	686	698	Aelfrid.
	Bosa (restored) .....	691	705	Aelfrid.
5	St. John of Beverley ..	705	718	Osred.
6	Wilfrid II. ....	718	731	Osric.
7	Egbert .....	731	766	Coelwulph.
8	Coena Albert .....	767	781	Ethelwuld.
9	Eanbauld .....	780	790	Edelrid.
10	Eanbauld II. ....	797	832	Alred.

Kings of Northumbria.

\* Pegge, in *Archæol.*, vol. viii., p. 44.

\* The *Fridstol*, or chair of peace, occurs in the laws of Edgar, ca. 16. There were formerly several of them in the northern parts of Britain; one of them occurs in the charter of immunities renewed by King Henry VII. to St. Peter's, York, where it is interpreted *cathedra quietudinis vel pacis*.—Wilk. *Leg. Anglo-Sax.* Gloss., p. 403. The *fridstol* was generally a stone chair or seat near the high altar, as an emblem of protection to the refugees.—Dugdale's *Monast.*, vol. ii., p. 128. The ancient *fridstol* of Beverley Sanctuary is still preserved in the Minster of that place.

No.	ARCHBISHOPS.	Consecrated.	Died or Translated.	Contemporaneous Kings.
11	Wulsius .....	832	832	Egbert.
12	Wimund .....	832	854	Egbert—Ethelwulf.
13	Wilfero .....	854	895	Ethelbald—Alfred.
14	Ethelbald .....	895	920	Alfred.
15	Redward .....	921	940	Edward the Elder.
16	Wulstan .....	941	955	Athelstan—Edrod.
17	Oscytell .....	955	971	Edwy—Edgar.
18	Athelwald .....	971	971	Edgar.
19	Oswald .....	974	993	Edward the Martyr.
20	Adulfe .....	993	1002	Ethelred II.
21	Wulstan II. ....	1003	1023	Ethelred II.—Sweyn.
22	Alfrie Puttoc .....	1023	1050	Canute—Harold I.—Edw. the Confessor.
23	Kinsius .....	1050	1060	Edward the Confessor.
24	Aldred .....	1061	1069	Edward the Confessor— Harold II.—Willm. I.

## ANGLO-NORMAN DYNASTY.

25	Thomas .....	1070	1100	William I. and II.
26	Gurard .....	1100	1108	Henry I.
27	Thomas II. ....	1109	1114	Henry I.
28	Thurstan .....	1119	1139	Henry—Stephen.
29	St. William (deprived in 1147) .....	1144	1147	Stephen.
30	Henry Murdao .....	1148	1153	Stephen.
	St. William (restored) ..	1153	1154	Stephen.

## SAXON LINE (RESTORED).

31	Roger .....	1154	1181	Henry II.
	<i>See vacant 10 years.</i>			Henry II.
32	Geoffry Plantagenet ...	1191	1212	
	<i>See vacant 4 years.</i>			Henry II.—Rich. I.—John
33	Walter de Grey .....	1215	1255	John—Henry III.
34	Sawal de Bovil .....	1258	1258	Henry III.
35	Godfrey de Keynton ...	1258	1264	Henry III.
36	Walter Giffard .....	1265	1279	Henry III.—Edward I.
37	William Wickwane ....	1279	1285	Edward I.
38	John le Romaine .....	1286	1296	Edward I.
39	Henry de Newark .....	1296	1299	Edward I.
40	Thomas de Corbrigg ..	1299	1303	Edward I.
41	William de Grenfeld ...	1305	1315	Edward I. and II.
42	William de Melton ....	1317	1340	Edward II. and III.

## LANCASTRIAN LINE.

43	William de la Zouche ..	1342	1352	Edward III.
44	John de Thoresby .....	1354	1373	Edward III.
45	Alexander Nevile .....	1374	1388	Edward III.—Richard II.
46	Thomas Arundell .....	1380	1396	Richard II.
47	Robert Waldby .....	1397	1398	Richard II.
48	Richard Scroope .....	1398	1405	Richard II.—Henry IV.
49	Henry Bowet .....	1405	1423	Henry IV. and V.
50	John Kempe .....	1426	1451	Henry V. and VI.



## HOUSE OF YORK.

No.	ARCHBISHOPS.	Consecrated.	Died or Translated.	Contemporaneous Kings.
51	William Boothe . . . . .	1453	1464	Henry VI.—Edward IV.
52	George Neville . . . . .	1465	1476	Edward IV.
53	Lawrence Boothe . . . . .	1476	1480	Edward IV.
54	Thomas Scot de Rotherham . . . . .	1480	1500	Edward IV. & V.—Richd. III.—Henry VII.

## HOUSE OF TUDOR.

55	Thomas Savage . . . . .	1501	1507	Henry VII.
56	Christopher Baynbrigge	1508	1514	Henry VII. and VIII.
57	Cardinal Thomas Wolsey	1514	1530	Henry VIII.
58	Edward Lee . . . . .	1531	1544	Henry VIII.
59	Robert Holgate . . . . .	1544	1553	Henry VIII.—Edw. VI.—Mary.
60	Nicholas Heath . . . . .	1555	1558	Mary—Elizabeth.
	<i>Protestant Archbishops.</i>			
61	Thomas Young . . . . .	1560	1568	Elizabeth.
62	Edmund Grindall . . . . .	1570	1576	Elizabeth.
63	Edwin Sandys . . . . .	1577	1588	Elizabeth.
64	John Piers . . . . .	1588	1594	Elizabeth.
65	Matthew Hutton . . . . .	1594	1606	Elizabeth—James I.

## HOUSE OF STUART.

66	Tobias Matthew . . . . .	1606	1628	James I.—Charles I.
67	George Montaigne . . . . .	1628	1628	Charles I.
68	Samuel Harsnett . . . . .	1629	1631	Charles I.
69	Richard Neill . . . . .	1632	1640	Charles I.
70	John Williams . . . . .	1642	1650	Charles I.
	<i>See vacant 10 years.</i>			The Commonwealth.
71	Accepted Frewen . . . . .	1660	1664	Charles II.
72	Richard Sterne . . . . .	1664	1683	Charles II.
73	John Dolben . . . . .	1683	1686	Charles II.—James II.
74	Thomas Lamplugh . . . . .	1688	1691	William III.
75	John Sharp . . . . .	1691	1713	William III.—Anne.

## HOUSE OF BRUNSWICK.

76	Sir William Dawes . . . . .	1714	1724	George I.
77	Lancelot Blackburn . . . . .	1724	1743	George I. and II.
78	Thomas Herring . . . . .	1743	1747	George II.
79	Matthew Hutton . . . . .	1747	1757	George II.
80	John Gilbert . . . . .	1757	1761	George II. and III.
81	Robert Hay Drummond	1761	1776	George III.
82	William Markham . . . . .	1777	1807	George III.
83	Edward V. V. Harcourt	1808	1847	George III. & IV.—Wm. IV.—Victoria.
84	Thomas Musgrave . . . . .	1847	The present Archbishop	Victoria.

A list of the *Deans of York*, with the year of their respective creation :—

No.	DEANS.	Appointed.	Died or Removed.
1	Hugo.....	Temp. Will. II.	_____
2	William de St. Barbara .....	Temp. K. Step.	Bishop of Durham .....1142
3	Robert de Gant .....	1144	_____
4	Robert Botevillin.....	_____	Died.....1186
5	Hubert Walter.....	1186	Bishop of Salisbury .....1189
6	Henry Marshall .....	1189	Bishop of Exeter .....1191
7	Simon de Apulia .....	1191	Bishop of Exeter .....1214
8	Hamo .....	1214	_____
9	Roger de Insula .....	12—	_____
10	Geoffry de Norwych .....	1235	_____
11	Fulk Bassett.....	1240	Bishop of London .....1244
12	William.....	1244	_____
13	Walter de Kyrkham .....	124—	_____
14	Sewal de Bovil .....	125—	Archbishop of York .....1256
15	Godfrey de Ludham (or Keynton).....	1256	Archbishop of York .....1258
16	Roger de Holderness .....	1258	_____
17	William de Langneton .....	126—	Died .....1279
18	Robert de Scardeburgh .....	1279	Died .....1290
19	Henry de Newark .....	1290	Archbishop .....1296
20	William de Hamelton* .....	1298	Died .....1314
21	Reginald de Gote, Cardinalis..	1309	Died .....1310
22	William de Pykering .....	1310	Died .....1312
23	Robert de Pykerings, P.C.L. . .	1312	_____
24	William de Colby .....	1332	_____
25	William de la Zouch .....	1383	Archbishop .....1340
26	Philip de Weston .....	1347	_____
27	Tallerand, Bp. of Albanen .....	135—	Died .....
28	John Anglicus, Cardinalis .....	1366	Deprived .....
29	Adam Easton, Cardinalis .....	1381	Deprived .....
30	Edmd. de Strafford, L.L.D. . .	1385	_____
31	Roger Walden .....	139—	Archbishop of Canterbury 1398
32	Richard Clifford, Bac. Leg. . .	1398	Bishop of Worcester .....1401
33	Thomas Langley† .....	1401	Bishop of Durham.....1406
34	John Prophete .....	1407	Died .....
35	Thomas Polton .....	1416	_____
36	William Grey, L.L.D. .....	1421	Bishop of London .....1426
37	Robert Gilbert, S.T.P. ....	1426	Bishop of London .....1437
38	William Felter, Dec. Dr. ....	1437	Died .....
39	Richard Andrews, L.L.D. ....	1454	Resigned .....1477
40	Robert Bothe, L.L.D. ....	1477	Died .....
41	Christopher Urswyk, Dec. Dr. .	1488	Resigned .....1494
42	William Sheffield, Dec. Dr. . .	1494	Died .....
43	Geoffrey Blythe, S.T.B. ....	1496	Bishop of Lichfield .....1503
44	Christ. Baynbrigge, L.L.D. . .	1503	{ Bishop of Durham .....1507 Archbishop of York .....1508
45	James Harrington .....	1507	Died .....1512

\* Jan. 16, 1305, 32nd Edw. I., this William de Hamelton had the great seal delivered to him as Lord Chancellor of England.—Torre, p. 555.

† In the year 1405 he was constituted Lord High Chancellor of England.—Drake, p. 564.

No.	DEANS.	Appointed.	Died or Removed.
46	Thomas Wolsey .....	1512	{ Bishop of Lincoln .....1513 Archbishop of York ....1514
47	John Young .....	1514	Died .....1516
48	Brian Higden, L.L.D.....	1516	Died .....1539
49	Richard Layton, L.L.D. ....	1539	Died .....1544
50	Nicholas Wotton, L.L.D. ....	1544	Died .....1567
51	Matthew Hutton .....	1567	{ Bishop of Durham .....1589 Archbishop of York ....1594
52	John Thornburgh, S.T.P. ....	1589	Bishop of Worcester .....1617
53	George Meriton, S.T.P. ....	1617	Died .....1624
54	John Scott, S.T.P. ....	1624	Died .....1644
55	Richard Marsh.....	1660	Died .....1663
56	William Sancroft .....	1663	Dean of St. Paul's, London 1664
57	Robert Hitch, S.T.P. ....	1664	Died .....1676
58	Tobias Wickham .....	1676	Died .....1697
59	Thomas Gale, S.T.P. ....	1697	Died .....1702
60	Henry Finch, A.M.....	1702	Died .....1728
61	Richard Osbaldeston, S.T.P. ...	1728	Carlisle .....1747
62	John Fountayne .....	1747	Died .....1802
63	George Markham .....	1802	Died .....1822
64	W. Cockburn, Bart. ....	1822	The present Dean.

ANNALS OF THE ARCHBISHOPS.—Gent, on the authority of Dr. Heylin, tell us that King Lucius made this ancient See “a metropolitan,” that its first Bishop was *Sampson*, and its last British Bishop *Tadiacus*. “Two others,” he continues, “are mentioned, as *Tawrinus* and *Pyrannus*; the last of whom is said to have been Chaplain to the renowned King Arthur.\*” In the preface to his History of York, the same authority tells us that the name of another British Bishop of York was *Exuperius*, if, as he says, we may credit a late account, in 1729, “That a man at Stanton, in Northamptonshire, threw up with his plough a large piece of plate, weighing seven pounds, four square, with a large cup in the middle of it, having the following very ancient inscription, *EXUPERIUS Episcopus Ecclesie EBOJENSE dedit.*” Gent does not give us the name of his author, nor can we find any place named Stanton in the County of Northampton. *Eborius* is the first Bishop of York of whom we have what would appear to be authentic information. According to some writers that prelate attended the Council of Arles, in A.D. 314; but as we have seen at page 77, the authenticity of this statement is somewhat doubtful. Of *Eborius*, the Centurists of Madgeburg give this testimony, that he was a man, considering the age wherein he lived, many ways learned, and most modest in his conversation; that he wrote among other things,

\* Gent's Hist. York, pp. 68, 69.

one book to his own countrymen, touching this Council of Arles, and several epistles to Hilary, Bishop of Poitiers, and that he was famous in the year of grace 350.\*

However, the first *Archbishop* of York appears to have been *St. Paulinus*, who was celebrated in the Roman Martyrology as the Apostles of the largest and at that time the most powerful of the seven Kingdoms of the English Saxons. But before we proceed to give a few particulars of the several Archbishops that filled this See, we would remark with Mr. Camden that many of them were renowned for their learning, piety, and virtue. Dr. Heylin says, that from the See of York proceeded eight canonized Saints, three Cardinals, twelve Lord Chancellors, two Lord Treasurers, and three or four Lord Presidents of the great Council of the North.

In 601 Pope Gregory the Great sent Paulinus, with Melitius, Justus, and others, to assist Augustine (who had been some time in England) in preaching the truths of Christianity to the Saxons. Alban Butler tells us that Gregory also sent "sacred vessels, altar cloths, and other ornaments for Churches, vestments for priests, relics of the Apostles and Martyrs, and many books, decreeing by letters, that when the northern countries should receive the faith, York should be appointed a Metropolitan See, in like manner with Canterbury." After labouring for some time in Kent with great zeal and piety, Paulinus was consecrated Bishop by St. Justus, Archbishop of Canterbury, on the 25th of July, 625. Edwin, the powerful King of Northumberland, demanded the Princess Ethelburgha, or Ethelburge, of Kent, but was answered by her brother King Eadbald, or Ethelbald, "that a Christian maid could not lawfully marry an Idolator, lest the faith and its mysteries should be profaned by the company of one who was a stranger to the worship of the true God." Whereupon Edwin promised entire liberty and protection with regard to her religion, and expressed his own favourable disposition to the same.

The Princess proceeded to the north, accompanied by her confessor, Paulinus, who undertook to preach the gospel to the people of Northumbria, and as we have seen at page 84, the King, his son Osfrid, whom he had by a former wife, his niece Hilda, his whole Court, and a multitude of the common people, were baptised at York by Paulinus on the 12th of April, 627, being Easter Day. Bede observes that Churches and baptistries not being yet built spacious enough for the crowds that flocked to receive baptism, St. Paulinus baptised great numbers in the river Swale near Catterick, where

\* Magdeb. Cent. iv., c. 10.

the King's Palace stood, and which was anciently a great City, as appears from Ptolemy and others, though it is now only a small village, with a bridge, called Catterick Bridge.

After preaching and baptising for some time in the ancient Kingdom of Northumbria, our zealous Bishop crossed the Humber, and preached the faith to the inhabitants of Lindsey, in the Kingdom of Mercia, and baptised Blecca, the Saxon Prince or Governor of Lincoln. At Lincoln he built a Church of stone, in which, after the death of St. Justus, he consecrated St. Honorius Archbishop of Canterbury. Pope Honorius sent a pallium\* to St. Paulinus, as the northern metropolitan in Britain; and in his letter of congratulation to King Edwin upon his conversion, he decreed as follows:—“As to what you desire concerning the ordination of your Bishops, we willingly agree to it; and we send palliums to your metropolitans, Honorius and Paulinus, that whenever it shall please God to called either of them, the other may ordain a successor for him by virtue of this letter.”† St. Paulinus, assisted by his Deacon, James, baptised a great multitude in the Trent, near Tiouulfingacaester, which Camden and Smith take to have been Southwell, in Nottinghamshire. The East Angles also received the faith by the zeal of St. Paulinus and King Edwin. This good King being slain in battle in 639, with his son Osfrid, St. Paulinus conducted the Queen Ethelburgha into Kent by sea, and at Liming she founded a Nunnery, and took the veil. Paulinus not being permitted to quit his royal charge, or return to York, and the

\* The *Pall*, *Pallia*, or *Pallium*, which the Pope sends to Archbishops, is an ornament worn upon their shoulders, with a label hanging down the breast and back. It is made of white lamb's wool, and spotted with purple crosses, “and is worn,” says the Rev. Alban Butler, “as a token of the spiritual jurisdiction of metropolitans over the Churches of their whole province. It is regarded,” continues the same authority, “as an emblem of humility, charity, and innocence, and serves to put the prelate in mind that he is bound to seek out and carry home on his shoulders the strayed sheep, in imitation of Christ, the Good Shepherd, and the Prince of Pastors.” Cardinal Bona says the white lambs are blessed on the festival of St. Agnes in her Convent at Rome, and from that time kept in some Nunnery till they are shorn; and of the wool are the palliums made, which are laid over the tomb of St. Peter the whole night of the vigil before the feast of that Apostle. Archbishops only wear them in the Church during the divine office. Spelman, in his Glossary, Thomassin, &c., show that a pallium was a robe or mantle worn by the Roman Emperors, and that the first Christian Emperors gave this imperial ornament to eminent Bishops, to wear as an emblem of the royalty of the Christian priesthood. It was afterwards appropriated to Archbishops to show their dignity, and to command greater respect, as God prescribed several ornaments to be worn by the Jewish high priest. According to Burton, the pall was originally a rich and magnificent robe of state, which hung down to the ground.

† Bede, 1, 2, c. 17.

See of Rhofi, now Rochester, being then vacant, King Eadbald entreated Archbishop Honorius to appoint him (Paulinus) Bishop thereof. James, whom our Bishop left behind, took care of the distressed Church of York, and baptised many living near Catterick-on-the-Swale, at a village which afterwards took his name, says Bede, where he died at a very advanced age.

St. Paulinus died at Rochester (where he was buried) on the 10th of October, 644, having occupied the Archiepiscopal throne of York, from 625 to 633, and been Bishop of Rochester eleven years.\* After the death of King Edwin, the Northumbrians relapsed into idolatry; but, as we have seen at page 85, St. Oswald obtained St. Aidan, an Irish monk of Hij, for Bishop, and by him the faith was planted again in that Kingdom. The See of York was vacant for about thirty-four years, during seventeen years of which St. Aidan governed all the Churches of Northumbria. He arrived in the Kingdom in 635, and received the Isle of Lindisfarne, where he fixed the episcopal chair, and erected a Monastery. From this institution all the Churches of Bernicia, or the northern part of the Kingdom of the Northumbers, from the Tyne to the Frith of Forth, had their beginning; as had some also of those of the Deira, who inhabited the southern part of the same Kingdom, from the Tyne to the Humber. St. Aidan died in 651. Finan and Colman, his countrymen, succeeded him, and had all the Kingdom of Northumberland for their diocese.

*St. Ceadda, or Chad, was the second Archbishop of York. He was brother to St. Cedd, Bishop of London, or of the East Saxons, and was educated in the Monastery of Lindisfarne, under St. Aidan. For his greater improvement in sacred letters he passed into Ireland, and spent a considerable time in the company of St. Egbert, till he was called back by his brother St. Cedd, to assist him in settling the Monastery of Lastingham, which he had founded in the mountains of the Deira, that is, the Wolds of Yorkshire; and when St. Cedd was made Bishop of the East Saxons, St. Chad succeeded him as Abbot of Lastingham. Alfred, or Alcfrid, King of Deira, on the southern*

\* King Edwin, and his Queen Ethelburge, as well as Paulinus, have been canonized by the Church, and are consequently styled *Saints*. St. Edwin is honoured with the title of Martyr in the Martyrology of Florus, and in all our English calendars. Speed, in his catalogue, mentions an old Church in London, and another at Breve, in Somersetshire, of both which St. Edwin was the titular patron. William of Malmesbury and Alford has inserted, ad. ann. 632, the letter of Pope Honorius to this sainted King, which is also extant, together with his letter to Honorius, Archbishop of Canterbury, in Bede, and Conc., t. vi. For further particulars respecting SS. Paulinus and Edwin, see page 82 of this history. The relics of St. Ethelburge were honoured with those of St. Edburg at Liming Monastery. Lel. Collect, t. i.

part of the Kingdom of the Northumbers, sent St. Wilfrid into France, that he might be consecrated to the Bishopric of his Kingdom, or of York; but he stayed so long abroad, that Oswy, the father of Alfred, and King of Bernicia, nominated St. Chad to that dignity, and he was ordained by Wini, Bishop of Winchester, assisted by two British prelates, in 666. Bede assures us that he zealously devoted himself to all the laborious functions of his charge, visiting his diocese on foot, preaching the gospel, and seeking out the poorest and most abandoned persons to instruct and comfort in the meanest cottages, and in the fields. Jaruman, the fourth Bishop of the Mercians, dying, St. Chad was called upon to take upon him the charge of that most extensive diocese. He fixed the See of Mercia at Lichfield, so called from a great number of martyrs slain and buried there under Maximianus Hercules; the name signifying the *Field of Carcases*; and hence the Corporation of that City bears for its arms a landscape, covered with the bodies of martyrs. St. Chad governed his diocese of Lichfield for two years and a half, and died in the great pestilence, on the 2nd of March, 679.

*St. Wilfrid*, the next prelate, was born in the Kingdom of Northumberland towards the year 634. At the age of fourteen he was sent to the Monastery of Lindisfarne, that he might be trained up in the study of the sacred sciences. A desire of greater improvement than he could attain at this house caused him to travel through France and Italy, visiting the most famous Monasteries in his way, the better to instruct himself in the rules of Christian perfection. At Rome he contracted a friendship with Boniface, the Archdeacon, who was a very pious and a very learned man; as well as secretary to St. Martin, the then reigning Pontiff. The Archdeacon took much delight in instructing young Wilfrid, and at length he presented him to the Pope. On his return from Rome he stayed three years at Lyons, and received the ecclesiastical tonsure from the Archbishop, St. Delphinus, who desired to make him his heir; but the good prelate was put to death at Challons-upon-the-Saone by the order of Ebroin, in the year 658. Alchfrid, the King of Deira, being informed that Wilfrid, who had just returned from his tour, had been instructed in the discipline of the Roman Church, sent for him, and finding him well versed in the several customs of that Church, he conjured him to continue with him, to instruct him and his people in ecclesiastical discipline. This Wilfrid consented to, and the Prince entered into an intimate friendship with him, and gave him land at Ripon to found a Monastery upon, which the Saint afterwards governed. At the request of Alchfrid, he was ordained priest by Agilberct, Bishop of the West Saxons, in A.D. 663, in the Monastery of Ripon. This Bishop having stated that a person of such

merit as Wilfrid ought to be promoted to a bishopric, and Alchfrid being anxious that Wilfrid should be placed in the episcopal See of York, sent him some time after to France to be consecrated at the hands of Agilberct, who returned to France, which was his native country, and where the bishopric of Paris was given him. Wilfrid being absent a long time on this journey, Oswy caused St. Ceadda or Chad, Abbot of Lastingham, a disciple of St. Aidan, to be ordained Bishop. Agilberct joyfully received Wilfrid, and with twelve other Bishops consecrated him with great solemnity at Compeigne in 664; he being then in the thirtieth year of his age. At his return into England he would not dispute the election of St. Chad, but retired to Ripon, which Monastery he made his residence for three years. St. Theodorus, Archbishop of Canterbury, in his visitation, found the election of St. Chad to have been irregular, and removed him; but charmed with his humility and virtue, placed him in the See of Lichfield. At the same time he put St. Wilfrid in possession of the See of York in 699. Being a man of most persuasive oratory and strict virtue, he promoted every where religion and piety with incredible success. The monastic state was a principal object of his care, and this he settled among the midland and northern English, as St. Augustine had established it in Kent. But Wilfrid's day of trial and persecution is at hand; court envy, jealousy, and resentment are the secret springs which are about to put in motion the engines that were employed against him, through the simplicity or ignorance of many, the malice of some, and the complaisance and condescension of others. Being the best skilled in sacred learning, and in the Canons of the Church in all Britain, as St. Theodorus, on his death-bed acknowledged him to be, he was too great a disciplinarian for some at Court. King Egfrid and his Queen Ermenburga took a dislike to him; and the latter employed every base means to ruin him in the opinion of her husband. In order to undermine him, a project was set on foot for dividing his bishopric, after the good prelate had spent ten years in settling Christianity in it. Theodorus, Archbishop of Canterbury, and Metropolitan of all England, was gained by specious pretences, and he parcelled this great diocese into three portions, and consecrated *Bosa* to the See of York, for the Deira, in 678; *Eata* to that of Lindisfarne, for Bernicia; and *Eadhed* to the Church of Lindiswaras, a great part of Lincolnshire, which Egfrid had won from Mercia.\* Wilfrid, for opposing this partition, was rejected; but being well versed in the Canons, he saw the irregularity and nullity of many steps that had been taken against him; and he appealed

\* Johnson's Collect of English Canons, an. 679, pref.



to the Pope, and embarked for Rome without raising any clamour, lest a disturbance or a schism might arise. Being driven by contrary winds at sea upon the coast of Friesland, he was moved to compassion upon seeing the spiritual blindness and idolatry of the inhabitants, and he preached among them during that winter and the following spring; and converted and baptised many thousands, with several lords of the country. Wilfred is honoured to this day as the Apostle of that country.

Next summer Wilfred leaving his new converts under the direction of proper pastors, he travelled through Anstrasia, where King Dagobert II. entreated him to fill the bishopric of Strasburg, which happened then to be vacant. This honour he refused, and he arrived in Rome late in the year 679, as the Pope was preparing to hold a great Council against the Monothelites. In the meantime, to discuss this cause of St. Wilfred's, the Pope assembled a Synod in October, 679, in the Lateran Basilica, or Church of Our Saviour, consisting of above fifty Bishops and Priests, chiefly of the Suburbicarian Churches. The causes of the dissension in the British Church having been weighed, it was decreed that there should be in it one Archbishop honoured with the pall, who should canonically ordain the Bishops of the other Sees; but that none of the Bishops should presume to meddle with the rights of any other prelate, but all should study to instruct and convert the people. After this St. Wilfred was admitted to the Council, and having presented his petition in person, it was definitely decreed that he should be restored to his bishopric. St. Wilfred stayed about four months at Rome, and assisted at the great Lateran Council of one hundred and twenty five Bishops, in which he, with the rest, condemned the Monothelite heresy.

When he arrived in England, and showed to the King the sealed decrees of the Pope, that Prince declared that they had been obtained by bribery, and commanded a certain steward of the Church for secular affairs to commit Wilfred to prison, where he was detained for nine months. On being released from prison, he repaired to the Kingdom of the South Saxons, which had not yet received the light of faith, and there by his preaching converted the whole nation. King Egfrid was slain in battle by the Picts in 685; St. Wilfred was called back to Northumberland towards the end of the year 686; and the Monasteries of Hexham and Ripon, and the episcopal See of York, were restored to him; Bosa of York, and St. John of Beverley, at Hexham, relinquishing their Sees to him. Theodorus had first parcelled the bishopric of York into three, and afterwards into five bishoprics; and St. Wilfred, after his restoration, reduced Hexham and Ripon to their original condition of mere Monasteries. But a new storm arose against him. King Alcfrid, the

successor of Egfrid, would have a new bishopric erected at Ripon. St. Wilfrid opposed the project, and was obliged once more to fly, in 691, five years after he had been restored. He retired to Ethelred, King of the Mercians, who received him most graciously, and entreated him to take upon himself the See of Lichfield, which was then vacant. Our Saint founded many Monasteries and Churches in Mercia; but finding his enemies in Northumberland had gained Brithwald, Archbishop of Canterbury, and were soliciting a sentence of deposition against him, he appealed a second time to Rome, and took another journey thither in A.D. 703. His accusers appeared there against him, but Pope John VI. honourably acquitted him. His very enemies had always acknowledged his life to be irreproachable; and a Bishop cannot be deposed unless a canonical fault be proved against him in a Synod. St. Wilfrid met at Rome with that protection and applause which were due to his heroic virtue. Pope John, in the year 704, sent letters by an express messenger to the Kings of Mercia and Northumberland in favour of the persecuted Bishop, charging Archbishop Brithwald to call a Synod, which should do him justice; and in default of which, he ordered the parties to make their personal appearance at Rome. St. Wilfrid returned to England, and took possession of the Diocese at Hexham, but chiefly resided in his Monastery of Ripon, leaving York to St. John of Beverley. He governed the Monasteries in Mercia, of which he had been the founder, and which were afterwards destroyed by the Danes; and he died at one of them at Undalum, now called Oundle, in Northamptonshire, on the 24th of April, 709, and his body was buried in his Church of St. Peter at Ripon. That Monastery having been destroyed by the wars, the greater part of his remains was translated to Canterbury. St. Wilfrid's modesty is remarkable in never soliciting the metropolitan jurisdiction, which St. Gregory had ordained should be settled at York, and which had been granted to St. Paulinus. It had failed in the Bishops who resided at Lindisfarne; but was recovered, in 734, by Egbert, brother to Eadbright, or Eadbert, King of Northumbria.

*Bosa*, who was, according to Bede, a man of great sanctity and humility, occupied the See of York, from 678 to 685, and from 698 to his death, which occurred in 705. He was the first prelate buried in the Cathedral of York.

*St. John of Beverley*.—This illustrious prelate was born of a noble Saxon family, at Harpham on the Wolds, near Driffield, in or about the year 640. His father contributed much to prevent the utter ruin of Christianity in the places where lay his territorial possessions. It is recorded by Bede, that an earnest desire to qualify himself for the service of God drew him into Kent, where he was a pupil in the famous school of St. Theodorus, or Theodore,

the Archbishop of Canterbury, who was a native of the Grecian City of Tarsus.\* "At a period when learning was in its infancy," says the learned author of *Beverlac*,† "the arrival of Theodore, with his companion Adrian, on the shores of England, was a most auspicious event. Both these men were eminently qualified for tutors, from their thorough knowledge of sacred and profane literature, as well as of the Latin and Greek languages. Theodore's visit to the Northumbrian Court of Egfrid, which occasioned the division of the former extensive Diocese of York, probably led to John's proceeding to Kent. The spirit of emulation excited among the Saxon youth, had drawn a crowd of pupils to the School of Canterbury, and John was distinguished as one of Theodore's most eminent pupils." St. John afterwards returned to his own country, and entered the Monastery of men, under St. Hilda, at Streaneshalch, now Whitby, where he exercised himself in studying the Holy Scriptures, and in the practice of other works of religious piety. During the absence of St. Wilfrid, and the convulsions which agitated the Church in Northumbria, John succeeded Eata, as Bishop of Hagulstad, now Hexham; and there his splendid talents had full scope for their exercise. The Venerable Bede, the historian of the Anglo-Saxon Church, the pupil and biographer of this prelate, and from whom he (Bede) received the Holy Orders of deacon and priest, gives ample testimony of his sanctity, learning, and zeal. As an instructor of youth he was far famed, and many of his pupils afterwards attained to great eminence. As he advanced in life he dedicated himself more exclusively to his clerical duties, and travelling about as a missionary, instructed the rude and ignorant multitude in the duties and doctrines of the Gospel. The state of the Church was at that time widely different from what it is now. There was then no division into parishes, no resident ministry. The clergy of each diocese resided with his Bishop, in what was called the episcopal monastery adjoining the Cathedral, and were sent out by him to the different Churches of his diocese, as he had opportunity, and as the necessities of the people required. In this toilsome, but useful occupation, John laboured with distinguished zeal and diligence, as well as eminent success. At a subsequent period he betook himself to a life of solitude, and lived for some time as a hermit in the neighbourhood of Hexham. At the death of Bosa, Archbishop of York, John was selected by the Synod to supply his place, and he was solemnly installed by his friend and former tutor St. Theodore, in 687. He now held the Archiepiscopal See of York, and the Bishopric of Hexham, and this distinguished position

\* Bede's *Eccles. Hist.*, lib. v., c. 2. † p. 28.

speaks loudly of the estimation in which his virtues were held. He employed his time in personally visiting the Churches, and with most laudable and indefatigable attention, he conciliated the affections of his pagan opposers, and brought many of them into the fold of Christianity. Miracles innumerable, too, were attributed to his holy agency. He was neither luxurious nor ambitious, and he took no part in the disputes which at that period agitated the Christian Church, but on the contrary, he was humble in his deportment and manner of life, and unassuming in his general conduct. Soon after St. John's advancement to the See of York, Wilfrid returned from Rome in triumph to his diocese, and John, with a spirit of Christian meekness tendered his resignation, which Wilfrid was not permitted to accept. But on the reconciliation of the latter with the Bishops, in 705, he resigned to him the Bishopric of Hexham.

The zeal of our good prelate now expanded itself, and Christianity began to assume a more flourishing appearance in the north, under his benign auspices. He extended his visitations to every part and corner of the province, and superintended the building and reparation of Churches, and the foundation of Monasteries. In one of his visitations he came to a spot now called Beverley, and finding it suitable for the holy offices of prayer and meditation, he resolved to build there a religious establishment. He accordingly erected a Monastery at Beverley for black monks, and an Oratory for Nuns. In 718, being much worn out with age and fatigues, St. John resigned his Bishopric to his Chaplain, Wilfrid the younger, and having consecrated him Bishop of York, he retired to Beverley, where he spent the remaining four years of his life in the punctual performance of all monastic duties, and where he died, on the 7th of May, 721, full of years and with his memory overshadowed by the benedictions of mankind. His body was buried in the porch (porticus) of the Church of Beverley. His relics were translated into the Church, by Alfric, Archbishop of York, in 1087; and a feast in honour of his translation was kept at York on the 25th of October. On the 13th of September, 1664, the sexton, in digging a grave in the Church of Beverley, discovered a vault of freestone, in which was a box of lead yielding a sweet smell, with inscriptions by which it appeared that these were the mortal remains of St. John of Beverley.\* These relics had been hid in the beginning of the reign of King Edward VI. Dugdale and Stevens testify that they were all re-interred in the nave of the same Church. King Henry V. attributed to the intercession of this Saint, the glorious victory of

\* Dugdale's History of the Collegiate Church of Beverley, p. 57.

Agincourt, on which occasion a Synod, in 1416, ordered his festival to be solemnly kept all over England.\* Henschenius, the Bolandist, has published four books of the miracles wrought at the relics of St. John of Beverley, written by an eye witness.†

*Wilfrid II.* governed this Diocese fifteen years, "and was a great lover of the beauty of God's house." This prelate began the contention for precedence between York and Canterbury, which for many subsequent years continued to disturb the Church. He died or was translated in 781.

*Egbert*, 781.—He was brother to Eadbert, King of Northumbria, and the tutor and friend of Alcuin, a learned monk of York, and author of several works, including a poem on the Saints of the Diocese. Egbert, according to Bede, was still more eminent for his superiority in knowledge than for his high birth. As has been already observed, the metropolitanical jurisdiction of the See of York was recovered by this prelate in 784. He died on the 18th of November, 786, and was buried in the Church porch of the Cathedral, near his brother King Eadbert.

*Albert, Elbert, or Adelbert*, the next Archbishop, was a native of York, and was consecrated in 767. Archbishops Egbert and Albert taught a great School in the City of York, till they were successively placed in the Archiepiscopal chair. When Albert succeeded Egbert in that dignity, he committed to Alcuin the care of the School, and of the great Library belonging to the Cathedral. Albert died or was translated in 781, and was buried at Chester.

*Eanbald*, his nephew, was his successor. He sent Alcuin to Rome to bring over his pall, in 780. Eanbald died in 796, and was buried at York.

The next Archbishop was *Eanbald II.*, and he was succeeded by *Wulsius*, who died in 832. *Wimund*, or *Wimundus*, his successor, died in 854.

*Wilferes, Wilferus, or Wulfer*, 854.—In the year 873 this prelate was expelled his Diocese, together with King Egbert, by a tumult of the Northumbers, and they were forced to fly to Burrhed, King of Mercia, by whom they were kindly entertained. Egbert dying the following year, his successor recalled Wilferes to his See, and he died in the year 895. During the greatest part of his time the Danes so horribly wasted his Province with fire and sword, that for many years together the Archbishop reaped little benefit from it; and the successors of Wilferes not having any means with which to sustain themselves, obtained the administration of the Diocese of Worcester, which for a long time they held *in commendam*. The next two Archbishops of York were *Ethelbald*, 895; and *Redwardus*, 921.

\* See Lynwoode, Provinciale, 104. † Second Tome of May, p. 178.

*Wulstan*, 941.—This prelate espoused the cause of Anlaff, the Danish King of Northumbria, against Edred, the King of England. He was committed to prison by the latter, but was soon released, and restored to office. He died on the 26th of December, 955, and was buried at Oundle.

*Oskitell*, or *Oscytell*, his successor, was translated to York from Dorchester, and died in 971; and *Athelwald*, who was immediately consecrated, resigned his prelacy the same year, and died in retirement.

*St. Oswald*, the next prelate, was nephew to St. Odo, Archbishop of Canterbury, and to Oskitell, his own immediate predecessor in the See of York. He was educated by St. Odo, and made Dean of Winchester, but passing into France, he took the monastic habit at Fleury. Being recalled he succeeded St. Dunstan in the See of Worcester, about the year 959. He established a Monastery of monks at Westberry, a village in his Diocese; and he was employed by Duke Aylwin, cousin to King Edgar, in superintending his foundation of the great Abbey of Ramsey, in an island formed by marshes and the river Ouse, in Huntingdonshire, in the year 972. St. Oswald was made Archbishop of York in 974, and he shone as a bright star in this dignity. He was almost always occupied in visiting his Diocese, preaching without intermission, and reforming abuses. He was a great encourager of learning and learned men. St. Dunstan, who had been raised to the Metropolitan See of Canterbury, obliged him to retain the See of Worcester with that of York. Whatever intermission his functions allowed him, he spent it at St. Mary's, a Church and Monastery of Benedictines which he had built at Worcester, where he joined with the monks in their monastic exercises. This Church from that time became the Cathedral. After having sat thirty-three years, he expired at St. Mary's in Worcester, on the 29th of February, 993. His body was taken up ten years after, and enshrined by Adulph, his successor. It was afterwards translated to York on the 15th of October, which day was appointed his principal festival.

*Adulfe*, 993.—A pious and worthy prelate; he also held the See of Worcester, *in commendam*. He died on the 6th of May, 1002, and was buried at Worcester.

*Wulstan II.*, 1002.—He also held the See of Worcester; died in York, May 28th, 1023, and was buried in the Cathedral of Ely, "because on a certain time," says an old writer, "having in devotion gone thither, at a procession leaning on his episcopal crozier, the staff entered almost half way into the pavement; whereat being astonished, he sayd in a propheticall manner, 'This is the place of my rest for ever, here will I dwell.'"

*Alfric*, surnamed *Putta*, or *Puttoc*, Prior of Winchester, was appointed to this See in 1023; he died in 1050, and was buried in Peterborough Abbey.

*Kinsius*, 1050.—This was a prelate of great austerity, mostly walking barefoot in his parochial visitations. He died on the 22nd of December, 1060, and was buried at Peterborough.

*Aldred*, the last Archbishop of the Saxon race, was translated from Worcester in 1060. This prelate crowned William the Conqueror in 1066. He died on the 11th of September, 1069, and was buried at York.

*Thomas*, the first Norman prelate, a Canon of Bayeux in Normandy, and Chaplain and Treasurer to William the Conqueror, was appointed to this See in 1070. This prelate found the affairs of the Church in great disorder, in consequence of the dreadful havoc which the Danes had made in the surrounding country. He founded the offices of Dean, Treasurer, and Chanter, in the Cathedral, and he divided the Church lands into Prebends, and gave a particular portion to each Canon; for before his time the Canons lived upon the common revenues of the Church all at one table. Archbishop Thomas died at Ripon on the 18th of November, 1100, and was buried in the Cathedral of York.

*Gerard*, his successor, was translated from Hereford in the same year. He, as well as his predecessor, refused obedience to Canterbury, but at length submitted by command of the Pope. His death occurred on the 21st of May, 1108, and he was buried at York.

*Thomas II.*, nephew to Thomas the first Norman Archbishop, was Provost of Beverley. He was Bishop elect of London, but before consecration was removed to the See of York. He was consecrated in June, 1109, died February 19th, 1114, and was buried at York.

*Thurstan*, a learned and excellent prelate, had been Chaplain to King Henry I., a Canon of St. Paul's, and Provost of Beverley. He was elected to the See of York on the 15th of August, 1114, but presuming upon his interest at Court, he revived the old dispute between the Metropolitan Sees of York and Canterbury; and owing to the altercations which arose out of his refusal to make any profession of canonical obedience to the See of Canterbury, he was not consecrated till October, 1119. He received the pallium at Rheims. Archbishop Thurstan was Lord Lieutenant of the North, and organised the troops that fought the famous Battle of the Standard. (See page 123.) After having occupied his See for twenty-one years, he retired to the Cluniac Monastery at Pontefract, to prepare himself for his death, which occurred the year following (1140), on the 5th of February.

*St. William*, the next prelate, was the son of Earl Herbert and Emma,

sister to King Stephen ; and before his election he was Treasurer of the Cathedral. He was consecrated at Winchester in September, 1144. But Osbert, the Archdeacon, a turbulent man, procured *Henry Murdac*, a Cistercian monk of the Abbey of Fountains, who was a man of great learning, and a zealous preacher, to be preferred at Rome, whither William went to demand his pallium. The most unwarrantable means were used with the Pope (Eugenius III.) to the prejudice of William ; and his enemies succeeded in their efforts to have him deprived in 1147. William, who, amongst his many virtues, was possessed of the deepest humility, showed no enmity, and sought no revenge against his most inveterate enemies, who had preposessed the Pope against him by the blackest calumnies. He returned to England, went privately to Winchester to his uncle Henry, Bishop of that See, and in a retired house belonging to the Bishop, he spent seven years in silence, solitude, prayer, and penitential austerities. Archbishop Murdac was never permitted to enter the City, having quarrelled with King Stephen, whose part the Canons and citizens warmly espoused. He lived at Beverley, and died there, October 14th, 1153 ; but he was interred in the Cathedral of his Diocese, though he had never been permitted to enter it whilst he lived. At his death, St. William, to satisfy the importunities of others, by whom he was again elected, undertook a second journey to Rome, and received the pallium from Pope Anastatius IV., who succeeded Pope Eugenius III. On his return to York he was received with incredible joy by the people. The great numbers who assembled on that occasion to see and welcome him, broke down the wooden bridge over the Ouse in the City, and a great many persons fell in the river. Seeing this terrible accident, the prelate addressed himself to God with many tears, and to his sanctity and prayers has been ascribed the miraculous preservation of the whole multitude, especially of the children, who all escaped out of the water without hurt.\* A few days after his installation he was seized with a fever, of which he died on the 8th of June, 1154. He was buried in his Cathedral, and about the year 1280 he was canonized by Pope Nicholas III., who granted an indulgence of one hundred and forty days to all persons visiting the Saint's tomb on the day of his festival, or any day during the octave ; and so great was the fame of the reported miracles

\* Polydore Virgil pretends that this happened on the river Aire at Pontefract ; but Brompton and Stubbs expressly say that it was in the City of York, on the river Ouse where stood a Chapel till the Reformation, dedicated to St. William, as Mr. Drake testifies. Pontefract could not derive its name from this accident, as Polydore imagined ; for we find it so called long before ; and the name was originally written Pomfrete, or Pontfrete, from a very different Norman etymology.



of St. William, that numbers resorted thither, and made large offerings for rebuilding the Cathedral. The Saint's tomb was situated in the nave, but in 1284 his relics were put into a very rich shrine, and deposited in the choir by Archbishop Wickwane. This shrine was portable, so that the Saint's bones could be borne in procession; and the removal or *Translation* of the relics from the grave in the nave of the Church to the shrine, was performed with much ceremony, King Edward I., Queen Eleanor, and the whole Court, with eleven Bishops, being present. Large offerings were made on this occasion, which helped greatly to swell the funds for building the Minster. Drake says that a table containing a list of thirty-six miracles, with a copy of the above-mentioned indulgence, is still to be seen in the vestry, but no longer legible. The shrine, with its rich plate and jewels, was plundered at the Reformation, but the Saint's bones were deposited in a box within a coffin, and buried in the nave under a large spotted marble stone. Drake had the curiosity to see the ground opened, and found them with their box and coffin in 1732. He laid them again in the same place, with a mark. A Chapel, as before stated, was erected to his memory on the old Ouse Bridge.

*Archbishop Roger* succeeded St. William in 1154, and he died at Sherburn on the 22nd of November, 1181, and was buried at York. After his death the See was vacant for ten years.

*Geoffrey Plantagenet*, Provost of Beverley, and Archdeacon of Lincoln, was consecrated August 18th, 1191. He was the second illegitimate son of King Henry II. and his renowned mistress, "Fair Rosamond," daughter of Walter, Lord Clifford, of Clifford Castle, in Herefordshire. He filled the high office of Lord Chancellor of England for eight years, and he was High Sheriff of the County of York in 1195. (See page 120.) He is highly spoken of as fulfilling his various duties, lay and clerical, in a judicious and disinterested manner; but crossing the King's purposes, by opposing in his See the collection of the obnoxious taxes laid on land by that Monarch, "for his niece's great dowry, and his own martial uses," he was obliged to vacate his See in 1207; and after undergoing many difficulties, he died in exile at Grosmont, in Normandy, on the 18th of December, 1212.

*Walter de Grey*, the next Archbishop—a man of sound judgment, strict morality, and great experience—was translated from Worcester on the 18th of November, 1215. This prelate amassed great wealth, and expended it in a munificent manner. On the occasion of the marriage of Henry the Third's daughter, Margaret, to Alexander, King of Scotland, in this City, in 1251, he entertained the two Monarchs and their retinues. (See page 130.) He

built the present north transept of the Minster, expending on it a vast sum. He also purchased the Manor of Thorpe, or St. Andrew's Thorpe, now called Bishopthorpe, and bequeathed it to his successors; and he bought a house in Westminster of the Friars Preachers, which was thence called York Place, and which continued to be the town residence of the Archbishops of York till Henry the Eighth's time, when it was presented to that Monarch by Wolsey. He died in London on the 1st of May, 1255, and was buried in a splendid tomb in his own Cathedral, which still remains.

*Seval de Bovil*, 1206.—He was excommunicated for opposing the preferment of foreigners to ecclesiastical dignities, especially an Italian, whom the Pope had constituted Dean of York. He was reconciled to the Church on his death-bed, and he died May 10th, 1258.

*Godfrey de Kinton*, or *Keynton*, elected September 23rd, 1258.—He appropriated Mexborough to his Church, and it has been since that period annexed to the Deanery of York. He died on the 12th of January, 1264, and was buried in the Cathedral.

*Walter Gifford* was translated from Bath and Wells, in 1265. He was Lord Chancellor of England, and died April 25, 1279, and was buried at York.

*William Wickwane*, September 19th, 1279; died August the 26th, 1285; and was buried at Pontimac.

*John le Romayne*, February 10th, 1286.—He died at Bishop Burton, near Beverley, March 11th, 1296, and was buried in his own Cathedral.

*Henry de Newark*, June 24th, 1298; died August 15th, 1299; and was interred at York.

*Thomas de Corbridge*, or *Corbrige*, February 28th, 1299.—He died at Langham, in Nottinghamshire, on the 22nd of September, 1303, and was buried at Southwell, in the same County.

*William de Grenfield*, January 30th, 1305.—This prelate was obliged to travel to Rome for the approbation of the Pope, and waited two years before he could obtain it. He died on the 16th of December, 1315, and was buried at York. He had been Lord Chancellor of England.

*William de Melton*, September 25th, 1317.—This active prelate filled successively the high offices of Lord Chancellor, and Treasurer of England, and he signalised himself by raising an undisciplined army, and attacking the Scots at Myton, near Boroughbridge, in 1320. (See page 136). He died on the 5th of April, 1340, and was buried at York.

*William de la Zouche*, July 6th, 1342.—He is famous for his courage and valour at the battle of Nevil's Cross, near Durham, in 1347. (See page 142). He died July 19th, 1352, and was buried at York.

*John de Thoresby, LL.D.*, was translated from the See of Worcester on the 8th of September, 1354. He was of an ancient family near Middleham, and was esteemed the most learned man of his day. In his time the Archbishop of York was made by the Pope, Primate of England, and the Archbishop of Canterbury Primate of *All* England; and thus was settled the disputes for precedence which had previously existed between the two Sees. He was made a Cardinal by the title of St. Peter ad Vincula, and before receiving this Archbishopric, he had been some time Keeper of the Great Seal and Lord Chancellor of England. He died on the 6th of November, 1373, and was buried at York.

*Alexander Neville*, December 18th, 1374.—This prelate was one of the favourites of the unfortunate Monarch Richard II., a circumstance which ultimately proved his ruin. The malcontent nobles accused him, with several others, of high treason, and certain articles were exhibited against him in Parliament. The Archbishop seeing the gathering storm, withdrew privately from his Castle at Cawood, but was arrested at Newcastle-upon-Tyne, and the money in his possession, amounting only to thirty pounds, taken from him and given to his captors. He, however, subsequently escaped, but his temporalities were forfeited to the Crown by a bill of outlawry. After living in exile for some time in great want, the Pope commiserating his condition, on his resignation of the See of York, translated him to St. Andrews. The Scots having at that time refused to acknowledge Pope Urban (there being another claimant for the Papacy in the person of Clement VII.), would not receive his nominee, and the unhappy prelate became from necessity a parish priest and schoolmaster at Louvain; and after dragging on through five years of exile, he died in May, 1392, and was buried in the Church of the Carmelites of that town.

*Thomas Arundel*, second son of Richard, Earl of Arundel, and Archdeacon of Taunton, was translated from Ely, March 25th, 1399. Being Lord Chancellor as well as Archbishop of York, he removed the Seals and all the King's Courts from London to York for six months, in order to humble the Londoners who had offended the King. After he had filled this See for six years, he was removed to Canterbury in 1396, which is the first instance of a translation from York to that See.

*Robert Waldby*, a native of York, and a Friar of the Monastery of St. Augustine, York, was the next Archbishop. He was a pious and eloquent man, and a great proficient in all kinds of literature. He was translated from Chichester, January 13th, 1397; died May 20th, 1398; and was buried at Westminster.

*Richard Scrope* or *Scroope*, was translated from Lichfield, July 6th, 1398. This prelate was beheaded for high treason, at Scarcroft, according to Mr. Davies, on the 8th of June, 1405. Mr. Brown, in his History of the Cathedral, says that this sacrilegious act was perpetrated in a field at Clementhorpe; Gent says that the Archbishop was beheaded in a field near Bishopthorpe; and Drake describes it as, "in a field between Bishopthorpe and York." (See page 147). He was buried in the Minster, and was so much beloved by the people, that immediately after his death his grave was visited by numbers, and so many miracles were said to be performed there, that Henry IV. ordered that it should be concealed by great logs of wood. His present monument in the Lady Chapel was subsequently erected. Scrope's rebellion forms one of the principal scenes in Shakespeare's play of Henry IV.

*Henry Bowet*, a very liberal and hospitable prelate, was translated from Bath and Wells, December 9, 1405; he died at Cawood, October 20, 1423, and was buried in the Cathedral.

*John Kempe*, a man of humble parentage in Kent, was translated from London, in April, 1426; was made Archbishop of Canterbury, and became Lord High Chancellor of England, and a Cardinal of the See of Rome. He built the gate house of the old Palace at Cawood, and died and was buried at Canterbury in 1451.

*William Boothe* was translated from Lichfield on the 4th of September, 1453; he died, September 20, 1464, and was buried where he died at Southwell.

*George Neville*, the next prelate, was brother to Richard, the famous King-making Earl of Warwick, and was translated from Exeter, in 1465.\* On

\* On the day on which this prelate was enthroned, January 15th, 1466, he gave the largest entertainment ever made by a subject. In Hearne's additions to *Leland's Collectanea*, the bill of fare is as follows:—"In wheat, 300 quarters; ale, 300 tons; wine, 100 tons; ipocrass, 1 pipe; wild bulls, 6; muttuns, 1,000; veales, 304; porkers, 304; swanns, 400; geese, 2,000; capons, 1,000; pygges, 2,000; plovers, 400; quales, 100 dozen; fowles called rees, 200 dozen; peacocks, 104; mallardes and teals, 4,000; kyddes, 204; chickens, 2,000; pigeons, 4,000; conyes, 4,000; bittors, 204; heronshawes, 400; fessantes, 200; partridges, 500; woodcocks, 400; curleins, 100; egretts, 1,000; stagg<sup>s</sup>, bucks, and roes, 500 and mo.; pastes of venison colde, 4,000; parted dyshes of jelly, 1,000; playne dyshes of jelly, 3,000; cold tartes baked, 3,000; hot pasties of venison, 1,500; pykes and breames, 804; porposes and seales, 12; spices, sugard delicates, and wafers, plenty." Amongst the officers of the feast the Earl of Warwick was steward; the Earl of Bedford, and the Lord Hastings, comptrollers; with many other noble officers. The number of officers and servants of officers was 1,000; of cooks in the kitchen, 62; and of "other men servants, with broche turners, 115."

the death of the Earl, at the battle of Barnet, our prelate was accused of treason, imprisoned four years, and died of a broken heart soon after his liberation, June 8, 1476, and was buried at York. He had been Lord Chancellor of England.

*Lawrence Booths*, Provost of Beverley, Chancellor of the University of Cambridge, and Lord Chancellor of England, was translated from Durham, September 1, 1476. He purchased the Manor of Battersea, in Surrey, and settled it on the Church of York. He died on the 19th of May, 1480, and his remains were interred at Southwell, in which place he had died.

*Thomas Scot de Rotherham*, a native of Rotherham in this County, was translated from Lincoln, September 3, 1480. He was a Cardinal of the Roman Church, and was also for many years Lord High Chancellor of England to Edward IV., who left the cares of government very much to him. On the death of that King, he continued faithful to the Queen, for which cause he was imprisoned for some time by Richard III. Archbishop Rotheram was the second founder of Lincoln College, Oxford. He died of the plague at Cawood, on the 29th of May, 1500, and was interred in York Cathedral in a monument erected by himself.

*Thomas Savage* was translated from London, April 12, 1501. He is said to have been more of a courtier and a sportsman than an ecclesiastic. He died at Cawood, September 2, 1507, and was buried at York. On the 23rd of June, 1831, the workmen employed at the Minster discovered in the north-east aisle, a leaden coffin in which was the body of this prelate embalmed.

*Christopher Baynbridge*, or *Baynbrigge*, was translated from Durham, Sept. 12, 1508. He was Henry the Eighth's Ambassador to the Court of Rome, where he was raised to the dignity of a Cardinal. He died and was buried at Rome, in July, 1514.

*Cardinal Wolsey*. This celebrated personage so well known in English history was the next Archbishop of York. Thomas Wolsey, or, as it was anciently called, Wuley, was born at Ipswich, in Suffolk, in March, 1471. His parents were in humble circumstances, and he is generally reviled as "the butcher's son." Of the occupation of his father nothing is known which can be depended upon as certain, but he could scarcely be considered as moving in the lowest sphere, since, in his will, he devised to his wife all his "lands and tenements," in one parish, and his "free and bond lands," in another. He must therefore have been a person of good property. After receiving the rudiments of his education at a country grammar school, Wolsey entered Magdalen College, Oxford, in 1485, and at the early age of fifteen he was admitted to the degree of B.A., which gained him the appellation of "the

boy bachelor." He soon obtained his degree of M.A., and was afterwards elected a Fellow of the College, and appointed Master of Magdalen School. In the year 1500 Wolsey left the University, having been presented to the Rectory of Lynington, in Somersetshire, by the Marquis of Dorset, whose three sons were under his tuition whilst he was Master of Magdalen School. His patron, the Marquis, died in 1501, and Wolsey was soon after appointed domestic Chaplain to Dean, Archbishop of Canterbury. Upon the death of that prelate in 1503, he (Wolsey) became Chaplain to Sir John Naupant, or Naufan, Treasurer of Calais, who took him in his retinue to that place; and upon his return to England strongly recommended him to King Henry VII., who appointed him one of his Chaplains, and sent him as Ambassador to the Court of Germany. In 1505 he was presented to the Rectory of Redgrave; in 1508 he was made Dean of Lincoln, and in the year following Prebendary of Walton Brinold, and Prebendary of Stow, in the same Cathedral. Soon after the accession of Henry VIII., Wolsey, who had been that Monarch's sponsor, was taken into the royal service, and was by degrees entrusted with the highest offices of state. Riches and dignities were now heaped upon him in great profusion. From 1511 to 1514 he was made Canon of Windsor; first Prebendary, then Dean of York; Dean of Hereford; Precentor of St. Paul's; and Bishop of Tournay, in Flanders. In 1514 he became Bishop of Lincoln; and on the 5th of August in the same year, Archbishop of York. In September, 1515, he was raised to the Cardinalate by Pope Leo. X., and on the resignation of Archbishop Warham, of Canterbury, in 1516, he was made Lord High Chancellor of England. The splendour of his domestic establishments, and the dignified pageantry with which he uniformly appeared in public, raised the envy of his contemporaries. His extraordinary talent gave him such immense influence with his Sovereign, that it was he who might be said, directed the movement and the whole machinery of the State; and during some years he was not only the richest, but likewise the most powerful subject in Europe. The princely liberality with which he encouraged the arts, and inculcated a love of letters at a period when learning was struggling against disrepute, has procured for him the admiration of posterity.

That magnificent establishment, Christ Church College, Oxford, or, as it has frequently been called "Cardinal's College," was originally founded by him, and though he lost the favour of the King before its completion, it is still a lasting monument of his greatness and love of learning. He also established a school, and made arrangements for the foundation of a College at Ipswich, his native town, which is honourable to him, both as showing his

zeal in the matter of education, and that he was not ashamed of his humble birth.

During the debate about the legality of the King's marriage with Catherine of Arragon, Wolsey espoused the cause of the injured Queen, and thereby incurred the displeasure of his Sovereign. With the Queen he fell from power; and his immense influence and wealth exciting the jealousy of the King, he was attainted of high treason in 1529, and despoiled of all his dignities, and all his lands and goods were confiscated. However, on the 12th of February of the year following, the King granted him a remarkably full and complete pardon, and restored part of his plate and furniture, and also the revenues of his Archbishopric, with a command that he should henceforth reside in his Diocese of York. In the spring of the same year he retired to his Palace at Cawood, and though he spent the following summer in great hospitality, yet the six months he passed there were probably among the best spent in his life. He visited the little country Churches, reforming abuses, and frequently preaching and administering the Sacraments, and such of the edifices as were in a ruinous condition, he ordered to be restored; by these means he became very popular in his diocese. As he had never been formally enthroned, and, it is said, had never even visited his own Cathedral, he therefore fixed Nov. 7th, in the same year, for the ceremony to take place. Great preparations were made for it, and also for the banquet which was to be given at the Mansion House, and for which large presents of venison and game were made by the surrounding nobility. However, in the latter end of October, the Cardinal was suddenly and unexpectedly arrested on a charge of treason, by the Earl of Northumberland, and on his way to London, whither he was being conveyed as a prisoner, he was seized with dysentery, and died at the Abbey of Leicester, where he had taken shelter; on the 29th of November, 1530, in the fiftieth year of his age. His body was buried in St. Mary's Chapel, within the precincts of the Abbey Church, and neither tomb, nor stone, nor mound, marks his last resting place. A black marble sarcophagus made by his order, and probably designed as the depository of his own remains, surmounts the tomb of Nelson, in the crypt of St. Paul's Cathedral, London.

And now that the mists of prejudice and bigotry, in which our forefathers groped their way in the world of letters, are dispelled, and the pages of Hume and Burnet alone are not considered infallible guides; now that "that period of stereotyped historical imposture" has for ever passed away, we may study the true character of this remarkable prelate, in the works of other and less prejudiced historians. "Many of the calumnious stories which

have come down to us," says a recent writer, "are no doubt to be attributed to the malignancy of the Cardinal's enemies, whose jealousy made them most unscrupulous as to the means which they employed to gratify their revenge." And the same writer, after referring to the integrity of Wolsey, adds, "but priests and prelates are men, not angels; and those who know anything of the frailty of our common human humanity, will not be disposed to judge harshly of one who filled a position of such exceeding difficulty, and who has so many claims to our gratitude and respect. The combination of sacred and temporal offices in one person (however advantageous in many respects, or desirable at that time), was probably in itself an occasion of much difficulty; for it is obvious that the two classes of duties—to God and the Church on the one hand, and the King and state on the other—must often clash and seem irreconcilable."

Cavendish, in his *Life of the Cardinal of York*, tells us that "he kept a noble house, where was both plenty of meat and drink for all comers, and also much alms given at the gate to the poor. He used much charity and clemency amongst his tenants," he continues, "for he was very much familiar among all persons, and glad at any time when he might do them good." Again, he tells us that the Cardinal heard two masses every day before proceeding to Westminster Hall as Lord Chancellor, besides reciting his office with one of his chaplains; and, he adds, that "however weighty business he had on hand, he never went to bed with so much as a single collect of his office unsaid." In the Court of Chancery, according to this author, he "judged every one according to their merits and deserts." "Most commonly," says Cavendish, in another place, "he would travel every Sunday to some poor parish Church, and would there say his Divine Office, and either say or hear mass, and cause one of his chaplains to preach the word of God unto the people. And that done, he would dine in some honest house in the town, where should be distributed to the people a great alms of meat and drink; or of money to supply the want of meat, if the numbers of the poor did so exceed in necessity. And thus with other good deeds practising and exercising himself during his abode there, as making of love days and agreements between party and party being at variance, he daily frequented himself thereabouts." There would be nothing extraordinary in all this, had Wolsey been nothing more than an ordinary Bishop; and in forming a proper estimate of his character, we ought to bear in mind that he was courted by the greatest European Monarchs who sought the friendship and alliance of England; that his train, on occasions of state, consisted of not less than five hundred servants, amongst whom were ten lords, fifteen



knights, and forty esquires; that when he celebrated Divine Service pontifically, Dukes and Earls were amongst his lay attendants at the altar, and the greatest nobles esteemed it an honour to assist at these celebrations.

In one of the despatches of the Venetian Ambassador, Sebastian Guistiman, who represented the Doge at the Court of Henry VIII., the Ambassador says, "The Chancellor" meaning Wolsey "is pensive, and has the reputation of being extremely just. He favours the people exceedingly, and, especially the poor—hearing their suits, and seeking to despatch them instantly. He also makes the lawyers plead gratis for all paupers." M. Audin in his *Life of Henry VIII.*, says of the Cardinal, "he had all the qualities necessary for a statesman; an instinctive idea of business; an acquaintance with men and things; the art of turning passing events to his advantage. He raised politics to the standard of a science, and his school survived him; he applied intuitively to diplomacy all those governmental theories that Machiavel has collected in his 'Prince.' He was one of the first to perceive that England—Queen of the Seas—might be mistress of the world. He augmented the English Navy, and it was during the time of his ministry, that a fleet sailed from the Thames in search of unknown lands. He was a great patron of literature, and nearly all the learned men of his day were under his protection. He invited Vives to England; offered a professor's chair to Erasmus; and made Pace's fortune. The literary men had cause to deplore his fall and death. One alone had the dastardly courage to condemn his memory, and that was the ungrateful Erasmus. What he did for Oxford remains reflecting glory upon England. Wolsey had studied architecture, and drew the designs of Hampton Court with his own hand."

The following is Guizot's portrait of our Cardinal Archbishop:—"If it be true that no man by less effort ever attained so much dignity as Cardinal Wolsey, few have been thrown down from so great a height under the imputation of smaller crimes. He was undoubtedly a character of the most splendid class. Haughty, ambitious, masterly, and magnificent, he felt himself formed for superiority; and his conduct, if not always judicious, was uniformly great. His exterior was dignified, his demeanour courtly, his discernment rapid, his eloquence commanding, and his comprehension vast and prospective. The number, variety, and magnitude of his public trusts, in all of which he was eminently distinguished, are proofs of the elastic powers of his mind, and the versatility of his talents for business. His avidity to amass wealth was contrasted with an expenditure so generous, that it lost the name of avarice, and deserved to be dignified with that of ambition. His ostentation was so richly blended with munificence and hospitality, that

it ought to be ascribed rather to a love of distinction than to vanity ; and his pride was so nearly allied to honour and justice, that it seemed to be essential to his accomplishments, as a statesman. All his undertakings showed the combining and foreseeing faculties of his genius. The League of London was the grand fundamental charter by which the European nations recovered their independence from the Pope ; and the change in the alliance of England after the battle of Pavia, was one of those rare and bold measures which may divide the opinion of the world as to their wisdom, but must command its admiration. The Cardinal's system for the reformation of the clergy was singularly liberal in policy ; for statesmen are often, by official necessity, rather the protectors than the enemies of corruption. Therefore, whether estimated by his natural endowments, his fortune, or his designs, Cardinal Wolsey must be considered as one of those great occasional men who, at distant intervals, suddenly appear surprising the world by their movements and their splendour ; and who, having agitated and altered the regular frame of society by their influence, are commemorated as the epochal characters of history."

*Edward Les*, December 10th, 1531.—This prelate, who was Lord President of the North, was seized by the insurgents concerned in the *Pilgrimage of Grace*, and obliged to take an oath of fidelity to them ; but he was afterwards pardoned for this offence. He died on the 13th of September, 1544, and was buried in York.

*Robert Holgate*, who was translated from Llandaff, was a monk favourable to the Reformation, and consequently was patronized by Henry VIII. ; but in the reign of Queen Mary he was committed to the Tower. He died in obscurity at Hemsworth, near Pontefract, in 1553. He had been some time Lord President of the North, and was the founder of the Grammar School in Ogleforth, York, called by his name.

*Nicholas Heath* was translated from Worcester, February 10th, 1555. He was a learned prelate, to whose exertions the See of York is indebted for the recovery of a great part of its present revenues. Being a Catholic, he was paronized by Queen Mary, but was deprived of his dignity by Queen Elizabeth, in 1558 ; who, however, allowed him to retire to his estate at Cobham, in Surrey, where he died, and was buried. He had been Lord High Chancellor of England.

*Thomas Young*, the first Protestant Archbishop of York, was Lord President of the North, and was translated from St. Davids on the 25th of February, 1561. "A disgraceful character," writes Allen, "who took down the

great hall in the Palace at York, for the sake of the lead which covered it." He died at Sheffield, June 26th, 1568, and was buried at York.

*Edmund Grindall*, the next prelate, was a native of Hensingham, near Whitehaven. He was translated from London, June 9th, 1570, and advanced to Canterbury in 1576. He founded and endowed a Grammar School at St. Bees, Cumberland, in 1588; and he died on the 6th of July in the same year, and was buried in the Chancel of Croydon Church.

*Edwin Sandys*, or *Sands*, was a native of St. Bees, and probably educated at the Grammar School just noticed. He was author of *Europa Syeculum*, and founder of Hawkshead School. He was translated from London, January 25th, 1577; died August 8th, 1588, and was buried at Southwell. Archbishop Sandys had been imprisoned for preaching in defence of Lady Jane Grey's title to the throne.

*John Piers* was translated from Salisbury, February 27th, 1558. He died at Bishopthorpe on the 28th of September, 1594, and was buried at York.

*Matthew Hutton*, a man of humble origin, but of great merit, was translated from Durham, March 24th, 1594. He died January 15th, 1606, and was interred at York.

*Tobias Matthew* was translated from Durham, March 24th, 1594. He died January 15th, 1628, and was interred at York. This prelate was one of the most eloquent preachers of his day, and being a great wit, was a favourite at the Court of both Elizabeth and James I. He kept an account of all the sermons he preached, by which it appears that while Dean of Durham, he preached 721 sermons; when Bishop of Durham, 550; and when Archbishop of York, 721; in all, no less than 1,992 sermons after he had become a dignitary of the Church.

*George Montaigne*, or *Mountain*, was the son of a small farmer at Cawood, who rose to be successively Bishop of London, and Durham, and Archbishop of York; to the latter See he was elected June 6th, 1628, and enthroned October 4th. "But," says Fuller, "he was scarce warm in his Church, than cold in his coffin," for he died November 6th, of the same year, at Cawood, the place of his nativity, and was buried there.\*

\* It is related that when the See of York became vacant, Charles I. had many claimants for it, but was undivided respecting its disposal, and sought the advice of Mountain (then Bishop of Durham) in his difficulty. The Bishop modestly answered that if his Majesty had faith like a grain of mustard seed, he would say to this *Mountain* be thou removed into yonder *Sea*, and it would obey. The King replied that miracles had ceased, and asked what had faith to do in this point? To convince your Majesty to the contrary, said the Bishop, be only pleased to say to this *Mountain* (pointing to him-

*Samuel Harsnett* was translated from Norwich, April 23rd, 1629; died May 18th, 1691; and was interred at Chigwell, in Essex, where he had died.

*Richard Neill*, a prelate of humble origin, was translated from Winchester, April 16th, 1632. He died on the 31st of October, 1640, and was buried at York.

*John Williams* was translated from Lincoln, June 27th, 1642. Whilst he filled the latter See he wrote a book called "The Holy Table," which gave so much offence to Archbishop Laud, that he (Laud) commenced a prosecution against him, and he was sentenced to a term of imprisonment, in the Tower, and to pay a fine of £10,000. He was liberated in 1640, and after receiving the Archbishopric of York, he was again imprisoned in the Tower, along with nine other prelates, by order of the Long Parliament, for a cause which is already stated at page 224 of this volume. From being a strenuous Royalist, he became a zealous Parliamentary, and commanded at the Siege of Abergavenny, in South Wales, and reduced that fortress to the obedience of Parliament. "He will always be memorable in English history," says Lord Campbell, "as the last of a long line of eminent ecclesiastics, who, with rare intervals, held for many centuries the highest judicial office in the Kingdom, and exercised a powerful influence over the destinies of the nation.\* Archbishop Williams died on the anniversary of his birth the 25th of March, 1650, aged 68, and was buried at Llandegay, about two miles from Bangor.

For ten years during the Commonwealth this See was vacant, but monarchy and episcopacy were again raised to great splendour after the Restoration. All authority was acknowledged to be vested in the King; and the Bishops were allowed to resume their seats in the House of Peers. In 1661 an *Act of Uniformity* was passed, which required every Clergyman who had not received episcopal ordination, to be ordained, and to declare his assent to everything contained in the *Book of Common Prayer*, and to take the canonical oath of obedience; and such as refused to conform to the precepts of this act, were *ipso facto* deprived.

*Accepted Frewen*, was translated from Coventry and Lichfield, to York, October 11th, 1660. This prelate seems to have been somewhat eccentric, for he lived in a state of celibacy, and his horror of the "fair sex" was so

self), be thou removed into yonder See (alluding to the See of York), and I am sure your Majesty will forthwith be obeyed. The King, smiling, took the hint, and said, then *Mountain* I will remove thee; and he accordingly sent him down Lord Archbishop.

\* Lord Campbell's *Lives of the Lord Chancellors*, vol. ii., p. 504.

great that he would not even have a female servant in his house. He died on the 28th of March, 1664, and was buried at York.

*Richard Sterne* was translated from the See of Carlisle, June 10th, 1664. He was born at Mansfield, in Nottinghamshire, and was a noted Royalist. He had been Chaplain to Archbishop Laud, whom he attended at the fatal scaffold; and he was himself a prisoner in the Tower for his adherence to the royal cause. He was the author of a Treatise on Logic, and was one of the translators of the Polyglot Bible, and he has been suspected of being the author of "The Whole Duty of Man." He died June 18th, 1683, and was buried at York.

*John Dolben*, the next Archbishop, had been a soldier in his early days, and served as an ensign at the battle of Marston Moor, where he was dangerously wounded by a musket ball. He died at York, where he was buried, on the 11th of April, 1686. The See then remained vacant for more than two years.

*Thomas Lamplugh*, a staunch supporter of the doctrines of the Church of England, and a liberal benefactor to the Cathedral, was translated from Exeter, December 19th, 1688; died May 5th, 1691; and his remains were interred at York.

*John Sharp*, 1691.—This prelate distinguished himself by his strong opposition to the Roman Catholic predilections of James II., whereby he became very unpopular at Court. He was the father of Granville Sharp. He died February 2nd, 1713, and was the last Archbishop interred in the Cathedral of York.

*Sir William Dawes*, a most exemplary prelate, was translated from the See of Chester, March 24th, 1714; he died April 30th, 1724, and was interred at the College at Cambridge, called Catherine Hall.

*Lancelot Blackburn* was translated from Exeter, December 10th, 1724; he died in 1743, and was buried in St. Margaret's Church, Westminster.

*Thomas Herring*, one of the most noted prelates of his time, was translated from the See of Bangor, April 28th, 1743. At the breaking out of the rebellion in 1745, he took an active part in arousing the country against the claims of the Pretender, and by his eloquent appeals the sum of £40,000. was soon raised for this purpose. For these services he was advanced to the Archbishopric of Canterbury in 1747. He died March 13th, 1757, and was buried at Croydon.

*Matthew Hutton* was likewise translated from Bangor, December 29th, 1747, and advanced to Canterbury in 1757. He died March 19th, 1758, and was buried at Lambeth.

*John Gilbert* was translated from Salisbury, May 28th, 1757; and died in 1761.

*Robert Hay Drummond* was translated from Salisbury, November 11th, 1761; died December 10th, 1776, and was buried at Bishopthorpe.

*William Markham*, the next prelate, was a native of Ireland, and was educated at Westminster School, of which School he was afterwards Head Master. In 1759 he was appointed Prebendary of Durham; in 1765, Dean of Rochester; in 1767, Dean of Christ Church; in 1771 he was consecrated Bishop of Chester, and was also appointed Preceptor to the Prince of Wales, afterwards George IV.; and in 1777 he was translated to the See of York. He died on the 3rd of November, 1807, aged 89, after filling this See for thirty years, and was buried in Westminster Abbey.

*The Hon. Edward Venables Vernon Harcourt, LL.D.*, the late prelate, and sixth son of George, Lord Vernon, was born on the 10th of October, 1757; educated at Westminster School, and afterwards removed to Christ Church, Oxford. He was subsequently Fellow of All Souls' College, Chaplain to the King, Prebendary of Gloucester, and Canon of Christ Church. In 1791 he was appointed to the Bishopric of Carlisle, and was translated to the See of York in January, 1808. He died at his Palace, Bishopthorpe, on the 5th of November, 1847, in the 91st year of his age, and his body was buried at Nuneham Courtney, near Oxford, the family seat of his ancestors.

*Thomas Musgrave, D.D.*, the present distinguished Archbishop of York, is son of Mr. W. Peete Musgrave, a woollen draper, &c., in Cambridge. He was born in Cambridge, in 1788; became a student of Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1806; graduated fourteenth wrangler, in 1810; and was elected Fellow of his College, which he held till 1837. He proceeded M.A., in 1813; became Lord Almoner's Professor of Arabic in 1821; was senior Proctor in 1831; was Incumbent of St. Mary the Great, in Cambridge, and has also been bursar of his College. He was consecrated Bishop of Hereford in 1837; was translated to York in 1847, and enthroned in the Cathedral of that City, on the 13th January, 1848.\* His Grace is visitor of Queen's College, Oxford,

\* The popular American writer, Ralph Waldo Emerson, who appears to have been in the Cathedral when Archbishop Musgrave was enthroned, says, in his *English Traits*:—"In York Minster, on the day of the enthronization of the new Archbishop, I heard the service of evening prayer read and chanted by the choir. It was strange to hear the pretty pastoral of the betrothal of Rebecca and Isaac, in the morning of the world, read with circumstantiality in York Minster, on the 13th January, 1848, to the decorous English audience, just fresh from *The Times* newspaper and their wine; and listening with all the devotion of national pride. That was binding old and new to some purpose. The reverence of the Scriptures is an element of civilization, for thus

Governor of the Charter House, and of Queen's College, London, and Elector of St. Augustine's College, Canterbury.

*Seat*—Bishopthorpe Palace, near York. *Town Residence*—41, Belgrave Square.

THE CARDINAL OF YORK.—*The last of the Stuarts.*—This exalted dignitary was *Henry Benedict Stuart*, brother of the Young Pretender, Charles Edward Stuart, and the last in a direct line of the Royal House of Stuart. He was born at Rome on the 26th of March, 1725; and became a priest of the Catholic Church, and was eventually raised to the dignity of the *Cardinal of York*. He was not ambitious, but rather a quiet ease-loving churchman. He lived in tranquility at Rome for nearly fifty years, but in 1798, when French bayonets drove Pope Pius VI. from the Pontifical chair, Henry Stuart fled from his splendid residences at Rome and Frascati. His days, afterwards, were days of want, his only means of subsistence being the produce of a few articles of silver plate, which he snatched away from the ruin of his property. When George III. was informed of the Cardinal Duke's poverty and pitiable situation, he ordered Lord Milton to make a remittance of £2,000., with an intimation that the Cardinal might draw for £2,000. more in the following July. It was also made known to the Cardinal that an annuity of £4,000. was at his service, so long as circumstances required it. He was spared seven years to enjoy this munificent pension, and died at Rome, in 1807, in the eighty-third year of his age.

---

## The Cathedral of York.

We have already shown that Christianity was re-introduced into Northumbria, by Paulinus, a Roman Missionary, about the year 625; that Edwin the Saxon Monarch of that ancient Kingdom was converted by him, and that the King and his whole Court were baptised by him at York, in A.D. 627. The chief residence of Edwin was at York, but at so low an ebb was the Christian religion, that there was not found a Temple within his metropolis

has the history of the world been preserved, and is preserved. Here in England every day a chapter of Genesis, and a leader in *The Times*. Another part of the same service was not insignificant. Handel's Coronation Anthem, 'God save the King,' was played by Dr. Camidge, on the organ, with sublime effect. The Minster and the music were made for each other."

suitable for the performance of the ceremony of public baptism. A small wooden Chapel or Oratory was erected for the occasion, on the site of the present glorious fane, which was dedicated to God under the invocation of St. Peter, and in this primitive building the solemn ceremony was performed.\* The ceremony over, the prelate, we are told by Bede, took care to acquaint his royal convert, that since he had become a Christian he ought to build a house of prayer more suitable to the divinity he now adored; and by the Bishop's direction he began to erect a Church of stone, in the midst of which was enclosed the above-mentioned Oratory.† But Edwin was not permitted to see the completion of the edifice which he had thus piously begun; for scarcely were the walls raised when he was slain in battle at Hatfield, near Doncaster, in 633, and Paulinus retired to the south. (See pages 80 and 388). Eanfrid, the son of Edwin's predecessor, then returned from exile, and on succeeding to the throne of Bernicia, was necessarily involved in the war against Cadwallon, by whom he was basely slain at York, when, with only twelve followers, he visited the British King at that City to sue for peace. Oswald, a zealous Christian King, the brother of Eanfrid, having slain Cadwallon, and established his own authority, undertook to complete the building of the Church at York, which he had no sooner finished in 642, than he was killed by Penda, the Pagan King of Mercia, and the newly-erected edifice was soon after severely injured by the invasions of neighbouring savage tribes. Drake says, that Oswald recommenced the building about 632, but this date is evidently too early, as Edwin was killed in 633, and Oswald did not commence his actual reign till a year afterwards. Eddius, who wrote about the year 720, tells us that at that date the building was in ruins; that the timbers of the roof were rotten, the walls decayed, the windows destitute of glass, or other material, whereby the interior was exposed to the injuries of the weather, and that the birds were the undisturbed inhabitants of the ruined structure. In this desolate condition it was found by Archbishop Wilfrid, who, about the year 674, restored it to its former grandeur. He strengthened the walls, renewed the wood work of the roof, covered it with lead, and glazed the windows.‡ This eminent prelate and

\* Gent says, that this Oratory was erected on the site of a Pagan Temple dedicated to Bellona or Diana.

† Bede's Hist. Eecl., lib. ii., ch. 14.

‡ This is one of the first instances recorded of glass windows in this country. The windows had previously derived their light from transparency of linen, or of boards pierced with many holes. Wilfrid borrowed the custom of filling the windows with glass from the Churches of Rome, which he had several times visited.



architect founded and built the Churches of Hexham and Ripon, and from their magnitude and decoration, naturally excited the admiration and praises of contemporary writers.

Bede informs us that the Cathedral of York was a square stone structure dedicated to St. Peter, the feast of which dedication was long held here annually, with great solemnity, on the first day of October, and the seven following days; but Torre tells us that "the order for making this a *double\** festival was not issued till the year 1642." The Cathedral stood and flourished with little alteration for many years, in the course of which the valuable library of Archbishop Egbert was bestowed upon it. In 741 the Church was almost if not completely destroyed by fire, and a new fabric was immediately begun by Archbishop Egbert, who was assisted by the advice of the celebrated Alcuin. Archbishop Albert, assisted by Eanbald, who succeeded him, completed the work in the most magnificent Saxon style. The latter prelate did not live long to enjoy the beautiful structure he had finished, for he died in November, 781, in ten days after its consecration. Alcuin describes the fabric as of considerable height, supported by columns and arches, covered by a vaulted roof, and provided with large windows. It had also porticoes and galleries, and thirty altars, the latter of which were adorned with various ornaments.†

\* A *Double* is a festival upon which the Antiphons are repeated entire, both before and after the psalms in the Divine Office.

*Origin of Christian Festivals.*—In the first ages of Christianity the Apostles and their successors were obliged to destroy Paganism to the last stone, and build all things from the very foundation. The heathens had their calendar; the name of some deity, some feast, seasons of rejoicing or mourning, occupied its year; and the heathens were delighted with their festivals. It was no trifling work to begin by blotting out the calendar of civilised nations, without being prepared to fill it with other memorials equally interesting. The Jews too had their calendar, but this for the greater part was abolished, for of what importance any longer to the Church were the feast of Tabernacles, of Purification, and others, occurring every month. A blank volume was in the Apostle's hands, and the duty of the early Church was to fill it up, that the Christian world might have by degrees, the whole year filled with suggestions useful to the Christian soul. They began immediately to fill up the blank calendar with subjects dear to every Christian heart, viz:—the great festivals of Our Lord—his Birth, Crucifixion, Resurrection, Ascension and the Coming of the Holy Ghost. After the Apostles had passed from earth, certain days were set apart to praise God for their triumphs, and to honour them in various ways, as well as to implore their intercession; and age after age festivals were appointed in honour of Christian Martyrs and Confessors, and holy personages. Thus was our calendar formed. After the Reformation the vacancies in the calendar of the Church of England were filled up by political or social occurrences.

† Britton's York Cathedral, p. 28.

It may appear surprising that these Archbishops were well skilled in architecture, but this surprise will vanish when we reflect that it was customary for the monks and ecclesiastics in those days to study the science of architecture, and build their own Abbeys, Cathedrals, and Churches.

In the year 1069, as we have already seen at page 119 of this volume, the native inhabitants, aided by the Danes, in their attempt to throw off the yoke of the Conqueror, set fire to the suburbs, which spreading to the City, communicated to the Cathedral, and involved them all in one common ruin. William, who on entering the City, found the Church in ruins, seized its revenues, and expelled the Canons from their stalls. He, however, soon afterwards made Thomas, his Chaplain and Treasurer, Archbishop of the Province, and restored the revenues, &c., to the Church. By this prelate the Cathedral was soon restored; and he afterwards rebuilt it on a larger scale, in the Norman style, about the year 1080. But its prosperity was of short duration, for it shared a similar fate to his predecessor, and was partly burnt down by an accidental fire in 1137. Efforts were soon after made to further the restoration of the ruined Cathedral, and Joceline, Bishop of Sarum, granted an *Indulgence* of forty days, or a remission of forty days canonical penance, to penitents who contributed towards it.\* Still but little appears to have been effected for more than forty years, when Archbishop

\* An *Indulgence*, according to the definition of the Catholic Church (and we must allow that she ought to be the best judge of her own doctrine), is *not the pardon* of any sin; much less is it a *licence* to commit sin; it is merely a relaxation of the *temporal* punishment that is due to sin, after its *guilt* and the *eternal* punishment due to that guilt is remitted by sincere repentance and humble confession. In other words, it is a free release from the external satisfactory works of penance, in consideration of the penitent's internal fervour. The ancient discipline of the Church obliged great sinners, when they repented, to perform certain penances for certain lengths of time, according to the nature and number of their transgressions; some were obliged to fast upon one meal each day, or recite certain prayers, or perform some other good works, for a number of days, months, or years, and some great public sinners were obliged to perform such works during the term of their natural lives. Now an indulgence of forty days, or one hundred days, or of a year, or of seven years, is a free release or remission of as much of the temporal punishment due to sin, as would be satisfied by the performance of the ancient canonical penances for either of these periods. In a word, it is a commutation of the canonical penances for prayers, alms deeds, or other good works—a substitution of one satisfaction for another—of a longer penance for a shorter, hence it is styled an indulgence or favour done to the penitent. Thus an indulgence has nothing to do with the pardon of sin, nor with the eternal punishments due to sin, but only with that debt of temporal penance which the Church maintains the sinner has to discharge after the eternal guilt of his sin is forgiven. Indulgences are of two kinds—*partial* and *plenary*—a partial indulgence is explained above; and a plenary indulgence is a remission of the *whole* of the debt of temporal punishment due to the sin of the penitent.

Roger rebuilt the choir about the year 1171, in the Norman style, to correspond with the rest of the building.

*Ecclesiastical Architecture.* Having now arrived at the period when the fabric of the Cathedral, as it at present stands, was commenced, we shall here glance briefly at the manner of building and styles of architecture applied in the construction of ancient Churches in this country. The style of Church building which prevailed in Britain previous to the Norman Conquest is commonly designated the Saxon, or Anglo-Saxon.

The primitive *Churches of the Anglo-Saxons* were usually oblong buildings without the elevation of any one part to a greater altitude than the rest, but generally terminating in a semicircle at the east end, like the Basilicæ, or Courts of Justice in the great Cities in the Roman Empire. From the remains of the Saxon Church of Ely, which was built under the direction of St. Wilfrid, Archbishop of York, the Rev. J. Bentham found that it was an oblong building of two stories, with aisles on each side, but without tower or transept, and divided by a wall into two parts, which communicated with each other by a low arched opening. The pillars which supported it were alternately circular and octagonal; the arches circular, and highly ornamented with the characteristic decorations of the Saxon style. When towers were first built they rose little higher than the roof, and, according to Grose, served principally as lanterns for the admission of light. These stately adjuncts were first built at the west end of the Churches, but in after times they were erected in different parts of the fabric, and they had under them crypts or *undercrofts*, used sometimes as Chapels and burial places, and also for the preservation of relics and other articles esteemed valuable by the ecclesiastics of those times. One of the objects for which the towers of Churches were constructed was to exhibit a light to the benighted traveller on dark nights. Dr. Lingard thinks that the early towers were distinct from the Church.

There were *upper crofts* in those early Churches, as well as under crofts—the space between the ceiling and the pitched roof. The vestments, sacred vessels, and sometimes the valuables of the inhabitants, were lodged in the upper crofts and towers of the Churches, in times of danger, as was the case during the terrible incursions of the Danes; and during such times the Churches were in reality parochial fortresses. The entrances into the upper crofts being by narrow stairs or ladders, through stone trap doors, the plunderers did not easily reach them, and hence they were invaluable as places of security. The windows of the Saxon Churches were round headed, the arches circular, and the pillars were generally round and massy with regular Capitals.

The era of the *Anglo-Norman Architecture* is stated to have extended from the period of the Conquest to the death of King Stephen in 1154. The general plan of the latest Saxon and earliest Norman Churches was the same, but the Norman Churches were of far greater magnificence than the Saxon Churches. The chief entrance was at the west end of the nave, and at the upper end of the nave was a cross or transept, and beyond that, eastward, was the choir or chancel.\* Most of the Abbey Churches, and many of the parochial Churches, were either wholly rebuilt, or greatly improved and enlarged in about a century after the Norman Conquest. Large towers or steeples were placed on four arches on the centre of Conventual Churches, about that time, and the length of the cross or transept, from north to south, was commonly equal to about one-half of the length of the whole fabric from east to west. The Norman towers were covered as platforms, with battlements, or plain parapet walls. The circular arches, sometimes with zig-zag sculpture, and always with massive circular pillars, and thick walls, were continued to the end of the reign of Henry I. (1134).

The *Gothic Style of Architecture* is generally arranged into three divisions, the Early English, the Decorated, and the Perpendicular. The *Early Pointed* or *Early English* style prevailed during a period of 118 years, from the reign of Henry II. (1189) to the end of the reign of Edward I. (1307). It is distinguished by pointed arches, and long narrow lancet-headed windows without mullions; and a peculiar ornament, which, from its resemblance to the teeth of a shark, is called the toothed ornament. In the latter part of the twelfth century, the short solid columns and semicircular arches were still often retained, and mixed with the pointed arches; but in the thirteenth century pointed arches were generally adopted, and prominent buttresses, ending in spires or pinnacles, were added to the exterior walls. Dr. Whitaker, in his *History of Craven*, tells us that in the struggle between the Norman and Early Gothic styles, which took place in the reign of King Stephen, it is not uncommon to find in Churches of that period, massy columns, and pointed arches, and round-headed doors and windows.

The second division of the Gothic style is called the *Decorated English*, and reached to the end of the reign of Edward III., in 1377, and perhaps from ten to fifteen years longer—somewhere about seventy years altogether. This style is distinguished by its large windows, with pointed arches, divided by mullions, and the tracery in flowing lines forming circles, arches, and

\* "Chancel, *cancellus*, seemeth properly to be so called, a *cancellis*, from the lattice-work partition between the quire and the body of the Church, so framed as to separate the one from the other, but not to intercept the sight." Burn's *Eccles. Law*, vol. i. p. 342.

other figures not running perpendicularly; its ornaments numerous, and very delicately carved.

*Perpendicular English* is the term by which the third division of Gothic architecture is known. This style appears to have been in use, though much debased, even as far as to 1630, or 1640, but only in additions; probably the latest whole building in this style is not later than the time of Henry VIII. The name clearly designates this style, for the mullions of the windows, and the ornamental panellings run in perpendicular lines, and form a complete distinction from the Decorated or Early English styles.

THE PRESENT MINSTER.—In the year 1215 the munificent Archbishop Walter de Grey came to the Archiepiscopal throne, and finding his Church inferior in magnificence to many of the ecclesiastical edifices of the day, he determined to rebuild it on a larger and grander scale, and commenced accordingly with the present *South Transept*, which appears to have been completed during his life time. He prosecuted his design with much energy, giving largely from his own funds towards it, granting indulgences to penitents, and urging the faithful to aid him in his efforts to beautify the structure.

In 1260 John le Romayne, Treasurer of the Cathedral, completed the erection of the *North Transept*. He also raised a handsome bell tower in the place now occupied by the great lantern tower. The old Norman nave, not now corresponding with the beautiful early English transepts, it was determined that it should be pulled down; and Archbishop Romayne, son of the above-named Treasurer, personally laid the foundation of the present *Nave*, with great solemnity, on the 7th of April, 1291. The materials for building the nave (and for the whole of the Church, according to some authorities), were contributed by Robert de Vavasour, from St. Peter's quarry on his estate near Tadcaster;\* and by William de Percy, of Bolton, from his woods at

\* There appears to be no doubt that the stone was taken from the quarries of Hasslewood, "in proof whereof, and there is good evidence of it in the hands of Vavasore, out of a little quarry within the manor of Hasslewood hath been taken the Cathedral Church of York, the Minsters of Howden, Selby, Beverley, &c."—*Appendix to Leland, vol. iii., Hearne's edit., p. 103.* Camden says, that "near Hesslewood, within twelve miles of York, lieth a most famous quarry of stone, called Peter's Post, for that with the stones hewed out of it, by the liberal grant of the Vavasors, that stately and sumptuous church of St. Peter's at York was re-edify'd."

It appears by an old deed that *Robert le Vavasour* granted to God, St. Peter, and the Church of York, for the health of his own soul, and the souls of his wife *Julian*, and his ancestors, full and free use of his quarry near *Tadcaster* in *Thevedale*, with liberty to take and carry thence a sufficient quantity of stone for the fabric of this Church, as oft as they had need to repair, re-edify, or enlarge the same. Likewise *Robert de Percy*,

that place. The memory of the beneficence of each is preserved by statues erected at the western end of the building, and in other memorials in the interior of the Church.

Archbishop William de Melton was the next founder. In 1388 he completed the *West Front*. For this purpose he granted an indulgence of forty days, "to all such well disposed people as pleased to extend their charitable contributions towards the building of the late prostrate fabric, whereby he might be the better enabled to finish so noble a structure then newly began." Besides the large contributions which he was certain to receive by means of this indulgence, it is said that he expended a large sum out of his own money, and the other prelates also contributed largely out of their own private fortunes. But the great benefactor of the Cathedral was Archbishop Thoresby. That prelate seeing that the Norman Choir built by Archbishop Roger did not harmonize with the other parts of the Church, and considering that there was no place in the Church "where our Lady's mass, the glorious mother of God, could decently be celebrated," determined to rebuild the east end, or choir; and thereby finishing the whole fabric in the same style of architecture as well as magnificence. Accordingly all the machinery for raising public contributions by the Church was put in motion, and 'tis said that the Archbishop himself devoted of his own income about £2,400., or £200. annually—a large sum in those days—in pursuance of the work. He also pulled down the Archiepiscopal Mansion of Sherburn Hall, and supplied the materials for the use of the Minster. Torre says, that letters mandatory, dated *Festo. S. Mich. Anno. 1355*, were likewise issued from the Chapter of York, directed to all Rectors, Vicars, and Parochial Chaplains, within the respective prebends, dignity, and the community of the Church, enjoining them by virtue of their canonical obedience, and under pain of the greater excommunication, to suffer their collectors in their Chapelries and parishes to ask and gather the charitable alms of the people, for the use of the fabric of this Church.

Accordingly the first stone of the *New Choir* was laid by the Archbishop at the east end, on the 19th of July, 1361. The great liberality of Thoresby did not surpass the generosity of the public; the donations continued to increase, till the Archbishop found himself enabled not only to rebuild the choir, but also to take down the central steeple erected by John le Romayne,

Lord of Boulton, granted to John, Archbishop of York, free liberty for the mariners or carters to carry the fabric stone from Tadcaster, either by land or water, through his grounds lying along the river Quarfe (*Wharfe*), or up that river to York; and also his wood at Boulton, for roofing the new building.

which was likewise thought inferior to the rest of the edifice, and to erect in its place the present elegant lantern tower. Walter Skirlaw, Prebendary of Fenton, Archdeacon of the East Riding, and afterwards Bishop of Durham,\* gave a very munificent donation for the latter purpose. The old steeple was accordingly taken down in 1370, and the erection of the present majestic *Central Tower* begun; but nearly eight years elapsed before it was finally completed.†

According to Drake the present towers at the west end appear to have been raised by John de Birmingham, Treasurer of the Church, about the year 1402.‡ The rest of the structure was finished between 1405, when Archbishop Bowett (whose arms appear in the sculpture, and on the window) was appointed to the See, and 1426, when the Dean and Chapter granted, out of their revenues, a full tenth to the use of the fabric then newly built.§ In addition to the means already mentioned for raising the supplies from time to time, for erecting the Cathedral, bulls apostolical, granting indulgences, were issued by Popes Innocent VI. and Urban V. and VI., and on one of these occasions a kind of income tax, of five per cent., was imposed on ecclesiastical benefices, for three years, for the necessary repairs and re-edifications.

The building now used as a vestry was anciently a Chapel, founded by Archbishop de la Zouche about the year 1350,|| who intended it for the place of his interment, but he died before it was finished. The original building was demolished at the time of the new erection of the choir, and the present

\* From Anthony A'Wood's History of the University of Oxford, we learn the following particulars of this prelate:—He was the son of a sieve-maker, at Skirlaw, in Holderness, Yorkshire. At an early age he ran away from his father's house, and came to Oxford, where he partook of William of Durham's benefaction in University College, and distinguished himself so much by his learning, that he rose to be made successively Bishop of Lichfield and Coventry, Wells, and Durham. It is added that his parents were ignorant of his fate till he was settled at Durham, when he sent his steward to Skirlaw to bring them to him, if they were alive, and then made a provision for them. He appears, continues Wood, to have been an eminent architect, as the centre tower of York Minster is said to have been built under his superintendance, when he was Archdeacon of the East Riding. He died in 1406, and was buried in the Cathedral of Durham.

† The wages of workmen about this time were 3d. a day to a master mason or carpenter, and 1½d. to their "knaves," as their journeymen were then called. A pound's worth of silver then was a pound weight, which is equal to £4. of our present money, and one penny then would purchase as much corn as 20d. now, bringing the artizans' wages to the rate of 2s. 6d. a day.

‡ Drake's Ebor., p. 485.

§ Torre's MSS., p. 7.

|| Stubbs' Chron. Pontif. Ebor. in vita Gul. Zouch.

one was raised in its stead by the executors of Zouche, and endowed as a Chantry for prayers for the soul of that prelate.

Of all the different parts of this magnificent structure, the very elegant *Chapter House* is the only one which the date is totally unknown. No records extant give any account of the time of its erection, but from the style of architecture, Drake and others conjecture that it is to be ascribed to Walter de Grey; and especially as a figure in the window over the entrance corresponds with the representation of that prelate on his tomb, and the arms of several of his contemporaries are painted in some of the other windows. But Mr. Allen thinks that this part of the Church, with its vestibule, is more probably of the reign of Edward III.

The following is the chronological order of the dates of the erection of the several parts of the present fabric, on the authority of Mr. John Britton :\*—*South Transept*, begun by Archbishop Walter de Grey, in the reign of Henry III., A.D. 1227; *North Transept*, by John le Romayne, 1260; *Chapter House*, about the same time; *Nave*, by Archbishop le Romayne, in the reign of Edward I., 1291; *Choir*, by Archbishop Thoresby, in the reign of Edward III., 1352; *Great Central Tower*, about the same time; and the *Two West Towers*, built about 1402. The whole fabric was finished about the year 1426.

Thus within the space of 200 years this superb Cathedral was completed in the form and dimensions in which it appears at this day. The styles of architecture of the various parts of the building are as follows :—The Crypt, chiefly Norman; North and South Transept, Early English; Nave and West Front of Nave, Decorated; Choir, Lady Chapel, Central Tower, and the Towers at the west end, Perpendicular; Chapter House, Decorated.†

The following contracts are entered in the books of the Church, and they are also noticed in Torre's MSS. :—"On Monday next, after the feast of St. Agatha the Virgin, celebrated February 5th, 1338 (12th Edward III.), it was

\* Britton's *Antiquities of York Cathedral*, p. 83.

† According to Browne's *History of York Minster*, the dates of its erection are as under. For the names of the Archbishops in whose times the several parts were built, as well as of the contemporaneous Kings, see the table commencing at page 383 of this volume. The *Original Church* of stone commenced A.D. 627; restored 670; injured by fire, 741; rebuilt 1080; injured by fire, 1187; and rebuilt or repaired in 1170.

The *Present Cathedral*.—The South Transept erected about the year 1220; North Transept erected from 1250 to 1270; Chapter House, from 1280 to 1340; Vestibule to Chapter House, from 1335 to 1350; Nave, 1291 to 1360; Eastern portion of the Choir, 1361 to 1415; Western portion of the Choir, 1419 to 1472; South-west Bell Tower, 1433 to 1450; North-west Bell Tower, 1450 to 1474; the Great Tower, 1460 to 1472; and the Organ Screen, from 1476 to 1516.



covenanted by indenture, that Thos. de Boreston, vicar choral, should at his own proper costs glaze two windows in the Cathedral Church, viz., on each side one (west end of nave), find all the glass for the same, and pay the workmen their wages for the finishing thereof. Thos. de Ludham, Custos of the fabric, became bound to pay him twenty-two marks sterling, viz., eleven marks for each window." Likewise in 1398 another indenture was made between one Robert, a glazier, on the one part, and Thos. de Boreston, Custos of the fabric, on the other, for the making of a window at the west gable of this Cathedral Church, and to find all sorts of glass for the same, and for doing the work the said Thomas was to pay him sixpence per foot for white, and twelvecence per foot for coloured glass.

The substance of a singular contract for glazing and painting the great eastern window is also preserved in Torre's MSS. The indenture, which is dated 10th of August, 1405, is between John Thornton, of Coventry, glazier, and the Dean and Chapter. The painting was to be executed with his own hands; and the work to be finished in three years; and his pay was four shillings per week, and five pounds sterling at the end of each of the three years; and if he performed the work to the satisfaction of his employers, he was to receive the further sum of ten pounds.

There does not seem to have been much alteration in the Minster from the time of its completion, till we come to the period of the Reformation, when several of the Chantries and altars, together with the shrine of St. William, were removed.\* Some of these were however restored in Mary's reign; but all were cleared away in the reign of Elizabeth.

The pavement of the Cathedral is of recent date; anciently it consisted (chiefly) of the gravestones of the Bishops and other ecclesiastics. "At the period of the Reformation," says Mr. Britton, "the furious zeal which demolished so many beautiful monuments of antiquity, did not spare York Cathedral; nor did the fauatics of Cromwell's time omit here their pious practices of destroying the figures and epitaphs on the tombs, and stealing the brasses. The numerous gravestones stripped of their ornaments, and otherwise injured, disfigured the Church; the old pavement was therefore taken up, and the present one laid down in 1736, according to a plan by Mr. Kent, under the direction of Lord Burlington. The stone for the purpose was the donation of Sir Edward Gascoigne, of Parlington, from his quarry at

\* There were more than forty Chantries, and about thirty altars dispersed in several places of this Cathedral, but it is as difficult in this day to assign the respective situations of a great many of them, as it is to find out the lands with which the Chantries were originally endowed.

Huddleston, in Yorkshire; and even some of the old marble gravestones were cut up and appropriated to this work. The expenses amounting to £2,500. were defrayed by a subscription among the noblemen and gentlemen of Yorkshire. It is however to be regretted that the noble amateur did not adapt the design of his pavement to the style and character of the edifice; instead of disposing of it in a sort of Roman pattern."

During the re-paving of the Church, some curious rings of ruby and sapphire, set in gold, belonging to those whose mortal remains had mixed with their parent dust, were discovered, and are now shown in the vestry.

Since the period of the Commonwealth to the beginning of the year 1829, there is nothing particularly worth recording in the history of the Minster. But on the 2nd of February in that year the magnificent choir was destroyed by fire, kindled by the hand of an incendiary. On Sunday afternoon, February 1st, the usual service was performed in the choir at four o'clock, and in the evening (it being Candlemas-eve) the ringers were in the Church till about half-past six. About four o'clock on Monday morning a man passing through the Minster Yard saw a light in the building, but supposing that it might arise from workmen in the edifice, it excited no suspicion in his mind. About seven o'clock a fire was discovered in the choir, in a rather singular manner. A young chorister of the name of Swinbank, in passing through the Minster Yard, slipped upon the ice and fell on his back. Whilst in this position he saw a quantity of smoke issue from the roof of the Minster. He immediately gave the alarm to the key keeper, and upon the door being opened the whole building was found to be filled with a dense smoke, and the curious and interesting wood work of the choir was extensively on fire. The flames rapidly spread over the whole of that beautiful collection of carved oak pews and tracery, which had till then exhibited the taste and wealth of our forefathers. In a short time the workmen and others assembled, and all the engines in the City were on the spot. Several individuals succeeded in carrying out cushions and books from the north side of the choir, and the curious old chair which stood within the rails of the altar. The brass eagle was removed with great difficulty, owing to its weight and the suffocating effects of the smoke. The Communion table was removed in time to save it, but the plate, which was kept in a secret place in the choir, was found to have been melted into shapeless masses. When the organ caught fire, an appalling noise, occasioned by the action of the air in the pipes upon the flames, reverberated through the building, and struck with awe all who heard it. This noble organ, which was said to be unequalled for tone and power by any instrument in the world, was totally consumed, with a valuable collection

of music which was deposited in the organ loft, and much of which being in manuscript cannot be replaced. By nine o'clock the entire choir was on fire, and the roof began to fall in large masses, with horrid and deafening crashes, the melted lead pouring down in torrents. The engines were scarcely able to check the flames, until they were partly stifled by the falling of the heavy materials of the roof and ceiling. At eleven o'clock the whole roof had come down, and then the fire began rapidly to be got under; and by two o'clock all danger of further mischief from the flames was at an end. By extraordinary efforts the beautiful screen, which divides the nave from the choir, was saved from destruction. During the afternoon the Cathedral and its precincts presented a melancholy spectacle. The floor of the nave was strewed with fragments of the roof which had been brought from the choir; and against one of the pillars laid the remains of the organ, consisting of some fragments of the gilt pipes, and a portion of the iron work. The Minster Yard was thickly strewed with the fragments of the roof, blackened in the fire, and reduced to the consistency of charcoal.

By this great fire the roof of the choir was entirely destroyed, as well as the organ, tabernacle work, and several of the monuments were either totally destroyed or very much injured. The roofs of the side aisles of the choir being groined with stone, did not take fire, and the great east window was scarcely touched. The fine screen between the choir and Lady Chapel was very much injured; and the clustered columns, arches, &c., were slightly injured.

Many reports obtained circulation relative to the origin of the fire; but a committee of enquiry having been formed, it was ascertained that the rope was cut from the bell which is rung for prayers; and it had the appearance of having been cut with a stone, the end being very much chafed. A knotted rope was then found attached to the far window of the North Transept, and it was ascertained that the window was opened from the interior. A bunch of matches, burnt at both ends, was found under the rubbish of the burnt organ; and a pair of shoemaker's pincers on the stool of the window, out of which the knotted rope was suspended. It was now quite evident that the destruction of the noble edifice was the work of an incendiary. A shoemaker, who resided at Aldwark (a street in the City), owned the pincers as his, and this discovery, connected with other circumstances, formed a chain of evidence of such a conclusive nature, as left no doubt that a man named Jonathan Martin, a native of Hexham, was the incendiary. He had lodged for a month with this shoemaker, and on Tuesday, the 27th of January, he left his lodgings, stating that he was going to reside at Leeds. On the following Saturday evening, about eight o'clock, he returned to his old lodgings, giving

as a reason for so doing, that having twenty of his books to sell at Tadcaster, he thought he would come as far as York. Convenience was made for him to sleep that night in the shoemaker's workshop, and the next morning, Sunday, he went out about half-past ten, and returned no more. On Monday, the 8th of February, he was taken near Hexham, and on his examination before a bench of Magistrates, he stated that in consequence of having had two remarkable dreams, he thought he was to set fire to the Minster.

On the 31st of March he was tried at York Castle before the late Baron Hullock, and found not guilty, on the ground of insanity; so he was ordered to be detained during his Majesty's pleasure. In his defence, in which he displayed much subtlety and cunning, he gave a minute detail of his proceedings, and the different expedients resorted to in order to complete his "pious work," as he called it. He stated that he attended the evening service, and was "very much vexed at hearing them sing the prayers, and amens; he thought the prayer of the heart came from the heart; and that they had no call for prayer books. The organ then made such a buzzing noise," he observed, "Thou shalt buzz no more—I'll have thee down to night." He then related how he left the choir with the congregation at the close of the service, concealed himself behind Bishop Granville's tomb till all went out, and remained concealed till the bell-ringers left the building; how he arose and prayed, and called upon the Lord for help; how the Spirit told him to strike a light, how he completed the work of destruction, and escaped through the window, looking back with pleasure on the "merry blaze which began to shoot up." The miserable fanatic was confined in New Bethlehem Hospital, London, where he died on the 3rd of June, 1838.

Mr. Smirke, afterwards Sir Robert Smirke, the eminent architect, drew up a report of the state of the building, and an estimate for its restoration. He recommended that similar materials should be employed for its renovation as had been originally used; that the ornamental work should be finished in the same manner, and in strict conformity, as before; the roof to be of oak, and to be covered with lead; and the carved ribs in the roof, the prebendal stalls, and other parts appertaining, to be oak. The restoration of the edifice was effected under his direction, at a cost of £65,000., which was raised by national subscription. The Government gave £5,000. worth of teak timber from the dock yards; and Sir E. M. Vavasour, Bart., of Hazlewood Castle, nobly imitating the example of his ancestors, gave the stone. His Grace the Archbishop presented the Communion plate, and a subscription of £2,000.; and one of the Prebendaries, the Hon. and Rev. J. L. Saville (afterwards

Earl of Scarborough), gave the organ. On the 6th of May, 1832, the choir was again opened for Divine service.

Another disastrous fire took place in the Cathedral, on Wednesday, the 20th of May, 1840, in consequence of the carelessness of a workman employed to clean the clock, in the south-west tower. The flames had acquired great power before any efficient check could be brought to bear upon them. The first alarm was given about half past seven in the evening, and by nine o'clock the peal of bells had fallen,\* and the fire raged through the roof of the tower, and along the roof of the centre aisle of the nave. By midnight the tower and nave had been reduced to mere shells, and by the greatest exertion the most imminent danger was then over. This damage was wholly repaired in the following year, at a cost of about £23,000., the whole of which, with the exception of a few thousand pounds, was raised by public subscription. The restoration was admirably effected under the superintendence of Mr. Sidney Smirke. The Cathedral is now in excellent repair; men are kept constantly employed on the building to restore all the decayed parts, with strict attention to original forms and details. It is believed that this edifice could not be entirely rebuilt in its present style for less than £2,000,000.

Four *Grand Musical Festivals* have been held in this Cathedral, for the benefit of the York County Hospital, and the Infirmaries of Leeds, Hull, and Sheffield. The first took place on the 23rd of September, 1823, and the three following days. The whole of the three aisles of the spacious nave were fitted up in a most splendid manner. The floor was boarded over, and an immense gallery constructed at the west end, projecting eighty-three feet eastward to the third pillar of the nave. The front seat was elevated four and a half feet above the pavement, and the back seat was on a level with the base of the window, at the height of twenty-eight feet. The orchestra was erected under the great lantern tower. The band was composed of 285 vocal, and 180 instrumental performers. The music consisted of selections from the compositions of Handel, Hadyn, Mozart, &c. The number of persons who attended the four days' performances was 17,000; and the gross amount of the receipts (including the evening concerts at the Assembly Rooms) was £16,174. 16s. 8d.; the gross surplus, which was equally shared among the charities above mentioned, was £7,200.

The *Second Festival* commenced on the 13th of September, 1825. Total number of persons present at the four performances, 20,873. The band con-

\* This was an excellent peal of ten bells, the whole of which were destroyed during that calamity, the metal being melted by the intense heat. The tenor weighed 53 cwt. 25lb., having a diameter of 5 feet 5 inches.

sisted of 615 persons, vocal and instrumental. Gross receipts, £20,876. 10s.

The *Third Festival* took place on the 23rd of September, 1828, and three following days, and was attended by all the rank and fashion in the north of England. On this occasion additional galleries were erected in the side aisles. The orchestra consisted of 350 vocal performers, exclusive of thirteen principal singers; and 200 instrumentalists. The receipts were £16,769. 11s. 4d. The aggregate attendance was 14,525 persons.

The *Fourth Festival* (which was the last) was held on the 7th of September, 1835, and three succeeding days. This Festival was patronised, in person, by Her Majesty (then the Princess Victoria) and the Duchess of Kent. The Royal party attended the Cathedral on each of the four days. The orchestra consisted of about 600 vocal and instrumental performers. The gross receipts were £16,662. 8s. 9d.; the gross expenditure, £13,073. 15s.; and the surplus of £3,588. 8s. 9d. was divided in the proportions of £1,794. 4s. 5d. to the restoration fund for the fire of 1829, and £448. 11s. 1d. each to the charitable institutions above mentioned.

The late Dr. Beckwith, of York, who died in December, 1843, left a sum of £2,000. for the purchase of a new peal of bells for the Cathedral; and a further sum of £3,000. to be applied to the restoration of the Chapter House. The new and beautiful peal of twelve bells, provided out of the above-named munificent bequest, were rung for the first time on the 4th of July, 1844, the day on which the restoration committee closed their arduous labours. The bells, which are placed in the south tower, vary in height from 2½ to 5½ feet, and in weight from 7½ to 53½ cwt.\*

The large clock bell, named *Great Peter of York*, is worthy of a special notice. It cost £2,000., which was raised by public subscription among the citizens; the Dean and Chapter agreeing to expend a similar sum in putting the north-western tower in a state of repair suitable for its reception. This

\* The history of bells, as used in collecting the people for religious worship, is involved in some obscurity. The invention of bells is by some attributed to the Egyptians, and it is certain that they were always used to announce the festivals in honour of Osiris. Among the Hebrews, the high priests, in grand ceremonies, wore a kind of tunic, ornamented with small golden bells. Bells were also known among the Persians and Greeks. The Romans used bells to signify the times of bathing, and the early Christians in Italy naturally applied them to denote the hours of devotion. It is said that Paulinus, Bishop of Nola, a City of Campania, in Italy, introduced bells into the church to summon the people to divine worship; but it does not appear that large bells were used before the sixth century. Their first adaptation to the use of the Anglo-Saxon Church is not clearly to be ascertained from written testimony. Some say they were introduced there by Pope Leo I.; and others by Paulinus. According to Malmesbury, small bells,

monster bell was cast by Messrs. Mears, of London (who also were the founders of the new peal of twelve), and it was hung in its present position in the above-mentioned tower in 1845. It is the largest bell in the United Kingdom (with the exception of the great clock bell recently cast for the new Houses of Parliament\*), its weight being eleven and a half tons. Its diameter at the mouth is 8ft. 4in.; its height, 7ft. 2in.; and its thickness at the sounding curve is 7 inches. The weight of the clapper is 4 cwt. 1 qr. 5lb. This ponderous clapper is of wrought iron of Yorkshire manufacture, and is a beautiful specimen of workmanship. The bell is heavier by four tons than *Great Tom of Oxford*, by six tons than the celebrated *Tom of Lincoln*, and by nearly eight tons than the large bell at St. Paul's, formerly called *Great Tom of Westminster*.† The ornaments of the bell are suitable, and of a character and style similar to the details of the principal parts of the Cathedral. The arms of the City and Church are placed on each side of it. The oaken stock on which the bell is fixed weighs, with the bolts, three tons. There were seventeen tons of metal prepared for this bell. It was run in seven and a half minutes; took fourteen days in cooling before it

*sona*, were used in Britain in the fifth century; and it is clear from Bede, that large bells, *campane*, such as sounded in the air, and called a numerous congregation to divine service, were employed in England in the year 680. It appears however, as we have intimated at page 419, that the towers of Churches were not constructed solely for the use of bells, but partly to direct the weary and benighted traveller to a place of human habitation; for which benevolent purpose lights were frequently burnt in them during the darkest nights.

\* The great bell recently erected in the Clock Tower of the Houses of Parliament at Westminster, and now the largest bell in England, was cast in 1856 at the Norton Blast Furnaces near Stockton-on-Tees, by Messrs. Warner and Co., and is commonly called *Big Ben of Westminster*, in honour of Sir Benjamin Hall, Bart., then Chief Commissioner of Works. This monster bell weighs within a small fraction of sixteen tons. Its diameter is 9 feet 5½ inches, its height outside 7 feet 10¼ inches, and inside 6 feet 8 inches. The clapper weighs 7 cwt. Its first peal was rung for prayers on the occasion of the opening of Parliament on the 3rd of February in the present year (1857), being then but in a temporary resting place. Its note is E natural, and the tone is very fine. The "quarter jacks," the largest of which is six feet in diameter, and weighs about four tons, have also been cast at Norton.

† On the very site which *Big Ben's* tower now occupies, there stood until the Revolution of 1688, an ancient clock Tower built in the reign of Edward I. from the proceeds of a fine levied on a Chief Justice convicted of bribery. Within this tower hung "Great Tom of Westminster," and on the removal of the tower William III. presented the bell to the Dean and Chapter of St. Paul's. The circumstance of this bell's having once struck *thirteen* times at midnight, instead of the proper number, saved the life of a sentry at Windsor Castle.

could be uncovered ; and is one of the most perfect specimens of gigantic casting known. Round the top is the following inscription in Lombardic characters :—

“ In sanctæ et æternæ Trinitatis honorem  
Pecunia sponte collata, Eboracenses  
Faciendum coraverunt in usum  
Ecclesiæ metrop. B. Petri, Ebor.”

And round the rim—

“ Anno Salutis MDCCCXLV. Victoriæ Regina VIII.,  
Edwardi Archiepi XXXVIII.  
C. et G. Mears, Londini, Fecerunt.”

This magnificent bell is in the key of F, and is at present rung by means of a hammer and two wheels, one on each side of the axle, fourteen feet in diameter, by which imperfect mode however its powers are never fully developed.

DESCRIPTION.—*Exterior*.—The Cathedral of York, usually called *York Minster*,\* is one of the most magnificent fanes of the Christian religion in existence, and is decidedly the most splendid monument in Great Britain of the piety of former times ; as well as one of the most interesting combinations of Gothic architecture in the world. Stupendous castles, splendid monasteries, and massy towers, reared through many ages subsequent to the erection of this superb pile, have long since mouldered away, and their site ceased to be known ; but the withering finger of time has failed to devastate this elaborate erection. Architects and travellers from many countries have expressed themselves in the highest terms of admiration of this venerable pile, and one of the latest notices of it will be found in a recently published work called *English Traits*. The distinguished author of that work, Ralph Waldo Emerson, in referring to Winchester Cathedral, says, “I think I prefer this Church to all I have seen except Westminster and York.” And

\* The word *Minster* in the Anglo-Saxon is *Mynster* ; in the old Franco Gaulick *Monstier* ; but all from the Latin *Monasterium*, a Cathedral Church and Monastery being formerly synonymous terms. “In ancient times scarce any illustrious Churches were built without a congregation of Monks to attend divine service there ; a mark whereof remains to this day, for our Cathedral Churches are vulgarly called Minsters, or Monasteries. And this was according to the advice given to St. Augustine by Pope Gregory, to institute in his Churches a body of religious persons like that in the primitive Church of Jerusalem, in which none accounted those things which he possessed his own, but all things were common among them.”—*Cressy's History of the Saxon Church*. The term *Minster* is still retained by a few Churches of eminence for their splendid appearance and antiquity.



in another passage, speaking of the religion of England, he says "And plainly there has been great power of sentiment at work in this island, of which these buildings (old Castles and Cathedrals) are the proof: as volcanic basalts show the work of fire which has been extinguished for many ages. England felt the full heat of the Christianity which fermented Europe, and drew, like the chemistry of fire, a firm line between barbarism and culture. The power of the religious sentiment put an end to human sacrifices, checked appetite, inspired the crusades, inspired resistance to tyrants, inspired self-respect, set bounds to serfdom and slavery, founded liberty, created the religious architecture,—York, Newstead, Westminster, Fountain's Abbey, Ripon, Beverley, and Dundee,—works to which the key is lost, with the sentiment which created them."

This sumptuous Church, where Kings have knelt down to worship Him, who is the King of Kings, and warriors laid aside the panoply of human warfare to sue for peace with heaven, is a very conspicuous object for miles on all sides of the City.

Its ground plan is a Latin cross, in which a peculiar symmetry is observable, owing to the uniform regularity of its construction; a feature which few Cathedrals possess, on account of the many subordinate Chapels which interfere with their general arrangement. The parts of the building are a nave, with side aisles; a transept, situated at about the middle of its length, also consisting of nave and aisles; a choir and side aisles, and a "Ladye Chapel" in continuation, eastward of the altar screen. A small transept is situated about midway between the great transept and the east end of the Church. Attached to the south side of the choir, east of the south transept, are three small Chapels, and these are all the extraneous Chapels which ever belonged to this magnificent structure. A fine lantern tower rises from the intersection of the nave and transept, and the west end is adorned with two splendid towers. Adjoining to the north end of the eastern aisle of the great transept is the elegant octagonal shaped Chapter House, with its interesting vestibule.

To describe minutely all the transcendent beauties which are constellated in this distinguished edifice, with all the technicality of architectural precision, would be tedious to the general reader; yet a brief outline may be equally acceptable and useful. We will conduct the stranger therefore round the Minster before we pass the sacred threshold to survey the beauties of the interior.

The *Western or Principal Front*, with its two graceful towers, has a truly noble appearance. Human skill could scarcely have produced anything more complete in this style of architecture. This front is divided into three com-

partments by the buttresses which support the towers. These buttresses are richly enchased with niches and canopies in relief, from their base to the very summit, where they terminate in angular heads under the cornice of the towers, and are broken in height into four stories, gradually diminishing in breadth and projection as they rise.

At this front there are three entrances, the central one of which is of elegant workmanship and curious design. It is divided by a pillar, composed of three clustered columns, with foliated capitals, into two doorways, crowned with pointed arches; the points of these arches bear a circular window, the tracery of which is formed of six trefoils in triangles; and the whole is enclosed within a splendid recessed arch, composed of various mouldings relieved by hollows; the mouldings being occupied by the most delicate sculptures of flowers, niche work, &c. In one of the mouldings of the arch are sixteen delicate and elegantly executed niches, each containing a sculptured scene from the history of Adam and Eve. Over the top of the great door, in a sitting posture, is a statue of Archbishop de Melton, the principal founder of this part of the Church, who is represented with a model of the building in his hand; and in niches on each side of the tympanum are figures of Robert de Vavasour, holding a piece of rough unhewn stone in his hand; and William de Percy, holding the similitude of a piece of wrought timber, to commemorate their respective gifts of stone and timber for the choir of the Church. Above this doorway is a grand window of elegant design—an unrivalled specimen of the leafy tracery which marks the style of the middle of the fourteenth century. It is divided by mullions into eight lights, and the head of the arch is filled with a beautiful arrangement of trefoils and other ornaments. Like the doorway this window is covered with a pediment, and accompanied with niches. A cornice and pierced battlement then succeed, over which the elevation finishes in a low pediment, the raking cornice of which is ornamented with a graduated battlement, and on the apex is a handsome pinnacle. The whole of this front has niches, with pedestals for statuary, but whatever might have been the intention of the architects, it appears that they have never been occupied. In the front of one of the buttresses of the north tower, is a very large niche, on the pedestal of which are the remains of a person seated upon a horse or mule, with another figure minus the head and shoulders, standing a little behind. The upper part of the mounted figure is gone, but when perfect, the whole was probably a representation of the Flight into Egypt. On the corresponding buttress of the south tower is a niche of the same size, having on its pedestal the remains of a man on horseback, with figures beneath the horse's feet. The

whole of the upper part of the mounted figure is also gone. Gent says that the subject in this niche, when perfect, was a representation of a knight trampling envy, &c., under foot. There are similar niches in the other two buttresses of this front, but the niches are vacant.

The towers, which are uniform, and of graceful elevation, and in ten several contractions, all cloistered for imagery, are four stories in height. The upper stories are more modern than the rest of the front, they having been built by John de Bermingham, who was Treasurer of the Church about the year 1432. The ground floors of the towers contain entrances to the Church, and the three succeeding stories have windows, the general style of decoration assimilating with the central portion. The finish of the elevation of each tower is a pierced parapet, embattled and surmounted by eight crocketed pinnacles, four at the angles, and one situated in the centre of each side. The entrance to the Church in the lower story of the towers, though of a subordinate character to the centre doorway, are still very fine, each having a handsome deeply recessed arch, supported by columns similar to the centre door. Two of the windows of each tower on every side are glazed, but the windows of the upper stories are filled with weather boarding. On the west side of the south tower, a little higher up than the leads, is an inscription having the appearance of Old English characters, representing the word, BER-MING-HAM. At each end of the word, and between its divisions, are figures of chained eagles and bears. This is the memorial of the above-named Treasurer, who rebuilt or finished this as well as the north tower.

The dilapidations which time and fanatical zeal had inflicted on the statuary and the ornamental work of the west front were well restored by Mr. Taylor, sculptor, of York, in 1808, and the steps which grace the three entrances were discovered and laid bare in 1828, whilst levelling the ground in front of the building. The stone of which the lower part of this front of the Cathedral is constructed, was brought from the quarries near Tadcaster; but that of the two towers was probably obtained from the quarries of Stapleton, near Pontefract; for among the archives of the Duchy of Lancaster, is a grant dated 17th of July, 1400, to the Dean and Chapter to be exempt from the payment of tolls and other customs on the river Aire, for stone to be carried to York Cathedral, for the *new works*.

*The Nave*, which was commenced by Archbishop le Romaine, in 1291, is divided into seven parts by buttresses, and consists, as usual, of two stories, that in the centre has a clerestory, or a story rising above the side aisles. In every division of the aisle is a fine window of three lights, made by mul-

lions.\* The clerestory has a window of five lights in each division, with generally a circle or wheel in the head of the arch, filled with quatrefoil tracery. The finish is an open battlement over a leaved cornice. The *North side* is finished in a plain style, and has no pinnacles over the buttresses. It was formerly blocked up by the Archbishop's palace, and this probably accounts for the absence of elaborate ornament. The flying buttresses towards the clerestory were removed at an early period. The *South side* resembles the opposite side in its general character and decorations; the buttresses are surmounted by lofty and elegant pinnacles, instead of the dwarf caps on the other side. In each is a niche, and in them are statues of Our Saviour, Archbishop St. William, and the four Evangelists. These pinnacles have been completely restored within the last twenty-five years. The whole of the portions of the Church already described, are, with trifling exceptions, in the richest style of the fourteenth century.

*The South Transept* is, with the exception of the crypt, the oldest portion of the Church. The early date of this transept is evinced by the acutely-pointed arches, and slender pillars, with plain or slightly ornamented capitals, and its angular pediments. The chasteness of its ornaments forms a strong contrast with the sumptuous grandeur of the nave. The whole front is divided by buttresses into three parts, corresponding with the three internal aisles. These buttresses are ornamented by pointed arches of the lancet form, and surmounted by four octagonal turrets, of a later style of architecture. In the central division is the principal porch or *South Entrance* of the Cathedral, approached by two spacious flights of steps, an unusual appendage to an ancient building. After the Reformation, we are told by Cooke, "some avaricious Dean leased out the ground for some space on each side of these steps, for building houses and shops on." These buildings, which "were of great discredit, as well as an annoyance to the fabric," continued, he tells us, "till the worthy Dean Gale, amongst other particular benefactions, suffered the leases to run out, pulled down the houses, and cleaned this part of the Church from the scurf it had contracted by the smoke proceeding from these dwellings."†

The arch of entrance is pointed, and was altered between forty and fifty years ago; and an ancient clock, which stood over it, with two wooden statues in armour of the time of Henry VII., that struck the quarters on two small

\* Mullions are the solid species of masonry which divide the space of a window into compartments.

† Cooke's Topographical Description of Yorkshire.

bells, was removed at the same time, and the present handsome dial substituted. The second story has lancet windows; and the third, which is crowned with a pediment, has a beautiful circular rose or wheel window, one of the most splendid of the kind in England. It is sometimes called the marigold window, from its resemblance to that flower. It consists of three concentric circles, the smallest occupied with six sweeps; the second has twelve columns, surmounted by trefoil arches, disposed in the manner of the spokes of a wheel; and the third has twenty-four similar arches disposed in the same manner.

Above this is a triangular window, and the apex is surmounted by a small spire, commonly called the *Fiddler's turret*, from a small effigy of a fiddler which crowns it. This effigy was removed from some other part of the building, and placed here. The aisles have lancet windows, and the general style of the decorations correspond with the centre. The west side of the south entrance is disfigured by a plain irregular building of two stories, now used as the *Will Office* of the Diocese. The low buildings on the east of the same entrance are vestries and out offices of the Church. They were formerly chantries, and one of them was known as Archbishop de la Zouche's Chapel, already noticed. It is much to be regretted in the many improvements which of late years have been made in the immediate neighbourhood of the Minster, that these excrescences, which are of a different style of architecture, and at variance with the scope and design of the noble edifice, and which consequently deform it, have been allowed to continue. Were it not for these erections, the spectator would be presented with a clear and unbroken *coup d'œil* of the Cathedral, incomparable in magnificence and extent.

*The North Transept* exhibits the finished neatness and plainness of the first period of the pointed style. The walls both of the aisle and doorway are finished with a block cornice, with enriched mouldings and plain parapet. The windows are narrow and acutely pointed, and buttresses are attached to the piers, having angular pedimental caps. The turrets at the angles seem unfinished, as they are left without spires or pinnacles, and the point of the gable ends abruptly, without any decoration. The north front commences with a low blank arcade, or a series of arches with trefoil heads. Above the arcade is a fine window of five long single lancet lights; and higher up still is another of a like number of lights; both of unequal height. The west aisle has a double lancet window, which is finished with a raking cornice. The end of the eastern aisle is built against by the vestibule of the Chapter House. Some years ago this front was partially restored, and portions of it were considerably altered.

The *Choir* is in the same style as the nave, though of a later period. On each side, about midway, is a projection above the side aisles, called the *Little Transept*, with a lofty window rising from the middle of the aisle to nearly the top of the choir, and also with windows over the side aisles. This transept projects no further than the walls of the aisle. This transept has somewhat the appearance of a square tower, though not carried higher than the walls of the nave. At the angles are double buttresses, ending in pinnacles, and in the flank walls above the aisles are windows to correspond with the others. The space between the great and little transept is in three divisions, with windows filled with tracery of an elegant but more regular design than the nave; the buttresses are crowned with pinnacles, and the finish to the walls is similar to the nave. The four divisions eastward of this transept are uniform with those before described, except that the clerestory windows are fronted with open screens of beautiful stone work, which gives them the appearance of unglazed windows. This feature is peculiar to this Cathedral in England, but it occurs in some of the continental Churches. The large pinnacles of the buttresses on the south side of this part of the choir have been recently restored, together with the parapet and the outer mouldings and finials of the windows. The great east window has a similar screen-work before it, towards the interior. The cornice under the battlements is more perfect towards the eastern parts, and exhibits beautiful foliage. The spouts are sculptured with bold projecting figures, through which the water is conveyed from the roofs.

The *Eastern Front*, which is extremely beautiful, is divided by buttresses into three portions, answering to the nave and aisles. The buttresses are adorned with niches, pedestals, and canopies, formerly filled with statues, but now empty. The north and south buttresses are octagonal, and contain staircases. The great east window in the centre is of the most magnificent proportions, and unrivalled workmanship. Pugin, the celebrated architect, considered it the finest window in the world. It is divided in breadth by mullions into nine divisions, which are made by transoms into three tiers of lights, and the head is occupied by three sub-arches, and a number of minute compartments. Over the lofty arch is a fine sweeping ogee moulding, with foliage canopy, remarkable for its fine curve and lofty termination. Above the canopy is some highly elaborate and beautiful tabernacle work, and in the centre is a square turret, with a crocketed finial. The aisles have windows of three lights of a corresponding character, and similar in finish to the centre. The statue in the niche, immediately over the point of the window, is supposed to represent Archbishop Thoresby, the

builder of this part of the fabric. The figure, which is robed and seated, holds in its left hand the model of a Church, and points to the window with its right. In the niches in the extreme angular buttresses were, formerly, statues of Vavasour and Percy, who bestowed the stone and timber for the building. The seventeen heads at the base of the great window represent Our Saviour (the centre one), the Twelve Apostles, and some of the ancient Fathers of the Church. The north and south aisles of the choir pretty much correspond, except that the front of the latter is disfigured by the addition of the before mentioned vestries.

The *Great Central* or *Lantern Tower*, rises from the intersection of the nave and transept, and surmounts the whole Cathedral. "This magnificent erection," writes Britton, "bears evident marks of the Tudor style. On each of its four sides are two large windows, with two tiers of mullions bounded on each side by compartmented buttresses. The battlements are richly perforated." Drake says that "tradition assures us it was meant to be carried much higher, by a spire of wood, covered with lead on the top of it; but the foundation was found too weak for such a superstructure," and recent discoveries have tended to strengthen this opinion. Great fault has been found with this tower, because it is not surmounted by pinnacles, as are the other parts of the Cathedral; but this defect is in some sort compensated for by the massive appearance which the absence of pinnacles give it. The top is reached by a spiral staircase of 273 steps, and the labour of ascending is well repaid by the view that it affords of the country for many miles round. The highest point of this tower is 218 feet from the ground. It is 65 feet in breadth, and is said to be the most massive tower in England. In the year 1666, by order of the Duke of Buckingham, a turret of wood was erected, covered with lead and glazed, on the top of it. This was to put lights into upon occasion, to serve as a beacon to alarm the country, in case the Hollanders or French, with both which powers we were then at war, should attempt to land on our coasts.

INTERIOR.—On entering the Cathedral from the west end,\* the vastness of its dimensions, the justness of its proportions, and the chaste simplicity and beauty of the arrangement, produce an intense impression of grandeur. Architecture perhaps never produced, nor can imagination easily conceive a vista of greater sublimity and magnificence than that which is seen from this entrance. The spectator has before him a perspective of upwards of five

\* The principal entrance to the Cathedral is at the west front, but it is now used only at funerals, or the reception of an Archbishop, in solemn procession for enthronization; or in cases of visits from royal or very distinguished personages.

hundred feet, the continuity of the vaulting broken in a pleasing manner about the centre of the lantern tower. In contemplating this spacious nave, with its beautiful columns, and ceiling groined and ribbed, the beholder may fancy himself within a superb avenue of lofty trees, whose upper branches are elegantly intertwined in an endless variety of complicated combinations. He views the grand design with increasing attention, and soon becomes imbued with other sentiments than those of mere admiration of the building, as a superb specimen of the almost unlimited extent to which the exertions of human science may be carried. Worldly considerations are rapidly swept away to make room for ideas of greater solemnity. Another fine point of observation is beneath the central tower. Here may at once be seen the lengthened aisles and lofty columns; the statuary screen, which divides the nave and choir, and the several painted windows. To describe the effect which this grand scene must produce on the mind of the spectator, must unavoidably be to do it injustice. It must be experienced to be felt and understood, for he is now within the sacred walls of one of those grand Churches, which, as Wharton observes, are of wonderful mechanism, constructed on principles of inexplicable architecture, and possessing a tendency to impress the soul with sensations of awe and religious veneration.

The elevation of the nave is in three heights or stories, as is usual in most Cathedrals. It is separated from the side aisles by long ranges of finely clustered columns, of which the central shafts rise to the roof, and the others support a series of graceful arches in the Early Pointed style, chastely and appropriately enriched. The capitals are ornamented with leaves, and the mouldings of the arches, which form the first story of the elevation, and the other architectural details, though rather plain, have a most pleasing effect. The *Triforium*, or second story, consists of five lofty narrow trefoiled arches, with acute angular canopies, and an open screen runs in front of it. This division of the height of the nave is in a manner united with the third or clerestory. The latter contains a noble range of windows, divided by slender mullions into five lights, having in the crown of the arch a circular light, filled with quatrefoil tracery. Nearly every one of the clerestory windows have a considerable quantity of stained glass, chiefly shields of arms, &c. In the spandrils of the principal arches are shields, carved with various coats of arms in relief. Those on the *North Side* are the arms of the families of Vavasour, Roos, Percy, Greystock, Latimer, Vere Earls of Oxford, Beauchamp Earls of Warwick, Bohun Earls of Hereford, Aymer de Valence Earl of Pembroke, Cobham, Ulphus, and Ferrers. On the *South Side*, Vavasour, and Percy, Warren Earls of Surrey, Wake, Devereux, Reresby, De Mawley



Lords of Doncaster, Clare Earls of Gloucester, Bek of Eresby, Royal Arms of England, and those of a Prince of Wales. Each of the centre compartments of every division of the second story formerly contained a statue, of which only five now remain. The most perfect is in the fifth division from the west, on the south side, which represents St. George; and on the opposite side is a large wooden dragon, which served as a lever to lift the cover of the old font.

The vaulted ceiling is of wood, plainly groined; the bosses being carved with incidents in scriptural history, or device in relief. The present roof was erected in 1841, the whole of the previous one having been burnt in the disastrous fire of 1840. Formerly the groins and knots were enriched with paints and gold.

The aisles are ornamented in a style equally splendid with the nave. They are lighted by an elegant range of windows, each of three lights, with quatrefoiled circles and tracery. Below each window are several upright compartments, divided by buttresses, ending in pinnacles. A triple cluster of columns, uniform with those of the main pillars, is attached to the piers between the windows, and these in part sustain the vaults, which are of stone, groined with arches and cross springers. An arched doorway in the north aisle formerly led into the *Chapel of the Holy Sepulchre*, or of St. Sepulchre, as it is commonly called, built by Archbishop Roger, and long since destroyed. Over this doorway are two shields, charged with the arms of Old France and England, and between these, on the point of the arch, is a mutilated statue of the Blessed Virgin and Divine Child, standing on a pedestal, but the upper part of the figures are now gone; and near this are two angels in alto relievo, the heads of which have disappeared. A little beyond this doorway is an altar tomb, which is attributed, but without foundation, to Archbishop Roger. The large doors of the central entrance are separated by a slender pier, adorned with a beautiful small niche and canopy; over which is a circular compartment glazed and ornamented with tracery; and on each side is an escutcheon of arms, one assigned to Edward II., and the other to the Saxon Prince Ulphus. On each side of this door are two series of niches resembling the stall work in the aisles, which, with the doorway, entirely fill up the *cespa* beneath the great west window.

Two series of niches, with pedestals for statues and angular canopies, occupy the jambs of the window, and the rest of the wall below the vault is ornamented with upright panels; so that every portion of the wall from the pavement to the ceiling is tastefully covered with ornament, and the side divisions which occupy the towers, partake of the same kind of sculptured

work. Above the arches of the doorways are reliefs representing, on the north side, the subject of a fox chase; and on the south, a combat between a knight and an uncouth looking animal. The relief in one of the quatrefoil panels on the latter door, represents Sampson tearing open the jaws of a lion, whilst the faithless Delilah behind him is cutting off his hair. The relief which accompanies it, as well as those in the quatrefoils of the north door, are unintelligible. The towers are cut off from view by plain floors of wood.

*The Pavement* is a mosaic pattern on the grandest scale, but as has already been observed, it is utterly at variance with the architecture of the church. The old pavement, which was removed in 1786, was marked with circles supposed to point out the stations of the dignitaries of the church in the ancient processions.

*The Transept*, which is also in the Early Pointed style of architecture, consists of three aisles; the nave or largest aisle, in common with the rest of the church, shows three stories in elevation, the first consists of large pointed arches, springing from piers set about with numerous clustered columns. The second story shows a large circular arch, divided into two others, which in like manner are subdivided into smaller ones; and the clerestory consists of an arcade of acutely pointed arches of equal height, three in each division being pierced to admit light. The south transept is three bays or arches in length from the centre tower, and it is remarkable that the columns and arches exhibit different styles of proportion and ornament. The two bays nearest the tower are filled up with masonry, as a support to the piers of that massive structure. The present vaulted and groined ceiling is of wood, and is ornamented with a greater profusion of intersections and bosses than the nave. The ceiling was originally much lower, but when the arch which supports the great tower was erected, it was necessary to raise the ceiling of the transepts to a corresponding height. The aisles have lancet windows without tracery, in pairs, the dados being ornamented with trefoil arches in blank. The vaulted roof of stone resembles that in the aisles of the great nave. The interior of the south front is peculiarly grand. The large circular window at the top, and the three middle windows are very fine. The north arm of the transept is more regular than the south. Its principal feature is the elevation of the north end, which contains the window of five lancet lights called the *Five Sisters*, from a tradition that the patterns of the several divisions were wrought in tapestry by five sister nuns, and presented to the church. When viewed from the south end the effect of this window is only inferior to that of the great east window. One of the plain windows at the end of the west aisle of this transept was

that through which the fanatic lunatic Jonathan Martin made his escape, after firing the choir in 1829. The door through the eastern wall, at present opening into the yard, is supposed to have formerly communicated with a Chapter House older than the present one. The east aisle of this transept was formerly a Chapel dedicated to St. Nicholas, founded by Richard de Chester, Canon of the Church in 1346. The baptismal font stands at the end of the western aisle of the south arm of the transept. It is a large circular basin of dark shell marble, not remarkable for any curious workmanship.

*The Central Tower* is supported by four massive piers, surmounted by smaller columns. From these piers spring four elegantly pointed arches, nearly one hundred feet high, above which is a gallery in design closely resembling the stall work in the aisles of the nave; and this is surmounted by eight lofty windows, two in each wall, measuring forty-five feet in length. The groined ceiling of wood, which is one hundred and eighty feet from the ground, assimilates with the nave; the centre boss contains small statues of St Peter and St. Paul, with a church between them, and on four knots round about are cherubims with their wings, as mentioned in one of Ezekiel's visions, having on them the face of a man, a lion, an ox, and an eagle. In the spandrils of the beautiful arches of this tower are shields, charged as follows:—On the east the pallium, the papal insignia of Archiepiscopal authority, and the arms of St. Wilfrid; on the north the arms assigned to the Saxon Kings Edwin and Edmund the martyr; on the south the peculiar arms of the See, and those of Walter Skirlaw, the great benefactor of this part of the building; and on the west those of Edward the Confessor, with the arms of England emblazoned in such a manner as to prove that the tower was not completed till the reign of Henry V. or Henry VI., who were the first that altered the old French bearing. Nothing finer than the interior of the lantern can be imagined; the windows are of a size sufficient to fill the whole interior with a brilliant light, and, it may be added, that the immense height of the vaulting fills the mind with a feeling of vastness not easily forgotten. The tower forms a magnificent vestibule to the choir.

*The Stone Organ Screen*, which stands between the two easternmost piers of the tower, and divides the nave from the choir, is a curious and elaborate piece of workmanship, the history of which is not precisely known. The doorway in the screen, which is the entrance to the choir, and which is not exactly in the centre, is a pointed arch, the jambs having attached columns with leaved capitals, with an ogee canopy terminated with a crocketed finial. In this doorway is an iron gate of curious design. There are also corresponding gates at the entrance to the side aisles of the choir. These gates

were formerly of wood. The western face, or exterior of the screen, is composed of fifteen compartments, containing a series of richly canopied niches, in which are placed on elegant pedestals the statues of the Kings of England, ranged in chronological order, from William the Conqueror to Henry VI., in their ancient regal costume. The name of each statue is inscribed on its pedestal in Latin. Above the niches are narrow shrines richly canopied, and containing two rows of small but elegant full length winged figures, representing the angelic choir; and above the rich tabernacle work is a row of demi-angels. This screen is gorgeous in the extreme, the bands of delicate tracery with which it is adorned are most elaborately sculptured. It would seem that the artist was determined to charge every part with ornament, and to exert the fullest latitude of fancy in giving variety and intricacy to its complicated members.

The statues of the Kings are nearly of the natural size. There are seven figures on the north side and eight on the south side, viz.:—*North Side*—William I., William II., Henry I., Stephen, Henry II., Richard I., and John. *South Side*—Henry III., Edward I., Edward II., Edward III., Richard II., Henry IV., Henry V., and Henry VI. The niche filled by the statue of Henry VI. was long occupied by one of James I. Tradition reports that this niche was originally filled by a statue of “that weak, but reputedly pious Monarch,” Henry VI., and that it was taken down to “prevent the stupid adoration of the lower ranks of the people,” who commiserated the misfortunes of that ill-fated King to a very great extent. “But it is more probable,” writes Mr. Baines, “that it was his successor Edward IV., who, being the sun of the political firmament, became the object of *adoration*, and that to him the homage of courtly devotion was offered by removing the statue of his rival. For some ages,” the same writer continues, “the place remained unoccupied, but on the visit of James I. to York, he was complimented by being placed in the empty cell.”\* Dr. Milner conjectures that this screen was taken from the Church of St. Mary’s Abbey in this City, that it lay at the Manor Palace for many years, that King James I. presented it to the Cathedral, and that in compliment to him the Dean and Chapter placed the statue in the vacant niche. The statue of James has been transferred to Ripon Minster, and the present well executed figure of Henry VI., the work of Mr. Michael Taylor, a native artist, was set up during the present century. From the statue of this Monarch having been the last of the series, it has been inferred that the screen was executed towards the end

\* Gazetteer of Yorkshire, vol. ii., p. 39.

of his reign. Many of the smaller parts of the screen have been restored by Bernasconi. Above this screen, and occupying the site of the ancient rood, or representation of the Crucifixion of Our Saviour, is the organ. After the fire in 1829, it was proposed to place the organ and screen further eastward, so as to bring more into sight the magnificent pillars that support the central tower, but so much opposition was made to it, that the plan was abandoned.

*The Choir.*—It would be difficult to imagine anything more solemn, beautiful, or gorgeous than this division of the Church, with its immense east window, elegant altar screen, pulpit throne, and tabernacle, carvings over the stalls, when viewed from the archway under the organ. The architecture of the choir is more ornamental in its character than that of the nave, although the general style of the decoration is similar. The roof, which is wood, is loftier, and more intricately groined, and the bosses are more numerous, than the nave, and an elegant kind of festoon work descends from the capitals of the pillars, from which the vaulting springs. The side elevation of the great or central aisles of this portion, like the other parts of the edifice, is made into three stories. The principal arcade differs but little from the nave; and the intervals between the arches are embellished with shields of armorial bearings. The openings of the triforium, or gallery story, consists of a series of five cinquefoiled arches, with canopies and crocketed finials, divided in the centre by horizontal transoms; and a stone rail in front forms a protection to the persons who may be stationed there. In the clerestory is a beautiful range of windows of five lights, with cinquefoiled heads, having the crown of the arch enriched with elegant tracery. The walls of the aisles of the choir are panelled, and enriched with tracery corresponding with the character of the windows. The windows of the aisles have three lights, with perpendicular divisions in the heads of the arches, but the design is far less elegant than the nave. The same simple stone roof, which covers the aisles of the nave, is used in these aisles. The introduction of the smaller transept does not break the continuity of the great arcade, but the only part in which it enters into the design, is at the clerestory; the window, with its gallery, being omitted, and a panelled breast-work placed on the cornice over the point of the arch, thus allowing a view of the lofty window and handsome groined ceiling of this singular appendage to be obtained from the choir. The effect of this transept, when viewed from near the pulpit, is remarkably beautiful. The shields of arms in the choir are as follows:—*South Side*—Cross of St. George, the Saxon Monarchs Edward the Confessor, Edwin and Oswald; Mortimer, Ulphus, and Percy; the same quartering Lucy, Scrope, Skirlaw, Roos, Neville Earls of Westmorland, the City of York, Montague Earls of

Salisbury, Beauchamp Earls of Warwick, Lacy, and the Royal Arms of England, anterior to Henry V. *North Side*—Vavasour, Neville, Danby or Fitzhugh, St. William, badges of the See of St. Wilfrid, Emblems of the Passion of our Lord, Greystock, Latimer, Clifford Earls of Cumberland, Bohun Earls of Hereford, the Royal Arms of England, a Prince of Wales, Longespée Earls of Salisbury. *Little Transept South*—Dacre, Beauchamp, Percy, and Vavasour; *North*—Clifford, Latimer, Danby, Pollington, Neville, and Scrope.

Behind the present altar or communion table, to which is an ascent of fifteen steps, is a beautiful stone screen, of Gothic architecture, divided into eight uniform compartments by slender panelled buttresses, terminated with crocketed pinnacles. Each compartment contains in the lower division a triple shrine of niches, and in the upper an open arch, separated by slender mullions into three divisions, surmounted by a square head of which the spandrils are pierced in quatrefoil circles; and above these is a delicate open embattled parapet. The intervals of this exquisitely wrought screen have been filled with plate glass, affording a view of the eastern portion of the choir, and of the superb east window. This screen, which is forty-nine feet in length, and twenty-eight feet high, is one of the most beautiful specimens of pierced stone work in England. Before the Reformation the high altar stood one arch further westward, and immediately behind it was a large wooden screen handsomely painted and gilded, which obscured the present stone erection, and obstructed the view of a great part of the fine east window from the choir. At each end of this screen was a door, which opened into a small room behind the altar, called the *sanctum sanctorum*, in which, anciently, the Archbishop used to robe at the time of his enthronization, and from thence proceed to the high altar, where he was invested with the pallium; and above it was a gallery, with desks in the form of battlements, for the musicians required in the celebration of the gorgeous services of the Catholic Church. In 1726 this wooden screen was pulled down; the altar carried back to where it now stands; and in 1760 a piece of tapestry was removed which hung before the present screen. By these alterations a view of one of the noblest lights in the world has been opened, and this magnificent stone screen—esteemed by the curious one of the greatest beauties of the church—brought into view. The altar railing is also of cut stone.

The space between this screen and the eastern end of the church was formerly a Chapel, dedicated to God, in honour of the Blessed Virgin, commonly called the *Ladye Chapelle*. This was the most remarkable of the many chapels which were in this church. It was founded by Archbishop

Thoresby, who, according to Stubbs, "as a true respecter of the Virgin Mother of God, adorned it with wonderful sculpture and painting." At the Reformation the works of art in this Chapel were torn to pieces and destroyed. Mr. Ralph Thoresby, the northern antiquary, had a large piece of carved work, which, in his *Ducatus Leodiensis*, he tells us, was discovered in the beginning of the last century, "between two walls, in a private house, in the neighbourhood of the Minster, and sold by parcels to statuaries and others for common use." Thoresby supposing that piece of statuary work to have belonged to the Ladye Chapel, preserved it as a great curiosity, and as a tribute of respect to the memory of Archbishop Thoresby, his ancestor; and his regret for the destruction of this curious Chapel, makes him break out in the words of the psalmist, "A man was famous as he had lifted up axes upon the thick tree, but now they break down the carved work thereof with axes and hammers." In 1835 were found buried in the premises of the late Mr. Swineard, surgeon, in Precentor's Court, opposite the western front of the Cathedral, a beautiful piece of carved stone work, which is now in the Yorkshire Museum, and which the Rev. C. Wellbeloved, the learned Curator of Antiquities, says is most probably another portion of the carved work of which Mr. Thoresby speaks. "But the style and character of these remains," he adds, "are clearly of a later age than that of Archbishop Thoresby. They appear to have belonged to a magnificent shrine; and such a shrine may have been erected behind the high altar in what is usually denominated the Lady Chapel; and it may have been one of those which Henry VIII., during his visit to York in the year 1541, ordered to be taken down.\* Wherever it may have been placed, and whenever removed, large portions of it appear to have been collected, and carefully concealed in his private residence by some one, who hoped the time would come when it might be set up again in its original beauty in its proper place."†

Another portion of one of the niches of this shrine, which had been long affixed to the north-east side of the exterior of Clifford's Tower, has been recently removed to the Museum; as well as a part of the ornamental work of the same shrine, which had been placed several years ago in the garden of the late Robert Driffield, Esq., on the Mount without Micklegate Bar; and smaller fragments of this beautiful work may be seen inserted as ornaments in the walls of several houses in York.

\* See Mr. Hunter's "Account of King Henry the Eighth's Progress in Yorkshire." Published in Memoirs illustrative of the Antiq. of York by the Archæol. Institute.

† Descriptive Account of the Antiquities in the Grounds of the Museum.

The Lady Chapel is now chiefly remarkable for the number of monuments it contains. The north side of it (the east end of the north aisle of the choir, was formerly a Chapel dedicated in honour of *St. Stephen*; and on its south side was the Chapel of *All Saints*. In Dodsworth's Collections, printed in Stephen's additional volumes to the *Monasticon*; and in Torre's Manuscripts will be found a catalogue of the numerous *Chantries* of this Church, with the names of their founders, original endowments, annual value, &c.

The elaborate design of the great *East Window* is strengthened internally by a series of mullions placed at a short distance from, and exactly agreeing with those which contain the glazing. This is peculiar to the present Church. Upon the second transom runs a gallery, fronted by a parapet, pierced with upright cinquefoil divisions, and from which an excellent view of the whole interior of the Church may be obtained. The dados of this window, as well as of those at the extremities of the aisles are richly panelled, and the jambs are ornamented with niches. The pavement of the choir, including the Lady Chapel, is beautifully relaid in mosaic.

The furniture of the choir is of the most magnificent description. The design of the oak pews and ornaments is very nearly a counterpart of those destroyed in 1829. The prebendal stalls, which range on both sides as far as the throne and the pulpit, are twenty in number, and there are six on each side of the entrance under the organ. These stalls are of oak, richly carved, and surmounted with canopies of tabernacle work. The names of many of the prebends to which they belong, are placed over them in carved oak letters. The seats or *misereres* are curiously carved.\* The Dean occupies the first stall on the right, the Precentor the first on the left. The desks below the stalls for the vicars choral and choristers, are panelled in unison with the upper works. At the east end of the stalls are the *Cathedra*, or Archbishop's throne, and the pulpit, opposite to each other, both elaborately ornamented. In the middle of the choir is a reading desk, inclosed with tabernacle work; and on the north side is a brazen eagle, from which the lessons are read. This eagle, which was presented by Dr. Cracroft in 1686, was saved with some difficulty from the fire in 1829. (See page 426).

\* In Cathedrals and most ancient Churches there were stalls or *folding seats* for those who sung in the choir; and from hence it is that *cancellus* and *chorus*—the chancel and the choir—are words used to signify the same part of the Church. These seats which were turned or folded upwards when the singers were to stand, were called *misereres*, or *misericords*, and when in that position they generally exhibit some curiously carved grotesque figures, or allegorical designs, which form altogether a record, or perhaps records, the key to which is irrecoverably lost. Many of the figures on such seats appear to have been copied from the tricks of the ancient jugglers.



*The Organ* is a conspicuous object on the top of the stone screen in nearly the centre of the Cathedral. In 1632 King Charles I. levied a fine of £1,000. upon Edward Paylor, Esq. (for some offence committed by that gentleman), and granted it to the Dean and Chapter for various purposes, one of which was the procuring of a new organ. A contract was accordingly entered into with Robert Dallam, of London, "Blacksmith," for a complete organ, which cost £610. By the King's desire, this organ was placed on the north side of the choir, nearly opposite the Archbishop's throne, so that it may not impede the full view of the entire Cathedral; but it was afterwards placed over the stone screen by Archbishop Lamplugh, at the expense of the Earl of Strafford. This instrument was destroyed by the fire in 1829.

The present magnificent organ, which is one of the largest and most powerful instruments of the kind in the world, as we have already said, was presented by the Right Hon. and Rev. J. L. Saville, Earl of Scarborough. Its specification was composed by Dr. Camidge, of York, the present organist, and it was built by Messrs. Elliott and Hill, of London, in 1837, and has since been considerably enlarged.\*

The exterior of the former instrument was different in form from the present, and was decorated with gilded pipes and figures. The pipes of the present organ are bronzed, and the case is of oak, simply carved. Some of the large pipes stand at the entrance to the south aisle of the choir. During the restoration of the great nave of the Church, after the fire of 1840, a wall of brick was erected between the three aisles of the nave and the rest of the Church; and by this contrivance the noise made by the workmen did not at all interfere with the usual service in the choir.

Beneath the altar is an ancient vault or *Crypt*, belonging to the old choir built by Archbishop Roger. Its original extent cannot be ascertained, as the present portion of it is bounded by the comparatively modern work of the choir, and the sweep of the arches eastward is cut off by the solid work of the foundation of the altar screen. It is nearly square, and is divided into four aisles from east to west, each consisting of three arches, supported by six cylindrical columns five and a half feet in length. Although the general character of this portion of the crypt is Norman, yet it is so strangely mingled with architecture of a more modern date, that, taken as a whole, it may perhaps be viewed as the workmanship of the eleventh or twelfth century. The

\* The great manual of this splendid instrument contains 4,818 pipes, the swelling organ 1,586, the choir organ 1,399, and the pedal organ 200 pipes. There are in this magnificent organ 80 stops and 8,000 pipes; it has eight bellows, eight couplers, eight composition pedals, and eight wind trunk valves.

columns which support the groined arches appear to have been preserved from an older building, and put together with little care, as the bases are too large for the shafts, and in one instance a reversed capital is applied as a base. Some suppose that these columns formed a portion of the Church built in the eighth century, by St. Wilfrid, and were thus confusedly applied in the rebuilding the edifice after its destruction in 1069. The capitals of the pillars are all octagonal, five of them being of singular beauty of design. Professor Willis declares the crypt to be a mere piece of patch work, made during the fitting up of the choir in the fourteenth century, out of the old materials, to support a platform for the altar, and provide Chapels and altar room beneath it. The pavement is composed of glazed tiles, coloured alternately blue and yellow, and of very ancient date. It is recorded that before the Reformation there were seven altars or chantries in the crypt, and the remains of three of them are still visible. One of these was designated the Chantry at the altar of St. Mary *in cryptis*. In the crypt is a *lavatory* like that at Lincoln, but its base is quite plain; it has a hole in the centre for a pipe, and the drain is covered by a figure like a monkey crouching over its cub. In one of the western arches near the lavatory is a deep draw well.

Whilst the workmen were engaged in taking up the broken floor of the choir after the disastrous fire of 1829, they came in contact with the top of a massive pillar. This led to a further investigation, and a search was made the whole length of the choir, when the remains of the Saxon edifice built by Edwin or Oswald, and the Norman choirs erected by Archbishops Thomas and Roger, were discovered. This excavation extends from the western wall of the crypt, under the choir, as far as the two great columns which supported the lantern tower, and the interesting remains of the ancient Church have been arched over, and are open to the inspection of the curious. On entering the series of vaults which lead westward from the crypt, are seen six beautiful pillars of the Norman Church (three on each side) seven feet long and six feet in diameter. The capitals of some of these pillars are curiously sculptured, and from them spring the mouldings of a groined vaulting. In the intermediate space between each pair of these columns are the bases of two smaller ones; and on the north side is an aisle, at the west end of which is a very beautiful twisted column, of delicate workmanship. The outer part of the Church may still be seen, the buttresses and walls being in a state of beautiful preservation. Amongst these ruins of the Norman Church is an ancient tomb covered with a large slab. An ascent on the westward leads into the Saxon edifice, where we have a fine specimen of the architecture of that period, considered equal to any in England. It consists

of a portion of the walls of the Church. These walls, which are composed of limestone and sandstone, are nearly six feet in thickness, and the stones are laid in the herring bone manner, forming courses eight inches thick.

The three extraneous Chapels already referred to are entered from the south aisle of the choir. These buildings, originally built for chantry Chapels, were begun by Archbishop de la Zouch, to whom a licence was granted for that purpose, by the Dean and Chapter, on the 14th of June, 1352. One of these Chapels is now used as a *Vestry*; another, since the year 1840, has been used as the *Record Office* of the Dean and Chapter; and the third is the room in which the *Ecclesiastical Court* is held. In the one used as the Record Office is a well, called *St. Peter's Well*, and chemists attribute the excellence of the water to the small portions of limestone, washed into it by the rain, from the walls of the edifice.

One of these Chapels was formerly used as a *Treasury*, and in it were kept all the rent, revenues, grants, and charters, with the common seal belonging to the Church; and a particular officer was appointed to inspect and take care of them. In the large inventory\* of the riches belonging to this Cathedral, taken in the reign of Edward VI., is an account of the money then in *St. Peter's Chest*, which was soon after seized upon, and the treasurer's office dissolved; for a very good reason, says Mr. Willis, "when all the treasure was swept away, the office of treasurer ceased of course."

*Relics.*—In the vestry several antique relics are deposited, the most curious and remarkable of which is the *Horn of Ulphus*, given with all his property to the Church of St. Peter of York. Ulphus, son of Toraldus, was a Saxon Prince of Deira,† who bequeathed to the Cathedral all his property, to be held by the evidence of this horn. Camden states the occasion and form of the bequest, as an instance of a singular mode of endowment formerly used; and Dugdale relates respecting it, that "Ulphe, son of Thorald, who ruled

\* This inventory is given in Dugdale's *Monasticon*, and from it we learn that amongst ~~the~~ costly furniture, plate, &c., were many chalices of gold, and of silver, gilt and plain; several cups, boxes, censors, crewits, salts, paxes, ampules, pectorals, crucifixes, christmatories, candlesticks, &c., of gold and silver. Copes of cloth of gold and velvet, some embroidered, others set with pearl. Several mitres, the best of which contained 52 pointed diamonds, 51 sapphires, and 92 great pearls. Among the relics are specified some bones of St. Peter; part of the hair of St. William; the arm of St. Wilfred; two thorns of the crown of Our Saviour; a tooth of St. Appollonia; part of the brain of St. Stephen; and a cloth stained with the blood of Archbishop Scrope.

† The word *Deira* is supposed to be derived from the Saxon *Deor*, signifying *wild beasts*, with which the woods in the ancient Kingdom of Deira, now the northern counties (see page 71) were infested.

in the west of Deira, by reason of the difference which was likely to rise between his sons, about the sharing of his lands and lordships after his death, resolved to make them all alike, and thereupon coming to York with that horn which he used to drink, filled it with wine, and before the altar of God and Saint Peter, Prince of the Apostles, kneeling, devoutly drank the wine, and by that ceremony enfeoffed this Church with all his lands and revenues." Several lands, part of this donation, and situated on the east side of York, are still held by the Church, and are called *de Terra Ulphi*.\* As a relic of Saxon art this horn is very valuable; it is made of an elephant's tusk, is twenty-nine inches in length, curiously carved and polished, and was originally ornamented with gold and mounting. It is said that after the surrender of York to the Parliamentary army, in 1644, the horn was taken from the Minster and denuded of its golden appendages, but it was probably stolen from the Church at the period of the Reformation. It is evident from Camden's remarks, that the horn was not there when he wrote in 1607. "I was informed," says he, "that this great curiosity was kept in the Church till the last age." It somehow came into the possession of Thomas Lord Fairfax, and his successor Henry Lord Fairfax restored it to the Cathedral. The Dean and Chapter redecorated it with brass instead of gold, and caused a Latin inscription to be engraved upon it, which may be thus translated:— "This horn, Ulphus, Prince of the western parts of Deira, originally gave to the Church of St. Peter, together with all his lands and revenues. Henry Lord Fairfax at last restored it, when it had been lost or conveyed away. The Dean and Chapter decorated it anew, A.D. 1675." A sculptured bass relief of this interesting horn may be seen above the arches of the choir and nave, in a line with various shields commemorative of the different benefactors of the Cathedral.

A curious cup or bowl is also in the vestry, called *Archbishop Scrope's Indulgence Cup*. This elegant cup stands on three feet, and is ornamented inside with the arms of the Cordwainers' Company; the rim, which is edged round with silver gilt, has the following inscription:—

"Richarde arche beschope Scrope grant unto all tho that drinkis of  
this cope XLti dayes to pardon.

Robert Gobson beschope mesm grant in same form aforesaid XLti  
dayes to pardon. Robert Strensall.

\* In ancient times there are several instances of estates that were passed without any writings at all, by the lord's delivery of such pledges as a sword, a helmet, a horn, a cup, a bow or arrow. Ingulphus tells us that such grants were made "merely by word of mouth, without any writing or paper, only by the lord's delivery of a sword, helmet, or horn."

"Popular tradition has usually stated," says the editor of *York and its Environs*, "that this cup was presented by Scrope to the Cordwainer's Company, but recent investigation has proved this to be erroneous, and it is now pretty much proved to have been originally given to the York guild of Corpus Christi; a Corporation which distinguished itself for the sumptuous manner in which the incorporated trades and crafts of the City celebrated the religious festival of Corpus Christi, by the exhibition of pageants and miracle plays, which every year attracted many persons of rank and importance to witness their representation. After the dissolution of the guild, this cup passed into other hands, but when it came into the possession of the Cordwainers' Company is unknown. On the dissolution of this Company in 1808, it was presented by Mr. Hornby (the last master of the Company) to the Cathedral."

A large silver crosier, or pastoral staff, is also kept in the vestry, and exhibited to visitors. This crosier was given by Catherine of Portugal, Queen Dowager of Charles II. of England, to Cardinal Smith, her Confessor, when he was nominated to the See of York, by James II., in 1687. It is recorded that as the Cardinal was going to the Cathedral, in procession from the Catholic Chapel established by James in the Manor Palace, Lord Danby, (afterwards Duke of Leeds) wrested the crosier from him, and afterwards presented it to the Dean and Chapter. It is six and a half feet in length, weighs thirteen pounds, and under the bend of the crook are figures of the Blessed Virgin and Infant Saviour, as well as the arms of Portugal on one side, and those of the Prelate with a mitre and crosier surmounted by a Cardinal's hat, on the other.

Whilst taking up the old pavement in 1786, the pastoral ring of Archbishop Sewel, who died in 1258, was found, consisting of a plain ruby set in gold; Archbishop Greenfield's, who died in 1315, a ruby set in gold; and also that of Archbishop Bowet, who died in 1423. The latter is a composition set in gold, bearing the motto, "Honor et Joy." These rings, together with three silver chalices, also found in the graves of these prelates, are deposited in the vestry, as well as an antique wooden head, found on opening the grave of Archbishop Rotherham, who died of the plague in 1500. As the body of this prelate was immediately interred without ceremony, it is probable that at his funeral, which took place when the pestilence was abated, a wooden effigy, of which this head is a part, was substituted for the real corpse. There is also preserved the old copy of the Bible with its chain, that was formerly attached to a low desk near the door in the south aisle of the choir, opening into the Minster Yard.

An antique chair, said to be coeval with the Cathedral, and in which several of the Saxon Kings were crowned, and which was used at the coronation of Edward IV. and James I., is now placed within the communion rails.

THE WINDOWS of the Cathedral are richly adorned with the representations of Scriptural history, Saints, Kings, legends, shields, &c., in painted glass.\* About one hundred of them are embellished with ancient devices, whilst only six are of modern date. It is rather remarkable that though the choir was so near being consumed in the fire of 1829, none of the painted glass was materially impaired; and with the exception of the damage to the windows at the extreme west end of the aisles of the nave, the same remark may be applied to that part of the building with reference to the fire of 1840.

The magnificent *East Window*, the greatest light in the Minster, and which for masonry and ancient glazing is unequalled, consists of nine lights, and occupies almost the whole of the east end of the choir. The height of this great window is seventy-five feet; it is thirty-two feet in breadth; and is embellished with nearly two hundred subjects from sacred history. "This window," says Drake, "may be justly called the wonder of the world, both for masonry and glazing;" and as has already been observed, Mr. Pugin considered it the finest window in the world. "It is near the breadth and height of the middle choir. The upper part is an admirable piece of tracery, below which are one hundred and seventeen partitions, representing so much of Holy Writ, that it almost takes in the whole history of the Bible. This window was begun to be glazed at the charge of the Dean and Chapter, in 1405, who had contracted with John Thornton, of Coventry, glazier, to execute it." (See page 425). "We may suppose this man," he continues, "to have been the best artist in his time for this kind of work, by their sending so far for him; and indeed the window shews it."

"The east window surpasses all that the pen can describe, or pencil portray," writes Allen, "if we consider it in the whole, as to extent, ingenuity of design, or richness of execution." Each pane of glass is about a yard square; the figures in general are about two feet two inches to two feet four inches high, and the heads are most beautifully drawn. The following is a detailed description of this window:—

The top contains a representation of Our Saviour in Heavenly Glory surrounded by Angels, Prophets, Patriarchs, Apostles, Confessors, and Martyrs.

\* Glass windows were not used in England before the year 675. The frames were usually filled with lattice work or fine linen cloth.—Turn. Ang. Sax., vol. ii., p. 416.

Between this and the gallery are three partitions, with designs from the Old Testament, as follows:—

*First Partition.*—The 1st compartment in this partition represents God creating the world, with the fallen angels beneath. 2.—The spirit of God dividing the waters. 3.—The herbs of the field. 4.—Light and darkness. (*This and the precedent pane seem to have been transposed.*) 5.—Birds and Fishes. 6.—Beasts and creeping things, with the creation of man. 7.—God with his face like the sun in glory, sitting in the middle of his Creation, seeing every thing was good. 8.—Adam and Eve eating the forbidden fruit in Paradise; the serpent represented with its head like a beautiful woman. 9.—An Angel driving them out of Paradise.

*Second Partition.*—1.—Cain killing his brother Abel. 2.—Noah in his Ark. 3.—Noah drunk, and his three sons. 4.—Building of Babel. 5.—Melchizedek blessing Abram. 6.—Isaac blessing Jacob. 7.—Meeting of Jacob and Esau. 8.—Moses and Aaron joining hand in hand. 9.—Jacob's sons shewing him Joseph's bloody coat.

*Third Partition.*—1.—Moses found by Pharaoh's daughter. 2.—God out of the bush calling Moses. 3.—Moses and Aaron before Pharaoh; the Rod turned into a serpent. 4.—Pharaoh and his host drowned in the Red Sea. 5.—Moses receiving the law on Mount Sinai. 6.—Moses rearing up the brazen serpent in the wilderness. 7.—Sampson pulling down the house of Dagon on himself and the Philistines. 8.—David killing Goliath with a sling. 9.—Joab killing Absalom hanging on the tree.

Of the ten partitions below the gallery, nine contain the principal subjects in the Book of Revelations, and the last one is occupied with representations of different Ecclesiastics, Kings, &c., whose names are connected with the early history of the Church in this part of Britain. They are as follows:—

*First Partition.*—1, 2, and 3.—St. John in the caldron of oil, banished by the Emperor Domitian, and sailing to the island of Patmos. 4.—An Angel coming unto St. John, as at his devotion. 5.—The Son of Man amidst the seven candlesticks. 6.—The Seven Churches of Asia. 7, 8, and 9.—The Elders worshipping God on the throne.

*Second Partition.*—1.—Angel sounding a trumpet. 2.—The Lion of the Tribe of Judah. 3.—The Lamb, the Four Beasts, and Elders. 4.—A Multitude following the Lamb. 5.—The Lamb opening first seal, the white horse and its rider with a bow. 6.—Lamb opening the second seal, the red horse and its rider. 7.—The fourth seal opened, the pale horse and death. 8.—The sixth seal opened, sun, moon, &c. 9.—The third seal opened; the black horse, its rider, having a balance. (*But these, as several others, have been misplaced since the restoration of the windows by General Fairfax.*)

*Third Partition.*—1.—Angels holding the four winds, and another ascending. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6.—Angels and Elders about the throne. 7.—Opening the seventh seal. 8.—Giving the seven angels trumpets. 9.—The fifth seal, souls under the altar.

*Fourth Partition.*—1, 2, 3.—Angels sounding. 4.—Locusts like men. 5.—Our Saviour with a Lamb, the four Evangelists, and a book sealed with seven seals. 6.—Armies of horse. 7.—The Angel opening the book. 8.—John eating the book. 9.—The Temple from whence the voice came.

*Fifth Partition.*—1, 2, 3.—Two witnesses slain in the City, and ascending up. 4.—Elders worshipping. 5.—Ark of the testament. The woman clothed with the sun in

travail, and the dragon appearing to devour her child. 7.—Michael warring against the dragon. 8.—The woman flying into the wilderness, and the dragon casting out a flood of waters to overwhelm her. 9.—Another beast risen from the earth.

*Sixth Partition.*—1.—Dragon sceptered, giving power to the beast with seven heads and ten horns. 2.—The world worshipping the monster. 3.—An Angel pouring out a vial on the afflicted people. 4.—People worshipping the beast. 5.—The third Angel pouring his vial on the rivers. 6.—Another Angel with the Gospel. 7.—The Angel over Babylon pronouncing the fall thereof. 8.—Christ with a sickle, &c. 9.—Angel treading the wine-press to the horses' bridles.

*Seventh Partition.*—1.—Elders with their harps on a sea of glass. 2.—One of the four beasts giving the Angels the seven vials of wrath. 3.—Beasts warring with the saints. 4.—Angel pouring a vial on the sea. 5.—Victory of the Lamb. 6.—Fourth Angel pouring a vial on sun, &c. 7.—The fifth Angel pouring a vial on the seat of the beast. 8.—Unclean spirits, &c., going to battle. 9.—Angel pouring a vial on the river Euphrates, which runs by Babylon. (Note, *the precedent two panes are misplaced*).

*Eighth Partition.*—1.—The whore sitting upon the beast. 2.—Babylon's fall. 3.—God praised in Heaven. 4.—St. John falling at the Angel's feet. 5.—Heaven opened; one on a white horse, armies, &c. 6.—Angel crying to the fowls. 7.—Beast, Kings, and Armies. 8.—Beast taken. 9.—Angel casting him into the bottomless pit.

*Ninth Partition.*—1.—Saints on thrones. 2.—Satan loosed out of prison. 3, 4, 5, and 6.—The sea, death, and hell, delivering up their dead, who stand before Christ as in judgment (attended by angelic powers holding the instruments of his passion, while the books are opened by other Angels), on his right hand are the blessed, and on the left the wicked. 7.—New heaven and new earth. 8.—New Jerusalem, over which is Christ enthroned, an Angel with a vial and golden reed, St. John beholding, "*and the pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb.*" 9.—Our Saviour appearing with a book opened, on which is written, Ego, Alpha, and Omega, and St. John writing the wonderful things he had seen.

*Tenth Partition.*—1.—Pope Gregory VII., and Archbishop Thomas I. 2, 3, and 4, are nine Kings, viz., Ethelbert, Lucius, Ceolwulph, Edwin, Oswald, Oswin, Edward the Confessor, Harold, and William the Conqueror. Archbishop Aldred at prayers, 5.—Archbishop le Zouch, with St. Augustine and St. Honorius, Archbishops of Canterbury. 7.—St. Paulinus, Pope Eleutherius, and St. Wilfrid. 8.—St. John of Beverley; St. Calixtus Bishop of Rome, and St. Egbert, King Ebianos, between two Flamines or Heathen Priests; one of these high priests being dignified with the title of Proto-flam or first flam, the other with Arch-flam only.

The windows of the little transepts in the choir, which are remarkably high and elegant, are divided into one hundred and eight compartments, filled with extremely fine paintings, illustrative of some passage of Holy Writ, or of ceremonies connected with the Church.

The great window over the west entrance to the Church, though of considerable size, is inferior to the eastern light. The tracery of the upper part of the window is rich and intricate, and the mellowed rays of light, as they come upon the eye through the stained glass of the lower divisions, is pecu-



liarily fine. The figures in the upper row represent Religious at their devotions. Those in the middle row are the Apostles, &c., as St. Peter, St. Paul, St. John, &c. Then follow the largest effigies, which are the eight Saints of the See, viz., Paulinus, Bosa, John of Beverley, Wilfrid I., Egbertus, Oswaldus, Gulielmus, and Servallus.

The west window of the north aisle of the nave has representations of St. Catherine, St. Peter, St. Paul, and Christ in Judgment. The first window from the west is plain; the second contains the Annunciation, the Wise Men's Offering, the Salutation of St. Elizabeth, and the Arms of the Ingrams and Grevelles; the third has the Crucifixion of St. Peter, and Confession, Penance, and Absolution; the fourth, the Crucifixion of our Lord, Christ before Pilate, and the Arms of the Strongbows per pale with the Mowbrays; the fifth, the Crucifixion, and other subjects; the sixth is very curious, and is supposed to have been given to the Cathedral by the bell founders; and the seventh, and last in this aisle, represents St. Catherine, St. Alban, and several curious legends. In the lower part of the window are the Royal Arms of England, and those of the Queens Eleanor of Castile, Eleanor of Provence, and Isabella of France. The window at the west end of the south aisle contains the Crucifixion, with the Blessed Virgin and St. John the Evangelist on either side. The first window from the west is plain; the second has St. Peter, St. Christopher, and St. Lawrence; and the remaining windows of this aisle have been made up of various subjects, principally saints and legends. The third has the date 1789, and the sixth and seventh that of 1782. In the latter window is a very old representation of the Crucifixion.

The beautiful lancet window of five lights, in the north front of the north transept is one of the chief ornaments of the Church. The chaste but severe simplicity of these lights strike the eye of the beholder immediately on entering the Cathedral. No finer examples of Early English windows can be found in this country. The lights, which are each fifty-four feet in height and five and a half feet in breadth, are filled with mosaic work, of an extremely rich and varied pattern, and their effect is beautiful. This is sometimes called the *Jewish Window*, probably from the resemblance it bears to the embroidery or needlework which was used in adorning the ancient Jewish Tabernacles. As has already been observed, this window has been traditionally named the *Five Sisters*, from its having been presented to the Cathedral by five sisters (nuns), who wrought with their own hands the patterns for the stained glass devices. The small rim of clear glass round the edges is a modern addition, and gives it a very pleasing effect. In the south transept

the upper or marigold window has a fine effect from the brilliancy of its coloured glass resembling that flower. The first window in the second tier of this front of the transept has a full-length figure of St. William; the second, which is of two lights, has effigies of St. Peter and St. Paul, each with his proper insignia beneath him; and in the next window is the effigy of St. Wilfred. The windows of the lowermost tier are of modern workmanship, having being executed by Mr. William Peckitt, of York, a self-taught artist, who died in 1795. They contain very elegant full-length figures of Abram, representing *Faith*; Solomon, representing *Truth*; Moses, *Righteousness*; and St. Peter. The window representing St. Peter was set up in 1768, and the others in 1796. The former was presented to the Cathedral by the artist in his lifetime, and the others were bequeathed at his death. In the east aisle of this transept is some of the oldest glass in the Church, representing full-lengths of St. Michael, St. George, the Blessed Virgin, and Archbishop of St. William.

The glass in the choir is very fine and curious. In the first window from the west in the north aisle are representations of St. Peter and St. Paul, the Blessed Virgin, and Archbishop Bowett, at an altar. The second has full-length figures of St. John of Beverley, Archbishop Scrope, and St. William, with several curious legends; the third contains several full-length effigies of Bishops with legends; the fourth is the small transept window; the fifth has figures of the Blessed Virgin and Infant Saviour, St. Anne and St. Elizabeth, with the infant Baptist; and round the window are the Arms of Archbishop Scrope; the sixth exhibits St. Thomas, St. John, St. Edward the Confessor, and St. John the Baptist; the seventh window is blank; and the end window of the aisle has the Crucifixion, St. James, the Blessed Virgin, &c.

In the first window from the west, in the south aisle of the choir, are full-length figures of David and the Prophets Nehemiah and Malachy, with legends; the second is filled with legends, principally from the life of Christ; the third has several Saints within borders of pomegranate branches and leaves; the fourth is the little transept window; the fifth is filled with legends, much confused; the sixth has King Edwin, St. John, St. James, &c.; and the seventh, in the upper portion, has full lengths of Joseph of Arimathea and the Saxon King, Ina, the founder of Glastonbury Monastery. The lower part of this window, conspicuous for its vivid colours, was presented by the Earl of Carlisle, in 1804. It is supposed to have been copied from a design of Sebastian del Piombo, the great favourite of Pope Clement VIII., and was brought from the Church of St. Nicholas, in Rouen, in Nor-

mandy. The figures, which are as large as life, represent the meeting of the Blessed Virgin and St. Elizabeth; and the armorial bearings of the family of the noble donor occupy the compartments.

The interior dimensions\* of the Cathedral are as follows :—

FEET.		FEET.	
Length from E. to W. ....	524½	From the choir to east end.....	222
Breadth of the east end.....	105	From altar screen to east end ....	26
Breadth of the west end .....	109	Height of the east window .....	75
Length of cross aisles from N. to S.	222	Breadth of the east window .....	32
Height of central tower.....	213	Height of ceiling of chapter house..	67
Height of the nave.....	99	Diameter from glass to glass .....	63
Breadth of body and side aisles ..	109	Length of the library .....	56
Height of the side arches N. to S. .	42	Breadth of the library .....	22
From west door to the choir.....	261	Height of the cornice .....	22
Length of the choir .....	157½	Height of the organ screen.....	24
Breadth of the choir .....	46½	Breadth of the organ screen .....	50

MONUMENTS.—The mortal remains of a very considerable number of persons of rank and distinction are deposited in this ancient Temple. The head of Edwin, the first Christian King of Northumberland, who died in 663, was interred here, and his body in the Abbey of Whitby. History also records, amongst the distinguished persons buried here, the names of Eadbert and Eanbald, Kings of Northumberland; Sweyne, King of Denmark; Tosti, Earl of Northumberland, brother of Harold; William de Hatfield, second son of Edward III.; and a very large proportion of the Archbishops who have presided over the See, from the introduction of Christianity into this province

\* Table of comparative dimensions of the principal Cathedrals in England, in feet.

	Extreme Length East to West.	Length of Transept North to South.	Breadth of the Nave.	Length of the Nave.	Height of Ceiling of the Nave.	Length of the Choir.	Height of Ceiling of the Choir.	Height of West Towers.	Height of Centre Tower.
York .....	542	222	109	261	99	157	99	196	213
Canterbury .....	514	140	74	214	80	150	80	130	235
Durham .....	420	176	80	240	70	117	71	143	212
Ely .....	517	178	73	327	70	101	70	270	113
Gloucester .....	420	144	84	174	67	130	86	—	261
Lincoln .....	498	227	83	252	83	158	—	270	288
St. Paul's .....	500	248	107	306	88	105	88	221	356
Salisbury .....	452	210	76	246	84	140	84	—	400
Westminster .....	489	189	96	130	101	152	101	—	—
Winchester .....	554	208	86	247	78	138	78	133	133

to the present day. The principal tombs and monuments occupy the aisles on each side of the choir, and the Lady Chapel behind the altar screen; but there are a few tombs and inscriptions in the other parts of the Cathedral.

On entering the Church at the usual door in the south front, the first monument that attracts the stranger's attention is situated in the eastern aisle of the south transept, and is the tomb of *Archbishop Walter de Grey*, the founder of this part of the Cathedral, who died in 1255; the founders of Cathedrals being usually buried in the portion in which they themselves built. The design of this monument, which is one of the most interesting in the Church, is particularly elegant. It is a beautiful relic of the thirteenth century, consisting of two stories, or tiers of trefoil arches, supported by eight slender columns, with capitals of luxuriant foliage, sustaining a canopy divided into eight niches, with angular pediments, decorated with elaborate finials. These are enriched with figures of birds, foliage, &c.; and the sweep of the pediment has several crockets running up its exterior moulding. On a flat tomb, under the canopy, is an effigy of the Archbishop in his pontifical robes. This monument is inclosed by a bronzed iron railing, of rich and elaborate workmanship, erected by the late Archbishop Markham. The pillars supporting the canopy are of black marble, eight feet in height. This is one of the earliest examples of canopied tombs remaining in this country. By the side of this monument is another of a flat tabular form, supposed to contain the remains of *Archbishop Godfrey de Ludham*, otherwise *Kinton*, who died in 1264. In the western side of the north transept is a flat tomb of black marble, supported by iron trellis, two and a half feet high, to the memory of *John Haxby*, Treasurer of the Cathedral, who died in 1424. Within the grating is a dilapidated stone figure, representing a wasted corpse in a winding sheet. According to stipulations in certain ancient deeds, payments of the Cathedral revenues should be, and, we believe, sometimes are made on this tomb. In the eastern aisle of the north transept is a very beautiful monument erected over the grave of *Archbishop Grenfeld*, who died in 1315. It consists of an altar tomb, the dado enriched with panelling of pointed arches. From the ends rise four dwarf columns, supporting a pedimental canopy, ornamented with crockets, which terminate in a superb finial, behind which, on a column, is a small statue of the Archbishop, in the act of giving the benediction. On the tomb is the full-length effigy of the prelate engraved in brass, habited in *pontificalibus*. The whole is an interesting specimen of the time of Henry VI. It was behind this monument that the incendiary Martin concealed himself, after attending service in the choir, before setting

the Minster on fire in 1829; and it was through the window in the end of the west aisle in this transept that he made his escape after the building was in flames.

Opposite to the entrance to the Chapter House is a fine altar tomb to the memory of *Stephen Beckwith, M.D.*, who died December 23rd, 1843. On the top is a beautiful whole length marble effigy of the deceased, lying supine, while in niches on the sides of the tomb are recorded his munificent bequests, as follows:—To the Museum of the Yorkshire Philosophical Society, £10,000.; the Minster Bells and Chapter House, £5,000.; the Wilberforce School for the Blind, £5,000.; the Female Penitentiary, £5,000.; the Blue Coat Boys' School, £3,500.; the Grey Coat Girls' School, £3,500.; the Dispensary, £3,500.; the Church of England School, £2,500.; the Infant School, Skeldergate, £2,500.; St. Thomas' Hospital, £3,500.; Lady Middleton's Hospital, £2,500.; and to the poor of St. Martin's parish and the two parishes of Bishophill, £500.

In the north end of the west aisle of the north transept, opposite Dr. Beckwith's monument, is a monument to the late Archbishop (Harcourt) of York, who died in 1847, and was buried at Nuneham Courtney, near Oxford. (See page 414). It is similar in design to the Dr. Beckwith's monument, and consists of a panelled altar tomb, upon which reclines a full length figure in white marble, representing the deceased prelate.

On a pillar in the south aisle of the nave is a brass plate, with the half length effigy of a woman in the costume of the period, with an inscription showing that there lies buried the body of *Elizabeth Eymes*, one of the gentlewomen of Queen Elizabeth, and daughter of Sir Edward Neville, who died in 1583. On the opposite side in the same aisle, on a brass plate, is a Latin inscription, with a half length effigy, in a fur gown, of *James Cotrel, Esq.*, a native of Dublin, who resided some time at York, and died in 1595.

In the wall of the north aisle of the nave is a low altar tomb, the dado ornamented with pierced quatrefoils, through which the coffin within it may be seen, and covered with a low pointed arch. This tomb is supposed to enclose the remains of Archbishop Roger, who filled the See of York, from 1154 to 1181. These are all the monuments or inscriptions now remaining in the body of the church, though there were formerly many more.

Entering the south aisle of the choir the monuments, in the order in which they occur, are as follows:—A white marble monument to *Christopher E. T. Oldfield*, a distinguished officer in the Indian army, who died at Nakodah, in the East Indies, in 1850, aged 45 years. The design is of the Italian school, and the workmanship is very beautiful. The base is of vein marble,

having in the centre a Roman shield and helmet, with cross swords enclosed by a wreath. The tablet and upper portion of the monument are composed of pure statuary, being surmounted by a very elaborately executed combination of military trophies, and the whole is placed on a ground of Galway black marble. It was erected in 1852, at the expence of the officers of the fifth regiment of Bengal Light Infantry, of which regiment the deceased was Major.

Against the wall near the door of the vestry is a beautiful monument erected by the surviving officers of the 51st regiment (the 2nd regiment of the West Riding of Yorkshire), to commemorate Major W. H. Hare, and the officers and non-commissioned officers and private soldiers of that regiment who fell in Burmah during the war of 1852-3. The monument is of white marble, exhibiting above the tablet a whole length figure in bold relief, of an officer in full dress uniform, leaning pensively on his sword. Beneath the tablet is a marble roll containing the names of 303 non-commissioned officers and privates, who fell in Burmah during the campaign.

In this locality is a small tablet to William Palmer, who died in 1605. A neat marble tablet, with two Doric columns supporting a pediment, to the memory of the *Rt. Hon. Wm. Wickham*, formerly of Cottingley in this county, who died in 1840, aged 79. A tablet to *Jane Hodson*, who died in 1636, in giving birth to her 24th child, herself being only in her 38th year. She was the wife of Phineas Hodson, Professor of Theology, and the Chancellor of the Cathedral. It is a small compartment with two Corinthian columns, and a plain entablature with a pediment upon which are two weeping boys, coats of arms, an urn, and a long Latin inscription. The tomb of *Sir Wm. Gee*, of Bishop Burton, in this county, Knt., a Privy Councillor to James I., who died in 1611: On the tomb are effigies of himself, his two wives, and six children, all in the attitude of prayer. A small oval tablet containing a short inscription to the memory of *Henry Witham*, an officer in the Craven Legion, who was accidentally drowned in the river Ouse, whilst stationed at York, in 1809. It was erected by his brother officers, as a mark of respect to his memory. An antique monument to *Archbishop Hutton*, who died in 1605. The recumbent figure of the prelate is represented under an arch, which is supported by two Corinthian columns. The entablature is surmounted by coats of arms; and in front of the altar tomb, forming the basement of the monument, are three recessed arches, containing kneeling figures of the Archbishop's children. A marble monument, consisting of a large urn placed between two busts, one of which represents *Henry Finch*, *Dean of York*, who died in 1728, and the other the *Hon. and Rev. Edward*

*Finch, Canon Residentiary*, who died in 1737. Above is a small pediment, and the family arms with an inscription.

The monument of *Nicholas Wanton, Esq.*, of London, is a neat piece of architecture, with a figure in the attitude of prayer between Corinthian pilasters. The inscription states that he died in 1617, and that his brother *William* is also interred near the same place.

*Archbishop Lamplugh's* monument is enclosed within iron palisades, and exhibits on a pedestal a statue of the mitred prelate in his episcopal robes, with the crosier in his hand. Two pilasters support a semicircular pediment, with an urn on the top. The Archbishop died in 1691, in his 76th year. This is one of the earliest instances of monumental effigies the size of life presented in an erect position.

A small antique monument, with the bust of a female in a niche, to *Mrs. Anne Bennet*, who died in 1601.

A pyramidal monument of white marble, to the memory of *Thomas Lamplugh*, Rector of Bolton Percy, and Canon Residentiary of this Cathedral. He was grandson to the Archbishop of the same name, and died in 1747, aged 60.

Near the entrance to the crypt is a marble altar tomb to *Archbishop Dolben*, who died in 1686, in the 62nd year of his age. On the table reclines a handsome robed and mitred figure of the prelate. On the south wall is a beautiful marble slab, on which is represented a sarcophagus, with arms and an inscription to the memory of the *Lady Mary Hore*, who died at York on her way to Scarborough in 1798, aged 22 years.

The monument to the *Rev. George William Anderson*, who died in 1785, in his 25th year, consists of a compartment, with an oval inscription tablet, and a serpent in a circle being the emblem of eternity. A variegated marble tablet, on which is represented a sarcophagus in white marble, stands against the wall, in memory of *Mr. Francis Croft*, who died in 1837, aged 81.

Here is an elegant classical monument of white marble, by *Westmacott*, to the memory of *Dr. William Burgh*, author of a treatise "On the Holy Trinity." The doctor was a native of Ireland, and died in York in 1808, aged 87. The monument exhibits a full-length emblematical figure of Religion, with a dove on her head, and bearing a cross in her hand. On the base or pedestal is a long poetical inscription, written by *J. B. S. Morrill, Esq.*, of Rokeby Park, the early friend of Sir Walter Scott.

Towards the east end of this aisle is an elegant veined marble monument of the Corinthian order, to *William Wentworth, Earl of Strafford*, son of the unfortunate Earl who was beheaded. In a double niche, between beautiful

fluted columns, are whole length figures of the Earl and his Countess, with an urn between them, and the coronet laid at their feet. On each column stands a handsome vase or urn; upon the pedestal, beside each figure, a weeping cherub; and over the niche, within a circular pediment, are the Wentworth Arms. Beneath is a long inscription, descriptive of his illustrious family connexions. The Earl died in 1695.

Next to Lord Strafford's is a large white marble tablet to the *Rt. Hon. Lora Burton Dawnay, Viscountess Downe*, who died in 1812, aged 73. In this neighbourhood is a neat marble tablet to the memory of the late *Rev. John Eyre*, Archdeacon of Nottingham, and Canon Residentiary of York Cathedral, who died in 1830. Also a neat monument with various devices, to *Edward Tipping, Esq.*, of Bellurgan Park, County of Louth, Ireland, who died in 1789, aged 35.

A new Gothic monument in stone to *George Hoare, Esq.*, and Francis his wife. The former died in 1813, and the latter in 1811. The monument consists of a tablet under a beautiful canopy, adorned with finials, crockets, &c.

Over a small door in the south east corner of this aisle, is the mural monument of *Archbishop Piers*, who died in 1594, aged 71. It is a small square compartment, with two Corinthian columns supporting an entablature decorated with shields of arms, &c.

The monuments in the Lady Chapel are—under the great east window, a superb one in memory of the *Hon. Thomas Watson Wentworth*, third son of Edward Lord Rockingham, who died in 1723, aged 58; also to *Thomas Watson Wentworth*, Marquis of Rockingham, who died in 1750, and was interred in his uncle's, the Earl of Stafford's, vault; and likewise to *Charles Watson Wentworth*, the last Marquis of Rockingham, who died in 1782, aged 52, and was buried in the same vault, with great honours, as already described at page 272. This beautiful piece of sculpture, which was executed by J. B. Guelfi Romanus, consists of an elegant basement of veined marble, on which is a circular pedestal, whereon stands a full length figure of the first named deceased, in a Roman habit, leaning with his left arm upon an urn. A fine female figure is represented sitting on the other side, reclining her head upon her right hand, with her elbow upon another pedestal; the back ground of the monument forming a pyramid is surmounted by a coat of arms. This is the best piece of sculpture in the Church.

*Archbishop Henry Bowett's* monument is of exquisite taste and elegance. It is nearly thirty feet high, and is decorated with light and lofty pinnacles, statues, &c. The altar tomb is placed beneath an elliptical arch, covered with tracery, and surmounted by pinnacles. The arch is pointed, and the



roof beautifully groined. The whole is a very fine specimen of the architecture of the fifteenth century. Archbishop Bowett died in 1423.

Under the east window is a sumptuous marble monument to *Archbishop Sharpe*, who died at Bath in 1713, aged 69. It is of the Corinthian Order, with pilasters; upon the pedestal is a mitred figure of the prelate in a reclining posture, being about half raised on the right arm, which rests on a cushion, with a book in the left hand. The whole is decorated with figures of winged cherubs, urns, drapery, &c.

*Archbishop Matthew's* monument formerly stood against the wall beneath the great east window, but it was destroyed by the fire of 1829. His effigy, though broken into three parts, is still preserved here. A descendant of that prelate erected another handsome monument to his memory, on the south side of the Lady Chapel, in 1844. It consists of a Gothic altar tomb of Yorkshire stone, with a beautiful black marble slab. The sides of the tomb are each in five compartments, in which are shields of arms. This prelate died in 1628, aged 82.

On the north side of this Chapel is another recently erected altar tomb, to the memory of *Archbishop Markham*, who died in 1807. It is similar in design to the last mentioned monument, and round its base is a beautiful pavement of encaustic tiles.

In a niche in a wall under the east window is a monument to *Frances Matthew*, relict of Archbishop Matthew, who died in 1629, aged 78. It exhibits a female figure kneeling at a desk between two columns, with two other figures standing near the columns in a devout posture. The whole is decorated with angels, &c. Mrs. Matthew was daughter of Barlow, Bishop of Chichester; her first husband was son of Parker, Archbishop of Canterbury; her second husband was Archbishop of York; and her four sisters each married a Bishop.

*Archbishop Frewen's* monument is twenty feet high and ten broad, and consists of two Corinthian columns, with an arched pediment, between which is a full length effigy of the prelate in gown and cap, the whole being decorated with books, coats of arms, &c., and surmounted by figures of Faith, Hope, and Charity. He died in 1664, in his 76th year.

*Archbishop Scrope's* monument is about three feet high and eight feet long. The sides are ornamented with sculptured shields in quatrefoil compartments. This Archbishop was beheaded for high treason in 1405. (See pp. 147, 404). The tomb is not inscribed.

*Archbishop de Rotherham's* monument is a solid Gothic altar tomb, restored at the expense of Lincoln College, Oxford, in 1832, the deceased prelate

having been the second founder of that College. The original monument, which was erected by the Archbishop himself, and under which he was buried, was partially destroyed at the conflagration in 1829. He died in 1500.

*Archbishop Sewall's* (removed from the south transept) is a table monument, with a cross flory sculptured on the top. Over it was a marble slab, supported by twelve pillars, but this was destroyed by the fire in 1829.

The monument of the *Rt. Hon. Frances Cecil, Countess of Cumberland*, is a table tomb, supported by four vases. This lady was the daughter of the Earl of Salisbury, and wife of Henry, Lord Clifford, Bromfleet, Vetrepon, and Vessey, Earl of Cumberland, and Lord Lieutenant of the County of York. She died in 1643, in her fiftieth year.

Against the wall at the north side is a beautiful tablet to the memory of *Mrs. Mary Thornhill*, who died at Fixby, in this County, in 1727, aged 71 years; and likewise to the memory of her two daughters. On the top is an urn in white marble; and on the right side of an inscription is a branch of laurel, interwoven with cypress; whilst on the left are cypress and palms.

There is a fine marble monument to *Archbishop Sterne*, who died in 1688, aged 87, beneath the east window of the north aisle of the choir. Upon the pedestal is a mitred effigy reclining; over the figure is an architrave, frieze and cornice adorned with drapery and festoons, and surmounted by a semi-circular pediment and coat of arms. Nearly adjoining is a neat tablet to *R. Sterne, Esq.*, of Elvington, who died in 1791, aged 51.

A square compartment, with small Corinthian columns, in the north aisle, contains an inscription to the memory of *Lionel Ingram*, infant son of Arthur Ingrant, Knt.

Here are neat oval compartments inscribed to the memory of *Mrs. Penelope Gibson* and *Mrs. Johannah Gibson*, both of Welbourne, in this County. The former died in 1715, and the latter in 1773. There is likewise in this locality a small marble tablet to *Charles Layton, Esq.*, who died in 1675.

*Samuel Breary, D.D.*, Prebendary of Strensall, and Rector of Middleton and South Dalton, has a neat monument of grey marble, surmounted by a pediment, erected here to his memory. He died in 1735, aged 65.

*Mrs. Mary Pulleyn's* is a pyramidal monument, surmounted with an elegant urn, on the pedestal of which are placed the arms, decorated on each side with cypress. She died in 1786, aged 82.

A neat modern monument against the wall is inscribed to the *Rev. Samuel Terrick*, Rector of Wheldrake. He died in 1719, in the 51st year of his age.

In this aisle is the splendid monument, erected by a general subscription in the County of York, as a tribute of public love and esteem for the memory

of the respected statesman, *Sir George Saville, Bart.* It is a beautiful white marble statue, placed on an elegant enriched marble pedestal, six feet high, with scrolls at the angles, and on the frieze of which are introduced the emblems of Wisdom, Fortitude, and Eternity. Sir George is represented leaning upon a pillar, holding in his right hand a scroll, on which is writtten "The Petition of the Freeholders of the County of York." The whole height of the monument is sixteen feet, and on the front of the pedestal is an inscription commemorative of his public and private virtues. Sir George represented this County in five successive Parliaments, and departed this life on the 9th of January, 1784, in the fifty-eighth year of his age.

There is a white marble monument against the wall, to the memory of the *Rev. John Richardson*, Canon Residentiary of this Church, who died in 1735.

The neat statuary marble monument to *John Dealtry, M.D.*, who died in 1773, aged 65, consists of a figure of Health in *alto relievo*, with her usual insignia, bending over an urn, and dropping a chaplet.

*Sir Thomas Davenport's* is a highly finished pyramidal monument. Sir Thomas was one of his Majesty's Sergeants-at-Law; and having opened the Commission of Assize in York, on Saturday, March 11th, 1786, and attended the Minster on the following day, he was seized with a fever, and died on the 25th of the same month, aged 52.

*The Hon. Mrs. Langley's* monument, which is of pointed architecture, is exceedingly beautiful. The upper part is a canopy, composed of several arches, with numerous pinnacles, &c. This lady, who was the daughter of Henry, Lord Middleton, and relict of R. Langley, Esq., of Wykeham Abbey, died in 1824, aged 65.

The neat marble monument to *Admiral Medley* has a fine bust, with arms, curious devices of naval instruments, ships, &c. The Admiral was born at Grimston Garth, became Vice-Admiral of the Blue, and Commander-in-Chief in the Mediterranean; and he died at Savona in 1747.

There is a neat plain monument against the wall, to the memory of *William Pearson, LL.D.*, Chancellor of the Diocese of York, who died in 1715, aged 53; and beneath is a small monument to *Mrs. Raynes*, who died in 1689.

The monument to *Charles Howard, Earl of Carlisle*, Privy Councillor to Charles II., is a marble structure composed of two pilasters, and a circular pediment, adorned with a bust of the Earl, several urns, cherubs, coats of arms, &c. On one column is an inscription to the memory of the deceased nobleman, who died in 1684, aged 56; and on another column of the same monument is an inscription to the memory of *Sir John Fenwicke, Bart.*, of Fenwicke Castle, Northumberland, who died in 1696, aged 52, and was

buried in London. In the centre of the monument is an inscription to *Lady Mary Fenwicks*, daughter of the above-named Earl, and relict of the said Sir John Fenwicke, who died in 1780, aged fifty.

*Sir William Ingram's* is an antique monument, decorated with figures of himself and his wife, coats of arms, &c. He was a Doctor of Laws, a Master in Chancery, and sole Deputy Commissary of the Prerogative Court of York, and was knighted by King James. He died in 1625.

There is a small monument, decorated with coats of arms, containing an inscription to *Mrs. Annabella Wickham*, wife of Henry Wickham, D.D., Archdeacon of York. She died in 1625.

*Dr. Swinburne's* monument, which is partly modern, is decorated with coats of arms, small figures, and angels, and a large figure kneeling under an arch. There is a short inscription, but no date.

Against the wall is a variegated marble monument, with a white oval centre, inscribed to *Captain Pelsant Reeves*, of Aborfield, Berks., who fell in battle at Toulon, on the 30th of November, 1793, in the 29th year of his age.

Adjoining the preceding is a handsome white marble monument to the memory of the *Rev. Rd. Thompson*, Prebendary of York, and Rector of Kirk-Deighton, who died in 1795; also to the memory of Anne his wife, who died in 1791. It is supported by two flat pillars, one of which is crowned with an urn, and the other with a representation of books piled up. A large urn is placed on the top, and the whole is ornamented with emblematic devices.

The handsome monument of Corinthian architecture, erected to *Sir Henry Bellasis*, is decorated with coats of arms, and three small figures in the attitude of prayer. In the upper part, beneath arches, are figures of the knight and his lady; the latter was a daughter of the famous Sir Thomas Fairfax.

A small plain tablet against the wall is inscribed to *John Farr Abbot, Esq.*, of London, who died at York in 1794, aged 38 years. Beneath this is a small tablet to *Elizabeth Challenor*, who died in 1798, aged fifty-two.

Over the grave of *Richard Wharton, Esq.*, of Carlton, in this County, is a very neat white marble monument on a black marble ground. On the top is an elegant sarcophagus with the family arms in front. Mr. Wharton died in 1794, aged 64 years.

The monument of *Archbishop Savage*, on the opposite side of the aisle, was erected about A.D. 1500, and restored in 1813. It may be regarded as one of the latest examples of the elegant English style, which, towards the end of the sixteenth century, was corrupted and debased by the intermixture of Grecian and Roman architecture. On an altar tomb lies the effigy of the prelate, arrayed in full pontificals; and above is a pointed arch in panels.

In this aisle are two very large stone coffins, found some years ago without Bootham Bar; and near them are placed two stone effigies, removed from another part of the Church—one of the effigies, which is attired in chain armour, with a shield, &c., is supposed to represent a member of the family of Mauley; and the other, we are told by Allen, was formerly supposed to be Roman, but has lately been considered as a Saxon layman of high rank. Here are also two very large ancient triangular chests, adorned with curious iron scroll work. These formerly held the copes and other splendid vestments of the Cathedral dignitaries.

In this aisle, near the entrance from the transept, are two old monuments, the brass inscriptions of which are gone. One is supposed to be that of *Bryan Higden*, Dean of York in 1539, and the other is unknown.

Against the wall on the opposite side, near the western end of this aisle, is the handsome monument of *Prince William de Hatfield*,\* second son of King Edward III., who died in 1344, at the early age of eight years. Under a beautiful canopy the royal youth is represented in alabaster, habited in a doublet with long sleeves, a mantle, plain hose, and shoes, richly ornamented. The head of the Prince was formerly supported by two angels, now destroyed, and his feet rest against a lion *couchant*. A large quantity of wax tapers appear to have been burnt round the tomb soon after the Prince's burial, as in the Wardrobe Book of Edward III. we find an entry of a sum of money paid for "193 lbs. of wax burnt around the Prince's corpse, at Hatfield, Pomfret, and York, where he was buried."

Of many of those monuments, especially the most sumptuous of them, Mr. Britton says, "Notwithstanding the labour and expense profusely lavished in erecting them, they display examples of every fault which should be avoided in monumental sculpture and architecture."

CHAPTER HOUSE. *Exterior*.—This magnificent octagonal structure—the most elegant one of the kind in England, or perhaps in the world—is situated on the north side of the Cathedral, and is approached by a vestibule, which branches off from the north transept of the latter edifice. There is some difficulty in ascertaining the date of its erection, as the records of the Church afford no account thereof. Stubbs, who is very particular in the memoirs of

\* This Prince was born at Hatfield, near Thorne, whence he took his surname, Queen Philippa, his mother, on the occasion of his birth, gave five marks per annum to the neighbouring Abbey of Roche, and five nobles to the monks there. When the Prince died these sums were transferred to the Church of York, where he was buried, and to the present time they are paid by the Dean and Chapter out of the impropriation of the Rectory of Hatfield, as appears by the rolls.

the rest of the buildings, entirely omits this. Some ascribe it to the time of Archbishop de Grey, the style of architecture according with the south transept, commenced by that prelate in 1220; while others attribute it to a later period, about 1300, which would make it correspond with the time of the erection of the nave. Good authorities fix the date of its erection during the reign of Edward I. Mr. Cooke says "If we may be allowed to guess at the founder, that eminent prelate (Walter de Grey) stands the fairest of any in the succession for it. The pillars which surround the dome," he continues, "are of the same kind of marble as those which support his tomb. But what seems to put the matter out of dispute is the picture of an Archbishop, betwixt those of a King and Queen, over the entrance, which, by having a serpent under his feet, into the mouth of which his crozier enters, exactly corresponds with the like representation of Walter de Grey on his monument."\*

Mr. Brown, in his valuable work on the history of York Cathedral, says that "from a comparison of separate parts and ornaments of the Chapter House, with similar parts and ornaments in other portions of the Church, he is induced to imagine that the Chapter House and its vestibule were designed about the year 1280; and as King Edward I. and his Queen Eleanor were in York, in the year 1284, assisting at the ceremony of the relics of St. William, it is highly probable that the foundation stone was then laid. But it is also probable that the subsequent progress of the erection of the nave, which was begun in the year 1291, the labour required by the rich and delicate work of the carved portions of the Chapter House, and the disquietude of the time, retarded the progress of the building, so that it may not have been completed till about the year 1340."

*The Vestibule* of the edifice is very interesting in its architecture and sculpture. Its plan is in the form of a right angle, the first portion being forty-four feet long, and the second forty-six and a half feet. The Chapter House itself is a regular octagon, with a projecting buttress attached to every angle. The architecture of the whole structure is Pointed, and is a very noble specimen of that style.

*Interior.*—The entrance to the vestibule is situated, as just intimated, in the eastern aisle of the north transept, and is of more modern workmanship than the transept. It is not unlike the great western entrance to the Cathe-

\* Cooke's Topographical description of Yorkshire. Those supposed pictures of Archbishop de Grey and Henry III. and his Queen, formerly adorned the blank side of the octagon, immediately over the entrance to the Chapter House, but this, with all the remains of the original painting and gilding in the edifice, has been removed, and the stone restored to its natural colour.

dral, and consists of two arches filled in with richly panelled doorways, on the points of which is a circle filled with tracery, and the whole is comprehended in an acute pedimental canopy. The two doors are of beautiful Gothic open wood work, and made of English oak. The interior of the vestibule is very beautiful, the sides being apparently all windows, and the walls below are richly adorned. The ceiling is of stone, and is richly groined. At the other end of this splendid vestibule is the entrance to the Chapter House, which greatly resembles the first doorway, but is of a richer character. It consists of two pointed arches, each enclosing in the head three sweeps, which portion is glazed, the lower part being occupied by oak doorways almost covered with rich scroll work in iron. The upper part of the octangular pier, which divides these arches, is pierced with a canopied niche, on the pedestal of which is a statue of the Blessed Virgin, with her Divine Son in her arms, trampling on the serpent. The image, with the drapery, is somewhat elegant, and has been all richly gilt, but, as Mr. Cooke expresses it, "it bears a mark of those times which made even stone statues feel their malice"—it is defaced. Upon the points of these arches is a circle enriched with a quatrefoil, and the whole is comprehended in one large pointed arch richly moulded, and springing from small columns attached to the jambs.

The interior of this magnificent structure produces a very solemn and impressive effect. It is sixty-three feet in diameter, and sixty-seven feet ten inches high, and this vast space is not interrupted by a single pillar, the roof being wholly supported by a single pin, geometrically placed in the centre. Rickman said of this Chapter House, "it is by far the finest polygonal room without a central pillar in the Kingdom, and the delicacy and variety of its ornaments are nearly unequalled." The richly groined ceiling of oak was formerly painted and gilded with representations of Saints and sacred subjects, all of which were tastelessly obliterated about the year 1760. The blank space over the entrance was also decorated with paintings of Saints, Kings, Bishops, &c. The thirteen niches over the door were formerly filled with statues of Our Saviour, the Blessed Virgin (in the centre), and the Twelve Apostles. Tradition says that these images were of solid silver, double gilt, the Apostles being about a foot high, and the central figure twice the height. "It is generally believed," writes Allen, "that Henry VIII. stole them from the Cathedral, or had them presented to him by Archbishop Holdgate, to prevent him from committing the theft." The whole circumference below the windows, except at the entrance, is occupied by *forty-four* canopied stone stalls for the Canons who composed the Chapter of the Cathedral. The canopies of these stalls are profusely decorated with grotesque

sculptures, ending in finials. The columns of the stalls are of Petworth marble.

Above the canopies, and on the sills of the windows, runs a gallery, which is continued round the entire room, and through the solids of the piers; the carving of this passage is exquisite. The windows of the vestibule and Chapter House are equally splendid, both in design and colouring, with those of the Cathedral. All are of ancient date, except the one opposite the entrance to the octagon, which is a restoration by Barnett, of York. The subjects of the latter window are taken from the life of Christ; the glass in the upper compartments of all the other windows exhibit the arms of founders and benefactors, and the subjects of the lower divisions are chiefly Saints, with beautiful canopies above them, very richly and elaborately coloured. Previous to 1845 the whole interior had a very dilapidated appearance, when, by means of the bequest of the late Dr. Beckwith of £3,000., for the purpose of its repair it underwent a thorough restoration. The roof was then redecorated after the old style, by Willement, of London; the marble pillars of the stalls were polished, and the stone work cleaned; the old pavement was taken up and replaced by a costly and elaborately tessellated one by Minton, of Stoke-upon-Trent: and the above-named window restored. The whole Chapter House now forms a highly finished and chastely decorated specimen of architectural ornament. We must not here omit an encomium bestowed upon this edifice by a great traveller, in an old monkish Latin couplet, which is inscribed in Saxon characters, near the entrance door:—

*“Ut Rosa Flos Florum,  
Sic est Nomus ista Domorum.”\**

The learned Dr. Whitaker was of opinion that this Chapter House, taken as a whole, is the most perfect specimen now remaining of the Early Florid Gothic style of architecture, introduced in the reign of Henry III. In reference to York Cathedral, and particularly to the Chapter House, there is a remarkable passage in the life of Æneus Silvius, afterwards Pope Pius II. This distinguished individual, who passed through England on his way to Scotland, as legate, about the year 1448, “went down to York, a great and populous City, where there is a Church, celebrated over all the world for its workmanship and magnitude; but especially for a very fine lightsome Chapel, whose shining walls of glass are held together between columns very slender in the midst.”

\* This is the chief of Houses, as the Rose is the chief of Flowers.



Gent has a story that Cromwell granted permission to a person to pull down the Chapter House, and build a stable with the materials; but the statement is probable without foundation, though that arch-dismantler is said to have violated the sanctity of other structures not less sacred.\*

**Dignitaries, &c., of the Cathedral of St. Peter, at York, in 1857.**

(The figures denote the value of the incomes; and the date, when each dignity was inducted.)

ARCHBISHOP.—Right Hon. and Most Rev. Thomas Musgrave, D.D. . . . £10,000 . . . 1847.

DEAN.—Very Rev. Sir William Cookburn, D.D., Bart. . . . . 1822.

CANONS RESIDENTIARY.

William Vernon Harcourt, M.A. . . . . *North Newbald* . . . . . 1823.

Charles Hawkins, B.C.L. . . . . *Barnby* . . . . . 1830.

Charles V. B. Johnstone, M.A. . . . . *Wetwang* . . . . . 1844.

John Baillie, M.A. . . . . *Wistow* . . . . . 1854.

CHANCELLOR OF THE CHURCH.—L. Vernon Harcourt, M.A. . . *Laughton* . . 1827.

PRECENTOR.—Hon. and Rev. Edward Rice, D.D., Dean of Gloucester. . *Driffield* . 1802.

SUB-DEAN.—Hon. and Rev. Stephen W. Lawley, M.A. . . . 1852.

SUCCESSOR.—Hon. and Rev. H. E. J. Howard, D.D., Dean of Lichfield. . *Holme* . 1822.

ARCHDEACONS.

*York*.—Venerable Stephen Creyke, M.A. . . . . 1845.

*East-Riding*.—Venerable Charles Maitland Long, M.A. . . . . 1854.

*Cleveland*.—Venerable Edward Churton, M.A. . . . . 1840.

PREBENDARIES, NON-RESIDENT, AND THEIR PREBENDS.

Wm. Preston, M.A. *Bilton* . . . . . 1812  
 John Bull, D.D., *Fenton* . . . . . 1826  
 T. Hutton Croft, M.A., *Stillington* . . 1831  
 H. C. Musgrave, D.D., *Givendale* . . 1833  
 Hon. A. Duncombe, M.A., *Bole* . . . . 1841  
 John Sharpe, D.D., *Grindall* . . . . . 1841  
 Edwd. Churton, M.A., *Knaresborough* 1841  
 S. Creyke, M.A., *South Newbald* . . . 1841  
 Robert B. Cooke, M.A., *Ulleskelf* . . . 1842  
 Charles Hotham, M.A., *Langtoft* . . . 1842  
 A. B. Wrightson, M.A., *Botevant* . . . 1843  
 William Gooch, M.A., *Strensall* . . . 1843

Samuel Coates, M.A., *Ampleforth* . . . 1843  
 George Dixon, M.A., *Bugthorpe* . . . 1856  
 George Trevor, M.A., *Apethorpe* . . . 1847  
 George Wray, M.A., *Dunnington* . . . 1847  
 E. J. Randolph, M.A., *Warthill* . . . 1847  
 H. W. Yeoman, M.A., *Thockerington* 1851  
 John Blackburn, M.A., *Riccall* . . . . 1851  
 J. D. Jefferson, M.A., *Osbaldwick* . . 1852  
 William Hey, M.A., *Weighton* . . . . 1854  
 C. M. Long, M.A., *Fridaythorpe* . . . 1855  
 Thomas Sale, M.A., *Husthwaite* . . . 1855

\* In the mad fanaticism which raged throughout England in the time of the Commonwealth, Bloxom says, "Our sacred edifices were polluted and profaned in the most irreverent and disgraceful manner; and with the exception of the destruction which took place on the dissolution of the monastic establishments in the previous century, more devastation was occasioned at this time by the party hostile to the established Church, than had ever before been committed since the ravages of the Danish invaders."

**MINOR CANONS.** (A Corporation under the title of "The Sub-Chanter and Vicars Choral of York Cathedral.")

**SUB-CHANTER.**—Edward John Raines, B.D... 1838.

William H. Oldfield, M.A.....1846		B. E. Metcalfe, M.A. ....1853
Thomas Bayley, M.A.....1851		Arthur Howard Ashworth.....1853

**ARCHBISHOP'S CHAPLAINS.**

Ven. Archdeacon Musgrave, D.D.		Joseph Romily, M.A.
Thomas Robinson, D.D.		Hon. Thomas Cavendish, M.A.
John Croft, M.A.		

**EXAMINING CHAPLAIN.**—W. P. Musgrave, M.A.

**REGISTRAR.**—Egerton Vernon Harcourt, Esq.    **DEPUTY REGISTRARS.**—Messrs. Buckle and Hudson.

**CHAPTER CLERK and REGISTRAR of the DEANERY of YORK.**—Charles A. Thiselton, Esq.

**SECRETARIES to the ARCHBISHOP.**—John Burder, Esq., *London*; and Charles A. Thiselton, Esq., *York*.

**ORGANIST.**—Dr. Camidge.

**MASTER of St. PETER'S GRAMMAR SCHOOL.**—William Hey, M.A.

**MASTER of ARCHBISHOP HOLGATE'S GRAMMAR SCHOOL.**—Robert Daniels, M.A.

The religious services performed in the Cathedral are—On Sundays\* and holidays, in the forenoon at half past ten o'clock, when a sermon is preached; and in the afternoon at four, when an anthem is sung. On the week-days at ten o'clock in the forenoon, when an anthem is sung, unless there be a litany; and in the afternoon at four o'clock, when an anthem is performed. On Wednesdays and Fridays in Lent and Advent, and during the whole of Holy Week, commonly called Passion Week, the choral service and singing are intermitted both morning and evening. During the winter months the choir is lighted with gas for the evening service.

And Bishop Nicholson, speaking of the Cathedral of Carlisle, writes, "our sufferings in the days of rapine and rebellion equalled, or exceeded those of any other Cathedral in England. \* \* \* \* Our Chapter House and Treasury had been turned into a magazine for the garrison, and our very Charter sold to make tailors' measures."

\* By the different nations every day in the week is set apart for public worship, viz.—Sunday by the Christians, Monday by the Grecians, Tuesday by the Persians, Wednesday by the Assyrians, Thursday by the Egyptians, Friday by the Turks, and Saturday by the Jews.

The following is the comparative capacity for accommodation of the most celebrated Churches in Europe:—St. Peter's, Rome, 54,000 persons; Milan Cathedral, 37,000; St. Paul's, Rome, 32,000; St. Paul's, London, 25,000; St. Petronia, Bologna, 24,000; St. Sophia's, Constantinople, 23,000; Florence Cathedral, 24,300; Antwerp Cathedral, 24,000; St. John Lateran, Rome, 22,900; Notre Dame, Paris, 21,000; Pisa Cathedral, 18,000; St. Stephen's, Vienna, 12,400; Cathedral of Vienna, 11,100; St. Peter's, Bologna, 11,400; St. Dominic's, Bologna, 11,000; St. Mark's, Venice, 7,000.

CATHEDRAL PRECINCTS, commonly called the MINSTER YARD OR CLOSE.—This district, the circumference of which is about three quarters of a mile, was in former times detached from the City by walls, and four pair of large gates. One gate was placed at Petergate, facing Little Blake Street; another opened into Petergate, opposite Stonegate; a third stood at the end of College Street, opposite the Bedern; and a fourth in UGGLEFORTH. And when in its meridian glory, this small space contained three parish Churches, and formed a little ecclesiastical world of its own. The three Churches were those of St. Michael le Belfrey, St. Martin ad Valvas, and St. John Baptist-del-Pyke; but of these the first mentioned now only remains.

The See of York had formerly appended to it several Palaces in different parts of the country, but that at Bishopthorpe is now the only one that remains. The finest of the old Palaces stood on the north side of the Cathedral. It was erected by Thomas, the first Norman Archbishop,\* but its great hall was dismantled by Thomas Young, the first Protestant Archbishop, whose cupidity was tempted to make this spoliation by the lead which covered its roof. Since that period other parts of this Anglo-Saxon edifice have been leased out from the See, and for a long time part of its ancient site was a receptacle for a mass of rubbish and filth. The site of the mansion is now converted into the Deanery gardens. During the alterations consequent on the change to its present state, part of the cloisters of the old Palace were discovered, forming, when found, the wall of a stable; and from the style of architecture, it is evident that it is the work of the early part of the twelfth century. It consists of seven semicircular arches, with plain mouldings springing from three columns, with square capitals. A similar column in the centre of each division divides them into two trefoil-headed niches. This interesting and picturesque fragment is now placed near the centre of the north side of the Minster Close, and from it an excellent view of the Cathedral and Chapter House may be obtained.

The Minster Yard was formerly choked up with mean buildings, but in 1825 an Act was passed enabling the Dean and Chapter to take steps towards their removal, and to enlarge and improve the ground surrounding the Cathedral.† The old houses soon began to give away, and in a few years fine

\* Some authorities state that this Palace was erected by Archbishop Roger, who was consecrated in 1154.

† There were at that time no less than three public houses in the Cathedral Close, called the *Minster Coffee House*; the *Hole in the Wall*; and the *Sycamore Tree*. The first mentioned stood opposite the west front of the Cathedral; the second a little further northward; and the latter at the east end of the Church near the old Residence.

walks and shrubberies, and beautiful buildings appeared in their stead. The road on the south side of the Minster to the east end was formed in 1839. It formerly ran close to the walls of that Church, and houses were built as near upon it as the traffic of the street would permit. The iron palisades which runs round the west end, and along the south side, were also erected when the new road was made. At the same time the Hall of Pleas, for the Liberty of St. Peter, which stood near the west end, was taken away, and a number of houses, extending from the Church of St. Michael le Belfrey to the top of Little Blake Street, were pulled down. These great changes in the general appearance of the Minster Close are principally due to the taste of the present Dean, Dr. Sir William Cockburn, Bart., brother to the Earl of Hardwicke.

*Minster Library.*—The Chapel of the above-mentioned Archbishopal Palace is now used as the library of the Cathedral. It stands on the north side of the Minster Close, and is an interesting specimen of the Earliest Pointed style of architecture. For many years this Chapel was in a very dilapidated state, but in 1808 it was restored, under the judicious direction of the Dean and Chapter, and the library, which till then had been kept in a small building attached to the Minster, was removed to it. It stands on a line with the buildings of the new Deanery, and is a great ornament to the Minster precincts. Its west front is divided into two stories by a string course; the lower has a doorway, consisting of a pointed arch springing from two dwarf columns, with circular capitals simply ornamented with a flower moulding. In the second story is a lancet-headed window of five lights, each divided by a capital similar to those in the lower story; the whole are bounded by a semicircular arch, which rises on each side of the window. The angles of the building are guarded by buttresses, with angular caps, and the roof rakes to a point with the small flower moulding, common to works of the period. The south side of the building is made into four divisions by buttresses; and in the upper story are pointed arched windows. This side of the edifice is finished by a string course and plain parapet; and the north side is built against. The ground floor is now used as a lumber room, but the upper apartment, which is approached by a flight of stone steps from an adjoining building, is neatly fitted up as the library. The windows on the south side are filled with ground glass, and the one in the west end is filled with beautiful stained glass, representing the armorial bearings of the members of the Church, at the period of its erection; in the centre of which is a shield bearing the arms of the Duke of Clarence, who visited the Cathedral on the 29th of September, 1806. The date of this building is about the same period as the relic of the episcopal Palace above-mentioned. Adjoining

the library on the north side is a small ancient edifice of two stories, the lower containing a doorway, with three narrow windows, and the upper, three windows of two lights each, made by a dwarf column in the centre. The whole is finished by a plain parapet. This building evidently formed a corridor to the ancient Chapel, as the door of entrance to the upper room (formerly the part used for Divine Service) is in the upper story of it; and this door, which is very handsome, seems to be of the same age as the building.

It has already been observed that the *Minster Library* was originally founded by Archbishop Egbert, in the eighth century, and extensive additions were afterwards made to it by his successor Archbishop Albert. So choice was the collection in this library, that William, the librarian of Malmesbury, calls it the "noblest repository and cabinet of arts and sciences then in the whole world;" and the celebrated Alcuin, the Preceptor of the Emperor Charles the Great, at his return into Britain, wrote his royal pupil a letter, in which the highest encomiums are bestowed on this library.\* (See page 312). But great was the loss of the learned world, when in 1069, the library, along with the building which Archbishop Albert had erected for it, was destroyed by fire. In the reign of William I., Archbishop Thomas founded another library, which was esteemed a valuable one, but which unfortunately shared the same fate with the former one, by the calamitous fire which broke out in the year 1137. Leland laments the loss of the library of York Minster, when he was sent by Henry VIII. with a commission to search every library in the Kingdom. "There is now scarce one book left in the library of St. Peter," says that learned antiquary, "which Flaccus Albinus, otherwise called Alcuinus, has so often and so greatly extolled for its great number of books, as well Latin as Greek; for the barbarity of the Danes and the ravaging of William Nothus have exhausted this treasure, as well as many others." In the early part of the seventeenth century the Minster Library was founded for the third time, by Mrs. Matthews, relict of the Archbishop of that name, who presented to the Church her husband's private collection of books, amounting to upwards of 3,000 volumes.†

The library has since been augmented at different times, and amongst the

\* Alcuin himself was the first librarian of the Minster, the care of the collection having been committed to him by Archbishop Egbert; and in his time students came from afar to avail themselves of its treasures. Alcuin has sung its praises in a Latin poem recounting its numerous volumes. For a further account of the library of this period, see Sharon Turner's *History of the Anglo-Saxons*, and *Alcuini Opera*, tom. i.

† Archbishop Matthews disinherited his son, Sir Toby Matthews, and this was probably the reason that the mother bestowed her husband's books on the Church.

chief contributors was Dean Finch, who died in 1728, and bequeathed the *Fædera Anglicana* in seventeen tomes. The Rev. Marmaduke Fothergill, the non-juring Rector of Skipwith, left a small but select collection of books to his native City, on condition that a room was built for its reception; and in the meantime he directed that the collection should be placed in the Library of the Dean and Chapter. No room having been built, the books have been incorporated with the Minster Library.\* To the above have been added several late purchases, gifts, and bequests, which form together a valuable library (considering its size) of theological and general literature, of nearly 8,000 volumes and manuscripts; and amongst the most rare and valuable works which it contains, are a beautiful copy of the second edition of Erasmus' New Testament, in Greek and Latin, 2 vols., folio, printed on vellum, by Frobenius, at Basle; a MS. copy of Wickliffe's New Testament, on vellum, supposed to have belonged to Queen Elizabeth; three MS. copies of the Vulgate, on vellum, of the date of Henry III. or Edward I.; a MS. copy of *Bracton de Legibus Angliæ*, on vellum; a translation of *Cicero de Senectute*, printed by Caxton in 1481; and several other books, printed by Caxton, Wynkin de Worde, and Pynson, which are some of the best specimens of early English typography extant. We may also class amongst the rare and valuable in this library, Torre's inestimable manuscripts, containing collections from the original records of all the ecclesiastical affairs relating to this Church and Diocese; the original register of St. Mary's Abbey, at York; and a *Tully de Inventione, ad Herrenium*, very perfect. The Rev. Edward John Raines, B.D., is the present librarian. The library is open to the public on Tuesdays and Thursdays, from twelve to one o'clock, when the librarian is in attendance. Books are not lent out without an order from the Chapter. In the library are portraits of Archbishop Matthews and the Rev. M. Fothergill; and a curious old print of the funeral procession of the great

\* The learned Marmaduke Fothergill was born in *Percy's Inn*, in Walmgate, York, the ancient town residence of the Earl of Northumberland, in 1652, and was the eldest son of an opulent citizen, who had acquired a fortune by trade. He was educated at Cambridge, and possessed the living of Skipworth, in this County; but the Revolution altered his views respecting the Church, and being determined never more to take any oath of allegiance, he retired from it, and lived on the income of his paternal estate. He was a great friend and admirer of literary characters; hence he often visited the University; and though he performed all the exercises required for the degree of D.D., he would not even there comply with the government oaths, and therefore could never assume the title. He had a large collection of manuscripts on the subject of ecclesiastical antiquity, which he once designed to have published, and would have done so, had not extreme modesty prevented him. He died at Westminster, September 7th, 1731, aged 79.

Duke of Marlborough, the hero of Blenheim, as it passed from his house at St. James's, to Westminster Abbey, on Thursday, August 9, 1722. In the ante room is a curious specimen of Saxon sculpture, in a fine state of preservation. It was discovered in the dungeon of an old building, since removed, which stood on the north side of the Minster, and which from its appearance had evidently been used for a prison. The stone is supposed to have been originally the base of the archway over the entrance of the dungeon, and the sculpture represents a man in the last agonies of death, surrounded by demons or evil spirits, who are tormenting his body, and seizing the departing spirit as it issues from it.

When we consider the great lustre which the name of Alcuin once shed upon the ancient Church and City of York—the place too of his nativity—it appears not a little remarkable that his name is not connected in any way whatever with an institution, a street, or a spot of ground, in any part of the City or its neighbourhood. Can it be possible, the reader might well enquire, that the name of him whose fame attracted students to York from all parts of England and the Continent; of him who sung the praises of “Old Ebor,” and the Saints of its Diocese, in classic verse, above a thousand years ago; of him to whose care was committed that priceless collection of rare and matchless works, which rendered York the envy of the learned world; of him who was the Preceptor of Charlemagne, and the most learned man of his age; can it be possible that this venerable name, of which the people of York ought to be so proud, is not commemorated in connection with a literary society or an institution, or even with a street or lane, in the City? Yes, indeed, it is so! And shall it so continue? Good taste forbid it. That portion of the Minster Yard, in which the *Cathedral Library*, the *Deanery*, and the *Residence* are situated, being now separated from the other parts of the precincts of the Minster, by iron palisades, may be said to be without any specific name; and a gentleman of York, who entertains deep feelings upon the above subject, asks us if *ALCUIN PLACE* would not be an appropriate appellation for it? We reply that it would, and we hope to see the excellent and tasteful suggestion realized.

On the north side of the Cathedral, and near the before-mentioned Archbishopal Palace, stood formerly the *Chapel of the Holy Sepulchre*, or of *St. Sepulchre*, as it is usually called, which has a door still remaining, opening into the north aisle of the nave. The foundation of this Chapel being very ancient and extraordinary, we shall present the reader with full particulars of it, according to Dugdale:—“Roger, Archbishop of York, having built against the great Church a Chapel, he dedicated it to the name of the Blessed

and Immaculate Virgin Mary and Holy Angels, for the celebration of divine services, to the eternal honour of God, glory of his successors, and a remission of his own sins. He ordained the same to be a perpetual habitation for thirteen clerks of different orders, viz:—four priests, four deacons, four subdeacons, and one sacrist; all these to be subservient to the will of the Archbishop, especially the sacrist, who shall be constituted procurator of the rents and revenues belonging to it, paying each of the priest ten marks *per ann.*, for his own salary, besides the revenue of the rents that remain over, and besides what will complete the sum of all the portions of the priests, deacons, and sub-deacons. Also he willed that the said sacrist of his own cost expend ten shillings on *Maunday*, as well in veiles, wine, ale, vessels, and water for washing the feet of the Canons, and other poor clerks, to the use of these poor clerks; and also to contribute sixteen shillings to the diet of the said poor clerks, that in all things the fraternity and unity of the Church may be preserved.

“And for their necessary sustenation, he of his own bounty gave them the Churches of Everton, Sutton with Scorby Chapel, Heyton, Berdesey, Otteley, one medety; and procured of the liberality of other faithful persons the Church of Calverly, *ex dono* Willielmi de Scoty; the Church of Hoton, *ex dono* Willielmi Paganel; the Church of Harwood, *ex dono* Avacie de Ruminilly; the Church of Thorpe, *ex dono* Ade de Bruys et Ivette de Arches *uoris sue*. To this Chapel also did belong the Churches of Collingham, Clareburg, and Retford. Roger provided also that the Churches which were not of donation should be free from synodals, and all other things due to the Archbishop, his successors, and their officials; and ordered that they should as quietly and freely hold and enjoy these Churches, which are of his donation, as others have before them. Lastly, he ordained, for the more diligent serving of the Chapel, that none of the said clerks should dwell out of the City, which if they presumed to do, they should be displaced by the Archbishop, and another of the same order be by him appointed.”

The revenues of these Churches having very much increased, Archbishop Sewal appointed Vicars to be established in them, and made several rules for the better government of the ministers, whom from thenceforth he caused to be called Canons.

In the 37th of Henry VIII. it was certified in the Court of Augmentations, that the revenues of the Chapel of St. Sepulchre were of the yearly value of £192. 16s. 6d. The Chapel was then suppressed, and its revenues seized by the King. In the 4th of Elizabeth (1553) the tithes belonging to this Chapel, and the Chapel itself, were sold to a person of the name of Webster. In



course of time the Chapel was converted into a public house, which from an opening at the end of a dungeon with which the Chapel was provided, was facetiously named "The Hole in the Wall." Having become ruinous, the building was taken down in 1816, and on removing the materials the workmen came to a subterraneous prison or dungeon, some feet below the surface of the earth. The approach was by a flight of stone steps, at the bottom of which were two massy oak entrance doors, one against the other, each five feet seven inches high, by two feet seven inches broad, and five inches thick. The vault was thirty-two feet five inches in length, nine feet four inches broad, and about nine and a half feet in height; the walls being four feet ten inches thick. On one side were three sloping windows guarded with iron, and attached to the walls were the remains of several staples. This dungeon was probably used for immuring ecclesiastical delinquents. In the following year was found in it the rude piece of Saxon sculpture already mentioned as being deposited in the ante-room of the Minster Library.

*The Hall of Pleas*, and prison for the *Liberty of St. Peter*, which stood nearly opposite the west end of the Minster, was pulled down as has already been observed, during the alterations about seventeen years ago. As we have also before remarked, there was a large arched gateway immediately facing Little Blake Street, which led into the Minster Yard; and on the ground between the east side of that gateway, and the Church of St. Michael le Belfrey, extended a row of low old-fashioned houses. On the west side of the same gateway, abutting on the street, stood the *Hall of Pleas*, and what was called the *Peter Prison*. The lower part of the building was used as the prison and residence of the gaoler; and in the upper story, which was reached by a flight of stone steps from the Minster Yard, was a Court room where causes in common law, arising within the jurisdiction of the Liberty of St. Peter, were tried. The jurisdiction of this Liberty was separate and exclusive, and had its own magistrates, steward, clerk of the peace, bailiff, coroner, and constables. Four general Quarter Sessions used to be held in the Hall of Pleas, every year, "to enquire into all manner of felonies, poisonings, enchantments, sorceries, arts magic, trespasses, &c.;" and a Court was held in the hall every three weeks, where pleas in actions of debt, trespass, replevin, &c., to any amount whatever, arising within the Liberty, were held.

By virtue of an Act, 5 and 6 William IV., cap. 76, the *Liberty of St. Peter of York* has been abolished for all civil purposes, although its ecclesiastical jurisdiction continues the same. The Liberty comprehends all those parts of the City and County of York which belong to the Cathedral or Church of St. Peter, viz:—in the City of York—the Minster Yard and Bedern. In the

*North Riding*—Carleton and Husthwaite, in Birdforth Wapentake; Clifton Haxby, Gate Hemsley, Helperby, Murton, Osbaldwick, Skelton, Stillington, Strensall, and Warthill, in Bulmer Wapentake; Brawby, Salton, and Nawton with Wambleton, in Ryedale Wapentake. In the *East Riding*—Faxfleet North Newbald, and South Newbald, in Hunsley Beacon division; Barmby on the Moor, in Wilton Beacon division; and Dunnington, Heslington, and Langwith, in Ouse and Derwent Wapentake. In the *West Riding*—Dringhouses, in the Ainsty; Brotherton and Ulleskelf, in Barkston Ash Wapentake; and Knaresborough, in Claro Wapentake. Besides these twenty-seven places and parts of places, there are within the liberty ninety-seven detached parcels scattered in most of the Wapentakes of the County. Amongst its privileges the inhabitants and tenants of this Liberty were exempt from the payment of tolls throughout England, Ireland, and Wales.

*The Deanery* is a spacious, commodious, cut stone mansion, on the north side of the Minster Yard, between the Chapter House and the Cathedral Library, erected in 1827, from a design of Messrs. Pritchett & Sons, of York, It is a pleasing architectural object, nearly square, and is according to the style of the Tudor period. The west and principal front consists of four stories, the front being made into three divisions by buttresses and octagonal turrets at the angles. In the first story are three windows, with arched heads; in the middle division of the second story is an oriel window, which is continued in the third story; the intermediate space between the two windows being filled with quatrefoil, panelling, roses, &c. The other divisions contain a square headed window on each story, A continued band with grotesque heads, roses, portcullis, &c., extends round the entire building, and the top of the edifice is battlemented. The north side is similar to the one just described, with the exception of having a noble porch instead of the oriel window; and on the south side a low range of buildings, containing a private passage to the Minster Library, connects it with the latter building. The whole has a very chaste and elegant appearance.

*The Old Deanery House*, which was first erected in 1090, stood on the south east side of the Minster Yard, on the site now occupied by the School of Art or Design.

*The Residence* is situated on the north west side of the Minster Precincts. It was erected in 1825-6, and is similar in size and form with the Deanery, but the style of architecture is later. The front consists of three stories. In the centre of the first is an arched doorway, and in the centre of the second is a bow window. The third story has three gables, and in each is a square headed window. The east front has in the ground floor and in the upper

story, square projecting windows of five lights each, divided by buttresses; and some square headed windows of two lights each. The other sides are not visible from the Minster Close, but are of similar architecture. Attached to this building is a handsome garden, which, together with the garden of the Deanery, is divided from the Close by a light railing of iron, and the portion of the cloisters of the ancient Palace before noticed. The Canons Residentiary occupy the Residence alternately three months each year.

*The Old Residence* is a large gloomy looking house, opposite the south east angle of the Minster.

*The Wills, &c. Office* for the Province of York, is attached to the west side of the south transept of the Cathedral, and is one of those extraneous buildings which greatly disfigure that edifice. Previous to the year 1838, the Will Office was in a small old building which stood at the east end of Le Belfrey Church, but in that year the present building was enlarged, and the documents were moved thither. The office now consists of four rooms, one of which is used for searching for and examining wills or administrations. There is an *Index* kept of the names of the testators and intestates, to whose representatives letters of probate or administration have been granted since 1731. There are, however, copies of wills in it as far back as 1389. The fee for searching this book is one shilling. The average number of wills, &c., passing through the office in the course of a year, is about 1,600 wills, and 650 administrations. The records of the Prerogative and Exchequer Courts of the Diocese are also kept here. During the fires of 1829 and 1840, the wills were carefully removed under the protection of a detachment of soldiers. They were afterwards safely replaced, and no damage was sustained on either occasion. The building is now entirely fire proof.

The records belonging to the Courts of the Dean and Chapter are preserved in part of the building called Archbishop de la Zouche's Chapel.

*St. William's College*—considerable remains of which stand in the opening of College Street, right opposite the large east window of the Cathedral—appears by records to have been founded by King Henry VI. to the honour of St. William, Archbishop of York, "for the Parsons\* and Chantry Priests of the Cathedral to reside in; whereas before they lived promiscuously in houses

\* A Parson, *persona ecclesiæ*, is one that hath full possession of all the rights of a parochial Church. He is sometimes called the *Rector*, but "the appellation of *Parson* is the most legal, most beneficial, and most honourable title that a parish priest can enjoy." He is called Parson, because by his person the Church is represented; and during his life he has the freehold in himself of the Parsonage House, the glebe, the tithes, and the other dues.

of laymen and women, contrary to the honour and decency of the said Church, and their spiritual orders." The letters patent directed that this building should be erected "in the Close of York." It does not appear that this grant was put into execution; probably the civil dissensions of the time prevented it. But King Edward IV., in the first year of his reign, granted other letters patent of the same tenor, to George Neville, Bishop of Exeter, and his brother Richard, Earl of Warwick, and their heirs, to found and sustain this College, without reciting any of the former grant, and to have the nomination of the Provost of it for ever. This patent, which is large and full, and contains all the rules and statutes to be observed by the members of the College, is dated at York, May 11th, 1461. The members of St. William's College consisted of a Provost and twenty-three Chantry priests. The archway forming the entrance, which is a good piece of Perpendicular work, is very ancient, and has above it, in a niche, a dilapidated statue of St. William, between his own arms and those of the See; and higher up are carved wood figures of the Virgin and Child, and St. Christopher. The gate to this edifice is very old, and contains a wicket evidently coeval with the building. The structure itself is chiefly Jacobean in style, and forms a quadrangle, enclosing a small court yard, round which are the remains of many curious wooden figures. The principal entrance to the interior from the court yard, is opposite the outer entrance, and is by a large doorway, the ascent to which is by four stone steps; and opposite the door a staircase, about eight feet wide, leads to the upper rooms. Several of the apartments are spacious and curious. The College is now divided into apartments, which are let to several poor families. In 1642, during the residence of Charles I. at York, the royal printing presses are said to have been set up in one of the rooms of this College, and here were printed several of the political and controversial pamphlets which created so much sensation in that day. "From the royal printing office," says Drake, "were issued paper bullets, soon to be changed into more fatal weapons."

*The Bedern.*—This is the name of a small street leading from Goodramgate to St. Andrewgate, in which was formerly a *College of Vicars Choral*, belonging to the Cathedral. Though this locality was not within the Minster Close, yet it is always classed with that district, on account of its connection.

From an inquisition taken in the 4th of Edward I. (1276), the site of the Bedern appears to have been given "to God, St. Peter, and the Vicars serving God, in pure and perpetual alms," by one William de Lunam, Canon of the Cathedral. There were originally thirty-six of those vicars choral, according to the number of the prebendal stalls, each Canon having his own

peculiar vicar to attend and officiate for him; receiving for their services the annual sum of forty shillings each. The duty of the vicars choral, besides attending the daily service, was formerly to perform the offices for the dead in the different Chapels and Chantries of the Cathedral both day and night. It was therefore convenient to have a place near it, in which to reside. The chantries and obits, from which the vicars choral derived their support, being dissolved, their number is now reduced to five. The whole College and site of the Bedern was sold in the 2nd of Edward VI. to Thomas Goulding and others, for £1,924. 10s. 1d., but this sale was disannulled, and it was given to the Dean and Chapter of the Cathedral.

*The Bedern Chapel*, which is still standing, was founded in 1348, and dedicated to the Holy Trinity, the Blessed Virgin, and St. Katherine. It is now no longer used for the general services of the Church, but is confined to the baptism of children and churching of women; though up to about eight years ago Divine Service was performed in it every Wednesday. The exterior of the edifice is very plain. The side abutting on the street has a pointed doorway, and three square-headed windows, with a plain vacant niche; the other side of the building has four square-headed windows; and on the roof is a small wooden bell turret. The interior still retains its ancient furniture, though in a dilapidated state. The altar piece is curious; consisting of paneling of pointed architecture in wood, with crockets, pinnacles, &c.; and there are some ancient wooden stalls, and an old octagonal stone font on a circular pedestal.

The old Collegiate Hall, where the vicars usually dined in common, is now converted into dwellings, and parts of the ancient outer walls of the edifice, with the evident remains of Gothic windows, and other vestiges of former days, may yet be traced on the south side of the buildings behind the houses that abut on the street a little beyond the Chapel.

The Bedern clearly owes its name to the circumstance of its being the residence of the vicars choral. *Bede* was formerly used for the verb *to pray*, and *Erne* implies a solitary place or detached dwelling; so that *Bedern* evidently signifies a cloister set apart for one or more religious to dwell in.

The Bedern is the presumed site of a part of the Roman Imperial Palace, or of the baths connected with the Palace. When the Bedern was in its prosperity, there were gates to enclose the whole opening into Goodramgate; and a porter's lodge stood on one side. Up to the year 1852 the Bedern had the appearance of a long narrow court or yard, having no outlet but at one end—in Goodramgate—but recent improvements have formed it into a street, which connects Goodramgate with St. Andrewgate.

In the vicissitudes of human events this once splendid seat of Roman grandeur and imperial honour, and subsequently of ecclesiastical splendour, is now the sad receptacle of poverty and wretchedness—the poorest of the Irish emigrants being its chief inhabitants. During the progress of the improvements here in 1852, a number of coins were found concealed in an old flower-pot and coffee-pot. They were principally of the reigns of Elizabeth, James I., and Charles I.

---

## Ancient Religious Houses, &c.

In the earliest days of the Christian era many devout persons sought to remove themselves from the contagion of the world, by renouncing all worldly possessions and dedicating themselves entirely to the service of God. These persons sought retirement in the barren deserts of Egypt, and lived separately as hermits or anchorites. About the middle of the third century, St. Anthony, or Antony, an Egyptian by birth, was the first to draw these devout solitaries into religious communities. They then obtained the name of monks, or cenobites, the word monk meaning a person in solitude. In course of time no less than fifty Monasteries were erected in Egypt by the disciples of St. Anthony, and that Saint's sister collected together, and presided over a community of virgins or nuns. This, the first Nunnery recorded in history, is said to have been founded in A.D. 272. From Egypt the spirit of the monastic institute spread through Syria, Palestine, &c. St. Athanasius introduced it into Rome, and the celebrated St. Martin of Tours into Gaul. A Nunnery was founded in the year 360, in Poitiers, by the sister of St. Martin. The exact time of its introduction into this country is not known, but it appears to have been established here on the first introduction of Christianity into Britain, for, as we have seen at page 76 of this volume, the Venerable Bede states that there was a large Monastery at Bangor in the fourth century. Upon the re-introduction of the Christian faith into Britain, towards the latter part of the sixth century, by Benedictine Monks from Rome, the monastic spirit was quickly infused into the new converts to Christianity, as has been intimated at page 81. King Ealbad is said to have instituted the first Nunnery in Britain, in Folkstone, in the year 630.

St. Benedict, the founder of many of the Monasteries in the west, drew up a rule for the government of his monks, which has become, more or less,

the foundation of the laws of the various Religious Orders which have sprung up since his day. According to the rule of St. Benedict, six hours were allotted for sleep; soon after midnight the monks arose to chant the matin service in the Church, and during the day they were summoned seven times to the Church to recite the canonical office, which consisted of psalms, prayers, and lessons from the Scripture. Seven hours were employed in manual labour, two in study, and the remainder was devoted to the necessary refreshment of the body. The diet of the monks was exceedingly simple.

*Alien Priors* or *Cells* subservient to foreign Monasteries were numerous, and extended to all parts of Britain. The origin of these establishments is as follows:—When the Kings of England were possessed of large territories in France, many French Monasteries had endowments of lands in England, and foreign monks came to reside here, and were associated in Priors or Cells, for the purpose of collecting the revenues arising from those endowments, and of remitting them to France. The early Kings of England seized the revenues of many of these alien establishments, in times of war with France; and in the reign of Henry V., all such houses in England as were under the immediate direction of foreigners were dissolved, and their revenues given to the Crown; it being then considered contrary to the interest of the state that foreigners should hold such establishments in England, and be allowed to convey money into an enemy's country, without receiving any valuable return for it. Some of the Alien Priors, however, which were conventual, or entire societies of themselves, and not accountable for their revenues to any foreign Monastery, continued to exist till the general dissolution of religious houses in the reign of Henry VIII.

*Granges*, according to Fuller, were often the residences of the heads of religious houses, or, strictly and properly speaking, Granges were the farms of Monasteries, where the religious reposed their corn. There was a house-keeper, or, *hospitalis frater grangie*, at every grange, and the bailiff who managed the farm was called the *Grangiary*. Granges were sometimes moated and otherwise fortified. A farm with a house at a distance from other houses is now often called a Grange.

We now proceed to give a *seriatim* account of the religious Hospitals of York.

ST. LEONARD'S HOSPITAL.—This Hospital, which was the most ancient religious institution in York, and one of the noblest foundations of the kind in Britain, was founded by the Anglo-Saxon King, Athelstan, in A.D. 936. under the following circumstances—In an expedition to the north, the particulars of which will be found at page 98 of this volume, that Monarch

visited three religious places—Beverley, Durham, and York—where he solicited the benefit of their devout prayers on his behalf, promising that if he succeeded well therein he would abundantly recompense them for the same. Having obtained a decisive victory over Constantine, the Scottish King, and others, Athelstan returned to York, where he offered his hearty thanks to God in the Cathedral. He there observed certain religious men, then called *Coledai*, who relieved many poor people out of their slender means; and to enable these people better to sustain the poor, as well as to fulfil his royal promise, he granted to God, St. Peter, and the said *Coledai*, and their successors for ever, certain emoluments accruing to the Crown in the Bishopric of York. This grant consisted of “one thrave of corn out of every carucate of land, or every plough going, within the Bishopric of York, and which to this day is called Peter corn.” This corn rent, which was then given to the *Coledai*, had been originally granted to the Crown for the encouragement of persons who employed themselves in destroying the wolves, which were then so numerous that they overran the country, and devoured the cattle of the villages. Possessed of this income, and a piece of waste ground which also the King gave them, the *Coledai* founded for themselves an Hospital in the City. William the Conqueror, and his successor William Rufus, confirmed and enlarged the endowment. The latter Monarch removed the site of the Hospital to the place where the ruins now stand. He likewise built them a small Church, which was dedicated, as the Hospital had been, to St. Peter. Henry I. granted to them the close or field extending from their house to the river Ouse; confirmed to the Hospital certain other lands; freed them from gelds and customs; and granted to them the liberties of sac, soc, tol, theme, and infangtheof. And as a more particular mark of his favour, Henry also took to himself the name of a brother and warden of this Hospital; “*Frater enim et custos ejusdem domus Dei sum.*” When the Hospital was burnt down in the great fire of 1197, (See page 122), King Stephen rebuilt it in a more magnificent manner, and caused it to be dedicated to God in honour of St. Leonard, and it was ever after called *Hospitalis S. Leonardi*. This King caused Nigel, Mayor of York, to deliver up a certain place near the west walls of the City, to receive the poor and lame; and he confirmed the thraves, which then were “all the oats which had been used to be gathered betwixt the river Trent and Scotland, for finding the King’s hounds, which was twenty fair sheaves of corn of each plow-land by the year, and appointed the Dean and Canons of the Cathedral Church to gather them for the relief of the said Hospital.”

The privileges and possessions of this Hospital were confirmed by Henry



II., King John, and several succeeding Monarchs, and much enlarged by the munificence and piety of several noblemen and others. King John ratified its possession by charter, and also granted to the brethren timber for their buildings, wood for fuel, and pasturage for their cattle, through his whole forest of Yorkshire. In the 27th of Edward I. (1299) that Monarch granted to the "Master and Brethren of St. Leonard's Hospital" liberty to take down the wall of the said Hospital, which extended from Blake Street to Bootham Bar, and to set up a new wall for enlarging the court of it. In the 2nd of Henry VI. (1424) all the confirmations, privileges, charters, &c. of this Hospital—and they were unusually numerous—were sanctioned by Act of Parliament. Though the Hospital was in the collation of the Dean and Chapter of York, it was not subject to any visitor but the King or his deputies. The number of its inmates, according to Drake, was 90: viz.—a master or warden, 13 brethren, 4 secular priests, 8 sisters, 30 choristers, 2 schoolmasters, 26 beadmen, and 6 servitors. Thomas Magnus was the Master at the dissolution, when the revenues were valued at £362. 11s. 1½d., equal, it is probable, to nearly £2,000. at the present time. The advowson was granted by the King, in 1554, to Sir Arthur Darcy and Sir Thomas Clifford, knights, and John Bolles, gentleman, their executors and assigns. The coucher book belonging to the Hospital has been deposited in the Cottonian Library. The site of the house was early devoted by the Archbishops of York to the erection of their mint, and from this circumstance the area had long been called the Mint Yard. After passing through various persons, the whole property devolved to George, Lord Saville, Viscount Halifax; and being extra-parochial, an attempt was made in 1637 to establish a mart there, which was prevented by the City by a writ of *ad quod damnum*. Fearful that the attempt to establish a mart might be renewed, the Corporation purchased the whole premises, buildings, and privileges, connected therewith, in 1675, for the sum of £800.; and the premises were divided and let out on lease. Since then the Theatre, the handsome crescent called St. Leonard's Place, and several commodious houses, stables, &c., have been erected on the site of the Hospital.

The chief existing remains of this interesting establishment stand immediately within the entrance to the gardens of the Yorkshire Philosophical Society's Museum. They consist of what in all probability were the ambulatory and Chapel of the infirmary of the Hospital, and are commonly called the *Cloisters of St. Leonard's Hospital*. The portion of this cloister standing is in a pretty perfect state, and is well deserving the notice of the antiquarian. The style of architecture is Early Norman, and it is the finest specimen of

that fashion of building in the City. It now consists of three aisles, divided by octagonal pillars, with a small abacus or capital, from which spring the ribs that support the groined roof. Against the wall, at the north end of the cloister, is a large but ancient stone statue, supposed to represent St. Leonard. The figure is seated in a chair, having drapery over its shoulders, and the head exhibiting the tonsure of a monk. It was formerly placed over the old gateway of the Hospital. A great part of the old walls of this ancient establishment were taken down in March, 1782, for the purpose of admitting carriages to the theatre in the Mint Yard; and again in 1832, when St. Leonard's Place was formed. When these alterations were made, several beautiful old arches belonging to the buildings of the Hospital were exhibited to view, but were doomed to give place to the modern improvements.

In his remarks on the remains of St. Leonard's Hospital, Mr. Wellbeloved says, "the covered cloister, or ambulatory, appears to have consisted of five or perhaps six aisles, in two of which were a large fire-place; for the benefit, no doubt, of the infirm and sickly, for whose use the ambulatory was designed. The exterior aisle, on the side towards the Multangular Tower, was most probably enclosed by a wall. Above the ambulatory were the chambers or wards of the infirmary, adjoining to which is the small but beautiful Chapel, opening to the chamber, so that the sick persons who were confined to their beds might have the comfort of witnessing the celebration of the divine offices. The eastern end of the Chapel indicates the period of its erection, the style of the architecture being that of the early part of the thirteenth century.\* The ambulatory belongs to rather an earlier age. How access was obtained to the chamber and the Chapel does not clearly appear, their being no remains of a staircase. Adjoining the ambulatory is the ancient entrance into the Hospital from the river, on the bank of which was a staith, or wharf, appropriated to the Hospital, called St. Leonard's Landing; and adjoining to this entrance, on the site of the present street, there was another aisle, the use of which is not known. The staircase leading to the infirmary and the Chapel, of which there are no traces remaining, may have been at the northern end of it. Of the use to which the room under the Chapel, unconnected with any other, was applied, no satisfactory account can be given."† At the northern end of the cloisters are the remains of two

\* This Chapel appears to have been solely for the accommodation of the sick, and it is very probable that there also was a Church belonging to the Hospital. An arch found in the excavations for St. Leonard's Place, and which is now deposited in the Museum, is supposed, by the Rev. Curator of Antiquities, to have belonged to that Church.

† Descriptive account of the Antiquities in the Grounds of the Museum.

rows of pillars, ranged parallel to the Roman wall, which here runs from the cloisters to the Multangular Tower. Mr. Wellbeloved cannot give a satisfactory account of this portion of the ruin, but he thinks it highly probable that there are the remains of corresponding pillars, by which an aisle had been formed in the adjacent ground, which is not in the possession of the Philosophical Society.

For ages were the beautiful ruins of this religious establishment completely enveloped in old buildings, and no idea had been entertained of their existence. When Allen wrote, in 1829, the cloisters were occupied as wine vaults; they now form one of the most interesting relics in York, of times that were; and affords another evidence of the great anxiety of the Philosophical Society to preserve the antiquities of this ancient City, for it was they that cleared these cloisters from the buildings with which they were surrounded, and by annexing them to their already spacious grounds, protected them from further injury.

ST. MARY'S ABBEY.—This once noble and magnificent Abbey, which for nearly five centuries maintained so high a rank among the religious establishments of the country, was situated on the north side of the City, on a fine spot of ground nearly square, which sloped gently from without Bootham Bar to the river Ouse. Its early history is involved in much obscurity, and it is difficult to reconcile the scattered notices of it found in some of the oldest and most respectable of our ecclesiastical historians, with the interesting narrative of its origin by the first Abbot, Stephen de Whitby, happily preserved by one of his successors, Simon de Warwick. According to Ingulphus there was a Monastery here before the Conquest, founded by Siward, a noble Dane and Earl of Northumberland, and in which he was interred in 1056; and Hoveden, noticing the burial of Siward a year earlier, calls the Monastery Galmanho. Ingulphus, in another page of his history, speaking of the "comproffi" who came from other Monasteries for the hospitalities of Croyland, in 1076, names six monks of "S. Mariæ Eboracum." Bishop Tanner observes that it no where else appears that there were then any religious of that denomination in the City; and Burton makes a similar assertion; but notwithstanding the opinion of these two learned authorities, it seems certain that the Abbey was founded and built in the reign of the Conqueror, and his successor William Rufus, on a site "which some religious had before occupied." The Rev. C. Wellbeloved, in an interesting account of the Abbey, addressed to the Society of Antiquarians of London,\* says,

\* Printed by the Society, with numerous views in the *Vetusa Monumenta*, vol. v.

“The Monastery of St. Mary, and the Monastery of Galmanho were the same; the former appellation denoting the patron saint to whom it was dedicated, the latter the place in which it was situated. And further, the Monastery of which Hoveden and Ingulphus write, and which Elfwin restored, was undoubtedly the same as that which was founded anew by William Rufus; for Hoveden has not only told us of the restoration of an Abbey at York, dedicated to St. Mary, by Elfwin, but he has preserved the names of the four first Abbots—Stephen, Richard, Gaufrid, and Severinus; during the government of the last of whom he himself flourished; and these were the Abbots who presided over the Monastery which claims William II. as its most distinguished, if not its earliest benefactor. Leland enables us to account for the appellation Galmanho; for, speaking of the last establishment, he describes it as being built without the walls of York, at or near the place where the dirt of the City was deposited, and criminals executed. Now the common instrument of execution, the gallows, was in Saxon called *galga*; and thence, as Lye has shown, Galman and Galmanho were derived.”\*

Drake, in his *Eboracum*, says “there is great reason and authority for supposing that there was a Monastery standing at or near the site of this Abbey in the time of the Danes and Saxons; that it was built by Siward, the valiant Earl of Northumbria, and that he was buried in it. The Monastery was at that time dedicated to *St. Olave*, the Danish King and martyr; and, indeed, it retained that name even after William the Conqueror had refounded it, till, by William II., it was changed to that of *St. Mary*.”

To sum up the several accounts of the origin of this Abbey, it seems very probable that about the year 1050, Earl Siward, who was as famous for his goodness and piety as he was for his valour, began to erect a Monastery here; but that he proceeded no further than the building of the Church of the establishment, which he dedicated to St. Olave, and in which he is said to have been buried. But the Monastery itself appears not to have been begun, or if begun, not so far advanced at the death of Siward as to be occupied by any religious persons.

“The premature decease of the founder, and the state of anarchy and confusion into which the province that he had governed, with almost regal authority, immediately fell,” says Mr. Wellbeloved, “appear to have prevented the completion of the work, and it remained in its unfinished condition till the arrival of the Norman Conqueror. Six years after the Conquest three zealous monks, Aldwine, Elfwine, and Reinfrid, from the Abbey at Evesham,

\* Lye, *Dict. Sax.* in verb. Galmanho.

came into the north with the view of reviving the monastic life there, almost extinct through the long continued violence of the Danish invaders. Having been very successful in their mission on the banks of the Tyne, Reinfrid came southwards to Streaneshalh (Whitby), where still remained the ruins of a Saxon Convent, founded by St. Hilda. Here he was allowed by Earl Perci, to whom this fee belonged, to build a Priory (afterwards the Abbey of Whitby), and was soon joined by several who had devoted themselves to a monastic life. Among these was one named Stephen, to whom the government of the Priory was committed."\*

This Stephen was the first Abbot, as well as the historian of St. Mary's; and he appears to justify the assertion of Burton and Tanner, for he takes no notice of any prior establishment, excepting the Church of St. Olave. From his narrative we learn that he, Stephen, had been Prior of the Convent of Whitby; but that he and some of his monks having given some offence to Earl Perci, were forcibly expelled from that place, and took refuge at Lastingham, in the eastern moors, where a religious house had been established in the Saxon times. From the latter place they were also driven by the same powerful Baron. In this afflicting state their condition was commiserated by Alan, Earl of Richmond and of Bretagne, who in 1078 gave them the Church of St. Olave, founded by Siward, near the City of York, and four acres of land adjoining, to build suitable offices upon. He also obtained for them the licence and aid of the King to found a religious establishment, and to complete what Siward had left unfinished.

Thomas, the Norman Archbishop, for some cause or other, conceived a violent dislike towards this new monastic fraternity, and forthwith commenced a suit against Earl Alan for appropriating the four acres of land, which he alleged were his property; whereupon William the Conqueror, to compose the difference, promised the Archbishop other lands in lieu of them, and so the affair ceased for a time. This hostile relation between these two branches of the Church does not appear to have at all retarded the prosperity of the new establishment, for in 1088 William II., being at York, visited the Monastery, "and seeing that the building was too strait and narrow, he projected a larger, and with his own hand first opened the ground for laying the foundation of the Church of the Monastery."† An ancient parchment,

\* Descriptive Account of the Antiquities in the Grounds of the Museum.

† "There is evidence in what remains of the entrance to the Chapter House, and in many of the carved fragments that have been recently disinterred, that the buildings of the Monastery were not completed prior to the reign of Stephen; perhaps not so early."  
—*Rev. C. Wellbeloved.*

formerly preserved in St. Mary's Tower, dates the foundation in 1089, when the dedication of the Church was changed from St. Olave to St. Mary. The Monastery erected, the royal founder endowed it with several lands "free from all legal exaction for ever;" Earl Alan having previously given the monks the hamlet of Marygate, then called Earlsborough (doubtless from the rank of its owner), upon the same conditions; and not long after our good friend Alan dying," says the annalist, "the King, for the sake of his soul, gave us the towns of Clifton and Overton, which were of his demesne." At the foundation of William II., as has already been observed, the Monastery received the title of the "Abbey of St. Mary at York;" and in that Monarch's charter, various lands are enumerated which had been bestowed upon the monks by the Conqueror, his predecessor. From this time the munificence and piety of princes and nobles enriched the Abbey so that it soon became opulent.

Archbishop Thomas, subsequent to the increased endowment of the Monastery, renewed his claim for the four acres of land; whereupon Stephen, the Abbot, appealed to the King in a full Council of the nation, held at Gloucester, and the suit was finally settled. The immunities and privileges granted to this establishment by William and his successors, Kings of England, were very great. By King William's charter, the lands of the Abbey were exempt from all regal exactions; and in case the Sheriff or his officers had any complaint against the tenants of St. Mary's, they were first to acquaint the Abbot therewith, and at an appointed time to come to the gates of the Abbey, and there receive justice and right; and moreover, the "*homines sanctæ Mariæ*" were exempt from attendance on juries, or at the County Courts, as well as at the meetings of the Ridings, Wapentakes, and Hundreds.

It is recorded that the Minster and Abbey were consumed by fire in the reign of King Stephen, in 1137, when the greater part of the City was burnt down; but Mr. Wellbeloved, who has had good opportunities of judging, says, "if either of these buildings suffered from the fire at that time, the injury, it is probable, was of no great extent."

According to Dugdale, Abbot Simon de Warwick undertook the erection of a new and enlarged Abbey Church in the year 1270. Sitting in his chair, with trowel in his hand, the whole Convent standing about him, he laid the first stone, and lived to see the work completed. The rebuilding of the other parts of the Abbey doubtless followed, but there is no record of the works extant. Simon de Warwick is said also to have built the walls and towers surrounding the close of the Abbey.

King Henry II., by his charter, confirmed the privileges granted to the

Abbey of St. Mary by William II., adding to them certain liberties and customs which had before been peculiar to the Churches of St. Peter, at York, and St. John at Beverley; ordaining also that when the men of the County were summoned to serve in the King's army, the Abbot of this Monastery should find a man to carry the banner or standard of St. Mary, in the same manner as other great Churches sent their banners.

The immunities granted by the charter of William II. and Henry II. were confirmed by nearly every succeeding Sovereign to the time of Henry VIII., and even that Monarch, in the first year of his reign, by a large charter, confirmed all the liberties of the the Convent. In consequence of extensive and extravagant powers and privileges which the Abbey possessed, considerable animosity long existed between the citizens and the monks or their tenants or dependants, and acts of violence sometimes ensued. In 1203 the citizens slew several of their men, and burned a number of their houses out of Bootham Bar; and a reconciliation was not effected till Simon, the Abbot, paid one hundred pounds as a peace offering to the enraged party; and he was so terrified, that he left his Monastery for more than a year. Soon after this the Abbot obtained permission of the King to build a wall on each unprotected side of the Abbey, the rampart of earth by which it had been previously enclosed not being sufficient to protect it from the hostile attacks of the citizens, as well as for a better defence against the incursions of the Scots; hence arose the high wall adjoining to Bootham and Marygate. The annals of the Convent thus particularises these walls, which were constructed with battlements, towers, and a wooden gallery within, and completed in 1206. From Bootham Bar to Marygate Tower,\* 194 yards; from Marygate Tower to Lendal Tower abutting upon the river Ouse, 420 yards; from the West Tower to the tower on the south, 246 yards; and from thence by the rampart of the City to Bootham Bar, 420 yards. The whole circumference of the enclosed area was nearly three quarters of a mile.

\* The circular tower at the north-east angle of the Abbey walls, at the corner of Marygate, in Bootham, is called *St. Mary's Tower*. In it were placed, after the Reformation, the ancient records of all the religious houses north of the Trent, under the charge of the Lord President of the North. It was likewise the deposit for some of the royal records of Chancery, until the siege of York, in 1644, when the tower was blown up, and many valuable documents were partly destroyed, and partly buried in the ruins. The date of this building is uncertain, though it is probably the work of the Abbot, Simon de Warwick. Mr. Dodsworth, in his preparations for the original edition of the *Monasticon*, before he was joined by Dugdale, had made numerous transcripts from the records preserved in this tower, which were afterwards presented to the Bodleian Library, Oxford, by Thomas Lord Fairfax.

The religious of this Abbey were Black Monks of the Order of St. Benedict, and had a psalter compiled for the especial use of their Convent. It was agreed upon and published in 1390, and the original volume is now in the library of Jesus College, Cambridge. The superior was a mitred Abbot, and as such had a seat in Parliament, which entitled him to the dignified appellation of "my lord." The Abbot of Selby and himself were the only two in the north of England who enjoyed this distinction. The Archbishop of York, for the time being, had power, once a year, to visit St. Mary's Abbey for the purpose of correcting or reforming, by the council of the brethren, and by some of his Canons, any abuses that might be introduced.

The Lord Abbot possessed several splendid country houses, the principal of which were at Deighton and Overton villages, about three miles distant; and his town residence was near St. Paul's Wharf, London. He had also a spacious park at Benningbrough, which was always well stocked with game; and whenever he travelled abroad in his ecclesiastical character, his retinue was nearly as sumptuous as that of the Archbishop, to whom he was very little inferior in other respects.

Thus did all go well with this famous Benedictine Abbey till the reign of Henry VIII., when alas! all its beauty, splendour, riches, and power, could not save it from its impending doom. The Commissioners were dispatched to take an inventory of its effects, and that enormous spoliation, that is veiled under the soft word *dissolution*, soon followed.

In 1540, when it was surrendered to the King, the establishment consisted of fifty monks, including the Abbot, Prior, and Sub-Prior, and probably about 150 servants. The last Abbot, William Thornton, or William Dent, obtained a pension of four hundred marks per annum, for the readiness with which he obeyed the King's commands. The value of the revenues, according to Dugdale, amounted to £1,550. 7s. 9d. per annum. Speed says £2,085. 1s. 5½d., "which," observes Drake, "considering that these computations were then usually made by those that had a mind to be purchasers, and the difference of money then and now, the bare rents of the lands would amount to an inconceivable value at this day." In the Valor of the 26th of Henry VIII. (1535), however, the total clear yearly income of the Monastery was rated at £2,091. 4s. 7½d.; and the clear annual value at £1,650. 0s. 7½d.—an enormous sum in those days.

This Abbey had six Cells or branch establishments, viz.—the Priory of St. Bees, or Bega, in Cumberland, valued at the dissolution at £149. 17s. 2½d.; the Priory of St. Constantine, at Wetherall, in the same County, valued at £117. 11s. 10½d.; St. Martin's, near Richmond, valued at £43. 16s. 8d.;



the Priory of Romburch, in Cambridgeshire, no valuation; the Priory of Sandtoft, in Lincolnshire, no valuation; and the Cell of St. Mary Magdalen, near the City of Lincoln.

*The Arms of St. Mary's Abbey* are az. on a cross gu., a bezant charged with the demi-figure of a King, crowned, and holding; a key in the first quarter. In the procession roll to Parliament in 1512, the key is wanting.

In the *Eboracum* Drake has given an engraving of a very ancient and rude seal of this Abbey, appendant to a deed of the time of Edward IV. The figure of the Blessed Virgin and Infant Saviour in her lap forms the device. In the office of the Duchy of Lancaster is a seal of Abbot Robert, to a deed without a date, but apparently of the thirteenth century. It represents an Abbot at full length; in his right hand a crozier, in his left a book; legend, SIGILLVM ROBERTI ABBATIS BEATE MARIE EBOR. In the Augmentation office is a deed made by Abbot William of York, dated 5th of Edward IV. (1466), which has appended to it the official seal of the Abbot. The subject is two female figures in two compartments, with two Gothic canopies; and all that remains of the legend is SIGILLVM PRIVATUM. There is another seal of this Abbey in the Chapter House of Westminster, appendant to an instrument of the 21st of Henry VIII. (1530). It is a large oval seal of the then Abbot, mitred, but without a crozier, standing between two shields of arms, under a rich Gothic canopy. At the feet, between two tassels, is another shield of arms, and underneath is a fish placed horizontally. Legend, *S. Dni. Edmundi. Whalley. Abbatis. Ecclesie. Beate. Marie. Juxta. Ebor.*

ABBOTS OF ST. MARY'S, YORK.

DIED A.D.	DIED A.D.
1.—Stephen de Whitby .....1112	16.—William Brydford, D.D .....1389
2.—Richard .....1131	17.—Thomas Stayn greve .....1398
3.—Godfrid .....1132	18.—Thomas Pigot .....1405
4.—Savaricus .....1161	19.—Thomas de Spofforth* .....
5.—Clement .....1184	20.—William Dalton .....1423
6.—Robert de Harpham .....1189	21.—William Wellys† .....
7.—Robert de Longo Campo .....1239	22.—Roger Kirkeby .....1438
8.—William de Rondela .....1244	23.—John Cottingham .....1464
9.—Thomas de Warthill .....1258	24.—Thomas Bothe .....1485
10.—Simon de Warwick .....1296	25.—William Sever; .....
11.—Benediet de Malton .....1303	26.—Robert Warhop or Wanhop....1507
12.—John de Gylling.....1313	27.—Edmund Thornton .....1521
13.—Allan de Nesse .....1331	28.—Edmund Walley or Whalley ..1530
14.—Thomas de Multon .....1359	29.—William Thornton (or Dent) continued till the dissolution.
15.—William Marreys or Marceys....1382	

\* In 1422 he was translated to the See of Hereford. † In 1436 he was consecrated Bishop of Rochester. ‡ In 1502 he was translated to the See of Durham.

To account for the rapid destruction of the many splendid monastic edifices in this country, which though shorn of their ancient glories, are still "Great in ruin, and noble in decay," it must be borne in mind that at their dissolution the large establishments were for the most part granted by the King to noble or wealthy families, in consideration of service, or of payment of a sum of money; and that it was not unnatural for the new owners, under the apprehensions excited by the unsettled state of the Reformation, to hasten and complete the work of demolition, which religious zeal had begun. The Abbey of St. Mary was retained by the Crown, yet it shared in the fate which befel the greater part of the religious houses in England at that period. Soon after the monks vacated it, an order for its destruction was issued, with directions to erect on its site out of the ruins, a residence for the Lord Presidents of the North, to be called the *King's Manor*, in order "that the very name and memory of the Abbey might be lost for ever." The site chosen for this edifice was that of the south transept of the Church, and the buildings of the Abbey, which extended from the transept to nearly the wall of the Abbey close, including the Chapter House, with its vestibule; also the library, the scriptorium, and several other rooms, the use of which is not known. In fact it stood on the ground now occupied by the Yorkshire Museum, but it extended over a greater space; and in the lower apartments of the Museum may now be seen a portion of the foundations of the front wall of this mansion, with the fire-place of the room of the Abbey, through which the wall was carried. The two fine vaults at the end of the play-ground of the School for the Blind likewise belonged to this residence. These cellars, which are arched with stone, and measure 129 feet long by 23 feet wide, and 11 feet high, and in each of which is a well of excellent water, stand beneath the ruins of the kitchen and other domestic offices of that mansion, and are erroneously stated by some to have been the cellars of St. Mary's Abbey. (See page 346.)

In 1701, such of the buildings of the Abbey as still remained were granted by William III. to the Magistrates of the County, to be employed in the erection of the County Gaol, or what are called the "Old Buildings" of York Castle. In 1705 the neighbouring Church of St. Olave was extensively repaired from the same quarter; and in 1717 the Corporation of Beverley was allowed to carry away, during the space of three years, as much stone as was required for the restoration of Beverley Minster. In the supply of materials for these and some minor works, the decayed part of the Manor Palace, the wall by the river, with those buildings of the Monastery which had not before been destroyed, almost totally disappeared. Large quantities of the

hallowed stone of the conventual Church were even burnt into lime upon the spot, and conveyed to different parts of the country.

“That after such repeated and extensive spoliations one stoue should be left standing upon another, to mark the spot on which this once splendid establishment flourished, is a matter of pleasing astonishment,” writes Mr. Allen, “that no more remains must ever be deeply regretted by all who are capable of forming any just conception, from the little that violence and time have spared, of the exquisite taste and unrivalled elegance that distinguished the original structure. Unaided by those circumstances which usually accompany, and throw an indescribable charm around the mouldering monuments of ancient piety, the ruins of the conventual Church of St. Mary have afforded a favourite subject for the pencil of the artist, and gratified even the most fastidious lover of the picturesque. No one ever visited York with any curiosity to behold the relics of its former greatness and splendour, and contemplated without admiration a scene which familiarity deprives not of the power to interest and delight. No lover of ancient ecclesiastical architecture ever walked over that part of the close of the Monastery of St. Mary accessible to the visitant, without thinking of the once magnificent refectory, the retired cloister, the splendid Chapter House, on the site of which he was treading, without feeling an earnest wish that the research, which had been attended with so much success at Whalley and at Jervaulx, might here also be undertaken; or, without indulging the confident hope that it would be as amply rewarded by curious and valuable discoveries. A fortunate concurrence of circumstances has at length realized such wishes, justified such a hope, and added to our means of investigating the economy of monastic establishments.”\*

Mr. Allen here alludes to the grant from the Crown which the Yorkshire Philosophical Society received in 1827, of nearly three acres of ground within the ancient precincts of the Abbey, including the remains of the Abbey Church, with the exception of the choir; and to the subsequent excavations carried on by that body, by which the ground plan of the monastic buildings, intersected by the massive foundations of the Manor Palace, were discovered and laid bare. This Society selected as the site of the building for their Museum, &c., the spot upon which the front part of the Lord President's mansion had formerly stood, and which at an earlier period had been occupied by the range of the buildings and apartments of the Abbey. Upon removing the rubbish, and opening the ground, considerable portions of the walls of

\* History of Yorkshire, Book iii., page 370.

the Monastery, of spacious and elegant doorways, of columns of varied forms, rising to the height of five or six feet, standing as they did before the Abbey was dismantled, were brought to light. In the intervening spaces were scattered numberless fragments of capitals, mouldings, and rich tracery work. Of similar materials the foundation walls of the Palace, upon being broken up, were found to consist. "Not an hour passed," says Allen, "without bringing to light some long buried beautiful specimens of the art and fancy of the monastic sculptor, some memorial of departed splendour, to gratify the eye, to exercise the imagination, to send back the thoughts to times and persons, and manners, long passed away."

The Rev. C. Wellbeloved, the late E. Strickland, Esq., and a few lovers of antiquarian research, raised a subscription for the purpose of extending the excavations beyond what was necessary for the foundations of the Museum, and when this sum was exhausted, the Council of the Society undertook the completion of the work so happily begun; and thus was discovered the situation and extent of the chief buildings that composed this splendid monastic establishment.

The Church of the Abbey was 371 feet in length, 60 feet in breadth, and was cruciform in shape, with a central tower. That picturesque ruin, which consists of a part of the north wall of the nave, containing the spaces of eight windows, and portions of the clustered columns at each end of the nave, is all that remains of the splendid edifice. The tracery, and in some of the windows the mullions, have entirely disappeared. The nave and choir had two side aisles; the transepts had only one aisle, on the eastern side. There was only one entrance to the nave at the western end; on the northern side was another doorway; and on the southern side, near the transept, was an entrance from the quadrangle, and probably there was another from the western end near the dormitory. The remains of the western front of the Church must have been, in its perfect state, exceedingly beautiful. It was divided into three divisions by buttresses, crowned with turrets or spires and crocketed pinnacles. The ornaments about the doorway have been singularly elegant, chaste, and graceful. In the deep hollow moulding between every column is figured the shoot of a vine, rising from the bottom and forming at the top a foliated capital. At the eastern end of the nave are the remains of the four piers that supported the central tower. The extent of the transepts is also shewn by the remaining bases of the pillars. Of the choir (which was of unusual length) nothing is left but the bases of the pillars and walls. This portion of the ruin is in the grounds of the School for the Blind, which adjoin the Museum gardens. The general style of the ruins is Decorated, and it

certainly forms a very interesting specimen of the time of Henry III. This Church, when perfect, must have almost rivalled the Minster in beauty. Sufficient yet remains of the ruins of the Abbey to carry the mind back to other times, and to indicate the labours and the resting place of the first Abbot, Stephen de Whitby, who died in 1112, and whose supposed tombstone, thus inscribed, is seen in a small court east of the ruins of the Church; *HIO JACET: STEPANS AB. B. JSPN.* This stone, which measures 6 feet 2½ inches long, by 2 feet 1½ inches wide, and 7 inches thick, is much mutilated, and the inscription is scarcely legible. The great quadrangle, in its usual situation on the south side of the nave, was probably furnished with a penthouse cloister on every side.

In the western cloister the school of the Monastery was usually kept; and near this side fragments of painted tiles were found, having on them the letters of the alphabet in characters of the fourteenth century, which were read from right to left.

There are no remains of the Chapter House of the Abbey, but the lowest portion of the foundations, built of grit stone, and therefore probably belonging to the structure of Stephen. All above the foundation seems to have been removed to make room for the spacious cellars of the Lord President's residence, the walls of which evidently contain many of the finely-sculptured stones that adorned this once magnificent apartment. The approach to the Chapter House from the quadrangle was through a beautiful vestibule, supported by two rows of pillars.

A range of four arches formed the entrance to the vestibule and the adjoining passage from the cloister. There is nothing equal or similar to this grand vestibule to be traced in any of the great Abbeys, excepting, perhaps, Kirkstall. The preservation of so much of this part of the Monastery, and of the whole range of apartments south of the transept, is owing to the architects of the Lord President's Palace having chosen this to be the site of the front of that building, and to their having also taken the level of the transept for that of their ground floor. All below that level they left standing, filling the space not occupied by the foundation walls of the Palace with the fragments of the Abbey. Amongst the numerous apartments discovered is the refectory, eighty-two feet long and thirty-seven wide, corresponding in its dimensions with the magnitude of the establishment. It was longitudinally divided into three parts by two rows of octangular pillars, five in each row. Adjoining the refectory was an apartment, which, if the finely-worked bosses or ceiling knots found buried in it had originally adorned its roof, as they most probably did, must have possessed exquisite beauty. This room was

divided longitudinally and transversely into three equal parts by elegant moulded pillars, resting on a cluster of regular octangular bases, from which, without capitals, sprang ribs for the support of the vaulting. It had a large ornamented fireplace, backed with tiles, finished in front with grit stone, and guarded by a stone fender. The foundation of the front of the Lord President's Palace passed through this room between the fire-place and the nearest row of pillars, and to this circumstance we owe the preservation of the fire-place, which is still standing, as we have already observed, in one of the lower apartments of the Museum.

This latter apartment is supposed to have been the parlour, or perhaps the "common house," which is described "as having a fire constantly by day in winter for the use of the monks, who were allowed no other fire."\* It was furnished with a stone seat on every side. Two other apartments, one seventy-five feet long and thirty feet wide, divided transversely into six parts by five octagonal piers; and the other divided transversely into three parts by octagonal piers, without capitals, from which the vaulting sprang; are supposed to have been the guest room, or the refectory of the novices; and the library, or the scriptorium,† or both.

Portions of the site of the Abbot's residence are still remaining in the buildings on the same site selected by James I. for a royal Palace, and now occupied by the Wilberforce School for the Blind.

At the lower end of the Abbey close—towards the river—stands a large building which is now called the *Hospitium* of the Abbey. "There is no documentary or traditionary evidence respecting either the age of the building

\* See Fosbrooke's *British Monachison*, p. 69.

† The *Scriptorium* was the apartment for transcribing books, especially the Bible, in the monastic cloister. In the early and middle ages of Christianity the pen was the engine for doing the work of our machinery; and that the labour of the monks in transcribing and illuminating was prodigious, is amply attested by the list of works they produced. "Books were then so beautifully painted and embellished with emblems and miniatures," says Gerbert, "that the whole seemed to be the produce not of human but of angelic hands." In the *Scriptorium* the toiling monk—that pioneer of biblical literature—plied his weary task—tracing letter after letter on the page of vellum—for many a year before one single copy of the Bible was produced. Leomine, in his *Typographical Antiquities* quoted by Horne, says, "Fifty years were sometimes employed to produce a single volume, an evidence of which occurred at the sale of the late Sir William Burrell's books, in 1796. Among these was a MS. Bible, beautifully written on vellum and illuminated, which had taken the writer half a century to execute. The writer, Guido de Jars, began it in his fortieth year, and did not finish it till he had accomplished his ninetieth, A.D. 1204, in the reign of Philip the Fair, as appeared by the writers' own autograph in the front of the book."

or of the uses to which it was applied," says Mr. Wellbeloved, in the little work already referred to. "It did not come within the limits of the portion of the Abbey close, granted by the Crown to the Yorkshire Philosophical Society;" continues that gentleman, "and being at that time partly occupied by two or three families, and partly by stalls for their horses and cattle, the internal character of the building could not possibly be ascertained. It was then supposed that it might have been the Grange of the Abbey. But that notion was at once abandoned when, having come into the possession of the Society, it was cleared of all the nuisances by which it had been long encumbered and defiled. It was then conjectured that it had been erected for the entertainment of those strangers who were not admitted to the principal apartments of the Monastery; the lower room having been the refectory, and the upper, originally of the same extent, the dormitory. The position of this building, near one the entrances to the Abbey, and the correspondence of the plan of the lower room with that of the refectory for the monks, tend to confirm that conjecture. The portion of the the lower apartment on the left of the doorway, lighted by five narrow windows, was originally separated by a cross wall from the other portion, forming perhaps a store room or buttery.

If this building was originally such as it now is, constructed partly of stone, and partly of timber and plaster, it must have been one of the later structures belonging to the Monastery. Yet it cannot have been the latest, for the manner in which the adjoining archway is attached to it, indicates that this was subsequently erected. And this is evidently of the same age as the building adjoining the ancient Abbey gate. This archway appears to have been the entrance into the interior of the Abbey close from the river, and may be termed the Water gate. Between it and the river were two walls, built by Abbot Thomas de Malton in 1534; the one proceeding from the tower at the end of the Abbey wall, in Marygate, along the margin of the river, till it met the Abbey wall from near Bootham Bar; and the other parallel to it, near the Water gate. The apartments attached to this gateway may have been the residence not only of the gate-keeper, but also of those whose duty it was to attend to the strangers who were received into the Hospitium." This building now contains a fine collection of Egyptian, Roman, Saxon, and Mediæval antiquities—being part of the Yorkshire Museum.

In levelling the ground of the south aisle of the nave of the Abbey Church the workmen discovered, at the depth of eight feet, seven statues, lying with the faces downward; four of them were nearly perfect, but the three others were much mutilated. All of them had been painted and gilded, but the

colours rapidly faded on being exposed to the light and air. The form of the drapery is different in each, but elegant in all, though the workmanship is somewhat rude. At the back of each of these statues is part of the shaft of a pillar, about seven inches in diameter, which determines their situation in the Church to have been against the columns that supported the groinings of the roof; and since there were seven pillars in the nave, we may conclude that there were originally at least fourteen statues, and that the above-named seven had been placed on the side near which they were buried. It is now considered beyond doubt that the two statues, long known in York as curious relics of antiquity, and the figures of which may be seen in Plate viii. of Drake's *Eboracum*, belonged to this set, as they correspond in every important respect with those found in the ruins of the Abbey. Dr. Gale supposed these two statues represented a Roman senator and his lady, but Drake justly objects to this on account of the form of the beard. The latter writer thus alludes to them:—"On the Churchyard wall of St. Lawrence, extra Walmgate, lie two very ancient statues prostrate; but whether Roman or Saxon, Pagan or Christian, since better antiquaries than myself have been puzzled, I shall not determine."

Both Allen and Wellbeloved say that one of them is evidently a figure of St. John the Baptist, bearing his proper emblem—a lamb on his left arm; and that it closely resembles a statue of the Baptist on the porch of the Chapel of Magdalen College, Oxford, as drawn by Carter. "Supposing these two to have belonged to the Church of St. Mary's Abbey," continues the former, "it may be safely conjectured that the fourteen statues, which probably adorned the nave of that Church, or at least some of them, were emblematical representations of 'the Old and New Law;' agreeable to the explanation which William of Worcester has given of some of the numerous figures that graced the western front of the Cathedral of Wells."\* If these observations be just, the statues must be coeval with the nave of the Abbey Church, which was built at the end of the thirteenth or the beginning of the fourteenth century.

The seven first named statues are now deposited in the Yorkshire Museum, and the two which had long served as coping stones to the wall of the Churchyard of St. Lawrence, are now to be seen fixed against the wall of that Church (the Churchyard wall having been removed), one on each side of the north doorway. Mr. Wellbeloved tells us that one of this series of statues having long formed part of the arch of the bridge at Clifton, has recently been re-

\* Allen's *Hist. of Yorks.*, on the authority of Carter's *Specimens of Ancient Sculpture*.



moved and restored, in a sadly weatherworn state, to its fellows in the Museum.

Since the venerable ruins of the Abbey came into the possession of the Philosophical Society, every means have been taken to preserve and beautify them. Several of the remains, laid bare by the extensive excavation already mentioned, are still exposed to view.

In the entrance hall of the Yorkshire Museum is a very interesting relic of the Abbey of St. Mary. It is the *Mortar* of the infirmary of the establishment—a beautiful specimen of Mediæval art—of bell metal, bearing the following inscription in Old English characters.

On the upper rim:—† *Mortariu. Sci. Johis. Ewangel. De. Infirmaria. Bg. Marie. Ebor.* The lower:—† *Fr. Wills. De. Touthorp. Me. Fecit. A.D. MCCCVIII.*

For nearly two centuries after the dissolution of the Abbey, nothing is known of this ancient mortar. The earliest notice we have of it occurs in an anonymous letter to Gent, published by him in his History of Hull, and dated 1734. The writer of the letter states that after having been long in the possession of the Fairfax family, it had passed into the hands of Mr. Smith, a bell-founder in York, by whom it had been sold to a Mr. Addington, whose son, Joseph Addington, confectioner, in the Minster Yard, had possession of it at the date of the letter. Gough, in his edition of Camden's Britannia, published in 1789, says, "It was lately in the hands of an apothecary at Selby, after whose death all traces of it were lost." In 1811, Mr. Rudder, a bell-founder at Birmingham, discovered it in his metal warehouse amidst a large quantity of old metal which he had purchased, and unwilling to commit so interesting and beautiful a relic to the furnace, he put it aside year after year, and at length removed it to his private residence; and finally presented it to his antiquarian friend Mr. Blount, an eminent surgeon in Birmingham. After his death it was sold by auction, in the year 1835, with the rest of his collection, and purchased at a considerable price by Mr. Samuel Kenrick, of West Bromwich, for the generous and laudable purpose of restoring it to its proper place among the remains of the religious establishment to which it originally belonged.

The wall which surrounded the Abbey Close, and which is supposed to have been built by Abbot Simon, enclosed about fifteen acres. A great part of this wall still remains behind the houses on the south side of Bootham, and in Marygate. Besides the close, properly so called, the Abbey possessed a spacious piece of rich ground to the north of Marygate, running down to the river, which was called Almry, or Almonry-garth. The Abbey had two

principal gates (besides the one which Mr. Wellbeloved calls the *Watergate*), one to the east, opening into Bootham, near Bootham Bar (the present entrance to the Manor, or School for the Blind); and the second, or principal entrance, opening into Marygate, and now forming the entrance to the Museum Gardens from that street. The remains of the latter entrance consist of a fine old arch and arcade of the Norman period, having attached to them a part of the gate-house, the residence of the porter, which is evidently of a later date; the portion above the archway and on the other side of it being destroyed. The lower story of the part of the gate-house still standing appears to have been the prison of the Abbey, in which debtors to the Abbot, in the extensive Liberties of St. Mary, and perhaps others subject to his power, were confined. The upper part, Mr. Wellbeloved says, was probably the room in which the Abbot held his courts; but Mr. Hargrove states that the court of the said liberties was held by the Steward of the Abbot in a large room over the gateway, which was ascended by a flight of stone steps, and the floor of which was neatly executed in chequered marble.\* The present building, and that which corresponded to it on the other side of the gateway, is supposed to have been added to the ancient gate in the latter half of the fifteenth century. This part of the gate-house, after being for several years a public-house, was restored about twenty years ago, and has since been the residence of Professor Phillips. The style of the exterior of the old building was studiously preserved. Tradition has placed upon the site of St. Mary's Abbey the Pagan Temple of Bellona. Near Earsley Bridge, on the Foss, formerly stood the mills of the Abbot of St. Mary's Abbey, but they have long since disappeared.

PRIORY OF THE HOLY TRINITY, Micklegate.—There was a religious establishment or a Church here endowed for Canons in very early times. It is twice mentioned in the Domesday Survey, where, in one entry, an allusion to its privileges occurs, though these are not stated at large; nor is there any notice of the predial rents with which it was endowed. Soon after the Conquest the house became decayed, and the Canons were brought to ruin; and the site of the establishment became a part of the fee of Ralph de Paganell, or Paynell, one of the Conqueror's followers. Ralph Paganell refounded the Monastery, and renewed the endowment, not for Canons, but for Benedictine monks, in 1089, and gave it as a Cell to the Abbey of St. Martin Marmonstier, at Tours, in France. The endowment of the new foundation consisted of the adjoining Church of the Holy Trinity, with three crofts ap-

\* Hargrove's History of York, vol. ii., page 591.

pertaining to it; the Church of St. Helen, in York, with the toft adjacent; also the Churches of All Saints, in North Street, and St. Bridget, in Micklegate, and the Chapel of St. James, without the walls. The founder likewise gave the monks various Churches, including those of Leeds, Barton-in-Ryedale, Hoton-in-Bilaham, Moncton, Ardington, and Stratton, with several lands, tithes, fisheries, &c.

The temporalities of this Priory in 1292 were rated at no less than £60. 10s. 5d. per annum. In the 34th of Edward I. (1305), by an inquisition taken at York, it was found that the heirs of the founder had no right in these temporalities on the death of any Prior; and that the Abbot of Marmonstier had the sole appointment of a successor. In the 30th of Edward III. (1357), that Monarch confirmed all the privileges and possessions of the Priory. Upon the suppression of the alien Monasteries, this Priory was suffered to remain; and according to Cotton's abridgement, it was made denizen by consent of Parliament in the 4th of Henry VI. (1426). In consequence of the exclusive patronage of the Abbot of Marmonstier, the Priors of this Monastery were neither admitted nor confirmed by the Archbishops of the Province; we have therefore no regular catalogue of them. Stephen was admitted Prior in 1281; Oliver de Gages, Prior of this Monastery in 1307, was excommunicated by the Archbishop of the diocese; John de Chesiacco was Prior in 1357; and John Burn in 1453. Richard Speyte, the last Prior, surrendered the house in the 26th of Henry VIII. (1535), when the amount of its revenues was £196. 17s. 2d.; the clear receipts being £169. 9s. 10d. per annum. In 1543 the site and the domesne lands were granted to Leonard Beckwith. In 1786 the property belonged to the Goodrick family of Ribston. "The circuit of ground belonging to the site of this Priory," says Drake, "was of great extent, being bounded by the street on one side, a lane called Trinity Lane on the east, the City walls on the west, and its own walls on the south." The site and grounds of the Priory, long occupied as garden ground, called Trinity Gardens, passed from the last of the Goodricks, some years since, into the hands of a gentleman who, about two years ago, sold them for a commercial speculation, and the result has been that almost every vestige of the buildings of the establishment has been swept away, and thus the City lost one of the valuable monuments of the piety of our ancestors. The only portion of this once splendid Monastery that remains, is the nave of the Priory Church, which is now the Church of the parish of Holy Trinity. Even the fine old archway, formerly the portal of the Priory, which fronted into Micklegate, has been removed, and, it is to be regretted, ruthlessly demolished. That venerable portal

stood at the junction of the new thoroughfare, called Priory Street (recently formed through Trinity Gardens, from Micklegate to Bishophill), with Micklegate. It consisted of a beautiful spacious arch, which sprung from dwarf piers; above which was a square window of three lights, with sculptured blocks supporting the cornice. The roof terminated in a plain gable.

An imperfect copy of the seal of this Priory is given by Drake, in his Appendix, p. ci. It is of an oval form, having in the area the first person of the Blessed Trinity, holding in front the figure of our Divine Redeemer on the Cross. The inscription, when perfect, seems to have been SIGILLU. PRIORATVS. SANCTE. TRINITATIS. EBOR.

**DOMINICAN FRIARY.**—The Order of monks or ecclesiastics commonly called the *Black* or *Preaching Friars*—the former term derived from the colour of their dress or habit, and the latter from their office—was founded by St. Dominic, about the year 1215, and is said to have been introduced into England in 1221. The Monastery of the Order, which was established in York, early in the reign of Henry III., by Bryan Stapleton, Esq., stood on part of the ground called *Les Toftes*, on the spot now occupied by the railway, near the end of the platforms of the North Eastern Railway Station. Previous to the excavations for the railway, the grounds of this Monastery were also called Friars Gardens. In the 32nd of Henry VIII. (1541), the site and building, were granted to William Blytheman. When Allen wrote, in 1829, the only remains of the institution was a curious old draw-well, situated in the gardens; but the gardens and draw-well have since disappeared, and the whole of the site of the Monastery is swallowed up in the Railway Station. Toft Green formerly constituted part of the grounds belonging to the Dominicans.

**THE MONASTERY OF THE ORDER OF ST. FRANCIS**, commonly called *Grey Friars*, or *Friars Minors*, was situated on the north side of the Ouse, near the Castle. Of this extensive and celebrated house, the scene of many important events, Drake writes as follows:—"We are informed by historians that the Monastery of the Friars Minors was usually the residence of our former English Kings, when they came to York; and that it was noble and spacious, we are assured by Froissart, who tells us that Edward III. and his mother both lodged in it, when the fray happened betwixt the English soldiers and strangers." (See page 140.)

We find by this historian that the buildings of the Monastery were so convenient, that each of these royal guests, though attended with a numerous suite of quality, kept court apart in them; which must argue it a structure of very great extent and magnificence. By a patent of Richard II., the fact of

its being made use of as a regal Palace is confirmed. That King strictly prohibited any person from carrying of filth, or laying of dunghills, &c., in the lanes or passages leading to the Monastery; where, as the patent expresses, he himself, as well as his grandfather, used to inhabit. Also butchers and other persons are by the same order prohibited from casting into, or washing in the river Ouse any entrails of beasts, or any other nastinesses, to the prejudice or nuisance of the Monastery.

This establishment was founded in the time of Henry III., as it is said by the King himself, and Henry Lacy, Earl of Lincoln, was one of its greatest benefactors. It had a conventual Church dedicated to the Blessed Virgin, and the Order of Friars Minors is said to have been divided into seven custodies or wardships, of which this establishment was a principal one. Hence it had under its jurisdiction the Friaries of Beverley, Doncaster, and Scarborough; also Boston, Grimsby, and Lincoln. The last Warden, William Vavasour, with fifteen friars and five novices, surrendered this house in the 80th of Henry VIII.; and four years afterwards the site was granted to Leonard Beckwith.

A part of the outer walls of this Monastery are standing at the present day on the north side of the Ouse, a little beyond the King's staith or wharf, and one of its boundary walls may be traced from towards the river, through the premises and into the house now in the occupation of Mr. George Hope, Bookseller, Castlegate. Those on the bank of the Ouse are still called Friars Walls, and that part of the site which they enclose, and which is not occupied by buildings, is called Friars Gardens. Several lots of this garden land have recently been built upon. In front of the walls on the river bank are the evident remains of a staith originally belonging to the Monastery.

THE AUSTIN FRIARS, or *Friars Hermits of the Order of St. Augustine*, are supposed to have settled in York as early as 1278, and their Convent is said to have been founded by Lord Scrope. Leland mentions that the Augustine Friary was situated on the banks of the Ouse near Ouse Bridge, so that it seems clear there were two monastic establishments on the north side of the river. "In one of the testamentary burials of Mr. Torre," says Drake, "Joan Trollop, anno 1441, leaves her body to be buried in the conventual Church of the Friars Eremite of St. Augustine in York. The term of Eremites to this Order is what I have not before met with; the Friars Minors were styled Earmits, i. e. Eremi in colæ. The Eremites, or Hermits in the north, were corruptly called Cremitts, and there is an annual rent paid out of some houses in Stonegate, called Cremitt money, at this day, which undoubtedly belonged to a religious house of these Orders; for some of the poorer sort of

monks being called hermits, an hermitage and an hospital had one and the same signification." The *Augustinians* were originally hermits, whom Pope Alexander IV. first congregated into one body under General Lanfranc in 1256. They observed the rule of St. Augustine, the great doctor of the Church, and were clothed in black.

Robert Davies, Esq., F.S.A., delivered an interesting lecture at the York Institute, in the month of December, 1854, entitled "An Antiquarian Walk through some of the streets of York;" and in reference to the old timber house of the Elizabethan period, next to the Post Office, in Lendal, he stated that he had lately discovered that this house stood on the site of the house of the Augustine Friars. "Leland in the reign of Henry VIII.," continued the learned lecturer,\* "stated that each of the four Religious Orders called Mendicant Friars—the Carmelite, the Franciscan, the Dominican, and the Augustine—had religious houses in York, and describes the establishment of the latter as lying between 'Ouse Bridge and the Tower.' Drake, supposing that the tower here mentioned was Clifford's Tower, fixed the abode of the Augustine Friars between the Friars' Walls and Castlegate Postern. He (Mr. Davies), however, was of opinion that that was the house of the Franciscans, and that the tower of which Leland spoke was the tower of Lendal Ferry. They must therefore look for the Augustine Friars in that direction, and a document he had lately seen, placed the house and Church of the Augustines in Conyng Street, precisely on the spot laid down by Leland. Mr. Davies read some extracts from the document to which he referred, from which it appeared the Augustine Friars purchased a strip of land in Conyng Street in 1392, and gave permission to the Mayor to place the buttresses of the Guild-Hall on their property, and to allow the common gutter to run along the west side of that hall. Although the Augustine Friars were known as mendicants and eremites, or hermits, yet they were not debarred from exercising hospitality, for in 1482, when Richard Duke of Gloucester, afterwards Richard III., visited York, they found the Friars of Augustine presenting him with several gallons of wine of various kinds, and other good things." Thus it appears that the Augustinian Friary stood between Lendal Tower and the Guild-Hall.

THE FRIARS OF THE ORDER OF MOUNT CARMEL, commonly called *Carmelites* or *White Friars*, had a powerful monastic establishment at York, which was of such extent as to occupy nearly all the ground from Stainbow, or Stonebow Lane to the river Foss. A portion of the Friary wall still re-

\* As reported in the *York Herald* newspaper.

mains at the east end of Stonebow Lane. The Order of the Friars Carmelites was, as has been observed, one of the four Orders of mendicants or begging Friars. It took both its name and origin from Carmel, a mountain in Syria, formerly inhabited by the prophets Elijah and Elisha, and by the children of the prophets; and from them these monks profess to derive their origin, in an uninterrupted succession.

"The site of their Monastery in York," writes Drake, "is particularly expressed in a charter of confirmation, granted to them by King Edward I., anno 1300, dated at York. It appears here, by *inspeximus*, that William de Vesey gave them the first piece of ground to build on, and bestowed upon them all his land, messuages, and tenements, that he had in a street or lane called *le Stainbogh*." From the same authority we learn, that, in the reign of Edward II., (1314), that King, then at York, bestowed a messuage and yards, upon the Prior and brethren of this Order, situate in the street of *Mersks* (a name no longer known at York), which he had of the gift of Galfred de Saint Quintin, contiguous to their house, for the enlargement of it; that the same King, by another grant dated a few days after the former, gave permission to these Friars to build a quay or wharf on his vivary of the Foss, in their own land and within their close, and to have a boat on his said vivary to fetch stone, wood, or other necessaries, as well under Foss Fridge as from any other place on the said vivary, or fish pool, to their quay; that the same King soon after granted to these Friars, by two deeds dated at York and Lincoln, all those houses with their appurtenances in Fossagate, which he had of the gift of Thomas the son of William le Aquiler, of York, and Cicily his wife; also all that land with appurtenances in the same City, which he had by gift from Abel de Richale, of York, for the enlargement of their Monastery; and that in the reign of Richard II., Henry de Percy, Lord of Spofford, granted to these Friars a piece of ground to the west, contiguous to their house, for the enlargement of their Monastery. On the 27th of November, 1539, the last prior, S. Clarkson, nine brothers, and three novices, surrendered up their house into the King's hands; and in 1544 the site was granted to one Ambrose Beckwith.

The principal entrance to the Priory was in Fossagate, near its junction with Pavement, and at a very early period divine service was celebrated in an Oratory on the gateway.\* The Convent, which was styled the Prior and

\* The gate house often contained a Chapel, or had a Chapel annexed to it, in which early Mass was celebrated for the benefit of the labourers and servants connected with the Monastery. At Chertsey this Chapel was described as "*Capella super portam*." Over the gateway at Barking was a Chapel of the Holy Rood; and at Furness Abbey, a Chapel adjoined the principal gatehouse, but it did not actually form part of the gatehouse.

Brethren of the Order St. Mary de Monte Carmeli, had also a Church dedicated in honour "of our Lady St. Mary." About fifty years ago Mr. Rusby purchased a part of this religious house, then occupied as a garden, and erected several buildings thereon. In digging up an old foundation about that time his workmen came to an ancient arch, in which were two distinct and separate parts of a tombstone; and in another place they found a flag gravestone, with the representation of a crozier at each corner. The former he carefully joined, and placed as a flag in front of his house in Hungate,\* and it may be still seen before the same house, which was lately in the occupation of Mr. Joseph Matthews. Near the edge is a Latin inscription, now nearly effaced, which may thus be translated:—"Pray for Sir Simon de Wintringham, a priest, formerly Vicar of St. Martin the Great, London, to whose soul may God be merciful." The middle of the stone is curiously carved, the letters of the inscription are of the Old Anglo-Saxon character, and it is remarkable that there is not any date.†

The Priory of the *Fratres de Monte Carmeli*, in York, is not noticed in the *Monasticon*, or in Speed's Catalogue of the Religious Houses. "An ancient record in Mr. Hargrove's possession," writes Allen, "states that 'a Maison Dieu was founded in White Friars' Lane, Layerthorpe, temp. Edward IV. ;' whence it is natural to infer that there must anciently have been a Monastery of White Friars also, from which the name has arisen; but on this subject we can only conjecture, as there are no remains of either building, and even the name itself is now no longer retained."

**CROUCHED OR CRUTCHED FRIARS.**—Bishop Tanner, in his *Notitia Monastica*, states that there was a Monastery of this Order at York, though he has not attempted to describe its situation. They began to settle in this City in the beginning of the reign of Edward II., but were discountenanced by the Archbishop. In the 21st of Edward III. (1338), Thomas, Lord Wake, gave them one toft and ten acres of land on the moor of Blakeshame, in Farndale, for building an Oratory and an habitation. The site of the Monastery of Crouched Friars at York is assigned by tradition to the corner of Barker Hill, facing Monkgate; and from this institution the latter street is supposed to derive its name. Mr. Wellbeloved says that it is probable that the house of these Friars stood near Monk Bar, as there are indications of some ancient buildings having been there.

\* Hargrove's York, vol. ii., p. 326.

† This stone is engraved in *Gent. Mag.*, 1797, pt. ii., p. 931. Sir Simon de Wintringham died in 1420. He was a Canon of Lincoln, Prebendary of Ledyngton, and Provost of the Chantry of Cotterstock, Northamptonshire.



At Clementhorpe was a *Benedictine Nunnery* dedicated to St. Clement, to which the parish Church of that village was attached. In the year 1145, Thurstan, Archbishop of York, granted "to God, St. Clement, and to the nuns there serving God, in pure and perpetual alms, the place wherein this Monastery, with other buildings of the said nuns, was erected; together with two carucates of land in the suburbs of York, twenty shillings annual rent, issuing out of his fair in York, &c., which was confirmed by the Dean and Chapter." In 1284, Nicholas, son of Adam Poteman, of Clementhorpe, granted to Agnes, the Prioress, and the nuns of St. Clement's, two messuages in Clementhorpe, with a toft, a croft, and half an acre of land. These and several other grants to the nuns were confirmed by King Edward III. at York, in 1327.

In 1192, Geoffrey Plantagenet, Archbishop of York, gave this Convent, contrary to the wish of the nuns, to the Nunnery of Godstow; and Alicia, then Prioress, refusing to obey the order, went to Rome to appeal to the Pope. Notwithstanding this appeal, the Archbishop excommunicated the whole sisterhood. At the dissolution, Isabella Ward, the last Prioress, surrendered this Nunnery to Henry VIII., and had a pension allowed her of £6. 13s. 4d. per annum. The Church, however, continued parochial till 1585, when, along with the parish of Middlethorpe, it was united to St. Mary's, Bishop-hill the Elder.

ST. ANDREW'S PRIORY stood in a field now termed Stone Wall Close, between Blue-bridge Lane and the Glass Works. It was founded in 1202 by Hugh Murdac, Archbishop of York, who "granted to God and to the twelve Canons of the Order of Sempringham, or St. Gilbert, serving God at St. Andrews, in Fishergate, Ebor. the Church of the same place with lands adjacent." This Priory had also several other lands, rents, &c., granted to it at various times. On the 28th of November, 1538, it was surrendered by the Prior and three monks, at which time its annual income, according to Dugdale, was £47. 14s. 8d.; but Speed states it at £57. 5s. 9d. The site was granted in 1545 to John Bellow and John Broxholme. Leland tells us that this Priory stood exactly opposite the Nunnery of St. Clement; and hence a tradition long existed amongst the ignorant that there was a subterraneous passage from one to the other, though the river Ouse runs between them. There are no remains now visible of St. Andrew's Priory, except some small portions of the Priory walls, which may still be seen in Blue-bridge Lane.

HOSPITALS. In former times Hospitals, or, as they were commonly called *Spittals*, especially Hospitals for Lepers, were usually erected *outside* the town. The virulent disease called the leprosy was introduced into

England in the reign of Henry I., and was supposed to have been imported from Palestine by the pilgrimage made thither, or from Syria and Egypt by the Crusaders. In addition to its horrors, the leprosy was contagious, and the infected were shunned and cut off from society. Deeply impressed with the misery of such pitiable objects, charitable individuals founded and endowed asylums, which served the two-fold purposes of giving every comfort to the afflicted, and securing others from so loathsome a distemper. Hospitals were generally intended as places of entertainment for poor pilgrims who could not afford to pay for their lodgings in the town. All the Hospitals observed the rule of St. Austin, or Augustine.

For *St. Leonard's Hospital*, see page 487 of this volume.

*The Hospital of St. Nicholas* stood in Watlingate, now Lawrence Street, without Walmgate Bar, near Plantation House and the Tan Yard, behind the Church of St. Nicholas; and in ancient writings the Church and it are classed together as one religious house, and termed the *Priory of St. Nicholas*. This Hospital, which was for a select number of both sexes, was of royal foundation, and established under the patronage of the Kings of England. According to the *Monasticon*, William de Grenfield, Lord High Chancellor of England, in a royal visitation, July 4th, 1309, ordained certain statutes for its government. In the 3rd of Edward I. (1275), a carucate of land was granted them by the Empress Maud, upon condition that the brethren of the said Priory or Hospital should find all lepers, who might visit them on the vigils of the Apostles St. Peter and St. Paul, with a certain portion of food. At the dissolution the Priory was valued at £29. 1s. 4d. The Church remained parochial till the siege of York in 1644, when it fell a sacrifice to the ravages of war.

*The Hospital of St. Mary Magdalen*—commonly called the "Hospital of St. Mary in Bootham"—was founded in that part of the City called *Le Horse ayre*—afterwards denominated the Horse Fair—the district extending north of Bootham) in 1390, by Robert de Pykering, Dean of York, and confirmed by Archbishop William de Melton, under the following regulations:—"That there be therein one perpetual Chaplain for the Master, whose presentation shall belong to the said Robert de Pykering, for his life, and to his heirs after his decease. That the said master and his successors being assisted with two more Chaplains, shall daily celebrate divine service therein, for the souls of Walter, late Archbishop, the said Robert de Pykering, and William his brother; and shall competently sustain those two Chaplains with victuals and clothing, and pay to each twenty shillings per annum; and also sustain with meat, drink, and clothing, other six old lame priests, not able to minister, allowing to every one twelve pence a-week."

At the same time the Church of Stillingfleet was appropriated for the support of the Chaplain, the Master, and the Charity for ever. There was, however, a sum reserved for the Vicar of the Church, who was to be appointed by the Master and brethren of the Hospital. At the dissolution, this Hospital, which was valued at £37. per annum in the gross, and at £11. 6s. 8d. clear, was annexed to the Dean and Chapter of York. In 1557 that body granted unto Thomas Luither, a priest, and a brother of the dissolved Hospital, an annual payment of £4. 13s. 4d., on condition that he should resign all claim to the said institution. By a grant from Philip and Mary, the King and Queen of England, the lands of the Hospital were devoted to the establishment and maintenance of a free grammar school; and agreeably to the tenor of that royal ordinance, the Dean and Chapter founded the one which was formerly held in the desecrated Church of St. Andrew, afterwards in the building now used as a School of Art, but finally removed to the edifice now known as St. Peter's School, Bootham.

Besides the great Hospital of Bootham, here was another dedicated to St. Mary, and founded by John Gyseburgh, precentor of York, for two Chaplains, before the year 1481. This was valued, at its suppression in 1535, at £9. 6s. 8d. per annum.

*The Spittal, or Hospital of St. Anthony*, anciently stood at the end of Gillygate, next to the Horse Fair. It was founded about the year 1440, but its history is little known. In Hargrove's History of York, is an engraving of a large and very curious mutilated piece of sculpture, which was taken out of the wall of a field near the site of this old Hospital, above forty years ago. It is supposed to represent the ceremonials of a religious sacrifice or vow, there being an altar, a priest in flowing drapery, and a man leading out of a stable a large animal, looking less like an ox than a horse. It is of Roman origin, and of high antiquity.

Dr. Tanner, in his *Notitia Monastica*, says that a Hospital stood "in Markgate, in suburb Ebor;" but of which we have not found any further particulars; and there was a Hospital at an early period within Layerthorpe Postern, which was founded by Sir Francis Bigod, who had a fine mansion at the same place. There are now no remains of the house or Hospital. Mr. Wellbeloved thinks the site of *Bigod's Hospital* is clearly indicated by the stone wall opposite to the Church of St. Cuthbert.

*St. Anthony's Hospital* is stated by Leland to have been founded for the brethren of St. Anthony by Sir John Langton, knt., who served the office of Mayor of York nine times, the last of which was in 1363. After the dissolution of the religious houses, it fell into the hands of a fraternity called the

*Guild of St. Anthony*, consisting of a Master and eight keepers, who gave a feast every third year, probably out of the remaining revenues of the old Hospital; but in 1625 the feast was discontinued, and the fellowship dissolved. The brethren of this mendicant Hospital of St. Anthony used to solicit alms in the City and neighbourhood, and as they were held in much esteem they were generally well rewarded. For a long time it was a custom with the citizens when a sow pigged, to have one set apart and well fattened for the brethren of St. Anthony; and hence came the proverb "As fat as an Anthony pig." In later times, the fraternity that succeeded the original brotherhood was commonly denominated "Tantony pigs." The legendary story of St. Anthony, of Padua, and his pig, says Drake, is represented in one of the windows of the neighbouring Church of St. Saviour.

The building occupied by the brethren of St. Anthony, and afterwards by the above-mentioned fraternity, is called *St. Anthony's Hall*, and is situated in Peaseholme Green. This ancient structure is mentioned under the same name in a beautiful manuscript terrier, in the possession of the Rev. J. Crofts, Rector of the Church of St. Saviour, as forming a boundary of the parish so early as 1362; and from this it may be inferred that if Sir John Langton was the founder of the Hospital, he must have founded it some years before he filled the civic chair of York for the ninth time, viz.—in 1363, as the hall was, in the preceding year, sufficiently well known to be mentioned as the boundary of two or three parishes. In 1646 the whole of the building was repaired and re-edified. It is a large venerable looking pile, the lower part being of stone, and the upper of brick. Each end of the hall presents three gables, with large Venetian windows at each end. The building is a mixture of two styles of architecture—the Pointed and pseudo-Roman—and has a very curious appearance. The entrance door faces Peaseholme Green, and over it is a circular window. After the building was repaired in 1646, one part of it was converted to the purposes of a House of Correction for lesser criminals; and it so continued until a building for that purpose was erected on Toft Green, which in its turn gave way to the prison near Baile Hill. *St. Anthony's Hall* is now occupied by the scholars of a charitable institution called the Blue Coat Boys' School. On the left of the entrance hall are the apartments of the master. A wide staircase leads to the upper story, where the different tradesmen's companies of York used to hold their general meetings. The several arms of each of them yet remain, but the rooms are now occupied by the Blue Coat boys.

The other ancient Hospitals of the City of York, of which little is known, are the *Hospital of St. Catherine*, Micklegate, near to *St. Nicholas's Church*,

now destroyed; the *Hospital of St. John and Our Lady*, at Foss Bridge; the *Spittal of St. Loy*, at the east end of Monk Bridge; *Fishergate Spittal* or *Hospital*, near the Church of St. Helen, now destroyed; and three *Maison Dieu's*, one on the old Ouse Bridge, another near Fishergate Postern, and the third, which belonged to the shoemakers, in Walmgate.

Sir Richard de York founded an Hospital in Micklegate, but it was never finished. The Hospitals still standing, which have been converted into regular *Almshouses*, will be noticed at subsequent pages.

For the *College of St. William* and the Bedern see pages 483 and 484.

GUILDS.—Torre mentions that a *Guild* or *fraternity of St. Mary and St. Martin the Confessor* was established on Peaseholme Green, in the parish of St. Cuthbert; and says that the brethren and sisters were authorized to cause divine service to be celebrated in the parish Church by one Chaplain, *submissa voce*. On the 28th of January, 1452, a Commission was issued to John, Bishop of Philippi, to consecrate the Chapel of the said fraternity, and the principal altar of the same erected within the Church of St. Cuthbert.

In the yard of the *George Inn*, Coney Street, may be traced the remains of strong stone walls, which tradition informs us were part of the religious house of the ancient *Guild of St. George*, in York. This fraternity was afterwards united to the Guild of St. Christopher.

St. George's Close, adjoining the entrance to the New Walk, is the site of a religious house called *St. George's Chapel*. Here was anciently a Guild or fraternity established, termed *The Fellowship of St. George*, which was suppressed at the general dissolution. Until the last year (1856) a small arched stone doorway faced the high road, which was surmounted with a shield charged with the cross of St. George. This doorway and other buildings adjoining it were removed, for the purpose of forming the new landing place called *St. George's Wharf*.

There was an ancient fraternity, called the *Guild of Corpus Christi*, in connexion with the Hospital of St. Thomas, the particulars of which will be found in an account of that institution at a subsequent page.

*The Guild of St. Christopher* possessed the site now occupied by the Guild Hall and Mansion House. The Chapel of the Guild stood next the street, and was not pulled down until the present Mansion House was commenced in 1725. In 1682 it was occupied by Henry Giles, an eminent artist, who painted the great west window of the Minster, and another in University College, Oxford, in 1687. It afterwards became the Cross Keys Inn, and is now, as has been stated, superseded by the Mansion House.

## Ecclesiastical Edifices.

PREVIOUS to the Reformation, when the population of York and its suburbs could not be more than 20,000, there were as many more places of worship there as at present exists, with its population of 40,000. At that time according to Drake, there were forty-two parish Churches, three or four famous Monasteries, two Priors, a Nunnery, and a religious College, besides seventeen private Chapels, and eighteen Hospitals, "all of which had reigned in plenty and abundance for several ages." These together make a total of seventy-five religious edifices. "Everybody must allow," says the same writer, "that this City was as remarkable for Churches and houses of religion as most in the Kingdom." Eighteen parish Churches, all the Chapels (with one exception) and religious houses have been destroyed, so that only twenty-three Churches and one Chapel now remain; besides two Churches recently erected. The sudden suppression of the religious houses caused a terrible re-action throughout the Kingdom, and perhaps the change was felt as severely in York as in any other part of England. Soon after the beginning of the Reformation several of the Churches of York were deemed superfluous, and an Act was accordingly granted in the first year of the reign of Edward VI. (1547) for pulling them down, and uniting the parishes to which they belonged to other parishes in the City. The preamble of the Act recites that "Whereas in the City of York and suburbs thereof, are many parish Churches which heretofore the same being well inhabited and replenished with people, were good and honest livings for learned incumbents, by reason of the privy tithes of the rich merchants, and of the offerings of a great multitude, which livings be now so much decayed by the ruin and decay of the said City, and of the trade and merchandize there, that the revenues and profits of divers of the said benefices are at this present not above the clear yearly value of £1. 6s. 8d.

In pursuance of this Act, several of the Churches were pulled down, but it was not put in full force till the 28th year of Elizabeth (1585), when the parishes were united in their present order.

The following table shows the number of parishes in the City, together with the value of each living in the King's Books,\* as well as the present

\* In the 26th of Henry VIII. (1535) an Act was passed conferring on the Crown the first fruits of all benefices, and also one yearly rent or pension amounting to the value of the tenth part of the profit of every benefice. Pursuant to this Act, Commissioners were appointed, and the celebrated *Valor Ecclesiasticus*, or *Liber Regis*, (King's Books), is the return made by them on the matters mentioned in the statute.

net value. For the population of the respective parishes see a subsequent page.

PARISHES.	Living.	Value in the King's Books.	Present Net Income
		£. s. d.	£
All Saints, North Street .....	Discharged Rectory..	4 7 11	107
All Saints, Pavement, with .....	Do., do	5 16 10½	100
St. Peter the Little.....	Disch. Vicarage .. }		
St. Crux .....	Discharged Rectory..	6 16 6	94
St Cuthbert with .....	Do. do.	5 10 10	208
St. Helen on the Walls and .....	Do. do.		
All Saints in Peaseholme .....	Do. do.		
St. Dennis in Walmgate, with ..	Do. do.	4 0 10	150
St. George and Naburn .....	Do. do. }		
St. Olave, with .....	Perpetual Curacy....	—	188
St. Giles .....	Discharged Vicarage	4 5 5	108
St. Helen, St. Helen's Square.....	Perpetual Curacy....	—	209
St. John, Micklegate.....	Discharged Vicarage	5 10 0	88
St. Lawrence, with .....	.....		
St. Nicholas .....	Discharged Rectory }	4 9 9½	124
St. Margaret, Walmgate, with ..	Do. do.		
St. Peter le Willows .....	Do. do.	4 0 0	97
St. Martin, Coney Street .....	Do. do.	5 16 3	243
St. Martin, Micklegate, with ....	Do. do. }		
St. Gregory .....	Do. do.	5 0 10	226
St. Mary, Bishophill Senior .....	Discharged Vicarage	10 0 0	144
St. Mary, Bishophill Junior, with ..	Perpetual Curacy....	—	
Upper Poppleton, and.....	Chapel of Ease.....	—	
Copmanthorpe .....	Discharged Rectory..	2 8 6½	120
St. Mary, Castlegate .....	Perpetual Curacy....	—	150
St. Michael-le-Belfrey with .....	Discharged Rectory..	2 0 10	
St. Wilfrid .....	Do. do.	8 12 1	91
St. Sampson .....	Perpetual Curacy....	—	109
St. Saviour, with .....	Discharged Rectory..	5 6 8	178
St. Andrew .....	Discharged Vicarage	8 0 0	87
Holy Trinity, King's Sq., or Christ Church	Do. do.	—	98
Holy Trinity, Micklegate.....	Do. do.	—	198
Holy Trinity, Goodramgate, with ..	Do. do.	—	
St. John del Pyke, and .....	Do. do.	—	
St. Maurice, without Monk Bar..	Do. do.	12 4 9½	
<i>New District Churches:—</i>			
St. Paul, Holdgate Road .....	Perpetual Curacy....	—	—
St. Thomas, Lowther Street, Groves .....	Do. do.	—	—

We now proceed to describe the Churches of York in the order in which they are laid down in the foregoing table. The ages of the ancient edifices are unknown, but the majority appear to have been built between the twelfth and sixteen centuries.

ALL SAINT'S CHURCH, *North Street*.—This is an ancient Discharged Rectory, formerly belonging to the Priory of Holy Trinity, Micklegate, to which it was given by Ralph de Paganel, and the grant was confirmed by William the Conqueror, and by the bull of Pope Alexander II. There were formerly many Chuntries and obits in this Church, several original grants of which are still preserved among the records of the City. The benefice is now in the patronage of the Crown, and incumbency of the Rev. Robert Whytehead.

The *Edifice* consists of three spacious aisles, with a tower and spire included in the plan at the west end. The tower contains three bells, and the height of the spire is 120 feet. Parts of the Church and the south doorway are Early English, some of the windows are Decorated, and the roofs and spire, and most of the windows, are Perpendicular. The walls are in a great measure composed of grit, Roman bricks, and pebbles. In the west end of the Church are three pointed arched windows of three lights each. The tower, which appears to be of an earlier date than the body of the Church, is of three stories, finished with a pierced battlement, and pinnacles at the angles. The buttresses of the tower end with grotesque gargoyles, and the whole is surmounted with an elegant octagonal spire. In the north side of the Church, which presents four unequal divisions, made by strong buttresses, are square headed-windows, with cinquefoil heads. The east end exhibits three windows of the latter part of the fourteen century, each of three lights. The gables of the nave and aisle rake to an apex. In the south side, which is similar to the north, there is a porch of brick, apparently of the latter part of the seventeen century. The interior is interesting;\* the nave is much narrower than the aisles, and is divided from the latter by pointed arches springing from small circular columns, with square capitals. The chancel or sanctuary is formed out of the nave. The altar piece is of oak, with pilasters of the Ionic order, and gilt capitals. There is an old misericord and a piscina in the sanctuary. About one half of the ceiling of the Church (that towards the east) is in panels, and is particularly interesting to the antiquary from a fine series of sculptures, with which the corbels and bosses are adorned.

\* Previous to the Reformation there were no pews in parish Churches, but some open seats with backs, and the chief families generally had moveable seats, as is still the custom in continental Churches. The term *pew* was anciently applied only to small places enclosed for confession, and to other inclosures. During the reign of Elizabeth and her successors, when long sermons were considered necessary, the laity began to feel the inconvenience of having no fixed sitting places; and as architectural display and taste had now disappeared, utilitarianism found an easy admittance. The nobility, gentry, and freeholders, appear to have erected pews at their own private expense for the use of themselves, their heirs, and assigns for ever.



These carvings represent angels playing on musical instruments, grotesque heads, &c. The roofs of the western half of the edifice is in plain plaster, but waggon-headed. The pulpit of carved oak is sexagonal, with a full-length figure painted on each side, and it bears the date of 1675. On the floor are several crosses flory, and in the south wall are the mutilated remains of a Roman sepulchral monument. The font is an ancient octagonal basin. The ancient stained glass in the windows is particularly interesting. Drake says that in his time the painted glass here was in a better state of preservation than in any other Church in the City. The three windows at the east end have been repaired by Wailes of Newcastle-upon-Tyne. The one above the Communion table has in the centre light a representation of St. Anne teaching the Blessed Virgin to read; and in the other lights St. John the Baptist and St. Christopher carrying Our Saviour. These three subjects are all surmounted by similar canopies. But the most interesting windows in the Church are the two easternmost in the north aisle. The subjects of one of them are the corporal works of mercy—feeding and giving drink to the hungry and thirsty, clothing the naked, visiting the sick, &c.; and the other window, which is very curious indeed, though much mutilated, seems to describe the fifteen days of the Last Judgment, as Venerable Bede has written of them.

1.—The first subject is the extraordinary inundation of the sea. The legend is all but gone.

2.—The corresponding ebb of the sea. The legend is

Ye second day ye see sall be  
So lawe, as all men sall yt see.

3.—The following day reduces it to its original level.

Ye iij day yt sall be plain,  
And stand as yt was, again.

4.—The day after we have the fishes and sea monsters leaving their native element, and coming forth upon the earth; but the lines are gone.

5.—The sea is represented on fire.

Ye v day ye see sall bryn;  
And all the watrys that may bin.

6.—On the sixth day the trees are on fire, and their fruit is dropping; but the legend is unintelligible.

7.—On the seventh day a great earthquake.

Ye seventh day houses mon fall,  
Castles and towers and ilka wall.

8.—On the eighth day the rocks are consumed.

Ye viij day roches and stanes.  
Sall bryn togeder all at anes.

9.—The events of the ninth day are entirely effaced.

10.—On the tenth day nothing is to be seen but earth and sky; the legend is

The tende day for heaven,  
Erthe sall be plain and even.

Meaning the mountains shall be levelled and the valleys filled up.

11.—Two men and two women with a priest in an attitude of prayer.

Ye xi day sall men come out  
Of their graves, and wande abowte.

12.—Three sarcophagi or coffins full of bones coming together.

Ye xij day banes dede sall,  
Togeder at anes ryse all.

13.—On the thirteenth day great stars fall from heaven.

The xiiij day sitthe sall,  
Sterres and the Heaven fall.

14.—A tomb with a man and woman side by side on its summit, three mourners bending over them, and death with his dart at the foot.

The xiv day all that lives than,  
Sall die, bathe childe, man, and woman.

15.—And then follows the final consummation of all things.

The xv day this sall betyde.  
The world sall bryn on every side.

In the tracery of this window are demons conveying the souls of the wicked to punishment, and angels carrying the faithful into Abraham's bosom.\*

In the early part of the past year (1856) a new organ was erected by subscription in this Church.

A singular custom still prevails in this parish, on Ascension Day, commonly called Holy Thursday, the time of the annual perambulation of the boundaries. The lads of the parish provide themselves with bundles of sedge, and while the clerk is inscribing the boundary at the specified places,

\* See the *Hierologus*, or the *Church Tourists*, by Rev. J. M. Neale. *Explanations of the old style of spelling.* Ye means *the*; Sall, *shall*; Lawe, *low*; Yt, *it*; Bryn, *burn*; Mon, *must*; Ilka, *every*; Roches, *rocks*; Stanes, *stones*; Anes, *once*; Wande, *walk*; Banes, *bones*; Dede, *dead*; Than, *then*; Betyde, *happen*.

they strike his legs below the knee with their bundles. The place nearest the clerk, or that which gives the best chance of exercising this popular prerogative, is eagerly contended for.

**ALL SAINTS CHURCH, Pavement.**—This Church, which is commonly called *All Hallows*, stands partly in High Ousegate, but chiefly in the Pavement. It is an ancient Discharged Rectory, and before the Conquest, according to Domesday, it belonged to the Prior and Convent of Durham. By an old grant to Fountains Abbey, the Rector of this Church is styled "Rector ecclesie omnium sanctorum in Usegata." At the Reformation it reverted to the Crown, and the Rev. George Trevor, M.A. is the present incumbent.

*The Fabric* is handsome, and, according to Drake, its north side was almost wholly built out of the ruins of Eboracum; but the whole structure underwent a complete restoration in 1835; and in 1837 the tower was rebuilt after the same design as before. The edifice is in the Perpendicular style of Gothic architecture, and is chiefly remarkable for its exquisite octagonal lantern steeple, which is a beautiful piece of architecture, and forms a very picturesque object when seen at a little distance from the City. Tradition says that when the Forest of Galtres extended northward of York as far as Easingwold, it was a nightly custom to suspend a large lamp in the centre of the steeple, as a guide to travellers on that then difficult road. In Drake's time the hook or pulley on which the lamp or lantern hung, was still preserved. In 1694 this Church narrowly escaped destruction by fire; most of the buildings near it in Ousegate were burnt down, which, observes Drake, was the occasion when so many handsome houses were erected in that street. Part of the present burial ground was formerly used as a herb and fish market; but in 1782 the Church yard was enlarged, and the chancel being much out of repair, was taken down, and the ground on which it stood was applied to enlarge the market-place; in consequence of which the Corporation contributed £100. towards rebuilding the east wall. The parts of the Church are a nave and side aisles, with a square tower, in which are three bells, at the west end; and a neat porch was added in 1855. The tower is three stories in height, and is finished with a cornice and parapet. In the west face of the lower story, between two buttresses of four gradations, is a large window of five lights; the second story is blank, and the third has a depressed arched window of three lights in each side. Each of the eight sides of the lantern steeple has a window almost the breadth and nearly the height of the structure; at every angle is a buttress of four gradations, terminating in a gargoyle and crocketed pinnacle; and the top is finished by an open battlement and pinnacles. The whole structure has a most airy and elegant appearance.

The west ends of the aisles have windows of three lights, and the roofs of both rake up to the Church with a plain coping. Each of the aisle windows are of three lights; and in each aisle is a pointed arched doorway. In the clerestory are four square-headed windows, of three lights. The aisles are finished with a plain, and the nave terminates in an embattled parapet, with five crocketed pinnacles on each side. The east end of the Church is made into three divisions by buttresses; in the centre is a pointed window of three lights, and in each aisle is a similar window of two lights. The interior is very neat; the body of the Church is divided from the aisles by five pointed arches, resting on octagonal columns. The lower story of the tower opens into the nave, shewing the western window. The pulpit, which is octagonal, is ornamented with much excellent carving and gilding; and the sounding board bears the date of 1634. The Church was neatly repewed a few years ago, partly by subscription. At the west end are very neat stalls for the churchwardens of the united parishes.

The lessons are read from a handsomely carved and gilded wooden eagle. The organ was first erected in 1791, but it was enlarged, improved, and set in a handsome case in 1855. The new and elegant octagonal font is the gift of the Rev. Mr. Hunt, a late curate of this parish. The minister and churchwardens possess property worth about £300. a year for the maintenance of the edifice. The monuments are not very numerous; amongst them is a neat sarcophagus, inscribed to James Saunders, Esq., Alderman and Lord Mayor of York, 1818, who died in 1825, aged 55 years; and a neat tablet to Tate Wilkinson, Esq., original patentee, and thirty-four years manager of the Theatre Royal, York. The inscription states that he died in 1803, in his 63rd year, and that his body lies buried in the north aisle of this Church. There is a neat sarcophagus to the memory of Samuel Woodhead, who died in 1834, aged 53; and also tablets commemorative of Captain Thomas Prickett, William Sowerby, and deceased members of the families of Ety, Frobisher, and Wyvill.

THE CHURCH OF ST. PETER, and for the sake of distinction called "*Ecclesia Petri Parvi*, or St. Peter the Little, stood on the east side of Peter Lane, a little west of High Ousegate. It was an ancient Rectory, under the patronage of the monks of Durham; but having fallen a sacrifice to the destructive events which at various times have laid waste this City, the Church, together with the parish, was united to All Hallows in 1585.

THE CHURCH OF ST. CRUX, or *Holy Cross*, vulgarly called *Cross Church*, stands at the north end of the Pavement, and was originally built in the time of Edward the Confessor. At the time of the Domesday Survey, it and two

stalls in the Butchery or Shambles belonged to the Earl of Morton; and the Church was afterwards given by Nigell Fossard, Lord of Doncaster, to the Abbey of St. Mary at York. It appears to have been rebuilt in 1424, as a commission, dated September 6th, in that year, was directed to William, Bishop of Dromore, commanding him to consecrate the building. In 1840 this Church was greatly improved externally by the removal of projections, and the erection of iron palisades. The living is a Discharged Rectory, and at the dissolution of religious houses, the patronage came to the Crown. The present Rector is the Rev. Joseph Crosby. There were formerly five Chantries in this Church. The *Fabric* is composed of three aisles, with a tower at the south-west angle of the west end; its general style is Perpendicular, the pillars, however, are Decorated, and the tower is Italian. The latter appendage contains two bells, and is an elegant brick structure, with stone dressings, the foundation stone of which was laid on the 1st of April, 1697. The lower part is of stone; in the two upper stories are Venetian windows, and at the angles are square buttresses, with Tuscan capitals. At the top are vases at the angles, and the whole is encompassed with a neat railing, within which is a hemispherical dome, finished with a cross and weathercock. This tower, which is ninety feet high, declines considerably from the perpendicular towards the west, which gives it an awkward appearance. The west end of the Church, which does not range with the tower from a tortuosity in the street, is of brick, and has a large Venetian window, with stone dressings. The south side of the Church, bounding the Pavement, is made into six divisions by buttresses, containing a pointed doorway, and five large pointed windows of three lights, with cinquefoil heads and Perpendicular tracery. The clerestory of the nave and chancel, which rises above the aisles, has six depressed arched-headed windows of four lights. The east end of the Church, abutting on Fossgate, is made into three divisions by buttresses. In the centre is a large window of six lights, with a transom; and on each side is one of three lights.

The north side is similar to the south, except that it is only in four divisions. The interior is spacious and elegant. The nave and chancel, which are united, are divided from the aisles by seven arches, vanishing into square piers, the mouldings or hollows of the arches being continued to the bases, which are octagonal; and each arch has an outer moulding, which rests on corbals, representing heads of men and women. The clerestory is plain, and the roofs of the nave and aisles are flat, and panelled with bosses at the intersections. The altar piece is of oak, with Corinthian pilasters. The pulpit and sounding board are octagonal, as is also the font, which is very

large. The monuments in the Church are numerous. Sir Thomas Herbert, the celebrated traveller, is buried here; also the body of the Earl of Northumberland, who was beheaded in 1572. (See page 208.) On the south side of the communion table is an altar tomb, with a large recess behind, over the graves of Sir Robert Watter, Knt., Alderman, thrice Lord Mayor of this City, founder of the Hospital for poor women, in St. George Street, and a benefactor to this Church, who died in 1612; and of his wife Margaret, who died in 1608. The interior of the recess is filled with fancy work, with statues of Faith and Prudence, and in the centre is an inscription. On the table beneath lie full length effigies of the Knight, dressed in a scarlet robe, red cap, and ruff, and his lady in a full gown, and ruff. Near this monument is an ancient lectern, enriched with niches, &c., and chained to it is a book entitled, "A replie vnto M. Hardinge's ansveare, Imprinted at London, in Fleete streate, Henry Wykes, 1566." Beneath is written 1583, which is supposed to be the date of purchasing it. In the north aisle is a handsome sarcophagus, with a medallion bust of the deceased, to Sir Tancred Robinson, twice Lord Mayor of York, who died in 1754, aged 68; and in the south aisle is a neat sarcophagus to T. Bowes, apothecary, who served the office of Lord Mayor in 1761, and died in 1777, in his second mayoralty. Here is also a neat pyramidal tablet, with a basso relievo profile, to H. Waite, Esq., who died in 1780. On the south side of the Church formerly was part of the parish burying ground, extending to a row of houses the whole length of the Church, and forming a very narrow lane called Hosier Lane. In 1771 the Corporation purchased one side of this lane to improve the street. The houses were accordingly taken down, the cellars filled up, and the ground on which they stood, together with the Church yard on that side, was flagged and added to the street. This broad causeway was long used as a poultry market, and known by the name of *Goose Flags*. The burying ground on the north side was parcelled out to those who had houses adjoining, and a sum of money was raised by that means, with which the parishioners purchased a piece of ground in Hungate, as a place of interment. There was formerly another narrow lane at the east end of this Church, called Whipmawhopmagate. (See page 362.)

ST. CUTHBERT'S CHURCH, *Peaseholme Green*.—An ancient Discharged Rectory, it being a parish Church under the patronage of William de Percy at the time of the Conquest. It afterwards belonged to the Prior and Convent of the Holy Trinity in this City; and at the Dissolution the patronage became vested in the Crown. In 1585 it had the parish Churches of St. Helen-on-the-Walls; St. Mary extra Layerthorpe; and All Saints on Peaseholme

Green united to it. The present Rector is the Rev. Thomas Henry York, for whom the Rev. H. Newton officiates. The site of this Church is particularly remarkable for the discovery of Roman antiquities. (See page 293.) The *Structure of the Church*, which is neat, and has a much fresher appearance, than most of the Churches in York, is in the later Perpendicular style, and consists of a body without aisles, and a well-proportioned square tower of three stories, at the west end. The latter appendage contains two bells, and is finished with gargoyles and battlements. The south side of the Church is made into five divisions, by neat buttresses, and exhibits a brick porch and four square headed windows. The north side is in three divisions, and has a pointed doorway and square-headed windows.

The east end is blank, except on the north side, where is a pointed window of three lights; the place of the other windows being occupied by two large buttresses of brick. On the north side is a small brick vestry. The interior is of one space, with a waggon-head ceiling, adorned with grotesque bosses, and supported on similar corbals at the sides. The altar piece consists of four Corinthian pilasters, supporting a broken angular pediment, in which are the Royal Arms of Queen Anne, with the date of 1702, probably the date of the last repair of the Church. The pulpit is hexagonal, and the font, which is octagonal, is new. In the windows are some remains of stained glass, particularly the Royal Arms of Edward III. There are no monuments worthy of notice. Near the entrance is an inscription in memory of William Bowes, Lord Mayor, A.D. 1416. There was anciently an altar in this Church, belonging to the Guild of St. Mary and St. Martin the Confessor.

Near the walls of the City in the neighbourhood of Aldwark, a little to the north west of Merchant Tailors' Hall, is supposed to have stood the *Church of St. Helen on the Walls*,\* which was anciently a Rectory of medieties, under the patronage of the families of Graunt or Grant, Salvaine, and Langton, to the latter of whom in process of time fell the sole presentation.

\* Camden mentions that the ashes of the Roman Emperor Constantius Chlorus, who died in York about the year 306, were certainly deposited in this City, and that the place of their interment (a vaulted tomb, within a little Chapel) was found soon after the Reformation. The sepulchre thus spoken of by this learned antiquary, is said to have been where the Church of St. Helen stood in Aldwark; and it is highly probable that Constantine the Great, who became a convert to Christianity, caused a Christian Church to be built over the place where his father's ashes were deposited. This idea is strengthened by the name of his mother being connected with the Church, and by the vicinity of this building to the Imperial Palace. Camden adds a marvellous story of a lamp having been found burning in the tomb, which was soon extinguished by the communication of the air, and this too on the authority of several intelligent inhabitants of the city.

It was united to the Church of St. Cuthbert, as above mentioned, and no remains of the buildings are now visible. The ancient parish *Church of Layerthorpe*, dedicated to St. Mary, was a Rectory, and was united to St. Cuthbert's. The remains of this building, which stood without the Postern, on the hill on the right hand, have also disappeared in toto.

*The Church of All Saints, or All Hallows*, of which there are now no remains, stood in the centre of Peaseholme Green. Its foundations were discovered in erecting the present weighing machine. It was a Rectory in the gift of the families that claimed the patronage of St. Helen's Church, and was united with St. Cuthbert's, as before stated, in 1585.

CHURCH OF ST. DENNIS, or DYONIS, *Walmgate*.—Tradition represents this Church to have been originally a Jewish Synagogue, or Tabernacle, but there seems to be no ground for the opinion. It is an ancient Discharged Rectory, and before the Reformation it formed part of the possessions of the Hospital of St. Leonard in this City. At the dissolution it came to the Crown, and since the year 1585, when the Church of St. George was united to it, the patronage has been alternately in the Crown, and the family of Palmes, of Naburn. St. Dennis's was anciently the parish Church of the Percy's, Earls of Northumberland, whose residence in the City stood opposite to it, and was called Percy's Inn. (See page 346). This Church was formerly a spacious handsome structure, with a neat and lofty spire in the midst of it. At the siege of 1644 this spire was perforated by a cannon ball from the Parliamentary batteries; about sixty years after that accident it was greatly damaged by lightning, and in 1778 it suffered severely from a high wind. The Church was much reduced, by taking down the west end, in 1798, in consequence of the foundation being injured by a large and deep drain passing too near it, which was intended to draw the water from the Foss Islands. At the same time the spire was taken down, and a square tower substituted. The reduction which the Church underwent at that time rendered what was originally the length of it shorter than its breadth; and hence the edifice has a novel and singular appearance. In 1847 the tower was rebuilt, the Church repewed, and the whole fabric substantially repaired. The present Rector is the Rev. James Sabben. The *Edifice*, which is dedicated to St. Dennis, a French Saint, consists only of the ancient chancel and its aisles, with a west tower. The latter is three stories high, embattled, and contains two bells. The south side of the Church is made into three divisions, by buttresses; in the first from the west of which is a beautiful arched doorway of five enriched mouldings, resting on piers. This doorway was formerly approached by an elegant Anglo-Saxon porch, which stood prior to the re-



duction of the Church, and which was in some degree similar to the much-admired one at St. Margaret's Church. In the remaining divisions, as well as on the north side, are pointed windows of three lights. The east end of the chancel rises considerably above the aisles, but each of the roofs rises to an apex. The east end is made into separate divisions, by buttresses; in the centre division is a depressed headed window of five lights, above which is a clock placed there in 1818; and in the aisles are pointed windows, one of four and the other of five lights. The interior has an equally strange appearance with the exterior, but it is neatly fitted up. The lower story of the tower is used as a vestry, and on the second story there is a small gallery. The aisles are separated from the nave by two large pointed arches. The roof of the nave is flat and panelled, the intersections being marked by grotesque figures, shields, &c. The pulpit is neatly carved, and the font is octagonal. A new organ has recently been erected in this Church, by subscription. The windows of this Church were once filled with stained glass. The east window at present exhibits figures of the Crucifixion, the Blessed Virgin, St. John, St. Dennis, and an Archbishop. In the south aisle window are the heads of two female Saints, very beautiful and perfect. The body of Henry Earl of Northumberland, killed at the battle of Towton, is buried under a large slab of blue marble (the family vault) in the north aisle. On the walls on each side of the Communion table are monuments—one to the memory of Mrs. Dorothy Hughes, and the other to R. W. Hotham, Esq., Sheriff of York, in 1801, who died in 1806, aged 48. The former monument, which has no date, has an antique female figure kneeling, in the costume of the latter part of the seventeenth century; and the latter, which is of elegant marble, exhibits at the top a dove descending towards a weeping figure leaning upon an urn. In the west end of the south aisle is a large tablet, with a Corinthian pillar on each side, to the memory of Dorothy Wilson, spinster, who died in 1717, aged 72, and left a considerable number of legacies for charitable purposes. There were formerly several ancient inscriptions in this Church, including one to the memory of Vice-Admiral Holmes, a native of York, who died in 1558.

THE "CHURCH OF ST. GEORGE, *Fishergate*," which for ecclesiastical purposes is united with the Church of St. Dennis, stood in the burial ground in St. George's Street. It was a Rectory, originally in the patronage of the family of Palmes, of Naburn, many of whom are interred here; that village being partly in the parish of St. George. It was afterwards in the gift of the Malbyes, of Acaster, and in the reign of Richard II. it was appropriated to the Nunnery of Monkton. The Churchyard is an elevated situation, and

in the wall next to Fishergate Postern, is yet remaining a curious mutilated piece of sculpture, that in all probability is a sepulchral remnant of a lady of the early ages. Mr. Hargrove tells us that part of the west end of the Church was standing a few years ago, but there are no remains of it now visible. There was one Chantry founded in this Church, at the altar of St. Mary, for the soul of Nicholas, son of Hugh de Sutton. This Churchyard is remarkable as having been the place where was interred the body of *Richard Turpin*, the notorious highwayman, who was tried and convicted for horse stealing, at York Assizes, and executed on the 7th of April, 1739, "Tradition asserts," says Allen, "that early on the morning of the interment, the body was stolen for the purpose of dissection; but a mob having assembled on the occasion, it was traced by them to a garden, whence it was borne in triumph through the streets on four men's shoulders, replaced in the same grave, and a quantity of slacked lime deposited round the body. On the coffin," he continues, "was inscribed *R. T.*, 28; but he is said to have informed the executioner that he was 33 years of age." This yard was used as a place of burial for persons dying of the cholera in 1832. The Church or parochial Chapel of Naburn is situate about four miles south of York, on the eastern bank of the river Ouse. The living is annexed to the Rectory of St. Dennis.

ST. OLAVE'S CHURCH, *Marygate*.—This Church, which, according to Drake, is the oldest ecclesiastical foundation in York, except the Cathedral, appears to have been built by Siward, Earl of Northumbria, and dedicated to St. Olave, the Danish King and Martyr. It is recorded in the Saxon Chronicle that Earl Siward died in 1055, and was buried "within the Minster at Galmanho,\* which he had ordered to be built and consecrated in the name of God and St. Olave, to the honour of God and all his Saints." In the time of William II. it was an ancient Rectory in the possession of Alan, Earl of Bretagne, to whom it was given by the Conqueror.† Alan gave it with the four acres of land, on which St. Mary's Abbey afterwards stood, to Stephen and his monks, who had fled from Whitby, in order that they might settle here; and for some time it was used as the Conventual Church. After the Abbey Church was erected, St. Olave's was accounted as a Chapel dependent on the monks; and it is probably on this account that no valuation is put upon the living in the King's Books. During the siege of York, in 1644, the old edifice was much shattered in consequence of a battery of guns having been planted upon its roof—some of the hottest firing having taken

\* Galmanho was the ancient name of Marygate. † Archbishop Sharp's MS.

place in this quarter. It was however repaired in the reign of Charles II., and afterwards nearly rebuilt in 1722-3, the stone for the exterior being chiefly from the ruins of the Abbey of St. Mary, which it adjoins. "One may easily imagine this Church to have been built out of St. Mary's Abbey," says Gent, "it is indeed a handsome one, but with little or no marks of antiquity." The same observation is still applicable. It exhibits a mixture of ancient materials and modern workmanship so combined, as to be worthy the attention of the curious. In this Church was formerly a seat for the use of the Lords President of the North, who usually attended divine service here. The benefice, to which the ancient one of St. Giles is united, is a Perpetual Curacy, in the patronage of Earl de Grey, probably as lessee under the Crown; and the present incumbent is the Rev. Frederick Augustus Bartlet.

*The Fabric*, which is in the late Perpendicular style, consists of a nave, side aisles, and west tower. The latter appendage contains six bells, and is surmounted by a parapet and eight sleight pinnacles. The north side of the Church is made into six divisions by buttresses, with gargoyles ending in crocketed pinnacles. This side of the Church has some good windows and a pointed doorway, over which is a large niche without a statue. The south side is much plainer. The east window is of four lights, with cinquefoil heads. The interior is very neat, having been entirely refurnished a few years ago, at an expense of about £300., raised by subscription. The seats, which are single with doors, are of Norway oak; and the pulpit, reading-desk, altar piece, &c., are all very neat. The east window is filled with stained glass, and there is a gallery at the west end. The font is modern, and very good; and a new organ was erected here by subscription in 1856. Against the east end of the north aisle is a handsome marble tablet to Frances Worsley, daughter of Thomas Worsley, Esq., of Hovingham Hall, who died in 1837, in her 79th year; another handsome tablet to Anthony Thorpe, Esq., who died in 1880, aged 72, and Susanna, his widow, who died in 1837, aged 65; and another to David Russell, Esq., who died in September, 1840, aged 67. In the same aisle are the following:—a splendid marble monument to the Eyre family; a tablet to the Rev. Thomas Cripps, Rector of Cheadle, in Cheshire, who died in 1794, aged 56; a plain tablet to William Cattell, and his widow Sarah, who died—the former in 1830, aged 56, and the latter in 1842, aged 71; and a very neat sarcophagus to commemorate David Poole, Esq., who departed this life in 1830, aged 80, and other members of his family. In the east end of the south aisle is an elegantly-carved tablet to William Thornton, architect, who died in 1721, aged 51 years; and a neat marble tablet to John Dyson (who died in 1827, aged 72), and his two wives.

Against the wall of this aisle are handsome tablets to Mr. George Hutchinson, of Reeth, in this County, who died in 1775, aged 22, and his mother, Elizabeth Hutchinson, who died in 1774; to Charles Christopher Richard, third son of Francis Beynton Hacket, Esq., of Moor Hall, Warwickshire, who died in his 26th year, in 1849; to Alathea, wife of John Jordon, Esq., Colonel of the 9th Dragoons, who died in 1741, and was buried here; and to John Roper, Esq., and Sarah, his wife, the former died in 1826, aged 69, and the latter in 1835, in her 61st year.

The parish of *St. Giles* or *St. Egidius the Abbot*, was united to that of *St. Olave* in 1585; the ancient Church of that parish, we are told by Gent, stood "in *St. Giles's Gate*, vulgarly called *Gillygate*." Its exact site is said to be near the middle of that street, on the north-west side. The parish of *St. Olave* is without the walls of the City, in the North Riding of the County, and *Wapentake* of *Bulmer*, and contains the hamlet of *Marygate*, part of the township of *Clifton*, one-third of *Heworth*, and one-third of *Rawcliffe*.

*ST. HELEN'S CHURCH*, *St. Helen's Square*, was anciently a Rectory appropriated to the Nunnery of *Molesby*, in *Lincolnshire*; and in the reign of *Henry V.* a Vicarage was obtained in it. At the Reformation the patronage came to the Crown. The present Vicar is the Rev. *William Hey*. It appears that there were formerly four Churches in *York* and its suburbs dedicated in honour of *St. Helen*, or *Helena*, the mother of *Constantine the Great*; and tradition says that the one we are now describing stands on the site of a heathen Temple dedicated to the goddess *Diana*, whose statues usually were placed where three ways met. This will appear the more probable when we recollect that in 1770, some Roman foundations were discovered near it. From its awkward situation at the junction of three streets, in the Act passed in the 1st of *Edward VI.* (1547), *St. Helen's*, commonly termed in *Stonegate*, was suppressed and defaced, "because it seemed much to deform the City, being a great delay to some streets meeting and winding at it." The inhabitants, however, in the 1st of *Queen Mary* (1553), procured an Act of Parliament to enable them to re-edify the Church, and restore the Churchyard that extended from it so far as to occupy a great part of the area, in front of several old cottages, which then stood where the *York Tavern* (now *Harker's Royal Hotel*) was erected in 1770. The ground of the Churchyard having risen to an enormous height by successive interments, it was approached from the street by an ascent of stone steps, and the entrance into the Church was by a descent of a similar kind. This rendered the passage for carriages to the Assembly Rooms extremely unpleasant; and in 1743, the Corporation gave the parish a plot of ground in *Davygate* for a place of interment, and

levelled and appropriated the Churchyard to the public use; and by some anomaly of taste or language called it St. Helen's *Square*, notwithstanding its triangular shape. Prior to these alterations the area bore the opprobrious name of Cuckold's Corner. There were three Chantries in this Church, one founded by William de Grantham, merchant, in 1371; another by Ralph de Hornby, merchant, in 1373; and the third by John de Nassington, the period of which is uncertain. The edifice abuts on the space called a *square*, to which it gives name, and consists of a nave, chancel, and side aisles. As we have seen, the whole structure was partly rebuilt, and entirely restored in the beginning of the reign of Queen Mary; its general style is Decorated.

The roof of the nave (at the west end) rises to an apex, on which is a small octangular lantern, or bell turret, erected about forty-five years ago, when the old octagonal steeple was taken down. Each face of this lantern appendage has a pointed window, and it is finished with a neat pierced battlement. The west front has buttresses terminating in crocketed pinnacles, and a recessed pointed arch, beneath which is a very handsome window of four lights. Under this window is a pointed doorway, the weather cornice resting on shields. The west end of the south aisle is made into two divisions by buttresses, which gives the Church a very singular appearance. In them are pointed windows of three lights, and the battlement, which is continued on the aisles, is pierced in a very tasteful manner. The west end of the north aisle is partly built against, and the remainder of the edifice is totally concealed from view. In the interior the centre is divided from the aisles by four pointed arches resting on octagonal columns without bases or capitals. The east window has some stained glass left, representing full length figures of a King and Queen, Bishops, and several Saints; and in the windows of the aisles, are some shields of arms of the families of Beauchamp, Fitzhugh, Percy, Lucy, and Skirlaw. The roof of the Church is ceiled and plain; in the west end is a small gallery, on which stands a small organ. The pulpit is octagonal, and the altar piece is neat. The old Saxon font, lined with lead, and ornamented with antique sculpture, is the most curious in the City.

There is here a small marble tablet to the memory of two maiden sisters, Barbara and Elizabeth Davyes, who died in 1765 and 1767, each 98 years of age. They lived in the reign of Charles II., and the five successive Monarchs. This tablet was erected by their nephew "to perpetuate their memory, and the singular instance of their longevity and departure in the same year of their age."

This Church being in a dilapidated state, a subscription is now being raised for the purpose of restoring.

CHURCH OF ST. JOHN THE EVANGELIST, *Micklegate*, formerly called *St. John's, Ouse Bridge End*.—This is a Perpetual Curacy, appertaining to the Dean and Chapter of York, and though mentioned in the *Liber Regis*, has no value affixed to the living. The present incumbent is the Rev. Edwin Fox. The *Building* consists of a nave and side aisles, the south side and east end abutting upon *Micklegate* and *North Street*. In 1551 the lofty steeple of this Church was blown down, and has never been rebuilt, but its place is supplied by an ugly brick turret, very much resembling a pigeon cote, which greatly disfigures the Church. In this excrescence hangs a peal of six bells, three of which were brought from the ancient Church of *St. Nicholas*, out of *Walmgate*, and hung up here in 1653. There was formerly a burial ground, surrounded by a wall, in front of this Church; but at the time of the improvements about *Ouse Bridge*, the wall was removed and a portion of the Churchyard was taken into the street. In 1850 the east end was pulled down, rebuilt, and straightened, to widen the street, the north side was restored with *Whitby stone*, and the whole Church was thoroughly repaired. At the same time the Church was refurnished—single seats being substituted for the old-fashioned high pews. The cost of the restoration, reparations, &c., was about £900., raised by voluntary contribution, aided by a grant from the Church Building Society. The architect was Mr. George Fowler Jones, of York. The edifice is partly in the Decorated and partly in the Perpendicular styles; its south side is in five divisions, made by buttresses of three gradations. In the first from the west is a small but very neat porch, and a small square headed window of two lights; in each of the three succeeding divisions is a depressed arched window of three lights, and in the easternmost division is a similar window of two lights. The finish of this facade is a string course and battlement, and the buttresses are finished with gargoyles and pinnacles. At the east end the roofs of the three aisles rake to an apex, and are without ornament. There are three large windows in this end. The west front is built against, and the north side of the Church is partly concealed from view. The interior is very neat, three large pointed arches, springing from octagonal pillars, divide the aisles from the nave. The east end of the latter is used as a chancel. The ceiling is flat and panelled, and the roofs of the aisles, which have a slight rising, are panelled with bosses of arms, &c. The aisles evidently had formerly a groined roof, as there are remains of several corbals. The altar piece is plain, the pulpit hexagonal, and the font is new and good. A portion of the west end of the north aisle is used as a vestry, but the building of a vestry on the north side of the Church is in contemplation. In the vestry are two curious pewter

flags, one of which is seventeen inches high and five inches in diameter, with scroll work engraved. It is of seven sides, each adorned with a full length figure, habited in the costume of the middle of the seventeenth century. The windows still retain some painted glass, representing the Crucifixion, the Interment, &c., of our Lord, and the arms of York, Neville, and other families. There were anciently four chantries in this Church. Here lie interred the remains of Sir Richard Yorke, of York, Knight, who represented this City in six different Parliaments, and died in 1508. He was Mayor of the Staple at Calais, and Lord Mayor of this City in 1469 and 1482. On the north side of the Communion table is an altar monument lately inscribed to his memory, though it is not certain that it was erected for him. "North of the altar," says Gent, "is a tomb without any inscription, nor could I learn who was interred therein; neither guess, unless of Sir Richard Yorke, depicted in the windows above it." The modern monuments are not numerous, nor worthy of particular notice.

CHURCH OF ST. LAWRENCE, *out of Walmgate Bar*, in the street to which it gives name.—This was anciently a Rectory belonging to the Dean and Chapter of York; it was one of the great farms of that body, and usually demised to one of the Canons Residentiary, at an annual rent of £9. 13s. 4d. It is now a peculiar Vicarage in their gift, and in the incumbency of the Rev. John Robinson. A Chantry was founded here in 1346, by Nicholas Wartyr. In 1365 the Church of St. Michael was united to this Church, subject to a pension of 13s. 4d. per annum, to the Priory and Convent of Kirkham; and in 1585 Archbishop Sandys, with the Mayor and Corporation, united to it the Churches of St. Helen and All Saints, in Fishergate. At the siege of York in 1644, the Church of St. Lawrence was nearly destroyed, and it remained in ruins till 1669, when it was repaired partially, but in the year 1817 it was thoroughly restored and enlarged.

*The Edifice*, which is of mixed styles, consists only of a nave or body, and a chancel, with a small western tower of three stories. In the west front of the lower story of the tower is a rude sculpture, representing St. Lawrence and the gridiron. The windows of the Church are small, and of different shapes, some having pointed arches, others circular, and some square-headed. On the north side is a beautiful Norman doorway, somewhat resembling those belonging to the Churches of St. Margaret and St. Dennts. The circular head of this doorway is of four mouldings, the interior one being plain, and the rest of a scroll or flower pattern. The two outer mouldings rest on columns; on the capital of one is sculptured a sagittarius, and on the other one the Holy Lamb opposed by a dragon. The interior of the Church is

very plain. The tower is open to it by a low pointed arch; the arch between the nave and chancel is pointed; the ceilings of both the nave and the chancel are flat, and at the west end is a small gallery sustained by two Tuscan pillars. The font, which is of Purbeck marble, is very curious. It consists of an octagonal basin, ornamented with bosses of heads, leafage, and grotesque figures, standing on a pedestal of the same form. In the tracery of the east window are the family arms of Hesketh—*arg.* on a bend *sab.* three garbs *or*; crest, a garb, *or*, banded *az.*—with this motto "C'EST LA SEVL VERTVE QVI DONNE LA NOBLESSE" ("Tis virtue only that confers nobility). In the chancel are several neat marble monuments, inscribed to the memory of different branches of the Yarburgh family, of Heslington, a neighbouring village, who have a vault in this Church. Drake mentions "two antique statues, which lie on the Churchyard wall (of St. Lawrence's), to the street, in priests' habits, but whether Christian or Pagan is a doubt." There is no longer a doubt on this point, for it seems very certain that they have been a portion of a series of statues which once adorned the Church of St. Mary's Abbey, and eight of which are now in the Yorkshire Museum. (See page 504). The wall upon which they stood in Drake's time has been superseded by a neat iron palisade, and the two effigies now stand against the north wall of the Church—one on each side of the Norman doorway. "It is much to be regretted," says the Rev. C. Wellbeloved, "that the statues now in the Churchyard of St. Lawrence, should be separated from the other remains of the series of which they were originally a part, and placed on the sides of a Norman portal, with which they have no proper connection, where they have no meaning, excite no particular interest, are seen by few, and are exposed to still further injury from the weather."

Against the same wall of this Church is fixed a large grit stone, supposed by some historians to have been a Roman altar, and by others a portion of a cross of memorial. It is without any inscription. In the course of the year 1854, the Archbishop of York consecrated an acre of land as an enlargement of the burial ground of this Church. The cost, about £800., has been liberally contributed to by N. E. Yarburgh, Esq., and Yarburgh Yarburgh, Esq., late owners, successively, of the Heslington estate. In consequence of the enlargement this burial ground was suffered to remain open, subject to the conditions noticed at page 374, whilst all the other Churchyards in York were closed. Against the west wall of the Churchyard is a large monument, to the memory of six children of the late Mr. Rigg, of this parish, and another person, who were drowned in the Ouse, near Acomb landing, by their pleasure-boat being run down by a vessel in full sail on the 19th of



August, 1830. The epitaph is by James Montgomery. A stone coffin serves the purpose of a trough to a pump in the street in front of this Churchyard.

The ancient *Church of St. Michael* was situated near Walmgate Bar. It was a Rectory, appropriated to the Priory and Convent of Kirkham. In 1365 it was united by the Archbishop of York to the adjoining Church and parish of St. Lawrence, the Vicars paying to the Convent of Kirkham, out of the tithes, the annual sum of 13s. 4d. There are no traces of the edifice to be seen, and its exact site is unknown; but the Rev. C. Wellbeloved says, "I am inclined to think, from some information I received from one of the Ordnance surveyors, that it was near the Bar, on the east side of the road to Fulford."

The ancient *Church of St. Nicholas* stood in Watlingate (now Lawrence Street), on the ground adjoining Plantation House and the Tan-yard. It was originally connected with the Hospital of St. Nicholas; and after the dissolution of religious houses, it remained parochial until the siege of York in 1644, when it was destroyed by the Parliamentarians. We learn from tradition that the soldiers seized the bells, intending to cast them into cannon; but being rescued from them by Lord Fairfax, they were, in 1653, placed in St. John's Church, Micklegate. The magnificent old porch in front of St. Margaret's Church, Walmgate, was brought from this building; and the other parts of the ruins were successively removed to repair the roads, &c., till the whole completely disappeared. Upon the same road, a little further towards Heslington, at the corner of Edward Street, and opposite Lamel Hill, formerly stood the *Church of St. Edward*, which was a Rectory, under the Archbishops of York, and thus continued till 1585, when it was united to the Church of St. Nicholas. Time has destroyed every vestige of this ancient structure.

*The Church of St. Helen*, in Fishergate, was situated on the road to Fulford, but its site cannot be exactly ascertained.

*The Church of All Saints* is supposed to have stood on a part of the present Cattle market, without Fishergate Bar. Drake observes that he could not ascertain where All Saints' was erected, but the many relics of mortality which were exposed in 1826, on opening the ground for the new market, leaves little doubt that it was the site of the above Church. All Saints' was a very ancient Rectory, given by King William II. to the Abbey of Whitby, on condition that the monks there should pray for him and his heirs. There was also another Church in Fishergate, dedicated to St. Andrew, which was a Rectory, given to the Priory of Newburgh, by Lord Mowbray.

ST. MARGARET'S CHURCH, *Walmgate*.—Walter Fagenulf gave this Church

and that of St. Mary, which were conjoined into one Rectory, and which also stood in this street, to the Hospital of St. Peter or St. Leonard, York, in the reign of Henry I. At the time of the dissolution the patronage came to the Crown, where it still remains. The Rev. George Coopland is the present Rector. In 1672 the steeple of this Church fell down, and seriously injured the roof of the building, which, owing to inability, or unwillingness of the parish at that period, was not repaired till 1684, when the parishioners were assisted by a subscription for the work. The roof was then covered with red tiles, and the square tower was chiefly built with bricks. In 1839 the Church underwent a considerable restoration; but in 1851-2 the structure, except the tower, was enlarged and nearly rebuilt. The *Edifice* is situated in the Church-yard behind the houses on the north side of the street, and the approach from the street is through a neat pair of iron gates. Its parts are a nave, the east end of which is used as a chancel, a north aisle, a small Chapel on the south side, now used as a vestry, and a brick tower at the west end. This tower, which contains three good bells, has stone quoins, and a battlement, with decayed pinnacles at the angles. In one of the three divisions of the south side of the Church, is a beautiful and very celebrated porch, which was brought here from the Church or Hospital of St. Nicholas, which formerly stood without Walmgate Bar. This particularly curious doorway, of very early workmanship, is undoubtedly the most extraordinary specimen of Norman or even Saxon sculpture and architecture this country can exhibit. It consists of four united semicircular arches, below and within each other. The top or outer arch exhibits the twelve signs of the zodiac, with a *thirteenth* zodiacal sign, according to the Anglo-Saxon calendar, which continued in use for some time after the Norman Conquest, each sign being followed by a hieroglyphical representation of the corresponding month. Beneath the zodiacal signs is a carved flower moulding. The second arch comprises twenty-two grotesque masks; the third, eighteen hieroglyphical figures; and the fourth, fifteen figures similar to those on the preceding one. The outer arch is supported by curiously carved pillars, and the three inner ones rest upon round columns. Within the porch is a small recess on each side; and over the door of the Church is a carved arch, also supported by round columns. The roof of the porch rises to an apex, which is surmounted by a small stone image of the crucifixion; and the whole, which is singularly pleasing, is an admirable display of the taste which prevailed a short time previous to the abandonment of the Saxon style. This splendid piece of ancient art has excited much controversy amongst antiquarians, some contending that it belongs to the tenth or eleventh century, and others again that it is a Roman work. But

whatever may be the date of its erection, all have agreed to pronounce it a most rare and exquisite piece of carving in stone. The recent enlargement and restoration of this Church cost about £1,240., raised by subscription. The width of the north aisle was increased by six feet; the walls and all the tracery of the windows were restored, and the latter was glazed with Cathedral glass, with a coloured margin. The Church was new roofed, and covered, together with the splendid porch, with slate, instead of the old red tiles; the vestry was new roofed, and a new window inserted in it. The interior was refurnished, and the gallery at the west end was enlarged and elevated. This gallery was erected in 1839, at a cost of 500 guineas, of which sum the present Rector contributed £200. Previous to the alterations, the Church accommodated 400 persons, but provision is now made for 540, the additional sittings being free. The interior of the building has an exceedingly chaste and elegant appearance, and not the least improvement is the substitution of neat open seats for the old high pews. The roofs are open, and of stained pine, and the benches are stained and varnished. The reading desk and altar rails are new, and in keeping with the other fittings, but the pulpit, which is hexagonal, is old. The tower is open to the Church, and the aisle is divided from the body of the Church by four pointed arches, resting on octagonal columns, without capitals. The elegant new font is from the chisel of Mr. William Jackson, of this City, sculptor, and is the gift of Mrs. L. S. Townsend. It is of Caen stone, and has eight sunk panels, with sacred monograms and foliage carved therein. In 1855 a new organ was erected in this Church, at a cost of about £70., raised by subscription. At the chancel end of the nave is a neat tablet to the memory of T. Wilson, Esq., an eminent bookseller in this City, who served the office of Sheriff in 1767, and died in 1780, aged 59; and another to S. Wormold, Esq., Lord Mayor of York in 1809, who died in 1814, aged 59 years. Several large trees in the Church-yard being in a state of decay, were removed about ten years ago, and young trees planted instead of them.

The ancient *Church of St. Peter in the Willows*, which at the time of the union of the Churches in York was united to St. Margaret's, was situated at the end of Long Close Lane, near its junction with Walmgate. It was an ancient Rectory, in the gift of the Monastery of Kirkham, and in it was a perpetual Chantry, founded at the altar of St. Mary, but the founder's name is unknown.

CHURCH OF ST. MARTIN THE BISHOP, *Coney Street*.—This is sometimes denominated the Church of St. Martin-le-Grand, but for which title there is

not the slightest authority. It was a parochial Church prior to the Norman Conquest, for in the Domesday Survey it is noticed that "Gospatrick has the Church of St. Martin in Conyng Streete." Since that time it was numbered amongst the great farms of the Dean and Chapter of York; and in 1331 that body appointed William de Langtoft, Vicar of the Perpetual Vicarage thereof, and gave him an adjoining house to dwell in, with other privileges, including the fruits and obventions of the Churches of St. Andrew, St. Stephen, and St. John, in Hungate, and the mediety of St. Helen, in Werkdyke; and, as dependent on St. Martin's, the Churches of St. Michael de Berefride, St. John ad Pontem Use, and St. Mary, in Layerthorpe. There were two Chantries here also, for the support of which certain houses were erected in the Churchyard and their rents paid to the officiating priests. The living is still a Vicarage, in the patronage of the Dean and Chapter, and now in the incumbency of the Rev. William Henry Oldfield.

The *Fabric*, which is a good specimen of late perpendicular work, is composed of a nave (the east end of which is used as a chancel), and side aisles, and a handsome square tower at the south west angle. This tower is in three stories, and has several good windows, with weather cornices resting on human heads, &c., and is finished with a handsome battlement pierced with quatrefoil and trefoil panels; and at each angle are double buttresses, which rise to nearly the height of the building, where they are finished by square shafts terminating in crocketed pinnacles, and secured to the structure by gargoyles of the most grotesque description. In the tower is a peal of eight bells, presented by William Thompson, Esq., in 1729. Each bell has a quaint motto; for example, the sixth bell gives this piece of excellent advice:

"All you who hear my mournful sound,  
Repent before you lie in ground."

The west end of the nave, which rises to an apex, is of considerable height, and contains a fine window of five lights, and at the same end of the north aisle has a similar window of three lights. The south side of the Church is made into five divisions by small buttresses of two gradations, from which rise shafts with gargoyles. The entrance to the edifice is in the first division from the west, and consists of a small porch recently rebuilt. The other divisions on this side contain each a pointed window of three lights, and the clerestory of the nave and chancel contains five depressed arched window of four lights. Both aisle and clerestory finish with a cornice and plain parapet. The east end abuts on Coney Street, and is rendered re-

markable by a large circular illuminated clock, which projects into the street.\* Upon this clock is the figure of a man holding a quadrant, as if in the act of taking a solar observation.† This quadrant formerly always pointed to the sun. The east window, which is handsome, is similar to that in the west end of the nave; and the east end of the aisles have each a pointed window of three lights. Beneath the north aisle window is a square headed doorway, and between the central and north windows of this end of the Church is a small square niche, which, before the recent restoration, contained a mutilated statue of the Virgin and Child. The north side of the building being built against has no windows. In the years 1853 and 1854, the whole of the south side and the eastern ends of the aisles were almost rebuilt, and a rich pierced battlement was added, of a similar design to that which was removed about forty years ago, with handsome pinnacles engaged with grotesque gargoyles. The above-mentioned statue was restored and placed in the niche, but having been considered by some to be "a most offensive addition to a Protestant place of worship," it was quickly removed by order of the Archbishop of York. The restorations were completed and the Church was re-opened for Divine Service on Sunday, December 24, 1854. The cost of the restoration and improvement, about £1,100., was raised partly by subscription, and partly by mortgaging the funds belonging to the parish. The Dean and Chapter contributed towards the restoration of the chancel end of the edifice. St. Martin's Church is now one of the handsomest in the City, and its appearance from the river is beautiful. Allen tells us that previous to the year 1778, there was a considerable quantity of Gothic work on the buttresses, but that "it being thought desirable to improve the appearance of that part of the Church, it was all torn away by the ruthless hand of unfeeling ignorance."

The interior of the Church is handsome. The body is divided from the aisles by six pointed arches, supported by octagonal columns. The roofs are flat, and panelled with bosses of angels, pomegranates, &c., enriched with

\* A large projecting circular clock was first erected against this Church by the parish, in 1668; but during the past year (1856) it was removed, and the present elegant illuminated electric clock erected in its stead. The latter, which is valued at three hundred guineas, was manufactured by Mr. Thomas Cooke, of Coney Street, at his Mathematical and Philosophical Instrument Manufactory (Buckingham Works), Bishophill, York. This clock, from its position, is hardly less useful to the public than that of the Cathedral.

† The wags of the City say that this man steps down from his elevated situation every time he *hears* the clock strike.

foliage. The Church was repewed some twenty years ago. The altar piece is neat, and the balusters round the Communion table are very elegantly carved. The pulpit is modern. There was formerly suspended before the pulpit an ancient and curious piece of embroidery, highly ornamented, consisting of a piece of puce coloured velvet with stars of gold, having in the centre a representation of the Holy Trinity, and on the sides and end full length effigies of the Apostles, all in good preservation. This interesting relic, which doubtless at a former period formed a splendid cope for the ministers of the ancient faith, was presented to the Yorkshire Museum in 1840. Mr. Allen has no doubt that at the time of the Reformation "many scores of equally curious and elegant specimens of the taste and ingenuity of our forefathers had been burnt to ashes in the streets of York." The font is octagonal, plain and massy, on a similar stand, with an elegantly carved cover, having the date 1717, and the names of the churchwardens of that year carved round its rim. The organ stands at the west end of the nave.

This Church was formerly very rich in ancient stained glass. In 1722 the glass from the great east window, which contained "the history of St. Athanasius and his creed," was, according to Gent, removed to the Minster by order of the Dean. The large west window, which is called St. Martin's window, exhibits a full length effigy of that Saint, with several legends concerning him; five of the six clerestory windows on one side are also filled with stained glass, and there are some remains of that beautiful article in the windows of the aisle. These contain figures of the Blessed Virgin, St. George, St. John of Beverley, St. William, St. Dennis, the four Evangelists, St. Catherine, &c. There are likewise five very beautiful modern stained glass windows in this Church, of which those in the east and west ends of the south aisle, and the north west window of the same aisle, together with the east window of the north aisle, were executed by Wailes, of Newcastle-upon-Tyne; and two others at the west end of the south aisle, are partly by Barnett, late of York. The stained glass in these four windows, as well as the coloured glass of the chancel window, and the windows of the clerestory on the south side, is the gift of the Vicar, the Rev. W. H. Oldfield, and other members of the family of that name. The fifth modern stained glass window occupies the easternmost bay of the south aisle, and was erected at the expense of the parishioners. The latter window contains in the centre light a whole length figure of our Saviour. That at the east end of the south aisle, exhibits in the centre light a group representing the work of mercy—"Clothing the Naked"—in allusion to the legend of St. Martin having on one occasion divided his cloak with a beggar. In the

window of the east end of the north aisle, is a group representing another work of mercy—that of “Feeding the Hungry.”

The monuments are pretty numerous. In the wall at the east end of the south aisle is a curious black marble slab to commemorate Thomas Colthurst, Esq., of York, who died in June, 1588; at the corners of it are shields in which his crest is repeated. At the east end of the Church is a tablet to the memory of Peter Johnson, Esq., Recorder of this City, who died in 1796, aged 76. In the nave is a neat slab to Frances Howard, daughter of F. Howard, Esq., of Corby Castle, Cumberland, who died in 1719, aged 31; a tablet to William Dobson, Esq., Lord Mayor of York in 1729, and Elizabeth his wife, the former died in 1749, and the latter in 1768; a handsome Gothic monument to John Kendall, Esq., and his wife, who died, the former in 1823, aged 76, and the latter in 1833, aged 79; a neat marble tablet, surmounted by an urn, to Alexander Gerrard, Esq., barrister-at-law, who died in this City during the Assizes, in March, 1791, aged 51; a tablet to John Girdler, Esq., who died in 1793, aged 82; two neat tablets to the Radcliffe family; and a neat marble tablet to William Oldfield, Esq., Lord Mayor in the years 1825 and 1832, who died in 1846, aged 65. This likewise commemorates his widow, Ann Tamar, who died in 1853, aged 62. At the east end of the north aisle is a handsome monument to Sir William Sheffield, Knt., who died in 1633, aged 58. It exhibits busts of Sir William and his wife, and female figures on each side. Above is a pediment with a shield of arms, and reclining on each side are representations of Faith and Hope with Charity in the centre. On the floor at the end of this aisle is a brass plate, bearing the inscription, “In memory of Mary Ann Campbell, who died in 1806, aged 39 years, R. I. P.” In the south aisle is a slab to E. J. Challoner, Esq., who died in 1830, aged 30; and near it is one to the memory of Mrs. Porteus, mother of the learned Bielby Porteus, Bishop of London, who was born in York, and was the youngest of nineteen children. Also tablets to Thos. Surr, and members of his family; Ann Townsend; George Peacock, Esq., his wife, &c.; Elizabeth Sayer; Sarah Stephenson; and a large handsome one to Robert Horsfield, Esq. On the floor at the west end is a half length figure in brass of C. Harrington, goldsmith, who died in 1614.

ST. MARTIN'S CHURCH, *Micklegate*.—An ancient Discharged Rectory, formerly belonging to the Barons Trusbutt, then to the Priory of Wartre or Worter, then to the Lords Scroope, of Masham, and now in the hands of Trustees for the benefit of the parish. The present Rector is the Rev. John Montagu Wynward, for whom the Rev. Thomas Richardson officiates. • There

was one chantry in this Church before the Reformation. The *Edifice*, which is of mixed styles, comprises the usual parts of a parish Church. The tower was rebuilt of brick in 1677, and is the most modern part of the Church. Its west front has a pointed window of three lights, and its finish is a balustrade. In 1565 John Bean, Lord Mayor, gave £100. to buy a set of "tunable bells;" there are now three bells in the tower. In 1680 a clock and dial were erected, at the cost of the widow of Alderman Bawtry. In 1585 the Church of St. Gregory was united to this Church, and hence it is called *St. Martin-cum-Gregory*. In the west end of the north aisle is a window of three lights, with trefoil heads; the end of the south aisle is plain. The north side of the Church, which faces the street, is in two divisions, marked by the style of architecture. The western end, which appears to be of the early part of the fourteenth century, has two windows similar to the one in the west end, and a small projecting porch, with an angular roof. The east end is made into four divisions by buttresses of three gradations, finished with grotesque gargoyles. In each division is a pointed window of three lights. Above the whole is a parapet supported by sculptured blocks. This portion is a good specimen of the style prevalent in the early part of the fifteenth century. The east end of the Church is almost built against. On the apex of the roof is a foliated cross. The entire length of the south side is made into seven divisions by buttresses, finished with gargoyles, much mutilated. The windows are similar to those in the chancel end in the north aisle, but the parapet is without the sculptured blocks. In the interior the nave and chancel are divided from the aisles by three columns, the two westernmost ones being circular; from the capitals spring pointed arches of the thirteenth century. The chancel is separated from the nave by a plain arch. The altar piece is of the Ionic order, with a circular pediment. The pulpit is of wainscot oak, of hexagonal form, and richly carved. The font is a plain octagon, on a pedestal of the same form. The ceiling of the chancel rakes to about two-thirds of the chancel arch, where it becomes flat. The roof of the nave, which springs from the clerestory windows, is panelled, with sculptured bosses at the intersections. The ceiling of the north aisle is plain, and the south aisle is like unto it, except that the chancel portion of it is ceiled like the nave, though the bosses are gone. An organ was erected in the tower, which opens to the nave, in 1836. There is a considerable quantity of stained glass in the windows, but generally in sad condition. The remains of Mr. W. Peckitt, glass painter and stainer, of this City, who died in 1795, aged 64, are buried in the chancel of this Church, and there is in one of the windows of the north aisle a neat piece of modern stained glass to



his memory; and a figure of Religion (between St. Catherine and St. John), by the same artist, to the memory of Anne, his wife, who died in 1765. In the windows of this aisle are also representations of Adam and Eve, and the Baptism of Christ; and in the windows of the south aisle are St. George and some other Saints, much mutilated. Amongst the monuments is one in the south aisle to T. Cartor, Esq., Alderman and Lord Mayor of York, who died in 1686, aged 52; one to J. Strickland, Esq., of Siserge, in Westmorland, who died in 1791, aged 88; one in the nave to J. Dawson, Esq., who died in 1731; and a tablet to Barnard Hague, Esq., and his two sons—one of whom, George Undy, a lieutenant in the 57th regiment, died in November, 1854, of wounds received at the Battle of Inkerman, on the fifth of the same month. The Register book of this parish contains many curious entries relative to the siege of York during the Civil War in the reign of Charles I.

The ancient *Church of St. Gregory* stood in Barker Lane, formerly called Gregory Lane. This lane leads from Micklegate to Tanner Row.

*CHURCH OF ST MARY, Bishophill Senior, or the Elder.*—This was anciently a Rectory of medieties, one of which belonged to the Abbot and Convent of Healaugh Park, to whom it was given by Robert de Plumpton. It afterwards came to the Crown, and the families of Percy, Vavasour, and Scrope; and in 1515 the whole of the patronage came to the Crown. In 1585 the parish Church of St. Clement, without Skeldergate Postern, was united to this Church. The Rev. Henry William Beckwith is the present Rector. There were formerly two chantries here. The *Structure* is small and ancient, and having a double row of trees in the Churchyard, it possesses a very rural and pleasing appearance. It consists of a nave, chancel, north aisle, and a square tower at the north west angle. According to Drake there is a great quantity of millstone grit wrought in the walls. The tower, which was built in 1650, and in which is a peal of six good bells, is principally of brick, with stone quoins, dressings, and battlements. The nave and chancel have roofs rising to gables, and of red tiles. In the south side is a brick porch, and several pointed windows placed without any order, and in the walls is a curious carved stone, apparently a portion of a sepulchral memorial, having a cross with rich scroll work. The east end of the building is finished with a plain buttress. The large east window in the chancel is of five lights, with Perpendicular tracery. The chancel is in the style of the fourteenth century. A modern erection of brick, attached to the east end of the chancel aisle, serves as a vestry. The north side of the nave is in three divisions (including the tower) made by buttresses of four gradations; and in each division is a pointed arched window of two lights, with trefoil heads,

the sweeps containing a circle in which is a cinquefoil. The weather cornice terminates in heads much mutilated. The chancel is in two divisions, the centre buttress having a finial. The interior is neatly fitted up. Three semicircular arches, springing from circular columns with square capitals, and one pointed arch which rises from an octagonal pillar and capital, divides the north aisle from the nave. The chancel is divided from the aisle by three arches similar to the last described. The ceiling of the whole is flat. On the south side of the Communion table is a cinquefoil locker. The font is octagonal, and rests on a similar base. Though much altered, the interior of this Church displays the architecture of the twelfth and thirteenth centuries.

Amongst the monuments, which are numerous, are but a few particularly worthy of notice. In the chancel is a cenotaph, ornamented with cherubs and drapery, to Elias Pawson, Esq., Alderman, and Lord Mayor 1704, who died in 1715, aged 44; and one to G. Dawson, Esq., of York, who died in 1812, aged 79. There is also there a neat monument to Mr. Thomas Rodwell, who died in 1787, aged 44; and a Gothic tablet to Mrs. Sarah Atkinson, who died in 1825, aged 39. The Churchyard is extensive, and abounds with tomb stones. Near the tower is a handsome monument, surmounted by a sarcophagus, on lions' feet, to the memory of Mr. Peter Atkinson, late of this City, architect, who died in 1805, aged 70. For some particulars of the Church of St. Clement, see page 513. The out-townships of Dringhouses and Middlethorpe, in the Ainsty, belong to this parish.

CHURCH OF ST. MARY, *Bishophill Junior, or the Younger*.—This is a Discharged Vicarage, and one of the great farms of the Dean and Chapter of York. The present incumbent is the Rev. Arthur Howard Ashworth. The *Edifice*, which is of great antiquity, was till latterly supposed to be a Saxon structure; but Mr. Wellbeloved and other antiquarians consider that it was rebuilt in the latter part of the twelfth, or the early part of the thirteenth century, of Saxon and even of Roman materials. Much of the masonry has a genuine Saxon appearance, especially in the heavy square tower at the west end, which is equal to the breadth of the nave. In the lower portions of the latter appendage are small loopholes or windows, and the stones and bricks are disposed in herring-bone masonry, which is quite of the Saxon character. According to Drake this is the largest tower of any parish Church in the City, and the same authority informs us that the north side of the Church is almost wholly built of large stones of grit, on which several regular architectural mouldings can be traced. The plan of the Church embraces a nave and side aisles, with a chancel and north aisle. The tower contains three bells, and is finished with a battlement, and eight small

crocketed pinnacles. The roof of the nave rises to a gable. The chancel, which is the most ancient part of the structure except the tower, has a pointed window of three lights in the east end; and there is a pointed window in the same end of the south aisle. The windows in the south side of the Church are of mixed styles, and the north side is built against. In the interior the nave is divided from the aisles by a cylindrical column, from which spring on the north side two semicircular arches, which rest against the piers; those on the south side are heavy and pointed. The chancel arch is pointed; the tower arch is semicircular, resting on piers of strong masonry; and the chancel is divided from the aisle by two pointed arches, resting on an octagonal column. The roof of the nave is divided into panels, but the bosses which ornamented the angles are gone. The font is a circular basin, on an octangular pillar. There are some remains of stained glass in the windows, but much mutilated. There are no monuments worthy of notice.

The out-townships, or *Chapelries of Copmanthorpe and Upper Poppleton*, situated in the Ainsty, form portions of this parish.

**ST. MARY'S CHURCH, *Castlegate*.**—This Church, which is called in ancient writings, *Ecclesia Sancte Mariæ ad portam Castri*, is an ancient Rectory of mediæties, formerly held by the Percy family, Earls of Northumberland, and the Priory of Kirkham. It was consolidated into one Rectory in the year 1400, under the patronage of the Percy's alone; and at the Reformation the advowson reverted to the Crown. The present Rector is the Rev. Joseph Salvin. The *Edifice* consists of a nave and side aisles, chancel and western tower, and spire. All the angles are finished with buttresses of three gradations, and at the north west angle is an octagonal staircase. The west front of the tower has a large pointed window of five lights, and a transom. Above this window is a niche, and on each side is a sculptured block and canopy, for statues, but by the decay of the limestone, all the work that formerly adorned this front, and indeed the whole exterior of the Church, is completely destroyed. The lower story of the tower is finished with a battlement. The second story of the tower is octagonal, of elegant proportions; in four of the faces of which are pointed windows (nearly the height of the structure) of three lights, with ornamented transoms in the middle; and in the four remaining faces is a slight buttress of three gradations, finished with gargoyles of heads of animals, &c. These windows are now partly filled up with brick, which gives them a very unsightly appearance. This tower is ornamented with the highest and most perfect spire in the City. It too is octagonal, and its height from the ground is 154 feet. The west front of the aisles contain each a window of three lights, and each is finished with a string course and

battlement, gradually rising to the tower. The south side of the Church is in six divisions divided by buttresses, finished with angular caps crocketed, with gargoyles beneath. In the first of these divisions from the west is a pointed arched window of three lights; in the second, a porch, and the other divisions have square-headed windows with transoms. The south aisle is finished with a cornice and battlement. The north side of the structure very closely resembles the south side. When in a perfect state the exterior of this Church must have been very handsome, and would exhibit a good specimen of the ecclesiastical architecture of the sixteenth century. The interior, which is of an earlier date, probably of the latter part of the twelfth century, is spacious. The tower, which contains three bells, opens into the nave and aisles by pointed arches. The nave is divided from the aisles by three pointed arches rising from columns, some of which are circular and some octangular, with capitals of the Norman form, but of different designs. The westernmost arch of the north aisle is pointed, and is double the span of the others, and the corresponding arch of the south aisles is the same span, but circular in form. The arch which divides the chancel from the nave is pointed. The chancel is separated from the side aisles (the east ends of which appear to have formerly been Chapels) by two unequal arches on the south side and three on the north. The top of the east window of the chancel is filled with ancient stained glass, and there is some of the same beautiful material in the window at the east end of the south aisle. In the chancel is an ancient seat, with a sculptured monk on the misericord, and there are in the Church two other similar seats, one of which has the carved misericord. On the south side of the Communion table is a carving in wood of a female, probably the Blessed Virgin, with two angels on each side. The roofs of the nave and chancel have a slight rise, and are panelled without ornaments, as is also the roof of the south aisle; the ceiling of the north aisle, which is modern, is flat and plastered. The Church is furnished with the old high pews; the font resembles a large vase. A small organ, purchased by subscription, was erected in the north aisle in 1855. There are several old monumental inscriptions, some of them as old as the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. Many of these ancient gravestones are in the floor of the Church, especially in the chancel and side Chapels. In the floor in front of the altar is a slab to the memory of Sir Henry Thompson, of Middlethorpe, and his lady, bearing the arms of that nobleman. In the chancel are tablets to the Rev. R. Coulton, Rector of the Church, who died in 1718, aged 76; and W. Mushett, M.D., who died in 1792, aged 77; and in the aisles is a large marble tablet to William Mason, Presbyter, son of Valentine, once Vicar of

Elloughton, who died in 1708, aged 78, and Jane his wife, and a monument to Lewis West, Esq., and his wife—he died in 1718, aged 68, and she died in 1732, aged 77. At the east end of the south aisle are two corbals of angels holding shields charged with the arms of William Gray, who had a chantry founded for him in this Church. In the Churchyard, which has recently been dug and levelled, is the gravestone of Eliza Kirkham Mathews, widow of the late Charles Mathews, the celebrated comedian, who died in 1802. Thoresby, in the Appendix to his *Ducatus Leodiensis*, tells us that he had in his possession a copper plate, found in making a grave in this Church, which “had been covertly conveyed and fastened on the inside of the coffin of a priest, who was executed for the plot of 1680.” The plate bore the following inscription:—

“R. D. Thomas Thweng de Heworth, collegii Anglo Dnaceni sacerdos, post 15 annos in Anglicana missione transactos Eboraci condemnatus, martyrio affectus est Oct. die 23, anno Dom. 1680. Duobus falsis testibus ob crimen conspirationis tunc temporis catholicis malitiose impositum.”

York Castle, though extra-parochial, is in some measure connected with this parish, as the prisoners who died a natural death in the prison were usually interred in this Churchyard, for which one guinea was charged on each occasion.

ST. MICHAEL-LE-BELFRY CHURCH, *Petergate*.—This Church, which is a sort of adjunct to the Cathedral, is the largest and the very best and most elegant parochial Church in York. It is supposed to derive its appellation of *Le Belfry*, which distinguishes it from St. Michael's, Ousegate, from standing near the *turris companifera*, or belfry of the Minster; others think that it was partly used as a belfry to the Cathedral. This Church is part of the ancient possessions of the Dean and Chapter of York, to whom it was confirmed by Pope Celestine III., in 1149. The benefice is a Perpetual Curacy, of which the Dean and Chapter are the patrons and impropiators, and the Rev. Charles Rose the present Incumbent. The *original Structure*, which appears to have been erected soon after the Norman Conquest, was taken down in 1535, and the *present Fabric* was completed ten years afterwards.

During the time that the choir of the Minster was being restored after the fire of 1829, this Church was used for the daily service of the Cathedral—the gallery being fitted up for the choir—and during the year 1853, the interior was re-floored, re-pewed, and otherwise restored, at a cost of about £1,250., raised by subscription. These restorations were effected from designs by Mr. George Fowler Jones, architect, of this City. It was re-opened for divine service on the 23rd December, 1853, on which occasion the sermon

was preached by his Grace the Archbishop of the province, when a liberal collection was realized in aid of the restoration fund. This handsome uniform edifice, which is a good specimen of the late Perpendicular style, consists of three aisles, the east end of the centre one, or nave, being used as a chancel. Formerly houses were built against the west end of the south aisle, but all these, from hence to the top of Little Blake Street, have, within the last few years, been removed. (See page 476.) The exterior west end is made into three divisions by buttresses, the two centre ones being of uncommon size and in four gradations. In the lower story of the centre division is an arched doorway now filled up, above which rises a handsome pointed window of five lights, and this window is bounded by another arch of larger dimensions, the soffit being filled with plain but bold mouldings, which vanish in the buttresses. Above this is a cornice, and the apex is crowned with a small but neat bell turret, rebuilt a few years ago. The sill of this window forms a weather cornice to the doorway beneath it. The west end of the north aisle exhibits a depressed pointed arch of four lights, and the window of the same end of the south aisle is filled up. It is to be regretted that the opening of the ancient western entrance and the restoration of the last mentioned window did not form part of the recent improvements; the houses by which this end of the Church was disfigured having been removed, there seems no reason why the Church itself should retain its present unsightly appearance. The south side of the structure, abutting on the street, has a very handsome appearance. It consists of six divisions made by slight buttresses of three gradations, which do not rise to above two thirds of the height of the aisle, and are finished in tall square shafts, which terminate above the battlement in pinnacles ornamented with crocketing, and end in a finial. Attached to the first step of each buttress is a band, which is continued round the Church; and the top is finished by a plain band and parapet, and over each buttress is a gargoyle. In each of the six divisions is a depressed pointed arched window of four lights; the dado is enriched with square panels, enclosing quatrefoils, with shields bearing the arms of St. William, Archbishop Zouch, St. Peter, and the Sees of York and London. At the south west angle is a turret staircase, and in the first division from the west is an arched doorway. The north side is similar in form to the south, except that the dado is plain. The clerestory windows, twelve in number, which are barely observable in the street, are square headed, and of three lights each. The gargoyles, which are composed of monsters, human beings as well as birds, serve to attach the shafts of the buttresses to the walls of the aisles. The east end is similar to the west, if we except the absence of massy

buttresses, the bounding arch of the centre window, and the turret and door. The interior is exceedingly elegant, and affords a good specimen of the architecture of the sixteenth century. The nave and chancel are divided from the aisles by six depressed pointed arches, resting on clusters of four columns, united by octagonal capitals; in the spandrils a quatrefoil in a circle between two trefoils, and beneath, an angel holding shields charged alternately with two swords and keys in saltire. The ceilings are flat, panelled, without bosses. The altar piece, erected in 1714, is of oak, consisting of four Corinthian pillars, with the entablature, Royal Arms, &c. The neat oaken pews—single seats—exhibit some chaste carving. The pulpit and reading desk are new and elegant, the former was presented by John Roper, Esq., and the latter is the gift of John Clough, Esq., both of Clifton, near York. In the gallery, which is at the west end of the Church, is a handsome organ. Drake tells us that the organ of this Church in his time, the only one belonging to any parish Church in York, was removed here from the Cathedral Chapel of the Manor House; “but was first had from the Church of Durham, as the arms upon it doth shew.” The east window of the centre aisle, and that of the north aisle, are filled with ancient stained glass; and there are considerable remains of that article in the windows of the south aisle. They exhibit full lengths figure of SS. Peter, Paul, John, Christopher, William the Archbishop, Michael, &c. A stained glass window in the north aisle containing illustrations of the life of Our Saviour in twelve medallions, was presented in 1855, by Alderman William Hudson, of York. Among the monuments the following are the most worthy of notice. A large one at the east end of the south aisle to R. Squire, Esq., who died in 1709, and Priscilla his wife, who died in 1711. This monument consists of two costumic effigies resting their arms on urns, and over them two cherubs supporting a celestial crown, all within an arched recess supported by two Corinthian pilasters. In the same aisle are tablets to R. Farrer, Esq., Lord Mayor in 1756 and 1769, who died in 1780, aged 75; and to A. Hunter, M.D., who died in 1809, aged 79. A neat tablet at the east end of the north aisle to the Rev. Wm. Richardson, for more than fifty years minister of this Church, who died in 1821, aged 76. This clergyman was also sub-chanter of the Cathedral, and the compiler of the hymn book used in most of the York Churches, called the “York Psalm and Hymn Book.” Near to the latter is a tablet to the Rev. W. Knight, of Banbury, Oxon., sub-chanter of the Cathedral, who died in 1739, aged 55. In this Church lie the remains of Gent, the historian, and his infant son. There was a chantry founded in 1472, by Sir Ralph Bulmer, Knt., to

pray for his soul at the altar of "Our Ladye" in this Church. Its yearly value was 49s.

Part of the townships of Clifton and Rawcliffe are within this parish.

The ancient *Church of St. Wilfrid* stood on the north side of Lendal, on or near the site occupied by the house now known as the Judge's Lodgings. St. Wilfrid is mentioned in the Domesday Survey, as an ancient Rectory prior to the Conquest; but the fabric of the Church must have been ruinous at an early date, for in Queen Mary's time (1556) the Churchyard was sold to Richard Goldthorpe, who was Lord Mayor, for £10. At the union of Churches in York, in 1585, the parish of St. Wilfrid was united to the Church of St. Michael le Belfry, but with the peculiar clause, that, "if ever the parishioners think fit to rebuild their Church, the parish shall remain as before." A few years ago when the floor of the Assembly Rooms, adjoining the site of this Church, was re-laid, several portions of an ancient porch, which, from the remains, must have been nearly as fine as that of St. Margaret's, were found near the base of some of the columns which decorate the interior. This porch had doubtless belonged to the Church of St. Wilfrid.

ST. MICHAEL'S CHURCH, *Low Ousegate*, commonly called St. Michael's, Spurriergate, is an ancient Rectory, now in the patronage of the Crown, and incumbency of the Rev. Robert Sutton. This Church, the original foundation of which is very ancient, was given by William the Conqueror, or, as Archbishop Sharp was of opinion, by William Rufus, to the Abbey of St. Mary, at York. It contained one Chantry. The *Edifice*, which forms nearly a square, with a western tower, is in the Perpendicular style. According to Drake, the west end was almost entirely built of grit stone, and contains some blocks of an extraordinary size. In 1822, during the improvements consequent upon the erection of the new bridge across the Ouse, and in order to widen the approaches to it, several houses, which hid the south side of this Church from view, were removed, and that side of the edifice, as well as the end abutting on Spurriergate, were taken down and rebuilt further back. The exterior of the Church consequently presents a modern appearance. The west end is approached by a small passage, called St. Michael's Lane, leading from Low Ousegate, half round the Church to Spurriergate, and from the great number of bones dug up here at various times, the houses in this lane seem to have been built on part of the ancient Churchyard. Two buttresses divide the west end of the structure into three divisions. The tower, which contains a peal of six bells, is four stories in height, in the lower of which is a doorway,



having the weather cornice finished with two grotesque heads. Above it is a pointed window of four lights; there are smaller windows in the upper stories, and the top is finished with a string course and battlement. The south side of the tower exhibits a clock dial, which is illuminated during the winter months. The south and east sides of the Church have a plain and neat appearance, and contain very good windows; and the north side is partly built against. The interior, which is very neatly fitted up, is divided into three aisles by four pointed arches and a half, which spring from columns formed of four cylinders, conjoined with leaved capitals. The half arch, which is at the east end, was occasioned by yielding seven feet of the former Church to Spurriergate, to widen the street, as already mentioned. At that time the whole of the interior was ornamented, the floor was raised, and the pews formed anew. The ceiling is flat, and in large panels. The altar piece is of oak, in three compartments, made by four composite pilasters, the centre compartment being finished with an arch, on which is a small figure of St. Michael. The pulpit is hexagonal, the font is very mean, and a small gallery at the west end contains an organ. The windows contain some stained glass, much mutilated, representing the history of St. John. The monuments are not numerous; on the floor is a brass to the memory of William Hancock, of this City, who died in 1435; and on the south side is a neat tablet to J. Wood, Esq., Lord Mayor, who died in 1704. At six o'clock every morning (Sundays excepted) a bell is rung in the tower of this Church, and after this bell has chimed, another is rung as many times as will correspond to the day of the month. The custom of ringing the first-mentioned bell is said to derive its origin from the circumstance of a traveller having lost his way in the forest that formerly surrounded York. After wandering about all night, he was rejoiced to hear the clock of St. Michael strike six, which at once told him where he was. To commemorate his deliverance from the perils of the night, he left a sum of money that the bell might thenceforward be rung at six every morning. The Curfew Bell, too, still continues to be tolled here at eight o'clock in the evening.

ST. SAMPSON'S CHURCH, *Church Street*.—An ancient Rectory, formerly in the patronage of the Archdeacons of Cleveland until the reign of Edward III., when it came to the Crown. In 1393 Richard II. granted the advowson to the Vicars Choral of the Cathedral, to be appropriated to their College, in return for their having undertaken to celebrate in this Church an anniversary obit for the King and Queen Anne, and to use other devotional exercises for the eternal repose of their souls. There were formerly three Chantries of this Church. From some unknown cause this living is not

mentioned in the King's Books, but it is now a Perpetual Curacy, in the gift of the Sub-Chanter and Vicars Choral, and incumbency of the Rev. Thomas Bayley. The alterations consequent upon the formation of the new market, in 1834, brought this Church more prominently into sight. Prior to these improvements, it stood almost completely hid at the confluence of Swinegate and a street called Girdlergate; but the latter street was then lengthened, by being carried through the Churchyard into the Market Place, and Girdlergate and its continuation were together called Church Street. With the exception of the tower, the entire edifice has been recently restored, at a cost of about £2,000., raised by subscription, and it is now a neat commodious Church. The restoration was finished in 1848. The *Fabric*, the style of which is a mixture of the Decorated and the Perpendicular, consists of a nave (of which the east end forms the chancel), and sides aisles, with a large square tower of stone at the west end. This tower contains two bells, and exhibits many marks of age and violence. Like other steeples in York, it suffered from the cannon balls of the Parliamentarians, at the siege of York in 1644, and the perforation of one is still visible. The tower was originally three stories in height, but the upper story being in danger of falling, was taken down when the Church was restored. The angles of the tower are guarded by buttresses, and the west front has in the lower story a large pointed window of four lights. In the next story is a niche, with a pedestal and statue in pontifical attire, much decayed.\* When the tower was perfect it was finished with a battlement. In the west end of each aisle is a pointed window of three lights. The north and south sides of the Church are alike, being made into six divisions by buttresses of three gradations. In the westernmost division is a pointed doorway, and in each of the other divisions is a square-headed window of two lights. The east end of the Church is in three divisions, the roof of each rising to an apex; in each division is a pointed window of three lights, the centre one being the largest. The interior is fitted up with open seats. The nave is separated from the aisles by six arches, supported by octangular columns, with similar capitals; the tower opens into the nave; the roofs are open, but plainly boarded over, and stained. The old roof of the

\* According to Alban Butler, author of the *Lives of the Saints*, St. Sampson, the patron of this Church, was born in Glamorganshire, about the year 406, and was consecrated Bishop in 520 by St. Dubritius, without being fixed in any particular see. The name is sometimes written Sanxo, and tradition informs us that there was a Bishop of York of that name in the time of the Britons, and that a stone statue, which may yet be observed on the west side of the tower, is of him. This is the only Church in England dedicated to St. Sampson.

nave was very rich and beautiful. The altar piece has fluted pilasters of the Ionic order, the pulpit and reading desk are new and very neat, the former being of very elegantly carved oak, and the organ is good. At the side of the south door is a large holy water basin. Drake mentions several coats of arms which were in the windows, but all the painted glass has been long removed. There are now no monuments particularly worthy of notice.

ST. SAVIOUR'S CHURCH, *St. Saviourgate*, was anciently styled the Church of St. Saviour, in *Marisco* (in the marsh, in allusion to its site having once been marshy ground.) It was founded before the Norman invasion, for we find that William I. gave it to the Abbey of St. Mary. At the Reformation the advowson came to the Crown. The living is a Rectory, and the present Rector is the Rev. Josiah Crofts. There were formerly seven Chantries in this Church, all of which were of considerable value; likewise a guild or fraternity of St. Martin, founded by letters patent from Henry VI.

In 1585 the parishes of St. John, in Hungate, and St. Andrew, in St. Andrewgate (both mentioned in Domesday Book), were united to this Church and parish. The Church of St. Saviour, which is said to have been rebuilt out of the remains of a neighbouring Carmelite Convent (See page 510), was restored, heightened, and improved in 1843, at an expense of nearly £1,700., raised by subscription. It comprises a nave, side aisles, and west tower, which contains two bells. In the west front of the tower is a fine tall pointed window of three lights, with a transom, and there are small windows in the upper stories. The tower is supported at the angles by double buttresses, and the top is finished with a battlement, within which rises an angular roof, which is surmounted by a wooden cross, terminating in a weathercock. The west front of the aisles have each a pointed arched window of three lights. The north side of the Church, which faces the street to which the Church gives name, is made into three divisions by buttresses; in the first from the west is a pointed doorway, and in each of the others two pointed windows. The south side is similar to the north; and the aisles are furnished with a parapet. There are three windows at the east end; the centre one consisting of five, and those on each side, of four lights. Attached to this end of the Church is a vestry of modern erection, covered with campo, which is quite an excrescence. The interior is neatly furnished with single seats. The centre is divided from each of the side aisles by five pointed arches, supported by octagonal columns with capitals; there are galleries extending nearly round three sides of the building; and in one of them is a good organ. The tower is open to the nave, and the fine window which it contains, with its coloured bordering, is seen to great advantage. The roof, which is new,

is waggon-headed, empannelled, and exhibits gilded mouldings and massy beams. The east end of the nave is fitted up as a chancel or sanctuary. The altar piece consists of four small fluted Ionic pilasters supporting a frieze; the pulpit is neat; the font is a large massy octangular basin, over which is a ponderous carved cover with a cross and dove. The churchwardens' seats at the west end of the Church (for the united parishes), consist of two ancient carved stalls with moveable seats, and two modern stalls made after the same pattern. In the centre window at the east end is a mass of stained glass, arranged in beautiful disorder in 1801, and said to represent the legend of St. Anthony; and there are some brilliant remains of the same article in the other windows at the same end. Within the rails of the Communion table is a slab inscribed to the memory of Sir John and Lady Hewley, whose names have become so well known in connection with a charitable institution in this City, and a long pending case arising out of it, before the Court of Chancery. Sir John died in 1697, aged 78, and "Dame Sarah Hewley his wife," died in 1710. In the south aisle is a neat tablet to Thomas Withers, M.D., who died in 1800, aged 59; also a handsome white marble tablet to Andrew Perrott, M.D., who died in 1762, aged 49; and two mural tablets to the Wilkinson family. In the north aisle is a tablet to Colonel Roger Morris (and family), of the 47th regiment, who died in 1794, aged 68; one to Edward Smith, Esq., who died in 1799, in his 88th year; and another to Thomas Atkinson and family.

Near Hungate on the east, on a spot long known as St. John's Green, but now covered with buildings, stood the ancient *Church of St. John the Baptist*. It was one of the great farms of the Dean and Chapter of York, and was valued at £6. per annum.

The ancient *Church of St. Andrew* is still partly in existence in the street to which it gives name. It too was one of the great farms of the Dean and Chapter, and an annual rent of two shillings for it was formerly appropriated to the revenues of that body. The building is of small dimensions and has undergone strange mutations, and been horribly desecrated; "it has been *now* a house of prayer, and *then* a den of thieves," writes Baines; and Allen, who wrote in 1829, after telling us that it had been at one time a common brothel, says "one part of it is now used as a stable, and the other as a free grammar school." The nave or body of the Church is at present used as a Sunday School for girls, and upon the site of the chancel the cottage has been erected. The Churchyard is partly built upon.

HOLY TRINITY CHURCH, *King's Square*, commonly called *Christ Church*, *Colliergate*, was anciently styled "*Ecclesia S. Trinitatis in aula vel curia*

regis," and in Old English, "*Sainct Trinity in Conyng garthe.*" Drake infers from the former title that the old courts of the Imperial Palace of the Emperors, which existed in Roman York, reached to this place. It was a Rectory at one time, in the patronage of the family of Basyes, or Bascy, and in time it came to the Nevilles, and was given in 1414, by Ralph Neville, Earl of Westmorland, to a Hospital he had founded at Wells, the Master of which is the present patron. The original endowment was very trifling. According to Torre, the Vicar was formerly discharged of all burdens, ordinary and extraordinary, except the charge of finding "straw in winter, and green rushes in summer, for the strewing of the Church, according to the common use of Churches." The living is now a Discharged Vicarage, and the Incumbent is the Rev. Richard Inman. In the time of Archbishop Sharp the minister had no income, and a Vicar had not been appointed since the Reformation. The Church formerly contained four Chantries. In Drake's time a ditch on one side of the Church was visible, and still retained the name of the King's Ditch. In 1768 the edifice was considerably reduced on the north side for the extension of the area required for a hay market; and in 1830 it was curtailed on the east side, in order to widen Colliergate. The total removal of this edifice would add much to the public convenience, whilst there would be no loss of architectural beauty. The remains of the Churchyard, on the south side, has been so much raised through interments, as to cause a descent to the Church. The *Building* now consists of three aisles, with a low tower containing a peal of six bells. In the west front of the tower is a spacious window of five lights, and the top is finished with a battlement. The windows are of various periods. All the three roofs rise to plain gables. There were formerly some houses and a large brick porch against the south side of the Church, but they were removed a few years ago. The interior was repewed in 1830. The tower is open to the nave by a lofty pointed arch, resting on octagonal piers. The north aisle is separated from the nave by two pointed arches, supported by octagonal pillars without capitals; and by two and a half arches on the south, with similar pillars. The ceilings of the nave and north aisle are panelled, but the south aisle has a common open roof. The sanctuary is plain, the pulpit is hexagonal, and the font is octagonal. A blue slab in the body of the Church bears an inscription to F. Alcock, Lord Mayor, who died in 1686, aged 65; and near it is a brass tablet to H. Tiveman, Lord Mayor, who died in 1672, aged 68.

HOLY TRINITY CHURCH, *Micklegate*.—There was a Church here, in connexion with a religious house, from a very early period, and having from some unknown cause come to ruin about the period of the Conquest, Ralph de

Paganell restored its services, renewed the endowment, and gave it to certain Monks, who thence took the title of the Prior and Convent of the Holy Trinity. (See page 506). At the dissolution the patronage came to the Crown. The living is a Discharged Vicarage, not mentioned in the King's Books. The parish of St. Nicholas was united to this, according to the statute, in 1585. The Rev. John Baines Graham, of Felkirk, near Wakefield, is the present Vicar, but the Rev. Samuel Wainwright, the officiating Curate, receives all the emoluments, except the rents of a gallery in the Church, which was erected at the cost of the present Vicar. "This Church is now of small compass," says Drake, "but has been abundantly larger, as appears by the building. The steeple of it, being extremely ruinous, was blown down in 1651, and rebuilt at the charges of the parish."\*

The *Fabric* now consists of the nave only of the Conventual Church, and a small modern south aisle, with a square tower at the north west angle. The tower, which contains two bells, is strengthened with buttresses; in the middle of the north front is a small window, and in three sides of the upper story is a circular headed window, within a circular arch supported by two dwarf columns, with square capitals and bases. The top is finished with a cornice and battlement, and the vane of the weathercock bears the date of 1781. The south side of the tower presents a highly curious and uncommon appearance. The lower story has a large arch, now filled up, and above it are the remains of an arcade of acutely pointed arches, springing from circular columns. It is thought probable that the front of this Church exhibited an extensive facade, some remains of which exist attached to the tower; and the ornaments just noticed are supposed by some to have belonged to the interior of the edifice; if so, the tower must have been considerably higher than at present. The north side of the edifice faces the street, from which it is separated by a Churchyard, well filled with tombstones. This side exhibits a row of four arches, now filled up, which formerly divided the nave from the north aisle. In the westernmost arch is a porch, which formerly had a groined roof. The doorway is pointed, and the archivault of the arch has the flower moulding. The other divisions formed by these arches contain each a pointed window of three lights. At the north east angle of the building are the piers, upon which the arch was turned to the transept; and adjoining and forming the easternmost angle of the Church are five lofty pillars united, which originally supported the grand arches between the choir,

\* It must have been either a turret or a portion of the tower that was then blown down, as the structure is decidedly of an earlier date.

nave, and transepts. This side of the Church is finished with a cornice and battlement. The roof of the east end rises to a gable, and the east window, of three lights and simple interlacing arches, is modern. At the south eastern angle the pillars again occur, and the south side exhibits a plain modern aisle. This Church was restored and furnished with open seats in 1850, and the interior now presents a very neat appearance. The pillars which divide the nave from the aisle are octagonal, with plain capitals, from which rise bold but graceful arches. Above each capital is a triple column, which formerly supported the groined ceiling or trusses of the roof. There is a small gallery at the west end, erected several years ago. The chancel is formed out of the east end of the nave, and at the same end of the Church, against the north wall, is the pulpit and a small organ. The large window over the Communion table was filled with elegantly stained glass, executed by Barnett, late of York, and it, as well as the window in the easternmost division of the north side of the Church, and that in the east end of the south aisle, were presented by the Miss Cromptons, of Micklegate, formerly of Esholt Hall; who also gave the munificent sum of £100. towards the restoration fund. The chancel window, which was erected as a tribute to the memory of the Miss Cromptons' parents, is of a geometrical pattern, and bears the following inscription:—*+ In Sanctæ. Trinitatis. Honorem. Parentum. Memores. Dedicaverunt. Filia. Superstites. E. I. H. M. M. S. et. C. R. Crompton. Anno. Dom. MDCCCL.* The Messrs. Atkinson, of York, were the architects for the restorations; and the handsome cover of the Communion table was worked and presented by Miss Atkinson, sister to those gentlemen. The font is octagonal, on a similar base, and has an ancient carved cover surmounted by a dove, suspended over it. There are several mural tablets, but the one most particularly worthy of notice is that to the memory of John Burton, M.D., F.A.S. (author of the *Monasticon Eboracense*, and the *Ecclesiastical History of Yorkshire*, folio, 1758), and Mary, his wife, the former died in January, 1771, aged 62, and the latter in October in the same year, aged 58. It represents a scroll of parchment, suspended from two books, bearing an inscription. Above the scroll is a vase entwined by a serpent, and suspended from it is a seal with the arms of the deceased author. The Miss Cromptons erected a neat tablet in memory of the Rev. Frederick Pope, late minister of this Church, who died in 1852, aged 58. The Churchyard is tastefully planted with shrubs. The *Vicarage House*, a good brick building erected in 1689, stands in the burial ground, near the east end of the Church.

The ancient *Church of St. Nicholas* stood not far from Micklegate Bar,

near a piece of ground called Toft Field, now swallowed up in the spacious Station of the North Eastern Railway.

**CHURCH OF THE HOLY TRINITY, *Goodramgate*.**—An ancient Rectory, formerly consisting of two medieties, the respective properties of the Priory of Durham, and the Archbishop of York; but in the reign of Henry III. they both became vested in the Archbishops, who still hold the patronage. In 1585 the Churches of St. Maurice, in Monkgate, and St. John del Pyke, in Uggleforth, were united to this Church and parish. The living is a Discharged Rectory, of which the Rev. Henry John Raines, is the present Incumbent. There were formerly three Chantry in this Church. Drake says, "This Church bears on its outside many marks of great antiquity, stone of grit being wrought into the walls, some of which does but too plainly shew the extreme heat of the general conflagration in York," in 1137.

The *Fabric* has an antique appearance, and consists of a nave and aisles, with a square western tower (containing four bells), and an attached Chapel on the south side. A few years ago the west end of the south aisle was restored, the west window of the tower (which is of five lights) renewed, and the south porch rebuilt. The east and west end windows, and those of the south aisle, have pointed arches; those of the side Chapel and north side of the Church are square headed. The north side was entirely rebuilt about thirty years ago.

Judging from the style of architecture, this Church has been built at different periods; the body apparently is of the fourteenth century, while the south aisle is certainly no later than 1216, as appears by the Royal Arms of Henry III. and Eleanor of Provence. The Chantry Chapel may perhaps belong to the reign of Richard II., and the tower is of the style prevalent in the middle of the sixteenth century. The interior is plain but neat. The tower is open to the nave by a lofty pointed arch, supported by octagonal piers. The nave is divided from the aisles by four pointed arches, resting on low octagonal columns, and the east end of the nave is used as a chancel. The ceiling of the body of the Church is flat and panelled. The altar piece is plain, the pulpit is octagonal, and the font is an octagonal basin. The Chapel is separated from the south aisle by a spacious arch; at each side are suspended shields of arms, viz:—a chevron between three chaplets, and a merchant's mark, with R. R. The fine window over the Communion table, which is very ancient, is filled with curiously stained glass in a very perfect state, and is much admired. It contains full length figures of Our Saviour, St. John, St. Christopher, St. George, and St. Anastasia, as well as several shields of arms and scriptural subjects. The east windows of the aisles are



are also filled with stained glass. The windows of the south aisle contain three shields of arms, viz :—the arms of Henry III., payley of six *gu.* and *or.* for Eleanor of Provence; and *gu.* a cross moline *or.* In the windows of the Chapel are the arms of the families of Percy, Rosse, Mowbray, and Vere. The fine state of preservation in which the stained glass remains, may be attributed to the circumstance of this Church standing out of the highway, and having no passage through the Churchyard. There are some very old monumental inscriptions in the Church, one so far back as 1367. There are two neat tablets to the memory of some members of the Friar family, and one erected by the parishioners to the late Rector, the Rev. J. Dallin, who died in 1838.

CHURCH OF ST. MAURICE, *without Monk Bar.*—This was a Rectory of mediocrities belonging to the two Prebends of Fridaythorpe and Fenton, until united in 1240 by Archbishop Walter de Grey. It was united with Holy Trinity, Goodramgate, agreeably to the statute in 1585, but the Church was retained, and Divine Service is still performed in it by the Incumbent of Holy Trinity. The living was a Discharged Vicarage, but is now a peculiar Curacy. The *Edifice*, which is small, is very ancient and dilapidated, but the interior has been modernised within the last few years. It consists of two aisles, or a nave and south aisle; and varies in style of architecture from the Norman to the Perpendicular. The west end, which rises to an apex, contains a double circular window, divided by a small column, and on the ridge of the roof is a small turret of wood, containing two bells. In the west end of the south aisle is a square window of four lights. The south porch is of brick, cemented, and within it a pointed doorway, the weather moulding resting on two heads. The east end exhibits two gables, and in each is a pointed window of three lights. The south side of the Church presents, besides the porch, two square-headed windows of two lights, and beneath the westernmost one in the wall are two sepulchral slabs, with foliated crosses on them. The north side of the Church has two square windows of three lights, apparently of modern workmanship. The interior is plainly fitted up; the aisles are divided by two large pointed arches, and one smaller at the east end, all resting on octangular columns, without bases or capitals. The monuments are rather numerous. In the chancel are handsome tablets to John Clapham, Esq., who died in 1765, aged 52; and G. Lutton, Esq., who died in 1828, aged 53 years.

The ancient Churches of *St. John del Pike* and *St. Mary ad Valvas* were situated within the Close of the Cathedral. The latter was taken down in 1865, when the Rectory was united to the neighbouring Church of *St. John del Pike*.

ST. PAUL'S DISTRICT CHURCH, *Holdgate Road*, was erected in 1851, at a cost of about £3,000., raised entirely by subscription, and consecrated by the Archbishop of York on the 3rd of January, 1856. It was built to supply accommodation to the populous district which surrounds it, and which has sprung up since the opening of the railway. It is locally situated in the parish of St. Mary, Bishophill the Younger. The living is a Perpetual Curacy, in the patronage of certain Trustees, and Incumbency of the Rev. William Ashforth Cartledge.

The *Fabric*, which is of stone, consists chiefly of three aisles rising to apexes at the east and west ends; and is in the Early English style of architecture. The western entrance—a neatly moulded arched doorway, supported by circular pillars, and on each side of which is a blank arcade of acutely pointed arches—is approached by a flight of steps; and above is a handsome circular window. This end of the nave has a projection, supported by buttresses at the angles, which terminate in pinnacles, and the apex is surmounted by a bell turret, crowned by a beautifully executed cross. The sides of the Church are made into six divisions by buttresses, in each of which, with the exception of the easternmost ones, is a tall pointed window of two lights; and in the excepted divisions are moulded doorways. The east end of the nave or chancel presents a tall window of three lights. The chancel is finished with two pinnacles, and the apex is crowned by a handsome cross. The interior has a light and elegant appearance. The nave is divided from the aisles by five pointed arches on each side; these arches, which are neatly moulded, and are exceedingly graceful, spring from light clustered pillars. The chancel is small, and is marked by a fine pointed arch. The seats are single, and will accommodate about seven hundred persons; and at the west end is a small gallery, in which is a good organ. The architects of this elegant little Church were the Messrs. Atkinson, of York.

ST. THOMAS'S DISTRICT CHURCH, *Lowther Street*, was erected for the convenience of parties residing in the Groves and the adjoining district. The foundation stone was laid on the 8th of September, 1853, and it was consecrated and opened on Tuesday, the 22nd of August, 1854, by the Archbishop of York. The estimated cost of the building, including the site, was £2,370. By means of a Bazaar of fancy articles, held in York in the months of October and January (during the erection of the edifice), when nearly £800. was raised, and by the liberal donations of some individuals, a sum of £1,000. has been set apart towards an endowment of the Church. One half of the seats are free, and the others are let, and the proceeds arising therefrom are applied towards the stipend of the officiating clergyman. The district assigned to

this Church was formed out of the parishes of St. Maurice and St. Olave. The living is a Perpetual Curacy, in the patronage of the Archbishop, and Incumbency of the Rev. Richard Wilton. The *Structure* is cruciform in plan, having nave, transept, and chancel—the latter raised three steps above the body of the Church, and separated from it by a moulded and corbelled arch, eighteen feet wide, and twenty-three feet high. The pulpit and reading desk are placed on each side of the chancel arch; and the font is near the west entrance. The roofs are open and high pitched. The principals have arched and laminated braces, resting on moulded and foliated stone corbels. Externally the Church is plain, with single windows, trefoil-headed in the nave and west end; double lights in the transepts and over the west door; circular foliated windows in the transept gables; and a three-light window at the east end, enclosed with three pointed quatrefoils, under a moulded and labelled arch. The west end is finished with a projecting bell gable, pierced for two bells; the additional thickness of the wall allowing for a deep-recessed porch doorway, being the principal entrance from Lowther Street. The bell gable is surmounted by a cross. The buttresses are plain and massive, to suit the style of the stone work, which is merely rough hammered work, with tooled dressings. The stone is from the Collingham quarries, and the walls are lined with brick. The roofs are covered with Welsh slate. The woodwork is deal, stained and varnished; and the windows are glazed with Cathedral glass. Mr. George Fowler Jones, of York, was the architect.

The other places of worship in connection with the Established Church are the Chapel in the Bedern, which is described at page 484, and the new Church or Chapel on Lord Mayor's Walk, belonging to the Diocesan Training School, which will be noticed at a subsequent page of this volume.

**PROTESTANT DISSENTERS.**—The places of worship unconnected with the Church of England in the City and County of York are numerous, and many of them are large, commodious, and handsome edifices. In the City of York there are Chapels belonging to the principal denominations, except the Baptists, and to most of them school rooms are attached.

**INDEPENDENT CHAPEL, *Lendal.***—This is a large brick building, opened for Divine Service on the 7th of November, 1816, previously to which the Independents occupied a little Chapel in Jubbergate, which was built in 1797; but owing to the smallness of that Chapel, together with the unpleasant situation in which it stood, as well as other circumstances, that body of Christians made little progress in York. However, in 1814 a plan was devised for the erection of a more commodious Chapel. *Lendal* was fixed upon as an eligible situation; the old Chapel was sold to the Unitarian

Baptists; and Lendal Chapel was erected at the expense of more than £9,000., for the accommodation of one thousand persons. In a few years, under the pastoral care of the Rev. James Parsons, it was found necessary to enlarge it, so that it can now accommodate about 1,300 persons. In consequence of the still increasing number of the attenders, it was resolved to build Salem Chapel, to which, on its completion, part of the congregation, with the Rev. James Parsons, removed. The present minister of Lendal Chapel is the Rev. Thomas Raffles Hoskin.

SALEM CHAPEL, (*Independent*).—This edifice, which is of brick, and is situated in Spen Lane, facing St. Saviourgate, was erected in 1838-9. The front, which is approached by a flight of seven steps, has an Ionic portico or Loggia supporting an attic, after the Temple of Ilisseus at Athens; and this portico, which exhibits two massy stone pillars, together with the two projecting wings, which complete the design of this front of the building, is done over with compo. The interior measures 81 feet in length, and 56 feet in breadth, and has very spacious and well-arranged galleries. There is accommodation for nearly 1700 persons, and beneath the Chapel is a large school room well lighted and ventilated. The total cost of the erection, including the site, was £5,000. Messrs. Pritchett and Sons, of York, were the architects. The congregation continues under the pastoral care of Rev. James Parsons.

WESLEYAN METHODIST CHAPEL, *New Street*.—This, the oldest Chapel in the City belonging to the Wesleyan body, is a large red brick building with stone mouldings, the foundation stone of which was laid on the 1st of January, 1805. The Methodists of York had a place of worship in the parish of St. Sampson prior to the year 1755; they afterwards assembled in a house in Peaseholme Green, and subsequently in Grape Lane Chapel, till the present building was erected. The edifice, which is of the Doric Order, is of a semi-octangular form, the centre terminating with a pediment, and the whole exterior presents a good appearance. The interior is very neatly fitted up, and is calculated to contain about 2,000 people. In the gallery is an organ. Adjoining the Chapel are two good houses for the ministers belonging to this Society.\*

THE WESLEYAN CHAPEL, *Skeldergate*, commonly called *Albion Chapel*, was built in 1816, and continued to be used as a place of worship by the Wesleyan

\* The Rev. John Wesley, the founder of Wesleyan Methodism, died in 1791, and is supposed in the course of his itinerancy to have travelled nearly 300,000 miles, and to have preached 40,000 sermons.

body until the opening of *Wesley Chapel* in Priory Street, in 1856, when it was sold, and is now no longer used for religious purposes.

**CENTENARY CHAPEL, *St. Saviourgate*.**—This fine Chapel was erected to commemorate the Centenary of Wesleyan Methodism, and was opened on the 18th of July, 1840. The building is of brick, but the front presents a fine bold stone pediment, supported by four massy stone pillars, with capitals of the Doric Order. The entrances beneath this portico are approached by a flight of six steps. The interior is elegantly furnished, and it will accommodate about 2,000 people. Mr. James Simpson, of Leeds, was the architect. The organ cost £500. In the interior of the Chapel is a handsome marble tablet to the memory of Joseph Agar, Esq., Sheriff of York in 1812, who died January 13, 1847, aged 64 years.

**ST. GEORGE'S CHAPEL, *Walmgate*.**—This small Chapel was erected in 1826 to meet the increasing wants of the Wesleyan body, but since the erection of the Centenary Chapel it has been converted into a school.

**WESLEY CHAPEL, *Priory Street*.**—This is a handsome red brick building, with cut stone windows and dressings. Its foundation stone was laid on Easter Tuesday, the 10th of April, 1855, by Isaac Taylor, Esq., of the Mount, York, and it was opened on Friday, September 12, 1856. It occupies a portion of Trinity Gardens, the site of the ancient Priory of the Holy Trinity, and stands on the east side of the new street recently formed through those gardens. (See page 507). This Chapel, which contains about 1,600 sittings, of which 350 are free for the poor, has superseded the Albion Chapel, in Skeldergate, which was too small for the members of the Wesleyan body on that side of the water. The edifice is in two stories. The front has three entrances, and two windows in the lower story, and five windows in the upper one. Each side contains fourteen windows, in two rows; and in the rear are vestries, &c. The interior is well fitted up, with galleries all round, thereby forming an oval; and the general arrangement internally is in most respects identical with the Centenary Chapel. The lighting of the building is accomplished principally by a large central "sunlight," consisting of 164 jets of gas, arranged in four circles, in the form of an inverted cone, and suspended about four feet from the ceiling. The cost of building this Chapel was about £6,000., including the site, and the architect was Mr. James Simpson, of Leeds. There is a good organ in the Chapel.

**TRINITY CHAPEL, *Peckitt Street, Tower Street*.**—The Reform Wesleyan Methodists, by a section of whom this Chapel has been erected, separated from the old Conference body in the year 1850. During three years the members and congregation regularly met for religious worship in the Festival

Concert Room on Sundays, and on week day evenings, in a large room in St. Saviourgate, expressly built for the purpose. In the year 1853, disputes ran high on questions of ecclesiastical discipline and other matters, which led to a division among the members of this new Wesleyan offshoot; in consequence of which a considerable number seceded from the Concert Room, to the Lecture Hall, in Goodramgate, where they at present assemble for public worship. That section of the Wesleyan Reformers which remained at the Concert Room ultimately adopted the ecclesiastical system of, and formed an union with, the *Methodist New Connexion*, the first and oldest branch of Reformed Methodists, and who separated from the parent body soon after the death of the founder of Methodism. The new Connexion had not previously effected a permanent settlement in York, an attempt made for that purpose in the early part of their existence, having failed through the resolute opposition of the old Conference body. The union between the Methodist New Connexion and a part of the Wesleyan Reformers of 1850, was effected in the month of April, 1855; and the foundation stone of *Trinity Chapel*, was laid in September of the same year. The Chapel—with a spacious school room and vestries—was finally opened for religious worship on the 27th of June, 1856. This building is a somewhat bold and original departure from the stereotyped style of Chapel building. Externally it is in the Byzantine style of architecture. The front is of red brick, interspersed with lines of white brick, and finished with ornamental brick and stone work. Internally it has a very ecclesiastical appearance, reminding one of the choir of a Cathedral. It is lighted by thirty-six windows, from a clerestory supported by five pillars on each side. There is also, in the front elevation, a beautiful five light window of ornamented ground glass, divided by elegant stone pillars, surmounted by semicircular arches of brick, which spring from stone capitals. Over this window is a splendid rose window, fitted with ruby and white glass. The effect of these windows in front is very striking. The pewing is of stained wood varnished, after the fashion of modern Churches. There are light galleries on each side, supported by carved wooden brackets, resting on stone mullions—intended chiefly for the accommodation of the children of the Sunday schools in the morning, and as free sittings in the evening. The pulpit projects from a permanent platform, at the back of which there are pews for the choir, and space for an organ. The Chapel, with school premises, vestries, &c., adjoining, have been erected at a cost of about £3,000. The Chapel will accommodate 800 persons, and the school about 400 scholars; 300 seats in the Chapel are free. Messrs. Atkinson, of York, were the architects. In addition to this Chapel and school, the mem-

bers of this denomination have recently erected a very neat school room near the Cemetery, in the Early Decorated style of architecture, capable of accommodating 200 scholars. The building is likewise used as a place of religious worship. Mr. R. Gould, of York, was the architect of the school.

There is also another building occupied by this religious body as a school room and meeting-house, situated in Clarence Street, and formerly used as a lecture room by the Established Church.

That section of the Wesleyan Reformers, who refused to unite with the Methodist New Connexion, now meet for public worship in the Lecture Hall, Goodramgate, and are contemplating an union with the *Wesleyan Association*, another offshoot from the old Methodist body, and who have a small Chapel in Lady Peckitt's Yard.

PRIMITIVE METHODIST CHAPEL, *Little Stonegate*.—This edifice, called *Ebenezer Chapel*, is a large brick building, with a basement story of stone and stone dressings, erected in 1851, at a cost of about £2,800., including the site of a house for the ministers. The exterior is plain, and the interior, which is fitted up in the usual style of Dissenting Chapels, will accommodate nearly two thousand persons. Messrs. Pritchett and Sons were the architects. Prior to the erection of this Chapel, the Primitive Methodists worshipped in a small building in Grape Lane, which had previously served as a meeting-house for the Baptists, the Countess of Huntingdon's Connexion, and the Methodist New Connexion successively. This latter building is now no longer used for the purposes of religion.

WESLEYAN ASSOCIATION CHAPEL, *in Lady Peckitt's Yard, Fossgate*.—This place of worship, which will seat about three hundred, was erected in 1829. Prior to that time the Association Methodists assembled in a house in St. Andrewgate.

ENGLISH PRESBYTERIAN CHAPEL, *St. Saviourgate*.—Lady Hewley, who founded an almshouse in York, is said to have contributed very liberally to the erection of this Chapel in 1692. The first regular Society of Nonconformists in York, of which we have any record, met at the house of Mr. Andrew Taylor, in Micklegate, an opulent merchant. The Rev. Ralph Ward, Chaplain to Sir John Hewley, was one of the ministers ejected by the Act of Uniformity, and he preached to this congregation for nearly thirty years. He died in 1692, and his son-in-law, Dr. Thomas Coulton, succeeded to the pastorate of the Presbyterian congregation at St. Saviourgate Chapel, and so continued for a period of nearly forty years. In 1775 the Rev. Newcombe Cappe, a pupil at the academy of Dr. Doddridge, at Northampton, was chosen co-pastor with Mr. Hotham, and on the death of the latter in 1756, he be-

came sole pastor. In 1792 the age of Mr. Cappe rendered it necessary that he should have assistance, and in that year the Rev. Charles Wellbeloved settled in York, as assistant minister, and became pastor in 1800, when Mr. Cappe died. Like his predecessor, Mr. Wellbeloved's increasing years obliged him to procure the assistance of the Rev. Henry Vaughan Palmer, who is now the officiating clergyman, though Mr. Wellbeloved is the pastor of the congregation. The ecclesiastical affairs of this body are conducted on the Presbyterian plan, but since the latter end of the last century, the doctrines preached to, and held by the persons attending the Chapel, are those of Unitarianism, and the place of worship is commonly called the *Unitarian Chapel*; yet the present ministers of the Chapel inform us that it is not correct to call it by that title, though they allow that the doctrines which they teach are Unitarian. In a communication which we have received from the Rev. C. Wellbeloved, he says, "My religious principles are those commonly called Unitarian; but I do not call myself a Unitarian Minister, because I do not consider it to be correct. I am a Dissenting Minister, and belong to the "English Presbyterians," as distinguished from the two bodies of *Old Dissenters*—Baptists and Independents." The Chapel, which is of red brick, is cruciform in shape, with a slightly raised centre. The interior is neat and well lighted. The organ was presented by the late Miss Rawden, of York; and it may be here noticed that this was the first Dissenting Chapel in York into which an organ was introduced. There are several mural tablets; amongst which is one to the memory of the Rev. Newcombe Cappe.

FRIENDS' MEETING HOUSE, *Friargate*.—Prior to the year 1673 the Society of Friends, commonly called *Quakers*,\* held their meetings at the house of Edward Nightingale, an eminent grocer of that persuasion in High Ousegate; but in that year a small meeting house was erected on the spot upon which now stand the very commodious premises of the Society. The body having considerably increased, the old building was enlarged nearly one-third, between fifty and sixty years ago; and adjoining to that another building was erected in 1718, intended chiefly for the use of the quarterly meetings then held at York. This erection being found inconvenient, was nearly all taken down in 1816, when an enlarged and more commodious structure was commenced,

\* The "Society of Friends" originated about the year 1649, through the religious teachings of George Fox, a native of Drayton, in Leicestershire. Their popular designation of "Quakers" is said to have arisen from the circumstance of Fox having told a Magistrate before whom he was brought, "to tremble at the word of the Lord," as pronounced by him. The Quakers believe in the Unity and Trinity of God, but they abjure all external rites, especially the Sacraments of Baptism, and the Lord's Supper.



which is capable of containing about 1,000 people. On the premises is a small library, containing a collection of books, written both in favour and against the principles of this peculiar sect of Christians. The premises, which consist of two red brick buildings, contiguous to each other, are devoid of ornament, but the interior is neat and well arranged. The principal entrance to the meeting house is in Castlegate. The Society's burial ground in Carr's Lane, Bishophill, is now closed. In it are interred the remains of Lindley Murray, the grammarian, and John Woolman, who first roused public attention in America to the crying evil of slavery.

Besides the Chapel in Grape Lane, already mentioned, as having been from time to time in the possession of several distinct bodies or sects; there is a small building at the bottom of the same lane, which was formerly the place of meeting of a sect called *Sandemanians*. This building is now converted into a dwelling house; but the second story of it is used as a Chapel by the *Mormonites*, or, as they are commonly called, the Latter Day Saints.

The *Swedenborgians* meet for public worship in a large room in Goodramgate.

**CATHOLICS.**—Catholicism has made rapid strides in the City and County of York, and indeed all through the Kingdom, of late years; and its Churches and Chapels (some of them truly magnificent edifices) are now to be found in almost every town of consequence. Dr. Thomas Watson, of Lincoln, who was the last Catholic Bishop consecrated in England previous to the reign of Queen Elizabeth, died in prison, in 1584, when the Catholic Church in England was reduced to the state of a foreign mission under the Holy See, which placed the secular clergy under an archpriest (the Rev. G. Blackwell) with episcopal authority, which continued till 1623, when Dr. Bishop was consecrated Bishop of Chalcedon, and placed at the head of the English Catholics. He was succeeded in 1625 by Dr. Richard Smith, President of the English College at Rome, who died in 1655. The Roman Chapter exercised episcopal jurisdiction in England from this period till 1685, when Dr. John Leybourn was appointed Vicar Apostolic; and in the following year England was divided into four districts, viz.—London, Western, Midland, and Northern, and Vicars Apostolic, Bishops *in partibus* placed over them. In 1840 it was found necessary, from the great increase of Catholics in all parts of the Kingdom, to subdivide it into eight districts, viz.—London, Eastern, Western, Central, Lancashire, Yorkshire, Wales, and Northern. Thus it continued till the year 1850, when the present Pope (Pius IX.) abrogated and annulled all previous arrangements, and for Vicars Apostolic appointed by himself and removable at his pleasure, substituted an ordinary

hierarchy of Bishops, to be elected by the clergy of the respective Dioceses. By the same rescript the former eight districts were subdivided into thirteen Dioceses; the titles of the Bishops were changed from Sees in Asia now extinct, to new Sees in this country; and the Catholic Church in England was formed into an ecclesiastical Province, composed of an Archbishop, or Metropolitan, and of twelve Bishops, his suffragans, who take their titles from the following places; Westminster, Beverley, Birmingham, Clifton, Hexham, Liverpool, Newport, Northampton, Nottingham, Plymouth, Salford, Shrewsbury, and Southwark. Westminster was constituted the Archiepiscopal See, and Dr. Nicholas Wiseman, Bishop of Melipotamus, and Vicar Apostolic of the London District, was raised to the dignity of a Cardinal, and appointed first Archbishop of Westminster, thus becoming Primate and Metropolitan of the Catholic Church in England.

Dr. Briggs, the Bishop of Trachis, and Vicar Apostolic of the Yorkshire district, was translated from Trachis, to the new See of Beverley, by the same papal brief or rescript, on the 29th of September, 1850. The revival of the Catholic hierarchy was deemed, by a majority of the people of England, an insult to the Queen's Majesty, and a great "Papal Aggression;" and in consequence of it the Kingdom was, for some months, in a state of great excitement. Much has been said and written in defence as well as in condemnation of this proceeding on the part of the Pope and the Catholic body, but with the merits or demerits of the measure, we, as simple chroniclers, have no concern beyond that of placing the circumstance on record in connexion with the Catholic ecclesiastical establishments of York. The Parliament expressed their opposition to the measure by introducing and passing a bill, entitled "The Ecclesiastical Titles Assumption Act," which declared that the titles conferred "or pretended to be conferred" by any "briefs, rescripts, or letters apostolical, and all and every the jurisdiction, authority, pre-eminence," thereby granted by the Pope, "are, and shall be deemed, unlawful and void." However this Act does not seem to have effected the new prelates in any way, for since the bill became law they have not been interfered with by any party, though we believe they have since publicly performed the duties of Bishops of their respective Sees, as well as held synods, ordinations, &c.; and their spiritual subjects do not hold them in less reverence, or their office in less respect, because an Act of Parliament has declared their titles unlawful and void.

As has just been intimated, the Right Rev. John Briggs, D.D., under the prohibited title of the "Bishop of Beverley," has the spiritual charge of the Catholics of Yorkshire, from whom he invariably receives the title of "My

Lord ;" and he is assisted in the government of his "Diocese" by a Provost, and a Chapter consisting of ten Canons. The Church which we now proceed to describe, is used as a temporary Cathedral.

CATHOLIC CHURCH OF ST. GEORGE, *St. George Street*.—The Chapel in Little Blake Street having become inadequate to the requirements of the Catholics of York, in consequence of their increasing numbers, the present building was erected, and opened for Divine worship in the year 1850. It is a handsome structure, covering an area of 105 feet by 55 feet, exclusive of porch and sacristies, and is in the Early Decorated style of architecture. Externally it presents three gabled roofs, covering the nave and aisles respectively, that of the nave being much higher than the aisles. There is also a chancel and south porch. The west front is in three divisions, which are marked by buttresses. In the centre division (being the west end of the nave) is a pointed doorway, with a deeply moulded arch springing from four small circular pillars, with flower-worked capitals; the weather cornice resting on a mitred head on one side, and a female coronetted head on the other. Above this doorway is a pointed window of three lights. In the west end of each of the aisles is a window of two lights, and the three gables of this front of the building are finished with a plain moulding, and crowned with neatly executed crosses. The south side is made into six divisions by buttresses, one of which contains a very neat porch, with a fine moulded doorway, the apex being surmounted with a cross; and in the other divisions are good windows of two lights, except the easternmost one, which is of three lights. In the second buttress from the east end is a niche containing a spirited figure of the patron, St. George, clothed in armour, with the point of his sword piercing the dragon's head. The east end of the edifice presents two gables only, the vestries being at that end of the north aisle. The east or chancel window, which is large and handsome, consists of four lights, and the window in the east end of the south aisle is of three lights. The apexes of the roof at the east end are crowned with crosses; and over the junction of the nave and chancel is a double belfry, consisting of double-moulded arches, with a quatrefoil opening over them, surmounted by a high pitched gable, and richly floriated cross, representing the Crucifixion of Our Lord. The top of this cross is sixty-five feet from the ground, and the belfry contains two good bells. The whole of the windows in the east, west, and south sides have weather mouldings, resting on elegantly carved heads of bishops, nuns, saints, &c.; but those on the north side—each of which are of two lights—have not this ornament. The entire building is finished with a plain moulding. The interior is plainly but neatly furnished with open seats, &c. The

nave is divided from the aisles by five graceful arches on each side, springing from octangular columns, with moulded capitals. The roof is high pitched and open; and there is a small gallery at the west end of the nave, in which is the organ. The chancel is divided from the nave by an archway, with hood moulds and carved heads, supported upon triple clustered pillars; and in this arch is a carved open rood screen of wood, on the top of which is a large and well executed representation of the Crucifixion of Our Redeemer (a piece of ancient sculpture brought from the continent), with carved figures of the Blessed Virgin and St. John the Evangelist on either side. The chancel is very elegantly and chastely adorned. The altar is of Caen stone, highly enriched with carving and gilding. It is made into three divisions by shields—on the centre one of which is a carved representation of the Crucifixion; and the subjects of the others are Christ carrying the Cross, and his Entombment. The tabernacle and the reredos, or screen behind the altar, are extremely rich in decoration. The chancel ceiling is arched in wood, and divided into seventy-two panels by wood mouldings; the whole is enriched by painting and gilding. The lamp and candelabra are handsome; on the right side of the altar is a piscina, and on the left a locker. The east window is filled with stained glass by Hardman, of Birmingham, and contains figures of Our Saviour, the Blessed Virgin, St. Mary Magdalen, St. George slaying the Dragon, Christ raising Lazarus to Life, &c. At the east end of the south aisle, and divided from the chancel by an arch, in which is an open screen, is the Chapel of the Blessed Virgin, generally called the *Lady Chapel*. This presents an appearance similar to the chancel just described. It is divided from the aisle by a stone screen, of Gothic design, which is extremely beautiful; and in the upper part of which is a highly-wrought niche, with most elaborate tabernacle work, containing a statuette of the Blessed Virgin and Divine Child. The Caen stone altar and reredos are splendidly sculptured. The former is in four parts, divided by highly-polished marble pillars, and contains representations of the Blessed Virgin and Infant Saviour, and St. Joseph, with angels bearing scrolls; and in the latter are niches containing sculptures of the Annunciation, with vases and lilies. The stained glass window over this altar is by Messrs. Barnett, late of York, and amongst the subjects represented on it, are the Crucifixion and the Virgin and Child. The other window in this Chapel is also filled with stained glass by the same artists, and contains several subjects from the life of Our Lord. The silver lamp, which is suspended before the altar, is very elegant; and the piscina is in the usual place. The west window of the south aisle is also adorned with stained glass (this and the last noticed one

being memorial windows), but all the other windows are glazed with Cathedral glass, having coloured borders. The pulpit, which is small, is of stone, and the font is octagonal—four of the sides having symbolical carvings. The original cost of the shell of the building was £2,300., and that of the site was £1,250.: but several large sums have since been expended upon it from time to time. Messrs. Joseph and Charles Hansom were the architects of the building, and Mr. Ralph Weatherley, of York, was the builder. The design of the screen, altar, and reredos of the Lady Chapel (being a more recent work), is from the pencil of Mr. Charles Hansom. Adjoining the Church are large schools, which will be noticed at a subsequent page; and at the north west angle of the Church a commodious Presbytery, or residence for the priests, was erected in 1856.

CHAPEL OF ST. WILFRID, *Little Blake Street*.—This Chapel, which was built in 1802, will accommodate about seven hundred people. There is nothing particularly worthy of notice, except the full-length frescoes in and about the sanctuary. Those within the altar rails represent the Crucifixion, with the figures of the Blessed Virgin, St. John, and St. Mary Magdalen (in the centre), and the four Evangelists on the sides. Over the vestry doors are full-lengths of St. Peter and St. Paul, and some allegorical subjects. The ceiling of the sanctuary is richly decorated. There is a commodious gallery at the west end, and on the south side is a small gallery or loft for the organ and choir. Annexed to this Chapel is the Presbytery; and at the rear of a house nearly opposite to the latter, is a large room (now a masonic lodge), which had been used as a place of worship by the Catholics, previous to the erection of the present Chapel. Tradition points to an upper room in that house as a place where the rites of the Catholic Church were celebrated at a period in history when Catholicity in this country lay trodden to the ground; when its professors skulked from the public gaze like timorous slaves, and for the practice of their religion assembled in back lanes, in garrets, and in secret chambers. This is one of the last of the garret rooms which carry us back to the times when our fathers were driven by persecution to serve God in secrecy and fear. York is the place of residence of the spiritual chief of the Catholics of Yorkshire—Dr. Briggs—and the Catholic clergy of the City are the Very Rev. Joseph Render, V.G., and Provost of the Diocese, the Rev. Joseph Geary, and the Rev. James Hostage.\*

In connexion with the Catholics of York and its vicinity, a branch of the

\* It may be observed that before the Reformation, and for some time after, priests enjoyed the knightly title of "Sir."

charitable fraternity called the *Society of St. Vincent de Paul* was established in the beginning of the year 1852, and united with the parent Society in Paris. From the annual reports of the *York Conference of the Society* we learn that the brethren visit above one hundred poor families annually—some of them twice and some three times a week—averaging about 13,000 visits every year. Of the children belonging to those families, about two hundred are not only kept from begging, but in a great measure educated, fed, clothed, and lodged by the Conference, and situations are provided for such of them as are fit to go into service. The Society derives its support from the donations and subscriptions of its members and friends.

There is also a branch of another brotherhood in connexion with the Catholic body of York, called the *Young Men's Society*, which was established here, on the 6th of August, 1854, by the founder of the fraternity, the Rev. Dr. O'Brien, of All Hallows Missionary College, Dublin, aided by the clergy of the City. From the published rules we learn that the object of this Society is, "to put down sin and falsehood, and to extend virtue, intelligence, truth, and brotherly love," by means of prayer, good example, lectures, spiritual reading, a regular observance of the Sacraments, the practice of all Christian virtues, particularly that of charity, by discountenancing sin of all kinds, and by labouring for the extension of the Society. The greater part of this body have been formed into a Temperance Guild.

NUNNERY OR CONVENT OF ST. MARY.—This establishment is situated without Micklegate Bar, and is a large handsome red brick structure, at the rear of which are extensive gardens. A building near the site of the present appears to have been purchased in 1686, for the establishment of a boarding school for young ladies of the Catholic religion. Since that time various alterations and additions have been made, both to the buildings and the discipline observed within them. To it was subsequently united a Convent of Nuns, or a community of religious, called the *Institute of Religious Ladies*; who, having quitted the world, devote themselves entirely to the instruction of youth. The daughters of the Catholic nobility, gentry, and respectable classes are educated within these walls. For some years past the number of boarders has not exceeded fifty, but in former years it was upwards of eighty. In 1844 a large addition was made to the size of the establishment, by the erection of an extensive building containing spacious school rooms. Previous to the opening of the schools attached to St. George's Church, a number of poor girls were here taught by the nuns gratuitously; but their place has since been supplied by a school for externs of the middle class, and a poor

school for infants. The female schools adjoining the just mentioned Church are still conducted by the Sisters of this Community.

The buildings of the Convent, Schools, &c., comprise a square, in the centre of which is a small court yard. The internal arrangement of the building is admirable, and the school rooms are perhaps unequalled in the Kingdom for size, ventilation, &c.

The *Chapel*, which is cruciform in shape, is splendidly furnished and decorated, and the intersection is surmounted by an elegant dome, supported by eight fluted columns. The altar, tabernacle, &c., are rich in the extreme, and there are several excellent paintings. In the screen work is some very fine carving; the stalls for the nuns range on both sides of the Chapel; the silver lamp of the sanctuary is of the most chaste design; and the organ stands on a small gallery at the west end. One of the transepts is elegantly fitted up as the Lady Chapel, and over the altar is a beautiful statuette of the Blessed Virgin, whilst in the corresponding transept is a very elegant image of St. Joseph. The gardens are arranged with much taste, and the play ground is extensive. Adjoining the gardens is the burial place of the sisterhood, and in it is a neat oratory. Mrs. Brown is the present Superioress of the Convent, or, as she is usually styled by the members of her community, and indeed, by the Catholics in general, the "Reverend Mother." The present Chaplain to the Convent is the Rev. J. Thompson.

The *Catholic Schools* of York will be noticed at subsequent pages.

**PUBLIC SCHOOLS.**—*St. Peter's Royal Grammar School*—As we have seen at page 515, the site and lands of the dissolved Hospital of St. Mary Magdalen, in Bootham, were, by a grant of Philip and Mary, appropriated to the maintenance of a free grammar school, under the government of the Dean and Chapter of the Cathedral of York; and the rectorial tithes of Stillingfleet were subsequently given for the same purpose. In addition to this endowment, Robert Dallison, Chanter of the Cathedral Church of Lincoln, granted to the Dean and Chapter of York an annuity of four pounds, issuing out of the Manor of Hartesholm, in the County of Lincoln, which was appropriated to this school. The Dean and Chapter being the trustees, always appoint the master, and the school is frequently called the *Cathedral Grammar School*. The income of the master has been considerably augmented by purchasing property, with the fines paid on the renewal of certain lands devoted to the purpose. In 1828 the school was placed under the existing regulations. The number of free scholars was formerly about twenty-three, but of late years the number has been considerably reduced. There are now eight *foundation scholars*, who receive board, lodging, and education, free of

expense for four years; and there are also eight *free scholars*, who are educated free for the same period. The foundation scholars and the free boys are chosen at an examination, held in June in each year, for their proficiency in certain studies; and an exhibition or annual stipend of £50. for three years is annually awarded to the best qualified pupil, provided he becomes a student in either of the Universities of Oxford, Cambridge, Durham, or Dublin. The yearly examination is conducted by a graduate of one of the Universities, appointed by the Dean and Chapter; every boy who has been in the school one year, and is under fifteen years of age, is eligible for the scholarships and the exhibition, which are awarded solely on the ground of merit. This school possesses likewise the privilege of sending a boy every five years to Aberford, to contend for Lady Betty Hastings's exhibition, which is worth about £100. a year for five years. The boys not on the foundation pay a tuition fee of £10., and £45. in addition is the charge for board and lodging. The building will accommodate eighty boarders, and about two hundred scholars altogether. The head-master is the Rev. William Hey, M.A., late Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge, and a Canon of the Cathedral of York; the second master is the Rev. Thomas Richardson.

This school was formerly held in the desecrated Church of St. Andrew, from which it was removed to the building in the Minster Yard, now used as a School of Art; and finally, in 1844, the Proprietary or Collegiate School, which was the property of a Joint Stock Company, was purchased by the Dean and Chapter for St. Peter's School, and the two schools were united in the Midsummer of that year.

The *School Premises* are well situated in Bootham, and the building, which was erected in 1837-8, is a handsome structure in the Tudor style; the front being of cut stone, from the quarries of Bramham Moor, and the remainder of brick, with cut stone dressings. The design of the building is very elegant, and its external appearance has a very pleasing effect. It comprises a central hall, class rooms, library, and boarding house. The centre has a deeply-moulded doorway, over which is a balustrade or screen of perforated quatrefoils, above which is a fine bay window, surmounted by a perforated balustrade. At each side of the door and window, or rather the angles of this central portion of the design, rise two elegant pillars, ornamented with carved heads, shields, niches, and pedestals, terminating in turrets, between which the front rakes up to a gable. On each side of this centre is a range of buildings, and at the left side is a large wing, and to carry out the design of the architect, a corresponding wing will probably be built on the right side at a future day. There is a fine bay window at the back of the centre portion of the building. The grounds extend over four acres.



*Holgate's Free Grammar School, Ogleforth.*—This school was erected and endowed within the Close of the Cathedral, by Robert Holgate, D.D., Archbishop of York, by letters patent granted by King Henry VIII., on the 24th of October, 1546; and the master was bound to attend daily, "to teach grammar and godly learning, freely, without taking any stipend or wages." At the time the Commissioners made their report on this charity, the property of the school was valued at upwards of £360. per annum; and there were only seventeen boys on the foundation. This, together with the other charities of Archbishop Holgate, having been shamefully mismanaged and neglected, are now undergoing enquiry in the Court of Chancery. The school is held in a commodious room in a yard in the above-named street. The Rev. Robert Daniel, B.D., is the present master.

The *York Diocesan School Society* was established for the promotion of a system of religious and useful education throughout the Diocese of York, in the principles of the Church of England, and in union with the National Society in London. The Society consists of members of the Church of England, paying an annual subscription to the objects of the Society, and of donors of £10. and upwards. The Lord Archbishop of the Diocese is ex-officio President, and the three Archdeacons of the Diocese are ex-officio Vice-Presidents of the Society. The list of Vice-Presidents includes the name of the chief nobility and gentry of the County.

The *York and Ripon Diocesan Training Institution*, having for its object the training of schoolmasters and schoolmistresses for the National Schools, and also the Yorkshire Yeoman School, were established in furtherance of the objects of the Diocesan School Society. The training school for masters is under the direction of a Principal, a Vice-Principal, and under-masters. Pupils are either ordinary, being such as in order to become national school masters, desire to submit themselves to the appointed course of training; or extra-ordinary, being such as already having charge, or being engaged to take charge of a school in union with the Diocesan Society, desire to avail themselves of the advantages which the institution affords for their improvement. Except in cases where it may be otherwise determined by the committee of management, no one is to commence residence in the training school before the age of seventeen, or after the twenty-fifth year of his age. The full course of training extends over three years, but suitable schools, according to the qualifications of each, will be sought for students whose circumstances do not permit them to complete the full course. Ordinary pupils are all resident in the training school, and the terms are very moderate, being £25. per annum, including board and lodging, medical attendance, books and stationery. Ex-

tra-ordinary pupils, if resident within the institution, pay for their board, &c., 13s. per week; if non-resident, 6s. per week. There is accommodation for fifty-five pupils. Attached to this institution is a *Day School* for boys over seven years of age, the terms for which are one guinea per quarter, payable in advance. Latin and modern languages, if required, to be paid for as extras. The present Principal of the institution for schoolmasters is the Rev. Hugh G. Robinson, M.A.; and the Rev. Henry Bramley is the Vice-Principal. The age of admission to the female training institution is seventeen; the terms of admission, including board and lodging, are £18. per annum, paid quarterly in advance. Pupils extra-ordinary, if resident within the institution, are charged 10s. 6d. per week; if non-resident, 4s. per week. There is accommodation for thirty pupils. Attached to the institution is a middle school and a day school for girls, the latter of which serves as a practising school for the pupils of the training school.

The *York Yeoman School*, which is under the same superintendence as the Training School, owes its establishment to a suggestion made by the present Earl of Carlisle in 1845, and in the following year the school was founded, for the purpose of affording a good education on moderate terms to the sons of the middle or yeoman class. The terms, including board, lodging, and medical attendance, are twenty-one guineas per annum; pupils are admissible at the age of seven years; and there is accommodation for seventy-five pupils. The committee of management of the schools includes the Archbishop of York, the Bishop of Ripon, the Deans and Archdeacons of the two Dioceses, the Earl of Carlisle, Lord Feversham, Lord Wenlock, Sir J. V. B. Johnstone, Bart., the Hon. P. Dawnay, and several distinguished Clergymen.

The edifice of the Training School for males forms an extensive pile, on Lord Mayor's Walk, erected in 1846, by public subscription, at a cost of about £16,000. The style of architecture is late or domestic Gothic. Exteriously it presents a centre and two wings, and it consists of a house for the Principal, rooms for the Vice-Principal and five masters, hall, class rooms, library, &c. The whole pile is constructed of brick, with cut stone dressings. The front or centre is supported by four half pillars, terminating in pinnacles; and over the entrance is a bay or oriel window. The *Yeoman School* occupies a separate building, on a line with and at the north-west end of the training institution. It was erected also in 1846, in the same style as the training school; and is a range of buildings, both ends of which project and exhibit gables. The *Chapel* is built of hammer-dressed stones, with cut stone facings, and the style of the architecture is the Decorated. The sides are made into five divisions by buttresses, in each of which (except

those containing the doorways) is a window of two lights. The chancel window is of five lights, and the window at the west end is of three lights. The interior is very neatly and appropriately furnished with open seats. The roof is open, the spandrils resting on corbels, on which are carved angels holding musical instruments. The floor of the chancel is tessellated, and there are two stone seats, or sedilia, in the wall, with Gothic canopies. The Principal and Vice-Principal, masters and mistresses, pupils from the male and female training schools, and scholars, attend Divine Service here daily. The Principal is also Chaplain to the institution. The site of the buildings, gardens, and recreation ground, occupies five and a half acres.

The *Training Institution for Schoolmistresses* is a large house in Monkgate, formerly used as a College for Dissenters, but that establishment was removed to Manchester in 1840.

*School of Art, Minster Yard.*—This valuable institution is a branch of the Department of Science and Art, Gore House, London. Since its first establishment in September, 1842, it has undergone some changes and vicissitudes, both in its name and pecuniary resources. The celebrated painter Mr. Etty, R.A., desirous that his native City should enjoy some of the advantages of an art of which he was so fond, and foreseeing that a knowledge of drawing and painting would become an essential to all education, whether polite or useful, made active exertions, aided by other gentlemen, in procuring a grant for the establishment of a School of Design, to impart a knowledge of the fine arts, with an especial view for their adaptation to works of general utility. Thus it was hoped that British talent, through the medium of these schools, by their cheapness and the facilities offered in them to the humbler classes of society, might be the means of educating a set of designers, who by their training and correct taste, would have an important influence in improving our manufactures, and give a decided tone to public taste.

Aided by a liberal grant the York Branch of the Government School of Design was opened in Blake Street, with every appearance of success; but as time progressed principles became developed that in the first instance had been overlooked, and which affected not the York School only, but Schools of Design generally. It was found that the very elements of drawing had to be taught, and that it required a long time to produce a good designer. Such was then found to be the low state of public taste, that a market could not be found for his productions. The manufacturer, as a mercantile man, took a trade view of the question, supplied that which he could sell best, and left the designer to shift for himself. Such a state of things caused him to seek a subsistence somewhere, and he accordingly found it in supplying the very

article he had been educated to supersede. Thus were the young men educated at great expense in these schools rendered useless. This state of things went on for years, now and then slightly modified by an experiment or two, until the Great Exhibition of 1851, where by contrast we were found to be so inferior in the art of design, that the subject excited due attention, and resulted in changing Schools of Design into Schools of practical Art. The new plan has in view to educate all classes, from the poorest to the highest, and so cause a discriminating public to make that demand that can alone cause a supply.

But the existing schools were found to be cumbersome and costly, and many of the masters not capable of teaching the modern improvements in instruction, hence it became necessary either for them to vacate their posts, or commence a fresh course of study, in order to keep pace with the times. Many chose the former, and to supply their places, and to find new masters for newly established schools, the training class in London was originated, and an active set of young men prepared for taking the new appointments. Formerly schools were established with a large grant of money, but they now receive only a partial aid, and that only on condition that the locality contributes a still larger share, and provides a proper building, &c. The success of some of these new schools suggested to the London Board the withdrawal of the annual grant, and the placing all equally on the so called "self-supporting system," but the old schools could not be considered in the same light as the new ones, for many had existing debts, and the whole machinery was of an expensive kind, except that the instruction was almost free. Now there is a great difference between a school established in a new locality, where its novelty alone would ensure an appearance of success—and the raising the rate of fees almost double and treble their former rate, such school burdened with debt, and its management not of the most vigorous kind. A question almost arises why their affairs were not settled before they were thrown upon their own resources, then the "self supporting plan" would have had a fair trial. As it is, some are creeping on burdened with a debt of comparatively few pounds, but yet sufficient to cripple their energies. In the case of York the change involved extensive alterations in the school, which caused a rather heavy debt, £50. of which was paid off last year by means of donations, and there is a balance still owing. But of the usefulness of the school there can be no doubt, and many a young aspirant after fame and fortune, has there received a lift on the road.

York has always ranked high for its art attainments, and the great Etty did not disdain to work side by side with the students in the school,

and some of his studies still grace the walls of the master's studio. The present master, Mr. John Charles Swallow, was an old student of the London School of Design, and then educated in the training class of the Department; and he at present holds four government certificates, being, with one exception, more than any teacher in the Kingdom. The school possesses a good collection of casts of ornaments and figures from the antique, and a small collection of illustrated works on ornament. There are morning, afternoon, and evening classes held daily; that in the afternoon is for female students exclusively; and the course of study includes a great variety of subjects. The school is held in a neat cut stone building (formerly St. Peter's School), near the east end of the Minster. The structure consists of a centre and two wings; the centre has an arcade of three arches, above which are three square-headed windows; and the ends of the wings have each a fine pointed arched window of five lights. The angles of the wings are supported by octangular pillars or turrets, and the top of the whole front is embattled.

*Yorkshire School for the Blind, Bootham.*—This school was instituted in 1834, as a memorial of William Wilberforce, the philanthropist—the immortal opponent of negro slavery—who represented Yorkshire in six successive Parliaments. On the 3rd of October, 1833, a meeting was held in the Festival Concert Room, York, attended by the Archbishop, Lord Brougham (then Lord Chancellor), and a large number of the nobility, clergy, and gentry of Yorkshire, to consider the best means of testifying the sense entertained by the County of the merit and services of Mr. Wilberforce; and with good judgment and taste they resolved to found an institution for the education of indigent children of both sexes, who, by birth or accident, had been deprived of sight; such a memorial being considered more appropriate to one whose life was devoted to works of benevolence and utility, than any monument, however splendid, in brass or marble. The establishment of this institution, as a *Wilberforce Memorial*, was the result of that meeting, and in the following year application was made to Government for a lease of the Manor House, and the grounds attached to it, which were at once granted for ninety-nine years, at a rent of £115. per annum, and since that time the School for the Blind has been in active operation. The rules of this excellent charity have been in a measure recommended to the Belgian Government, by a Commission appointed to report on the best means of educating the blind; and in France they have been published, and received some attention. Under its excellent mode of management, the school at York has become one of the most efficient establishments of the kind in Europe. All the pupils receive such instruction in some useful branch of handicraft, as may enable them to

obtain a livelihood, attention being at the same time paid to their moral and religious education; and those who are susceptible of a musical education, are instructed in that science; several of them have made sufficient progress to qualify them to act as organists in different Churches. The principal of the mechanical arts taught are the making of baskets and mats, knitted and netted work of all kinds, and ornamental hair-work. A variety of these articles is always kept on hand for public sale. The studies in which the pupils have made the most progress, have been reading, arithmetic, geography, scripture history, &c. An apparatus for printing in raised letters has lately been obtained for the institution, and a Museum for objects, that will admit of being handled, is in course of formation. The pupils are allowed to attend at the places of religious worship which their parents may desire; or which, if adults, they may themselves prefer.

A weekly practice of music is usually held in a large room in the institution, in which there is a good organ, on Thursdays, at two o'clock, at which the public are admitted on the payment of sixpence each; and so high a state of proficiency have the pupils attained, that in the summer time the Committee occasionally take a few of them to the neighbouring towns, where they give public concerts. The school is supported principally by means of subscription. Every pupil pays towards his maintenance and clothing a sum fixed by the Committee; and the children of wealthier parents are admitted to receive tuition on such terms as may be beneficial to the institution. The number of pupils that can be accommodated in the school is sixty-five. In 1843 the very handsome bequest of £5,000. was left to this charity by the late Dr. Beckwith, of York. The Rt. Hon. the Earl Fitzwilliam is the President of the institution, and amongst the Vice-Presidents and Trustees are the Duke of Sutherland, the Earl of Carlisle, and Lord Wenlock.

The *Building* occupied by this school was formerly called the King's Manor, it having been originally erected by Henry VIII. (See page 343.)

*Blue Coat Boys' School*, Peaseholme Green.—This institution, which is one of the noblest of the York charities, was established in 1705, by the Lord Mayor and Corporation of the City, for educating, clothing, feeding, and apprenticing forty boys; the Corporation provided the outfit for the establishment, and a fund for defraying the annual expenses was formed by a voluntary and general subscription amongst the inhabitants, which amounted, at the first opening of the school, to £190. per annum; but it is now greatly augmented, and in consequence of the ample funds of the charity the number of boys has been increased to seventy, and another similar institution for the other sex, called the Grey Coat Girls' School, has been united to it. There

are forty-four children in the latter school. The boys are admitted at the age of nine years, and at the age of fourteen they are bound apprentices to suitable trades. The annual subscriptions to the charity are considerable, and the real estates belonging to it valuable. About the year 1820, Thomas Wilkinson, Esq., of Highbury, late an Alderman of York, bequeathed to the institution the munificent legacy of £4,000. The building in which the boys' school is held is known as *St. Anthony's Hall*, and a description of it will be found at page 515 of this volume.

*Grey Coat Girls' School, Monkgate.*—This school is supported by the same funds, and is under the same rules and regulations, as that of the school just noticed. The children are educated, fed, lodged, and clothed, as well as trained up for domestic servants; and are afterwards placed out to household service. It appears that the girls' school was held in a building in Marygate till 1784, when the site of the present edifice was purchased, and a school house erected thereon. It is a large commodious brick building, with a spacious area or court in front.

*Spinning School, St. Andrewgate.*—Two benevolent ladies of York—Mrs. Cappe and Mrs. Gray—founded this establishment about the year 1782. There was then in York a hemp manufactory, in which several children were employed, and the object of the foundresses of this school, was to have those children taught to read and sew after the business of the manufactory was over. This plan was adopted, but the evil examples of the day destroyed all the good impressions of evening instruction; and it was found necessary to remove them entirely from such a nursery of vice. With this view several other ladies joined the original foundresses, and a school for spinning worsted was soon established, in which each girl received the wages of her labours. In 1786 a knitting school was added, and in 1797 a second subscription was proposed to supply the girls with milk and breakfast. The school is still supported by donations and annual subscriptions; but though the original name is retained, spinning is no longer attended to, the children being at the present chiefly employed in sewing and knitting. The school is held in two good rooms. The number of girls taught is sixty, one half being taught to read and knit in the junior school on the ground floor, and the other half taught to read, write, and sew, in the upper room. All the children are instructed gratuitously, receive their breakfasts daily, except on Sundays, and are partially clothed. The charity is managed by a Committee of ladies, and the schools are conducted by two schoolmistresses.

*The York Female Friendly Society*, which is in connexion with the Spinning School and the York Grey Coat Girls' School, was instituted chiefly

for the benefit of the poor girls educated in these schools, in the year 1788. It consists of honorary members and general members, the former being those who contribute six shillings or upwards per annum, but receive no benefit or advantage from thence; and the latter those who contribute to the funds, and are entitled to its benefits in cases of sickness, &c. There is also a private fund formed by the contributions of the ladies for the further relief of the benefitted members of the Society; and an annuity fund for affording annuities of forty shillings a year for life to such benefitted or general members as have attained the age of fifty-five years. The latter fund consists of £1000., three per cent. consolidated bank annuities, which has been purchased by means of the subscriptions and donations of honorary members, without any aid from the general members. The affairs of the Society are managed by some of the benevolent ladies of the City.

*Wilson's Charity Schools.*—These schools were instituted in connexion with an Hospital or Almshouse for poor women, which was founded and endowed by Mrs. Dorothy Wilson, a maiden lady, in the year 1717. The boys' school is held in the Hospital in Walmgate, adjoining Foss Bridge, and the girls' school in the Merchants' Hall, Fossgate. The number of boys is fifty, the number of girls twenty, and both boys and girls are educated and clothed gratuitously. There are schools also at Nun-Monkton and Skipwith, supported out of the funds of this charity.

*Industrial Ragged School.*—This excellent institution occupies a portion of the Old Workhouse in Marygate, and has for its object to provide food, clothing, and a Christian education, with industrial employment, for the mendicant and destitute children of the City of York. It was established in October, 1847, by some benevolent individuals, whose efforts have been crowned with considerable success. It was for some time held in confined apartments in the Bedern. The present building was purchased in 1850, for the sum of £565. About eighty children, of both sexes, on an average, in winter, and about half that number in summer, attend, and are taught reading, writing, and arithmetic, as well as some industrial handicraft. All the children receive three meals daily, and a few of them reside in the school. The children go out to work when required, and the pence which they earn are placed in a Savings' Bank, in their own names, and with additions made to these sums, clothes are purchased for them.

*Dodsworth's Schools.*—John Dodsworth, formerly an ironmonger, founded and endowed three schools for boys in York, and one at Nether Poppleton, about the year 1798. Those in the City are situated on Bishophill, near the Friar's Wall, on the north bank of the Ouse, and in Lawrence Street. The



buildings are arranged so as to afford rooms for the teachers to reside in, and the present annual value of the endowment is £34. 2s. 6d. This sum is divided into five parts—£6. 16s. 6d. is paid to each of the four schoolmasters, and a like sum is retained as a reparation fund.

*Haughton's Charity School*, in Colliergate, near the Church of St. Crux, was founded and endowed in 1778, by William Haughton, for the gratuitous education of twenty poor boys of the parish of St. Crux. The endowment consisted of £1,800., the interest of which, together with certain annuities, was to be applied to the instruction of the aforesaid number of poor children, and the Lord Mayor and Recorder, in conjunction with the minister, churchwardens, and overseers of the parish of St. Crux, were appointed trustees. Up to the year 1838 the boys were taught simply to read, but in that year the parishioners and other friends of education in the City made an active effort, and the school was thrown open to a larger number of scholars, and a good commercial education was secured for them. There are now forty boys enjoying the advantages of this charity, and the schoolmaster's salary is £180. per annum.

**NATIONAL SCHOOLS.**—These schools were first established in 1812, and are under the management of a sub-committee of the York Diocesan Board of Education.

The *Manor Central National School*, for boys and infants, occupies part of the old Manor Palace, a description of which is given at page 349 of this volume. The large school room is the reputed Banqueting Hall of the Palace. It was subsequently converted into an Assembly Room.

The *Aldwark National School*, for girls and infants, is held in the Merchant Tailors' Hall, Aldwark. A description of this building will be found at a subsequent page.

The *Walmgate National School*, for boys, girls, and infants, is held in a large commodious brick building, erected about fifteen years ago, in Speculation Street, Walmgate.

The *Micklegate National School*, for boys, in Queen Street, without Micklegate Bar, is a large airy brick erection.

The *Micklegate National School*, for girls and infants, is a very neat Elizabethan structure in red brick, with cut stone dressings, situated immediately outside Micklegate Bar. It was erected by subscription in 1852, and as far as regards the structure, fitting up, &c., is quite a model school. The front presents a centre and two gables, and the interior consists of two fine rooms, with open roofs, and a class room. This school, and that for boys in Queen Street, are district schools for all the parishes in the City on

the south side of the Ouse. About 1,500 children attend the National Schools of the City.

**BRITISH SCHOOLS.**—The *Hope Street Boys' School*, which is conducted on the British and Foreign School system, is open to children of all religious denominations, and is under the management of a Committee, chiefly composed of members of the Society of Friends. The school is partly supported by subscription, and about 230 boys receive the elements of a useful English education. It is well supplied with apparatus, such as a fine globe, a magic lantern, air pumps, &c. The working of the electric telegraph is taught here; the Electric Telegraph Company supply the school with instruments, and the school supplies that company with clerks. The school room, which was thoroughly repaired and re-arranged in 1852, is very spacious, well lighted and ventilated, and forms one of the best public school rooms in York. There is an excellent class room, and there is a good play-ground in front of the building.

The *British School*, for girls, is in Jail Lane, Bishophill, and is conducted on the same plan as the Hope Street School.

The *Bilton Street School*, for boys, was founded in April, 1832, by the Rev. Jocelyn Willy, by whom it is chiefly supported. It is intended for the children of the district of Layerthorpe, and is conducted on the British School system. About 160 children attend. The school room measures 60 feet by 80 feet; is fine and airy; and there is a good class room.

The *Church of England Schools* in Bishopgate Street were erected in 1838, and are partly supported by subscription. They are day schools for girls only, but on Sunday both sexes attend. The average number of children in daily attendance is about 200. The school premises are very commodious, and consist of two fine school rooms, and four class rooms.

There is a neat *Church of England Sunday School* in Layerthorpe, which was erected in 1848; and there are schools for girls and infants in Cole Street, Groves; and an *Infant School* in Speculation Street, Walmgate.

An *Infant School*, in Friargate, is endowed with £2. per annum from "Baker's Gift," for which some six poor girls are taught free.

**WESLEYAN SCHOOLS.**—These schools, which are partly supported by subscriptions, are large and well attended, and their management is conducted by a Committee of the Wesleyan Society.

The *Albion Street School*, for boys, is situated at the rear of the Albion Chapel, in Skeldergate. About seventy boys attend daily, and a Sunday school for girls is held in the upper room of the same building, at which about sixty girls attend. This school-room, however, was disposed of along

with Albion Chapel, and the children will shortly be removed to more commodious premises now in course of erection, adjoining Wesley Chapel. The Wesleyans have a *Sunday School* in Wesley Place, near Fossagate; it is a large brick building two stories high.

A *Wesleyan School* for boys, girls, and infants, is held in the building commonly called St. George's Chapel, near Walmgate, which was erected in 1826, but which has been used as a school room since the erection of the Contenary Chapel, in St. Saviourgate. This school is conducted on the Glasgow training system, and the average number of children in attendance is about 150.

The *Primitive Methodist Sunday School* is held on the ground floor of their spacious Chapel in Little Stonegate. About 100 children attend.

The *Boys' School* in connexion with the *Independents*, is held in St. Saviourgate, at which the average number of children in attendance is about 140; and the *Day and Sunday School for Girls* is held on the ground floor of the Salem Chapel, at which about 100 children attend daily.

CATHOLIC SCHOOLS.—*St. George's Schools*, for both sexes, are situated at the east end of the Catholic Church of St. George, in George Street. They occupy a handsome red brick building, with cut stone dressings, in the Tudor style of architecture, erected a few years ago at a cost of about £2,000.

Over 400 children are educated in these schools, which consist of a school for boys and girls, supported by voluntary subscriptions, collections in the Church, and the children's pence; and a *Charity School*, for both sexes, in which the children are taught free. About 160 children attend the latter school, most of whom are partly fed, and some are clothed, by the Society of St. Vincent de Paul. The school rooms for the boys and girls are each 70 feet long, 25 feet wide, and 13½ feet high, but the lower or charity school room is a few feet shorter, a portion of it being occupied by a kitchen for cooking food for the charity children. The boys are under the superintendence of a head master, aided by an assistant, and some pupil teachers; and the female department is conducted by the religious ladies of St. Mary's Convent, York, who, in conformity to their vocation, devote their time and talents to the instruction of the poor and ignorant.

The *Convent Schools* consist of a school for girls of the middle class, and a poor school for infants, and both are well attended. The schools adjoin the Convent, without Micklegate Bar, and the children are taught by the Nuns. The building of the schools is in the Italian style, the front exhibits four large pilasters supporting a pediment, which is surmounted by a plain cross.

The schools in York under Government inspection, and receiving Govern-

ment aid, are the York and Ripon Training Schools for Schoolmasters and Schoolmistresses, the Yeoman School, all the National Schools, the Hope Street and Bilton Street Schools, St. George's Catholic Schools, the Church of England Schools, Bishophill, and the Wesleyan Day Schools.

According to the Government Report of the Census for 1851, there were then in the City of York 94 day schools (41 public, and 53 private), in which 5,784 children, viz., 2,956 males, and 2,828 females, were being educated. The number of pupils attending the 41 public day schools was 4,415, viz., 2,402 males, and 2,013 females; and the number in the 53 private day schools was 1,369, viz., 554 males, and 815 females. The population of the City within the municipal limits being at the same time 86,303, it will be seen that about one-sixth of the population of York were then receiving a school education—a proportion which is larger than that of most other towns in the Kingdom.

**SUNDAY SCHOOLS.**—In 1786, and shortly after Raikes had established his Sunday Schools at Gloucester, the York Sunday School Society was formed, and these valuable institutions do not appear to have existed here previous to that period.

The *Church of England Sunday Schools, for boys*, are held in the Merchants' Hall, Fossgate; Willey's School, Bilton Street; Bishopgate Street; and at the National School, Queen Street; and those for *girls* at Bishopgate Street, Layerthorpe, St. Andrewgate, Cole Street, and at the National School, Micklegate Bar. The Church of England School Committee have a Library and Reading Room for the use of the teachers.

The Society of Friends hold their Sunday School in the Hope Street School.

The Sunday schools belonging to the other denominations are held in the day schools in connexion with them, or in the school rooms attached to their respective Chapels.

From the Report of the Census for 1851, we learn that the number of Sunday Schools in York at that period was 26, and the number of children attending them was 3,972, viz., 2,043 males, and 1,929 females. Of these 26 schools, fifteen were supported by the Church of England, and the number attending them was 1,603; two by the Independents, and the number in attendance was 734; three by the Wesleyan Methodists, and the number was 802; one by the Wesleyan Reformers, the number of children being 310; one by the Wesleyan Association, containing 75; one by the Primitive Methodists, with 27 children; one by the Society of Friends, with 125 children; and two by the Catholics, containing 296 children.

In Drake's Eboracum is the copy of a petition, which was presented to

Parliament in 1652, from the gentry residing in the northern counties, for the establishment of a University at York, but no record has come down to us respecting the reception it met with.

**HOSPITALS OR ALMSHOUSES.**—*Agar's or St. Maurice's Hospital*, Monkgate, was founded by Alderman Thomas Agar, by will dated May 7th, 1631, for six poor widows, each of whom receives £3. 15s. 4d. per annum, from the endowment. The building consists of two small cottages, containing six tenements, which are occupied by the poor recipients of the charity.

*Barstow's Hospital*, Blossom Street.—It is not known that there are any writings relating to these Almshouses, but there is a tradition that two maiden sisters of the name of Barstow, who resided in York, founded them. They consist of two ricketty old cottages, which are inhabited by six poor aged persons, each of whom receives a sum never exceeding £3. per annum, but often much less, and sometimes nothing. This money is chiefly derived from the rents of some other buildings belonging to the charity.

*St. Catherine's Hospital*, Holdgate Lane, for four poor widows. This Almshouse was founded previous to the Reformation, on the road side near the Mount, as a house of entertainment for poor travellers or pilgrims who could not pay for lodgings in the City. In Drake's time the edifice was kept up and repaired at the City's expense. The income of the charity was augmented by Mrs. Frances Nicholson, a widow, of York, who, by deeds dated the 7th and 8th of June, 1709, bequeathed to certain trustees the rent of a piece of land in Beggargate Lane (now Nunnery Lane), for the support of four ancient widows in St. Catherine's Hospital. It was likewise increased by the donations of the late Mr. Luntley, a glover in Blake Street; Mr. Hartley, a glover in Micklegate; and Mr. Yates, a linen draper in High Ousegate. In addition, the late Countess of Conyngham bequeathed £10. per annum to the four aged women here. The present annual income of each inmate of the Hospital is about £15. The old house on the Mount was sold a few years ago, and the present neat and comfortable building erected, in which each poor woman has two small rooms. A similar *Spittal* (a contraction for Hospital) to this, dedicated to St. Loy, was built in Catholic times, on the east side of Monk Bridge, but not a vestige of it now remains.

*Colton's Hospital*, Rougier Street, Tanner Row, was founded by Thomas Colton, by deed dated February 11, 1717, and augmented by his will dated 1729, for eight poor women, who each receive about £5. per annum. The buildings consist of cottages containing eight mean tenements.

*Harrison's Hospital*, Penley Grove Street, is a neat stone building, in the Tudor style, with a Chapel in the centre, erected in 1845-6. It was founded

by Mr. Harrison, for eight poor women of reduced circumstances, each of whom receives £20. per annum.

*Hewley's Hospital*, St. Saviourgate, was founded and endowed by Lady Hewley, relict of Sir John Hewley, of the City of York, Knt., in the year 1700, for ten poor persons. The trusteeship of the Hospital having, in time, fallen into the hands of persons professing Unitarian doctrines, who sought for objects of the charity amongst the poor of their own sect, the orthodox party threw it into Chancery, where it continued for twenty years, and was at length decided by Lord Cottenham, that the charity belonged exclusively to the Independents, Baptists, and English Presbyterians, and under the decree, which is dated January, 1849, the charity was placed in the hands of trustees belonging to these denominations. The original Hospital was a brick building situated in Tanner row, but its site having been sold to the Railway Company, the present handsome row of ten cottages and a small Chapel, all of cut stone, was erected in 1840, under the order of the Court of Chancery, on the site of the residence of the foundress, and within a few feet of her grave in the chancel of the Church of St. Saviour. In front of the building, facing the street, are the arms of the donor, with an inscription, carved in stone. Originally the annual stipend was only £6. per ann., but the property with which the charity is endowed having increased in value, each of the ten poor inmates now receive 30s. per month, besides a cottage containing two rooms and a kitchen. Prayers are read in the Chapel every morning by a layman.

Besides founding the Hospital, Lady Hewley\* paid into the Exchequer, in 1788, the sum of £1,000., the profits arising therefrom to be applied to the purpose of teaching the children of the poor to read and write.

*Ingram's Hospital*, Bootham.—Sir Arthur Ingram, Knt., a senior Alderman of York,\* founded and endowed this Hospital in 1640, for ten poor women. Drake says, that by his will "he appointed lands of the yearly value of fifty pounds to be insured to the Hospital which he had lately built for the maintenance of ten poor widows." The buildings comprise ten cottages of two rooms each, built of brick with stone dressings, having in the centre a square tower of antique appearance, containing the Chapel and

\* Lady Hewley, or "Dame Sarah Hewley," as she is styled, whose maiden name was Wolridge, when a spinster was a Ward in Chancery, and it is said that she eloped with Mr., afterwards Sir John, Hewley upon a matrimonial expedition, she riding before and he behind, on the same horse, thinking thereby to protect him from the censure of the Lord Chancellor, by alleging that she ran away with him, and not he with her.

\* Sir Arthur Ingram resided in a fine house in Petergate, near the Minster, which was occupied by Charles I. during his stay in York in 1642. (See page 224).

apartments for the master or reader. The entrance to this tower is a curious stone Norman arched doorway, apparently some part of a Church or monastic foundation, which was probably removed here when the Hospital was founded. Each of the poor inmates of this Hospital receive £5. per ann., and clothing materials, once in two years, of the value of £1. 5s. The endowment also provides twenty nobles for "an honest able man to read prayers in the Chapel," payable out of certain lands at Sheriff Hutton; in pursuance of which £6. 18s. 4d. per ann., is paid to the master, who reads the prayers three times a week. The crest of the family of the founder is a cock, one of which, of silver gilt, is the badge of the poor women, and is transferred to every successive inmate.

*Mason's Hospital*, Colliergate, was founded by Margaret Mason (widow of Mr. Thomas Mason, who served the office of Sheriff of York in 1701), for six poor women. Mrs. Mason's will is dated June 5th, 1732, and the original endowment was 20s. per annum to each of the poor inmates, to be paid out of the rental of certain property in Fossgate. The poor widows receive that sum, as well as £2. 10s. per annum from the Countess of Conyngham's charity. The almshouse is small, but each inmate has one room.

*Maison Dieu, or House of God*, Walmgate.—The foundation of this Almshouse is ascribed to the Company of Cordwainers, but much uncertainty exists respecting the period of its erection. The Cordwainers certainly maintained it till the dissolution of the fraternity in 1808, when its entire patronage, with its writings, &c., were transferred to Mr. Hornby, one of the principal members; who, finding the building in a very ruinous state, took the whole down, and generously rebuilt it, in 1811, at his own expense; and it is now in the patronage of the Rev. Dr. Hornby, son of that gentleman. The buildings consist of five cottages, yet occupied by aged and decayed shoemakers, who pay a few pence per annum as an acknowledged grant to the patron. On the top of the building is a cupola, with a bell, which, before the Company was dissolved, was always tolled on the death of any of its members. Divine Service was also performed in the Almshouse occasionally, at which the members were obliged to attend; and from this source may be traced the origin of its name. There is no endowment.

*Middleton's Hospital*, Skeldergate.—This is a monument of the piety and benevolence of Dame Ann Middleton, who, by will dated August 24th, 1655, left £2,000. for building and endowing it for twenty widows of poor freemen of the City of York. The widows now receive each £8. per annum, £3. of which is from the original endowment; £2. from the Countess of Conyngham's charity; and £3. from the late Dr. Beckwith's charity. The Hospital, which

was rebuilt by the trustees (the Corporation of York), in 1829, is a neat brick erection, two stories high, in which each inmate has one good room. Over the entrance is a niche containing a full-length statue of the foundress.

*Merchant Tailors' Hospital*, Aldwark.—There was an ancient Guild or Almshouse near the Merchant Tailors' Hall, instituted "for the Honour of God and St. John Baptist," by a patent, bearing date the 31st of Henry VI. (1452), for poor members of the tailors' fraternity, which was rebuilt in 1730. This Hospital consists of five small cottages, which are still occupied by poor brothers of the fraternity, or their widows, who receive each £10. per annum.

*Old Maids' Hospital*, Bootham.—The institution, which, as Mr. Baines facetiously remarks, "few ladies in the early part of life would claim as their inheritance," was founded by Mrs. Mary Wandesford, of the City of York, spinster, who by will, dated the 4th of November, 1725, bequeathed an estate at Brompton-upon-Swale, near Richmond, with a mortgage of £1,200. and £1,200. South Sea Stock, in trust, for the purchase and endowment of a convenient habitation, "for the use and benefit of ten poor gentlewomen, who were never married," members of the Established Church, who shall retire from the hurry and noise of the world into "a religious house, or protestant retirement," with £10. per annum to a reader. Lord Castlecomer, the heir at law to the foundress of this Hospital, being a minor at the time of her death, the Duke of Newcastle, his guardian, opposed the will; but it was ultimately confirmed in 1739 by a decree in Chancery. Immediately on this decision, a piece of ground, containing about an acre, was purchased, and the present neat brick building soon erected, and was opened for the reception of the inmates at the commencement of 1743. The maiden testator does not in her will fix at what time of life ladies might become candidates for this charity, but the decree of the Court of Chancery, just mentioned, has fixed the age at fifty years. The Hospital, which is two stories high, has in front of it a grass plot, bounded by a brick wall; and behind is a good sized garden. In the centre of the building, which rises to a pediment, is a vacant niche, probably intended for a statue of the foundress. Each inmate has two rooms, and there is a small Chapel on the second floor, against the walls of which are hung an oil painting of the foundress, taken when she was young, and tables of benefactions since the foundation of the Hospital. Prayers are read in the Chapel, by the Chaplain of the Hospital, on Wednesdays and Fridays. The Archbishop for the time being and four other persons are trustees. Each inmate receives a stipend of about £22. per annum.

*St. Thomas's Hospital*, without Micklegate Bar.—This is an ancient stone building, which before the Reformation belonged to a religious society, called,



the York Guild of Corpus Christi, and was devoted to the relief of poor and weary pilgrims visiting the City. The fraternity of Corpus Christi,\* which was incorporated by letters patent in the 37th of Henry VI. (1459), was instituted for a Master and six priests, who were termed the Keepers of the Guild, and who were appointed annually by the brotherhood. An old record in the Bodleian Library says, "they were bound to keep a solemn procession, the Blessed Sacrament being in a shrine, borne in the same through the City of York yearly, the Friday after Corpus Christi day, and the day after to have a solemn mass and dirge, to pray for the prosperity of the brothers and sisters living, and the eternal repose of the souls departed; and to keep yearly ten poor folks, having every one of them towards their living yearly £3. 6s. 8d. And further, they do find eight beds for poor people, being strangers, and one poor woman, to keep the said beds by the year 13s. 4d." This guild was supported chiefly by the annual contribution collected as the above-mentioned procession passed along.

From the middle of the thirteenth century, down to the period of the Reformation, certain plays or pageants were exhibited in York, and in most of the towns in the Kingdom, during the octave of the festival of Corpus Christi—the Thursday after Trinity Sunday—and thence were called *Corpus Christi Plays*. Dramatic poetry in this and most other nations of Europe owes its origin, or at least its revival, to the shows which were usually exhibited on the more solemn festivals. "At these times," according to Dr. Percy, "they were wont to represent in the Churches the lives and miracles of the Saints, or some of the more important stories of Scripture; and as the most mysterious subjects were frequently chosen, such as the Incarnation, Passion, and Resurrection of Christ, &c., these exhibitions acquired the general name of Mysteries."† The "Mysteries" were chiefly performed on temporary scaffolds, ornamented with tapestry, and erected in the Churchyards;‡ but the Corpus Christi Plays were exhibited on portable stages for the several scenes, placed on wheels, and drawn to the principal parts of the town for the better accommodation of the spectators. The several trading companies in the Cities and towns appear not only to have contributed towards the production of these pageants, but the subjects for representation were distributed amongst them, and each company was compelled to furnish

\* A notice of this fraternity occurs in 1391, in the Register of Fountains Abbey.

† Relq. of Ant. Eng. Poetry, vol. i., p. 126.

‡ Sacred Plays, representing the miracles and sufferings of Christ, appear to have been no novelty in the reign of Henry II.

a stage, together with actors, scenery, dresses, &c., for the exhibition of the same. Thus, for example, the Tylers were obliged to represent "the fallinge of Lucifer;" the Saddlers, "the makeing of the worlde;" the Ropers, "the brekinge of the Commandments of God;" the Shoemakers, "the Childer of Ysraell;" the Smiths, "the Ascension;" the Wrights, "the Resurrection;" the Priests, "the Coronation of Our Lady;" the Merchants, "Domesday;" &c.\*

The Corpus Christi plays at York were first performed in front of the Chapel of the guild; then near the great gates of the Priory of the Holy Trinity, in Micklegate; thence they proceeded to the Cathedral, in the yard of which they probably exhibited; they then passed on to St. Leonard's Hospital. Mr. Robert Davies observed that such was the interest then felt in the dramatic art at York, that the whole of a midsummer day, "from morn till dewy eve," did the citizens continue to witness the representations of the actors. The same excellent authority told us that only one of these plays has been published, viz:—"The Mystery of the Incredulity of St. Thomas." The original MS. volume of the sacred dramas enacted at York, he said, is in existence, but no one knows where; once it was in the possession of the Fairfax family, then in that of Dr. Thoresby; afterwards it was purchased by Horace Walpole, who gave £255. for it. At his sale it was bought by a Mr. Bright, and at the disposal of his effects, it was purchased for an unknown gentleman, for £305., the bid on the part of the British Museum being £300. Mr. Davies inspected the MS. shortly before its sale, when it was in good condition, and contained about fifty mysteries. We most heartily unite with Mr. Davies in hoping that the wealthy unknown may publish the work, that the citizens of modern York may see the dramatic writings which delighted their ancestors.†

In the third of Edward VI., the Lord Mayor of York for the time being was appointed Master of the Hospital of St. Thomas, under the express condition that "the poor folks and beds were to be maintained, found, and used, in the Hospital as before-time." Accordingly, September 29th, 1583, an Order of Council was made, authorizing the Recorder, two Aldermen, and proper officers, to proceed to Stainforth Bridge and Buttercramb, to "take possession of the lands there belonging to St. Thomas's Hospital, and parcel of the late Guild of Corpus Christi." At that period the buildings of the Hospital comprised at the first entrance a Chapel, on each side of which

\* Landsdown MSS.

† "An Antiquarian Walk through York"—a Lecture delivered at the York Institution, in the month of December, 1854, by Robert Davies, Esq., F.S.A.

was a spacious hall, containing several fire-places and requisite furniture for the brethren, who there assembled in common. Above were dormitories for twenty-four poor people, and behind the Hospital other requisite conveniences. The roof of the building was covered with lead, and over it hung a prayer bell. This Hospital gradually declined in importance, till in 1683 we find it inhabited by ten poor widows, who were allowed to solicit alms four days in the year. In 1787 it underwent considerably alterations; the back part of the building was completely taken down, the Chapel was removed, and the house reduced to six apartments on the ground floor, and six more over them, each room being occupied by one aged poor woman, appointed by the Lord Mayor; and thus was the inmates increased from ten to twelve, which is the number at the present time. The expenses of the alterations were defrayed by the money arising from the sale of the prayer bell, the lead which covered the old Hospital, &c. The system of mendicity was continued till January, 1791, when Mr. Luntley, a glover in Blake Street, dying, bequeathed, amongst other charitable donations, the sum of £1,000., the interest of which was to be regularly paid to the poor of this institution; and begging was then discontinued. Lady Conyngham augmented the income of the Hospital by leaving £25. per annum, to be equally divided amongst the poor inmates. The poor women now receive altogether £10. per annum.

*Thompson's Hospital, Castlegate.*—Founded by Sir Henry Thompson, of Middlethorpe, "sometimes Lord Mayor of this City, and Dame Anne, his wife, for the relief of six poor men," in the year 1700. The Hospital is a neat building, and each of the six inmates now receive £12. 10s. per annum. In selecting deserving objects for this charity, preference is given to the inhabitants of the parish of St. Mary, Castlegate.

*Trinity Hospital, Merchants' Hall, Fossgate.*—John de Rowcliff, or Rawcliffe, founded an Hospital here in 1373, which was dedicated to our Divine Lord and the Blessed Virgin, and was commonly termed Trinity Hospital. The founder had letters patent from Richard II., dated *ut supra*, to purchase lands worth £10. per ann. for the support of a priest or master, and for the brethren and sisters of the same. The priest was to pray for the said King, the founder, and all Christian souls; also to pay weekly to each of the thirteen poor people, and two poor scholars, constantly residing in the Hospital, fourpence of silver. The founder purchased only one house and 20s. rent, and no other person having augmented the charity, "the Governors of the Mystery of Merchants of the City of York incorporated July 12th, the eighth of Henry VI., and authorized by the said incorporation to purchase lands of the value

of ten pounds per annum, and to find a priest out of the profits of the same, did enter into the said lands given to the said Hospital, and of the profits and other lands, did give yearly to a priest to sing, continually in the said Hospital, over and besides all charges, six pounds." Such was the original establishment of this Hospital, but it was dissolved in the reign of Edward VI., and the stipend of the priest, as also the lands granted for maintaining of obits, lamps, &c., was by Act of Parliament given to the King. The Merchants' Company have, however, perpetuated the charity, and by means of various donations presented to it by several of its members, five poor men and five poor women are allowed about £5. each per ann., and rooms beneath the buildings of the Company's hall. The apartments of the Hospital being below the surrounding surface are exceedingly gloomy, and probably unhealthy, as the walls are of great thickness and retain the damp; but we rejoice to learn that it is in contemplation to build a new Hospital.

*Watter's Hospital*, Chapel Row, George Street.—This institution was founded by Sir Robert Watter, Knt., twice Lord Mayor of York, who by will, proved June 15, 1612, appointed that an Hospital should be erected out of his houses in Neutgate Lane, which should be for the perpetual maintenance of ten persons, to consist of a master, governor, or reader, who shall have £3. per ann. for his stipend, and of certain brethren and sisters, each of whom were to receive 40s. per ann.; the said £24. per ann. to issue out of the lordship of Cundale. The old Almshouses in Neutgate Lane were pulled down when that lane was thrown into George Street, and the present neat building of two stories in height was erected in 1844. The number of poor women now in the Hospital is seven, and there are three out-pensioners, each of whom receives £2. per ann. The inmates have two rooms each.

*Wilson's Hospital*, Foss Bridge.—In the year 1717, Mrs. Dorothy Wilson, a maiden lady who resided here, bequeathed her own dwelling house to be converted into an Hospital for ten poor women, each of them to have a room to herself; and for their maintenance she also left certain lands at Skipwith and Nun-Monkton, from which each of the said poor women was to receive £6. 10s. per ann. The property, which has increased considerably, is vested in the hands of seven trustees; and in the settlement is a very extraordinary clause, purporting that if any one of the trustees be made an Alderman of the City, he shall cease to be a trustee. The original building stood till 1765, when it was taken down and re-erected; but when the bridge across the Foss was re-built, it was found requisite to take the Hospital down a second time, and it was then handsomely built with brick, as it now appears,

in 1812. The number of alms-women has been increased to sixteen, whose stipend is £20. each per annum, and there are also eight blind pensioners who each receive £8. per ann. In connexion with this charity are schools for fifty boys and twenty girls, who are clothed and educated free; and also schools at Skipworth and Nun-Monkton supported out of its funds.

*Winterskelf's Hospital*, Walmgate.—Perceval Winterskelf, who had served the office of Sheriff of York in 1706, gave to the parish of St. Margaret certain buildings on each side of a square court, part of which he directed should be occupied as the residence of six poor people; and he ordered that the amount of the rents of the remainder should be entirely devoted to the maintenance of these six poor inmates. The conditions of the bequest are carried into effect, and the poor alms-people receive about £14. per annum.

POPULATION, &c., OF YORK.—Whilst the City was occupied by the Romans no just estimate of the population has been recorded, but it must have been considerable. In the reign of Edward the Confessor the number of inhabited houses was computed at 1,898, and about the same number in the suburbs. After the Norman Conquest, as we learn from Domesday Book, there were only 654 inhabited houses in York. In 1186 it was considered as bearing a half proportion to London. In the subsidy roll of the 51st of Edward III., (1377), the population of York is stated at 10,800. In the reign of Henry V. the number of houses was 2,000, and the inhabitants, 10,000. In the latter end of the seventeenth century York contained about 10,000 inhabitants, and Newcastle-on-Tyne 8,000; while Sheffield, Leeds, and Bradford, were not greater than Ripon in size.

The population of the City at the six decennial periods of the present century has been—

1801 .....	16,145	1831 .....	25,850
1811 .....	18,217	1841 .....	28,842
1821 .....	20,787	1851 .....	36,308

Of the 36,308 persons which formed the population within the municipal boundary of York in 1851, there were 16,977 males and 19,326 females; beyond that boundary the population of York exceeds 40,000.

Previously to the year 1835, York was divided into four districts or wards, which took their names from the four gates of the City; but is now divided into six wards, and the following table shows the various parishes comprised within them, together with the number of inhabited houses in each parish, according to the Census of 1851.

PARISHES, &c.	Inhabited Houses.	POPULATION.		Total.
		Males.	Females.	
<i>Bootham Ward.</i>				
St. Michael-le-Belfrey .....	181	474	641	1115
Minster Yard with Bedern .....	113	486	622	1108
St. Wilfrid .....	43	75	171	246
Mint Yard Liberty .....	12	29	44	73
St. Giles .....	375	933	1126	2059
<i>Monk Ward.</i>				
All Saints, Peasholme .....	90	218	208	426
St. Cuthbert .....	385	769	897	1666
St. Helen on the Walls .....	80	194	204	396
St. Andrew .....	64	177	188	365
Holy Trinity, Goodramgate .....	91	244	282	526
St. John del Pyke .....	76	187	199	386
St. Maurice .....	615	1303	1625	2928
St. Saviour .....	562	1245	1293	2538
<i>Walmgate Ward.</i>				
St. Crux .....	190	453	467	920
St. Dennis .....	305	737	742	1479
St. George .....	420	1033	1062	2095
St. Lawrence .....	324	644	736	1380
St. Margaret .....	346	818	777	1595
St. Nicholas .....	38	91	126	217
St. Peter-le-Willows .....	119	297	291	588
<i>Micklegate Ward.</i>				
Holy Trinity, Micklegate .....	272	544	961	1505
St. Mary, Bishophill Junior .....	747	1664	1862	3526
St. Mary, Bishophill Senior .....	246	598	629	1227
St. Martin-cum-Gregory .....	116	278	341	619
<i>Guild Hall Ward.</i>				
St. Helen, St. Helen's Square .....	102	262	289	551
Holy Trinity, or Christ's Parish, King's Square..	133	332	388	720
St. Martin-le-Grand .....	85	225	322	547
St. Peter-the-Little .....	56	141	153	294
St. Sampson .....	137	361	397	758
<i>Castlegate Ward.</i>				
All Saints, North Street .....	264	637	671	1306
All Saints, Pavement .....	63	206	217	423
St. John, Micklegate .....	182	482	483	915
St. Mary, Castlegate .....	146	475	568	1043
St. Michael, Spurriergate .....	116	264	320	584
York Castle (Extra Parochial) .....	1	136	88	174

The parishes of St. Giles and St. Olave are partly in Bulmer Wapentake, North Riding. The population of the latter parish, which is immediately without the north wall of the City, and which includes the Hamlet of Marygate and parts of St. Giles, Clifton, and Rawcliffe, is not included in the above table.

York Castle, being the County Prison, belongs to the County at large, and is not within the jurisdiction of the City liberties.

The area of the City of York according to the Parliamentary Return, is 2,720 acres. The *Rateable value* of the City in 1856, was about £111,000. exclusive of the Hamlet of Marygate. The *Gross Estimated Rental* was about £123,000.

COMMERCE, TRADE, &c.—York must have been a place of considerable trade during the Roman period; and from Alcuin we learn that its commerce was of much importance in the middle of the eighth century. The Malmsbury historian tells us that before the Conquest York was a great City, and that “ships trading from Germany and Ireland lay in the heart of it.” The Ouse at that period was the only navigable river in the County, and the tide flowed up to the walls of York; consequently the City was favourably situated for commerce. After it had recovered from the effects of the Norman invasion, the trade and commerce of York appear gradually to have increased; and from that time to about the middle of the last century it was very considerable. During the greater part of that period the Ouse would admit the passage, up to the bridge, of the largest vessels employed in the merchant service. In the early part of the thirteenth century a charter was granted by King John (who visited York no less than sixteen times during his short reign), confirming the Mercatorial Guild, with all its privileges; and during the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, the weavers of York paid a considerable yearly sum for their immunities. At this period the merchants, artificers, and tradesmen of York consisted of several companies or guilds, all of whom were obliged to take part in the pageants of the famous Corpus Christi festival. (See page 593.) In 1298 the port of York furnished one vessel to the fleet of Edward I. In 1354 (27th Edward III.) York obtained the staple for wool, and many of the merchants of the City were subsequently members of the “Corporation of the Staple at Calais,” as well as of other guilds in France and in the Low Countries. The “Company of Merchant Adventurers,” and the “Company of Merchant Tailors,” are the only two surviving guilds or fraternities of traders, once so numerous in this City; but these associations have now ceased to exercise any influence over the trade of York. Of the ten staple towns established by Henry VII., York is mentioned as the second in rank, and like the rest of these towns, had peculiar commercial privileges granted to it. The Woollen Manufacture, which appears to have been early established at York, abundantly flourished there so late as the reign of Henry VIII. In the 34th of that reign (1533) an Act was passed, the preamble of which says, “Whereas, the City of York being one of the ancientest and greatest Cities within the realm of England, before this time hath been maintained and upholden by divers and sundry handicrafts there used, and

principally by making and weaving coverlets and coverings for beds," and the manufacture having spread into other parts, being thereby "debased and discredited;" the Act proceeds to enact that henceforth "none shall make coverlets in Yorkshire, but inhabitants of the City of York." The manufactures continued to flourish in the City until the commencement of the eighteenth century, when its trade in woollens completely left it, and removed to the West Riding. The increase of the size of trading vessels, the remoteness of the City from the sea, and other causes, led to the gradual decline of York as a place of trade. In the early part of the reign of Charles I., we find Sir Robert Barwick thus addressing the King on his entrance into York, "That this City was formerly eminent with trade, and far greater and more populous than it now is; yet of later times trading here decreased, and that principally by reason of some hindrance in the river, and the greatness of the ships now in use. Yet, nevertheless, this river, by your royal assistance, might be made serviceable, and until that be done, there is no hope that this City will attain its former splendour and greatness." Little appears to have been done to improve the navigation of the Ouse till the 13th of George I. (1727), when an Act of Parliament was obtained for the purpose, and a lock and dam erected at Naburn, at an expense of about £10,000. By these means the water in the City was raised five feet, and vessels of 140 tons burden can now sail up to it. The navigation was further improved in 1836, by the application of a powerful steam dredger, and by the channel being made sufficiently deep and regular to allow steam vessels to ply upon it in all states of the tide. Notwithstanding these improvements, however, York has never been able to gain its former importance as a place of trade; and it would probably have declined still further during the last century, had it not been, that as the metropolis of the north, it was often the residence of many of the County nobility and gentry. "Whereas the City of York is the capital City of the northern parts of England," recites the preamble of the first City Improvement Act in 1763, "and is a place of great resort, and much frequented by persons of distinction and fortune, whose residence there is a great benefit and advantage to the citizens of the said City, &c. The rapid growth of many of the manufacturing towns of the West Riding, and the port of Hull, has affected the relative position of York, both in trade and population; and it might have continued to recede had it not been for the introduction of railways.

The trade of York now principally arises from the supply of the inhabitants and the numerous opulent families in the neighbourhood. The chief branches of manufacture carried on here are glass, planes and edge tools, soap, combs,



iron-wire, confectionery, and drugs; and there are also some extensive iron foundries. The growth of chicory has of late years been largely cultivated in the neighbourhood of York. The manufacture of glass was introduced in 1797; the glass works, which are situated in Fishergate, were considerably enlarged in 1852; and that business is now continued on a considerable scale. The chief articles manufactured are flint glass vessels and common vials. A Linen Manufactory was established in 1824, outside Walmgate Bar, at which huckabacks, &c., are manufactured.

Although the number of vessels plying on the river Ouse is affected by competition with the railways, yet still there is a considerable trade carried on between Hull, Selby, and Goole, to and from which towns there are steamers every day, except Sunday. Great quantities of coal are brought hither in barges; and from the junction of the Foss with the Ouse, is a navigable communication to the parish of Sheriff-Hutton, in the North Riding.

Several Joint Stock Trading Companies have been formed in York during the last thirty years. The most important are the several Banking Companies, the *Yorkshire Insurance Company*, and the *York Gas and York Waterworks Companies*. There are several other companies for minor objects. Many efforts have been made to obtain for York the privileges of an Inland Bonded Port, but hitherto without success.

Great facilities have been opened for the increase of the trade of York by the introduction of *Railways*; and in consequence of them the old City has become an important place for the transit both of passengers and goods. An account of the several lines of railway which converge here will be found at a subsequent page of this volume.

*Markets.*—There are nominally three market days, viz. :—Tuesday, Thursday, and Saturday, but the Tuesday market has fallen into desuetude. Drake writing in 1736, says of the York market, “it is abundantly furnished with all sorts of grain, and a vast variety of odibles, of which wild fowl is not the least.

The *General Weekly Market* for the sale of poultry, eggs, butter, fruit, vegetables, and all kinds of produce, &c., is held every Saturday, in Parliament Street. Previous to the opening of this street, the market was held in the Pavement and High Ousegate, which were very inconvenient and confined places for that purpose, and many accidents were caused by the narrowness of these streets, notwithstanding that portions of the Churchyards of All Saints and St. Crux had been thrown into them.

In the front of St. Martin's Churchyard, in Micklegate, was formerly situated the *Butter Stand*. Great quantities of this article was brought to

York, and after being weighed here by officers appointed for the purpose, was purchased by contractors and shipped to London. Sixty years ago 80,000 firkins of butter were annually received at this office. The building, which succeeded a very ruinous one that was blown down the preceding year, was erected in 1778, for the purpose of weighing and marking butter, and it too having become ruinous, was taken down in December, 1828.

After the trade in wool in this City had been discontinued for some ages, a *Wool Market* was established by the Lord Mayor and Corporation, on Thursday, the 6th of May, 1708. St. Anthony's Hall being the place appointed for exposing this article for sale, several poor widows, who resided there, were removed to the Hospital of St. Thomas, and there was a wooden cross erected opposite the hall for weighing the wool. This market is still continued on Peaseholme Green (St. Anthony's Hall being now occupied as a Blue Coat School) every Thursday, from the latter end of May to the latter end of August; and for about three months after, viz. :—September, October, and November, it is held on every alternate Thursday.

The *Cattle Market* is held in the new and spacious Market Place without Fishergate Bar, every alternate Thursday. It was formerly held in Walmgate, much to the inconvenience of the inhabitants of that neighbourhood, but in 1826 the Corporation purchased the present piece of ground, for the purpose of a Cattle Market. The stalls and pens were entirely renewed in 1856, when the market was considerably enlarged. It is now perhaps the finest and best arranged market in the Kingdom, and contains pens for 20,000 sheep, 798 fat beasts, and 2,960 lean cattle. Its area is 6 acres 29 perches. The sheep pens are entirely of malleable iron, fixed in stone; the beast pens have cast iron posts, with malleable iron rails; the market is fenced with malleable iron railings upon a dwarf wall, and the whole surface is partly paved and partly covered with asphalt pavement. The cost of the ground for the site of the first market here, and the formation of the market, exclusive of the large inn in the centre, which was built contemporaneously with the market, amounted to £10,000.; and the additional ground for enlarging the market, together with the new works, cost about £8,000. The tolls of the market are now let for £715., and the inn for £70. per annum. There are three sets of sanitary appliances connected with this market. A branch line of railway from the Scarborough line, at Bootham Stray, to this market, is in contemplation.

The *Pig Market* is held near Foss Bridge, every Saturday.

*Fairs* are held as follows :—Candlemas fair on the Thursday before February 14th; Palmsun fair, Thursday before Palm Sunday; Whit Monday;

Peterday fair, July 10th; Lammass fair, August 12th; Soulmass fair, November 14th; Martinmass fair, November 28, for horses and horned cattle.

A *Horse Fair*, commonly called the *Christmas Show*, takes place without Micklegate Bar, the last whole week before Christmas.

A *Leather Fair*, established in 1815, used to be held quarterly on Peaseholme Green, but for the last few years it has been discontinued. The leather fairs are now held at Leeds.

In the session of Parliament of 1833, the Corporation obtained an Act for improving and enlarging the Market-places in the City, and rendering the approaches thereto more commodious; and for regulating and maintaining the several markets and fairs held within the City and its suburbs. Under the provisions of this Act, the new and spacious street, called Parliament Street—now used as the Market Place—was formed, and opened for the first time in 1836. Besides the great weekly market on Saturday, there is another, but a lesser market, every Thursday. There has not been, and it is no small matter of surprise that there is not yet, an enclosed general market-place in York. In 1671 Mr. Marmaduke Rawden, a merchant of London, but a native of York, amongst other benefactions, devoted £400. to the erection of a Market Cross at the end of All Saints' Church, for the accommodation of the public. It was a small square building, with a dome, supported by twelve Ionic pillars. The following year the cross was raised higher, and a turret and vane placed on the top of it by the Corporation, at a cost of £100. Thus it stood till the month of January 1813, when, being considered useless, it was taken down, and the materials were sold by auction.

The *Corn Market* is still held in the open air at the east end of All Saints' Church, Pavement, on and near the site of the above-mentioned cross, on Saturdays, between the hours of twelve and one. Being situated in the midst of an extensive district, the corn and cattle markets are very important.

The *Butchers' Market* is held in St. Sampson's Square, commonly called Thursday Market, from the fact of the principal market of the City having at one time been held on Thursday. There was formerly in the middle of the Square a stone Market Cross, with an ascent of five steps on each side, round which was a shed or penthouse, supported by eight wooden pillars, on one of which was fixed an iron yard wand, as the standard of the market. This old structure was taken down in 1704, and a new Cross was erected in stead of it on the west side of the Square, on the site of the ancient Tollbooth, by Elizabeth Smith and George Atkinson, who then farmed the market of the Corporation; and in consideration of the expence which they incurred in erecting the Cross, they had their lease renewed for a term of twenty-one

years, at a rent of £22. per annum. This building in time became not only useless, but a nuisance, as it was a harbour for idle and dissolute persons, and a source of continual disturbance in the neighbourhood. A number of the inhabitants of that part of the City raised, by subscription, £100., in order to purchase from the Corporation their market right in the Cross, and to take it down. It was consequently removed in July, 1815. The statue of George II., which is placed over the entrance of the Guild Hall, formerly decorated the Cross in Thursday Market, and was removed to its present situation in 1786. Drake tells us that a market used to be held in the Thursday Market Place every Friday, for the sale of linen cloth and linen yarn; hence the use of the yard-wand mentioned above.

The *Fish Market* is a covered building at the west end of St. Sampson's Church. Before its erection the salt-water fish market was held in Fossgate, and previously it was held on Foss Bridge, and in Walmgate. The fresh-water fish market was formerly held at a place called Salter-hole-gresses, or Grecian steps, at the east end of the old Ouse Bridge. Supplies of fish from Scarborough, Bridlington, and the eastern coast, arrive daily.

The *Hay Market* was formerly held in King's Square, but in 1827 it was removed to Peaseholme Green, where it continues to be held every Thursday. The present weighing machine was erected by the Corporation.

CIVIL GOVERNMENT OF THE CITY.—Respecting the mode of government adopted by the Britons in their Cities little is known. Under the Roman government in Britain, York was governed in all respects like Rome itself. During the Saxon period the Kings of Northumbria had their residence in York; but when Edwin became Monarch of England, he changed the Government from a Kingdom to an Earldom. York is at present a City and County in itself, having exclusive jurisdiction, and is the second City in rank in the Kingdom, though it is now surpassed in wealth and population by many of the more modern trading towns in the County. The City of York claims to be a Corporation by prescription. The first charter bestowed upon the inhabitants, or at least the earliest charter extant, or on record, is one of Henry II., without date, in which a charter, granted by Henry I., is referred to. Richard I., in the first year of his reign (1189), granted the citizens of York an exemption from toll and all customs in England and Normandy; and King John, in the first of his reign (1199), gave them a charter, ratifying all former privileges, and conferring the City on the inhabitants, subject to a fee farm rent of £160. Confirmatory charters were also granted by Henry III., Edward II., Edward III., and Richard II.; confirmations or new grants of charter rights, were obtained from almost every subsequent Monarch to

Charles II. In the 9th of Henry VIII. (1518), by letters patent, a *Common Council* was established as part of the Corporation; and a charter, 7th of Charles I. (1633), first introduced the election of eighteen members of this Council from each of the four wards, into which the City was then divided. The governing charters previous to 1835 were the 16th of Charles II. (1669); and another, 10th of George IV. (1829), in consequence of circumstances arising, which prevented the fulfilment of the charter of Charles II. Before the passing of the Municipal Act, the Corporation was styled "The Mayor and Commonalty of the City of York," and it consisted of the Lord Mayor, 12 Aldermen, 2 Sheriffs, 32 ex-Sheriffs, who were commonly called the "Twenty-four," 72 Common Councilmen, a Recorder, 2 City Council, a Town Clerk, 2 Coroners, and some inferior officers. The Lord Mayor, Aldermen, Sheriffs, and the "Twenty-four," constituted what was designated the Upper House; and the Common Councilmen sat in a chamber by themselves, and formed the Lower House. The Lord Mayor and Sheriffs were elected annually; the Aldermen and Common Councilmen were elected for life. The Lord Mayor, by virtue of various grants and Acts of Parliament, was invested with important and extensive powers, and had an allowance for meeting the necessary expenses of his station. Prior to the time of Edward III., this allowance was £50.; in 1735 it was £350.; in 1771, £600.; and in 1812 it was £800. After that period it was reduced to fifty guineas; and the allowance is now altogether discontinued. In very early times the Mayors of York held their office for several years successively. In the reign of Edward III., Nicholas Langton was Mayor for thirteen years, and his son, Sir John Langton, for eight years. No less than twenty of the Chief Magistrates of York have received the honour of Knighthood.

There was formerly an indefinite number of *Freemen*, or persons who were free of the Corporation of the City. This freedom was acquired by birth, apprenticeship, or purchase; and the liberty of opening shops in the City was confined exclusively to these persons. The fine in ordinary cases was £25. The average annual income of the Corporation, derived from rents of real property, fines, &c., was about £4,600. When its functions were transferred to the newly elected Council, there was a debt of £10,500., chiefly contracted for public improvements.

The new Municipal Reform Act came into operation on the 24th of December, 1835. By this Act, as we have already shown, the City was divided into six wards; previously it was divided into four; each ward elects six Councillors, who retain their office for three years only, but are eligible for re-election, and two of whom retire in rotation annually. The Councillors

elect twelve Alderman, who serve for six years; so that the corporate body now consists of a Lord Mayor, twelve Aldermen, and thirty-six Councillors, under the usual corporate style. The Aldermen were formerly chosen out of the wealthier classes of citizens, and were *ex-officio* Justices of the Peace; but they are now only members of the Council, possessing no power or authority above the Councillors. The right of voting for the Councillors is vested in the male ratepayers of the City. The qualification of the Aldermen and Councillors consists in the clear possession of property to the amount of £500., or being rated to the relief of the poor upon the annual value of £15.

As we have just observed, under the old system, the Mayor, Aldermen, Sheriffs, and "Twenty-four," met in a chamber separate from the Councilmen; hence the two divisions were called the Upper and Lower House. Under the Municipal Act, the entire body meet in one place. The Corporation are charged with the management and protection of the City to the fullest extent; though under a local Act, 6th Geo. IV., cap. 15, a Board of Commissioners was appointed to superintend the lighting, paving, and cleansing of the streets, the recent Health of Towns' Act, abolished the Board of Commissioners, and their duties now devolve upon the Corporation, who are constituted by the said Act, the Local Board of Health, and whose powers are now greatly extended.

Under the Municipal Act, this Borough is included in schedule A, amongst those to have a Commission of the Peace, which has accordingly been granted; and in section B of that schedule, amongst those, the municipal boundaries of which were to be taken till altered by Parliament. The boundary of the old Borough, Municipal and Parliamentary, differs little either from that of the new Parliamentary Borough, or from that laid down on the map of the Municipal Boundaries Report; the two latter being only somewhat extended further on the north and the south-east sides of the City.

At what time the title of Mayor was conferred on the Chief Magistrate of this City, cannot now be ascertained. By ancient prescription he assumes the title of *My Lord* in all writings, or in speaking to him, the same as the Mayor of London; which peculiar honour, as we have already seen at page 144 of this volume, was conferred by King Richard II., whilst on a visit to York in 1389, when he took his sword from his side, and presented it to be borne before William de Selby, the Mayor of that day, and his successors in office for ever, with the point erect, except in the presence of the King. The Mayors of York and London are the only chief magistrates in England who have received the title of *Lord*, and it is worthy of notice that this civic honour was conferred on this City previous to London.

In 1393 the same Monarch (Richard II.) presented Robert Savage, the then Lord Mayor, with a large gilt mace, to be borne before him, and a Cap of Maintenance to the sword-bearer. The *Lord Mayor* was formerly chosen annually from the Aldermen, on the 15th of January, and entered on his office on the 3rd of February; now he is chosen from the body of the Council, and his election takes place on the 9th of November. This office is of great trust and importance. Within his own jurisdiction he is surpassed by none in rank and power except the Queen and the presumptive heir to the Crown; and the Commission of Assize for the City is granted conjointly to the Lord Mayor and Judge. The Lord Mayor resides in the Mansion House during his year of office, and if he be married, his wife is dignified with the title of the Lady Mayoress, and in addressing her, the term "My Lady" is applied. In Drake's time though the husband parted with both honour and title at the time he was divested of office; yet by the courtesy of the citizens of York her ladyship still enjoyed her title, by no other right, perhaps, but that of an old rhyming proverb, which we find in Dugdale:—

"The Lord Mayor is a Lord for a year and a day,  
But the Lady Mayoress is a Lady for ever and aye."



This courtesy towards the Lady Mayoress has, however, now ceased; and at the expiration of her husband's year of office, the term My Lady is dropped, unless she is previously entitled to it by birth or marriage.

The Lord Mayor, on all public occasions, appears habited in a scarlet robe, with a massy gold chain hung round his neck. Formerly at the Sessions of the Peace he was supreme, but now the Recorder is sole judge of that Court. Under the old regime no law could pass the Corporation without the concurrence and approval of the Chief Magistrate; but he is now deprived of that authority, and instead of being, as formerly, a Justice of the peace for life, he can only act in a magisterial capacity during his mayoralty and the year following. The Lady Mayoress also possesses a *chain of office*, with which she is duly and formally invested by the Sheriff upon inauguration; for which office he, by custom, claims, and receives too, a salute from her ladyship.

Mr. Alderman Richard Town, who, according to Mr. Davies, occupied the antique looking house at the corner of Lendal, in 1716, gave a staff of honour, made of Indian wood, tipped with silver, which had been taken in battle from some Eastern potentate, to the Corporation, their previous staff having become very much worn. This staff is a symbol also presented annually to the Lady Mayoress by the Sheriff.

The Aldermen, too, appear on all public occasions in scarlet robes; and

the Sheriff in a black robe. And that historic relic, the *Cap of Maintenance*, given by Richard II., as we have seen at page 145, is worn by the sword-bearer on all occasions of ceremony.

The *Recorder* is appointed by the Crown, and is the particular guardian of the privileges of the citizens, and the preserver of the ancient records and charters. He is *ex-officio* a Justice of the Peace; has precedence next after the Lord Mayor; is sole Judge at the Quarter Sessions of the Peace; and presides as Assessor at the Sheriff's Court. He is the public orator of the corporate body, and in the Council Chamber he sits on the right of the Lord Mayor, to render his counsel and advice when required.

Previously to the passing of the Municipal Act there were *two Sheriffs* of the City of York, but since that period there has been but one, who is annually chosen on the 9th of November by the City Council. The Sheriff has charge of the prisoners of the County of the City, and he is the returning officer at the parliamentary elections. The office was originally instituted by King Richard II., who, in 1396, constituted the City a County of itself, and gave authority to elect two Sheriffs (in lieu of the three Bailiffs formerly appointed), who, with the Mayor, should have cognizance in all pleas and actions within the limits of the City. From the time of the institution of the office till the year 1836, a period of 440 years, the two Sheriffs had a double function to exercise, ministerial and judicial, as they executed and made returns of all processes and precepts of the Courts of Law, and had authority to hold several Courts of a distinct nature. They had also the care of all debtors and felons confined in the County of the City; and after they had served the office, they continued, as before observed, members of the "Upper House," under the title of the "Twenty-four," though they generally exceeded that number. The Sheriff of the City, under the existing law, takes no part in the deliberations of the City Council.

The *Town Clerk* is appointed by the Council, and attends its meetings to record the proceedings; he has also a great variety of other onerous and important business to transact. Formerly it was necessary for the appointment of a Town Clerk to be approved by the Crown, but that is no longer essential.

The *Coroner* is chosen by the City Council; but that appointment was formerly in the freeholders of the County of the City.

The *City Treasurer*, and several inferior officers, are elected by the Council, and the appointment of *Auditors* and *Assessors* is vested in the citizens.

There was formerly an officer called the *Lord High Steward of the City*, who was considered the City's advocate with the King. Among those who have filled this office were George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham, appointed



in 1678, and the Earl of Derby, appointed in 1688. With this nobleman the office became extinct.

The *Arms of the City* are argent, on a cross gules—St. George's cross—five lions, passant-quondant, Or. The five lions with which the cross is charged, it is said were added by William the Conqueror, in honour of five heroic Magistrates, viz.:—Sir Robert Clifford, Houghtate, Talbot, Lassels, and Erringham, who so valiantly defended the City against his arms in 1070, till famine obliged them to surrender, that he determined thus to honour them for their courage and bravery. But however poetic this tradition may appear, it must vanish before the fact that armorial bearings have not been used till after the reign of William I.

The Seal of the Corporation is of a circular form. The obverse has St. Peter, with his keys, between two angels holding candles. Legend, *S' B—J. Petri. Principis. Apostolor.* The reverse represents a fortified town, with a legend, *Sigillum. CIVIVM. Eboraci.*

The following are the chief officers of the Corporation for the present year, 1857.

The Right Honourable Edward Richard Anderson, *Lord Mayor.*

Charles Heneage Elsley, Esq., *Recorder.*

Richard Welch Hollon, Esq., *Sheriff.*

*Aldermen.*—The present Lord Mayor, and George Leeman, James Meek, James Meek, Jun., William Hudson, Joseph Rowntree, William Richardson, George H. Seymour, John Wood, Richard Evers, Robert Henry Anderson, and J. M. Butterfield, Esquires.

Henry Richardson, Esq., *Town Clerk and Clerk of the Peace.*

The *City Magistrates* are, the Lord Mayor for the time being, and the year following that of his mayoralty, and James Barber, Thomas Barstow, James Meek, Leonard Simpson, Thomas W. Wilson, John Swan, John Robert Mills, James Chadwick, Robert Davies, George Dodsworth, Thomas Gregory, George Wilson, and William Charles Anderson, Esquires. Mr. Joseph Munby is their Clerk.

The Magistrates of the City are Justices of the Peace, and act under a Commission from the Crown. They are a distinct body from the Aldermen.

*FRANCHISE.*—York returns two members to Parliament. The franchise was conferred at a very early period, though the precise time is uncertain; but *Civitas Eborum* occurs at an early date in the Parliamentary rolls. Since the 49th of Henry III. (1265) it has regularly returned two members to Parliament. Under the old Corporation the right of voting for members of Parliament for the City was confined to the freemen. In 1784 there was a severe contest at York, at which about 2,000 persons voted. In 1835, according to the Corporation Commissioners' Report, there were 2,400 resident freemen, and 1,300 non-resident, making a total of 3,700. The Reform Act

of 1832 reserved the rights of resident freemen to a certain extent, and the right of election was extended to the £10. householders. The present constituency numbers about 4,800. Under the old Corporation York was always accounted a whig borough, but the opposite party was generally strong enough to obtain a share in the representation. The present members for the City (returned at the General Election in the present year, 1857) are J. P. Browne-Westhead, Esq., and John George Smythe, Esq. York is the principal polling place, and the place of election for the Members of Parliament for the North Riding; the nomination is held in the Castle Yard.

**STRAYS.**—The freemen of York still possess the exclusive right of pasturing their cattle free on the different strays belonging to the four ancient wards of the City, and those whose means will not allow them to possess stock, have the privilege of disposing of this privilege to non-freemen. The strays, which are large tracts of land on each side of the suburbs, are as follows:—

*Micklegate Stray*, situated without Micklegate Bar, on the London road, consists of the commons called Knavesmire, Scarcroft, and Hob Moor, containing together about 440 acres. The York races are held on Knavesmire; and the ancient place of execution, formerly called the *York Tyburn*, and more recently *Gallows Hill*, is included in this common. Though the rising ground upon which the gallows used to be erected has been levelled, its site on the road side, near the boundary of the City is well known. The criminals were conveyed in a cart from York, surrounded and followed by immense multitudes; and this barbarous custom, with its brutal concomitants, disgusting to the feeling mind, was continued till August, 1802, when the new drop was erected behind the Castle. Our great grandfathers were not indulgent with those offenders whom they happened to capture, the laws in the time of George II. being enacted not for the purpose of reforming but of removing the prisoner altogether from this world. Upwards of forty crimes were then capital, and in London from 1749 to 1771, 678 persons were hanged, and 302 in the following eight years. Even so late as 1813, fifteen were executed in one day at York, only two of whom were guilty of murder.\* Whipping at the cart tail was another favourite mode of punishment, and this was even done to females.

The piece of ground called *Hob Moor* lies on the opposite side of the road to Knavesmire. On it is a stone figure of a Knight Templar, of the family

\* In the year 1634 John Bartendale, a piper, was executed at York gallows for felony. When he had hung for three quarters of an hour he was cut down, and immediately buried near the place of execution. In the course of the same day a gentleman of the family of Vavasour, of Hesslewood, was riding by and thought he saw the fresh mould

of Ross, as appears by his shield. This image was formerly recumbent, perhaps in some of the Churches of York, but it is now erect, and exhibits on the back the following inscription, partly defaced:—

“This image long Hob's name has bore,  
Who was a Knight in time of yore,  
And gave this Common to the Poor.”

Underneath are the names of the pasture masters who erected it, in 1717; also, the later date of 1757. In speaking of this figure Mr. Gough says, “It was probably removed from the ruins of Kirkstall or Rievaulx Monastery (where the Rosses were buried till the middle of the fifteenth century); it is placed,” he continues, “on a pedestal, on a piece of ground without the City of York, called Hob Moor, and is said to have been given to the City by one Hob, who was perhaps Robert I., lineal ancestor of John, and a great benefactor to the Knights Templars.” When the plague raged in York in the sixteenth century, a number of infected persons were sent out of the City to Hob Moor, where tents were erected for their accommodation.

*Bootham Stray* is on the north side of the City, on the Helmsley road, and contains about 176 acres. It is crossed twice by the Scarborough Railway.

*Monk Ward Stray* consists of about 132 acres on Heworth Moor, on the Malton road.

*Walmgate Stray* is situated on Low Moor, without Walmgate Bar, on the Heslington road, and consists of about 76 acres. These strays are managed by pasture masters, (four for each ward) elected annually by the freemen.

COURTS OF JUSTICE.—The Courts of Assize for the City and County of the City, are opened by the Judges on the Northern Circuit, under a separate Commission, on the same day as the Assizes for the County. The City Assizes are held in the *Guild Hall*, on which occasions the Lord Mayor sits on

move, and with the assistance of his servant he removed the earth, and released the buried convict from the grave. The gentleman conveyed him to York Castle, and obtained for him a reprieve till the next Assizes, when he obtained a free pardon. Bartendale was afterwards ostler at an inn in the City, and for several years led an honest respectable life. Barnaby, in his *Book of Travels into the Northern Parts*, thus humourously alludes to this circumstance—the original Latin being paraphrased by Gent.

Here a piper apprehended,  
Was found guilty and suspended.  
Being led to the fatal gallows  
Boys did cry, where is the bellows?  
Ever must thou cease thy tuning!  
Answered he, for all your cunning,  
You may fail in your prediction.

Which did happen, without fiction.  
For cut down, and quick interred,  
Earth rejected what was buried;  
Half alive or dead he rises,  
Gets a pardon next Assizes;  
And in York continues blowing,  
Yet a sense of goodness showing.

the bench on the Judges' right hand. The Assizes for the County take place in the *County Hall*, in the Castle yard. The York City and County Assizes are generally held in the months of March and July; and there is a general gaol delivery, usually called the Winter Assizes, in the month of December. The present Clerk of Arraignment, or Assizes, is Sir John Bailey, Bart., and his deputy is C. J. Newstead, Esq.

*Quarter Sessions* for the City are held in the Guild-Hall, before Charles Heneage Elsley, Esq., the Recorder, in the months of January, April, July, and October. All offences, not capital, may be disposed of by this Court.

*Petty Sessions* for the County are held every fortnight, in the Clerk of Assizes' room, over the entrance to the Castle. The County Magistrates preside at this Court. The Lord Mayor and one of the Justices hold *Petty Sessions* in the Magistrates' room, at the Guild-Hall, on Mondays, Thursdays, and Saturdays; and the City Magistrates sit daily in the same place, for the dispatch of police business.

The *York City Court of Record* is, or rather may be, held in the Guild Hall, at intervals of not less than two months. This Court takes cognizance of actions of every description, and damages may be recovered to any amount. The Recorder of the City is Judge, and he appoints a deputy.

The *County Court of Yorkshire* is held at the Guild-Hall once a month. The jurisdiction of this Court extends to the recovery of debts, damages, or demands, when the amount sought to be recovered does not exceed £50.; and actions may be brought in it to recover debts of every description, not exceeding that sum. The Judge is Alfred Septimus Dowling, Esq., Serjeant-at-law; and there are several deputy Judges.

The *Insolvent Debtors' Court* is held monthly in the *Nisi Prius* Court, York Castle, before the Judge or deputy Judge of the County Court.

The *Ecclesiastical Courts* of the Archbishop of York have extensive jurisdiction; they are held in one of the vestries of the Cathedral, and the records are very curious and valuable.

To the Corporation belongs the conservancy of the rivers Aire, Derwent, Don, Ouse, Wharfe, and some parts of the Humber; and a Court is occasionally held for the arrangement of matters connected with these rivers.

**PUBLIC INSTITUTIONS, BUILDINGS, &c.**—*Guild Hall*.—This fine old Gothic building, which stands behind the Mansion House, in Coney Street, was erected in the middle of the fifteenth century, by the Mayor and Commonalty of the City, in concert with the Master and Brethren of the Guild of St. Christopher. This Guild was founded by the authority of letters patent from Richard II., granted to Robert Dalhey and other citizens at

York, Martii 12, anno regni 19. The Chapel of the Guild formerly stood where the present Mansion House has been erected. In the year 1445 we find the Guild of St. Christopher agreed to build a new hall, with pantry, buttery, and other appurtenances, and in the year following the building was commenced. The interior of the building was not finished in 1496, for Thomas Chapman, rather than be master of the Guild, agreed to pay a fine of £10., and gave one hundred wainscots for the roof, and forty more were given by two other worthies, for the same purpose. Another brotherhood, called the Guild of St. George, was afterwards added to the fraternity of St. Christopher, and by letters patent, from Henry VI., dated at Westminster, in the 25th year of his reign (1446), and addressed to William Craven and other citizens, the said Guilds were possessed of power to purchase lands and tenements to a certain amount, and to make and adopt rules and regulations relative to the disposal of their revenues, for the support of their common hall, for repairing and maintaining certain bridges and highways in and near the City, and for the relief of the poor. In less than a century after the foundation of the hall was laid—the 3rd of Edward VI.—the united Guild was dissolved, and their messuages, tenements, &c., in York and other places, were granted to the Mayor and Commonalty of the City of York, and to their successors; and the common hall of those ancient religious Guilds was then converted into the Guild-Hall of the legislators of the City.

The entrance to the building is by folding doors at the east end—the west end fronts the river Ouse. Over the doors is a large pointed window of five lights, in the centre of which is a statue of George II., which formerly decorated the Cross in Thursday Market, and was removed to its present situation in 1796. The interior of the hall is very imposing—indeed it is one of the finest Gothic rooms in the Kingdom. It measures 96 feet in length, 43 in width, and to the centre of the roof, 29 feet 6 inches in height.

The roof, which is composed of oak, and decorated with numerous grotesque figures, carved in bosses, is supported by ten octagon oak pillars, on stone bases; each pillar twenty-one feet nine inches high, by five feet nine inches in circumference, though severally cut out of one single tree; and from their capitals spring the arches of the roof. These pillars divide the apartment into three aisles. The hall is lighted by several good plain Perpendicular windows; that at the west end, which is of five lights, being filled with beautifully stained glass, representing the Royal Arms in the centre, and the figures of *Justice* and *Mercy*—the former with the motto “*Cuique suum,*” and the latter “*Miseris succurro.*” In the lower compartment are exhibited the Arms of the City, the sword and mace, &c., with the date 1682. The whole

was executed by Edmund Gyles, a citizen of York. There are also a few good specimens of stained glass in some of the other windows. At the east end of the hall is a very large and valuable picture of St. Paul pleading before King Agrippa, painted by R. Marsden, and presented to the Corporation of York, in 1852, by the Rev. T. H. L. Fox, "from a feeling of attachment to, and in memory of, the former connection of his family with this City."

On the north side of the hall a handsome oak bracket projects, from which is suspended a very valuable and curious bell, which was captured from the Great Pagoda, at Rangoon, at the storming of that City, on the 14th of April, 1852, and presented to the City of York by the 51st Light Infantry, or Yorkshire West Riding Regiment. A small marble tablet inserted in the wall records the above facts, and that the Corporation of York placed it in the Guild Hall, as a trophy of the distinguished services of that gallant regiment, on that and other occasions during the Burmese war.

The west end of the hall is fitted up as a Court, in which are held the Assizes and Quarter Sessions of the City. The hall is likewise used for meetings of the citizens on all matters of public business, and formerly the nomination and polling for Members of Parliament took place in it. Here also was given the grand banquet to Prince Albert and the Lord Mayor of London, in aid of the Great Industrial Exhibition of 1851. (See page 277.) At the back or west end of the hall, and overlooking the river Ouse, is the *Justice Room*, or *Petty Sessions Court*, where the Lord Mayor and City Magistrates sit to adjudicate cases brought before them by the police. This room was neatly wainscotted with oak, in 1670, at the expense of Sir John Hewley, one of the representatives of this City in Parliament, and there is yet an inscription over the fire-place to that purport. The roof is in panels, with coloured bosses bearing shields. The back of the Lord Mayor's chair bears a carved oak shield, which is charged with the Arms of the City, and surmounted by a carving in wood of the ancient Cap of Maintenance. Indeed the room is entirely in the antique style, and it is perhaps the most strikingly fitted up room of the kind in the Kingdom.

In one of the windows is a piece of painted glass, exhibiting a beautiful representation of Justice drawn in a triumphal car, the gift of the artist, the late Mr. Peckitt of York. It was placed in its present position in 1754, when the Corporation presented the talented artist with the freedom of the City. Here are deposited the musketry of the City, calculated to equip four companies of seventy men each, first raised by the City in consequence of the rebellion in 1745. (See page 268.) A part of St. William's Chapel on Ouse

Bridge was formerly occupied as the *Council Chamber*, and when that building was taken down in 1810, a new wing was added to the Guild Hall, in order to supply the deficiency thus occasioned. This wing contains the apartments used for the meetings of the Corporation, a *Record Room*, and other offices, all of which overlook the Ouse; and the elevation of that side, as seen from the river on its opposite bank, is very beautiful. The lower room of this wing is a spacious apartment, formerly the place of meeting of the Common Council of the City, when the Corporation consisted of an "Upper" and a "Lower" House, resembling the Houses of Lords and Commons, and when the Lord Mayor stood towards these assemblies in a similar relation to that of the Sovereign towards the more august assemblies at Westminster. At the upper end of it is an official chair, formerly used by the chairman, with a long oak table and seats for the members of each ward. The room is lighted by five windows, which face the river, and display the Royal and City Arms in painted glass. This is now used as the *City Grand Jury Room*. A broad flight of stone steps leads to the chamber immediately over the one just described, which was the assembly room of the Lord Mayor, Recorder, City Council, Aldermen, Sheriffs, and Gentlemen of the "Twenty-four" or "Upper House;" but which is now the *Council Chamber* of the City. It is equally spacious with the one below, and has been very neatly fitted up, having a state chair for the use of the Lord Mayor, and also a seat on each side for the Recorder, and the City Council or senior Aldermen. These chairs are of Gothic design, surmounted by some elegantly carved spiral work. A table runs down the centre, as in the room beneath, over which are suspended, from a groined ceiling, two neat chandeliers. The windows, which are six in number, overlook the Ouse, and are enriched with much beautifully stained glass, representing the armorial bearings of the City, and of many members of the Corporation. Against the wall, at the lower end of the chamber, is a fine piece of plate glass, painted, gilded, and elegantly framed, and bearing the following inscription:—

"This tablet was emblazoned with the Royal Arms, on the occasion of her Majesty Queen Victoria's visit to York, Friday the 28th of September, 1849, and was afterwards presented to the City Council by James Meek, Esq., Lord Mayor.

In 1855 the Commissioners of Patents presented the City of York with a copy of the whole of the patents in their keeping, with an assurance that copies of all future patents shall be supplied as soon as they are published; the conditions being that the Corporation should provide a suitable place where the public could have access to them for inspection, free of charge. A room in the Guild Hall has been set apart for this purpose.

*Mansion House.*—This stately edifice, the official residence of the Lord Mayors of the City during their term of office, stands at the north end of Coney Street, and was erected from a design of that celebrated amateur artist, R. Boyle, Earl of Burlington, a nobleman who has been immortalized by Pope, in the well-known line—

“Who plants like Bathurst, and who builds like Boyle.”

The site of the present erection was formerly occupied by two old buildings, one of which had been the Chapel of the Guild of St. Christopher, and was afterwards used as a dwelling house and as an inn. Between these two old houses were gates leading to the Guild Hall; but in 1725 the gates were removed and the houses taken down, in order to build the present structure, which was completed the following year at the expense of the Corporation.

The front of the Mansion House has a rusticated basement, which supports four Ionic pilasters, with an angular pediment, in which are placed the Arms of the City, properly emblazoned. The upper part of the building is of brick. In front of the house are iron palisades, with sunk areas to give light to the basement story; and a flight of steps leads up to the entrance, which is by folding doors. On the left of the entrance hall is the dining room, not very spacious, but lofty; and behind is a small drawing room, divided from the other by a temporary wooden partition, which can be removed at pleasure, and the two rooms may thus be thrown into one. From the hall a good staircase leads to the state room, which apartment is 49 feet 6 inches long, and 27 feet 9 inches wide, and occupies the entire length of the front, the ceiling being above the third story of the windows. The entrance is by folding doors, above which there is an orchestra, supported by two large fluted columns. The interior of the room is neatly wainscotted, and its general aspect is good. It is well lighted from the front, by two tiers of windows, containing five each; and in it are also three large brass chandeliers. There are two fire-places in it, one at each end, enriched with variegated marble chimney pieces; and above that, at the upper end, are the Royal Arms, beautifully carved and gilt; whilst at the lower end are displayed the Arms of the City, adorned with the insignia of office.

The *Paintings* on the walls are as follows:—In the entrance hall—a full length of the Duke of Richmond, who, with several other noblemen, left his seat in Parliament, and came to York to pay his duty to Charles I.; in the dining room—a half-length portrait of Alderman Carr, who was a considerable contributor to the stock of plate belonging to the Mansion House; also, two good pictures of York, one having the old, and the other the present



Ouse Bridge in the foreground; and in the little drawing room is an excellent full-length painting of George Hudson, Esq., in his robes as Lord Mayor of York, by Francis Grant, presented to the Corporation by the citizens. Over the chimney-piece is a portrait of Mr. Drake, the historian; and several charters, which have been granted to the Corporation, are united in one frame, which hangs against the wall in this room. In the state room are the following full-length portraits, all in elegant frames, and nearly equal in size, each being about nine feet high and five feet eight inches wide:—*George II.*, presented by the Marquis of Rockingham to the Rockingham Club, at York, in 1757, and, with their approbation, placed in this room in 1783; *William III.*, also presented by the Marquis of Rockingham, and suspended in this room at the same time; *Sir John Lister Kaye*, who served the office of Lord Mayor in 1737; *Lord Bingley*, who was Lord Mayor in 1707; the *Marquis of Rockingham*, presented to the Corporation, by Earl Fitzwilliam, in 1783; *Lord Dundas* (Lord Mayor), painted by John Jackson, Esq., R.A., in 1822; *Sir W. M. Milner, Bart.* (Lord Mayor), painted by Hoppner, at the expense of the Corporation; and *George Prince of Wales* (afterwards George IV.), habited in the robes of the Garter, and accompanied with his black valet. This latter picture, which is by Hoppner, was presented by his Royal Highness, to the Lord Mayor and Commonalty, in 1811.

The plate of the Corporation is most valuable and elegant, the greater part of the collection has been presented at various times, by members of the corporate body.

The *Civic Regalia* consists of two fine swords and the mace, the gold chains worn by the Lord Mayor and Lady Mayoress, the staff of honour, and the ancient Cap of Maintenance, noticed at previous pages. The sword ordinarily used is set in rubies, and is mounted with a large crystal, set transparent. The state sword, only borne before the Sovereign by the Lord Mayor, is double handled, and of great weight, and has a crimson velvet sheath, with gold mountings of griffins; and the mace is of silver gilt. The gold chain worn by the Lord Mayor weighs fifteen ounces, and the weight of that worn by the Lady Mayoress is thirteen ounces.

There being now no salary allowed to the Lord Mayor, the hospitalities of the Mansion House are maintained at his own expense; and the festivities take place in the above-mentioned state room. Part of the open space in front of this mansion was formerly occupied by several old and high houses, which were purchased and taken down in 1782.

In the course of a lecture on the Antiquities of the City, recently delivered at the York Institute, by Robert Davies, Esq., F.S.A., that learned gentle-

man mentioned some circumstances connected with the origin of the Mansion House, which were not generally known, or had since been lost sight of. "In 1724," said he, "we find the Town Clerk representing to the Corporation the importance of having some general repository for books and papers connected with the City, without the necessity of removing them every year to the residence of the Lord Mayor, whereupon it was proposed that they should erect a building suitable for the purpose, and, one which the Lord Mayor for the time being could occupy, the expense of which was not to exceed £1,000. The following year the building was begun, but meantime the original idea of the Town Clerk's was lost sight of—the Mansion House was built, but the repository of documents was forgotten—civic hospitality and good dinners being evidently more thought of than musty parchments. Every Lord Mayor was expected to keep up the character of hospitality during his mayoralty, and in 1724 it was agreed that two dinners a week should be given by future chief magistrates. Nor were the ladies forgotten on some of these occasions, as in 1726 Lady Clark, then Lady Mayoress, gave what was called 'the ladies' feast. It is obvious that the private houses of the Lord Mayors would not be sufficiently commodious to allow of great banquets being given within them, but from the terms 'pantry and buttery,' which we found associated with the Guild Hall, is it clear that it was used for other purposes than those of the Guild, and there is no doubt the great entertainments of the chief magistrates were there given." Mr. Davies referred to the account of certain feasting which took place in September, 1457, when the Earl of Northumberland was in York, and then observed that in 1558 they found the Lord Mayor, Recorder, and other municipal authorities sitting in solemn conclave in their Council Chamber on Ouse Bridge, agreeing, in consequence of the existing dearth, to reduce the number of their sumptuous feasting, amongst which were certain dinners given on specified days to the ladies, who, instead, were only to have a cup of wine after attending the Lady Mayoress to the Minster. The lecturer next referred to the price of provisions in that year, as fixed by the civic powers, stating that a capon could be purchased for 10d., a roasting pig for 10d., six eggs for 1d., a partridge 8d., &c. From the same authority we learn that it was contemplated at one time to build the Mansion House on the site of the large house at the upper end of Blake, adjoining the Theatre, but the parties in possession refused to give up the lease.

*The Judges' House, Lendal.*—This building was erected by Dr. Wintringham, an eminent physician of York (who died in 1748), on the site of the ancient Church, or part of the Churchyard, of St. Wilfrid's parish. In digging

the foundations of the house several cart-loads of human bones were discovered and removed. After the death of Dr. Wintringham, this residence was occupied by another celebrated physician, Dr. Dealtry, or Dawtry, who died in 1778. Part of the kitchen floor originally consisted of sculptured tomb-stones, the remains of the ancient grave yard. The place of residence for the Judges of Assize was formerly in a court in Coney Street, opposite the George Inn, which being very inconvenient for the purpose, the County Magistrates purchased the present residence in 1806, out of the County rates, and appropriated it to the use of the Judges. It is a large brick mansion, with a double flight of stone steps in front, and before it a small court, with trees and shrubs. The exterior has a pleasing effect, although without any pretension to architectural display.

*Assembly Rooms, Blake Street.*—This magnificent structure was designed by the Earl of Burlington, the architect of the Mansion House, and the foundation stone of the building was laid by the Lord Mayor on the 1st of March, 1730. The cost of the site and building (about £5,000.) was raised by subscription shares of £25. each, or double shares of £50. each; consequently the property belongs to a select number of shareholders, and the rooms are only used for the concerts and balls of the nobility and gentry of the City and County. The front entrance was originally by an ascent of a few steps, under a portico resting upon light stone columns, and surmounted by balustrades; but in 1828 a new and elegant facade was erected, from the designs of Messrs. Pritchett and Sons, of York. It consists of a centre and wings, slightly marked; the former is wholly occupied by a handsome portico of four Ionic columns, with a pediment. Under this portico is a spacious doorway with a lintelled head. The wings are recessed with a half Ionic column on each side of a window, and this portion of the building is finished with a balustrade. The vestibule or grand entrance is 32 feet by 21, and 21 feet high: on each side of it is another vestibule, and behind are rooms and offices used for domestic purposes. Behind the right vestibule is a circular apartment, 21 feet in diameter, with a cupola, 45 feet in height.

The Egyptian Hall, or grand Assembly Room, is a magnificent apartment, 112 feet long, 40 feet wide, and 40 feet high. This room is from a design of the celebrated Palladio; the lower part is of the Corinthian Order; and the wall above is supported by forty-four elegant columns and capitals (sixteen on each side of the room, and six at each end), ornamented with a beautiful cornice. The upper part of the building is of the Composite Order, adorned with festoons of oak leaves and acorns. The room is lighted by forty-four windows, which project inward from the lower side walls, and are

supported by the same number of pilasters. Behind the columns a passage runs round the room, and in the walls of it are forty-five recesses. Dr. Smollett, in the second volume of his "Expedition of Humphrey Clinker," pays this room the following compliment:—"The Assembly Room seems to me to have been built upon a design of Palladio, and might be converted into an elegant place of worship; but it is indifferently contrived for that sort of idolatry which is performed in it at present; the grandeur of the fane gives a diminutive effect to the little painted divinities that are adored in it; and the company, on a ball night, must look like an assembly of fantastic fairies revelling by moonlight among the columns of a Grecian Temple."

Adjoining this is the lesser assembly room, 66 feet by 22, and 22 feet high, and which is always used on occasions when the larger one is not required. It is fitted up with requisite accommodations for the purpose, and at the end of it is a small organ, which, however, is never used. The ceiling is ornamented in stucco. For upwards of a century these rooms were lighted with wax candles, fixed in large glass chandeliers, which were suspended from the top of the rooms. The great facilities afforded of late years by the railways to parties desirous of attending the large balls, annually given by the Yorkshire Hunt Club and the Yeomanry Cavalry, &c., have caused the directors to give their attention to the more efficient lighting and ventilating the rooms. Within the last few years the glass chandeliers have been removed from the large room, and a continued series of gas lights arranged above the cornice, as also a row of projecting gas lights, with glass globes, round the lower part of the room. This extremely brilliant illuminating power gives to the room an amount of light far beyond conception, and renders it a most beautiful spectacle. Three large ventilators have also been placed in the roof of the room, the effect of which is to render it comparatively cool when containing from eight to nine hundred persons. The building stands near the site of the ancient parish Church of St. Wilfrid. A few years ago, when the floor of the large room was relaid, several portions of an ancient porch, which from the remains must have been nearly as fine as that of St. Margaret's Church, York, were found near the base of some of the columns which decorate the room; and which, in all probability, belonged to St. Wilfrid's Church. A large circular stone well, supposed to be of Saxon construction, was also discovered in the centre of the same room, and from it the building is supplied with very fine water.

The assemblies at these rooms are now very well attended, though they were much exceeded by those of the close of the last century, when York was the metropolis of the north, and the centre of attraction.

*Festival Concert Room*, Museum Street.—The Assembly Rooms not being sufficiently large for the great audiences that usually attended the grand evening concerts of the Yorkshire Musical Festivals, it was resolved to erect a new concert room, so that the public may be well accommodated, and those charities, to whose benefit the funds of the festivals were appropriated, might not continue to suffer loss. The foundation stone of the building was laid on the 28th of July, 1824, by the Rt. Hon. William Dunsley, Lord Mayor, and the cost of the erection was defrayed chiefly out of the proceeds of the festival of the preceding year. The structure is spacious and elegant, and stands behind the Assembly Room, with which it is connected by a pair of folding doors, which are thrown open on extraordinary occasions. The internal dimensions of the room are 95 feet in length, 60 feet in breadth, and 45 feet in height, exclusive of the orchestra, which occupies a semi-circular recess at one end, and will accommodate 144 performers. A gallery 20 feet deep fills the other end of the room. When filled, the room will hold about 2,000 persons, without the orchestra. The walls are coloured a pale straw tint, and at intervals occur Ionic pilasters, which support a superb frieze, modelled after the antique, by Rossi. The ceiling is designed in panels, and has a tasteful appearance. A cast of the *Apollo* stands upon the landing of the gallery steps. Since the discontinuance of the musical festivals, this room has chiefly been used for concerts, balls, and public meetings. The entire property of the room is vested in the hands of trustees for the benefit of the York County Hospital, and the Infirmaries of Leeds, Hull, and Sheffield.

In the month of October, 1856, a three days' Musical Festival took place in this Concert Room, it being at that time more than twenty years since a musical entertainment had been given in York on the same scale; and though it was not equal to those great festivals held in the Cathedral in former days, and which are noticed at page 429 of this volume, yet such arrangements were made as afforded an unusual treat to the music loving public. The entertainments were under the patronage of the Lord Mayor of the City, and several of the nobility and gentry of the County, and the Oratorios produced were *The Creation*, *The Messiah*, and *Eli*. The orchestra consisted of about two hundred persons, and a powerful organ was erected for the occasion. The profits of the second day's Oratorio, upwards of £30., were appropriated in aid of the York County Hospital.

The *York Choral Society*, an Association of amateurs, are tenants of the Festival Concert Room for a specified number of evenings in the year, when their concerts take place. The musical performances of this Society have for several years been amongst the most delightful amusements connected with the City.

The Society was instituted in 1833, and its sole object is the performance of vocal and instrumental music. Meetings for practice take place once a week, and four public concerts are given in each year. Every member subscribing 5s. per ann., receives two tickets for each concert; and subscribers of 10s. per ann. have four tickets for each concert. Performing members do not pay anything, and they receive two tickets each for every concert. The concerts are of a mixed character—one part being sacred and the other miscellaneous—and professional talent, vocal and instrumental, is engaged according to circumstances. The Society numbers about three hundred members, amongst whom are the Archbishop of York, the Hon. Lady Musgrave, Lord Wenlock, the Dowager Lady Wenlock, the Dean of York, and most of the gentry of the City and neighbourhood.

*Theatre Royal.*—The present Theatre, which is a curious looking brick building, was first opened in the month of January, 1765, by Mr. Baker, the predecessor, and afterwards the partner, of Mr. Tate Wilkinson. It was erected on the site of a more ancient building, in which theatrical representations were exhibited. Mr. Wilkinson afterwards procured a Royal Patent for it, and conducted the establishment with much credit to himself, till his death, in 1805. During his life this theatre was second only to the great national theatre in Drury Lane, London, and a great many of the best actors, who at different times have adorned the London stage, were reared on the York "boards." The late celebrated Charles Mathews was one of the most illustrious of these, and one of the most interesting parts of the Memoir of that great *artist*, published by his widow, relates to the period when he was a member of Mr. Wilkinson's Company.

The present front towards St. Leonard's Place (the entrance to the boxes), with its arcade, was erected on the formation of that beautiful crescent. Previously the only entrance was from the top of Blake Street, through the present doors which lead to the pit and gallery. That part of the building abutting on St. Leonard's Place, stands upon an ancient stone vault, supposed by some to be part of the remains of St. Leonard's Hospital, and by others to be one of the crypts of St. Peter's Church, which was destroyed by fire in King Stephen's reign, A.D. 1137.

The interior of the Theatre, which is spacious, has been several times remodelled, and for its size is now one of the prettiest play-houses in the Kingdom. The York Theatrical circuit includes Leeds and Hull, and the "season" usually commences here in March; but the Theatre is also open in the race and other public weeks. The house adjoining the old entrance to the theatre was formerly the residence of the manager.

The large house at the upper end of Blake Street, near the Theatre, was erected by Sir William Robinson, Bart., an ancestor of the present Earl de Grey, who was then representative of York in Parliament. In front are the Arms of the City, which were placed there by Sir William, merely on account of his holding the ground by lease from the Corporation.

*Yorkshire Club House.*—The "Yorkshire Club," for the nobility and gentry of the County, was established in 1835, and the Club House, which is a handsome building, is in the centre of the crescent called St. Leonard's Place. The Club numbers about 250 members; the entrance fee of each member is ten guineas, and the annual subscription is £5.

*De Grey Rooms.*—This building is also in St. Leonard's Place, and is the property of a Joint Stock Company, with a capital of £5,000., in £25. shares. The Company was formed in 1841, and the building commenced forthwith. It is chiefly intended for the accommodation of the mess of the Officers of the Yorkshire Hussars, during the annual visit of that regiment to York, and the Barristers' ordinary at the Assizes, but it is often used for concerts, balls, public entertainments, and meetings. A large number of the shares are held by the officers of the regiment, and the gentlemen of the northern circuit.

The exterior of the house is handsome, the principal story having seven tall circular-headed windows, in front of which a parapet and an iron balustrade runs the whole length of the building. The principal room is a very fine apartment, partly lighted from the top. There is an orchestra at the end of it, and from the wall hangs a fine whole length painting of Earl de Grey, in full costume, as Colonel of the Yorkshire Hussars.

The *County Gaol*, commonly called *York Castle*, occupies, as we have shown at page 337, the site of an ancient fortress, which was converted into a County prison after it ceased to be a military post. Previous to the alterations which commenced in 1826, the entrance to the Castle was by folding doors, and a porter's lodge, from Castlegate, on the north side of Clifford's Tower, and a stone, with the City Arms carved thereon, might have been seen within twenty yards of the gates to mark the boundary of the City. On the opening of the Assizes, the Sheriffs of York waited here to receive the Judge, and accompany him to the Guild Hall. The present entrance is from Tower Street, at the south side of Clifford's Tower. The great gate of entrance, which is pointed, has a very imposing appearance, being flanked by two massy circular towers, with embattled parapets, loopholes, &c. Over the doorway, in a small panel, are the Royal Arms of George IV., carved in imitation of those of the period of Edward IV. From the top of this structure rises a subordinate square building, with small turrets at the

angles, and the whole has a very bold but yet chaste appearance. The gatehouse, which is fire proof, was erected from the designs of the late P. F. Robinson, Esq., F.S.A.; the first stone having been laid on the 20th of March, 1826, by the Hon. M. Langley, High Sheriff of Yorkshire. The interior of the left hand tower, and the building over the archway are fitted up for a Record room and offices for the Clerk of Assize, &c.; and the Petty Sessions for the three Ridings are held in the office of the Clerk of Assize. The right hand tower is the porter's residence. The lofty and splendid walls, which circumscribe a large area, enclosing the old gaol, Clifford's Tower, &c., were rebuilt at the same time, in a style uniform with that of the gateway, having numerous buttresses at regular intervals, with an embattled parapet. A broad semicircular avenue round the north side of the base of Clifford's Tower, leads to the inner entrance to the Castle yard. The whole of the buildings, the area of Clifford's Tower, and the outer walls, cover nearly eight acres.\* The interior walls of the Castle yard are 1,100 yards in circumference, enclosing a pleasant and open area of about one acre, with a large grass plot in the centre, and a gravel walk entirely round it. The County meetings for the election of Knights of the Shire and other public business are held in this yard, which will contain about 40,000 people. The buildings form three sides of the square, the fourth side being partly formed by the mound upon which stand the ruins of Clifford's Tower.

The *Old Buildings*, which occupy, as we have stated, the site of the towers of the ancient Castle, were completed in 1705; the expense being defrayed by a tax of three-pence in the pound on all lands, &c., in the County of York, in pursuance of an Act of Parliament. This building consists of a centre and two projecting wings, and a handsome turret surmounts the centre of the edifice, with a clock and bell. Until the new buildings were opened, this edifice was the prison for debtors and felons, and also the Governor's apartments and the Chapel; but since then it is set apart exclusively for the confinement of male debtors.

In 1825 the Magistrates of the County purchased and enclosed a considerable space north east of Clifford's Tower, and in the following year the erection of the new prison and the other alterations commenced. The new felons' gaol forms the semi-diameter of a circle, with the Governor's house in the centre, and there is not in England a more handsome or better constructed prison. The Governor's house is an exceedingly neat building,

\* On the Castle Hill, before the building of the new walls, were several gentlemen's houses, one of which was occupied by Sir Henry Thompson, of Escrick, who represented York in four Parliaments in the reign of Charles II.



circular in shape, and so constructed that the whole prison may be inspected from it. The prison consists of four radiating double lines of building, with eight airing courts. To each prisoner is allotted a distinct cell, but there are cells in each ward which will accommodate three prisoners each. The buildings are fire proof, and contrived with great ingenuity to prevent the escape of the persons confined.\* The entire cost of the works was £203,530., and was discharged by an annual rate of 1½d. in the pound during the twelve years the alterations were in progress. York Castle now affords accommodation to about 200 criminal prisoners, and 150 debtors.

The large and handsome building opposite the County Courts contains the Chapel and the female wards, both criminals and debtors. It was erected in 1780, and considerably enlarged three years afterwards. The whole length of this building is 150 feet, and its front is adorned with an elegant colonnade with four Ionic pillars, corresponding to the County Hall. In a small room near the Governor's house, are preserved the curiosities of the Castle, quaintly called *the King's Plate*, consisting of the deadly weapons with which murders have been committed, and the heavy chains of the most notorious malefactors who have been at different times confined in the Castle, and amongst them are the massive irons with which the noted highwayman Dick Turpin was bound. There are also casts, in plaster, of several criminals who were executed here. Mr. John Noble is the present Governor.

The *County Hall* stands on the west side of the entrance to the Court yard. This part of the Castle was built at the expense of the County in 1673, and rebuilt by the same means in 1777. It is an elegant structure of the Ionic order, 150 feet in length and 45 in breadth. The entrance to it is by a portico of four Ionic columns, 30 feet in height, and attached antæ, over which is a pediment, surmounted by a statue of Justice and other emblematical figures. The front corresponds in style, size, and elegance, with the noble building standing opposite to it. The interior is divided into three parts. At the south end is the *Crown Court*, for criminal proceedings; at the north end the *Nisi Prius Court*, for civil business. In the middle is a large vestibule, into which open several supplementary offices. The Courts are, each, crowned with a dome, ten feet high, supported by twelve Corinthian columns.

\* The gaols of England in former times were very different to the prisons of the present day. The prisoners were confined in dark, damp, unwholesome dungeons, icy cold in winter, and almost stifling in summer, with bad food and water; and it was not unusual for a fever to break out in these horrible places, such as that which at Oxford, in 1677, swept away at the Assizes, the Judge, the High Sheriff, the chief of the Jurors, and about three hundred other persons. A scourge of a similar nature happened at Cambridge in 1522; and another at the Old Bailey, London, in 1750.

Behind the Grand Jury room is the place for the execution of criminals, where a temporary scaffolding is erected for the purpose. It was first used for the sacrifice of human life to the offended laws, on the 28th of August, 1802; and previous to that date felons, condemned to die, were executed at Tyburn, near the race course. (See page 610).

In 1805 or 1806, the workmen who were preparing to erect the present wall behind the Grand Jury room, discovered the remains of a Roman wall, upon which ancient foundation they raised the new wall. A block of free stone, inscribed *Civitati*, in Norman characters, was also found at the same time, whilst the men were digging a drain, which was supposed to have been a boundary stone, placed there in the reign of the Conqueror.

In the early part of the present year (1857) some workmen employed in digging a drain behind York Castle, turned up the remains of twenty human bodies, the skulls of three or four of which were wanting. They are supposed to be the remains of twenty-one Scottish rebels, ten of whom were executed on Saturday, the 1st of November, 1746, and the remainder on the Saturday following. They were hanged, drawn, and quartered, and a local paper, which was in existence at the time, states that "the whole was conducted with the utmost decency and good order." The heads of two of the culprits were exposed on Micklegate Bar, the head of another was sent to Carlisle in a box for a similar exhibition; and the bodies of the whole of them were buried behind the Castle in which they had been confined.

Though the Assizes for the three Ridings are held there, the Castle is not within any of them, nor is it in the jurisdiction of the City; it is Extra-Parochial, though it is assessed and bears charges to the parish of St. Mary, Castlegate. The present High Sheriff of Yorkshire is Sir Joseph Radcliffe, Bart., of Rudding Park.

The *City House of Correction*, formerly the *City Gaol*, for the use of the City and Ainsty, was erected near the site of the Skeldergate Postern, and close beneath the *Baile Hill*, between the years 1802 and 1807. The gaol for the imprisonment and correction of "lesser criminals," was formerly a part of St. Anthony's Hall, on Peaseholme Green; but in the year 1814 a new House of Correction was completed on Toft Green, at the joint expense of the City and Ainsty. After the latter district was added to the County in 1836, all the committals from that quarter were, of course, made to York Castle, and the gaol on Toft Green was afterwards sold to the Railway Company, for £5,000., and its site is now included in the Railway Station.

A contract has been entered into between the Corporation of the City and the Magistrates of the County, for the custody of the City criminals,

and debtors at the Castle, so that the business at the present gaol is now confined to the safe keeping and correction of persons convicted of minor offences. The executions at this prison, whilst it was used as the City gaol, were happily very rare; but when they did occur, the horrid ceremony took place on a scaffold erected without the wall, next to the Old Baile Hill, and an opening was made in the wall to admit the culprit to pass through. The edifice is entirely of stone, surrounded by a high brick wall. The principal building consists of a centre and wings, the former furnished with a pediment. On the roof is an octagonal turret, with an hemispherical dome and vane. There are cells for the accommodation of seventy prisoners. Mr. Hugh Barrett is the present Governor.

On the east side of the old Ouse bridge stood a *Gaol for Debtors*, which was built in the sixteenth century. In 1724 this gaol, and a small dwelling house adjoining, were purchased by the Corporation. They were immediately taken down, and a more commodious prison erected, but this was removed in 1810, when the present bridge across the Ouse was built. Drake tells us that the high tower of Monk Bar was formerly used as a prison for the freemen of the City.

*Post Office, Lendal.*—This is a plain but commodious brick building, one story in height, erected in 1840. The business of the Post Office was once conducted in Skeldergate. In the reign of George II., the post office was in Coney Street, but in 1764 the business was removed to the first building in Lendal, near the Mansion House, where it continued till the present post office was erected. Mr. Joshua Oldfield is the postmaster. From one of Mr. Davies' lectures we learn the following interesting particulars respecting the transmission of letters from York in former times. In 1536, when the northern rebellion, called the Pilgrimage of Grace, took place, Henry VIII. expressed his annoyance at the slow process by which he received intelligence, and accordingly an arrangement was made, by which the parishes in York were ordered to find horses for the better transmission of letters; and in 1542, four horses were directed to be kept by the four wards of the City for the same purpose. In the reign of Edward VI., the Corporation contracted with a party to find four horses at four pounds a year, or three halfpence a day. It was not however till the reign of Charles I., that the general postal system of the Kingdom was placed on a good footing, though that improvement would appear strange to us in these days of railways and electric telegraphs. Again it was not till 1784, that the change from pack horses to coaches took place, and it is related that the post office clerks used to walk

to Micklegate Bar when the pack horses were later than usual, to listen for the tinkling of their bells.\*

TRADE HALLS.—As has already been observed, there were formerly several trading guilds or fraternities in York, possessing many peculiar privileges, now obsolete. Many of these guilds possessed common halls, and two of them are yet in existence.

The *Merchants' Hall*, or "*Gilda Mercatorum*," York, is situated in Foss-gate, and is the property of "The Merchant Adventurers' Company," originally established in this City at a very early period. This Company being free of the five Hanse towns, enjoyed many valuable privileges on the importation of goods hence; but it has survived all the fluctuations, and the final decline of the foreign commerce of the City. The Reform Bill of 1832 deprived this and all similar fraternities of the remnant of their privileges. The funds of this Company having been extended by several considerable donations, yet exists, but more in the character of a charitable body than that of a Society of Merchants. The ancient seal of the Company is still preserved. It is of brass, and is in fine preservation. It exhibits two figures—one of the Blessed Virgin and the other a personification of Commerce; "thus denoting that the mercantile institution was grafted on one which originally had been monastic." The legend or inscription is as follows:—" *Sigillum Cœnobii hospitaliter fratrum et sororum Beatae Mariæ Virginis Justa Portam Fossæ Ebor.*;" which is thus translated—"Seal of the Monastery of the Brethren and Sisters of the Blessed Virgin Mary, near Foss-gate, York." The *Hall* is of great antiquity, and is stated by tradition to have been built out of the remains of a religious house, called Trinity Chapel. A piece of garden ground behind the building is supposed to have been used as a place of interment; quantities of human bones having been thrown up at various periods. Over the entrance gateway, carved in stone, are the recently restored Arms of the Merchants of the Staple. A flight of stone steps from the court yard leads to the principal rooms in the hall, which consist of two

\* *Post Office Statistics*.—A return has been printed, showing the great increase in the last fourteen years in chargeable letters delivered in the United Kingdom. In 1850 the number was 347,000,000, being an increase on the previous year of 9,500,000. In 1851, 360,500,000; increase, 13,500,000. In 1852, 379,500,000; increase, 19,000,000. And during the year, ending 5th of January, 1854, very nearly 411,000,000 letters were delivered, being an increase of 31,500,000.

The gross revenue of the Post Office department for the last mentioned year was £2,631,944, and the net revenue £1,173,278. The profits of the *Money Order Department* were £14,140. The number of money orders issued during that year was 5,215,290; the number paid was 5,213,065; and the amount paid was £9,920,296.

antique apartments, each 65 feet long, 25 feet wide, and about 14 feet in height, which originally formed one room. The inner room, which is neatly fitted up, and ornamented with several good portraits of different Governors of the Company, as well as a full length portrait of George I., is the one in which the Company holds its quarterly Courts, and breakfast or dine together twice a year; and the other large room is used occasionally for public meetings and exhibitions. On the ground floor is a small Chapel, and a Hospital for ten poor people, called Trinity Hospital. The Chapel was built in 1411, and repaired at various periods. Divine Service is performed in it for the Company on the 26th of March—called the Charter day—and on one or two other days in the year. The Hospital has already been described at page 595 of this volume. The workmanship of this ancient hall is very massy, the walls are of great thickness, and the roof is composed of immense planks of fine old English oak, in excellent preservation. There are records in the chests of the Merchants' Company of as early a date as the reign of King Stephen. Persons serving an apprenticeship of eight years to a "Merchant" of the Company, become members upon payment of some small fees; and others become "Merchant Adventurers," by being elected by ballot, and by paying an entrance fine. There are now about forty members in the Company.

*Merchant Tailors' Hall.*—This building is situated in a court in Aldwark, and belongs to the ancient Company of Merchant Tailors of York; which fraternity now resembles the Merchant Adventurers' Company in every particular; the privileges of the members are merely nominal. They hold meetings in their hall, and on the 20th of June the anniversary of the Company is celebrated, when they elect officers for the ensuing year, and attend a sermon in the Church of St. Crux, which is preached on that day by their Chaplain. The *Hall* is an ancient red brick building, the principal room of which is spacious, and was formerly occupied as a Theatre. It is now used as a National School for girls. This room had formerly an arched wooden roof, now concealed by one of plaster. In the window is a piece of stained glass, representing two angels supporting a bust of Queen Anne, and beneath are the arms of the Company, with the following inscription:—

"This Company had been dignified in the year 1679, by having in their fraternity eight Kings, eleven Dukes, thirty Earles, and forty-four Lords."

The ancient Hospital or Almshouses in connection with this fraternity has been already noticed at page 592 of this volume.

The Merchant Tailors' Company possess some ancient plate, consisting of four pieces of silver, viz., two tankards, a large cup, and a salver.

There is here, as in some other cities, a *Goldsmiths' Company*, which is authorized by Act of Parliament to elect two Wardens annually, and also to appoint an *Assay Master*.

The *Haberdashers' Hall* stood in Walmgate, at the corner of Neutgate Lane, now St. George Street, and was erected by Sir Robert Watter, Knt., who served the office of Lord Mayor in the year 1591 and 1603. He was a member of the Haberdashers' Company, and built the hall for his brethren of the trade to assemble in. It was a very ancient timber building, and after it ceased to be used by the Haberdashers, it was divided and let in small tenements. It was removed a few years ago, when the street was improved and widened. Sir R. Watter founded an Hospital or Almshouse in this locality, which is noticed at page 596 of this volume.

The *Company of Cordwainers* was another of the fraternities which were united at York, for the protection and encouragement of their respective trades. A large and handsome bowl, which belong to them, is now deposited in the vestry of the Minster. (See page 452.) This Company was dissolved in 1808. The Almshouse, called *Maison Dieu*, noticed at 591 of this volume, was connected with it.

**MEDICAL INSTITUTIONS.**—*York County Hospital*, Monkgate.—This institution chiefly owes its foundation to a legacy of £500. left in 1740, by Lady Elizabeth Hastings, “for the relief of the diseased poor of the City and County of York.” This fund being augmented about the same time by other benevolent persons, the Hospital was soon after erected. The building, which stood in Monkgate, having become inadequate to the requirements of the institution—in consequence of the great increase in the population—it was taken down in 1850, and the present Hospital was erected and opened in 1851. It stands several yards to the rear of the spot upon which the old one stood, and is an elegant and extensive range of buildings, four stories in height, with a handsome Italian front. The basement story is of stone, and the remainder of the building is of red brick, with cut stone dressings. The cost of the structure was about £11,000., of which sum £7,000. was raised by subscription in the County, and the remainder was taken from the funds of the charity. The Messrs. Atkinson, of York, were the architects. The interior is perfect in its arrangements, and will accommodate 120 patients. Persons suffering from infectious or contagious disorders are not admitted as in-patients. The number of patients annually admitted into the Hospital is about 500. The annual income of the institution, including real and personal estates, subscriptions, &c., now amounts to about £3,000.

Clinical lectures are given by the physicians and surgeons of the Hospital,

and certificates of attendance on the medical and surgical practice of the Hospital, conjointly with the York Dispensary, are received by the Royal College of Surgeons, and the Society of Apothecaries, London. The government of this institution is vested in the hands of the trustees and governors, who hold quarterly courts in the board room.

The *Medical Library* was established in 1810 by the subscriptions and donations of eighteen members of the medical profession, resident in York, aided by the contributions of several of their fellow citizens, who were friends to the diffusion of medical knowledge. In order to secure the perpetuity of the institution, as well as to avoid the expense of rent and a librarian's salary, it was resolved that the books should be the property of the Trustees of the County Hospital; the office of librarian being, with the consent of the Governors of the Hospital, annexed to that of house-surgeon. The library is regularly enriched by the best medical publications of the day, and it now contains about 1,000 volumes of the most valuable standard medical works, and some of the best and most expensive anatomical plates published. It is under the exclusive management of its subscribers, who must be medical practitioners residing in York. The medical officers of the Hospital enjoy no privileges distinct from the rest, with regard to the use and management of the library. The annual subscription is one guinea.

The *York School of Medicine* was established in 1834, the County Hospital and the York Dispensary being united in its formation. The session is divided into two terms, a winter and a summer term; during which period lectures are delivered to the students in the lecture room of the County Hospital, by several able medical gentlemen resident in the City. The Museum of Anatomy, comprising the collection of the late Mr. James Atkinson, is open to the students daily during the session. Attendance on the course of lectures also qualifies for examination at the Royal College of Surgeons, and at Apothecaries' Hall, London.

The *Medical Society* was founded in 1832, for the advancement and diffusion of medical knowledge. Its meetings are held at the Dispensary on the evenings of every alternate Saturday, from the beginning of October to the end of April. There is a Medical Library in connection with this Society.

*York Dispensary*, New Street.—This institution for the relief of the sick poor was opened in 1788. It is maintained by subscription, and is one of the most efficient and truly useful charities of the City. It was originally conducted in a room in the Merchants' Hall, Fossgate, from whence, in 1806, it was removed to St. Andrewgate, where it continued till the erection of the present building; the foundation stone of which was laid in 1827, by

the late Mr. Alderman Wilson. The cost of the erection was £1,950., including the site, and it was opened in 1828. It is a neat stone edifice, with a small Doric portico of four columns. The interior is well arranged, having a large waiting room, with a lantern light, with the various offices around it. Some of the principal medical men of the City are connected with this Dispensary.

The *Institution for Diseases of the Ear*, Merchants' Hall, Fossgate, which is the only one in the north of England devoted exclusively to the treatment of affections of the organ of hearing, was opened about four years ago, chiefly through the instrumentality of James Allen, Esq., of this City, who is now the Treasurer of the institution. It is supported by voluntary contributions, and gratuitous advice is afforded to the poor every Saturday at noon. Mr. Oswald A. Moore is the surgeon.

The *Institution for Diseases of the Eye*, Merchant Tailors' Hall, Aldwark, was established in 1831, for the relief of the poor, labouring under diseases of the eye. A donor of £5., or an annual subscriber of 10s., has the right of recommending patients, and of voting at general meetings. The medical officers are Dr. Belcombe, physician, and Messrs. Reed and Paley, surgeons.

The *Homeopathic Dispensary*, Bootham, was founded in 1851, for the cure of cases solely on Homeopathic principles. Honorary subscribers have the privilege of sending eight poor patients for every guinea subscribed or contributed annually; or four poor patients for every annual donation of half a guinea.

*Asylum for the Insane*, Bootham.—Established in pursuance of resolutions passed at a County meeting, held in the Castle of York, on the 27th of August, 1772. The original intention was to confine it to pauper lunatics only, or to such as belonged to indigent families. The present site was purchased; a plan was prepared for a building calculated to contain 54 patients; and on the 20th of September, 1777, the building being nearly completed, apartments were opened for ten patients at 8s. per week. At this time there were only four similar institutions in the Kingdom, namely, two in London, one at Manchester, and the other at Newcastle. In August, 1784, it was determined that a limited number of opulent patients should be admitted for the benefit of the institution, and in 1795 an extensive wing was added to the premises. The false principles upon which most of our institutions for the treatment of lunatics were formerly conducted, prevailed in this asylum. In 1813 Mr. S. Tuke published his account of the "Retreat" Lunatic Asylum, and a passage in it, recommending a more mild method of treatment for the insane, than had been generally adopted, was made the subject of a letter



from the physician of this Asylum (Dr. Best), in one of the York newspapers. A public controversy on the subject ensued, which terminated fatally to the physician, though beneficially to the Asylum. An investigation into the alleged abuses of the institution was set on foot, and it soon became evident that but very defective attention was paid to the comfort, clothing, and diet of the inmates, and to the ventilation and cleanliness of the establishment. Whilst the investigation was pending, and whilst public attention was excited towards the institution, a detached wing of the building was accidentally destroyed by fire, on the evening of the 28th of December, 1814. This dreadful calamity was still more affecting, from the circumstance of many of the patients being locked up in their rooms, and from the principal part of the servants being from home; the sad consequence being that four patients, who had been chained to the walls, perished in the flames. The premises were insured in the County Fire Office for the sum of £2,392. A further investigation immediately ensued, which led to the exposure of some shameful and even criminal abuses; and the whole terminated in the dismissal of every servant and officer employed in attending on the patients, the resignation of the physician, and the complete re-organization of the whole establishment, under the direction of the Superintendent of the before-mentioned Retreat; and since that period the institution has been in efficient and prosperous operation, and the rate of mortality has materially diminished. This Asylum, in the bestowal of its charity, is not limited to the upper and wealthier classes, but extends its benefits alike to the reduced and the comparatively indigent. It receives patients suffering under every form and in every stage of mental derangement, and shelters alike the raving maniac of but a few days, and the hopeless imbecile of a score years.

The *Building* is of red brick, and is a handsome structure, three stories high. The ascent to it is by five stone steps; the lowest story is rustic, from which four stone columns are carried up to the entablature, which is finished by a pediment. On the top of the building is an elegant cylindrical bell tower, surrounded with small columns, and surmounted with a cupola and vane. The ground floor comprises six day rooms for the patients, with access to five airing courts adjoining the building; a broad and handsome staircase leads to the two upper stories, in the first of which are two sitting rooms and several bed rooms, ranged on each side of a long gallery. The other story is constructed in the same way, and comprises lodging rooms only. Behind the front building is a small octagon erection, containing the kitchen, and a sitting room for females, and near it is a building containing a series of apartments for female patients, which was erected at a great expense, and

opened in 1817. The house is surrounded by gardens and pleasure grounds, and contains all the modern improvements connected with the treatment of lunacy. The non-restraint system is carried out to a considerable extent; and amongst the usual amusements of the patients are chess, drafts, cards, music, cricket, &c.

At the opening of the Pauper Lunatic Asylum for the North and East Ridings, about thirty paupers were removed to it from this institution, and since that time no pauper lunatic has been an inmate here. The chief officers of this institution are a physician, Dr. Simpson; Medical Superintendent, Dr. Edward Simpson; and Chaplain, Rev. Thomas Richardson. The income of the establishment is derived chiefly from the charge to patients for board, attendance, &c.; from dividends of certain stock in the funds, and from rents. Its management is in the hands of a Committee of Governors.

The *Retreat Lunatic Asylum*, Heslington Road.—This excellent institution was projected by the late Mr. William Tuke, of York, for persons afflicted with disorders of the mind, among the Society of Friends, in consequence of the unsatisfactory treatment and death of one of that persuasion, at an establishment for the insane, during the year 1791. Mr. Tuke was aided in his exertions to establish this Asylum by Lindley Murray, the celebrated grammarian, and several other individuals; and though many objections were raised against a proposal so novel, and considerable difficulties had to be overcome, yet a subscription was at length opened, and a fund was formed for its establishment. In 1794 nearly twenty acres of land were purchased for £2,325., but it being afterwards thought too much, eight acres of it were disposed of for the sum of £968., and the building was commenced on the remaining eleven acres. The Asylum was at first designed solely for the members of the Society of Friends, but has since been extended to others connected with them. In 1796 the house was opened for the reception of patients, and from that time to the present it has uninterruptedly enjoyed the care and interests of the descendants of its projector. Before the opening of this institution the treatment of the insane, in the various asylums, was harsh in the extreme, and it frequently amounted to brutal coercion; but those who have been the supporters and managers of the Retreat have the enviable satisfaction of knowing, that by the gentlest and most amiable means, they have accomplished an amount of good, and conferred a degree of happiness on thousands, which scarcely can be overstated. The Retreat is situated on an eminence, in the purest air, and commanding extensive and interesting prospects over the City and the delightful vale of York.

The *Buildings* are all of brick, and are very extensive as well as imposing.

They have recently undergone extensive alterations and improvements; two of the old wings, which were originally built for the accommodation of the violent patients, have been removed, and replaced by large and handsome structures, embracing every modern improvement in the construction of dwellings for the insane, and calculated to facilitate the carrying out, in a still more complete manner, the principles of treatment adopted from the foundation of the establishment. A new Meeting House too has been recently added. The whole pile of buildings consist chiefly of a centre and four wings, presenting imposing fronts facing both north and south. The airing grounds, gardens, &c., now extend over thirty acres, and the expense of forming the whole establishment has not been less than £80,000. The institution, which embraces all classes of patients "from the labourer to the wealthy gentleman, and from the servant to the sensitive and delicate lady," will now accommodate 120 patients, all of whom, except those of the higher classes, must be members or nearly connected with the Society of Friends. The general management of it is under the care of a body of Directors and a Committee, and the medical officers are Mr. John Kitching, Superintendent, and Mr. Caleb Williams and Dr. D. H. Tuke.\*

*Pauper Lunatic Asylum, Clifton.*—The North and East Ridings of Yorkshire joined in the erection of this institution, and it was opened for the reception of the insane poor of both Ridings in the year 1847. Provision was made for 150 inmates; but in three years afterwards such was the increase in the number of applicants, that the buildings were enlarged so as to make them capable of receiving 312 patients. According to the Medical Superintendent's Seventh Annual Report, there was accommodation for 312 patients, the Asylum was full, and fifteen patients had been refused admittance for want of accommodation. From the same Report we learnt that the land comprises 88A. 1R. 39P., and cost £10,070.; the various buildings, furniture, and original outfit cost £40,079.; making a total of £50,149., which together is at the rate of £160. per patient, for founding the Asylum—a sum which falls considerably short of the average of the seventeen other Asylums of a similar character which have been erected. The average cost of the other Asylums is at the rate of £194. per head. It is to be deplored that in the two Ridings there appears to be a steadily growing increase of lunatic patients, and in consequence of this state of things, the Magistrates, assembled at the Midsummer Sessions, 1855, determined to enlarge the

\* For further particulars of this Institution see the "Description of the Retreat," by Samuel Tuke, 4to., and "The Statistics of the Retreat," 8vo.

building for an increased number of patients, for which purpose £14,500. was voted, making in the whole, accommodation for 472 patients at a total outlay of £64,649. 14s. 10d. The cost upon this number is now reduced to £137. per patient. By the 9th section of the Lunatic Asylum Act, of 1853, the Borough of Richmond is now annexed to the North Riding for the purposes of the insane poor. The Asylum is situated near the village of Clifton, about one mile and a half from the City of York.

The *Buildings*, which form an extensive and handsome pile, in the Elizabethan style of architecture, stand in a garden of above thirty acres, attached to which is a grazing farm of above fifty acres. The grounds are laid down with much taste, and the house is approached by a handsome avenue. The land affords healthy and profitable employment for the inmates, upon whom the occupations of garden and farm labour, and the various diversions of a rural life, are found to be of the most consoling and tranquillizing tendency. The old methods of restraint in the treatment of the insane are dispensed with in this institution, and everything assumes as lively and cheerful an aspect as possible. Besides gardening and farming, the patients are extensively employed in various handicrafts—the males are employed as tailors, shoemakers, bricklayers, masons, blacksmiths, carpenters, wheelwrights, &c.; and the females in sewing, knitting, straw-plaiting, washing, ironing, assisting in the kitchen, and general household duties. The system of keeping the patients to employments adapted to their capacities has been found to act most favourably on their minds, besides the profits of their labours materially diminish their cost to the public. The number of patients under treatment during the year 1856 was 408, and the number of patients in the institution on the last day of that year was 355.

*City Insane Paupers.*—Under the provisions of the above-mentioned Lunatic Asylum Act, it has become imperative on the City of York either to erect a Lunatic Asylum for the reception of their own pauper lunatics, or to enter into an arrangement with some adjoining Asylum, for the reception of those lunatics. It does not appear to be the intention of the citizens to erect a suitable building at present, but to go on paying for their insane paupers in the private asylums, at the rate of about 10s. per week.

LITERARY, &c., INSTITUTIONS.—*Yorkshire Philosophical Society.*—Towards the close of the year 1822, a few gentlemen of the City and its vicinity, to whom various branches of natural science, and especially geology, were favourite objects of pursuit, conceived the idea of establishing such a Society, and forthwith put the design into execution. The Society soon increased in numbers and importance; a museum was formed, into which valuable con-

tributions liberally flowed; and it became evident that no premises not expressly designed for the purpose would be adequate to the wants, or suitable to the views of the Society. In 1827 they obtained from the Crown a grant of nearly three acres of land—part of the Close of the Abbey of St. Mary, commonly called the Manor Shore, for the purpose of erecting a building suitable for the preservation of their library, museum, &c.; and of establishing an English Botanical Garden; as well as for preserving from further decay the venerable remains of the Abbey, which was rapidly disappearing. And here it may be observed, that the lover of the picturesque and beautiful in architecture is indebted to this Society for rescuing that interesting monument of the piety, taste, and skill of past ages, from the list of architectural beauties by which York was once adorned, and of the existence of which no trace is now to be found, except in the tablets of the artist, or in the records of the topographical historian. Lord Grantham (now Earl de Grey) whose family had long held the whole of the Manor, or ancient Close of the Abbey, under the Crown, very willingly consented to relinquish the portion which the Society wished to possess.

A subscription of £7,000., to defray the cost of a suitable building, having been previously raised, the first stone was laid by the Archbishop of York, on the 24th of October, 1827; and on the 2nd of February, 1830, the whole suite of apartments was opened. This building—the *Museum of the Yorkshire Philosophical Society*—is partly erected on the offices of St. Mary's Abbey, and is one of the most chaste and elegant structures in the County of York. The facade has a western aspect towards the river, and a projecting portico of four fluted Grecian-Doric columns, resting upon a basement of three steps, and supporting the proper entablature, with mutules and triglyphs, and a pediment. The entablature is continued along the entire front, having attached antæ at the angles. In the portions unoccupied by the portico are three lintelled windows. The whole exterior is 200 feet in length, and of Hackness stone, and has an air of imposing grandeur; and the interior is in equal taste. The Hall is 29 feet by 18 feet, with a ceiling of bold panel work, and a floor of Scagliola plaster, in imitation of porphyry. On one side of the hall is the *Library*, which is 31 feet by 18, and contains the books, maps, drawings, &c., of the Society; on the other side is the *Council Room*; and the staircases leading to two rooms above, which are filled with a variety of objects of interest. In the centre is the entrance to the *Theatre* or *Lecture Room*, which apartment measures 44 feet by 35, is square and ornamented by six elegant Corinthian columns, which support a ceiling richly panelled. The light is derived from windows of ground glass inserted

in the centre panels, and by a simple contrivance, whenever it is desirable, shutters can be drawn over them, so as to render the theatre completely dark. The seats of the audience descend to the lecturer's table. The room on the right is the mineral museum, that on the left the geological collection, which is one of the best in the Kingdom. The centre apartment contains a series of ornithological and zoological specimens, and some others.

This Museum teems with treasures, and is enriched with specimens of extinct animals, beyond most institutions of a similar character.

Amongst the varied contents of the several rooms of this building may be noticed the following:—

In the *Entrance Hall*.—A Roman tablet representing the sacrifice and mysteries of Mithras, found in 1747, in digging for a cellar in a house in Micklegate; a cast of one of the great obelisks at Karnak, the eastern part of Thebes, erected by Amense, sister of Thotmes II., in the name of her husband Amenenthitot; a cast of a figure of an Assyrian King, sculptured on a rock, near Beyrout; some Egyptian sculpture, and the ancient mortar formerly belonging to the infirmary of St. Mary's Abbey, York.

In the *Theatre*, three large pieces of ancient tapestry, representing maps of several of the midland counties, executed in 1588; a stem of a large tree fern, from Van Dieman's Land; and specimens of Indian products. In the *Room on the Right*, specimens of the higher departments of zoology, elassed according to the system of Cuvier; also a collection of British and other shells, skeletons of British birds, and specimens of Foreign fish. In the *Large Centre Room*, specimens of reptiles, fishes, and British and Foreign birds. The collection of British birds is extensive, and some of the Foreign specimens are rare and valuable. The *Geological Room* contains a most extensive and valuable collection of Geological specimens—about 16,000 in number—systematically arranged according to the strata to which they belong. The collection in this room includes many specimens of minerals and fossil organic remains, from the different strata in Yorkshire. In the *First Upper Room* is a large collection of specimens of ornithological osteology; a skeleton of the Irish elk, and also that of a young whale which was cast upon the Yorkshire coast a few years since. The *Second Upper Room* contains specimens of British birds, presented by William Rudston Read, Esq. in 1846.

In the *Council Room* is a collection of coins, consisting chiefly of Roman denarii, consular and imperial; of Roman brass of three sizes; several Grecian coins, and a few Roman duri; several rare and interesting examples of British and Saxon coins, including two of the hoard of Saxon coins discovered in Walmgate, noticed at page 311 of this volume; and twelve silver pennies of the short-crossed money of Henry II. or III., which are part of a hoard found near Barnsley, and English coins in gold, silver, and copper, of all denominations. Also a series of about 4,000 Northumbri a styca, found in St. Leonard's Place, York, in 1842; and about 2,000 of a hoard, which was discovered in 1847 near Bolton Percy.

Lord Londesborough has recently presented to the Society a large proportion of a hoard of Roman coins discovered in January, 1856, at Methall, near Warter on the Wolds, in the East Riding of Yorkshire. They are upwards of fifteen hundred in number, and were found buried in an earthen vessel upon the line of an old Roman

road. Fifty-three coins of the same hoard have been presented by Wm. Rudston Read, Esq. These coins begin with the reign of Valerian, and include those of Gallienus, and the period of the so-called Thirty Tyrants, and conclude with Aurelian, comprehending a space of seventeen years, from A.D. 276 to 282. The Society is likewise in possession of a good collection of modern medals in bronze and silver, which have been lately arranged and catalogued, describing the events which they are severally designed to commemorate.

The building, in the grounds near the river, called the *Hospitium*, contains an extremely interesting collection of antiquities belonging to the Roman, Anglo-Saxon, Anglo-Norman, and Mediæval periods, most of which have been found in York, or its neighbourhood. Amongst the collection in the *Lower Room* of this building (which is entirely of ancient sculpture) are nearly the whole of the Roman remains mentioned at pages 292 to 310, and a Roman altar found in Doncaster in 1781, and recently presented to the Yorkshire Philosophical Society by George J. Jarratt, Esq., of that place; and a Roman pavement discovered at Oulston, near Easingwold, and lately removed to the Museum. Many interesting fragments of the Abbey of St. Mary; and a tablet which had been built into the wall of the house which till lately stood at the corner of St. Saviourgate and Colliergate, bearing an inscription. (See page 362.)

The antiquities deposited in the *Upper Room* of the *Hospitium* are of a very miscellaneous character. The room is fitted up with glass cases, &c., and the collection is interesting. We may particularly notice an Egyptian Mummy, and several Roman remains of humanity embedded in lime, and now in glass cases. A British canoe dug from the bed of the river Calder, at Stanley Ferry, near Wakefield, in 1838. A British cinerary urn, found in the centre of a barrow at Bishop Burton, near Beverley; a smaller British urn, found in excavating for the York and Scarborough Railroad, near Bootham; a cinerary urn, containing fragments of bones and ashes, found near the Mount, without Micklegate Bar; and a great variety of Roman bricks and tiles, bearing the makers' names or other inscriptions. A large collection of Samian ware, plain and embossed; and many fragments of funereal, drinking, and other vessels. Amongst the antiquities which were discovered in various parts of the country, and are deposited here, are a fragment of a large British urn, found at Acklam, near Malton; an urn, a scull, and bone pins from British tumuli, at the same place; spear and lance or arrow heads, knives, scissors, and other instruments of iron, found in Anglo-Saxon barrows or tumuli near Driffeld; jaws and teeth, several sculls, the umbo of a shield, centre and four pieces, beads of amber, glass, &c., and several other articles found in barrows near Driffeld, and at Danes' Dale. Several Anglo-Saxon urns, from tumuli on the Yorkshire Wolds; two small stone hammers found at Malton; and a collection of bronze celts, some chisels and bronze gouges, found at Westow near Malton.

Edward H. Reynard, Esq., of Sunderlandwick, near Driffeld, lately presented to the Museum a rude coffin, supposed to be British, of unusual dimensions, hollowed from the trunk of an immense oak, and containing, when found, the remains of three skeletons. This interesting object was discovered in August, 1856, by some of Mr. Reynard's labourers, while engaged in levelling a small hill near the Sunderlandwick toll bar.

In the month of April in the present year (1857) was added to the Natural History department of this Museum a huge fossil specimen of the *Ichthyosaurus* or fish lizard, recently discovered in the neighbourhood of Whitby. This monster specimen of an extinct reptile is eighteen feet long, and the head alone weighs three quarters of a ton.

It was purchased for one hundred and ten pounds, and presented to the Yorkshire Philosophical Society by the Rev. Danson Richardson Roundell, of Gledstone, Skipton. An *Aquarium* is about to be added to the Museum.

It is in contemplation to erect a permanent building for the preservation and display of the Roman tessellated pavements obtained by the Society, which are of a magnificent description, and which are now in detached portions.

Meteorological observations are made, and a *Meteorological Register* is kept, by the Yorkshire Philosophical Society.

The *Museum Gardens* now occupy about one half of the ancient Close of the Abbey of St. Mary, with a small portion of the moat of the City wall, and of the enclosure within which the Hospital of St. Leonard formerly stood. The grounds are tastefully disposed, and ornamented with rare shrubs, trees, and plantations, which, together with the picturesque ruins of the Abbey, the Cloister and Chapel of St. Leonard's Hospital, and the Roman wall and Multangular Tower, render this delightful spot one of the principal attractions of York. In front of the Museum is a small *Observatory*, erected in 1833. The *Hot House* contains a very rare and valuable collection of Orchideous and other plants; together with a tank for that elegant but monstrous plant, the *Water Lily* (*Victoria Regia*). The principal entrance to the grounds is from Lendal, by a gateway formed by Doric columns, supporting their proper entablature; and a small porter's lodge attached.

Dr. Beckwith, of York, who died in December, 1843, left to the Philosophical Society one of the most munificent bequests of modern times, for the promotion of science. By his will he directed the sum of £10,000. to be paid to the Society, for the better promotion of its objects. This intention has been carried out, by the gardens being greatly extended, and other improvements made conducive to the enjoyments and recreation of the subscribers.

The *British Association for the Advancement of Science* may be said in some measure to be indebted for its formation to the Yorkshire Philosophical Society. It had been for some time a subject of profound regret amongst scientific men and philosophers in England, that there appeared to be no interest taken in science and scientific pursuits in this country. "Science there was," says the talented Editor of the *Hull Advertiser*, to whose excellent articles in that paper, on the occasion of the visit of the Association to Hull in 1853, we are indebted for much information respecting this learned body, "vital, and quick, and powerful, it is true; but it wanted development. It had no opening, but a casual one for its exhibition. It was struggling for



existence, and in its struggle seemed to have no assistance from any one.' At length Sir David Brewster, who had seen the working of a scientific congress on the continent, conceived the design of forming such an one in England. In 1880 he called public attention to the matter in a powerful article in the *Quarterly Review*. Sir Humphrey Davy, Sir John Herschel, and Mr. Babbage, soon became his coadjutors, and York was selected as the place where they should launch their undertaking, for two reasons:—first, because it was considered as most central and convenient; and secondly, it possessed a very active and influential Philosophical Society. The secretary of that society was Professor Phillips (the present deputy Reader in Geology in the University of Oxford), and to him, on the 23rd of January, 1881, Sir David Brewster proposed that the Society, which he represented, should take the initiative in the formation of a body, intended to be designated the British Association for the Promotion of Science. The objects of this Association he proposed should be “to make the cultivators of science acquainted with each other—to stimulate one another to new exertions—to bring the objects of science before the public eye—and to take measures for advancing its interests, and accelerating its progress.”

The suggestion of Sir David Brewster was soon acted upon, and Professor Phillips, in conjunction with the Committee of the Society to which he belonged, took such steps as eventuated in the first meeting of the British Association being held in York. Not less than two hundred of the most eminent scientific men in the Kingdom attended that meeting; and the manner in which all exerted themselves to promote the objects of the Association, showed at once that there was no lack of interest felt in its future prosperity.

Since then the Association has held its annual meetings in many of the principal towns in the three Kingdoms, all of which were eminently successful; and in every town it has left behind it marks of its civilizing and beneficial influence. Its funds are devoted to a considerable extent to promoting investigations in all branches of science; and upwards of £15,000. have been expended by the Association in this manner—“not frittered away,” says the Editor of the *Hull Advertiser*, “in useless theories, but, on the contrary, spent in investigations, which have, in their results, been of lasting benefit to mankind. Indeed it would be difficult to say,” continues the same writer, “what class of the community has not derived benefits from its workings. It has not confined its attention to any one particular object, but, with a general benevolence of purpose, has directed the light of those master intellects, which it numbers in its ranks, upon every thing which could by

possibility advance us either in knowledge, or power, or influence. And so it has gone on growing by its own exertions, and gradually, yet effectually, forcing itself upon the attention of the world, until it has now overcome all opposition, and has come to be regarded among the most honoured and influential institutions of our land."

*Yorkshire Union of Mechanics' Institutes.*—Incalculable are the advantages which must inevitably flow from these truly excellent institutions. By means of them the *arcana* of learning are thrown open to all classes of the community, and we are happy to find that this great blessing seems to be duly appreciated by the inhabitants of Yorkshire. There is not a market town in the County that has not one of those admirable institutions; and doubtless the time is not far distant when they will be introduced into most of the populous villages, as they have been already into some. Yorkshire contains but a twelfth of the population of the United Kingdom, while it possesses more than a sixth of the educational institutes, and nearly a sixth of the total members of these institutes. Indeed it would be difficult to point out any County in Great Britain where they are so numerous, in proportion to the population, as in Yorkshire. But a generation ago Mechanics' Institutes did not exist. Even so late as fifteen years ago they were very few and scarcely known, now this County alone has certainly more than one hundred and fifty of them. It was only in the year 1828 that Dr. George Birbeck, the originator of them, founded the London Mechanics' Institute, and now the number of institutes and kindred associations throughout Great Britain and Ireland exceeds eight hundred.

The original objects of Mechanics' Institutions—the people's colleges—was to supply to the working classes inducements to mental cultivation after the hours of physical labour, and to give them the means of it; but it is to be regretted that they have not been generally found more useful to that class. They are more frequented by the middle classes, or by those immediately above the labouring population; and the cause of this departure from the original principle, is perhaps to be found in the system of teaching which is usually pursued—a system calculated for those who have been already tolerably well educated, and not for those who come from manual labour to learn. This defect may be remedied by applying the system of instruction by classes, not only to the teaching of foreign languages, singing, design, &c., but to the elementary teachings which would be found necessary in the great majority of the cases for which the institution was first established; and this need not interfere in the least with the system of lectures for the middle or more educated classes in the Institute, if it was found to be acceptable to

them. The Yorkshire Union was founded in 1838, and was confined to the West Riding until April 1841, when the fourth annual meeting was held in the old building of the Institute of York, at which it was resolved that the Union be extended to the whole County. According to the Report issued in 1841, only ten Institutions, including an aggregate of 1,560 members, were connected with the Union; but from the Report read at the nineteenth annual meeting of the delegates of the Union, held at Middlesborough, on the 14th May, 1856, we learn that there are 180 Institutions associated, embracing upwards of 20,000 members, whose subscriptions annually amount to nearly £11,000. The number of volumes in their libraries is estimated at 250,000. The Union includes amongst its objects the exchange and circulation of lectures and papers among the associated Institutes, and all institutions are admissible to it. The affairs of the Union are managed by a Central Committee, the expenses of which are borne by the associated Institutes. Every year several hundred lectures are delivered, the majority of which are gratuitous. York and several other towns continue to obtain excellent lists of lectures, provided almost entirely from local talent, and these lectures are in most cases not unfit to compare with professional lectures, and they attract quite as large an attendance; besides they spare the funds of the Institutes, which are thus available for other important department. The great value of lectures, consists in the stimulus they give to desire and seek information, rather than in the amount of actual information conveyed. The hearer may carry away but few facts, but his field of mental vision is enlarged, his reasoning power is developed, and he has recourse to books to supply his desire for information.

An important department of the Union is the *Itinerating Village Library*. In order to supply the great deficiency which exists in respect to education, and to diffuse light and knowledge, with all their beautiful and beneficent influences and results, though the rural districts of this great County, the Central Committee of the Union have opened a depot of books in Leeds, and organised a plan of operations, whereby those books may be made available to the humblest persons at a merely nominal cost. It is applicable to all localities, and must prove beneficial to all who are in earnest after self-improvement. Wherever twenty-five persons can be found who are willing to pay one penny per week for the use of the books, fifty volumes are sent free of carriage, and these books are replaced every six months by fifty others; and for every twenty-five additional subscribers fifty additional volumes are sent. The advantage of the periodical transfer of the books from one station to another must appear obvious to all, and therefore needs no comment.

There are now no less than thirty-six of these Itinerating Libraries connected with the Union. The attention of her Majesty's consort, his Royal Highness Prince Albert, has lately been called to the plan of this excellent institution, and as a mark of his approbation, he has presented to the Union the handsome donation of two hundred and eleven volumes of excellent works, all beautifully bound, and on the inside of the cover of each volume is a label with this inscription:—"Presented to the Yorkshire Union of Mechanics' Institutes, by his Royal Highness Prince Albert."

The *Castle Howard United Villages Itinerating Library*, was commenced on the 1st of January, 1853, at the suggestion of the princely owner of Castle Howard, and its books are now circulated in fifteen villages round that splendid mansion, besides four sections in the town of Malton. It is in connection with the Union of Mechanics' Institutes, but is quite independent of the Union Library. The Union of Institutes, and the Libraries, are supported in part by the donations of the friends of education in all parts of the County. The President of the Central Committee is Edward Baines, Esq., and the President of the Committee of the Castle Howard Village Libraries is the Rev. Thomas Myers, Vicar of Sheriff Hutton.

*York Institute of Popular Science and Literature*, St. Saviourgate.—This institution was established in 1827, for the instruction of its members in the principles of the useful and ornamental arts, and in the various other departments of useful knowledge. Its original name was "The York Mechanics' Institute," and it is still essentially the same in machinery and design as at first. The neat and commodious building, in which the Institute is held, was erected by the Society, and opened in 1846, with a bazaar and exhibition of paintings, and other works of art. It consists of a lecture hall, news and reading room, class rooms, and library. During the winter lectures are delivered weekly, on experimental philosophy, practical mechanics, astronomy, chemistry, natural history, literature, &c.; and classes are formed, under competent paid teachers, for instruction in writing, arithmetic, geometry, grammar, composition, and drawing, all of which are open to the members gratuitously. There is also a class for instruction in French, and a chess club, for which an extra fee is required. The members of this institute are divided into three classes, who respectively pay 20s., 10s., and 6s., per ann.; the third class being exclusively for youths under 18 years of age. Ladies' subscriptions are 10s. According to the last annual Report of the Society the total number of members was 468. The reading room is open daily, and the library every evening, Sundays excepted. The lecture room will accommodate about 400 persons: the news room is well supplied with the leading

periodicals and newspapers; and the library contains about 5,000 volumes. A portrait of Dr. Birbeck, the founder of Mechanics' Institutes, which had for some years been suspended in the reading room, and which had been valued at thirty guineas, has lately become the property of the institution, on very advantageous terms. The York Institute is in Union with the Society of Arts, London, and it is also associated with the Yorkshire Union of Mechanics' Institutes. Sir George Cayley, Bart., is the President of the York Institute, and amongst the Vice-Presidents is the Rev. Charles Wellbeloved, a most zealous promoter of its foundation, and one of its most constant and generous benefactors.

*Yorkshire Architectural Society.*—This Association was instituted in 1841, to promote the study of ecclesiastical architecture, antiquities, and design, the restoration of mutilated architectural remains, and of Churches, or parts of Churches, within the County of York, which may have been desecrated; and to improve, as far as it may be within its province, the character of ecclesiastical edifices to be erected in future. The patrons of the Society are the Archbishop of York and the Bishop of Ripon; its Presidents are the Earls of Carlisle and Zetland; and amongst the Vice-Presidents are the Duke of Northumberland, Earls de Grey, Effingham, Dartmouth, and Mexborough; Lords Hotham, Feversham, Downe, and Wharnccliffe; Sir Henry Boynton, Sir J. H. Lowther, Sir T. D. Digby Legard, Sir J. V. B. Johnstone, the Rev. Sir George Burrard, and the Archdeacons of the Diocese. The Society, which is now composed of about 800 members, who pay an annual subscription of 10s. each, holds three public meetings in each year—one at York, and two in other parts of the County. The *Museum* of the Society, which is in the Minster Yard, York, contains a good collection of casts, rubbings of brasses, &c.; and there is in connection with it a small library of valuable works on architecture.

*Yorkshire Naturalists' Club.*—Established in 1849, for the purpose of bringing the Naturalists of the County into friendly and more frequent communication with one another, and for collecting facts, carrying on researches, &c., bearing upon the natural history of Yorkshire; and a leading object of the Club is to provide a fund, to be spent in collecting the natural productions of the County, and to distribute the specimens, thus obtained, among the public Museums of the County, the Museum of the Philosophical Society at York to take precedence in this distribution. Meetings of the Club are held monthly, for the election of members, the reading and discussion of papers, exhibition of specimens, &c. A library of standard works on different branches of natural history, is being formed for the use of the members.

The present number of members is about 140; and the amount of subscription is five shillings per annum. When the number of members is raised to 300, it is calculated that, after the payment of the ordinary incidental expenses, there will be £50. per annum, applicable to the scientific objects for which the Club was instituted. The President of the York Naturalists' Club is the Right Hon. Lord Londesborough.

*Yorkshire Antiquarian Club.*—This Association was founded in June, 1849, by a few gentlemen interested in antiquarian research, for promoting, first, the accurate knowledge and the careful preservation of the antiquities of Yorkshire; secondly, to make researches by the opening of, and excavations into, barrows and other earth-works; and to watch the progress of public works, such as railways, sewers, foundations of buildings, &c. An important feature of the Club is, that it consists of a society of working archæologists, possessing no collection of their own, and one of the fundamental rules states, "that all the specimens given to, or discovered by the Club, be deposited in the Museum of the Yorkshire Philosophical Society." By faithfully adhering to this plan of proceeding, it has been in their power to add numerous interesting specimens to that fine collection; amongst them a valuable and rare collection of bronze, bones, and urns, which are now placed in separate cases in the Hospitium. Expeditions have been made by the members of the Club, and tumuli examined in several localities, and much curious and important information have been obtained respecting the ancient inhabitants of Yorkshire. Drawings of the localities and objects found, especially the vases, with plans of any peculiar distribution of tumuli, are retained in the portfolio of the Society. The meetings of the Club are held every two months, in Archbishop Holgate's School Room; the present number of members of the Club is about eighty; and the amount of annual subscription is very small. The Rev. Charles Wellbeloved is the President, and William Proctor, Esq., the Honorary Secretary.

*Lecture Hall.*—This spacious apartment was erected in 1845, at a cost of about £2,500., by the York Total Abstinence Society, and is situated behind a Temperance Inn, in Goodramgate. It is galleried round three sides, and will accommodate about 1,000 persons. Temperance and other public meetings are held in it.

**LIBRARIES.**—*The York Subscription Library* was instituted in 1794, by a few intelligent and spirited individuals, viz:—Sir William Strickland, S. W. Nicholl, Esq., Rev. C. Wellbeloved, Anthony Thorpe, Esq., and others. These gentlemen formed themselves into a Society, for the purpose of purchasing the pamphlets, and other light literary productions of the day. They

were then deposited at the house of a member of the Society, and the collection was at certain periods sold, and more modern productions purchased from the general fund thus augmented. The number of members increasing, a plan was suggested of erecting an edifice by subscription shares, distinct from the book society. Accordingly some old houses were purchased in St. Helen's Square, at the corner of Lendal, and upon their site a commodious building was erected in 1812. Here the library continued until 1836, when it was removed to the fine and spacious rooms now occupied by it, in No. 1, St. Leonard's Place. The site of the old building is now occupied by the handsome edifice, containing the offices of the Yorkshire Insurance Company. The library—which now occupies five rooms, fitted up with cases, the largest room (a very fine one) having a gallery around it—consists of about 20,000 volumes, among which are many valuable works, and the best current literature of the day; besides the Transactions of the Philosophical, Archæological, Geological, and other scientific societies, which are regularly purchased as soon as published; Hansard's Parliamentary Debates, and the Statutes at large. The *Public Record Room*, which contains a large collection of the Records of the nation, presented by the Government, is open to all persons in the County, who may have occasion to consult them. The *Reading Room* is well supplied with the principal magazines and reviews—about £60. a year being devoted to their purchase—but no newspapers are admitted. Indeed this library, considering its extent, is extremely valuable. The Society now consists of about 350 members; the annual subscription is £1. 6s., but each subscriber must be the holder of a ticket, which has to be purchased. The library, &c., is open daily, Sundays excepted.

The *Select Subscription Library*, in Blake Street, was established in 1818, for the purpose of supplying good reading, at a moderate price, to those whose circumstances precluded their subscribing to the more expensive libraries. It consists of nearly 2,000 volumes, well selected. The terms of subscription are an entrance fee of one guinea, and 10s. a year; such subscription constituting a proprietorship. Each proprietor has the privilege of recommending persons in humbler circumstances as gratuitous readers.

The *Cathedral Library* and the *Medical Libraries*, are noticed in other parts of this volume, and some smaller libraries in connection with news rooms are noticed below.

**NEWS ROOMS.**—There are two *Subscription News Rooms* in Blake Street; and in Fossgate is the *Working Mens' News and Reading Room*. The latter was established in 1855, and there is a small lending library in connection with it. Free lectures are delivered in this room during the winter months.

The *York Railway Station Library and Reading Room*.—This institution was opened in the month of May, 1855, for the benefit of the numerous workmen and youths residing in this City, and who are in the employment of the North Eastern Railway Company. Captain O'Brien, the general manager of the North Eastern Railway, is the President of the Society, and the institution is well calculated to promote the social, intellectual, and moral well-being of the classes brought within its influence. During the winter season lectures are delivered to the members of the Society.

NEWSPAPERS.—There are three Newspapers published in York every Saturday:—

The *York Herald* (with which the "York Courant," established in 1720, is now incorporated) was first issued on the 2nd of January, 1790. This paper is liberal in politics, and has a circulation of nearly 6,000 weekly, extending over the Counties of York, Lincoln, Lancaster, and the other northern Counties. The proprietors are Mr. William Hargrove, and his two sons, Messrs. Alfred Ely Hargrove and William Wallace Hargrove.

The *Yorkshireman*, established in 1834, is a joint stock property, and has a pretty fair circulation. Its politics are liberal.

The *Yorkshire Gazette* is the property of a Company of resident proprietors. It was established on the 24th of April, 1819, and the "York Chronicle," established in 1772, was amalgamated with it some years ago. The *Gazette* advocates conservative principles.

RAILWAYS.—The formation of railways is closely connected with the interests of York, and the ancient City might have lost much of its importance but for the introduction of these iron highways. The plain of York afforded great natural facilities for the construction of railways, whilst the geological features of the neighbourhood of Leeds presented as formidable obstacles; and it is owing, in a great measure, to this that York is now the centre of a system of railways radiating in every direction.

The York and North Midland Railway Company was formed for the making and maintenance of a railway from York to Normanton, near Wakefield, a distance of twenty-four miles. On the 30th of May, 1839, it was opened to the Milford Junction, where it joins the Leeds and Selby line; and in May, 1840, it was opened to Normanton, where it unites with the Midland Railway, and forms a direct line to London. The York and North Midland is the connecting link between the two extremities of the chain of railways on the eastern side of the island, commencing at Dover and extending to Edinburgh. The York and North Midland has several branch railways in connection with the main line, viz:—from York to the fashionable coast town of



Scarborough (opened in 1846), through Malton, joining the Whitby and Pickering line at the latter place; the branch to Market Weighton; and that from Church Fenton to Harrogate.

The line to Knaresborough was opened in 1846, by the East and West Yorkshire Railway Company, but in 1852 it was purchased by the York and North Midland Company.

The great North of England Railway between York and Darlington, was opened on the 31st of March, 1841. This line is carried over the Ouse at Poppleton, by a viaduct 300 feet long. In 1850 the Company to whom this line belonged amalgamated with the Darlington and Newcastle, and the Newcastle and Berwick, Railway Companies, and the whole line was thenceforward called the *York, Newcastle, and Berwick Railway*. The distance from York to Berwick is 150 miles. This line is celebrated for the High Level Bridge across the Tyne at Newcastle, a work of immense magnitude, and by far the largest of the kind in the Kingdom.

In June, 1854, the York and North Midland, the York, Newcastle, and Berwick, and the Leeds Northern lines, were all amalgamated by Act of Parliament, and became the property of one body, under the name of the *North Eastern Railway Company*. The length of the three united lines and their branches is 682 miles.

The *Great Northern Railway*, which joins the York and North Midland line near Burton Salmon, was opened in 1850. This line affords another and a much shorter means of communication with London. By means of these lines there is now a complete railway communication from east to west, from Hull to Liverpool; and from south to north, there is a direct line from London to Edinburgh and Glasgow, through York. It is now possible to accomplish the journey from York to London and back in less than twenty hours! allowing an hour for the transaction of business.

*Railway Station*.—At the opening of the York and North Midland Railway, in 1839, a temporary station was constructed without the walls of the City, and it so continued until the beginning of 1841, when the present elegant and commodious structure was opened. Since its erection it has been greatly enlarged, and it is now the chief station of the amalgamated Companies as well as of the Great Northern Company. It is in the Italian style of architecture, and consists of two ranges of buildings, connected at the east end by a large and handsome hotel, erected in 1852. The principal front of the Station is opposite Tanner Row, with a building corresponding to it, fronting the City walls; and the whole area, including the Station, is covered by a cast-iron roof, of ingenious and beautiful design.

After proceeding from the Station, the lines of railway pass under the City, walls, which are perforated by two large Tudor arches, each seventy feet wide. Connected with the railway there are numerous large and convenient workshops, engine sheds, foundries, &c. Here are manufactured almost entirely the engines, carriages, &c., of the North Eastern Railway Company. The number of persons employed in the station, workshops, &c., is about 1,200, who receive in wages £2,700. fortnightly, or £70,000. per annum.

The erection of this Station has transformed a remote and retired part of the City into a scene of vivacity and commercial activity. During the excavation of the ground necessary for the formation of the Station, as well as for making the railway between the Station and Holdgate Bridge, numerous Roman remains were found, consisting principally of sepulchral remains; and on the site of the Station were discovered portions of a Roman Bath, and some tessellated pavements, the whole of which have been deposited in the Museum of the City. The space between the Station and the City walls was formerly called Friars' Gardens, and is supposed to have been the site of a Dominican Friary.

*Gas Works.*—The "York Gas Company" was incorporated by Act of Parliament in 1823, and the streets of the City were first lighted with gas on the 22nd of March, 1824. The works of this Company were erected near Monk Bridge. In 1836 another body, called the "York Union Gas Company," was established, and they had their works near the Foss, in Hungate. Both of these bodies amalgamated in 1844, under the style and title of the *York United Gas Light Company*; and in 1847 the works of both were concentrated on the ground of the original Company. The buildings are of red brick; there are two gasometers, which will contain 800,000 cubic feet of gas; the largest one is 80 feet in diameter, and rises 50 feet, and when it was erected, in 1847, it was the largest in the County. At the same time the works were considerably enlarged and improved, and a new retort house and chimney built. This fine chimney, which is in the form of a Doric column, is remarkable for its close resemblance in form, as well as of its being about the same general dimensions, as the celebrated Trajan pillar at Rome.

In ancient times, before the introduction of oil and gas, part of the proclamation, annually made by the Sheriffs in York, was as follows:—"Also we command that no manner of man walk in the City, or in the suburbs, by night, without light before him, i. e. from Pasche (Easter) to Michaelmas, after ten of the clock; and from Michaelmas to Pasche, after nine of the clock." The houses of the nobility and gentry formerly had niches at their

doors, in which a large extinguisher was placed, which was used for the purpose of extinguishing flambeaux, carried by servants at night before their masters, as they went and returned from their nocturnal revels. One of the remaining examples of these niches may be seen at the door of the large house at the end of Blake Street, near the Theatre, which was erected by Sir William Robinson, Bart.; and one of the huge extinguishers still remains attached to a house in Petergate. When Edward IV. was in York, one hundred torches were lighted on the occasion, the inference being that the citizens were at other times left to grope their way as best they could. In the time of Charles II., the City was lighted by twenty-four large lanterns placed at the corners of the streets. The Act of 1823 required that the newly formed Company should light the City better and cheaper with gas than could be done with oil.

*York Waterworks.*—Lendal Tower, one of the ancient towers of defence for the City, was let by the Corporation to Richard Whistler, a London Merchant, in 1677, for the purpose of erecting Waterworks in it; but it was not till the year 1682 that the works were completed. The lease of the tower was granted for 500 years, at the annual rent of a *Peppercorn*. An engine, worked by two horses, was then placed in it, and the water was raised from the Ouse, and conveyed through the City by means of wooden pipes. The works were afterwards purchased by Colonel Thornton, who considerably improved the whole, enlarged the building, introduced a steam engine, and added bathing rooms to the tower. From this gentleman the establishment descended to his son, also a Colonel, from whom it was purchased in 1799, by the late Waterworks Company, who raised the tower considerably, and made other additions; and who, in 1836, erected a new engine house near the tower, to which the engine was then removed.

A new Company was established in 1846, with a capital of £60,000., raised in shares of £10. each; and they purchased the old works at Lendal Tower, for £28,000.; and in 1849 removed them to Acomb Landing, on the opposite bank of the Ouse, about two miles above the City. The new works were designed by Mr. James Simpson, civil engineer, of London, and consist of two subsiding reservoirs, and three filter beds, with two steam engines, each capable of working to about sixty horse-power; tanks, wells, conduits, pipes, and other apparatus for raising the water from the river, performing the process of filtration, and afterwards lifting the water to the high service reservoir on Severus Hill, for distribution, through metal pipes, over the City and suburbs. This great reservoir, which is nearly a mile from the works, is formed in the centre of that celebrated tumuli, which tradition points to as

the spot upon which the body of the Roman Emperor Severus had been reduced to ashes.

**PUBLIC BATHS.**—In the above account of the original Waterworks at Lendal, we have observed that Colonel Thornton added some bathing rooms to them. These baths, which are supplied with hot and cold water, still continue to be the property of the Waterworks Company.\*

The *Swimming Baths*, in Marygate, were the property of a Joint Stock Company, with a capital of £2,500., in £5. shares, but these have been purchased by the Council of the Philosophical Society, upon whose property they stand. The Bath Company was formed in 1836, and the baths were opened in the following year. The large bath is 120 feet by 80. Shower baths have since been added.

*Cavalry Barracks.*—These barracks were built on the Fulford Road, about one mile from the City, in 1796, at an expense of £27,000., and including the spacious yard, they occupy twelve acres of ground. The centre building will accommodate eighteen officers; and the wings will quarter 337 soldiers, 330 horses, and 24 hospital patients.

*Militia Depot*, Lowther Street, Groves.—This building was erected for the stores of the 2nd West York Light Infantry Regiment of Militia, and consists of a guard room, several store rooms, three cells, and houses for the adjutant and quarter master.

**BANKS.**—*Messrs. Swann, Clough, & Co.*, Coney Street; draw on Sir R. C. Glynn & Co., Lombard Street, London.

*Yorkshire Banking Company*, corner of High Ousegate and Parliament Street; draw on Messrs. Williams, Deacon, & Co., 20, Birchin Lane.

*York City and County Bank*, Parliament Street; draw on Messrs. Barnetts, Hoare, & Co., 62, Lombard Street.

*York Union Bank*, High Ousegate; draw on Messrs. Glynn & Co., Lombard Street. The three latter banks belong to Joint Stock Companies.

*Savings' Bank*, corner of Blake Street.—This is a very neat building, erected from a design of Messrs. Pritchett & Sons, of York, nearly thirty years ago, at a cost of about £5,000. The upper story exhibits five fluted pillars, and three square pillars, with Corinthian capitals, supporting a plain frieze. The board room over the bank is exceedingly neat, and is lighted by seven windows, five of which have circular heads. The ceiling, which is in panels, is richly decorated, and the walls are ornamented with pilasters of

\* In the Board Room of the Waterworks Company, at Lendal, is a complete plan of the City and suburbs of York, shewing the works, reservoirs, pipes, &c., belonging to the Company. This large and useful map measures about twenty feet square.

the Corinthian Order. The use of this room is sometimes granted by the directors for religious meetings, or meetings for charitable purposes.

From the general statement of this Savings' Bank, for the year ending 20th November, 1856, we learn that the sums received of depositors within that year was £37,072. And at that date the amount of its deposits was £273,745., belonging to 6,810 individuals, 96 charitable societies, and 22 friendly societies. The affairs of the bank are managed by five trustees and a Committee of twenty-four gentlemen, the Lord Mayor for the time being president. Deposits of from 1s. up to £30. may be made in one year, and the rate of annual interest allowed to depositors is three per cent.

*York Penny Bank.*—Office, Merchants' Hall, Fossgate.—The object of this institution is to create and foster habits of regularity and frugal economy, by affording an opportunity for the deposit of the smallest sums of money payable when required. The office is open twice a week, for receiving deposits of any sums of money of not less than one penny, or more than two shillings each. Interest at the rate of £2. 10s. per cent. per ann., is allowed on every 10s. deposited before December 1st and June 1st in each year, such sum remaining in the bank for six months after the said dates. The weekly number of depositors is about 600, and the weekly sums deposited from £25. to £30.

*York Loan Society*, Blake Street.—Loans of from 5s. to £15. are granted by this Society, to the labouring and other persons of approved character, the borrowers giving a householder as security for the repayment thereof, by weekly instalments of one shilling in the pound. No interest is required of the borrower beyond a charge of threepence in the pound.

*City Police Station*, St. Sampson's Square.—The police force of the City consists of thirty men. Chief Constable, Mr. Robert Chalk.

*York Poor Law Union.*—This Union, which was declared on the 15th of July, 1837, under the provisions of the Act passed in 1834, comprises a total area of 103 square miles, and comprehends 80 parishes and places, whereof 32 are in the City, 7 in the West Riding (the Ainsty), 16 in the East Riding, and 25 in the North Riding of Yorkshire.

The *Union Workhouse* is a large pile of brick building, lately erected near Groves' Terrace, on the Huntingdon Road. It formerly occupied the house in Marygate, now used as the Ragged School and Model Lodging House. The building will accommodate about 350 inmates. There are eight medical officers connected with the Union.

*Penitentiary*, Bishophill.—From the Report for the year ending December 31st, 1856, we learn that *The York Penitentiary Society* has completed its

thirty-fifth year, and *The Refuge* its twelfth. This institution is for the reformation of females who have unhappily strayed from the paths of virtue; and many instances are known of characters reclaimed through its instrumentality. In 1843 the funds of this charity were increased by the liberal bequest of £5,000., made by Dr. Beckwith, who formerly resided in the house now occupied as the Refuge of the Society.

*City Mission.*—The York City Mission was instituted in 1848, for the diffusion of moral and religious instruction among the poorer classes of society, by means of domiciliary visitation; as well as to recommend sanitary improvements in the dwellings of the poor. To effect these objects, missionaries of approved character and qualification, who give themselves entirely to the work, are employed and paid by the institution; and their duties are to visit from house to house in their respective districts, read the Scriptures to the inmates, engage them in religious conversations, without referring to denominational distinctions, urge those who are living in the neglect of religion to observe the Sabbath, and to attend public worship, and to see that all persons possess the Scriptures. The general business of the Society is conducted by a Committee, consisting of an equal number of members of the Established Church and of Dissenters. The City Mission is supported by donations and subscriptions.

There are also in York branches of the various Missionary, Religious Tract, and Bible Societies, and several benevolent associations for administering to the spiritual and temporal wants of the poor and needy. Amongst them are the York Emanuel, the Charitable Society, the Benevolent Society, the Female Friendly Society, the Lying-in Charity, and the Society for the Prevention of Vice and Profaneness.

REFORMATORY SCHOOLS.—Though these institutions are not situated in the City of York, yet we deem this the fittest place to notice them. Pursuant to the provisions of the statute, 17 and 18 Vict., cap. 86, which not only authorizes the opening of *Reformatory Schools for Juvenile Offenders*, but empowers the Government to allow 5s. per week, or £13. per ann., for each young offender placed in such schools, a public meeting was held at the Town Hall of Hull, on the 12th of April, 1855, for the purpose of considering the benefits to be derived from the establishment of one of those schools, and of forming a *Society for the Reformation of Juvenile Offenders*. This meeting was highly successful; the Society was formed, with the Earl of Carlisle for its President, and a long list of Patrons and Vice-Presidents, amongst whom are the Archbishop of York, Lord Wenlock, Lord Hotham, the Hon. A. Duncombe, the Borough Members of Parliament, and many of the gentry and Magistrates of the town and neighbourhood.

Afterwards the bench of Magistrates of the East and North Ridings assembled at Quarter Sessions, appointed each a Committee to co-operate with the Society in carrying out the resolutions adopted at the public meeting at Hull, for the establishment of an Industrial Reformatory School, large enough for the requirements of these Ridings; and a meeting was held in York, presided over by the Lord Mayor, for the purpose of adopting measures in furtherance of the same object, and for the obtaining for the City of York a share in the advantages of such an institution. So that the North and East Ridings of Yorkshire, the City of York, and the Borough of Hull, are all united in the promotion of an establishment in which the criminal children of the district may, by a systematic course of education, care, and industrial occupation, become useful members of the community—"a consummation most devoutly to be wished," for it is an undisputable fact, that the common gaols and houses of correction do not generally provide suitable means for the education or correct treatment of youthful offenders. The anxious desire of the Committee to commence the work of reformation as soon as possible, was materially promoted by an offer of the noble President to let on lease to the Society, a farm of forty acres (or more if required), near Castle Howard, in the neighbourhood of Malton. Arrangements were soon made, and some cottages contiguous to this farm were fitted up for the purposes of the institution, whilst a permanent building should be in progress. From the Report read at the annual meeting of the Society in October, 1856, we learn that for the sum of £1,428. (the architects, Messrs. Atkinson, of York, having declined all compensation for the plan, &c.), "a Reformatory School has been completed, in which nothing has been wasted on useless space or decoration, and nothing is wanted for the purposes of the institution except farm buildings;" and "for the erection of these £200. has been appropriated."

The schools were opened on the 26th of May, 1856, in the provisional building, under the superintendence of the Rev. Ishmael Fish; and from that gentleman's report, read at the above meeting, it appears that out of the twenty-four hours of the day, nine, according to the rules of the school, are given to labour, eight to sleep, and seven to meals, play, lessons, and prayers. The Vice-Presidents of the Society for the present year are, the Archbishop, the Earls of Yarborough, Zetland, and De Grey, Viscount Downe, Lords Feversham, Londesborough, Wenlock, Hotham, Teignmouth, Bolton, and the Rev. Lord De Saumarez, the Hon. Charles Langdale, and the Hon. J. C. Dundas.

*Yorkshire Catholic Reformatory.*—The Reformatory near Castle Howard being conducted exclusively on Protestant principles, the Catholics of York-

shire held a meeting at York, on the 23rd of October, 1855, for the purpose of establishing, for the three Ridings of the County, a Reformatory School for the reformation of offenders whose parents profess the Catholic faith, to be conducted on the principles of the Catholic religion. The Right Rev. Dr. Briggs, the Catholic Bishop of the Yorkshire Diocese, having, at that meeting, with great liberality presented to the Committee of the Catholic Reformatory, for the use of the institution, a house and farm of seventy acres of land, in the parish of Holme-upon-Spalding-Moor, near Market Weighton, arrangements were made to put the establishment in operation with all convenient speed. It may be here observed that the farm which the good Bishop has so generously and charitably placed at the disposal of the Committee, is considered to be admirably adapted for the purpose of such an institution. The land was given some years ago to Dr. Briggs, by the late Sir E. M. Vavasour, and it was intended at one time to found a Monastery upon it; and with this view buildings, intended to form one side of a quadrangle were erected, and occupied for some time by a few religious, who are said to have much improved the land.

Mr. Vowles, her Majesty's Inspector of Prisons, having visited the farm and premises, and reported favourably to the Secretary of State, a certificate for the opening of the institution was granted on the 25th of July, 1856, and accordingly it was opened on the 15th of August in the same year, under the government of the Hon. Captain Stapleton—but it is very probable that the care of the Reformatory at no very distant day, will be entrusted to some religious community. Captain Stapleton, in his first Report of the institution, informs us that "religious instruction, education, and manual labour are the daily occupations" of the boys; and he attaches much importance to the fact that the institution is a farm school, because it is likely to revive a relish for agricultural pursuits in the inmates, to lead them away from the dissipation of large towns to the innocence and vigour of a well conducted labourer, and because field labour is, in moderation, an orderly, healthy, and spiritually good occupation. He also tells us that it is not intended that the inmates should become scientific or learned men, but merely useful members of society, and honest and industrious citizens.

*Model Lodging House, Marygate.*—This establishment, which occupies part of the old Poor Law Union Workhouse, in Marygate, was opened in 1850, by an Association of philanthropic individuals. There is accommodation for nearly fifty lodgers, each of whom are supplied with a separate bed, together with the use of the day room (which is supplied with Bibles and suitable periodicals), kitchen, cooking utensils, soap, salt, gas light, &c., at



the low charge of 3d. per night, or 1s. 6d. a week. There are several sleeping rooms, all of them fitted up with beds, separated by partitions. The beds are of sea weed, and the house, which is remarkable for its cleanliness and comfort, must be a great boon to the poor and needy.

*Cemetery.*—The York Public Cemetery, on the Fulford Road, is the property of a Joint Stock Company, formed in 1836, with a capital of £6,000., in £10. shares, and was established in consequence of the crowded state of the Churchyards in York. The ground, which consists of eight acres, was first opened in September, 1837; and that all denominations may bury their dead according to their own form, half the land is consecrated for the use of the Established Church, and the other half is appropriated to Dissenters. The ministers of each denomination conduct their own funeral services, and the mortuary Chapel is so situated, that the line separating the two divisions of the Cemetery runs through the centre of the building; consequently one half of the Chapel is used by members of the Established Church, and the other half by the Dissenters.

The ground is very tastefully laid down, and planted with flowers, shrubs, and forest trees; and the Chapel, lodge, and entrance gates are very neat. The total cost of the land and buildings is £7,719. The Chapel is an oblong building, of cut stone, from Roche Abbey, and is an interesting imitation of Grecian architecture. The entrance is in the centre of the north side, beneath a pediment supported by four fluted pillars, and two large pilasters. Both ends of the building exhibit a frieze, supported by two fluted half pillars. The south side is plain. The interior is neat, and each end is fitted up with a small pulpit, seats, &c.

That the poor as well as the rich may have the advantage of the cemetery, there is a rule, that for persons dying in houses or tenements under the annual value of £5. or £10. rack rent, the charge for a single interment shall be much less than to other persons. It is also laid down as an invariable rule, that no grave, whether public or private, when filled, shall again be opened, so that no human remains may be dug up or disturbed. As the Churchyards of York have been recently closed, it is probable that this Cemetery will soon be extended beyond its present limits. Visitors have free access to walk in the grounds, except on Sundays.

*Cholera Burial Ground.*—As we have seen at page 372, that terrible epidemic, the Asiatic Cholera, first manifested itself in York in the month of June, 1832; and on that occasion this piece of ground, which is situated just without the City walls, between the Railway and North Street Postern,

was set apart for the interment of those who died of that malady. The second visitation of Cholera, in 1849, being much less severe than the previous one, those who died of it were buried in the different grave-yards indiscriminately; the Cholera burial-ground not being opened at all.

RECREATIVE AMUSEMENTS.—*Races*.—A large flat piece of pasture land, about a mile south of the City, called *Knavesmire*,\* the property of the free-men of Micklegate ward, is used as a *Race Course*. This course is one of the finest in the Kingdom, and York races occupy a place in the first rank upon the English turf. The sport of horse racing though undoubtedly practised in this country at the time of the Roman invasion, does not appear to have made much progress till the accession of James I., who introduced it from Scotland, where it came into vogue from the spirit and swiftness of the Spanish horses, which had been thrown ashore on the coast of Galloway, when the vessels of the Armada were wrecked. In the reign of Henry VIII. a bell, adorned with flowers, had been “given to him who should run the best and farthest on horseback on Shrove Tuesday,” at Chester, Stamford, and elsewhere.

Camden, in his *Britannia*, published in 1590, informs us that horse racing was practised on the Forest of Galtres, on the east side of the City of York; the prize for the winning horse being a small golden or silver bell, which was always attached to its head-gear, and the animal was then led about in triumph; whence arose the proverb, for success of any kind, “bearing away the bell,” or “to bear the bell.” But racing as a system may be said to date from the reign of James I. This Monarch was extremely fond of the sport, and his favourite courses were at Croydon and Enfield Chase. Charles I. followed his example by establishing races in Hyde Park and at Newmarket, where James I. had already built a hunting seat. Races were discontinued during the Protectorate, but Cromwell was by no means inattentive to the breeding of good horses. The “Merry Monarch” not only encouraged racing by numerous royal plates, but purchased mares and sires (principally Barbs and Turks) in the Levant, and also improved the breed by horses brought over from Tangiers, as part of the dowry of his Queen, Catherine of Braganza. Mr. Drake says, “Clifton fields have not been enclosed a century; and were formerly open enough to have been the Campus Martius to Eboracum;” and in another place he speaks more confidently to their having been so. In

\* *Knave*, the Anglo-Saxon term for a man of low condition—and this common is called *Knavesmire*, from being the swampy pasture of the poor householders' cattle.

1709 there was a regular race meeting on Clifton Ings, and in 1714 it had become so popular that there were 156 carriages upon the course in one day. During the great frost of 1607, when the river Ouse was frozen over so hard that carts and carriage passed over it in safety, Drake tells us that a horse race was run upon it, from the Tower at Marygate end, through the great arch of Ouse Bridge, to the crane at Skeldergate Postern. In the year 1709 the citizens made a collection, with which they purchased five plates, which were run for over Knavesmire, and from that period to the present, the annual meetings have been supported with much spirit. Since the time of Charles II., as has been intimated, this great national sport has been sanctioned and encouraged by the Monarchs of England, who grant "Plates" or "Cups" annually to be run for on many race courses in the Kingdom.

Though these royal gifts are still frequently called plates or cups, yet with the exception of the *Vase*, which is run for at Ascot (and which is still a piece of plate), they consist of an hundred guineas, and hence are sometimes called the King's or Queen's Guineas, or the King's or Queen's Hundred. In 1718, four years after the establishment of permanent races at York, the King's gold cup was procured, and has ever since been run for at the August meeting. There is another royal plate of one hundred guineas, now given for mares, to be run for here and at Richmond alternately. In 1754 the *Grand Stand* was built by subscription. The building is of red brick, with circular-headed windows in the upper story; the whole finished with a balustrade projection, the front of which is up to one hundred feet in length, and supported by a rustic arcade of fifteen feet high, from which may be enjoyed a fine view of the races and surrounding scenery. Near the "Winning Post" is the building called the *Round House*, which was erected for the convenience of the Stewards or officials. It is a stone rotunda, with attached Doric columns, supporting their proper entablature, and surmounted by a dome. Extensive improvements have, of late years, been effected in the neighbourhood of the goal—a neat stand has been erected for the use of the Stewards and their friends, with a portion reserved for ladies; the enclosure in front of the stands enlarged, and a telegraphic communication established between the Grand Stand and the City.

The *Course* is marked by posts and rails, and has a very elegant appearance. The old *Two Mile Course* is 1 mile, 7 furlongs, and 85 yards in length; and the ordinary course is 1 mile, 6 furlongs, and about 50 yards, quite flat, and of circular shape. The run in is five furlongs, which forms the *Two Year Old Course*. Here are three race meetings in the year, viz:—the *Spring Meeting*, held in April or May; the *August Meeting*, in that month; and the

*Yorkshire Union Hunt Meeting*, in October. The first meeting continues for two days, the second for three days, and the third occupies but one day.\*

*York Archery Society*.—Established in 1833, and now contains upwards of fifty members, who are elected by ballot. The Society holds its meetings on Knavesmire. Sir W. M. E. Milner, Bart., is the President, and Mr. W. W. Hargrove, Secretary.

CHARITIES.—Besides the various Hospitals, Almshouses, Charity Schools, medical and benevolent institutions, which we have described, there are several charity trusts belonging to the City, the administration of which is in the hands of Trustees appointed by the Corporation, who publish an annual statement of their receipts and expenditure. This renders it entirely unnecessary for us to burden our pages with the particulars of these charities.

\* Two of the most interesting races on record took place at York, the first at the August Meeting of 1804, and the second at the Spring Meeting of 1851. The first was a four mile match, between Mrs. Colonel Thornton and Mr. Flint. This novel and extraordinary event drew upwards of 50,000 persons to the course to witness it. A party of the 6th Light Dragoons attended the ground to preserve order. The lady rode with much spirit and dexterity in the early part of the race, but during the third mile her horse, *Vingarillo*, broke down, and in consequence lost the match. The great event of 1851, which drew an equal number of spectators, was a two mile match, for £1,000. each, between the Earl of Eglinton's horse *Flying Dutchman*, by Bay Middleton, five years old, carrying 8st. 8½lb.; and the Earl of Zetland's horse *Voltigeur*, by Voltaire, four years old, carrying 8st. The former horse won cleverly by about a length.

York has long been famous for its attachment to racing, both equestrian and pedestrian. John Lepton, Esq., of York, a gentleman in the service of James I., for a considerable wager undertook to ride, on horseback, three times from London to York, and three times from York to London, being a journey of upwards of 200 miles each way, in six successive days. On Monday, the 20th of May, 1606, he commenced his journey from Aldersgate, and arrived in York before it was dark at night. The next day he travelled from York to London, and this he did successfully every day in the week.

William Nevison, the notorious highwayman, whom Charles II. used to call *Swift Nick*, after committing a robbery near London, about sunrise, rode his mare to York in the course of the day, and appeared upon the Bowling Green in that City before sunset. From this latter circumstance, when brought to trial for the offence, he established an *alibi* to the satisfaction of the jury, though he was in reality guilty. But though he escaped this time, he was afterwards convicted of another robbery, and executed for the offence.

In the winter of 1773, Powell, the pedestrian, undertook for a wager to walk from London to York and back again in six days. On Monday, the 29th of November, he commenced his task early in the morning, and at half-past two o'clock on Wednesday he arrived in York, attended by a vast concourse of spectators. After an hour and a half's repose he again resumed his labour, and arrived in London at half-past six o'clock on Saturday night, amidst the congratulations of five hundred horsemen, and an immense multitude of pedestrians, who had gone out to Barnet to meet him.

**EMINENT MEN.**—Several of the *Worthies* who occupy niches in the York Temple of Fame, are already mentioned in the Annals of the Archbishops (See page 387); and amongst the other men of eminence, or persons who were famed for their piety, literary attainments, or proficiency in the arts and sciences, and who were natives of York, the following are the most celebrated. It may however be observed that, although so many great men have at different times resided in York, yet but few appear to have been born there.

*Constantine the Great*, as has already been observed at page 59, was supposed to have been a native of York, until Niebuhr published his "Lectures on the History of Rome." He, however, resided for a time in York, and there assumed the imperial purple on the death of his father Constantius.

*Alcuin*, one of the greatest luminaries of the age in which he flourished, was a native of York or its neighbourhood, as he himself declares in his poem on the Saints of that Diocese, and is supposed to have born about the year 720. Foreigners not been accustomed to pronounce the *w*, he omitted it in his name; which he mollified into *Albinus*, prefixing to it in France the name of *Flaccus*, from Horace. In his letters he often styles himself Flaccus Albinus. He was nobly born, and became a monk at York, and was made Deacon of that Church. He learned Latin and Greek, and the elements of the Hebrew language, and went through the sacred studies under Egbert and Elbert, who taught a great school in York. (Some writers assert that Alcuin received the rudiments of his education from the Venerable Bede.) When Elbert succeeded Egbert in the Archbishopric, in 766, he committed to Alcuin the care of the school, and of the great library belonging to the Church, and his reputation attracted crowds of students from Gaul and Germany, and many of them in after life became distinguished men. He was now esteemed the most erudite man of the age. Eanbald, the nephew of Elbert, being appointed to the See of York, sent Alcuin to Rome, to bring over his pall, in 780, and on his return from the "Eternal City," he met, at Parma, Charlemagne, or Charles the Great, King of France, afterwards Emperor. That potentate desirous of adding literary honours to the fame he had acquired in arms, earnestly desired to detain him; but the canons obliged him to return to his own Church. However that Prince prevailed with the King of Northumberland and the Archbishop of York to send him back to France. He appointed him to open a great school in his own Palace, and generally assisted in person at his lessons with the Princes, his sons—and this example was followed by the chief nobility of the country. He also, by his advice, instituted an academy in his Palace, consisting of many learned men, who met on certain days to discourse on points of sacred learning.

Alcuin, we are told by Gaillard, weaned Charlemagne from the passion for conquests, by discovering to him a new source of true greatness, far dearer to humanity; and it is the cultivation of the maxims and lessons of that wise tutor that has principally rendered the name of that great Prince immortal in the eyes of true judges; for instructed by such a master, the royal pupil learned to set a just value on true knowledge; and to place his glory in protecting science, in perfecting the administration, and in extending in every respect the empire of reason. When in his old age Alcuin retired from the distractions of the Palace, many followed him to his retreat at the Abbey of St. Martin, at Tours, where he wrote some of his best works, and where he continued his favourite occupation of teaching, till his death, which occurred on Whit Sunday, the 19th of May, 804. At his death he was lamented as the pride of his age and the benefactor of the Empire.

Alcuin's works are numerous, and the best edition of them is by the learned Andrew Duchesne, in three tomes, published in 1617. They consist principally of poems, elementary introductions to the different sciences, treatises on a variety of theological subjects, the lives of several Saints, and an interesting correspondence with the most celebrated characters of the age in which he lived. The Bible which Alcuin transcribed and presented to Charlemagne on the day of his coronation, is now in the British Museum, having been purchased for it a few years ago for the sum of £750.

*Robert Flower*, the hermit of Knaresborough, usually called St. Robert (though he has not been canonized), was the son of Took Flower, who was twice Mayor of York. He was born towards the close of the twelfth century, and became a monk of the Cistercian Order at York. After some years he removed to Knaresborough, where he resided at a hermitage among the rocks. From hence he removed to Spofforth, but returned to Knaresborough, where he led a hermit's life, and ended his days. His reputed sanctity led many persons to visit him, among whom was King John. The cell in which he passed his days still remains, and is known as St. Robert's Cave. It is romantically situated among the rocks overhanging the river Nidd, and will be familiar to the readers of Bulwer's historical romance called "Eugene Aram," it being the place in which Aram and his companions in guilt concealed the body of their murdered victim, and where the remains lay undiscovered for several years.

*John Waldby*, and *Robert* his brother, two eminent scholars who flourished in the fourteenth century, were natives of this City; Robert was the 47th Archbishop of the Province of York. (See page 403.)

*John Erghom*, another learned Friar of the Cistercian Order, was born in

York, and flourished about the year 1400. He was an able preacher, and the author of many books, most, if not all of which he dedicated to Edward Stafford, Earl of Hereford, and the Duke of Buckingham.

*John Bate*, a Carmelite Friar, a profound expositor of the Holy Scriptures, and an author of celebrity in the fifteenth century, was a native of York.

*Thomas Morton, Bishop of Durham*, was born in the Pavement, York, in 1564. His father, Richard Morton (allied to Cardinal Morton, Archbishop of Canterbury), was a mercer, and is said to have been the first of the trade that lived here—his successors in it being his apprentices. The subject of this notice was bred in the School of this City, and thence removed to St. John's College, Cambridge, of which he became a Fellow. Afterwards he became Chaplain to Lord Evers, and was sent as Ambassador to the King of Denmark and some German Princes, by King James I., after which he was preferred to the Deaneries of Gloucester and Winchester first, and then to the Sees of Chester, Coventry and Lichfield, and lastly to Durham. He was deprived of the latter bishopric by the Parliament in 1640, and died in 1659, aged 95. The writer of this prelate's life says that he was a schoolfellow at York with Guy Fawkes, the Gunpowder Plot Conspirator.

*Robert Carr, Earl of Somerset*, was born in this City. His father, Thomas Carr, a man of power and wealth in the south of Scotland, being active for Mary, the unfortunate Queen of Scots, was forced his country; but coming to York, where he was suffered to live quietly, his son Robert was born there. The latter, by having broken his leg at a tilting match in London, came under the cognizance of James I., who, pitying his ill luck, enquired into his family and person; and finding that his father had been a sufferer for the Queen, his mother, and that he was a deserving man, he took him into favour, and made him successively a Baronet, a Viscount, and Earl of Somerset. He was afterwards banished the Court, and died in obscurity in 1638.

*Sir Thomas Herbert, Bart.*, son of Mr. Thomas Herbert, Merchant, and Alderman of York, was born in this City in 1606. He was educated at Jesus College, Cambridge, and afterwards spent several years abroad in visiting Europe and parts of Asia and Africa. He was related to the Earl of Pembroke, and was chosen one of the attendants of Charles I.; and he and Bishop Juxton were the only persons who attended that unfortunate Monarch to the scaffold. Mr. Herbert attended Charles II. during his captivity, and for his fidelity he was made a Baronet at the Restoration. He published a folio of his travels, in 1677; and an account of the two last years of the reign of Charles I. was published in 1702. He was also the author of a poem,

entitled *Threnodia Carolina*. He died in this City in March, 1681, in the 76th year of his age, and was buried in the Church of St. Crux.

*Guy Fawkes*, of Gunpowder Plot celebrity, was, according to some, born in York, in 1570, in the parish of St. Michael-le-Belfry; but others assert that Bishopthorpe was the place of his nativity. He appears by birth and education to have been a Protestant. His father died when he was young, but his mother marrying again, he removed with her to Scotton, a small hamlet near Knaresborough, where he became acquainted with some influential Catholic families in the neighbourhood, whose religious faith he soon embraced. In 1593 he left England, and became a soldier in the Spanish army, in the Netherlands, under the Archduke Albert. In 1605 he returned to England, and acted a principal part in the projected gunpowder treason, for which he suffered execution, January 31st, 1606, at Westminster.

*Marmaduke Fothergill*, the Nonconformist Minister of Skipwith, whose collection of books and manuscripts are now in the Minster Library, was a native of York. (See pages 347 and 478.)

*Beilby Porteus*, Bishop of London, was born in this City in 1731, and was the youngest of nineteen children. From the school at Ripon he went to the University of Cambridge. He obtained various preferments, until he became Bishop of Chester in 1776. In 1787 he was translated to London, and he died in 1809.

*Henry Swinburne*, an eminent D.C.L., was born at York about the middle of the sixteenth century, and educated at the Free Grammar School of the City. As his contemporary and countryman, Gilpin, was called the "Apostle of the North," so Swinburne was styled the "Northern Advocate"—one being famous for his learning in divinity, and the other in the civil law.

*Christopher Cartwright*, a profound scholar, styled *Vir eruditissimus*, was born at York, and is known to the learned world for his Annotations on Genesis and Exodus.

*John Earle* was born in York in 1601, and entered Merton College, Oxford, in 1620. Wood, his biographer, tells us that his younger years were adorned with oratory, poetry, and witty fancies, and his elder with quaint preaching and subtle disputes. He rose successively from the Deanery of Westminster to the Bishopric of Worcester, and ultimately to that of London. He died at Oxford in 1665, and was buried near the high altar in the Chapel of Merton College, in that City.

*Sir Clifton Wintringham, Bart.*, physician to King George III., was born at York, in the house now known as the Judges' Lodgings, in Lendal, in



1710. His father was also an eminent physician in this City. Sir Clifton published several works, viz., "An Experimental Inquiry into some parts of the Animal Structure," in 1740; "An Inquiry into the Exillity of the Vessels of the Human body," in 1748; "De Morquibusdum," two vols., in 1782 and 1791; and an edition of Dr. Mead's "Monita et Præcepta Medica cum multis notis." He died in London on the 10th of January, 1794, aged 84.

*John Flaaman*, the famous sculptor, by accident was born in York, July 6th, 1755, his parents happening to be here at the time of his birth, in search of employment; but he settled early with his father in London. His excellence as a sculptor is universally acknowledged, and it is to be regretted that his native City does not possess a single specimen of his skill.

*William Etty, R.A.*, "the poetic painter of the human form," was born in this City in 1787, and was apprenticed to a printer at Hull, but after having served his time, he adopted the profession of an artist; studied under Sir Thomas Lawrence; and then travelled in Italy, and stayed some time at Venice. In 1827 he was elected a Fellow of the Royal Academy; and after having amassed a considerable fortune, he died at York, in November, 1849, in the 63rd year of his age, and his remains were interred in the Churchyard of St. Olave, Marygate, attended by the Corporation and a numerous body of his fellow citizens. Etty's biography has been recently published.

The late *George Todd*, bookseller, of York, published an interesting little History of Sheriff Hutton Castle. This much respected person lost his life from cold, contracted by his zealous endeavours in assisting in the attempt to extinguish the fire at York Minster, in 1829. Before his death he wrote a short account of that fire, which is given in the second edition of Halfpenny's Gothic Ornaments.

*Robert Davies, Esq.*, the late learned Town Clerk of York, was born in this City, and now resides at the Mount, without Micklegate Bar. This gentleman published, in 1843, a very interesting work entitled "Extracts from the Municipal Records of the City of York, in the fifteenth century," one vol. 8vo.; and in 1850, "The Fawke's of York in the sixteenth Century," a small 8vo. vol., was published from the pen of the same writer.

*George Lawton, Esq.*, a native of this City, and now residing at Nunthorpe, near York (a Proctor of the Ecclesiastical Court of York of many years standing, and also Registrar of the Archdeaconry of the East Riding of Yorkshire), has published the following works:—"The Marriage Act, arranged with Notes," 8vo. in 1823—second edition in 1824; A Treatise of Bona Notabilia, together with an account of the Archbishopal Courts of Probate within the Province of York, and of the peculiar Courts of Probate within

that Province," 8vo., 1825; "A list of Manorial Courts within the Counties of York and Nottingham, which possess the right of proving Wills," 8vo. "Collectio Rerum Ecclesiasticarum de Diocesi Eboracensi, or Collections Relative to the Churches and Chapels within the Diocese of York," to which are added "Collections Relative to the Diocese of Ripon," two vols., 8vo., 1840—a second edition of this work in one large vol., 8vo., was published in 1842, with an appendix, containing Excerpta from the MS. Repertory of Endowments by Dr. Ducarel, preserved in Lambeth Palace, transcribed by permission of the late Archbishop of Canterbury; and "The Religious Houses of Yorkshire," 8vo., in 1853.

*Mr. John Browne*, of Blake Street, York (a native of York), has published a very voluminous and elaborate "History of the Edifice of the Metropolitan Church of St. Peter, York." This great work, which was commenced in 1827, and completed in 1847, is in 33 numbers (4to Elephant) to correspond with Halfpenny's "Gothic Ornaments;" or in two vols. It is illustrated by extracts from authentic records, by plans, sections, and engravings of architectural and sculptural details; and some of the best authorities have declared it to be, not only the best *History* of the Cathedral, but to be of more practical service to the profession of the Architect, than any other work published on pointed architecture and its decorations.

The following eminent and learned individuals though not born there, were, or, as in some of the cases have been, so long connected with York, as to justify us in classing them amongst the worthies of that venerable City; for most certainly the names of Drake, Gent, Hargrove, Wellbeloved, and Phillips, will ever be associated with the *literati* of York.

*Francis Drake*, the historian of York, was the son of the Rev. F. Drake, Rector of Hemsworth and Vicar of Pontefract. He was born in 1695, and in early life took up his residence in York, where he practised as a surgeon of good reputation. He married Mary, daughter of John Woodyear, Esq., of Crookhill, near Doncaster, by whom he had two sons, Rev. Francis Drake, D.D., Vicar of St. Mary's, Beverley, and Rector of Winestead, in Holderness; and Rev. William Drake, F.A.S., Rector of Isleworth, Middlesex. The subject of this notice was an eminent antiquary, and F.R.S. He published his valuable work called "Eboracum, or the History and Antiquities of York," in one vol., folio, with plates, in 1736, which was dedicated to his friend the Earl of Burlington. He also was one of the compilers of the "Parliamentary History of England to the Restoration," and contributed several papers to the Philosophical Transactions, and the *Archæologia*. He

died in 1770, aged 75, and was buried in St. Mary's Church, Beverley. His residence in York was in Coney Street, near the George Hotel.

*Thomas Gent*, a well known collector and publisher of antiquities relative to Yorkshire, was born in Dublin, in 1691, and in due time was apprenticed to a printer in that City; but becoming unsettled, he ran away from his master and went to London, where he soon met with employment. He afterwards removed to York, where he worked in the office of Mr. White, in Petergate, but soon returned to Ireland to visit his friends; again came over to England and settled in London, from whence he removed to York in 1724, at the invitation of his former master's widow, whom he married not long after, and settled in Coffee Yard, behind Stonegate. He was now master of one of the few printing offices out of London, for he himself tells us, in his autobiography, that at this time there were no printers in Chester, Liverpool, Preston, Manchester, Kendal, or Leeds. In 1730 he printed and published "The Antient and Modern History of the Famous City of York." In 1736 he published his History of Hull, which was followed by a History of Ripon, and in 1762 his "History of the East Window of York Minster" appeared. All these works display considerable industry and care, and are highly esteemed by the collectors of English topography, perhaps on account of their singularity. Gent's closing years were often embittered by the difficulties he met with in his business, and he died at his house in Petergate, on the 19th of May, 1778, in his 87th year, and was interred in the Church of St. Michael-le-Belfry. Many years afterwards his autobiography was published. Mr. R. Davies, in his lecture at the York Institute, already quoted, stated that in the large house in Petergate, now in the occupation of Dr. Shann,\* formerly resided Dr. Alexander Hunter, the author of several works, and opposite lived "Tommy Gent," an old well-known printer; whose productions, though the rudest specimens of typography, sold at a better price than some of the bulkier tomes of his neighbour. Gent is thus described by Allen:—"In his person as well as his mind eccentricity generally appeared predominant. He was low in stature, mostly wore a long cloak fastened round him with a belt, suffered his beard to grow a great length, and seemed also to affect an extraordinary air of gravity. His circumstances were generally indigent, so much so, that he often sold almanacks, &c., for the York booksellers."

*Laurence Sterne*, the celebrated author of *Tristram Shandy*, was born in

\* According to the same authority, the Talbot Hotel, a very old Inn, anciently occupied the site of this house.

Clonmel (Ireland), in 1713, but he resided in York and its vicinity for several years. His father, Roger Sterne, grandson of the Archbishop of that name, was a Lieutenant in Handaside's regiment, and fought through the Marlborough wars in the Low Countries. While in Flanders he married the widow of a Captain Herbert, an Irish lady, whose maiden name was Nuttle, and whose family had long resided in Clonmel. Laurence came into the world on an ominous occasion to his family, inasmuch as the regiment in which his father had served, was disbanded the very day of his birth. After this catastrophe, Roger Sterne removed to Elvington Hall, near York, the family seat of the Sternes, and where his mother, the daughter of Sir George Jaques, resided. Roger soon afterwards re-entered the army, and for some years he was quartered in several parts of Ireland. He passed a year in the barracks of Wicklow, where little Laurence, then seven years old, had a wonderful escape of his life, by falling into a mill-race at Animo, when on a visit with a relation of his mother's who had a curacy there. At length he was sent to defend Gibraltar during the siege under Elliot; he had, while there, the ill-luck to be run through the body by a brother Captain in a duel (the cause of the quarrel, his son tells us, was a goose), but, surviving the catastrophe, was sent on his last journey to Jamaica, where he died at Port Antonio. "My father," says Sterne, "was a little smart man, active to the last degree in all exercises; most patient of fatigue and disappointment; in temper, rapid and hasty, but of a kindly sweet disposition, void of all design, and so innocent in his own intentions that he suspected no one, so that you might have cheated him ten times a day, if nine had not been sufficient for your purpose."

Meanwhile Laurence grew to manhood. In his twentieth year his cousin, Mr. Sterne, of Elvington, sent him to the University of Cambridge, where he remained until he attained his Master's degree in 1740, but did not distinguish himself in any way. His uncle, Jaques Sterne, who was prebendary of Durham, and held numerous Rectories in Yorkshire, gave the young clericus the living of Sutton, pleasantly situated in the Forest of Galtres, where he remained for twenty years. Here he married, and by his wife's interest—for he quarrelled with the patron uncle—obtained another living, that of Stillington. His life for these twenty years appears to have been spent in perfect ease, innocence, and quiet. He read all sorts of out of the way books, amused himself with painting, fiddling, and shooting, diverting as best he might the *ennui* of existence in a remote agricultural shire. With the Squire of the parish he was not, he says, on good terms, but a cordial intimacy with a few pleasant families who admired his wit, and were kind to

his wife and children, made amends. At length in the year 1760, in his forty-seventh year, he took a house in the City of York, and having settled his family there, went up to London to publish the two first volumes of "Tristram Shandy." The first edition had been printed at York, and so dubious were the booksellers of that town of its merits, that the publisher believed himself making a sacrifice when he gave £50. for it. For the second London edition, however, Sterne received £600.; and suddenly became a notability. In the capital, his circle of admirers became very great, though some of the stricter clergy, a small body in those times, condemned the work, as inconsistent with his clerical character. But among the polite of London of that period Sterne became the fashion, and Earl Falconberg was so delighted with the book that he presented its author with the Rectory of Cawood, which, besides being a pleasant spot, brought him some £300. per ann. additional—a curious reward certainly for such a production.

The order in which his productions henceforth appear, is somewhat comic; the volumes of "Tristram" and of his Sermons alternately with the greatest regularity.

The great charm of *Tristram Shandy* lies in the characters and conversations of my *Uncle Toby* and *Corporal Trim*, whose simplicity, benevolence, and unselfishness of nature, are pourtrayed with the finest of pencils. Almost all the delineations in the work are portraits. *Yorick*, for instance, is Sterne himself idealized, to a very considerable extent. It is Sterne in his best moments. *Le Fevre* was a Lieutenant in Roger Sterne's regiment, from whom the young Laurence received the rudiments of literature. "He taught me," says Sterne, in his affected way, "not only the Latin grammar, but the grammar of virtue, and instilled in me, not the principles of a *Parson*, but of a *Divine*;" and continuing to muse over his memory, says, "he would have plucked a nettle from his grave, had he seen one grow there." The origin of *Uncle Toby* is curious, if the author's account of it may be credited. Sterne's uncle, to whom he was indebted for his Yorkshire living, was a partizan politician, and wished to enlist the nephew's pen in his interest. This desire the latter refused to comply with, and a quarrel ensued. Sterne, who had begun to amuse himself by writing his own memoirs, to dissipate the *ennui* of life in his Yorkshire Rectory, introduced some sketches of his relative and patron, which were evidently traced with an inimical pencil; for on showing them to some friends they remarked that the traits were either too dark or too true, and that parsons had enemies enough without slandering one another. Upon this Sterne changed his design, and drew the outline of my *Uncle Toby*, which is supposed to be a direct antithesis to the character of his patron.

*William Peckitt*, a skilful glass painter and stainer, was born at Hustwaite, in the North Riding of Yorkshire, in 1731, and commenced practising his art in York in 1751, being entirely a self-taught artist. Some stained glass windows, executed by him, adorn the south transept of the Minster, as we have already observed; as well as another in the Magistrate's Room, at the Guild-Hall. He died at York in 1795, in the 64th year of his age, and was buried in the chancel of the Church of St. Martin, Micklegate.

*Lindley Murray*, the celebrated grammarian, lived for a number of years at Holdgate, near York. He was a native of Pennsylvania, in North America, and resided for some part of his life at New York, where his father was a distinguished merchant. At the age of nineteen he commenced the study of the law, and subsequently practised both as a counsel and attorney in all the Courts of the State of New York. He continued in this profession till the troubles in America interrupted all business of this nature, and then he engaged in mercantile pursuits, and soon acquired a handsome independence. But his health becoming impaired, he came over to this country in 1784, in order to recruit it. Being much pleased with York and its neighbourhood, he at length settled there, and purchased the house which stands near the bridge at Holdgate, where he passed the remainder of his days. His disorder increasing, he was rendered incapable of enjoying the usual occupations and amusements of life; and as his mental faculties were unimpaired, he directed his attention to the composition of literary works for the rising generation. Copies of his first work, "The Power of Religion on the Mind," were distributed anonymously among the principal inhabitants of York; but the author did not remain long concealed, for a new edition was soon called for. The first edition of his "English Grammar" appeared in 1795, and had a rapid sale. It was quickly followed by the "English Exercises," the "English Reader," and the "Introduction" and "Sequel to the Reader," and a "Spelling Book." All of these books were originally printed in York, but the copyright was afterwards disposed of to a London publisher. These works were received with considerable satisfaction, and still continue scholastic works of the first character. Having begun his literary career from disinterested motives, he constantly devoted all the profits of his publications to charitable and benevolent purposes; and in all his works it was his constant aim to promote the cause of religion and virtue. Lindley Murray died at Holdgate on the 16th of January, 1826, aged 80, and was interred in the burial-ground belonging to the Society of Friends in this City, of which body he was a distinguished member.

*William Hargrove, Esq.*, was born at Knaresborough, October 16th, 1788,

being the youngest son of the historian of that place. In July, 1813, he left his native town, and became a proprietor and the editor of the *York Herald* newspaper. In 1818 he published, in two vols., royal 8vo, a "History and Description of the Ancient City of York;" and the same year he was elected a member of the Common Council of the City. He also, afterwards, served the office of Sheriff of the City, and during several years, was one of the City Commissioners, and took an active part in most of the public improvements of the Borough. He is still the editor and proprietor of the *Herald* (in conjunction with two of his sons), after forty-three years of extraordinary political excitement. Mr. Hargrove also published two or three excellent Guides to York.

*Mr. Alfred E. Hargrove* (son of the above) published an interesting little work, entitled "Anecdotes of Archery," which contains an account of all the existing societies, rules, and other matters relating to archery. The same gentleman published a sort of Tourists' Guide to all the places of public interest within twenty-six miles of York.

*Rev. Charles Wellbeloved*, pastor of the English Presbyterian Chapel, in St. Saviourgate, for more than fifty-seven years, having first been assistant to the Rev. N. Cappe for eight years. (See page 568.) He began his ministerial services at York on the 4th of February, 1792; consequently he has exercised the functions of the ministry in the above-mentioned Chapel for sixty-five years. Mr. Wellbeloved is the author of a new translation of portions of the Bible, viz., the Pentateuch,\* and the poetical and didactic books, from Job to Solomon's Song, inclusive, with notes mostly original, in two vols., 4to, designed for the use of families. In 1842 he published his interesting work, called "Eburacum, or York under the Romans," one vol., 4to. For some years he has been the Curator of Antiquities in the Museum of the Yorkshire Philosophical Society, and the "Descriptive Account of the Antiquities in the Grounds and in the Museum," was composed by him, with the exception of the part relating to the Egyptian antiquities, which was drawn up by his son-in-law, the Rev. J. Kendrick. Mr. Wellbeloved was born at Westminster, in the parish of St. Giles, on the 6th of April, 1769, so that he is now eighty-eight years of age. He studied at New College, Hackney.

*John Phillips, Esq., F.R.S.*, the celebrated Professor of Geology, and now the deputer "Reader" in that science in the University of Oxford, has been connected with the City and County of York, for more than a quarter of a

\* The *Pentateuch*, or Five Books of Moses, is the oldest writing in the world. These books were written 3,300 years ago, and claim an antiquity higher, by nearly a thousand years, than any other authentic history we possess.

century. Professor Phillips is the author of several works on Natural History, Geology, &c.; amongst which are *Illustrations of the Geology of Yorkshire*, 4to., with plates vol. i. in 1829; 2nd edition, 1836; vol. ii. in 1836; and the *Rivers, Mountains, and Sea Coast, of Yorkshire*, 8vo., with plates, 1st edition, 1853; 2nd edition, 1855. He is also the author of many papers published in the proceedings of the principal scientific Societies in the Kingdom, and he has published a Geological Map of Yorkshire, coloured.

## The Borough of Scarborough.

THOUGH the early history of this place is veiled in deep obscurity—not a record or tradition of its foundation being in existence—yet it is highly probable that it was occupied by the Romans, if not by the aborigines of Britain. The various advantages of its situation tend to favour the opinion that the site of Scarborough was a Roman Station. As has been observed at pages 66 and 67 of this volume, there were Roman Military Stations of importance in the immediate neighbourhood of Whitby (*Dunus Sinus*), and at Bridlington Bay (*Gabrantivicorum Sinus Portuosus vel Salutaris*), and the direct road between these two stations ran through this part. It is more than reasonable to suppose that when the Romans sailed or rather rowed from the Belgic or Gaulic coast for Britain—for in those early times the art of sailing was very defective—they could not be sure of their landing place on the other side, and that they frequently made use of the fine bays of Scarborough and Filey, as well as that of Bridlington; and though no military road does seemingly lead from the two former places to the station at Malton, the ancient *Camuldunum*, yet we are not without some evidence to support the conjecture that such roads once existed. “From Filey to Flotmanby,” writes Mr. Hinderwell, in his excellent *History of Scarborough*, “the road is vulgarly called the Street;\* and in some grounds on this road was the vestige of a fortress, most probably Roman, now called Castle Hill; hence the road runs to Spittal,† where it meets the Scarborough road.” Mr. Drake,

\* Street is derived from the Latin word *Stratum*; and whenever we meet with a road called Street, or any town or village said to lie upon the Street, we may be assured that a Roman way was at or near it.

† Spittal is the diminutive of the word Hospital. It was usual with our Christian Saxon ancestors to build such houses at the conjunction of several roads, for the relief of poor distressed travellers. (See page 518.)



in his *History of York*, says, that whoever surveys the way from Scarborough to Seamer with an antiquary's eye will find several traces of Roman work on it, particularly on both sides of the bridge between Seamer and Spittal, which is over a rivulet that runs from the vast carrs in this place. "The quantity of large blue pebble, and the particular manner of jointing, sufficiently indicate it to be Roman;" says Hinderwell, on the authority of Drake, "and were there no other testimony on the whole road but this, it would be a strong argument in its favour. The road is evidently forced through these carrs, which were otherwise impassable, and seems to have required Roman industry and labour to perfect it. Besides," he continues "this is the direct way from Bridlington Bay to Whitby, two noted Roman ports." Also, since Hinderwell wrote these lines, part of a Roman road was discovered in Seamer Lane, about a mile from Scarborough. It may then be presumed that the Roman way from the port of Scarborough to Spittal, met the Filey road, and ran with it in a direct line for Malton; and though there be no remains now apparent to confirm this, yet the name of the Street renders the conjecture probable. We may here observe with Drake, that, the Roman vicinary, or occasional roads, were not raised with such care and pains, as their grand military ways; for which reason we are not to expect to meet with them at this day.

Indeed it seems all but impossible that the *Comites Littoris Saxonici*, or guardians of these sea-coasts against the invasions of the Saxons, could have defended them without the occupancy of the present site of Scarborough, and the junction of the highways above-mentioned. Hinderwell traces the continued line of defence from the borders of the sea shore, along the country westward of Scarborough, communicating with the military road which intersected the country from Malton to Mulgrave, near Dunsley Bay. "The Romans, in addition to the maritime garrisons and military roads," he writes, "formed camps in the most convenient situations to prevent the enemy penetrating into the interior country. The lofty promontory at Scarborough, on which the ruins of the Castle now stand, the elevated hill of Weapon Ness (Mount Oliver), and that of Seamer Moor at a little distance, have opposed a strong natural barrier to any hostile invasions from the sea, and must have been formidable stations when occupied by the Roman troops. The country to the west also has presented a grand line of defence. The hills rise with gentle ascents from the south, and fall with steep brows and sudden declivities to the north. These precipitous brows, forming a long chain westward, had but few passages practicable for armies, and which were rendered more difficult by the assistance of art. The line of defence seems to have com-

menced at Weapon Ness, which has been intersected by a rampart; and the tumuli on its eastern side, which were visible previous to the enclosure, render it probable that there may at this place have been a contest. The continuation of the line again appears in the camps on Seamer Moor. The remains of these camps show that the summit of the hill has been strongly fortified by military works."

He then goes on to notice the remains of camps, entrenchments, and tumuli on Hutton Bushell Moor, on the plain of Scamridge, on Sawdon Heights near Troutsdale, on Pickering Moor, &c.; and the Roman remains which have been discovered at Stainton Dale, Ravenhill Hall, &c.,—descriptions of which will be found in the accounts of those places in the second volume of this history.

But the evidence is more clear and satisfactory that Scarborough was a town of some note during the Saxon period of our national history. Its ancient name, *Scearburgh*, is of Saxon origin, the first syllable *Scar*, signifying a rock, and *Burg*, a fortified place.\* The first historical notice of the place is in a work by Thorkelin, a Danish historian of some note, illustrative of the invasions of Northumberland by the Danes, in the ninth and tenth centuries.† "Towards the end of the reign of Adalbricht, King of Northumberland," writes he, "an army of Danes, under Knut and Gorm, invading England, subdued a great part of this Province; upon which Adalbricht, meeting the enemy and fighting a battle at Clifland or Cleveland, in the north, routed the Danes with great slaughter. But soon after this, the Danes leading their forces to *Scardaborga*, fought and obtained the victory; then marching to York they subdued the inhabitants, and passed some time in peace." This must have occurred in the tenth century, as Gorm died in 930.

At page 103 of this volume, we have shewn how Tosti, the outlawed brother to Harold, King of England, engaged the assistance of Hadrada, the stern Norse King, to dethrone his brother. Hadrada, with his fleet, landed at Shetland, where Tosti joined him, and they sailed onward to Scarborough, which they plundered and burnt in the year 1066. In narrating this event

\* According to Camden, *Scearburgh* signifies, 'Burgus in prærupta rupe,' a Burgh upon a craggy rock. Somner has it, 'Urbs vel Arx in acuta, vel acuminata rupe sita, ut apud Brabantus Scharpenberg;' i. e. Mons acutus; a City, walled town, or fort or Castle upon a point, or situated upon a pointed rock, as among the Brabanters, that is, a sharp or pointed hill. *Scarr* also signifies *Collis petrosus et asper*, a rocky and rugged hill.—SKINNER'S DICTIONARY, Art. Scarborough.

† Translation of Nordymbra Sive historia rerum in Northumbria a Danis, Norvegisque gestarum, seculis, ix., x., and xi., 4to, 1788.

Snorro, a Norwegian statesman and historian says, "Afterwards Harold Hadrada, being driven to *Scardaburgum*, landed and gave battle to the inhabitants. Here ascending a hill commanding the town, he caused an immense pile of wood to be raised and set fire to. Then, while the flames were widely spreading, large burning fire-brands were thrown down upon the town; until one house catching fire from another, the whole City surrendered (*toto dedita est civitas!*). The invaders having slain great numbers, plundered every article capable of removal, and the only terms on which the lives of the conquered could be spared, was to surrender themselves and families unconditionally to the King, who subjected the whole Province to his authority."

A modern writer gives the following account of the same event:—"They (i. e. the King of Norway, his son, &c.) then coasted along the eastern side of Scotland, and there they met Tosti and his vessels. They sailed together, and as they passed along, attacked the port of Scarborough. Finding the inhabitants disposed to make an obstinate resistance, they made themselves masters of a rock which overlooked the town; on this they heaped up an enormous pile of trunks and branches of trees, with stubble thrown between, which they set fire to, and rolled down upon the houses; then favoured by the conflagration, they forced the gates, and plundered the town." Alluding to this interesting incident, Francis Palgrave, Esq., F.R.A.S., in his illustration of the Anglo-Saxon Period of the History of England, writes, "Scarborough, after a stubborn but unavailing defence, was also compelled to yield."

These, and the subsequent ravages of the Northmen, together with the desolating policy of William the Conqueror, reduced Scarborough to a miserable state of obscurity, and that is supposed to be the reason why the place is not mentioned in the Domesday Book. It was, however, probably included as a part of the Manor and Soke of Falsgrave, anciently called Walsgrif, Walesgrif, and Walsgrave, which before the Conquest had belonged to the above-mentioned Tosti, Earl of Northumberland.

"There are in Walsgrif," says this ancient Survey, "and in the hamlet of Nordfeld, Northstead, or Peasholm, fifteen geldable (taxable) carucates of land, which may be cultivated with eight plows. Tosti held these as one Manor. It is now the King's. There are within this Manor five villaines, who hold two carucates. There is a wood, with pasturage, three miles in length, and two miles in breadth. In the time of King Edward (the Confessor) it was valued at fifty-six pounds, now at thirty-six shillings. (Behold the effects of the before-mentioned devastation). To this Manor belongs the soke (or jurisdiction) of the following lands; *Asgozbi, Osgodby; Ledbeston, Lebberston; Griethorpe, Griethorpe; Scagetorp, Scagglethorpe; Eterstorp* and

Rodbestorp; Facelac, *Filey*; Bertune, *Burton-Dale* near Weapon Ness; Depedale *Deepdale*, between Weapon Ness and Cayton; Atune, *Ayton*; Neuueton, Prestetune, Hortune, and Martune, now united in Hutton-Bushell; Wicham, *Wykeham*; Rostune, *Ruston*; Thornelai, *Thorney-brow*; Steintun, *Stainton-Dale*; Brinniston, *Burniston*; Scallibi, *Scalby*; Cloctune, *Cloughton*." The whole Manor and Soke contained eighty-four carucates of geldable or taxable land, and had on it one hundred and seven socmen, who cultivated forty-six carucates, when it was the property of Tosti; but at the time of the Domesday Survey there were only seven socmen, fifteen villains, and fifteen bordars, who had only seven and a half carucates, the rest of the land was waste; an evident proof of great desolation.

Scarborough again emerged from obscurity about the year 1136, when the building of the Castle was commenced by William, Earl of Albemarle; but the first authentic document on record, indicating the importance of the place, is a charter of incorporation which was granted to the town by King Henry II., in 1181. And it is stated in an old record still preserved, that the same Monarch "being then seized of a market at Scarborough, gave the same to the burgesses there." In 1153 Scarborough possessed vessels and other property, of which they were robbed by Eystyn, King of Norway. In 1252 Henry III. granted a patent for making a new port at *Scardeburgh*; and in a charter of his, recited and confirmed by Edward III., in 1356, mention is repeatedly made of the *New Town*, in contradistinction to the *Old*. Many religious houses of great antiquity were founded here, of which more anon.

For some centuries after the Norman Conquest the population and commerce of the town can only be conjectured from comparative statements with other places, as scantily detailed in public records; thus the Quinzieme, a duty payable by every merchant, was in the year 1205 accounted for at thirty-five towns only; of which eight were in Yorkshire, and of these Scarborough was one. The principle articles of commerce were wool and fish.

In 1301, when Edward I. required the ports of England and Ireland to send ships manned and armed to Berwick, against the Scots; among the ports named are Hull, Ravenser, Grymsbye, &c., one ship each; "Scardeburgh, two." In the years 1310, 1324, and 1336, Scarborough was again called on to furnish its quota; and in 1337, when all the ports were required to return representatives well acquainted with maritime affairs, to a Council of Trade, Scarborough sent three. When a similar assembly was summoned to London in 1334, Hull and Newcastle sent two persons each; Scarborough, one. At the Siege of Calais, in 1346, Scarborough furnished one ship and nineteen men. In the 1378 and 1379 the trade of this place suffered great

damage by captures by the French, and is stated to have paid one thousand pounds in ransoms within these two years. Scarborough contributed £86. 13s. 4d. to a loan to the King, in 1394, at which period the City of York advanced £200., and Hull £100. towards the same.

Leland, in the first volume of his *Itinerary*, gives the following description of the ancient town of Scarborough, in the reign of Henry VIII. (1534.) "Scardeburg Toune, though it be privilegid, yet it semith to be yn Pickering Lithe, for the Castelle of Scardeburg is countid of the jurisdiction of Pickering, and the shore from Scardeburg to the very point of Philaw bridge\* by the Se, about vj miles from Scardeburg towards Bridlington, is of Pickering Lith jurisdiction. Scardeburg where it is not defendid by the Warth and the Se, is Waullid a little with ston, but most with ditches and walls of yerth. In the Toune to entre by land be but two gates; Newburgh gate meately good, and Aldeburgh gate very base. The Toune stonidith hole† on a slaty clife, and shoith very faire to the Se side. Ther is but one Paroche Chirch‡ in the Toune of our Ladie, joyning almost to the Castelle; it is very faire, and isled on the sides, and crosse isled, and hath three auncient toures for belles, with pyramides on them, whereof two toures be at the weste ende of the Chirch, and one in the middle of the cross isle. There is a greate Chapelle§ by side, by the Newborow gate.

"There were in the Toune three howsis of Freres, gray, blacke, and white.

"At the south-est point of Scardeburg Toune, by the shore, is a bulwark, now yn ruine by the Se rage, made by Richard the Third, that lay awhile at Scardeburg Castelle; and beside began to waul a piece of the toune *quadrato sazo*.||

"Ther cummith, by south este of the bulwark, a rill of fresch water,\*\* and so goith into the Se.

"I hard ther of an old mariner that Henry the First gave grete privilege to the Toun of Scardeburg.

"The Peere whereby scour is made for shippes is now sore decayid, and that almost in the middle of it."

BOUNDARIES.—The town of Scarborough, which at first, probably, consisted of the habitation of fishermen, was confined within narrow limits—the houses for the conveniency of the fishery being situated near the sea-shore. The building of the Castle, and subsequently of the Churches, as the historian of the place very naturally observes, would consequently invite many artizans

\* Filey Bridge.

+ Wholly.

‡ St. Mary's.

§ St. Thomas's.

|| Squared Stone.

\*\* The Mill Beck.

and labourers; and the protection of a strong military garrison would lead to an increased population. As it advanced in respectability and opulence, the town gradually ascended the hill to the north and west. It appears to have been defended on the west—towards the land,—and on the south-east towards the sea, by strong walls; on the north by a deep moat and mounds of earth, while the Castle Cliff formed a defence on the east, totally inaccessible. Some of the foundations of the ancient walls are yet remaining, and the line of their direction may be traced so as to ascertain the boundaries with sufficient accuracy. A line drawn from north to south in the direction of Cross Street and Bland's Cliff, appear nearly to mark the boundary on that side, for it is evident that the Old Borough did not extend westward beyond the bottom, or east end of Newborough Street. Some of the houses in Auborough or Awborough (Auldborough or Old Borough) Street, and Cross Street have been built upon the foundations of the western wall, which pursued a southern direction from Auborough Gate, until it terminated at the top of the cliff now called Bland's Cliff,\* near the end of Newborough Street. The wall which protected the town from the south-east towards the sea, joined the southern extremity of the western wall—as we have said at the foot of Newborough Street—and pursuing an eastern direction passed along the south side of the street, now called Merchant's Row, and terminated at the foot of the Castle Dykes—so that the walls of Scarborough extended from Auborough Gate or Bar, at the north end of Auborough Street, to near the south end of the Castle Dykes.

Vestiges of the ancient moat which protected the town on the north side are yet visible, and may be traced from Auborough Gate in an eastern direction, through a field to the great bank forming part of the ancient mound. "The line of this bank which stretches to the North Cliff," writes Hinderwell, "is a sufficient demarcation on this part, and it is presumed it must afterwards have pursued an eastern direction to the foot of the Castle Hill, through Charnell Garth, which has been an ancient burial ground; † but as

\* Previous to the year 1722, the only road for carriages from the town to the sea shore was through Merchant's Row and West Sand Gate; but in that year Mr. John Bland, a merchant in the town, agreed with the Corporation "to make, at his own cost, a horse-way quite down the cliff to the Sands, to pave the same from the top to the bottom, and to build a substantial staith or wall facing the sea," for which the Corporation engaged to pay him eighty-five pounds. This communication with the shore he completed in such a manner as to accommodate carriages also; and hence it obtained, and still retains the name of Bland's Cliff,

† In 1824, when the present house was erected near Charnell Garth, a trench about four feet wide, and extending from the fence-line from the road to the Cliff, was dis-

the land has considerably wasted away in that part, this line cannot now be traced."

Such were the boundaries of the Old Town of Scarborough, and the addition of the New Town, or Newborough, is supposed to have been made in the reign of Henry III., or previously to that time, the New Town being, as before intimated, contra-distinguished from the Old one in the charter of that Monarch, granted in 1252.

The wall mentioned in Leland's description, before quoted, and which extended from the north end of Auborough Street to St. Thomas Street, was taken down in 1817; and when the road near Auborough Gate was widened in 1806, the foundation of an ancient bastion or watch tower, of twelve feet diameter, was discovered on each side of the gate. The "rill of fresch water" noticed by Leland, was the ancient moat of the "Auld Borough" (the "Aldeburg" of Leland), and was afterwards known as the Mill Beck. In forming the public sewer in 1847, a part of this very ancient watercourse was exposed to view, in St. Sepulchre Street, and the following accurate description of it, by the late W. Travis, M.D., who ascertained its course, is taken from the Rev. Joshua Fawcett's excellent little work, entitled "A Memorial of the Church of St. Mary's, Scarboro'." We must first observe that it appears from a patent granted in the reign of Henry III., that leave was given to the Monks or Friars of the Order of St. Francis to pull down houses, and to build their Convent on the spot of ground between Cukewild Hill and the watercourse called Mill Beck, given to the Crown by William, son of Robert de Morpeth. "Between the fountain or middle conduit and the E. side of St. Sepulchre Street, in making the public sewer, in March, 1747, a section of an ancient watercourse was cut across at right angles, and there can be no doubt it was the course of the Mill Beck mentioned in the description of the site of the Franciscan Convent. The part exposed to view was thirty-five feet broad at the surface, with *shelving* sides, and the depth of the centre was upwards of eighteen feet below the present level of the street. The deposit of decomposed vegetable matter filling up this ancient drain, was in layers of debris so stratified from the lowest and heaviest at the bottom to the lightest at the surface, it had evidently required the lapse of ages to produce so compressed a substance, resembling peat; and every appearance

covered, containing some hundreds of human skulls and bones, which, from their promiscuous appearance, seemed to have been removed from some other cemetery. Charnell Garth is the site of the Chapel or Oratory, belonging to the Carmelites or White Friars. See the account of the Carmelites at a subsequent page.

of character and locality proved it to have been the moat of the Old Borough, which existed soon after the Conquest, and many years before the New Borough was chartered.\* The watercourse thus discovered appeared to pass in a direction from N.W. to E.S.E., i. e., from below Aubrough Street and Duple, which, even from present appearances, seem to have been formed on the site of an extensive morass, from the draining of which, and from the adjacent acclivity of Tollergate and Aubrough Street, this watercourse had been supplied. This conjecture is strongly supported by corroborative evidence:—It appears that as early as the 29th Henry III., there are Royal Grants extant in the Tower, by that Monarch, to the Franciscan Friars, in which reference is distinctly made to this locality; and in the 9th year of Edward II., Reginald Molendarius (the miller) gave some land to these Monks, which is described as bounded by the "Mill Beck," by "St. Sepulchre's Churchyard," and by the "King's Highway" (now Long Westgate); and after the New Borough had been chartered, frequent description is made of houses, &c., in this vicinity, as being situate near "Newbro' Brig;" whence it is evident a bridge had been thrown across this watercourse. The moat of the *New* Borough takes its rise at the S. end of Huntriss' Row, and passing under Newbrough Bar, thence behind St. Thomas' Hospital, proceeded in a N.E. direction to Aubrough Gate. About the middle of this moat a branch was given off, through a clough at the N. end of the covered part of the W. ropery, which branch or gutter crosses St. Thomas' Street, Cross Street, and Duple, and thence through the Friarage to its final outlet at West Sandgate. This branch is noticed in the old records by the denomination of *Dam-geeth*; † and it probably had some connection with the mill-dam above mentioned, which by the aid of the clough (only recently removed) the supply of water for the mill could be regulated, as a scarcity or overflow required such an auxiliary. Though this watercourse has for ages been dried up, yet that part of the town, viz:—the yards in Duple and Cross Street still retain, at times, the unhealthy character of being situate over a swamp, which it had drained, and through which it passed for several centuries, leaving its pestiferous malaria for ages perhaps yet to come."

THE CASTLE.—The founder of the noble and stupendous Castle—once the glory of Scarborough, as its venerable ruins are now one of the chief objects of attraction—was William le Gros, Earl of Albemarle and Holderness, a

\* In the very lowest depth were found a Wild Boar's Tusk, branches of black Oak, &c., &c. The former is deposited in the Scarborough Museum.

† When the Friends' Meeting House was built, a stone bearing the name cut in Lombardic Letters, was discovered, copied, and replaced.



nobleman of Norman extraction, (the town of Scarborough being at that time part of the ancient possessions of the Earls of Albemarle). He was grandson of the niece of William the Conqueror, and the eldest son of the second Earl of Albemarle, and third Lord of Holderness, by his wife, Hawyse or Hawise, daughter of Ralph de Mortimer. He was surnamed *Le Gros* (the fat), and was the chief of the nobles who, in the time of King Stephen, defeated the Scots in the Battle of the Standard. (See p. 123 of this vol.) This nobleman founded and endowed the Abbeys of Meaux in Holderness, and Bytham and Thornton in Lincolnshire. He married Ciceley, daughter of William, son of Duncan, son of Malcolm King of Scotland, and brother to King David, and died in 1179, and was buried in Thornton Abbey.

The building of this great stronghold was commenced about the year 1136, and it was soon finished. The possession of it must have added much to the power of Le Gros, who had extensive estates in these parts, and was in high favour with Stephen, his Sovereign. But his pride had a fall in the beginning of the next reign, when Henry II., in order to reduce the exorbitant power of the nobles, commanded all the Castles erected in the preceding reign to be demolished. But Scarborough Castle, from its formidable situation, appeared so great a defence to the sea-coast, that he not only preserved it from destruction, but improved it in strength and magnificence," or, according to some writers, rebuilt it in the year 1170. One of the earliest accounts of the structure, from the pen of William de Newburgh, a celebrated monkish historian—a native of Bridlington—who wrote about the year 1190, is as follows:—"It is a rock of wonderful height and bigness, and inaccessible by reason of steep craggs on almost every side, stands into the sea, which quite surrounds it, but in one place, where a narrow slip of land gives access to it on the west. It has on the top a pleasant plain, grassy and spacious, of about sixty acres or upwards, and a little well of fresh water springing from a rock in it. In the very entry, which puts one to some pains to get up, stands a stately Tower, and beneath the entry the City begins, spreading its two sides south and north, and carrying its front westward, where it is fortified with a wall: but on the east is fenced by that rock where the Castle stands; and lastly on both sides by the sea. William, surnamed Le Gros, Earl of Albemarle and Holderness, observing this place to be fitly situated for building a Castle on, increased the great natural strength of it by a very costly work, having enclosed all the plain upon the rock with a wall, and built a Tower in the entrance. But this being decayed and fallen, King Henry II. commanded a great and brave Castle to be built upon the same spot. For he had now reduced the nobility of England, who, during the loose reign of

King Stephen, had impaired the revenues of the Crown; but especially this William of Albemarle, who lorded it over all these parts, and kept this place as his own."

The present area of the Castle-yard is but little more than seventeen acres, and it is supposed that there is some mistake in Newburgh's account respecting the quantity of land, as the ancient accounts of acres are very incorrect. It has been conjectured that the word *sexaginta* has crept in for *sexdecem*. A Scarborough Guide, published in 1815, in giving the above quotation from Newburgh, states the area of the "grassy plain" to be "about thirty acres," "though," it continues, in parenthesis, "once accounted sixty, or more;" and it adds, in a note that it is "now only nineteen acres." Though there is incontestible evidence on the spot that the rock on which the Castle is built has wasted away during the course of ages, yet it is scarcely credible that above forty acres of its surface could have been destroyed since the reign of King John, when Newburgh wrote.

Leland, who inspected the Castle, perhaps four hundred years later than Newburgh, writes thus respecting it:—"At the est end of the Toune, on the one poynt on the bosom of the Se, where the harborrow for shippes is, stondesth an exceeding goodly larg and strong Castelle on a stepe rok, having but one way by the stepe slaty crag to cum to it. And or ever a man can entre *aream Castelli* there be two Toures, and betwixt eche of them a Drawbridge, having stepe roks on eche side of them. In the first Court is the Arx and three Toures on a row, and then yoineth a wall to them, as an arm down from the first Court to the poynte of the Se cliffe, conteyning in it vj Toures whereof the second is square, and full of longgings [lodgings] and is called the Queen's Toure or longging. Within the first area is a great Grene, conteyning (to reken down to the very shore) sixteen acres, and yn it is a Chapelle, and besides olde waulles of houses of office that stood there. But of all the Castelle the Arx is the eldest and strongest part. The entry of the Castelle betwixt the drawbridges is such, that with costes the Se might cum round about the Castelle, the which standith as a little foreland or poynte betwixt two bayes."

All writers are of opinion, and every one who examines the place at the present day must agree with them, that it would be all but impossible to insulate the Castle in the manner above intimated by Leland, as the fosse or ditch is at such a considerable height above the level of the sea: at least it would be an undertaking of immense labour and difficulty.

The remains of the fortress at present visible, convey to us but a very faint idea of its former strength and importance; it is not saying too much to state

that it was almost impregnable, as evidenced by the long and memorable sieges which it underwent. After the dispossession of William le Gros, the government of this Castle was esteemed an office of great distinction. In 1174 (20th Henry II.), Roger, Archbishop of York, was appointed Governor of it, and he continued to hold that office till the time of his death, in 1181. It may be here observed that in those days, it was not uncommon for the episcopal Order to engage both in civil and military affairs; and Bishops sometimes had the command of armies.

Hugh Bardolph, a younger son of Lord Bardolph, succeeded Archbishop Roger in the government of Scarborough Castle. He stood high in the estimation of Richard I., and was appointed one of the Commissioners to assist the Bishops of Ely and Durham in the exercise of the government of the realm during the King's absence to the Holy Land. This young nobleman was afterwards degraded by the King, and dispossessed of his offices, for various misdemeanors; but chiefly for adhering to John Earl of Moreton, in his attempts to obtain the throne; and he was ordered to resign this Castle to William de Stuteville.

In the turbulent reign of King John, he visited Scarborough in February, 1201; and again in February, 1216. From the *Archeologia*, vol. xxii., where the Itineraries of this King have been traced by his signatures to state papers, it appears that during the whole of his reign he never remained an entire week at one place. His visits were chiefly to Royal demesnes, Castles, Religious houses, &c.

In the 20th of Henry III. (1255), Brian Fitz-Allan was made Governor of this fortress; and three years later William de Dacre, of the north, was appointed to that office. In 1264 Henry Lord Hastings was the Governor. In the following year the King (Henry III.) committed to his eldest son the Castles of Dover, *Scardeburgh*, Baumburgh, Nottingham, and Corff, for five years. In 1270 Geoffrey de Neville, afterwards one of the Justices Itinerant; and in 1271 Peter de Brus, of Skelton, in the County of Durham, respectively held the Castle of Scarborough.

Edward I. with a large and noble retinue resided some time at Scarborough Castle. In 1275 William de Percy, Clerk, was Constable or Governor of the Castle. At this period, according to Drake, "a difference having arisen between the Dean and Chapter of York, an inquest was taken by twenty-four knights, who were charged to enquire about the articles exhibited on this occasion, and the verdict was given at Scarthebourg', before the King and Council." During this reign (Edw. I.) John de Vesci succeeded to the government of this Castle, which he retained to his death; and Isabel de

Beaumont, his second wife, who survived him, being a kinswoman of Queen Eleanor, had the custody of it committed to her, and continued it during her life. William de Vesci, the brother and heir of John, succeeded Isabel de Beaumont. At page 133 of this volume, we have shown how the chivalrous but arrogant Piers de Gaveston, a Gascon Knight, and the favourite of Edward II., having fled from the pursuit of the confederate Barons, in company with his Sovereign, took refuge in Scarborough Castle, then esteemed one of the strongest fortresses in the Kingdom. Hinderwell says that Gaveston was then appointed Governor of it, and conducted its defence in the siege that followed. The fate of the unfortunate Gaveston is already recorded at page 134.

In 1312 Edward II. seized the Castle and town of Scarborough into his own hands. And in the 14th of Edward III. (1341) an inquisition was taken of the amount of the annual value of their rents, of which the following are particulars, viz:—fifteen acres of meadow within the Castle, valued at 60s. per annum; the herbage without the walls, 10s.; the fishery belonging to the Castle, 6s. 4d.; the drying nets within the Castle, *communibus annis*, 18s. 4d.; rent of assize in the town, called gablage, £16. 17s. 11d.; other rents of assize, £10. 7s. 6d.; rents paid by the Cistercian Monks, 4s.; rents of assize at Walsgrave, £7. 5s. 9½d.; sixty acres of land which Henry III. recovered in an action against certain of the burgesses, valued at 60s. per annum; the tolls of the Borough, valued at £27.; four watermills and one windmill, valued at £16. per ann.; the drying of nets in the fields at Scarborough, valued at 100s. per ann.; three tenements belonging to the Crown, valued at 10s. 8d.; and profits of Court, 100s. per annum; making a total of £100. 4s. 10½d.

In the year 1318, as has been intimated at page 135, the town of Scarborough and other places were plundered and burnt to the ground by an army of Scottish marauders. There being no account in history of the Castle having suffered on this occasion, we must conclude that its formidable situation preserved it from the fury of these invaders. When an extraordinary levy of men was ordered by the King about this time, Scarborough supplied thirty. The comparative proportion of men raised in different towns in Yorkshire is given at page 135 of this volume. It appears by a record among the *Brevia Regum Ebor*, that previously to the 16th of Edward III. (1343) John Sampson, Ralph Fitzwilliam, John de Mowbray, Talliferus de Tyke, John de Rolleston, Giles de Bello Campo (or Beauchamp), Henry de Percy and Eleanor his mother, Robert de Sapy, William and Robert Wawayne, Robert Wawayne and Alexander de Bergh, and Roger de Somervill, had been Con-

stables or Governors of Scarborough Castle; and in the above mentioned year Henry de Percy was Governor, at a salary of forty marks per annum. About this period the barbican and walls, as well as other parts of the fortress, being partly in a dilapidated state, were repaired at an expense of about £2,000.

In the first year of the reign of Richard II. (1377) a daring Scotch freebooter of the name of Mercer, having been taken by some northern ships, was committed a prisoner, by the Earl of Northumberland, to Scarborough Castle. His son, in revenge for his father's imprisonment, formed a desperate enterprise, and entering the harbour of Scarborough, with some Scottish, French, and Spanish ships, carried away several merchant vessels which were lying in that port. Encouraged by this success, he, for a long time cruised in these seas, and took many prizes. At length Alderman Philpot, of London, resenting so great a national indignity, equipped a fleet of armed ships, and sailed in pursuit of the Scottish pirate. He had the good fortune to encounter Mercer's fleet, and obtained a glorious victory. All the vessels taken from Scarborough were recovered, and fifteen Spanish ships, laden with rich merchandise, were captured, together with Mercer and the whole of his navy; and the patriotic and gallant Alderman returned with his prizes in triumph to London. But this action, though it gained him the general applause of the people, displeased the Government, who looked upon it of dangerous consequence to suffer a private individual to engage in such an important affair without their permission. However, he gave such good reasons in justification of his enterprise, that he was honourably acquitted. Alderman Philpot was elected Mayor of London in the following year, and was Knighted in the field by the King, in 1382 (with others), for the good services which they performed against Wat Tyler and the Kentish rebels.

We have seen at page 144 that Wat Tyler's insurrection manifested itself in Yorkshire, and that the town of Scarborough was implicated in it. After the tumult was quelled a charter of pardon was obtained, through the intercession of Robert Acclom and Robert de Rillyngton; but only on the condition of paying the enormous sum of nine hundred marks (£600.); four hundred marks to be levied on the town, and the remaining five hundred to be paid by eleven of the wealthiest burgesses, whose names are expressed in the said charter. It is stated that the whole of the moveable property at the time in Scarborough would not have raised half that sum. In the previous reign a tax of one ninth part in value on all *bona mobilia*, at the place amounted to £27. 6s. 8d. only!

John de St. Quintin became Governor of the fortress of Scarborough, in the

6th of Richard II. (1389), with the annual salary of forty marks; and according to Cotton's MSS. in the British Museum, the Castle and Town of Scarborough, with the port and haven, and the Manor of Walsgrave, were granted to Richard, Duke of Gloucester and Anne his wife, in exchange for the Manor of Bushey; and that in 1473 (12th Edward IV.), an Act of Parliament was passed, by which it was provided, that if the said grant was ever annulled, they should have possession again of the said Manor of Bushey. After this Duke of Gloucester ascended the throne as Richard III., and was crowned in London in 1483, he proceeded to York (See page 167), and during his sojourn in the north, he, with his Queen, visited Scarborough, residing some time in the Castle. The Queen's apartments were in the Tower, called by Leland, the Queen's Toure or lodgings. The wily Richard, whose object in visiting the north was to ingratiate himself with his northern subjects, displayed great magnificence, and distinguished the City of York with various marks of royal munificence, as we have seen at page 168; and he honoured and benefitted Scarborough with a like degree of liberality, by not only adding to the security of the town by a wall and bulwark, but also by granting a charter, constituting the town a County of itself. It appears by various commissions, grants, &c., dated at the "Castel of Scarburgh," that this Monarch was there about the 22nd of May, and from the 30th of June to the 11th of July, 1484.\*

In the same year, a battle was fought off Scarborough, between the French and English fleets, when several ships were taken by the former. In the 23rd of Henry VI., 1445, Sir Thomas Lumley, Knt., who, according to Speed, married a natural daughter of Edward IV., was appointed Governor of Scarborough Castle.

During the time of the rebellion, called the Pilgrimage of Grace, a concise account of which will be found in this volume—a detachment of the insurgents, under the command of Robert Aske, besieged the Castle of Scarborough, Sir Ralph Evers being then its Governor. The garrison, at the time, consisted principally of the tenants and servants of the Governor, and a few volunteers, who were attached to him from motives of personal esteem. They were destitute of military stores, and in such want of provisions, that they were under the necessity of sustaining themselves twenty days with bread and water; yet by the great natural strength of the fortress, and the skill

\* Richard III. was at York on the 1st of May, 1484; at Middleham on the 6th; at Durham on the 15th; at Scarborough on the 22nd; on the 27th at York; from the 30th of May to the 13th of June, at Pontefract; from the 14th to the 25th, at York; and from the 30th of June to the 11th of July, at Scarborough.—Harl. MSS.

and intrepidity of the Governor, the furious assailants were obliged to abandon the enterprize with confusion and disgrace.

At page 197 of this volume, it is noted how Mr. Stafford, in the year 1554, obtained possession of Scarborough Castle, by stratagem, and retained possession of it for three days. Mr. Stafford's manner of taking the fortress, gave rise to a proverbial expression, still commonly used in the neighbourhood: "A Scarborough warning; a word and a blow, but the blow first." From this period to that of the "Great Civil War" of the seventeenth century, there are few memorable incidents upon record, relative to Scarborough or its Castle.\* During the latter calamitous period, the Castle was twice besieged and taken by the Parliamentary army, viz., by Sir Matthew Boynton, 25th of July, 1645; and by Colonel Bethel, 29th of December, 1648. Shortly after the surrender of York, Sir William Constable was appointed by Lord Fairfax, to conduct the Siege of Scarborough Castle. On the 29th of April, 1644, an order was issued by the Corporation, that "three months' provision should be made by every inhabitant of the town;" preparatory to the approaching siege. About the year 1645, the importance of the place induced the Parliament to send Sir John Meldrum, a Scottish officer of fortune, who had lately distinguished himself in the defence of Hull, against the King's forces, to succeed Sir William Constable. On the 18th of February, 1645, about ten o'clock, Scarborough was stormed in four places by the English and Scotch soldiers, who gained the town and the Church of St. Mary, with the loss of eleven men. In the Church they took eighty soldiers, and the Governor of Helmsley Castle. Sir Hugh Cholmley perceiving the town likely to be lost, fled into the Castle, and was pursued, and one of the works was taken; but the White Tower in the Castle commanding it, they beat out Meldrum's men with stones.

Meldrum took in the town and Church, thirty-two pieces of ordnance, with store of arms and other prize; and in the haven one hundred and twenty ships.† Sir John now regularly invested the Castle, and being convinced of the great natural strength of its situation, exerted all his skill and precaution to reduce it, by erecting batteries in the most convenient situations; and by establishing out-posts to intercept the supplies, in order to

\* An account of the rise and progress of this war will be found in this volume, beginning with the accession of Charles I., at page 211.

† Another account of this assault states that, before the storming, Sir Hugh was summoned to yield the town, but he gave a peremptory refusal, and when the townsmen would have surrendered, he brought soldiers out of the Castle and compelled the defence to be continued.

compel the garrison to surrender by the pressure of famine. On the hill above Peaseholme vale, about three quarters of a mile to the north of the Castle, may yet be seen vestiges of one of these small batteries. It is a regular pentagon in form, and is entirely grown over with a verdant turf.\* The south bay and road were commanded by a battery, lately remaining, upon Ramsdel Cliff,† above the dropping spring; but the most formidable works were erected nearer the Castle. Sir John having made a lodgment with his troops in the Church of St. Mary, conveyed several pieces of artillery into it in the night, and opened a battery from the east window; but the garrison made such a vigorous and well directed fire, that the choir of the Church was demolished, and the ruins yet standing at the eastern part of the Churchyard are monuments of this desolation.

The able defence made by Sir Hugh Cholmley, rendered the siege tedious and difficult to the assailants; but the works by incessant battering were greatly injured, and the garrison was weakened by fatigue and sickness. On the 24th of March, 1645, Sir John Meldrum having ascended a rock to reconnoitre, and to view a convenient place to plant his cannon against the Castle, was blown down by a violent wind and bruised by the fall. A letter in the *Perfect Occurrences, &c.*, written in the same month says "that the besiegers with their battering pieces had made some breaches, but so high upon the hill as not to be comeatable, "and besides," continues the writer, "the Castle has been so lined within with earth, that it is of little use to make such batteries; and to undermine is impracticable, as the Castle is founded on a main rock. It is therefore feared that the Castle is so strong and well provided, that it will prove very difficult of reduction." On the 5th of May the besiegers attempted to storm the fortress, but were repulsed with the loss of twenty men; and on the 11th Sir John commenced operations for another attack. On this occasion, in order to divert the attention of the Governor, he made two different assaults; one at the gate which led to the entrance to

\* Some think this was an out-post to guard the road and North Sand Beach, and prevent any communication from that quarter. It is said that the markets were prohibited in the town during the siege, but that the inhabitants had permission, under certain restrictions to attend one which was kept at Peaseholme.

† It is supposed that the town, before it was taken by storm, was cannonaded from this point, as mention is said to have been made in an old parish register of burials in the year 1644, "of the town being beleaguered by the Parliaments forces, and that several persons were then killed by cannon balls from a battery on Ramsdel Mount." When the Cliff Bridge was built, in 1827, several cannon balls were found below the site of this battery, most probably shot returned from the besieged.



the Castle, and the other at the southern extremity of the wall, towards the sea, where stood a lofty tower, taken down in 1730, known by the name of Charles's Tower. The outer gate of the Castle being in a ruinous state the besiegers gained an easy admission in that part, and they penetrated to the inner one at the foot of the grand tower; but there they met with the most desperate resistance, and were so furiously assailed with stones and other missiles, that they were repulsed with great slaughter. During this conflict Sir John Meldrum, at the head of a chosen body of troops, led them to the attack at the foot of Charles's Tower. The access to this part was protected by a precipice of difficult ascent, and the contest here was more severe and bloody than at the gate; but the assailants were compelled to abandon the attack with considerable loss, several of their best officers were killed, and their commander, Sir John Meldrum, received a mortal wound, of which he died on the 3rd of June.

Another version of this conflict states that Major Crompton, with 150 men, made a gallant sally from the Castle, and fell desperately on the besiegers in Bushell's Fort and the gate-house; that the common soldiers at first fell back and left their officers engaged, that the soldiers "took heart again and suddenly regained the gate-house and what they had lost, beat their opponents again into the Castle and took the bridge, whereby they were more straitened than before; and that Sir John Meldrum shewed extraordinary valour in the action, and received a dangerous wound through the belly and into the thigh.

The reduction of this fortress appears to have been so very desirable object with the Parliament, that Sir Matthew Boynton was appointed to succeed Sir John Meldrum, who brought a strong reinforcement with him, and the siege was renewed with the utmost vigour, and continued without intermission, till the 22nd of July, 1645, when the fortification being ruined by incessant battery, the stores nearly exhausted, the garrison worn out by excessive fatigue and sickness, and entirely dispirited, the valiant and loyal Governor, Sir Hugh Cholmley, seeing no prospect of relief, after having defended the fortress for more than twelve months, surrendered it, after a long treaty, upon honourable terms. The garrison was greatly reduced in number by the scurvy, which had caused a dreadful mortality. Many of the soldiers that remained were in so weak a condition, that some were carried out in sheets, others were obliged to be supported by two of their comrades, and others were unfit to march. The women of Scarborough, it is said, could hardly be kept from stoning Sir Hugh. The substance of the articles of the surrender of the Castle were as follows:—

- 1.—That the Castle be surrendered on the 25th of July, 1645, and that

all the arms, ordnance, ammunition, provisions, &c., in and about the fortress (except what is hereafter excepted), shall be delivered up to the Parliament's commanders, "to the use of the King and Parliament."

2.—That all prisoners in the Castle be set at liberty within six hours after the sealing of these articles.

3.—That the Governor, Sir Hugh Cholmley, and the other officers and "gentlemen soldiers," if they desire it, shall have a safe convoy from hence into Holland, or be safely conveyed to Newark, whether they shall choose; and if any, after their coming to Newark, shall then resolve to go into Holland, giving notice thereof, within six days, to the Committee of Military Affairs at York, they shall have passes from thence to take shipping at Hull, Scarborough, or Bridlington; and "such other who desire passes shall have them from the said Committee, to go to the King's army or any of his garrisons, as they please, travelling not above twenty in a company, where the Governor or Colonel shall be in person; otherwise not above ten in company; the time to be permitted in their several passes, as the distance of the place to go to shall require; none of them passing through any garrison for the King, if there be another way."

4.—That no person whatever going from this Castle be plundered, arrested, or staid upon any ground or pretence whatsoever; and in such case, upon complaint made to the aforesaid Committee at York, to be speedily redressed.

5.—That Lady Cholmley shall have liberty to live at her own house at Whitby, and enjoy such part of her estate as is allowed by ordinance of Parliament; that she may have two men servants and two horses, to carry herself, and such necessary things as shall be granted her.

6.—That all inferior officers, common soldiers, and others, who desire to live at home, shall have passes granted them for that end, and shall not be forced to take up arms "against their mindes;" that the sick and wounded shall be provided for till their recovery, and then have passes to travel to what place they please.

7.—That the Governor, all field officers, Captains, Lieutenants, and Cornets of horse, march on their own horses with swords, pistols, &c., three servants allowed for the Governor, and one for every field officer; and that all other officers and soldiers shall march on foot, with their swords, and not be compelled to march more than ten miles a day.

8.—That all officers and soldiers may carry upon their persons what is really their own.

9.—That every officer, gentleman, or clergyman may have liberty to buy

or lawfully procure a travelling horse for himself and his servant; and that all sick and lame men may enjoy the same privilege.

10.—That all gentlemen of quality and clergymen have liberty to march: gentlemen with their swords; and that none carry above the value of five pounds in money or in plate, about their persons.

11.—That any one violating or offending against any of these articles, shall be delivered to the Commander-in-Chief, where the offence shall be committed, to give satisfaction for his offence.

These articles are signed "H. Cholmley," and attested by "Tho. Gower," Lieutenant Colonel; "Tho. Crompton," Major; and "Richard Legard," Captain of the besieged garrison.

A scarce pamphlet in the British Museum states that "there were taken in the Castle of Scarborough (after this siege), 5 brass pieces of ordnance, 30 iron pieces of ordnance; some field pieces, 1,000 armes; a great quantity of powder, match, bullets, and other ammunition; all Cholmley's bag and baggage." The following are a few of the persons of note recorded as having fallen during this memorable siege:—Sir John Meldrum, Lieut-Col. Cockcrain, Lieut-Col. Stanley (half brother to Sir Hugh Cholmley), Lieut-Col. Viccarman, Major Dent, Captain Birkett, and Captain Pearson or Percy, on the side of the Parliamentarians or besiegers; and Lord Viscount Dunbar, Sir Henry Constable, Captain Gower, Captain Walbank, Captain Evans, and Mr. Michael Wharton on the side of the Royalists.

Of such consequence was the surrender of this Castle esteemed by the Parliament, that there appears on the journals of the House of Commons, 19th of August, 1645, "A day appointed for a Thansgiving to Almighty God, for his late mercies vouchsafed to the Parliament's forces in the taking of Scarborough Castle, and some other places." We have observed at page 254 of this volume, that during this siege square-shaped silver coins were issued.

The following account of the damage sustained by the town of Scarborough during the siege, was presented to Parliament in November, 1646, by Sir Matthew Boynton, Bart., and Luke Robinson, Esq.

"That the Towne had been impoverished by various oppressions, both by the royal party and the Parliament's forces:"

"1.—Disabled in their shipping, by the taking away the sales, cables, anchors, and furniture belonging to them. 2.—That several of the ships are totally spoyled with continuance of lying on the sand, having no proper persons to look after them. And that many were disabled by the enemy from ever going to sea again, whereby they have lost to the value of £3,000.

at least, besides the loss of the benefit of trading. 3.—That the Towne being taken by storme, the ships were made prizes of by the soldiers, and the owners forced to pay one fourth of the value for their release.”

“The Towne sustained these further losses since the army came before it :”

“1.—The waste and spoyle which have been made of the grounds belonging to the Towne, there having beene no profit at all received thereof; but the herbage totally eaten up by the souldiers horses, to the great impoverishment of the Towne. 2.—Spoiling of their Conduit, which brought water in leaden pipes to the Towne, a mile from thence, by pulling up and breaking the pipes. 3.—Their Church wholly ruinated, except the walls and some part of the roof, which was formerly in good repaire. 4.—Their four mills belonging the Towne totally pulled downe. 5.—The charges they have beene att for making workes, for timber and deals for the platformes, their providing candles and fuell for the army ever since the Towne was reduced, which doth still continue. 6.—Them that were formerly the ablest men of the Towne have had their estates sequestered to the publike use, soe that we have wanted, and still doe want their contributions towards these great charges. 7.—That whereas there is but xxvij£. per ann., for the maintenance of a preaching minister att Scarborough, there may be some course taken (by the Committee for plundered ministers, or otherwise) for procureing ix£. more to be added to it, to be paid yearly for that purpose.”

“The valuation of the losses (exclusive of the shipping):—The spoile of the ground three yeares and more, £600.; the Conduit pipes renewing, £200.; the repaireing of the Church, £600.; the new building three Mills, and one quite gone, £300.; and the charges of Works, £300.” It does not appear what compensation was allowed on account of these damages—probably none—excepting that an order was issued from Chancery in 1646, for remitting the payment of the fee-farm rent for three years, viz., 1643, 1644, and 1645. There are other petitions to Parliament on record, for long arrears of pay advanced by the town to the soldiers of the garrison.

Here we shall digress a little to give a short account of the gallant defender of Scarborough Castle, during this memorable siege. Sir Hugh Cholmley was of an ancient and honourable family, and was born in Roxby, near Thornton, in the year 1600. After receiving a liberal education at Beverley and at Cambridge, he was admitted to the Inns at Court, where he obtained a considerable knowledge of the law. In 1624 he was chosen Member of Parliament for the Borough of Scarborough. In 1641 he was created a Baronet of Great Britain; and King Charles having the same year convoked a Parliament, Sir Hugh was for the third time chosen a Burgess therein for

Scarborough, and subsequently appointed Governor of the Castle. After the siege of that fortress, he embarked at Bridlington for Holland, "leaving my dear wife," to use his own words, not above ten pounds in her purse, nor myself above five more than would discharge my passage; for though my good brother Sir Henry Cholmley, had sent me £200. at my coming out of the Castle, I had distributed it among the officers and soldiers to relieve their distresses." Sir Hugh continued in exile until 1649, when his brother Henry found means to pacify the Parliament, and obtained permission for his return to England. Lady Elizabeth Cholmley, wife of Sir Hugh, was daughter to Sir William Twisden, Bart., of East Peckham, Kent. She was with her husband in Scarborough Castle during the siege, and distinguished herself by displaying a courage above her sex, as well as by an extraordinary devotedness towards the sick and wounded. She died in 1655, and was interred at Peckham Church, and after her decease, Sir Hugh left Whitby, where he had hitherto resided, and lived for the most part among his friends in Kent, until the time of his own death, in 1657. The town of Whitby was much benefitted by the patronage of Sir Hugh Cholmley, more especially in the improvement of the piers.

By an inscription on one of the towers at the entrance of the Castle, the gateway seems to have been repaired in 1645; and a vote was passed in the House of Commons, 2nd of May, 1648, for £5,000., towards repairing the works at Scarborough. Sir Matthew Boynton, who had been appointed Governor of the Castle, in 1645, and who was also a representative of the Borough in Parliament, died in 1647; and in 1648, Colonel Matthew Boynton, his second son and successor in the government of the Castle, having declared for the King, the town and fortress sustained another siege, which appears to have commenced early in August in the same year. Colonel Bethel was ordered by the Parliament to block up the Castle with two regiments; but upon his first approach, a Captain and some other officers deserted him, and went in to Colonel Boynton. On the 9th of August a severe skirmish took place, which is thus described in a scarce tract printed in London, but dated Falsgrave, August 11th, 1648. "Since the revolting of Scarborough, and Colonel Bointon declaring for the King, here hath happened some action very considerable, which is as followeth:—on Wednesday last, Colonel Bethell with his regiment of Horse, and Colonel Legard with his regiment of Foot, faced the town and Castle, which caused action. Colonel Bointon (the Governor) drew forth a party of Horse and Foot. Colonel Bethell did the like, the said forlorn engaged and disputed the ground. The encounter was great, and gallantly maintained by both parties; inasmuch

that some blood was spilt; and divers heroick spirits sacrificed their lives at the point of the sword, and seven gallant charges were made by forlorners of Horse, till at the last Colonel Bethell's men being overpowered, retreated, the cavalry pursuing. Whereupon Colonel Bethell advanced with his whole bodie, Colonel Bointon makes towards him, both parties engaged, and after some dispute our men became victorious, routed the enemies whole bodie, pursued the enemy to the Castle-gates, doing great execution; beate the Foote downe the cliff, who for expedition, divers of them tumbled downe the rocks and broke their necks. In this action and bloody conflict, we took about seventeen prisoners, killed twenty on the place, and vanquished the rest, with the losse of fifteen men killed and wounded. Colonel Bethell with his forces lies at Falsgrave, a quarter of a mile from Scarborough Town; and so soon as a considerable partie comes up, intends to lay close siege to the Castle."

About the middle of September, Colonel Bethel took the town of Scarborough by storm, four only of the assailants being killed, and eighteen of the besieged; and 150 were made prisoners. Some Walloons, whom the soldiers took for Irishmen, were put to the sword. The siege of the Castle was then carried on with great spirit until the beginning of December, when the common soldiers in the garrison grew mutinous, and the Governor was obliged to capitulate; so that, on the 15th of December (1648), the fortress was again surrendered to the Parliament, and taken possession of in their name by Colonel Bethel.

The effect of the articles of rendition is as follows:—"1.—The Castle, with all the ordnance, arms, and other goods, and provisions, to be delivered up without embezzlement, except what is hereafter mentioned. 2.—That the Governor, officers, gentlemen, and soldiers of the said Castle, should march out with their wearing apparel, their colours flying, drums beating, musquets laden, bandoleers filled, matches lighted, and bullet in mouth, to Scarborough Common, and there to lay down their arms. 3.—The Governor to march with his horse and arms, and three servants on horseback to attend with their swords, to the place he shall appoint: every Field-officer on horseback, with his sword and pistols, and two servants on horseback with their swords: every Captain on horseback, with his sword and pistols, and one servant to attend him: all common officers and gentlemen on foot, with one pistol and sword: all other officers and soldiers, with their swords to their own habitations, there to remain without molestation, submitting to all orders and ordinances of Parliament, 4.—That free quarter shall be granted to all included in these articles, in their passages to their several habitations;

they travelling eight miles in a day. 5.—That all gentlewomen within the said Castle shall be suffered to pass out with their wearing apparel, money, and necessaries; to pass to such places as shall be nominated, and to procure or hire horses. 6.—That all persons included within these articles, under sequestration, shall have liberty to compound. 7.—That all persons in the town of Scarborough, shall upon this agreement, be set at liberty. 8.—In case any officer or soldier shall do anything contrary to this agreement, they shall be delivered up to punishment. 9.—That a sufficient convoy be appointed."

According to Whitelocke's Memorials, the cause of giving such favourable articles "was by reason of information, that several ships with men and provisions from the Prince were destined thither, and expected every hour for the relief of the Castle. There was in the Castle good store of provision, especially of rye and butter; and at least fifty barrels of powder, and great store of match, so that it might be held out three months." On the reduction of the Castle, Colonel Bethel was appointed Governor, and the distress of the town was very great. At a Common Hall held on the 13th of February, 1649, it was ordered that the Bailiffs "do acquaint Colonel Bethel with the present poverty of the town, and that the poor are so many, and the town so unable to maintain them, that many of them are ready to starve, and therefore in respect to our insufficiency, we are not able to quarter soldiers; and for that we conceive ourselves to be as free as Hull, Lynn, Boston, and other towns where garrisons are, we desire and expect the like privilege with them; and that no soldiers may be forced to quarter upon us, or with us in private houses, but at such places where they can agree to pay for their lodgings and diet, as is usual in other garrisons; and all now present mutually engage to join in freeing the town accordingly, in case the Colonel shall deny them or make opposition therein." The Colonel, in reply expressed himself very sensible of the poverty of the town, but urged the necessity for allowing the soldiers to be quartered upon the inhabitants for a fortnight or three weeks longer, till he got an answer to his letter about an establishment for the garrison; "and if there be not a speedy course taken for provision for the soldiers," said he, "in such a way that they may not be chargeable on the town, I will throw in my commission rather than stay to see the town quite impoverished and ruined." On which the Common Hall held on the 23rd of February, agreed that for two weeks from Monday next (the 26th), "they would be willing to lend such soldiers as should fall to their several proportions, three shillings a piece for each week, to get themselves quarters where

they can agree; if the Governor will engage himself for the re-payment thereof: but not to be forced to entertain the soldiers at their private houses."

On the 14th of March, 1649, the House of Commons ordered the Committee of Excise to respite the collecting of the duty arising in the town of Scarborough during the time of the late siege. The House likewise ordered that Captain Brown Bushell\* should be tried for his life, and that Colonel Matthew Boynton, the late Governor, shall likewise be so prescribed and his estate confiscated. It may be added that Colonel Boynton was slain at Wigan, in the advance of the army of Charles II. out of Scotland, towards Worcester.

It does not appear certain whether Scarborough Castle was ordered by the Parliament to be demolished after the last surrender; but it is very probable that it was, as the two long sieges within five years had been a serious check to the party then predominant. Dr. Wittie, in his work on "Scarborough Spaw," published in 1660, states that the Castle was then in ruins, but ascribes its dilapidation to the former siege in 1645; but the present condition of the ruin evidently shows, that the final demolition of the north-west front has been effected by explosion, and not by bombardment or storm.†

The site of the Castle was granted by James I., in the year 1624, to John

\* Captain Brown Bushell was an expert seaman and Captain of a man-of-war. He appears to have openly revolted from the Parliament, and joined the King's forces, and although after the termination of the war, he lived some years in England unnoticed, yet, in 1648, he was taken into custody for his former desertion, and after being detained prisoner about three years was brought to trial, found guilty, and executed on the 29th of April, 1651. There is a small head of Bushell engraved in the frontispiece to *Winstanley's Loyal Martyrology*, 1665, 8vo. An outwork near the entrance gate of the Castle, still bears the name of Bushell's Battery.

† The *Scarborough Guide*, published in 1787, gives two remarkably providential escapes from destruction which were experienced by two females during these calamitous times: the one during the siege, and the other from a ship's gun in the harbour. The first, being engaged at needlework, having found it difficult, in the twilight, to thread her needle at an east window where she sat, went to a west one that she might see to accomplish it. At that moment a glancing shot, which had been fired from the Castle towards St. Mary's Church, came in at the window she had just quitted, and tore everything in its way to atoms, but without injuring the good sempstress. The other, while spinning in an upper room at the Old Globe Inn, chanced to drop her spindle, and as she stooped to pick it up, a cannon ball passed directly over her, striking the distaff to pieces, which stood in the very place her head must have occupied had she not at that moment been stooping to the ground. "There is a special providence," wrote the immortal bard, "even in the fall of a sparrow"—paraphrasing, as it were, a beautiful passage in Holy Writ.



Ramsey, Earl of Holderness; and it afterwards appears to have passed into the possession of William Thompson, Esq., M.P. for Scarborough, who restored it to the Crown in the reign of Charles II. Sir Jordan Crossland, Knt., was the first Governor after the restoration of the monarchy, having received this appointment on the 7th of July, 1660, for his good services to his Majesty during the late wars; and on his death in 1670, Sir John Reresby succeeded as Governor. Since then the following are recorded as holding that appointment—which was always considered more honourable than lucrative. In 1702, Anthony Duncombe, Esq.; 1715, William Thompson, Esq., M.P. for Scarborough; 1774, John Hill, Esq., of Thornton; 1761, John Catherwood, Esq., Capt. Royal Inv. Artillery; 1774, Sir Hugh Palliser, Bart., Vice-Admiral, M.P. for Scarborough; 1796, Henry, Earl of Mulgrave, G.C.B., a General in the army; and in 1831, Sir George Don, G.C.B., another General in the army.

In 1665-6 the Castle was fully garrisoned, and at that period was used as a state prison. George Fox, the founder of the sect commonly called Quakers (See page 568) was imprisoned in it for above twelve months, having incurred a *premunire* on account of his religious principles. During the rebellion of 1745, the Castle underwent a temporary repair, and a considerable quantity of military stores were deposited in it. And at this alarming period the inhabitants of the town erected several batteries for its protection, and also cleansed out the moat, and mounted ninety-nine guns from the ships in the harbour; which guns were principally manned by the sailors. After the suppression of the rebellion the Duke of Montague, Master General of the Ordnance, in the year 1746, caused the present barracks to be erected, which will contain 120 soldiers in twelve apartments; besides which there are others for the officers. These barracks, which stand contiguous to the Castle wall, were built on the site of the royal apartments. In 1643 a battery called the South Steel was erected on the south east point of the Castle yard, on the declivity of the hill facing the haven; and in 1748 it was rebuilt, when twelve guns, eighteen pounders, were placed therein, one of which was on a traversing platform; and lest the firing of the guns should bring down the before-mentioned Charles' Tower, which stood on the projecting angle above the battery, the tower was wholly demolished. A covered way, descending from the Castle Yard by a flight of steps, leads down to this battery, which is the principal defence of the town to the south; and from its favoured situation is in some degree formidable. Here is also a store house, with a guard room and a magazine, where ammunition for cannon is deposited. Here are also preserved several old cannon balls, that were

found lodged in the walls of the Castle, and the surrounding earth, sometime after the siege. In the month of July, 1850, the Admiralty placed a large gun, of 32lb. calibre, in this battery, for the use of the Coast Guard body stationed here and in the neighbourhood. In 1794 a small battery was made in a place called the Holmes, on an eminence at the foot of the Castle, to guard the north shore; and for the better defence of the south part, another battery was, in 1796, made in the southern corner of the Castle yard; but these are now dismantled, and a small one of three guns was formed in 1819, for the security of the north approach to the Castle. In 1880 the depot of arms, ammunition, and gunpowder, which had been very considerable, were removed.

The ravages of time and the two destructive sieges have reduced this once famous fortress to little better than a mass of ruins. The approach to it is by a gateway on the summit of a narrow isthmus on the western side, above the town—the promontory upon which the ruins are situated being situated at the eastern extremity of the town. Within this gate, the north and south walls of the Castle form an angular projection, at the western point of which—without the walls—is an outwork on an eminence, which was a battery at the siege of the Castle, in 1645, mounting seven guns, and was called Bushell's Battery, from Captain Brown Bushell, who is alluded to at page 696. This outwork, or *corps de garde*, which is without the ditch, or fosse, formed the Barbican of the Castle, with which it communicated by a draw-bridge which was removed in 1818, and replaced by a stone arch, under which is a deep and perpendicular fosse, or dyke, which continues southward, along the foot of the western declivity of the Castle hill, the whole length of the line of the wall. The gateway, which is between two towers, appears to have been machiolated.\* Within the gate is an advanced battery of two twelve pounders, flanking the fosse, and a few yards beyond was the above-mentioned drawbridge. The approach to the Castle, by the narrow isthmus beyond the drawbridge, was flanked with numerous turrets; and beyond the bridge on the right, is a part of the wall of the ballium, to which there is a little acclivity. And here rises the stately ruin of the great Norman "Keep"—the "Arx" mentioned by Leland. In its original state, this majestic tower cannot have been less than 120 feet in height; and the ground

\* Machiolations are small projections over gates, supported by brackets, having open intervals at the bottom, through which melted lead, stones, and other missiles, were thrown on the heads of the assailants; and likewise large weights were fastened to ropes or chains, by which, after they had taken effect, they were retracted by the besieged.

base is, by barometrical admeasurement, 250 feet above the level of the sea. This lofty tower is square, each side measuring 54 feet, exclusive of the projection of the base; and 97 feet in height. The walls are about twelve feet thick, cased with square stones, and enclose a narrow staircase, now broken and interrupted. There appears to have been three stories of very lofty rooms, one over another, each room between twenty and thirty feet high, and thirty feet square within the walls, with recesses. The remains of a very large fire-place are visible in the lower apartment. The subterraneous dungeon—the “donjon keep”—is nearly filled up with stones and earth. The different stories have been vaulted, and divided by strong arches; and private passages, formerly communicating with the staircases, are visible in some of the intervals of the casing of the walls. The windows, divided by round mullions, are in semicircular arched recesses, and are larger than usual in such buildings. These recesses, which are nearly seven feet deep, above six feet broad, and ten feet in height, were converted during the last war into magazines for gunpowder, and held five hundred barrels. This fine tower was flat-roofed and originally covered with lead, and it formerly had an embattled parapet. Mr. Hinderwell, to whose excellent and accurate description of these ruins we have pretty strictly adhered, truly observes, that the mortar which was used in the construction of this tower, being in a fluid state, according to the custom of the ancients, has received a consistency by age, that renders it more impenetrable and durable than even the stone of the building.\*

The area of the ballium, where the tower is situated, contains more than half an acre of ground. It is separated from the internal parts of the Castle-yard by a ditch and a mound, surmounted with a wall. In 1783, a fire-place of gritstone, and a pavement of neat square bricks were discovered near the western wall. In the ballium, about fifteen yards to the east of the beacon, was a deep well, but whence it was supplied with water cannot at present be ascertained. Here were most of the inhabitable buildings belonging to the Castle; and adjoining it were the towers mentioned by Leland, containing the Queen's lodgings, &c. The embattled wall, which has defended and adorned the summit of the hill on the western side, continues hence to the southern extremity of the Castle yard. It is flanked with numerous semicircular turrets, and with loop holes whence were formerly discharged arrows and other missiles. These bastions are hastening to decay, and exhibit a

\* Leland, in his description of the Castle states that there were two other towers, which defended the approach to this, and between each of them a drawbridge.

scene of venerable ruin. It is also said, that large and ponderous pieces of timber were so placed, as to be in constant readiness to be rolled down upon an enemy attempting to approach the walls.

Leland mentions a "Chapelle" on the "great Grene" of the Castle. This ancient Chapel was situated near the well in the Castle Yard, and little respecting it is known, except that it was given to the Cistercian Abbey, with all the other Churches and Chapels in the town, at an early date, as will be shown at a subsequent page. It is thus mentioned in a survey taken March 25th, 1538 (29th Henry VIII.), by Marmaduke Constable and Ralph Ellerker, Esqrs., Commissioners appointed by the Crown for that purpose:—"And within the same is a praty Chapell of O'r Lady, and cov'd with leade, and besyds the same Chapell is a fayre well."

In the Scarborough Museum is an interesting relic found in the ruins of this Chapel, in the year 1817. It is a block of carved stone work, two feet high, one foot three inches broad, and one foot in thickness, having a perforation in the centre apparently to attach it to a pillar. On one side is sculptured under an ornamented canopy, the Crucifixion, with figures on each side of the Blessed Virgin, and St. John the Evangelist; on the opposite side are the Virgin and Divine Child in a sitting posture; and at each end is a figure in a pontifical habit, with a mitre and crozier.

Near the site of the Chapel, under an arched vault is a reservoir of water, called "Our Lady's Well," supposed to be the spring mentioned by old historians, and to have been consecrated to the Blessed Virgin. This well contains about forty tons of water, and the appearance of a spring in such a situation is extraordinary. Its distance from the cliff is about twenty yards; its height from the sea about three hundred feet; and there are no high lands above it, or on its level, within a mile of it. It is, therefore, difficult, upon philosophical principles to determine the source whence it is supplied. The following circumstance is mentioned as a solution of the difficulty, and it carries with it a degree of plausibility. It is said that the engineer, who superintended the barracks, and other military works, about the year 1746, ordered the workmen to dig a circular trench round the reservoir, in order to trace the source, and that they discovered several subterraneous drains or channels, which appeared to have been made for the purpose of conducting therein the rain-water, that might fall upon the area of the Castle hill. Mr. Allen, in his History of Yorkshire, in reference to this suggestion says, "For the illustration of this curious subject, it may not be amiss to observe, that if we suppose only twenty-four inches of rain to fall every year on the Castle hill, and allow that what falls on two acres of ground, round the edges of the

area, drips into the sea, we shall find, by an accurate calculation, that if only one fourth part of the water that falls on the remaining seventeen acres can be collected, and brought to the reservoir, it will amount to 2,286,780 gallons annually, or about 6,216 gallons per day, of Winchester ale-measure; a circumstance which seems to afford an easy solution to this problem of natural history." In the driest seasons, this spring has suffered no diminution of its usual quantity—it is always full. The water is very transparent, and has been found by experiment to weigh lighter by one ounce in the Winchester gallon, than any other water in the vicinity.\*

The lofty promontory upon which are situated the picturesque ruins of this ancient citadel, is bounded on three sides by the German Ocean, and elevated, as before intimated, near three hundred feet above the level of the sea; presenting to the north, the east, and the south a vast sweep of craggy perpendicular rocks totally inaccessible. The western aspect is bold and majestic. A high, steep, and rocky slope, thinly covered with verdure, commands the town and the bay by its superior elevation. From a view of the venerable ruins of this once formidable Castle, may be perceived the extreme difficulty that must have attended any hostile attempt against a fortress rendered so strong both by nature and art, especially when it is considered that battering-engines could not be brought to act against the walls, by reason of the steep declivity in front. It therefore appears, that before the invention of artillery, the place was absolutely impregnable. "Sternly and gloomily the venerable ruin looks down upon the changeful world below it," says a recent writer, "as if with an upbraiding of the present generation of men, that in their blest condition of goodwill amongst each other they should seem to forget the part it once took in securing their happy state. The 'spirit of the

\* Hinderwell relates the following facetious circumstance by which this water was, some years ago, brought into estimation with several visitors then at Scarborough:—Mr. W. Cockerill, the master of a coffee-house, and a person of great humour and ingenuity, having been often solicited by the company who frequented his house, to introduce Bristol water on his table, substituted the Castle water in its place. The deception was carried on with great dexterity; the wax upon the corks bore the impression of the Bristol seal, and a fresh importation was pretended to be made every season, warranted direct from the fountain head, and the connoisseurs pronounced it to be genuine. But the ingenuity of the contriver failed him in an unguarded hour. He had, in a convivial party, taken too much wine, and in the confusion of an intoxicated moment, the Bristol seal was applied to a bottle of sherry, which was hastily sent up to the table, even before the wax had time to cool. This unlucky circumstance occasioned a discovery, and Mr. Cockerill not only received a severe reprimand for the imposition, but was obliged ever afterwards, as its reputation was established, to supply the water gratis.

olden time's romance' dwells in its every stone; and in every atom of the grey dust that blows down from its crumbling walls there hangs a tale, deep fraught with plainest truth of history."

The prospect which may be enjoyed from these mouldering remains of antiquity, is diversified and charming. Everything which can give beauty and interest to the landscape is within the compass of vision; the country for miles beyond presenting a beautiful diversity of scenery; the romantic appearance of the town; the ocean with its numerous richly freighted craft; the lovely bay, girt by the old hoar cliffs; the sands enlivened with the throng of pleasure seekers; all contribute to form an assemblage beautiful beyond conception, and to give an inexpressible charm to the scene. The view of the boundless ocean from the aspiring summit of the promontory is grand—it is more than grand—it is sublime! And the tremendous appearance of the precipice forces on the mind Shakespeare's description of Dover Cliff, to which it perfectly assimilates;—

"How fearful,

And dizzy 'tis to cast one's eye so low!  
The crows and choughs, that wing the midway air,  
Show scarce so big as beetles.—  
The fishermen, who walk upon the beach,  
Appear like mice; and yon tall anchoring bark  
Diminished to her skiff, her skiff a buoy  
Almost too small for sight.—The murmuring surge,  
That on th' unnumbered pebbles idly chafes,  
Can scarce be heard so high."

The present military establishment of this garrison is a master-gunner, bombardier, and two gunners. In the barracks are occasionally two companies of infantry.

**ANCIENT RELIGIOUS INSTITUTIONS.**—The piety and munificence of our ancestors erected in Scarborough four Religious Houses, or Monasteries, for the Cistercians, Franciscans, Dominicans, and Carmelites; four Churches, dedicated in honour of St. Nicholas, St. Thomas, the Holy Sepulchre, and St. Mary; and two Hospitals of St. Thomas and St. Nicholas.

**CISTERCIAN ABBEY AND RECTORY.**—The Cistercians, was a reformed Order of the Benedictines, and derived the name from Cistertium, Cîteaux, or Citeaux, a village between Dijon and Chalons. The Order was founded in A.D. 1098, by Robert, Abbot of Cîteaux, and reached its height when, in 1145, Eugene III., a pupil of St. Bernard's, became Pope. The Cistercians were called *White Monks* from their dress, which was a white frock or cassock with a narrow scapulary, over which they wore a black gown

or cloak when they were beyond the walls of the Monastery; but a white one when they attended the Church. The Order was introduced into England in the year 1128, and at the dissolution of the monastic institute in the reign of Henry VIII., they had eighty-five religious houses of Monks and Nuns, some of the most remarkable of which, were Jorval or Jervaux, Kirkstall, and Furness. They were all dedicated to God, in honour of the Blessed Virgin. Their first house in this country was at Waverley, in Surrey.

The establishment of this Order in Scarborough was under the Abbey of Cistercium, in Burgundy, by a grant from King Richard I., in 1198. This is recited at length in Cart., Edward I. They had in Scarborough only a single solitary Cell for the use of their Community, which was situated in the north east corner of the west burial ground of St. Mary's. Here was a resident Procurator, the duty of whose office was to receive the rents, and remit the balance to the parent house. King John and King Henry III. extended their protection to this establishment. The latter Monarch granted the Monks a site for an Abbey, and they were soon enabled to build a spacious edifice. In the 13th of Edward I. (1285), the *Church of St. Mary*, the jurisdiction of the ancient Chapel within the Castle, and of all other Chapels, as well within the town as without, were confirmed to the Cistercians, and all right of the Crown in the Rectory was then given up. The Vicar of St. Mary's Church was to be appointed by the Abbot, and the profits during a vacancy, were to be received by the Abbey or the Procurator in England. The Vicar also was to swear obedience, and to be removable at the will of the Abbot. No person was allowed to erect a Chapel in the parish, or an altar in any Chapel, under the forfeiture of ten pounds. The claim of the Abbot of the Cistercians, as Rector of Scarborough, to the profits of the Chapel in the Castle, was recognised and allowed in the 5th of Edward II. (1312); and the custody of the Rectory was granted to Hugh de Sancto Lupo, in 1343, on payment of a rent of thirty-five marks per ann. to the Crown.

In 1363, license was given to the Abbot of the Cistercians to give a Vicarage House to Henry Bendebowe, Vicar of Scarborough, and his successors for ever. In the reign of Henry IV., the King seized the possession of the Cistercian Abbey as an Alien Priory (See page 487), and granted the custody and advowson of Scarborough, to the Priory and Convent of Bridlington; and the Abbot and Convent of the Cistercians afterwards obtained license to alienate them to the said Priory. King Edward IV. in the first year of his reign (1461) "granted and confirmed to the Canons and Convent of the Monastery of the Blessed Mary of Bridlington, and their successors, the Church of Scardeburgh, with all its Chapels, rents, courts, suits, services,

possessions, liberties, and all other profits and advantages of whatever kind, respecting or appertaining thereto, and the advowson and patronage of the said Church to have and to hold by the same Canons and Convent, and their successors, for a pure and permanent alms for ever." The Rectory of Scarborough was afterwards seized by King Henry VIII., as a parcel of the Priory of Bridlington, and in 1539, it was granted to Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, in tail male. The Duke dying without issue, the Rectory was in the possession of the Crown again in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, and was successively leased to Walter Whally, Robert Whally, and John Awdley. In 1613, it was granted by letters patent, under the great seal, to Francis Morris and Francis Phillips, and their heirs and assigns, on a yearly payment of twenty-eight pounds to the Vicar. By virtue of this grant, the lay Rectory and patronage have successively passed to John, Earl of Bridgewater, William Thompson, Esq., and Sir Charles Hotham, Bart., and his heirs. The late Lord Hotham, in 1818, sold the same (except the perpetual advowson) to the Corporation of Scarborough, who have since disposed of the tithes of the land at sixteen years' purchase, to every proprietor willing to accept the offer, so that a great part of the parish is now tithe-free. The advowson of the Vicarage of Scarborough now belongs to the present Lord Hotham. The tithe of fish, or the twentieth part of the fish, or of the value of such fish as were taken by the fishermen of Scarborough, wherever the same was caught or sold, belonged by custom, confirmed by the Court of Exchequer in 1654 and 1720, to the possessors of the Rectory; but the Corporation have liberally waived their right as an encouragement to the fishery.

The Cistercian Abbey stood in the vicinity of the Church of St. Mary. After remarking that the latter edifice has the appearance of a Conventual Church, Hinderwell observes, "The ruins still standing at the eastern part of the Churchyard, the dismembered appearance of the western end, and the great quantity of foundation stones in the new burial ground contiguous to it, are sufficient proofs that it is, in its present state, only the remnant of a vast edifice, which may have formed the Cistercian Abbey and the Church."

In the vale called Peasholm, north of the town of Scarborough, is the ruin of a building supposed to have been the Manor House, and afterwards a farm or grange, belonging to the Cistercian Abbey. According to tradition, the Manor of Northstead, or Peaseholm, was farmed by the Crown, to supply the Cistercian Monks. This Manor was not unfrequently granted to the Governors of the Castle.

FRANCISCAN FRIARY.—There were, as has been intimated, three houses of the mendicant Order of Friars in Scarborough, viz., the Franciscans, the



Dominicans, and the Carmelites. The mendicant Orders observed the rules of poverty, so that their houses were seldom endowed, but many of their Friaries were nevertheless large and stately, and connected with noble Churches. The Friars of the Order of St. Francis, called also the Friars' Minor, Minorite, or Grey Friars (the former from their reputed humility, and the latter from the colour of their habit), first settled in England, according to Burton, about the year 1224, and had in this Kingdom seven Custodies, or Wardenships. In the Custody of York were seven houses, viz., York (See page 508), Beverley, Scarborough, Boston, Doncaster, Lincoln, and Grimsby. Their establishment at Scarborough was erected about the year 1240, and from the extent of the foundations yet to be traced in the Friarage, to the north of St. Sepulchre Street, seems to have been a very spacious building.

We have observed at page 679, that in the 29th of Henry III. (1244), leave was given to the Franciscans to pull down houses, and to build their Convent on the piece of ground between Cukewild Hill and the Mill Beck. In the year 1300, the Knights Hospitalers of St. John of Jerusalem, made a grant to this Convent of a messuage, "situated between the land of John Blaks, which Wm. de Harum holdeth of him in fee, on the south, and the street called Duple,\* on the north, and which joins to the wall of the borough, and the aforesaid street." On the 20th of March, 1306, a Commission was issued to dedicate the Church of the Franciscans, and the Churchyard thereof to the Holy Sepulchre; and on the 27th of July, 1308, another Commission was issued to dedicate the altars of the said Church. There are various confirmations of grants of land in the town to this Friary, on record, and Torre notices many testamentary burials in the Conventual Church. The Convent of the Franciscans at Scarborough was dissolved by King Henry VIII., in 1539, when their total rental per ann. is stated, in a record preserved in the Chapter House, Westminster, to have amounted to five shillings and fourpence only. The habit of the Franciscans was a loose garment of a grey colour, reaching down to their ancles, with a cowl of the same, and a cloak over it when they walked abroad. They went barefooted in imitation of their founder, St. Francis D'Assize, or Assisium, and girded themselves with a cord.

Little is known respecting the above-mentioned *Church of St. Sepulchre*. It is supposed to have stood on the plot of ground to the north of St. Se-

\* Le Dunpole, or Dynpole, appears to have been derived from the Saxon *dun* or *dune*, a fortified hill; and *pole*, the pool or watercourse (Mill Beck), in its immediate neighbourhood. We have observed at page 679, that the foundations of bastions were discovered in 1806, at *Aubro' Gate*; thus the hill was fortified.

pulchre Street, immediately in front of the Friends' Meeting House. It is difficult to define the architectural features of this and the other ancient Churches in Scarborough; the only record remaining being a view of the town taken from an original drawing in the British Museum, supposed to have been made in the reign of Richard III., A.D. 1485. This interesting picture was obtained and presented to the Corporation of Scarborough, by his Grace the Duke of Rutland, Recorder, in 1812; and the late Dr. Travis presented an accurate copy of the same to the Scarborough Museum. Judging from the appearance of the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, on this plan or map, it must have been of considerable dimensions and architectural character, consisting of a nave and south aisle, with a tower on the side, of five stories in height, surmounted with a short spire. One of the finials of the edifice is preserved in the Scarborough Museum. This Church, or Chapel, appears to have had in its early days some connexion with the Knights of St. John, who had possessions in Scarborough, and in Stainton Dale, in the neighbourhood. In the grant of Richard I., in 1198, to the Cistercian Abbey, the Chapels are included generally; but in an inquisition taken in the third year of the reign of Richard II. (1390), to ascertain the extent of the possessions of the Cistercian Abbey at Scarborough, the Chapels of St. Sepulchre and St. Thomas are mentioned by name as parochial. The Church of St. Sepulchre fell into decay prior to Leland's visit to Scarborough, in 1534; and in 1564, the fabric was entirely taken down.

**DOMINICAN FRIARY.**—The Order of Friars, commonly denominated the Dominicans, was founded by St. Dominic, a Spaniard, about A.D. 1215. They had their first house in this country at Oxford, about the year 1221, and soon after had another in London. In the year 1250, a general Chapter of the Dominicans was held in the latter City, when the King (Henry III.) honoured them with his presence, and dined with the Order. The King provided a sumptuous entertainment, and defrayed the expenses of the first day; on the second day the Queen entertained them with great magnificence; Fulco Basset, the Bishop of London, did the honours of the third; Athelmar (brother of Henry III.), Bishop of Westminster, the fourth; and the other prelates in succession.

It is not known with certainty at what period their Convent and Church in this town was founded, but the Community, which was denominated the Prior and Friar's Preachers at "Skarburgh," paved a street in Scarborough, so early as the 27th of Edward I. (1299). On the 4th of October, 1409, Henry, Archbishop of York, translated the feast of the dedication of their Church in this place, from the 12th of September to the 23rd of October.



Of the Church and buildings little is known, and but few remains of them now remain. Their situation seems pretty clearly marked out by Queen Street, which was formerly called "Black Friars' Gate," and by "Friars' Entry," which branches from it, and still retains its name. The masonry of several of the houses in Friars' Entry, is composed of the materials of old conventual buildings; and the same may be said of small detached portions of masonry in other parts of the town. In digging a cellar in a house in Friars' Entry some years ago, a great number of human bones were found, from which it was conjectured that the spot was part of the site of the burial place of the Convent.\*

In A.D. 1252, the Friars of the Order of St. Dominic passed a fine for a house and messuage held by them in "Scardeburgh," and the Community of Scardeburgh granted that the effects of the Friars and their house, should be toll free in that Borough.

At the dissolution of this Convent in 1539, the rental, as it appears by a record, preserved in the Chapter House, Westminster, amounted to fifteen shillings and four pence per ann. The followers of St. Dominic, were sometimes called "Preaching Friars" from their office, to preach; and "Black Friars" from the colour of their upper garment. Their rules were very rigid; perpetual silence was enjoined, no time being allowed for conversation without permission of the Superior. They studied the Scriptures daily, devoted themselves to prayer, and were restricted to almost continual fasts; particularly from the 11th of September to Easter. Abstinence from flesh, unless in great sickness, wearing of woollen instead of linen, a rigorous poverty, and several other austerities were amongst them. The dress, or habit, of the Dominicans, was a black cloak over other vestments, reaching down to their heels, with a hood or cowl of the same, and a scapulary; and under the cloak a white habit made of flannel, as large as the former, with boots on their legs. According to Burton, there were about forty-three houses of this Order in England at the time of the dissolution.

**CARMELITE FRIARY.**—The Carmelites profess to derive their origin in an uninterrupted succession from the children of the prophets, who anciently inhabited the mountain of Carmel, Palestine; but others assert that the Order was really founded in 1122, by Albert, Patriarch of Jerusalem, who, with a few hermits resided on Mount Carmel, whence they were driven by the Saracens, in 1238. In the year 1240 (24th Henry III.), Sir John de

\* The grounds adjacent to Friars' Entry, appear to have been used as a cemetery at a period still more remote, even previous to the introduction of Christianity, as several mutilated burial-urns were found there in the year 1826.

Vesey, of Alnwick, in Northumberland, a renowned commander of the English forces in the wars against the Saracens, returning from the Holy Land, brought with him into England, this Order of Friars, and built them a Monastery, at Holm, in Northumberland, then a desert place, which had some resemblance to Mount Carmel, in Syria. After this establishment they increased much, and spread in a few years into the principal Cities and towns in the Kingdom.

The establishment of the Blessed Mary of Mount Carmel, commonly called Carmelites, or White Friars (from the colour of their habit), in Scarborough, may be dated from the 13th of Edward II. (1320), when that Monarch made them a grant of certain houses for building their Convent and an Oratory; also a grant of licence to the Cistercians to sell a piece of ground for the said Oratory, and a grant of leave from the Abbot of the Cistercians, as Rector of Scarborough, to build an Oratory, with a confirmation of two tenements and a toft for its support. This Oratory, Church, or Chapel, is said to have been situated near the North Cliff, a short distance from the boundaries of the Castle, in a field to the north of St. Mary's Church, known by the name of Charnell Garth (See page 678). Torre's Manuscripts state that "there was a Chapel called Le Charnell, wherein was a Chantry, ordained at the altar of St. Mary Magdalene, which belonged to the patronage of the Percehays of Ryton." There was likewise another Chantry founded in the Chapel called Le Charnell, at the same altar, which was in the patronage of the Kings of England. Torre mentions some testamentary burials in the Church of the Carmelites, at Scarborough. The Convent, or Friary, of this Order here was dissolved in 1539, when the total of their rental amounted only to ten shillings per ann. The site of the Convent is the Charnell Garth. A copy of a drawing of the Conventual Church is in the Museum of Scarborough.

The greatest austerities were practised by these Friars; in summer they rose at four o'clock in the morning, and in winter at five. Each had a coffin in his cell, in which he slept every night upon straw, and every morning dug a shovelful of earth for his grave. To their devotions they walked, or rather crept upon their knees; they observed strict silence for a great portion of their time; ate twice a day, but never tasted animal food; spent much of their time in their cells, in prayer, and fasted from the feast of the Holy Cross till Easter. The rigour of this discipline was relaxed by Pope Innocent IV., and the brethren had permission to taste flesh meat. They wore a white cloak, or robe and hood, and under it a coat with a scapulary. There were forty houses of this Order in England and Wales.

Robert Barton, or Baston, a native of Yorkshire, became in his youth a

Carmelite Friar, and was afterwards Prior of this Convent, at Scarborough. He was a man of exemplary life and behaviour, and the author of several works. He was likewise Poet Laureat and Public Orator at Oxford, and was engaged by Kings Edward I. and II., to chronicle their achievements.

HOSPITALS.—ST. NICHOLAS' HOSPITAL AND CHURCH.—This Hospital is supposed to have been founded in the reign of King Henry II., when the Church belonging to it was erected. The Church was situated upon the cliff, since called St. Nicholas' Cliff, between the house No. 7 A, and the north gate of the Cliff Bridge; and it is supposed that the Hospital stood adjacent to it.\* But there are not any vestiges of either buildings now to be seen, as the land has, in the course of ages, considerably wasted away. The entire skeleton of a human body of large stature was found in the cliff, in 1786; and several human bones, in a regular position, were also discovered in levelling the terrace, in 1791. A copper plate belonging to a tombstone, was found in the cliff, in 1810, bearing an inscription which translates thus:—"Pater Willielmus de Thornton;"† and a tombstone was likewise found in the cliff some years since, without any inscription, though it bore the forms of the cross, chalice, and pix, in the rudest sculpture. Human remains have frequently been seen to fall from the cliff.

It appears, by an inquisition taken in the 26th of Edward I. (1297), that "the Hospitals of St. Nicholas and St. Thomas (hereafter noticed) were formerly founded by the burgesses of Scardeburgh; and that the goods and chattels of St. Nicholas' Hospital, were to the use of the brothers and sisters of the said Hospital; that none of the town of Scardeburgh had dilapidated or injured the said Hospital, or appropriated to themselves anything belonging to it; the lands and tenements being still in the hands of the said brothers and sisters; that the Bailiffs of Scardeburgh for the time being, with four men of the said town, audited the accounts for the said house or Hospital, every year. That the Hospital then possessed eight oxen, of the value of iv. marks each; seven cows, valued at v. shillings each; six heifers, at ii. shillings each; eight sheep, of xii. pence each; eight sheep, of inferior value; and four boars, at v. shillings each. They had also five oxgangs of land, of the value of x. \* \* \* per ann." The Hospital was in the patronage of the King. In the 9th of Edward II. (1316), William de Olive was made Keeper of it; and in five years after, the Keeper was Robert de Spynge.

\* The present terrace, laying between No. 7 A and the Cliff Bridge, was the site of the burial ground of St. Nicholas' Church.

† According to Charlton's History of Whitby, Father William of Thornton, was a subscribing witness to a charter, in the year 1120.

ST. THOMAS' HOSPITAL.—Hugh de Bulmer gave lands at Scarborough towards the founding of an Hospital for poor men and women in this town, in the reign of Henry II. This Hospital was finished and endowed by the burgesses of Scarborough, who had the custody of it, and appointed a Master at their discretion, until the time of Wm. de Champneys, Master of the said Hospital, whom Rodger Westyse ejected with the brothers and sisters thereof, because he, the said William, falsely informed King Edward I. that his royal grandfather, King Henry, had given in fee and perpetual alms to the said Hospital, a carucate and a half of land. The Hospital, which was dedicated in honour of St. Thomas the Martyr, is still in existence (as an Almshouse), and stands in North Street, to the west of the Union Workhouse. It is a poor low building, consisting of twelve old cottages, or tenements, of stone, in a dilapidated state, for as many poor aged and infirm persons, or families. There is a small piece of garden ground attached to each cottage. The Workhouse yard and contiguous gardens are part of the premises belonging to the Hospital; and the grounds adjacent were formerly the burial ground of St. Thomas' Church. It is said that in former days the foundation was on a very liberal scale; at present each inmate has, besides a cottage rent free, only about twelve shillings a year. The old prayer-bell still remains, but it is not now used for that purpose. This Hospital was formerly under the direction of the Bailiffs and Chamberlains, but since the passing of the Reform Bill, it is in the hands of certain Trustees.

The *Church of St. Thomas* was contiguous to the Hospital. Dr. Travis, in one of his numerous contributions to the last edition of Hinderwell's History of Scarborough, says of it, "The Church was a fair and spacious building, near the site of the present Poor-house; and the houses adjacent, towards Newborough Gate, continue to be charged with the payment of a small Church-rent, for encroaching on the Churchyard. At the time of Leland's Itinerary (1538), this edifice is noticed as 'a great Chapelle by side of the Newborrow Gate,' and appears to have been used until its demolition, as a Chapel of Ease to the parish Church, for the Corporation records shew that *four* churchwardens were, during these times, annually elected; and the repairs of St. Thomas' Church, in 1642, were effected by an assessment on the whole parish. During the siege of 1645, St. Thomas' Church was converted into a magazine, by Sir John Meldrum, the commander of the Parliamentary forces, and was much injured by the firing from the garrison; and in the subsequent siege in 1648, it is stated in the Church-brief, that it was 'by the violence of the ordnance quite ruined and battered down.' Such was the actual state of its dilapidation, that on the 6th February, 1649, it

was ordered by the Bailiffs and Burgesses, 'that upon consideration that part of St. Thomas' Church is already fallen, and the rest ready to fall; and as much of the timber and slates are stolen away, by evil-disposed persons; for prevention therefore of any further embezzlement, that the said Church be taken down, and the materials thereof be sold to the best advantage, and the monies arising therefrom be employed in the repair of St. Mary's Church.' " According to the before-mentioned view or plan of the town, the Church of St. Thomas consisted of a nave, with south aisle, and embattled tower of three stages, ornamented with a short spire.

The Hospitals of St. Nicholas and St. Thomas, were both of St. Augustine's Order for the infirm. There were several of these Hospitals in England. Some of them had particular rules of their own, besides the rules of St. Augustine. Their usual habit was a gown, with a scapulary under it, and a cloak of a brown colour, upon which was fixed a brass cross.

KNIGHTS HOSPITALERS, OR KNIGHTS OF ST. JOHN OF JERUSALEM.—The Knights Hospitalers succeeded to the estates of the Knights Templars, when the latter Order was suppressed by Pope Clement V., in A.D. 1312. In the neighbourhood of Stainton Dale, in the parish of Scalby, there is considerable property, which formerly belonged to the Hospitalers, and they had, likewise, some property in Scarborough. The Independent Chapel in St. Sepulchre Street, is supposed to occupy the site of part of their possessions, if not of their residence. Gent, in his History of Hull and Scarborough, 1735, says, that there was an institution in Scarborough, called "The Chapel, or House of St. John," and that its site was near Newborough Gate, and not far distant from St. Thomas' Chapel, near the Hospital of that name.

The ancient Church of St. Mary—the present parish Church—will be noticed farther on in this volume.

TOPOGRAPHY.—Scarborough is a Borough, Liberty Port, and a large and well-built Market Town, locally situated in Pickering Lythe, about 40 miles N.E. from York; 43 miles N. from Hull; 21 miles N. from Driffield; 18 miles N.W. by N. from Bridlington; 21 miles, S.S.E. of Whitby; and 217 miles N. from London; being in 54 deg. 16 min. north latitude, and in 22 min. west longitude, from the meridian of Greenwich.

The *Town of Scarborough* is delightfully and romantically situated in the recess of a vast and irregular bay of the North Sea, or German Ocean, about half-way between the promontory of Whitby and Flamborough Head; which two points, though forty miles apart, may be said to be the extremities of the bay. The interval is marked by an undulating line of cliffs, frequently indented inward; and at the bottom of the most retired of them, nearly in the

midst of the huge sweep, stands this celebrated watering place; the streets, mansions, and noble terraces of which, rise in successive tiers from the shore, somewhat in the form of an amphitheatre. The beach of firm and smooth sand slopes gradually towards the sea. The massive ruins of the venerable and once impregnable Castle, situated on a peninsular height, near the town (as already described), is a prominent object, and the elegant ranges of handsome buildings along the cliffs, give the place a truly delightful appearance. Mr. Hinderwell, in describing the general aspect of the place, says, "To the east stand the ruins of the ancient Castle, whose venerable walls adorn the summit of a lofty promontory. To the south is a vast expanse of ocean, a scene of the highest magnificence, where fleets of ships are frequently passing. The recess of the tide leaves a spacious area upon the sands, equally convenient for exercise and sea-bathing. The refreshing gales of the ocean, and the shades of the neighbouring hills, give an agreeable temperature to the air, during the sultry heats of summer, and produce a grateful serenity.

The town is well-built; the principal streets in the upper, or more modern portion of it, are spacious and well paved, with excellent flagged footways on each side; and the houses have, in general, a handsome appearance. The new buildings on the North and South Cliffs, stand almost unrivalled, in respect of situation, having in front beautiful terraces, elevated (on the South Cliff especially) nearly a hundred feet above the level of the sands, and commanding a variety of delightful prospects. As lodging houses, these buildings are equally elegant, commodious, pleasant, and healthy; and in different parts of the town there are many other excellent lodging houses, where visitors may be accommodated in a genteel and agreeable manner. The vicinity of the town is richly diversified with hill and dale, exhibiting a great variety of romantic scenery. The author of the Pictorial Souvenir of Scarborough, in welcoming the visitor to this "loved resort," exultingly says, "Dear old Scarborough, how many toil-worn hearts have exulted on their approach to thy peaceful shores! How ever-dearly cherished is the halcyon repose the mind enjoys amidst thy tranquilising scenes! How have thy numberless beauties of rock and river, glen and mountain, heath and orchard, aided to fill the lone heart with joy and with hope for the future, and the sunken frame with vigour and new strength, to hold forward yet awhile on the rude and broken path of the busy world without! And the great Ocean that gently kisses thy feet, and daily does proud homage to thy charms,—shall we not, 'subject' though it be, its praise acknowledge? The sound of its murmuring waves, now breaking upon the ear in softest cadence, or, anon,



the thunder of its mighty billows as they roll, in sublime chorus, majestically to the strand;—the boundless expanse of its horizon-bound surface, telling of lands, to which it is the great highway, far, far, beyond, luxuriating in the sunny smile of cloudless day, or, hidden in the darkness of northern night,—the contents of its unfathomable depths, and the riches of its ‘treasure caves and cells;—the life it holds;—the very life indeed, it seems to be—all afford abundant scope for most pleasing contemplation, and constitute the sea—great emblem of the Infinite—the centre and crowning point of all the adornments and attractions with which nature has so lavishly endowed this fair vicinity.”

The approaches to sea-ports from the land are seldom particularly beautiful, but the entrance to Scarborough by the Malton road is exceedingly picturesque and beautiful. The elegant writer, from whose *Souvenir* we have just quoted, describing the prospect from an eminence on that road, called Stepney Hill, a spot from which the beauties of the scene may be enjoyed to the greatest advantage, says,—“On every hand some striking feature appears. To the south, the boldly-rising Weapon Ness forms a prominent object; to the north, the bleak moorlands present themselves to view; to the east, the Town of Scarborough extends itself, the noble ruins of its once stately Castle courting the gaze of the stranger, and telling their silent but truthful tale of ages long past; and beyond lies the magnificent ocean, spread out as a mirror reflecting the blue sky, with which it becomes wedded in the distance. All around, hills and dales, barren heaths, and waving cornfields, fill up the charming picture.”

Dr. John Kelk, in a little book on the Scarborough Spa, in referring to the views from the same hill says, “Nothing can be more pleasing to the man of taste, nothing more cheering to the broken-down spirits of the invalid, than this unique picture, which is, as it were, spread out before him at his very feet. The freshes of the air,” he continues, “so different to what is breathed in the interior of England, and so little like what is inhaled by the inhabitants of sooty and smoky towns, tainted with a thousand impurities, seems already to invigorate the body before it has arrived at this gem of watering places.” John Phillips, Esq., F.S.A., in his *Railway Excursions*, greatly lauds this region of rock and wave, of beauty and romance—Scarborough. “Perhaps the whole British coast,” he writes, “offers nothing nobler or more suggestive of high thoughts, than the walk from the pier ascending towards the Castle, the passage of the gateway, the crossing of the drawbridge, the climbing of the covered way, and the wandering on the Castle Hill. From this elevated point the land and sea spread out in an

immense circle; the light glances on a multitude of passing and returning vessels; the cliffs in every variety of form, and of all tints, from the white steep of Flambro' to the dark rocks of the peak; sands of the brightest tint, bounded by waves of the largest curvature, solitary in the north bay, covered with gay crowds on the south; while inland, Weapon Ness and Silphoe Moor brings to recollection the semi-barbarous days of Britain; and close at hand the half ruined Church pleads against the later Civil War." And again, he observes, "The stranger who is allured by the uncommon attractions of Scarborough to linger here for awhile, will find the sea rich in shells, corals, and fishes, and many other forms of marine life; the cliffs productive of beautiful fossil plants and shells; and the tumuli on the cliffs and in the interior full of information regarding the modes of life and burial of our rude ancestors."

Dr. Granville, in his well-known work on English Spas, is lavish in his praises of the beauties of the vicinity of Scarborough. The bay he appropriately compares to the Bay of Naples, and expresses in glowing terms the pleasurable surprise with which he first looked upon the diversified scenery in the neighbourhood. Indeed it was this learned physician that accorded to Scarborough the high title of the "Queen of English Watering Places."

Within the last quarter of a century Scarborough has been doubled in extent, and more than doubled in its power of yielding comfort and pleasure. The access to the sands has been rendered more easy to invalids; the Spa furnished with suitable buildings, and made easy of approach at all times; magnificent hotels and lodging houses crown the north and south cliffs, and there is every convenience for private as well as open sea bathing.

THE SPA.—Scarborough had already stood high as a place of fashionable resort during the season for sea bathing, but the discovery of the mineral waters speedily raised it higher in repute, and inevitably elevated it to the first rank amongst the watering places of the Kingdom—and at this day it presents the two great attractions to the invalid of medicinal waters and sea bathing. "The discovery of our Spa," curtly remarks the editor of the Guide to Scarborough, "is not marked by any of those marvellous occurrences, to which some of our neighbours are fond of alluding, when tracing the origin and history of their mineral waters. We are not indebted to the instinct of the swine or the stag, nor the fluttering of a pigeon or lapwing, as at Bath, Harrogate, or Cheltenham, for the detection of the medicinal properties of our waters, but simply to the observations of an intelligent female." According to Dr. Wittie's account of this discovery, published in 1660, and copied by Hinderwell, Mrs. Farrer, the wife of a respectable merchant, who

lived at Scarborough about the year 1620, while occasionally walking along the shore, observed the stones over which the water passed, to have received a russet colour, and finding it to have an acid taste, different from the common springs, and to receive a purple tincture from galls, thought it probably might have a medicinal property; and having therefore made an experiment herself, and persuaded others to make the same, it was found to be efficacious in some complaints, and became the usual physic of the inhabitants. It was afterwards in great repute, and was so very generally recommended, that several persons came from great distances to drink it, preferring it before all others, even the Italian, French, and German Spas.

An old writer quoted by Dr. Kelk, in a description of Scarborough, published also in 1660, after describing the town and Castle, proceeds to say, "That which adds further to the fame of the place is the Spa's well, which is a quick spring about a quarter of a mile south from the town, at the foot of an exceeding high cliff, arising upright out of the earth, *like a boiling pot*, near the level of the spring tides, with which it is overflown."

The first cistern for collecting the waters was built in 1698, and had in front of it a staith or wharf, composed of a large body of stone bound by timber, as a fence against the sea. The wells thus secured had a house attached to them. In the month of December, 1737, the house and cistern were destroyed by, what was considered by some, a slight shock of an earthquake. A great mass of the cliff behind the house, containing near an acre of pasture land sunk perpendicularly, and forced up the sand and spongy soil for the space of one hundred yards, to eighteen or twenty feet above its former level. The ground thus raised was twenty six yards in breadth; and the staith, notwithstanding its immense weight—supposed to be about 2463 tons—rose entire, twelve feet higher than its former position, and was forced out forward to the sea about twenty yards. This convulsion for some time so buried the springs that doubts were entertained of their recovery; but after a diligent search they were found, and the staith being repaired the spa continued to maintain its merited reputation.\* The building which was

\* An original character called *Dicky Dickinson* superintended the springs, and was styled the *Governor of the Spa*. He lost all his household goods, and a well stocked cellar of wine and ale, by the catastrophe, and as he died on the 8th of February following, it is said his death was hastened by the untoward event. In a periodical miscellany published in 1733, this Dicky Dickinson is thus described:—"He is one of the most deformed pieces of mortality, and of the most uncouth manner of speech; however with *Æsop's* deformity he has some of his wit. He rents the well, of the Corporation, at a small rent, and has built two houses for the convenience of the company, one for

then erected for the protection of the springs, was demolished by the violence of a storm or gale, which occurred in February, 1836, when the sea rose higher than had probably been known for half a century. Before its power the whole of the staith fell, and the elevation upon which the old Spa house stood was in a great measure removed, and rendered totally unfit for use. Measures were soon taken by the Cliff Bridge Company, to secure plans and funds for re-constructing the edifice in a manner corresponding with the improved and growing importance of the town. An immense mass of cliff was excavated; the boundaries of the staith and promenade were considerably extended beyond their former limits; several beautiful and retired walks were cut in the face of the cliff, and trees planted in the most favourable situations.

The grounds and walks now about the Spa form one of the most delightful places of fashionable resort in the north of England.

The erection of the present *Spa Saloon* was commenced in the year 1837, from plans furnished by Wyatt. The building, which is of cut stone, is in the castellated style, and is much admired for its chaste and elegant appearance. The completion of the original design, which only comprised the front saloon of the present structure, was celebrated by a public breakfast on Friday, the 16th of August, 1839, and was attended by most of the principal visitors then in the town, and by many of the chief inhabitants. In a few years it was found necessary to remodel and enlarge the edifice, and in 1847, another large and beautiful hall was added to it. But even this enlargement does not now afford sufficient accommodation to the numbers that resort

the use of the gentlemen and the other for the ladies." The following humorous lines were written under his picture, engraved by Mr. Vertue :—

" Behold, the *Governor of Scarborough Spaw*,  
The strangest *Phis* and *Form* you ever saw;  
Yet when you view the *beauties* of his mind,  
In him a second *Æsop* you may find.  
*Samos* unenvied boasts her *Æsop* gone,  
And *France* may glory in her late *Scarron*,  
While *England* has a living *DICKINSON*."

*William Temperton*, who succeeded Dicky Dickinson as "Governor of Scarborough Spaw," died in 1755, and that solemn event is recorded on a copper plate, attached to a flat grave stone, opposite the south porch of the Church of St. Mary. *William Allanson*, the next "Governor," was remarkable for longevity, having attained to the age of 103 years, in the possession of all his faculties. His attainment to extreme old age, without its usual attendant infirmities, was the more singular, as he was far from having lived temperately. He died in 1775. Whenever he was questioned respecting his regimen, he usually replied that he had "always lived well, and the spaw-water was his sovereign remedy."

to this "famous fountain of health," and it is now intended either to enlarge or remodel the structure on a much more extensive scale. The promenade, too, is about to be still further extended, and many improvements made in the walks, terraces, and ornamented works in the grounds of the beautiful cliff.\* The Spa Saloon, and its terraces and pleasure grounds are daily frequented in the season, by thousands of delighted pleasure seekers. A talented band of music is provided during the summer months, whose performances during the day and in the evening adds greatly to the attractions of the place. Concerts are generally given in the saloon on two evenings in each week.

The principal approach from the town to the Spa Saloon is across a handsome cast iron bridge of four arches, on pyramidal stone piers, called the *Cliff Bridge*. The erection of this elegant structure is one of the most important improvements in the town. It was projected by the late R. Cattle, Esq., of York; the foundation stone was laid on the 29th of November, 1826, by E. H. Hebden, Esq., then the senior Bailiff of this Borough; and it was opened to the public on the 19th of July, 1827, the anniversary of the Coronation of the then reigning Monarch, George IV. This bridge spans the valley between St. Nicholas' Cliff and South Cliff—its length is 414 feet; breadth, 13½ feet; and height, above high water mark, 75 feet. Its original cost amounted to about £9000., which was raised in shares. The Bridge, the Spa, and the surrounding grounds belong to a Company of shareholders, called the Cliff Bridge Company.†

\* Since the above observations were penned, the shareholders in the Cliff Bridge Company have held a general meeting, at which the Report of the Committee on the proposed alterations and extensions of the Spa, was read, and plans prepared by Sir Joseph Paxton, shewing the projected improvements, were received. A rough estimate of the cost of carrying out Sir Joseph's designs, was laid before the meeting. This consisted of the following items:—For the proposed new music hall, or principal building, £4,900.; colonade, £1,250.; vestibule, £472.; alterations to the present buildings, £350.; addition to the north wall of the Spa, £1,250.; improvements and extensions in the pleasure grounds, including a proposed new road north of the Spa, £650.; total, £8,897. To this the Committee add the estimate cost of lengthening the sea-wall promenade southward, £3,500.; and for contingent expenses, £1,103.; making a grand total of £13,500., a sum the outlay of which the Committee think the interests of the shareholders and the requirements of the yearly increasing number of visitors more than qualifies. A statement of the average expenditure and receipts of the Company, during the last four years, shows that the undertaking, when completed according to the plans now received, will be capable of yielding interest at the rate of 5½ per cent. In order to raise the required capital, new shares at the rate of £3. are to be issued.

† The daily charge for crossing this bridge, or for entering the Spa saloon or its grounds, by any of the five entrance gates to them, is sixpence from the 1st of June to

The *Spa* consists of two mineral springs, and they are both saline chalybeates; one, called the North Well, is the strongest chalybeate; and the other, the South Well, holds in solution the greatest portion of aperient salts. The water in both wells has frequently been analysed, and with different results, as chemical science has advanced.\* On the South Cliff, above the Spa, and connected with it and the Cliff Bridge, is a magnificent assemblage of houses,—with a *monstre* hotel (*the Crown*) in the centre—called the *Espalade*, which is one of the most attractive parts of the town. The promenade runs the whole length of the front of the buildings, and commands most delightful and varied prospects, including the sands, the spa, the town, the Castle, and the sea.

No part of the British coast can offer a situation more delightful or convenient for the purpose of sea bathing, than Scarborough. The bay is spa-

the 1st of October (the bathing season), and fourpence during the other months of the year. The receipts of the Cliff Bridge Company, for tolls and subscriptions during the season of 1856, amounted to within a few pounds of £3,000.—not including the payments for concerts.

\* The most recent analysis of the waters of these springs are those made by Richard Phillips, Esq., F.R.S., one of the most practical chemists of the day, in the year 1840; who found one gallon of the water of the North and South Wells, respectively to contain :—

NORTH WELL.	
Azotic Gas.....	6.3 cubic inches.
Chloride of Sodium (common salt) .....	26.64 grains.
Crystallized Sulphate of Magnesia .....	142.68 "
Crystallized Sulphate of Lime .....	104.00 "
Bicarbonate of Lime .....	48.26 "
Bicarbonate of Protoxide of Iron .....	1.84 "
Total contents .....	323.42 "
Specific gravity of the water .....	1.0035
SOUTH WELL.	
Azotic Gas.....	7.5 cubic inches.
Chloride of Sodium (common salt) .....	39.63 grains.
Crystallized Sulphate of Magnesia .....	225.33 "
Crystallized Sulphate of Lime .....	110.78 "
Bicarbonate of Lime .....	47.80 "
Bicarbonate of Protoxide of Iron .....	1.81 "
Total contents .....	415.35 "
Specific gravity of the water .....	1.0045
Temperature of both 49°, with little variation.	

cious and open upon the sea, the waves, in general, as transparent as those in mid-ocean; the sand clean, smooth, and even, and the beautiful and gently sloping form of the beach towards the sea is excellently adapted for that purpose. The brine, too, is undiluted by the discharge of any considerable river, and the beach is not so extensive as to become uncomfortably hot, even by the power of a summer's sun. Bathing can be performed at all times of tide, and in almost all kinds of weather, with security and ease. Dr. Russel, in his letter to Dr. Frewin, on Sea Water, so well pourtrays Scarborough and its environs, that one might be led to suppose it was drawn upon the spot. "The situation of a place for sea bathing," he says, "should be clean and neat; at some distance from the opening of a river, that the water might be as highly loaded with sea-salt, and the other articles of the ocean as possible, and not weakened by the mixing of fresh water with its waves. In the next place one would choose the shore to be sandy and flat, for the convenience of going into the sea in a bathing-chariot. And lastly, that the sea-shore should be bounded by lively cliffs and downs, to add to the cheerfulness of the place, and give the person who has bathed, an opportunity of mounting on horseback dry and clean, and pursuing such exercises as may be advised by his physician, after he comes out of the bath." The sea at Scarborough is many degrees cooler in the month of August, than at Brighton, and possibly than at any place southward of the Thames. On the whole, Scarborough is of more consequence as a "watering place" than as a sea-port, or a place of trade.

PORT, PIERS, AND HARBOUR.—At the eastern ends of the sands are the *Piers* and *Harbour*. Various grants, some of them of an early date, have been made by Government for the support of this harbour. Henry III., in the 36th year of his reign (1252), by a patent-roll, dated the 30th of July, granted to the "Bailiffs and Burgesses, and other good men of Scardeburgh," certain duties to be taken "from the day of the Assumption of the Blessed Mary to the end of five years next following," in order to enable them "to make a certain new port with timber and stone towards the sea, whereby all ships arriving there may enter and sail out without danger, as well at the beginning, as at high water." This has been followed by renewed and extended grants in different reigns. In the 37th of Henry VIII. (1546), an Act of Parliament was passed imposing a duty on vessels, for the purpose of repairing the quay or pier of this haven. The preamble of this Act stated, "that of old antiquity this port or haven had afforded refuge and safe harbour at all tides, and at every full sea to ships, boats, and vessels in any adversity, tempest, or peril on the north coast, and that they had been accustomed to

resort thither, for their safeguard and assurance, as well of men's lives, as of vessel, goods, and merchandize; by means of which great resort the town was well inhabited, and the inhabitants well occupied with sundry occupations." In the year 1625 (8th of Elizabeth), the pier being ruinous and decayed, the Queen granted five hundred pounds in money, a hundred tons of timber, and six tons of iron, in aid of rebuilding it, on condition that it was increased in height from sixteen feet, which it then was, to twenty, in breadth at the base, from thirty to forty-five feet, and at the top from nine to twelve feet. In 1605, the Bailiff and Burgesses presented an "humble petition," to King James I., setting forth that Scarborough, which had heretofore "ben a towne of great traffique by sea, as well in trade of merchandize, as for fishing," was then "verie muche decaied and greatly depopulated;" and praying that his Majesty would, "in tender comyseration of their distresse and povertie," grant them certain aid towards the maintenance of their piers. The prayer of this and several other petitions of a similar character from other places, was granted in 1614, and a duty of fourpence for all ships under fifty tons, and eightpence for all others above fifty, "loading at the northward," was made payable to the Bailiffs and Burgesses.

This pier originally extended from the shore at the foot of the Castle Cliff, to the Locker House, and it is supposed that at some subsequent period a further extension was made, by a change of direction from the Locker House to the western end of the island pier, as the existence of such a junction has been confirmed by the discovery of the foundation stones. It was constructed with round stones loosely connected, and the interior part filled up with smaller stones and gravel, and was, consequently, exposed to frequent damages. According to the above-mentioned petition to James I., it cost the "poore inhabitants a yearlie charge of £100. and upwards in mayntenan it."

The confined and dangerous state of the old harbour, and the insufficiency of the ancient pier, being represented to Parliament, an Act was passed in the 5th of George II. (1732), for enlarging the pier and harbour, the cost being estimated at £12,000. By this Act, which is called the *New Pier Act*, certain Harbour Commissioners were appointed, and a duty of a half-penny per chaldron was imposed upon all coals laden in any ship or vessel from Newcastle, or ports belonging to it; together with sundry other duties on imports, exports, and shipping, payable in Scarborough; and under its provisions an addition was made to the whole pier, extending from near the Locker House westward, to the length of 1,200 feet altogether; the breadth is irregular, from thirteen to eighteen feet; the new part is wider than the old,



and near the extremity measures forty-two feet. The whole of this pier is now generally called the *Old Pier*, though some, with more propriety, call the additional new work, from the name of the engineer who finished it, *Vincent's Pier*. The point of junction is visible near the Locker House, and the new work may easily be distinguished from the old, by the different modes of building, and the greater regularity of the stones. In 1763, the force of the sea, in a violent gale of wind, made a breach near the Locker House; and the waves passing through, many ships were washed out of the harbour, and driven upon the rocks to the southward of the Spa. On the evening of New Year's Day, 1767, another storm suddenly arose, by which all the ships were broken loose from their winter moorings, and a new vessel was washed off the stocks. These and similar occurrences proved the necessity of some further security, so the Commissioners judged it expedient to build a new pier, extending from the foot of the Castle Cliff, and sweeping into the sea with a large portion of a circle—an undertaking of considerable magnitude, it being necessary to build it of extraordinary dimensions, to resist the violence of the waves in such an exposed situation. This is now called the *New, or Outer Pier*. The foundation is sixty feet in breadth, and at the curvature, where there is the greatest force of the sea it is sixty-three feet. The breadth of the top is forty-two feet, and the elevation of the pier is forty feet. Its extent is about 460 yards, or 1380 feet. The ponderous rocks used in the building of this pier were taken from a quarry, the White Nabb, or Nob, an opposite point about two miles distant, and conveyed in flat-bottomed vessels called floats.\*

In the 3rd of George IV. (1823), another Act was obtained by the Harbour Commissioners, for levying dues on the shipping for building the *New Quay*, which extends from the north pier to the foot of West Sandgate, and for making other improvements, which have rendered the harbour sufficiently commodious for the trade and commerce of the port.

Though rather confined at the entrance, and likely to be warped up with sand in calm weather,† the *Harbour* is easy of access, even to ships of large

\* The White Nab Quarry, which is a great natural curiosity, is situated about a mile beyond the Spa. It is a vast bed of flat rocks lying upon the shore in regular strata. They are separated without much difficulty, are of a close texture, and almost impenetrable to the tool by their extreme hardness. Iron chains are fixed to them when dry at low water; and as the tide flows, the floats, when there is a sufficient depth of water, take them in by means of cranes fixed on board for the purpose. Some of these stones weigh from twenty to thirty tons.

† The floating sand brought in by the tide, gradually accumulates, there being no

burden, in spring tides; and it is safe and commodious within—indeed it is the only port between the Humber and the Tyne, where large vessels can find refuge in violent gales from the east. The depth of water at the extremity of the pier is about twenty feet, and at neap tides about ten feet. For the direction of ships intending to enter the port, a signal is displayed every day, on the top of the lighthouse at the end of Vincent's pier, where a light is exhibited as a guide by night, so long as the water continues at the depth of ten feet in the harbour. The outer harbour, or the large space enclosed between the outer and Vincent's piers, is made available for vessels taking refuge here. The entrance is by an opening through the latter, and room is provided for the perfect security of at least one hundred vessels.

The *Port* has not increased in *shipping* in the same proportion as some other sea-ports. In the year 1688 the ships belonging to it consisted of only twenty or twenty-two ships of large size, and some "small barques, between twenty and thirty tons burthen." In 1730 the ships of the greatest burden did not exceed 240 tons admeasurement, and the number of that description was under twenty; the rest were about seventy vessels of from 60 to 150 tons; the aggregate tonnage might be estimated at 12,000 tons. The ships, from this latter period, gradually increased in burden; but the whole number in 1780 amounted to only 102. In the year 1796 the number of ships was 165, measuring 25,600 tons. In 1830, Scarborough is ranked in a Parliamentary return, as the *tenth* port in England in amount of tonnage, the nine ports registering a larger tonnage being London, Newcastle, Liverpool, Sunderland, Whitehaven, Hull, Bristol, Yarmouth, and Whitby. The number of ships registered here in that year was 169, and measuring 28,070 tons, exclusive of vessels belonging to residents at Scarborough, but registered elsewhere. In that year the coasting trade inwards was 272 vessels, of 19,847 tons; and outwards 80 vessels, of 5,467 tons. The foreign inwards was seven vessels, of 1,014 tons; outwards, *nil*. In the year 1856 the coasting trade inwards was 272 vessels (same number as in 1830), measuring in the aggregate 14,479 tons; and outwards 39 of 2,435 tons. The number of vessels from foreign parts that arrived here in the same year was thirteen, of

natural stream to scour it away; and were it not for the great action of the waves in strong gales of wind from the east, and during the storms of winter, the harbour would in process of time be entirely choked up. Some idea may be formed of the progress of the encroaching sand here, when it is made known that what is now Quay Street was originally a part of the old harbour, mooring-posts, having been discovered in the cellars of some of the houses in that situation. It is stated that in 1811, persons were living, who remembered catching fish with angling lines, from the staith on the sands, where the sea never touches now even at high spring tides.

1,294 tons burden; and twenty-three in ballast; outward with cargoes, three. The foreign trade is chiefly in Baltic and American timber, with wine, hemp, flax, &c.; and fruit from France. The present number of vessels registered here is 192, of 34,090 tons burden. The gross receipt of *Customs* in 1835, was £1,188.; in 1840, £1,887.; in 1855, £3,385.; and in 1856, £4,632.

The port had the privilege of bonding granted to it in 1841. Its limits extend from the most easterly part of Flamborough Head, in a direction northward to Peasehold Beck, including all the sea coast to fourteen fathoms of water at low water mark.\*

The *Fisheries* are pretty extensive and profitable, there being an abundant variety of fish on the coast. The principal fish taken are cod, haddock, ling, holibut, turbot, sole, and herrings. There are several establishments for curing the fish, and the bloaters cured here are considered quite equal in flavour, &c., to the noted Yarmouth bloaters. The scarr or rock, which the fishermen call the Stream, where the fish abundantly resort, is three or four miles from Scarborough. The rock fish are firmer than those caught upon a sandy bottom. There are neither cockles nor oysters, and the number of lobsters caught is not very considerable.

*Life Boat, &c.*—A life boat is stationed on the beach, for the preservation of shipwrecked mariners. The first life boat belonging to this port was constructed at Scarborough in the year 1800 or 1801, from Mr. Greathead's plan, and was instrumental in saving much property and many lives. In 1823 a second boat was built, upon an improved plan; but by the tremendous gale which visited this coast in February, 1836, it was upset, and ten out of the crew of fourteen were drowned. Another life boat was built in 1852, from a design by Mr. James Peake, assistant master-shipwright in the Government dockyard at Woolwich. This gentleman, in the course of the adjudication on the several models submitted in competition for the prize of one hundred guineas, offered by the Duke of Northumberland, had opportunities of carefully examining the advantages and defects of each; the result was a design supposed to comprise the essential qualities in the best form, and from this design the new life boat was built at Scarborough. She is of larch, and is copper-fastened; and her dimensions are—length over all,

\* To the south of Scarborough, about three miles along the coast, is *Carnelian Bay*, the great haunt of pebble hunters. When the tide is down, and the weather fine, numbers of persons of every grade may be seen exploring the sands for their hidden treasures. The principal pebbles found here are jaspers, moss-agates, and carnelians; the first-mentioned are abundant on the shore.

25 feet; extreme breadth, 6 ft. 4 in.; depth amidships, 3 ft. 1 in.; depth at ends, 5 feet. The great elevation of the ends, and their consisting of air boxes, give the boat, in a large degree, the property of self-righting. Ten men, viz:—eight rowers and two steersmen, form the complement of her crew.

At Scarborough has also been established, under the superintendence of the Coast Guard, Captain Manby's mortar-piece and apparatus, for forming a communication from the shore, with vessels in danger of shipwreck, by means of a small rope appended to a shot, which is discharged at such an elevation as to cross the vessel; thus enabling the crew to receive such further aid as may be necessary for their safe landing. This humane principle has likewise been carried into effect by the agency of rockets, invented by the late Mr. A. G. Carte, ordnance store-keeper at Hull. The precision with which these rockets convey the communication-rope over the distance of three or four hundred yards, to the exact point of its destination, is astonishing.

POPULATION, &c.—The parish of Scarborough comprises the townships of Scarborough and Falsgrave. The area of Scarborough township, according to the Return of the Census in 1851, is 1,566 acres; and that of Falsgrave, 1,020 acres. In 1801, the population of Scarborough town was 6,403; in 1811, 6,710; in 1821, 8,188; in 1831, 8,369; in 1841, 9,515; and on the 31st of March, 1851, 12,087, of which number 7,278 belonged to the North Ward, and 4,809 to the South Ward. The entire population of the Borough, including the two townships, in 1851, was 12,015 souls, viz., 5,742 males, and 7,173 females. There were at the same time 2,899 houses in Scarborough township, viz., 2,664 inhabited, 202 uninhabited, and 23 building. The population of Falsgrave township was 757 souls, viz., 328 males, and 429 females. The number of houses was 180. The rateable value of Scarborough township, in September, 1856, was £45,128.; and the rateable value of Falsgrave was £4,979.

*Trade, &c.*—Besides the fisheries above noticed, there is a ship building establishment here, and two yards for building fishing smacks, luggers, &c. In 1825, six ships were built here, the tonnage of which was 1,561; in 1831, three, tonnage 530; in 1839, two, tonnage 407; in 1850, one, tonnage 800; and in 1852, two measuring 285 tons. A *Floating Dock* for the repair of vessels, was formed by a Company of shareholders, in 1850. A steam packet arrives here from Middlesborough every Saturday, and returns on Monday, all through the year; and during the summer months several steamers ply between this port and those of Bridlington, Whitby, &c. The town is lighted with gas—the Gas Company having been established in 1836, and

incorporated in 1851. The erection of the works of the Company, which are situated in Quay Street, cost £7,000., raised in shares of ten pounds each.\* The *Water Works* are situated near Cayton, about two miles distant, and the fresh water is conveyed to the town in pipes.

The prosperity of Scarborough depends almost entirely on the patronage which is bestowed upon it as a watering place. The authorities of the town aware of this fact, constantly adopt every means to maintain the high character it has acquired as a place of fashionable resort. The number of visitors residing here during the season amounts to several thousands; and the yearly increasing size of the town is an index to its continued success. The extension of the Railway to Scarborough from York and Hull, has done much to advance the interests of the place.

MARKETS AND FAIRS.—The weekly markets are held on Thursdays and Saturdays—the former chiefly for corn—and there is a third weekly market on Tuesdays during the summer season. *Fairs* for cattle, toys, &c., take place on Holy Thursday and Old Martinmas Day. The earliest account of a market at Scarborough is in the year 1181, where, as it is stated in an old document still preserved, that King Henry II., “being then seized of a market at Scarborough, gave the same to the burgesses there.” By a charter of Henry III., in 1253, amongst other privileges, “the burgesses and their heirs for ever” were authorised to have one fair in the Borough every year, “to continue from the feast of the Assumption of the Blessed Mary (August 15th), until the feast of St. Michael next following.” This fair or free mart was an important privilege, and attracted a great concourse of strangers, for whose accommodation booths and tents were erected in the streets, between Palace Hill, and the south-east wall of the town, hence called Merchants’ Row. Various sorts of merchandise and foreign wares from Flanders, &c., were brought to the mart in great quantities. Minstrels, jugglers, and all the ancient scenes of merriment abounded. The annual return of the day was celebrated as a jubilee by the inhabitants, and the fair was proclaimed with much ceremony, the town’s officers being mounted on horseback, preceded by a band of music, and attended by crowds of people. The cavalcade paraded the streets, halting at particular stations where the common cryer, in a doggerel composition, probably coeval with the mart itself, made procla-

\* The *Scarborough Guide* of 1796 says, “In Scarborough streets there are no lamps! the reason assigned is, lest they should be broken! moreover, that two individuals hung up two lamps, and they both ‘got broke.’”

mation, and welcomed the strangers to the town.\* The day upon which this ceremony took place (August 12th), was corruptly called "Jabler's day," the inhabitants being summoned at this time to pay their gablage, the tax imposed upon the houses of the town by Henry II. (See page 728.)

In the 40th of Henry III. (1256), the markets of Filey, Sherburn, and Brompton, were suppressed at the suit of the Bailiffs and Burgesses of Scarborough, because they were found to be injurious to the market at Scarborough. The markets of Scarborough and Seamer were the source of many years' litigation. The latter market was granted by Richard II., to Henry, Earl of Northumberland, in the year 1388, with the usual exception, "if it should not be found injurious to neighbouring markets and fairs;" and the same Monarch having in the year following confirmed the former grant to Scarborough, the market at Seamer was never kept from that time till the year 1577 (19th Elizabeth), when Sir Henry Gate, Knt., then proprietor of Seamer, procured an exemplification of the charter of Richard I. The Bailiffs and Burgesses then commenced a suit or trial, in the Court of Queen's Bench, for the suppression of the said market, on the score of its being injurious to Scarborough; and they showed that the numbers of the various trades' companies of the town had been greatly reduced, and that the grass grew in the Market Place of Scarborough, after the establishment of Seamer market, and that the shipping and houses were gone much to decay. After, as we stated, several years' litigation, at a cost of upwards of two thousand pounds, judgment was given in 1602 (44th Elizabeth), in favour of Scarborough. Notwithstanding this decision, a new grant for a market at Seamer, was obtained by Thomas Mompesson, Esq., then proprietor of that estate, in the 7th of James I. (1610), under the great seal of England, but with the same exception as in the former grants. The market at Seamer was at length finally suppressed by a charter specially granted for that purpose to the Bailiffs and Burgesses of Scarborough by the same Monarch, in 1612.

\* This mart has long been disused, although the annual custom of proclaiming it in procession was continued until the year 1788, in terms nearly as follow:

"Lords, gentlemen and loons,  
 You're welcome to our towns,—  
 You're welcome here to stay  
 Until St. Michael's day,—  
 But tolls and customs pay,  
 From latter Lammas day.—  
 —To Burgesses we say—  
 Pay your gablage, pray."

"God save the King, and the Worshipful Mr. Bayliffe."

Tradition says that the first market-place in Scarborough, was near the covered rope-walk, north of Toller Gate, and a great blue stone, which until lately formed part of the wall of the fields adjoining the Lancasterian Schools, and is now deposited in the Museum, is said to have been the place where public bargains were made and ratified. Mr. Hinderwell says that this tradition is "confirmed by an ancient deed, late in the possession of the executors of Mr. John Parkin, which states that one of the fields now adjoining the Rope-walk, then butted upon the Market Street, in the north." It is probable from the name of the adjoining street (Toller Gate), that market tolls were formerly paid there. The markets in Scarborough have since been held in different parts of the town, according to the peculiar changes required by the times. In the reign of Edward VI., both the markets and fairs were held upon the *Sands*. There are still the remains of a very ancient *Market Cross* (a tall stone pillar curiously carved), preserved at the end of Low Conduit Street; and public proclamations continue to be read there. This cross is mentioned frequently in the Corporation records, as the *Butter Cross*. One of the adjoining streets is yet known by the name of Saturday Market. Until of late the markets have been held in and near Newborough Street, and an old building, called the Market Cross, stood in the centre of the space at the south end of Cross Street, called St. Helen's Square; but the removal of this cross, and the erection of the new Market Hall, has been found to be one of the greatest improvements yet effected in Scarborough. A description of the latter edifice will be found with the other public buildings in the town. The *Corn Market* is now held in Newborough Street, near the end of Queen Street; and the *Fish Market* (wholesale) is kept on the sands, near the harbour, and (retail) in the Market Hall. In the latter place is the market, also, for butcher's meat, poultry, eggs, butter, fruit, vegetables, &c.; and the supply of every kind is mostly abundant.

*Banks*.—The banking establishments in the town are, the *Scarborough Old Bank* (Woodall, Hebden, & Co.), 37, Queen Street; which draws on Heywood, Kennard, & Co.; and a Branch of the *York City and County Banking Co.*, 60, Newbro' Street, which draws on Barnett, Hoare, & Co.

The *Scarborough Savings' Bank* is held in a neat building in King Street. From the report of the institution for the year ending November, 20th, 1856, it appears that the sums received of depositors during that year, was £11,847. And at that date the amount deposited was £61,708., belonging to 1,674 depositors, viz., 552 minors, 211 spinsters, 123 town servants, 158 country servants, 62 labourers, 80 sailors, fishermen, and carpenters, 288 small trades-

people, mechanics, and others, 175 wives and widows, 9 cow clubs, 15 charitable societies, and 6 friendly societies.\*

CIVIL GOVERNMENT.—Scarborough is said to be a Borough by prescription, that is, a Borough in virtue of customs and privileges, which, from immemorial usage, obtained the force of law. However, it is clear from authentic records, that the town was incorporated by charter in the reign of Henry II.,† A.D. 1181., wherein a still earlier grant by Henry I., is distinctly referred to. The charter of Henry II., grants unto the burgesses of *Escardeburch*, all the customs, liberties, &c., which the citizens of York enjoyed through all the land in the time of Henry I.; whilst it claims of the inhabitants the tax called *Gablage*, that is, fourpence for every house in the town, whose gable was turned towards the way, or street; and for those, whose sides were in the same position, sixpence.‡ The customs, liberties, &c., granted by this charter, were confirmed by King John, in 1200; by Henry III., in 1253; and these grants and privileges were confirmed, defined, and extended to the “Bailliffs and Burgesses of the Town of Scardeburch,” by the charters of sixteen of the succeeding Monarchs. The charter, or letters patent, dated November 22nd, 1356 (30th Edward III.), confirmed by Henry VI. and Charles I., contains the most authentic evidence extant of the ancient constitution and privileges of the Borough. The more ancient charters are therein recorded “to have been maliciously destroyed by Adam Reginaldson Carter, one of the Chamberlains of the town, whereby great discords and dissensions had been moved and excited in the community; and the usages

\* The capital deposited in Savings' Banks in 1856, amounted, in whole numbers, to the enormous sum of £34,000,889., belonging to no less than 1,339,000 depositors. In the course of that year there were 1,409,000 deposits, and 793,000 withdrawals of money. The amount deposited during the year was £7,740,000., in sums averaging about £5. each; the amount withdrawn was £8,020,000., in sums averaging about £10. each. The number of new accounts opened was 221,000, with a deposit in small sums amounting to £2,155,000.; the number of accounts closed was 193,000, and the sum withdrawn was £3,696,000.

† It may not be out of place to observe *en passant* that the heart of King Henry II. of England, has just been presented by the Municipal Council of Orleans (France) to Dr. Gillis, a Scottish Catholic Bishop, while on a visit to that City, with the desire that he may offer the same to the British Government. Henry II. died at Chinon in A.D. 1186, and was buried at Fontevault; his heart enclosed in an iron urn, fell during the Revolution into the hands of a collector of curiosities, who presented it to the Museum of Orleans.

‡ By the amount of the *Gablage*, £16. 17s. 11d., 14th Edward III. (1341), it is evident that the number of houses in Scarborough at that early period, was not less than seven or eight hundred.



ordained from ancient time had been retracted, made void, and disused for a long time past, to the great damage of the poor men of the said town there residing, and of other people of the Kingdom." An inquisition was thereupon held at York on the 10th of December, 1354, before certain Lords Justices, and twelve jurors, to reduce to writing, the ancient customs and mode of government of the Borough, when the above-mentioned charter of Edward III. was granted, on the unanimous application of a numerous meeting of the Burgesses, assembled at the Chapter House of the Friars Minors, at Scarborough. By this charter the government of the town was vested in a Common Council of forty-four persons, viz., two Bailiffs, two Coroners, four Chamberlains, and thirty-six Capital Burgesses.

Richard III., by a charter, in 1485, changed the form of the constitution of the Borough, by appointing a Mayor, a Sheriff, and twelve Aldermen; the Mayor to be sworn into office "by our Constable of the Castle at Scardeburgh," &c. He also granted that the town of "Scardeburgh and Manor of Wallesgrave" should be one entire County of itself; incorporated, distinct, and separate from the County of York, and ever to be esteemed and named "The County of the Town of Scardeburgh."\* This charter is not recited or recognised by any of the succeeding Kings. In the beginning of the reign of Henry VII., the Corporation returned to its ancient mode of government by Bailiffs and Burgesses, which prevailed without interruption until 1684, when Charles II. incorporated forty-four persons (the same number as the Bailiffs and Burgesses had heretofore been), under the title of Mayor, Aldermen, and thirty-one Common Councillors. This charter, which was under an arbitrary measure for the remodelling of Corporations, by introducing a Mayor, Aldermen, &c., to be removable at the pleasure of the Crown, was set aside at the Revolution in 1688, when the last Mayor was "tossed in a blanket;"† and the Bailiffs were elected as before. The thirty-six Common

\* Mr. Hinderwall mentions a field near the west end of the common, a little to the north of the York road, which is still called Gallows Close; and where three human skeletons were found, supposed to have been the remains of malefactors, executed in the County of the Town of Scarborough.

† King James II. caused a declaration for liberty of conscience throughout his dominions, to be published on the 27th of April, 1688, and ordered the same to be read in all the Churches in the Kingdom. A copy of this being sent to the Mayor of Scarborough (Mr. Aislabie), he ordered the Vicar to read the same publicly at the Church on the following Sunday. The Vicar, believing that it was the King's secret intention to restore the ancient faith of the country, refused to publish the document; whereupon the Mayor caned him in the reading desk during the time of Divine Service. This behaviour was particularly taken up by a Captain (Ousley) in the army, who was then

Councilmen were classed in three benches or "twelves," denominated the First, Second, or Third Twelve. The first twelve was a superior bench, usually arranged according to seniority, by a Committee of twelve of the second and third benches, or Chamberlains, which Committee (called *factores*) was nominated by the Bailiffs. The first twelve thus formed, arranged the second and third twelves, and filled up the vacancies occasioned by the death of any of the members. This mode of government continued to the passing of the Municipal Reform Act, in 1835, which placed the civil government of the town under a Council of six Aldermen and eighteen Councillors periodically elected, from whom a Mayor is annually chosen; and under the usual corporate style.

Before the Act of 1835, the elections of Bailiffs, Capital Burgesses, or Common Councilmen, &c., of Scarborough, were appointed to be annual, but by usage a system of self-electing rotation came to be practised, to the exclusion of new members.\* Freemen were exempted from tolls, and partially exempted from harbour-dues at Scarborough, and privileged not to serve on juries out of the Borough, the boundaries of which were appointed to coincide with those of the parish. By a charter of Henry V., the two Bailiffs were the only Justices of the Peace for the Borough, and they held Quarter Ses-

at Church. The officer, next day, sent for the Mayor to the old bowling-green; but the Mayor taking no notice of his message, the Captain sent a file of musketeers to compel his attendance; these having brought him to the said place, he was obliged to undergo Sancho Panza's rough and humiliating discipline of being tossed in a blanket, at the hands of Captains Ousley, Carvil, Fitzherbert, Hanmer, and Rodney, with their assistants. The Mayor immediately set out for London, to obtain redress from the King, and his adversary thought it proper to follow him. Both were heard before the Council, the Captain pleaded his Majesty's gracious pardon, and so both were dismissed.—*MSS. Donat. p. 317.*

\* In the year 1790-1 the freemen of the Borough claimed and contested the right of electing the Bailiffs and other members of the Common Council. The freemen first assembled and sent a deputation to the Town Hall, to protest in their name against any election or choice of Bailiffs, Coroners, &c., without their concurrence; when the Town Clerk, in reply, stated that the Corporation, being fully satisfied that the freemen at large had never exercised or claimed any right of voting or otherwise interfering in the election of Bailiffs, Coroners, &c., felt bound in duty to adhere to the practice of their predecessors, and therefore they were under the necessity of refusing to receive their votes and assistance upon that occasion—it being the day for electing the officers of the Council. The case was taken to the King's Bench, and argued in the Easter term of 1791, when the four Justices who heard it were unanimously of opinion that they had no power to alter the ancient usage of the Borough. This decision terminated the contest.

sions with exclusive jurisdiction; also, a Court of Pleas for the trial of personal and mixed actions to any amount; and Manor Courts—the Corporation being Lords of the Manor of Scarborough and Falsgrave—as well as weekly Petty Sessions; but they had no Court of Requests.

Under the Municipal Act the Borough is included in schedule A, amongst those to have a Commission of the Peace, which has accordingly been granted, and the Court of Quarter Sessions and a Recorder appointed; and in section I. of that schedule, amongst those the Parliamentary boundaries of which were to be taken for Municipal purposes, till altered by Parliament; those boundaries coincide with the old Municipal and parish boundaries. Those laid down in the Municipal Boundary Report are restricted to the more immediate vicinity of the town, including the village of Falsgrave, which is now continuous with Scarborough. The Borough is divided into two wards—north and south. The Mayor (the Chief Magistrate) and the other Magistrates or Justices of the Peace, appointed under a Royal Commission, act exclusively as Magistrates for the Borough and local jurisdiction; but the power of holding Quarter Sessions is vested solely in the Recorder, whose duty is likewise to preside at the Court of Pleas—a tribunal which has fallen into disuse, being virtually superseded by the County Court.

The *Arms of the Borough*, which bear the marks of great antiquity, are a rude resemblance of a watch tower or castle, a Norman ship of the rudest form, and a star; with the inscription or legend, in the Saxon or Lombardic character:—“*Sigillum Commune Burgensium de Scardeburg.*” This seal is registered in the Herald’s office, is without date, and is there classed amongst the most ancient. The seal of office formerly used by the Bailiffs, and now by the Mayors, of Scarborough, is a ship only, of a very ancient form, with two towers on the deck, and a smaller one at the top of the mast. The inscription is “*Sigillum Ville de Scardeburg.*”

The chief Officers of the Corporation for the year 1857, are as follows:—

John Wheldon, Esq., *Mayor.* The Honorable Edward Phipps, *Recorder.*

*Aldermen.*—The present Mayor, and W. B. Fowler, G. Willis, Robert Tindall, and W. Holden, Esquires; one of the Aldermanic seats being vacant in consequence of the death of John Uppleby, Esq.

*Town Clerk.*—J. J. P. Moody, Esq. *Clerk of the Peace.*—William B. Coulson, Esq.

The *Borough Magistrates* are John Wheldon, Esq. (Mayor), Samuel Standidge Byron, John Kelk, M.D., Wm. Harland, M.D., John Wharton, Wm. B. Fowler, Robert Tindall, Thomas Weddell, and William Bottomley, Esquires.

*Magistrates’ Clerk.*—E. S. Donner, Esq.

The *Income* of the Corporation of Scarborough for the year ending 31st of August, 1856, was £2,451. (including a balance in the treasurer's hands, in the beginning of the year, of £408. 10s.), derived from rents, tolls, borough rates, &c.; and the *Expenditure* of the same year amounted to £1,896., leaving a balance with the treasurer of £645.

The *Income* of the Commissioners of the town under the Improvement Act, for the year ending 5th April, 1857, was £4,396.; including £3,602. the amount of an improvement rate at two shillings in the pound; and £540. from the scavenging department, viz :—the sale of manure. The *Expenditure* of the Commissioners for the same year was £3,796.

Notwithstanding the importance and antiquity of this Borough, its Chief Magistrate never possessed or wore any distinguishing emblem or insignia of office until the year 1852, when the then Mayor, John Woodall, Esq., on his retiring from office, presented to the Mayor and Corporation a collar and badge, of massive gold, to be worn by all succeeding Chief Magistrates of Scarborough, on all occasions of public reception and official duty. This elegant chain and badge, which is of exquisite finish and workmanship, is of solid gold, weighing sixteen ounces. The collar is composed of a rose—the emblem of the County—alternated with ornaments of a mediæval character, with shoulder pieces composed of the Mayor's seal of office. To the collar is attached, in the form of a pendant, the badge, on one side of which is engraved the common seal of the Borough, and on the other the following inscription—“*The gift of John Woodall, Esq., to the Mayor and Corporation of Scarborough, 9th November, 1852.*”

**COURTS.**—The Court of *Quarter Sessions* is held in the Town Hall, before the Hon. E. Phipps, Recorder.

*Petty Sessions* are regularly held every Wednesday, in the Town Hall, by the Magistrates of the Borough; and by the Magistrates of the North Riding, in the same place, every Thursday.

The *County Court*, for the recovery of debts, damages, and demands, when the amount sought to be recovered does not exceed £50., is likewise held in the Town Hall, monthly. William Raines, Esq., is the Judge of this Court.

**FRANCHISE.**—Scarborough is one of the most ancient privileged Boroughs which sends members to Parliament. The first instance upon record of the Boroughs being summoned to send representatives is in the year 1264 (48th of Henry III.), during the usurpation of the Earl of Leicester; but the meeting of this Parliament had been prevented by intestine troubles which then prevailed. In the succeeding year, 1265, another Parliament was convened, when the writs of summons to the Boroughs were directed generally.

But in the memorable Parliament assembled in the 11th of Edward I. (1282), the writs were more explicit, and shew that Scarborough was one of the privileged Boroughs summoned to send members. The first summoned all the Earls and Barons by name to the number of one hundred and ten, to meet the King at Shrewsbury, on the 30th of September. The second was directed to the Sheriff of each County, to cause to be chosen two Knights of the Commonalty of the same County; the third was addressed to the several Cities and Boroughs (only twenty in number\*); and a fourth to the judges. We have no earlier record than this of any individual being summoned from either City or Borough by name. It has been supposed by some that the right of election was originally vested in the burgesses of Scarborough; but, if so, it was soon restricted to the Common Council, and the Bailiffs were the returning officers. This was contested by the freemen, after the election which followed the death of Sir William Strickland, Bart., one of the Borough members, in 1735. The candidates were, Thomas, Lord Dupplin, and William Osbaldeston, Esq. The Bailiffs being in the minority of the Common Council, polled the freemen at large, and thus returned Lord Dupplin. Mr. Osbaldeston, having a majority of votes of the Corporation, petitioned against the return, as contrary to the constitution and ancient usage of the Borough; and after examining the case in all its bearings, the Committee of the House of Commons resolved that in their opinion "the right of election to serve in Parliament for the Borough of Scarborough in the County of York, is in the Common-house or Common-council of the said Borough, consisting of two Bailiffs, two Coroners, four Chamberlains, and thirty-six Burgesses only"—consequently Lord Dupplin was unseated, and Mr. Osbaldeston was declared duly elected. The right of the Corporation to be the sole electors of parliamentary representatives was only superseded by the Parliamentary Reform Act of 1832, which extended the right of election to the ten pound resident householders; reserving to the former electors the right of voting so long as they continued to reside within seven miles of the town of Scarborough.

The Borough is divided into two wards; the Municipal boundaries are co-extensive with those for parliamentary purposes. The Mayor is the returning officer. The present representatives of the Borough in Parliament are, Sir

\* The Cities and Boroughs are *York, Bristol, Exeter, Canterbury, Scarborough, Winchester, Norwich, Nottingham, Shrewsbury, Carlisle, Hereford, Grimsby, Lynn, Newcastle-upon-Tyne, Lincoln, Northampton, Colchester, Yarmouth, Chester, and Worcester.* Thus it will be seen that Scarborough was the only town in Yorkshire, except the City of York, that was summoned to send representatives.

John Vanden Bempde Johnstone, Bart., and the Right Hon. the Earl of Mulgrave, both of whom were re-elected at the General Election, which took place in the early part of the present year, 1857. Scarborough is a polling place at the election of representatives of the North Riding.

MISCELLANEOUS MEMS.—Besides the general privileges and Municipal rights granted to the Corporation, there are many other grants for particular purposes, viz:—one from Henry III., in 1252, for making a port or haven, as heretofore noticed; one from Edward VI., in 1551, confirming a former grant of the sands; and several others for murage, paveage, and quayage. The earliest grant for murage, or tolls on vessels using the port, for the purpose of endowing and fortifying the town, occurs in 1226 (9th Henry III). The most ancient record of paveage, or grants of toll for paving the town, is in 1335 (28th Edw. III.), although the Dominican Friars had paved a street at Scarborough, so early as the year 1299 (27th Edw. I).

The following is an extract from an ancient work entitled "Chronicon Preciosum," and shows the price of cattle at Scarborough, in the year 1298; an ox, 6s. 8d.; a cow, 5s.; a heifer, 2s.; a sheep, 1d.

When King Edward I., after his conquest of Scotland, visited Lord Wake, at Cottingham, near Hull, in 1208, the men of Kingston-upon-Hull and the men of Ravenser presented petitions to him and his Council, praying the grant of various privileges; and among others "That they may be free of townnage, pannage, passage, paveage, murage, and all other customs throughout England, &c., as are the men of Scardeburgh."

In 1349 the Corporations of Hull and Scarborough entered into an agreement, that they and their heirs should hereafter be mutually exempted in each place from all manner of tolls, quayage, customs, &c. In 1612 James I. suppressed the market of Seamer in favour of the Scarborough market.

So early as the 7th of Edward IV. (1468), there existed in Scarborough, according to the Corporate Records, the following chartered Trading Companies:—*Mercatores*, Merchants; *Carpentarii*, Carpenters or Joiners; *Fabri*, Smiths; *Torpificatores*, Blacksmiths and Wiremakers; *Restiones*, Ropemakers or Estrynglayers; *Latomii*, Masons; *Tegularii*, Slaters; *Pistores*, Bakers; *Carnifices*, Butchers; *Scissores*, Tailors; *Alutarii*, Shoemakers; *Cordones*, Barkers or Tanners; *Tonsores*, Barbers; *Candelizatores*, Chandlers; *Textores*, Weavers; *Chirothecarii*, Glovers; *Fullones*, Fullers; *Portotores*, Porters; and *Pictores*, Painters.

During the years 1651 and 1653, the coasting trade of Scarborough was much annoyed by hostile vessels, commissioned by the exiled King (Charles II.); and likewise by Dutch ships of war. Several instances of native gal-

lantry and enterprise are preserved among the records and public journals of this eventful period.

On the 23rd of September, 1779, a gallant sea-fight, between the squadrons of Captain Richard Pearson and the noted Paul Jones, took place off Scarborough—the particulars of which are related at page 271 of this volume. It may be added that Captain Pearson afterwards received the honour of knighthood for his bravery; and the freedom of the Borough of Scarborough was presented to him and his gallant colleague, Captain Piercy or Percy, in two boxes of "heart of oak," ornamented with silver.

The first printing press established in Scarborough was set up by Mr. Thomas Gent, in the month of June, 1784, "in a house in Mr. Bland's lane, formerly called his cliff; a most pleasant situation, leading to the beautiful sands."

On the night of Monday, the 10th of November, 1856, a dreadful fire broke out at the foot of Bland's Cliff, near the sands, by which a steam saw-mill, and a block of buildings consisting of five or six houses, occupied by no less than seventeen families, were entirely destroyed. This dire calamity occurred between eleven and twelve o'clock at night, and occasioned the greatest consternation and alarm among the inhabitants. The fire engines of the town and Castle were backed into the sea, the tide being flowing at the time, and were manned by soldiers (from the garrison), sailors, and townspeople, who stood up to the knees in the water. In addition to these, two other engines arrived from York on Tuesday morning, and notwithstanding all this, the fire raged for about eleven hours. "When the whole mass of premises had got on fire," says an eye-witness, "the sight that was presented was terrific, yet awfully grand. The flames shot up to a great altitude, illuminating the whole of the cliff, with the houses upon it, the Castle hill, the shipping, &c.,—a scene fearful to behold—whilst the sands, the pier, and every available spot of ground which afforded a good view of what was taking place, was crowded with spectators." The extent of the loss was up to three thousand pounds.

*Title.*—Scarborough gives the title of *Earl* to the noble family of Lumley. On the 31st of May, 1681, Richard, Viscount Lumley in the Irish peerage, was enrolled in the peerage of England, and on the 15th of April following, was created *Earl of Scarborough*. Richard George Lumley Savile, of Tickhill Castle, the ninth, and present Earl of Scarborough, is the only son of Frederick Lumley, Esq., by Charlotte, daughter of the Right Rev. George de la Poer Beresford, Bishop of Kilmore. He was married in October, 1846, to Frederica Mary Adeliza, second daughter of Andrew Robert Drummond,

Esq., by whom he has several children. He succeeded to the title, and a portion of the family estates (the late Earl having cut off the entail of his estates), at the death of his cousin, John Lumley Savile, the eighth Earl, who died at Sandbeck Park, near Tickhill, Yorkshire, in November, 1856.

---

## Ecclesiastical Edifices.

ST. MARY'S CHURCH, *Castle Road*.—In the preceding pages we have noticed the several ancient Churches and Chapels which once flourished in Scarborough, viz:—the Chapel within the Castle, the Oratory or Chapel of the Carmelites, called the Charnell Chapel, and the Churches or Chapels of St. Thomas and of the Holy Sepulchre. All the ancient Churches and Chapels here have disappeared, with the exception of St. Mary's, which was the only one available for the accommodation of the parishioners for several centuries. In the account of the Cistercian Abbey, it has been shown that the Church of St. Mary, and all right of the Crown in the Rectory, were given up to the Cistercians in the 13th of Edward I. (1283); and the Vicar\* of the Church was afterwards appointed by the Abbot.† It has likewise been seen how the possessions of the Abbey, having been seized by King Henry IV. as an Alien Priory, were granted by that Monarch to the custody of the Priory and Convent of Bridlington; and how in the reign of Henry VIII., the Rectory of Scarborough was seized by the King as a parcel of the possessions of the attainted Priory of Bridlington,‡ and thus passed into lay hands.

Many ancient benefactions were made to this Church by the pious inhabitants of the town. Aylmar de Clifford gave liberally to St. Mary's altar, with money for oblations and three priests to officiate. A toft was bestowed by Osbert de Hansard; a house on the rock was given by Walter son of Gunner, and money by his brother Richard; some land on the Cliff was granted by Wm. de Harton: and a parcel in the town by Thomas de Hardin. Galfrid de Lutton and Galfrid de Croom gave lands to this Church.

\* For the origin of Vicarages, see page 370 of this volume.

† Cart. 13 Edward I., No. 37.

‡ William Wode or Wolde, Prior of Bridlington, having engaged in Aske's rebellion, was attainted of high treason, in 1537, and executed at Tyburn. (See page 185.) On the defection of this Prior, the possessions of the Priory were declared to be forfeited to the King.



In 1219 Emera, the daughter of Robert de Filey, was a liberal benefactress, and there exists a long list of inhabitants who followed her bountiful example.

During the siege of the Castle, in 1645, the centre tower of St. Mary's Church was shaken to such a degree, that in October, 1659, it fell and carried with it a great part of the south wall of the nave, viz., that part west of the break in the present wall. In the 12th of Charles II. (1660), a brief to enable the parishioners of Scarborough to rebuild their dilapidated Church, was granted; from which brief the following is an extract:—"Charles II. by the Grace of God, &c. Whereas, we are credibly informed by the humble petition of the inhabitants of Scarborough, as also by a certificate subscribed with the hands of divers of our Justices of the Peace, &c., that during the late wars, our said town of Scarborough was twice stormed, and the said inhabitants disabled from following their ancient trade, whereby they are much impoverished, and almost ruined in their estates; and that nothing might be wanting to make their condition more deplorable, their two fair Churches were by the violence of the cannon beaten down; that in one day there were three-score pieces of ordnance discharged against the steeple of the upper Church, called St. Mary's, and the choir thereof quite beaten down; and the steeple thereof so shaken, that notwithstanding the endeavours of the inhabitants to repair the same, the steeple and bells, upon the tenth day of October last, fell and brought down with it most part of the body of the said Church; but the other Church, called St. Thomas' Church, was by the violence of the ordnance quite ruined and battered down; so that the said Church, called St. Mary's, must be rebuilt, or otherwise the said inhabitants will remain destitute of a place wherein to assemble for the public worship of Almighty God. And that the charges of rebuilding the Church, called St. Mary's, will cost two thousand five hundred pounds at the least, which of themselves they are not able to disburse, their fortunes being almost ruined by the calamities of the late war, as aforesaid."

By this brief the sum of £247. 7s. 6½d. was collected; of which £54. only were from London and ten southern Counties. A rate of £84. 3s. was also laid upon the parish. The money thus raised was expended in 1669, in the rebuilding of part of the nave, north aisle, and the tower as it now stands, on the foundation and ruin of the old fabric.\*

The following curious document is illustrative of the habits and manners of the people before the period of the Reformation:—"A composition made

\* The accounts of the repairs shew that the hire of a labourer was then no more than from sixpence to tenpence per day.

by the bailiers and the comons for the devyne service to be done at the hey chyrche, [Scarborough.] 30 Septimb, 22 Henry VII. 1506.

Fyfirst it is ordaynd and enacted by the assent and consentt of the said bayliers and comons, that in winter to go to Mattynes of the holy day at vij of the cloke and that the Clerke ryng at the half owre of vj of the cloke the fyrst x peeles and to go to the high messe at x of the cloke; and to the Evening song at half owre to iiij of the cloke and to ryng the fyrst peeles at half owre of iij of the cloke.

Also it is inacted by the assent of the comons that the said parych clerk shall ryng every market day at the morne bell at half owre to v of the cloke, and to ryng it the space of half an owre.

Also it is inacted by the foresaid comons that the said parych clerk shall ryng at nyght at viij of the cloke of the market day, and at vij of the cloke upon the holy day and he to ryng the space of half an owre.

Also in the summer to go to mattyns at vj of the cloke, and to messe at x of the cloke, and to ring after the rate above said.

Also it is ordayned & inacted by the assemble of al the said Comons that every man of the fyrst xij & the Chamblaynes kepe their order of processyon every Sunday and double festival, with Maister Bayliers upon pain of every man 1lb. Wax."

*Chuntries.\**—In addition to the Chuntries and Chantry altars in this Church, commonly known as the Chantry of the Blessed Virgin, and those of St. Stephen, St. James, and St. Nicholas, mentions occurs in the list of testamentary burials, of the Chapels of St. Clement and St. Crux, and the Chancels of Corpus Christi and St. Christopher. Where these last six were situated cannot now be determined with any degree of accuracy. All Chuntries and the services connected with them, were abolished by a statute passed in the reign of King Edward VI.

*Galon's Chantry*, at the altar of St. James, was founded in 1380, that masses and prayers might be offered for the eternal rest of the soul of Robert Galon, a burgess of Scarborough, who endowed it with six pounds per ann. The presentation of Cantarist after his death was vested in the Bailiffs and Burgesses. The valuation of this Chantry in the 26th of Henry VIII. (1535), is stated at £3. 12s. 2d. per ann.

*Edwyn or Mylner's Chantry*, or the *Chantry of the Blessed Virgin*, was ordained 30th May, 1396, at the altar of St. Mary the Virgin, being founded by the Bailiffs and Community of Scarborough, for the souls of Emeric

\* For Chuntries see page 181 of this volume.

Edwyn and Reginald Mylner, &c., and it was endowed with £5. per ann. The patronage was vested in the said Bailiffs and Burgesses; and the estimated annual value in 1585, was £2. 15s. 5d.

*Rillington's Chantry* was founded about 1394, in this Church, at the altar of St. Stephen, the proto-martyr, by Robert Rillington, who endowed it with about £3. per ann., to be conferred upon a priest to celebrate perpetual masses for his soul, and of Ellene his wife, &c. The Bailiffs and Burgesses had the appointment of Cantarists, or priests.

The *Chantry at the Altar of St. Nicholas* was founded in this Church, in the reign of Richard II., and endowed with five houses and five acres of land, and was likewise in the presentation of the Bailiffs, &c., of Scarborough. There is no mention of this or of Rillington's Chantry in the "*Valor Ecclesiasticus*."

The *Living of St. Mary's* is now a Discharged Vicarage, in the patronage of Lord Hotham, and incumbency of the Rev. John William Whiteside, D.C.L. It is valued in the King's Books at £13. 6s. 8d.; returned at £60.; gross income about £240.

This Church, which we need scarcely add, is dedicated in honour of the Blessed Virgin, frequently styled St. Mary the Virgin, was formerly a spacious and magnificent structure. The ruins of the east end of the chancel, or choir, still seen in the eastern part of the Churchyard, the dismembered appearance of the west end of the building, the subterraneous arches extending to the west, and the great quantity of foundation stones discovered in the new burial ground contiguous to it, are sufficient proofs, that it is, in its present state, only a small portion of a vast edifice, which probably formed the Cistercian Abbey and the Church in ancient times. In its original design and arrangement this Church was cruciform, and consisted of a nave with north and south aisles and Chantry Chapels, and western towers; a central tower, with north and south transepts, and a choir with north and south aisles. In the time of Henry VIII., according to Leland, the Church was a very noble building, adorned with three handsome towers, two of which, he says, were at the western end, and one was over the centre of the transept. The last mentioned tower fell, as above stated, from the effects of the siege of the Castle, in October, 1659, and the present tower, which now stands singularly at the east end of the edifice, occupies its place. The time and the cause of the demolition of the two western towers do not appear to be well ascertained. In plan, the Church now consists of nave with south aisle, and side Chapels, two north aisles, a south transept and porch, and an east tower. The order, in point of date, in which the various parts

of the Church, prior to its present restoration, were built, is supposed by good authorities to be as follows:—The two western towers and the arch of the central tower at the end of the nave, the latter end of the twelfth century; and in all probability the central tower and transept were of the same date. The side walls of the nave and clerestory as high as the string course above the clerestory windows, were next carried up, in the early part of the thirteenth century. The piers and arches next the north aisle, the work of the fourteenth century, as well as the south transept, and in all probability the north, which corresponded with it. The four south Chapels, south porch, parise, and west doorway, the work of the fifteenth century. The extreme north aisle, called St. Nicholas' Aisle, was originally built prior to the fifteenth century, but its present walls were erected after the restoration in the seventeenth century, out of the old materials. The choir, which extended 115 feet in length, was built about the same time as the south porch and west door.

Divine Service was performed in this Church on Sunday, October 15th, 1848, prior to its restoration; and it was re-opened by the Archbishop of York, on Thursday, 25th of July, 1850. The total cost of the restoration amounted to about £7,000.; which sum was raised by subscription, the principal contributors being John Woodall, Esq., £500.; Lord Hotham, £300.; W. J. Denison, Esq., £200.; Rev. E. H. Woodall, John Uppleby, Esq., W. D. T. Duesbury, Esq., H. J. Leaseley, Esq., and E. H. Hebden, Esq., each £150.; the Dowager Lady Feversham, Lord Feversham, Hon. O. Duncombe, M.P., Rev. M. H. Miller, Hon. M. Langley, E. D. Neesfield, Esq., and John Maude, Esq., each £100.; Sir J. V. B. Johnstone, Bart., M.P., £75.; W. E. Woodall, Esq., £70.; the late Archbishop of York, Major Gen. Sir F. W. Trench, Miss Atty, Miss Cockcroft, Miss Taylor, and Thomas Purnell, Esq., each £50.; W. Reed, Esq., £47. 5s.; John Wharton, Esq., and the Rev. Dr. Whiteside, Vicar, £45. each; and Dr. Travis, £40.

It has been intimated that the original western elevation consisted of two towers. In the late restoration the lower portion of these towers have been in great part rebuilt, and are now made sound up to the height of the first water-table above the base. This end or elevation now consists of a centre, rising to a gable, and two remains of towers, and beyond the north aisle, an aisle of ample dimensions, with a gable. In the centre is a doorway of Perpendicular insertion, projecting slightly from the face of the wall, and has an acutely pointed gable over it, within which is a niche. Over this is a window of three unequal lancets, separated by shafts, and surmounted by a

continuous dripstone; in the gable is a handsome wheel window of eight compartments; and on the apex of the gable is a wheel cross.\* This compartment is flanked by buttresses of two stages, with canopied heads. These have been built as additions to the original Anglo-Norman ones. The restoration of the whole of this portion of the building is of later character than the original west front. The west end of the extreme north aisle exhibits a Decorated window of three lights, and on the apex is a plain cross. The south side of the Church presents a singular appearance; the clerestory of the nave of six compartments, and a porch and four Chapels occupying the whole length of the aisle, which they conceal; each presenting a gable to the south. East of these are the south transept and tower, terminating the east end of the nave. The porch consists of two stories, the lower one having a plain semicircular vault, and stone seats or benches on either side. Above the entrance archway is a Latin inscription in cut stone, setting forth that the Church was restored in the year 1850; and a small square headed window lighting the parvise. The latter has been restored to its original use, and is entered by a staircase within the porch.† The Chapels, or Chantries, which are separated by buttresses, are, with the exception of the western one, nearly of the same size. The latter has a window of four lights, and each of the others a window of three lights—all of Decorated character, with a varied tracery in the heads. The Chapels are roofed with stone. The roof of the nave, as also that of the south transept, has been restored to its original pitch, and covered with green Westmorland slate. On the west side of the south transept is a square headed window of three lights, with Decorated tracery; on the south side or end is a large window of five lights, with reticulated tracery under a pointed head; and the gable is surmounted by a cross. The angles of the transept are strengthened by angular buttresses, which run up into crocketed finials of large dimensions. On the east side is a window of Perpendicular character of four lights, with transoms. The window under the archway of the former choir aisle is of three lights. The fine east window of the quasi-chancel (in the east side of the

\* Crosses are symbolical of the *Christian Faith*; the circles with which crosses are sometimes surrounded or ornamented, are emblematic of *Eternity*.

† The *Parvise*, or small room above the porch of a Church, was used in former days as a Library or Record Office, and sometimes as a School. The Court of the Hundred and the Law Courts were also held within the Parvise. It is probable that the Parvise of Scarborough Church was, at one period, the dwelling of a Priest, as indications of a fire-place have been discovered in it. There is also in it a small *Piscina*, which shows there had been an altar there.

tower) is Decorated, and of five lights. The east end of the original north aisle and of the great north aisle have each a window of three lights. The north side of the present north aisle is divided into five compartments by buttresses; in the west compartment is a doorway with a niche over it, and in each of the others is a pointed window of three lights. This aisle is rebuilt on the foundation of the former one, but is very properly of earlier character, being Decorated. The clerestory windows on the north do not appear, being enclosed within the original roof of the north aisle, thereby forming internally a kind of triforium. The south clerestory wall has been wholly rebuilt, the north one only repaired.

Notwithstanding the unwieldy and irregular form of the present edifice, the interior has a very solemn and impressive aspect. The arches which divide the nave from the north aisle are supported by five and a half **massy** circular pillars, and some of the pillars on the south side are similar in shape; the others are clustered columns. The pillars, which separate St. Nicholas' aisle from the smaller aisle on the north side, are hexagonal, with ancient and curiously carved capitals. The lower story of the tower is a quasi-chancel, or sacarium—the tower arch forming a chancel-arch—and the east window is filled with stained glass, given by W. Harland, Esq., M.D. Within the Communion rails is an oak chair, made from a part of the ruins of the nave of York Minster, destroyed by fire on the 20th of May, 1840. The wood work of this chair, which is a model of the ancient Coronation Chair kept in York Cathedral (See page 454), is formed of the oak, and the shield in front, and the small plate let into the back, is from the bells destroyed at the same time. The pulpit is of carved stone, and the lectern is a carved eagle in wood. The south transept, called "Farrer's Aisle," was previously to the late restorations, separated from the Church and used as a Grammar School; now it is open to the edifice, as it originally was by a lofty arch. The restoration of this transept, which was anciently a Chantry Chapel, laid open two low arches immediately below the fine south window, and beneath the arches partly in the wall, and partly in the floor, were found two stone coffins, containing the bones of two individuals, much decomposed, but sufficiently preserved to indicate the ages of the deceased. They appeared to be the remains of strong built men, of large bone and muscle, and from the position of the skeletons, and the absence of a ring, had not been priests, but laymen. The bones were carefully collected and re-interred, and the empty coffins were allowed to remain in the position in which they were found. The coffins, from the supposed date of that portion of the Church, and their forms, especially the easternmost one, are supposed to be

of no later a date than the middle of the fourteenth century. These coffins most probably enclosed the bodies of the founders of this Chantry, and though the coffins were found inserted in the floor, it is not unlikely, that at first they were elevated above the pavement, and ornamented with brass plates; and unquestionably there had been an altar where prayers were offered up for the deceased, as a very curious and perfect *Piscina*\* is to be seen just above the foot of the easternmost sepulchre—so that the altar must have been against the east wall. The *piscina* is in the Decorated style, and had been a work of much beauty and value. The basin is partly mutilated, but above it is a cusped cinque-foiled arch, surmounted by a square embattled parapet, and above this a plain pointed arch. The Organ is now placed in the south transept, and the space between that instrument and the south wall, is used as the Vestry.

The open timber roof of the nave consists of seven bays, separated by arched braces, which rest on vaulting shafts. Between each of these is an intermediate collar brace, resting on a corbel. The roof of the chancel is formed with carved ribs of timber, meeting in the centre in a point, boarded on the back, and resting at the bottom on a moulded wall plate. The pewing and other fittings are of Perpendicular character. The two easternmost arches of the nave have screens placed between the pillars, and in front of them are stalls for the clergy; and in a new arch in the south wall of the tower is also a screen, dividing the chancel from the transept. These screens are formed of open tracery and pillars in wood work. The floor at the east end is laid with Minton's encaustic tiles, but that of the other parts of the edifice, generally with the old memorial slabs, placed as nearly as possible in their former position. The font, which is plain, is placed in the south west tower.

The window above the western entrance to the Church is filled with stained

\* The *Piscina* was a niche on the south or epistle side of the altar in Catholic Churches, containing a small basin, and usually a water drain, through which the Priest emptied the water in which he had washed his fingers; also that in which the chalice, ciborium, &c., had been rinsed. These niches have not unfrequently a shelf, &c., across them, which was sometimes used as a credence or table, on which the bread, wine, and water used in the celebration of the Mass were placed in readiness. *Lavatory* is a term sometimes used for the *Piscina*, and in ancient Missals, *Sacrarium* and *Cavacrum* are synonymous with the same, *Piscinæ* are occasionally found of Norman character, though the instances are rare. In an ancient MS. of Injunctions for the Diocese of Lincoln, preserved in the Bodleian Library, a provision is made for such Churches as are without a *Piscina*. A hole in the pavement by the altar was to be the substitute.

glass of exquisite colour, by Gerente of Paris. It was erected to perpetuate the memory of Richard Wilson, Esq., who founded and endowed at Scarborough, during his lifetime, the charity known as "Wilson's Mariners' Asylum," and died in 1837, aged 73 years, and was buried at Seamer.

The subjects introduced in the several medallions comprise, the Annunciation, the Nativity, the Angel appearing to the Shepherds, the Presentation in the Temple, Christ Disputing with the Doctors, the Last Supper, the Scourging at the Pillar, the Crucifixion, the Entombment, the Resurrection, Christ appearing to Mary, Our Saviour supping with the two Disciples at Emmaus, Thomas' Incredulity, Christ's charge to Peter, and the Ascension. The circular window above is also filled with stained glass.

The west window (one light) of the south-west tower is glazed with stained glass, inscribed to the memory of John Hill Coulson, Esq., of Scarborough, who died in 1858.

The Chantries, or side Chapels before-mentioned, which flank the south aisle, are, with the exception of the absence of stone mullions to the windows, much in the same state as originally left by the mason, but the beauty of their elevation is completely destroyed by the immense quantity of soil which has been allowed to accumulate against their exterior. The basement mouldings are entirely buried. The south wall of the Church has been entirely removed to allow of the erection of those Chapels. Taking them in the order in which they stand, and commencing with the east, we find the first is roofed with stone ribbing, in excellent preservation. In the south wall are the mutilated remains of an enriched piscina, and to the west of it, inserted in the wall, is the founder's tomb, with a recessed arch over it. In the west wall is the *Aumbrie*, a square recess, niche, or cupboard, to contain the utensils belonging to the altar. In the second Chapel is a piscina, an aumbrie, and in the same wall the founder's tomb, the arch mouldings of which are much simpler than the mouldings of the tomb in the first Chapel. The centre light, or division of the window is glazed with stained glass, by Wailes, of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, and the gift of Miss Whiteside. The subject is a full length figure of St. John the Baptist, with a medallion underneath, representing the Baptism of Our Saviour in the river Jordan. The Vicar's pew is situated in this Chapel. In the third Chantry, commonly called St. James's Chapel, is a piscina with a water drain, also an aumbrie, and in the east wall is a bracket for a light, resting upon a well sculptured head, of early date. The centre compartment of the window of this Chapel, is filled with stained glass, executed by Wailes, and "is dedicated to the memory of Mary Cooper and Janet Temple, late of Scarborough, widows, by John Wharton,



the Surviving Executor, A.D., 1858." This glass represents a full length figure of St. James the Greater; and a medallion below this represents the martyrdom of that Apostle. In the largest Chantry, called St. Nicholas' Chapel, next the south porch, the upper divisions of the window are occupied by four antique oval shaped emblems of the Four Evangelists, viz., the Eagle (St. John), the Ox (St. Luke), the Lion (St. Mark), and the Angel or Man (St. Matthew). These are the gift of R. M. Beverley, Esq., of Scarborough. The piscina and aumbrie are likewise here. There are no indications of the original altars in these Chapels, though their position would undoubtedly be against the east wall. The recesses, or tombs, in the south walls, contain stone coffins, empty. There is a very large number of monumental tablets and grave stones in this Church.

The tower contains a fine clock, and an excellent peal of eight bells. The bells were erected in the latter part of the year 1852, by Messrs. Taylor and Son, founders, Loughborough, and the opening peal was rung on the 22nd of December, 1852. The cost of the peal was defrayed by subscription of the inhabitants and visitors. The treble and tenor of this peal received the special approbation of the jurors, in addition to the prize medal, at the Great Exhibition in London, in 1851. The weight of the tenor bell is 21 cwt. 2 qrs., and its musical pitch is said to be E flat. Before the erection of this peal, there were three bells in the tower of St. Mary's, one of which is now in the tower of Christ Church, to be hereafter described. The clock was constructed by Dent of London, from the designs of E. B. Denison, Esq., Q.C., and possesses all the most recent and scientific improvements. It strikes the 1st, 2nd, and 3rd quarters, on the 2nd, 3rd, 4th, and 7th bells of the peal, and the hour without any quarters on the 8th or tenor bell. The cost of the clock, £250., was raised by subscription, and the clock was first set in motion in the tower on the 26th of February, 1856.

In concluding his description of this venerable edifice, the Rev. Joshua Fawcett observes, "When comparing the St. Mary's of A.D. 1848, with the St. Mary's of A.D. 1849, or A.D. 1850, those who remember her in her former desolation, and now see her in her restored and beautiful condition, cannot but rejoice to witness the growing revival of that hallowed feeling, that all taste, and art, and wealth, are then best applied when they minister to the glory and honour of His house, who is well pleased with the humblest effort, and well approves the most costly endeavour to shew forth his praise."

The burial ground is spacious. The ground to the west of the Church is said to be the site of the Cistercian Abbey; and report says that the steps leading to it may yet be traced to the south wall, near Spright Lane. The

portion of ground to the west was obtained by the Corporation, in exchange with Sir C. Hotham, Bart., in 1779; that to the east, called Paradise Close, by purchase, in 1780; and that on the south, by purchase, in 1809.

The approach to this Church by the Castle Road is much disfigured by a long unsightly covered in old ropery, which appears to encroach upon the burial ground. The removal of this "eyesore" would not only add considerably to the general aspect of the west end of the Church, but would improve the appearance of the whole neighbourhood.

CHRIST CHURCH occupies a plot of ground between *Huntris' Row* and *Vernon Place*. The foundation stone of the edifice, which is a Chapel of Ease to St. Mary's, was laid on the 26th of October, 1826, by the Rev. J. Kirk, then Vicar of Scarborough; and the Church, on being completed, was consecrated for Divine Service on the 23rd of August, 1828, by the late Archbishop of York. The edifice is in the Early English style of Gothic architecture; and the cost of its erection, including site, &c., amounted to about £8,000., of which sum £5,000. was granted by the Parliamentary Commissioners for building Churches, and £3,000. was raised by subscription. The outside is faced with beautiful free stone, the gift of Sir John V. B. Johnstone, Bart., from the Hackness quarry. At the west end is a neat square tower of three stages, surmounted with plain pinnacles and vanes at the angles, and a clock dial on each side of it. The height of the tower from the ground to the top of the pinnacles is 116 feet. The sides of the Church are each made into six divisions by buttresses, in each of which is a tall narrow window of one light. In the east end are five lights of unequal height, and in the centre, at the same end, are two angular buttresses finishing in large pinnacles. The interior presents a nave and side aisles, the latter divided from the former by plain octagonal pillars running into pointed arches, unbroken by capitals, and above the arches a clerestory. The aisles, and the west end of the edifice are galleried; and there is a second gallery at the same end, containing an organ. The roof of the nave is made to imitate stone groining, and the front of the galleries to resemble stone work. The pulpit, reading desk, &c., form a clump in front of the Communion table; the vestries are formed out of the easternmost divisions of the aisles—the space between them (the east end of the aisle) forming a small chancel, sacrarium, or sanctuary. The Royal Arms, and three other shields bearing the Arms of Scarborough, the Archbishop of York, and of Sir J. V. B. Johnstone, Bart., in stained glass, are in the east window. The pews are single seated with doors. The font is square, supported by a strong pillar in the centre, and slender pillars at the angles. The tower contains three bells, one of

which was removed from the tower of St. Mary's. The only endowment to this Church is the rental of the pews or seats. The Church will accommodate about 1,200 persons, including 400 free sittings.

ST. THOMAS'S DISTRICT CHURCH, *East Sand Gate*.—This Church was erected by voluntary subscription, which amounted to £1,100., with the assistance of a grant of £800. from the Incorporated Society for the Building of Churches. It was founded on the 21st of December, 1839, consecrated by the late Archbishop of York on the 17th of October, 1840, and opened for public worship on the 20th of December following. By order in Council dated 23rd of May, 1844, a separate district was allotted to it, so that it is now for all ecclesiastical purposes an independent parochial district. The Church is situated near the harbour, in a densely crowded neighbourhood, and has recently been enlarged and undergone extensive alterations. Only the east end and south side of the edifice are exposed to view; the material of the structure is brick, with cut stone windows and dressings; and the style of architecture is Perpendicular. The end rakes up to an embattled and pinnacled apex, and in the centre is a window of five lights, with a transom, and above that a small wheel window. The chief entrance is by a door or small porch towards the north east corner of the building. There are four good windows of two lights each, with transoms, on the south side. The interior is rather odd in shape, and may be said to consist of a body and a north aisle, the latter being separated from the former by two wide arches. It is plainly but neatly fitted up, and over the aisle is a gallery. Above the Communion table is a representation of the Lord's Supper, cast in metal; the east window has some stained glass in it; the pulpit, reading desk, &c., are in the south east corner; and in the wall, on the north side of the Communion table, is a piscina like font used for baptismal purposes. Beneath the south side of the Church (which is on much lower ground than the north side) is an Infant School which is attended by about fifty children. The present Incumbent of St. Thomas's Church is the Rev. William Key.

CONGREGATIONAL CHAPEL.—This beautiful stone edifice is situated *Without-the-Bar*, and is generally known as the "Bar Church." The foundation stone was laid by Lady Lowthorpe, in February, 1850, and the Chapel was opened for Divine Worship on the 20th of August in the same year, by the Rev. T. Raffles, LL.D. The structure is in the Early Decorated style, with geometrical tracery, and quoins and dressings. The plan consists of nave and transepts, with recessed organ gallery behind the pulpit, and a buttressed tower at the south-west angle, the stair turret of which is crowned with a small leaden spire and gilt vane. The end of the structure fronting the

street rises to an apex, and contains the principal entrance (a richly moulded and crocketed doorway) and a handsome five-light window, the whole surmounted by a beautifully carved and crocketed niche and canopy. The sides of the edifice present three gables, in each of which is a window; and in the ends of the transepts are large windows. The interior is very neatly finished. The pulpit is exceedingly neat, and behind it, in front of the organ gallery, is a handsomely carved wooden screen, the shafts of the columns of which (as also of the pulpit and gallery front) are of rare South American wood, the gift of Messrs. Hick. There are galleries at the south end of the nave or body, and at the transepts, connected by shallow galleries running down the sides, supported by chamfered wooden uprights, and having a carved open front. The principals of the roof rest on carved corbels, representing angels with shields, springing from internal piers, forming on each side three recesses, each having a three light window, and high pitched gable as just noticed. The organ is of superior tone, and was erected in 1851; its pipes are arranged on each side of the gallery, and between them is a beautifully stained glass window of four lights, the effect of which is very impressive. The pews, or seats, are single, with low backs, and the design is chaste; and the open screen work of the galleries being lined with crimson cloth, the whole has a clean, comfortable, and elegant appearance. The gas chandeliers, or gasseliers, are of ecclesiastical design. The vestry is beneath the organ loft. There is accommodation for upwards of 1,000 persons, and 100 children. The entire cost of the Chapel, together with a neat and commodious School, and the pew-opener's cottage adjoining, amounted to £5,500., including £1,000. paid for the eligible freehold on which they stand. This sum was raised by subscriptions and collections. The Rev. Robert Balmis is the present minister.

**INDEPENDENT CHAPEL**, with entrances in *St. Sepulchre Street* and *Merchants' Row*. This Chapel is supposed to occupy the site of the ancient possessions, if not of the residence, of the Knights Hospitallers. It is a plain building, first erected in 1708; rebuilt and enlarged in 1774; and enlarged a second time in 1801. It will now seat about 500 persons. In 1855, a small organ was erected in it. Among the monuments in this Chapel is one to a former minister of the congregation, with a striking profile, executed by Behnes. The present pastor is the Rev. B. Backhouse.

**EBENEZER (BAPTIST) CHAPEL**, *Long West Gate*.—This is a large commodious brick building, calculated to seat from 900 to 1,000 persons, and was erected in 1828, at a cost of more than £2,600. The first Chapel belonging to the Baptists was built near the present site in the year 1776. There are

several neat monumental tablets in this Chapel, and there is a burial ground in front of it. The present minister, the Rev. Benjamin Evans, edited the third edition of Hinderwell's History of Scarborough, published in 1832.

THE WESLEYAN METHODIST CHAPEL, *Queen Street*, is a large brick edifice, the first stone of which was laid by Henry Fowler, Esq., on the 13th of December, 1839, and on the 11th of September, 1850, Divine Service was first performed in it. The design was furnished by Mr. J. Simpson, of Leeds, and the building will accommodate upwards of 1,600 persons. The cost of the edifice, including the site and yard, was upwards of £7,000. The interior is well fitted up with extensive galleries, and in 1846, a good organ was erected in it, at a cost of upwards of £400. Underneath the Chapel are vestries, school, and class rooms, and apartments for the Chapel keeper.

THE WESLEYAN ASSOCIATION "TABERNACLE," *Batty Place*, was opened for public worship in 1853. It is a plain brick building capable of seating 500 persons.

PRIMITIVE METHODIST CHAPEL, *St. Sepulchre Street*.—Erected in 1821, but improved and enlarged to its present commodious size in 1839. It is a brick building which will seat about 600 persons.

FRIENDS' MEETING HOUSE, *St. Sepulchre Street*.—The peculiar principles of the "Friends," commonly called *Quakers*, were probably first propagated here by the founder of the sect, George Fox, who was imprisoned in Scarborough Castle, in 1666 (See page 697). The present edifice, a plain but neat building, was erected in 1801, and adjoining it is the burying ground of the body. Their ancient burial ground is in a field near Falsgrave.

BETHEL CHAPEL.—The *Old Town Hall*, in Quay Street, is now used as a place of religious worship, called "The Bethel." The services, on Tuesday and Saturday evenings are conducted by the ministers and friends of the various dissenting bodies in the town, for the especial benefit of sailors and fishermen.

CATHOLICS.—The Catholics of Scarborough formerly assembled for the celebration of the rites of their Church in a house in West Gate; but having purchased premises of the late Rev. Cornelius Burgh, in *Auborough Street*, the present Chapel was erected in 1809, under the direction, and chiefly by the munificence of the late Rev. William Coghlan. In 1839, it underwent a series of repairs and decorations, and it is now a neat place of worship, capable of accommodating about 400 persons. The altar is a sarcophagus of classical design, supported by pilasters, and adorned in front with a medallion of the Agnes Dei. The altar-piece, a *Crucifixion* by a Roman artist, of acknowledged excellence, was presented (from his own collection) by Peter

Middleton, Esq., of Middleton Lodge. On one side of the altar is a painting of the *Annunciation*, and on the opposite side is one of St. Augustine, the Apostle of England—both by Mr. Bulmer. Over the sanctuary, in a radiance, is the *Dove* with expanded wings; and in the centre of the ceiling is a circular painting, thirteen feet in diameter, the subject being the *Assumption*. There is a good organ in the gallery at the west end of the Chapel. Adjoining the Chapel is the Presbytery—a good residence with a large garden attached—and at the back of the Chapel, is a school for boys and girls, and a residence for the teacher. The present pastor of this mission is the Very Rev. John Walker.

CATHOLIC CHURCH OF ST. PETER, *Castle Road*.—The corner stone of this edifice was laid on Friday, the 3rd of October, 1856, by the Right Rev. Dr. Errington, Archbishop of Trebizond, and coadjutor to His Eminence Cardinal Wiseman; the building is now fast approaching completion, and is expected to be opened for Divine Service in the early part of the summer of 1858. It stands, from necessity arising from the peculiarities of the *site*, north and south—the altar to the south—and in point of detail belongs to the transition from the Early English to the Florid or Decorated style of Gothic architecture. The plan of the Church embraces a nave with side aisles, a chancel, two side Chapels, a baptistry and sacristy, and a tower and belfry at the north west corner. As the chancel (half octagonal) is not depressed externally nor contracted within, the roof of the sanctuary soars to the apex of the unbroken roof of the nave, giving it an outline and expression somewhat continental rather than English. The elevation of the apse shows no terminal window, being lighted by two lateral ones on each side; but whether this sacrifice of a window over the altar has been made with the special view of escaping the dazzling splendour of a meridian sun, or from an objection on principle to the questionable effect of a window immediately behind the altar in Churches of small dimensions, we are unable to say. Much may be said on both sides as to the advantages and disadvantages of an east window, independently of circumstances; for while the east window is unquestionably a beautiful termination to the Gothic Church, the windowless apse, provided the chancel be otherwise well-lighted, is calculated to secure a better effect for the altar and the sanctuary; and to compensate for the loss of stained glass, the blank space within over the altar, usually occupied by windows, present an ample and enviable field to a rival ecclesiastical artist, the fresco painter. The tracery of all the windows of the lower story differ, and thus a beautiful variety is furnished; but the tracery of the windows of the clerestory is all alike. The windows of the aisles are

of three lights each, and those of the clerestory of two lights each. One of the side Chapels is to be dedicated in honour of the Mother of Our Divine Redeemer, and will be called the *Lady Chapel*; and the other is to be called the *Chapel of St. Michael*; the former is on the east side, and the latter on the west side of the chancel, at the ends of the side aisles, but separated from them by handsome arches. The baptistry, in which will stand the font, as well as the sacristry, projects from the south end of the west aisle. The pillars which support the arches separating the aisle from the nave are circular, but very light and elegant, and the whole edifice from its commanding position, its respectable dimensions, and elegant detail, will, undoubtedly form one of the most conspicuous ornaments of the town. The wall stone used in the building is from the quarries of Leversham, and is quarry faced with angles margin drafted; and the ashler stone used in the dressings has been brought from Whitby. The architects of the building are Messrs. Weightman, Hatfield, and Goldie, of Sheffield, but the design is from the pencil of the latter gentleman.

**SCHOOLS.**—*Grammar School.*—This ancient classical seminary is supposed to have been established in the reign of Edward VI., after the dissolution of the Chantries. So early as the year 1597, it is mentioned in the Corporation Records, as “the high school,” having twenty scholars at ten shillings per ann. each; and that the articles of the school were under the town’s seal. Previously to the siege of the Castle in 1648, this school was conducted in a building appropriated to its use, standing on the site of the Carmelite Friary, in Charnell Garth, but Colonel Bethel, Governor of the Castle, caused the house to be taken, and the school was removed in February, 1649, to the south transept of St. Mary’s Church, or Farrer’s Aisle, where it continued until the restoration of that Church commenced in 1848. It is now engrafted upon a private school in York Place, conducted by Mr. J. Sykes.

Before the passing of the Reform Bill, the master was appointed on a vacancy, by the Bailiffs for the time being. The school has only two endowments; the one a close of 1A. 2R. of land, near Falsgrave, called Warlington Grove, devised by Gregory Fysh, in 1640, in consideration of four scholars of the kindred of the testator being kept on the foundation; and if none such could be found, then four others were to be nominated by the ministers or overseers of the school. The other benefaction consists of £100., given in the year 1694, by Frances Thompson, Esq., M.P. for Scarborough, for which the Corporation pay the master five per cent per ann.

*Schools of the Amicable Society*, North Terrace.—The Amicable Society, originated by Robert North, Esq., was founded March 26th, 1729, for the

purpose of clothing and educating the children of the poor of Scarborough. The schools of this Society (a long brick building) were built in 1817, at a cost of £1,200., on their present site, which was given by the Corporation. They contain besides the school rooms for boys and girls, apartments for the teachers. The schools are now limited to fifty boys and thirty girls, who are clothed free, and educated in the principles of the Church of England; and when of proper age the boys are apprenticed to trades, and the girls are put out as domestic servants; the fund for the support of the institution arising from the subscriptions of the members, collections made in Churches, and other voluntary donations and legacies. The Society is under the government of a President, four Trustees, and four Wardens, annually elected. Mr. Hinderwell says in reference to those educated in these schools, that "instead of falling victims to profligacy, many of them have filled useful occupations in life with credit and advantage. Several bred to the sea," he continues, "by means of the rudiments of their early education at this seminary, have attained a competent knowledge of navigation, which has qualified them for mates and commanders of vessels. These have eventually become patrons of the institution, and benefactors to succeeding generations; others have fought the naval battles of their country, and by their bravery contributed to its security and independence."

The *School of Industry*, held in a small building in *Cook's Row*, was founded in 1808, for the education of the female children of the poor, who are taught knitting, sewing, &c., in addition to reading, writing, &c. The institution is under the patronage of the ladies of Scarborough, but the chief supporters of it are members of the Society of Friends. The children pay twopence per week, each. About seventy attend.

The *Lancasterian Schools* on the *Castle Road*, built in 1810, are supported by voluntary contributions, and the pence of the children. The schools were originally founded by Mr. Lancaster, the founder of the system of teaching, called after his name; but the schools are now conducted on the British and Foreign system. The average attendance is 250 boys and girls.

The *Infant School*, held in an antique room, a remnant of an ancient mansion in St. Sepulchre Street, was founded about 1827, under a Committee of management of ladies and gentlemen, and is now chiefly supported by the Society of Friends. It is conducted on the British and Foreign system. About 100 children attend.

The *National Schools* for boys and girls, are now held in brick buildings on the *Castle Road*, which are soon to give place to a handsome pile of buildings in the Tudor style, for the erection of which subscriptions are now



being raised.\* The proposed buildings comprise a boys' school 56½ feet by 37½ feet, with class-room 18 feet by 18 feet; girls' school 64½ feet by 18 feet, with class-room 15½ feet by 14½ feet; and infant school 37½ feet by 18 feet, with gallery 18 feet by 18 feet; together with three private rooms for the school mistress, each about 18 feet by 11 feet, and that these are to form one perfect united system, and to be completed at the total estimated cost of £2,200. About 250 attend these schools on an average.

*Wesleyan Schools, Friars' Entry.*—The foundation stone of this handsome building was laid on the 5th of February, 1856, by Henry Fowler, Esq., and the schools were opened in the month of September following. The building is of hammer dressed stone, with cut stone facings, and embraces three fine school rooms for boys, girls, and infants, besides a residence for the teachers; and the cost of the erection amounted to nearly £2,000., which was raised by subscription. The front of the building presents three gables, and in the centre is a tall wooden belfry. The angles are all supported by single buttresses. About 280 children attend these schools.

The *Catholic Schools* have been already noticed. *Sunday Schools* are held in connection with all the places of worship in the town.

**HOSPITALS AND ALMSHOUSES.**—*St. Thomas' Hospital* is already noticed at page 710.

*Merchant Seamen's Hospital, Castle Road.*—This charity is a branch of the general institution for the relief and support of maimed and disabled seamen in the merchant service, incorporated under the 20th of George II. (1747). It is under the management of fifteen trustees, annually chosen from the inhabitants of Scarborough, according to the provisions of the Act, by the owners and masters of ships belonging to the port of Scarborough, and is subordinate to the Trinity House, Deptford Strond. The funds arise from the duty of one shilling per month, collected under the Act, out of the wages of every seaman belonging to the port of Scarborough. The trustees possess also the sum of £400. stock, the dividends of which are carried to the general account. The *Hospital*, erected in 1752, is a spacious building consisting of a centre and two wings, with a court in front. It contains thirty-six separate apartments for as many poor seamen, or widows of seamen, belonging to

\* Among the subscribers to the erection of the new National Schools are Lord Hotham, M.P., patron, for £100.; Sir J. V. B. Johnstone, Bart., M.P., J. Woodall, Esq., and the Trustees of the late Richard Wilson, Esq., for £50. each; W. Holden, Esq., the Archbishop of York, Archdeacon Long, for £25. each; the Rev. Dr. Whiteside, and E. H. Hebden, Esq., for £20. each; and J. H. Reed, Esq., and Mrs. E. Strickland, for £10. each.

Scarborough. The revenue of the institution has declined very considerably, so that the poor hospitallers now receive only a few shillings each every year.

*Trinity House, St. Sepulchre Street.*—The exact date of this institution is not known, though it is said to have been founded in 1602. Mr. Thoresby states in his *Diary*, in 1682, that “the mariners at Scarborough have been so noble, as by contribution, to build for poor seamen’s widows, an Hospital, for the very ground whereof they gave £100.” To the maintenance of this charity, he further states, that “every vessel contributes fourpence per voyage; every master, fourpence; and every man that receives above fifteen shillings wages, twopence a piece.” The Trinity House is the ancient building here referred to, but this mode of contribution has long ago been disused. The building, being much decayed, was re-erected by subscription in 1832-3, and it has now a neat cut stone front of two stories in height, with an inscription below the cornice. It contains apartments for thirty-one decayed mariners, or their widows, but the inmates receive no allowance whatever, there being no fund for that purpose.

*Taylor’s Free Dwellings, Cook’s Row.*—Mr. Joseph Taylor, in 1810, bequeathed a legacy of £1,000., out of which, three houses were erected in 1817, and are kept in repair. They are comfortable dwellings, containing apartments for fourteen aged respectable poor persons of Scarborough. Mrs. Hannah Mennell, a relative of Mr. Taylor, has since left an endowment of £800. to this charity. The poor inmates receive two pounds a year, and some coals.

*Wilson’s Mariners’ Asylum, situated at the top of Auborough Street.*—The late Richard Wilson, Esq., erected during his life, a very neat row of fourteen Almshouses, containing two rooms each, for the use of decayed mariners, or their widows, in 1836, at a cost of from £3,000. to £4,000. In his will he left under the care of fifteen trustees, a sufficient sum to keep the building in repair, and to furnish the inmates with a small annuity. The building is of red brick with cut stone facings, and the style of architecture is Tudor. Each inmate of this Asylum receives four pounds a year besides the cottage, and each sitting-room is furnished with a lithographed likeness of the founder, Mr. Wilson.

*Spinsters’ Hospital, St. Thomas Street.*—This building consists of two good brick houses, containing together apartments for twelve persons, and was erected in 1841, by Mrs. Elizabeth Clark, widow of Francis Clark, Esq., for the use of aged spinsters. The inmates receive a few shillings yearly.

*Free Dwellings.*—The above-mentioned Mrs. Clark also founded free dwell-

lings in Mill Street, in 1852, for twelve deserving persons above fifty years of age, who also receive a few shillings every year.

*Sedman's Hospital.*—In 1714, Thomas Sedman devised a house and garth in Cross Street, for an Hospital for six poor persons. The Hospital was rebuilt and enlarged in 1841, by the before-mentioned Mrs. Elizabeth Clark, and it now consists of two houses, containing apartments for eighteen poor men or women above the age of fifty. The interest of £400. was left by Mrs. Clark to keep these houses in repair, and when no repairs are needed the interest is divided amongst the inmates.

*Farrer's Hospital*, Low Conduit Street.—This Hospital, which consists of two very old cottages, for two aged poor persons, was founded in 1628, by Mr. John Farrer, the husband of the lady who first discovered the efficacy of the Scarborough Spa.

*Burgh's Hospital*, Duple, consists of one old cottage containing four rooms, occupied by four poor persons. There are *Free Dwellings* in Toller Gate, viz., two cottages containing four small apartments. These were left to the poor by a person of the name of North.

*Trott's Hospital*, St. Thomas' Street, consists of two small old dilapidated cottages, bearing the following quaint inscription cut in stone:—"These Houses given by Elisha Trotter. 2 Widows to leve in who died the 26th day of September, 1627." This Hospital is endowed with an acre of land in Burton Dale.

*Robinson's Almshouse*, Long Westgate, was founded in 1691. The house, which was rebuilt by the Corporation, contains apartments for four poor persons.

*Stubbs' Almshouse*, near the Castle Dykes, was given by Cornelius Stubbs, for the residence of two poor women, and ten shillings a year for repairs, out of a house in Quay Street.

CHARITABLE INSTITUTIONS.—The *Sea Bathing Infirmary* was founded in 1812, and is situated at the junction of the outermost pier, or sea-wall, with the Castle Hill, and commands a very extensive and beautiful sea prospect. The object of the institution is the admission of necessitous persons requiring, in addition to the means at the disposal of our provincial Hospitals, the advantages of a marine residence, and the use of sea-bathing, for their restoration. Originally the infirmary could only admit six in-patients; latterly, however, twenty-four additional beds have been added; and its benefits are not limited as heretofore, to the necessitous poor, but by partially adopting the self supporting system, are now extended to any person of limited means. It is also supported by subscription.

The *Dispensary* is another local medical charity, and was only established in 1851, since which time about six hundred patients annually have been relieved. It is supported by voluntary contributions, and is held in a private house, in Queen Street, but subscriptions are being raised for the purpose of erecting a suitable building for it.

The *Humane Society* was established in 1822; the *Female Sick and Lying-in-Charity*, in 1812; and here are also a *Friendly Society for the relief of the Scarborough Fishermen*, and several *Sick Clubs* and other Charitable Provident Societies.

The *Scarborough Poor Law Union* comprises thirty-three parishes, embracing an area of 177 square miles. The Old Workhouse, in Waterhouse Lane, has been converted into an Union Workhouse, to accommodate 170 paupers. The average number of inmates in the house for the past year was about eighty, and the average weekly cost of each was 3s. 6d. Sir J. V. B. Johnstone, Bart., is Chairman of the Board of Guardians, and Mr. Edward S. Denner is their Clerk. There are five medical officers to the Union.

**PUBLIC BUILDINGS.**—The Spa Saloon and Cliff Bridge, as well as the Churches and Chapels, are described at preceding pages.

**TOWN HALL.**—This is a plain but suitable and commodious brick building, situated in St. Nicholas Street, formerly called Long Room Street. The large Court room, which is approached by a broad and stately staircase, has lately been renovated and improved by the addition of an orchestra, and three beautiful gas chandeliers, &c. A portrait of George III., painted by Stewartson, the gift of the late James Tindall, Esq., is suspended over the bench at one end. The Quarterly and Petty Sessions, and the County Courts, are held in this room, and all the business of the Corporation is transacted in it; it is also used, by permission of the Mayor, for concerts and public meetings of the various societies in the town. In the ante-room is a portrait of Mr. Benjamin Johnson, a celebrated musician of Scarborough, who attained the age of 103 years. This picture was painted by the late J. Jackson, R.A., and presented by the late Earl of Mulgrave.

The *Police Office* is in the Town Hall. The Borough Police force consists of a Superintendent and five police constables; and there are twenty special constables to assist in cases of need or emergency. There are two cells at the rear of the building.

The *Old Town Hall*, in Quay Street, a small inconvenient building used from time immemorial, was disposed of in the year 1800; when a long lease for the present Town Hall was obtained. The old hall is now used as a place of worship, called Bethel. The cellar beneath it, now a grocery ware-

house, was formerly a prison. An ancient effigy, long preserved in this cellar, but the history of which is unknown, has been removed to the Museum.

**NEWBOROUGH BAR.**—There were formerly two gates or entrances into Scarborough. Aldeborough, or Awborough Gate, on the north, and Newborough Gate, on the west. These, with the wall and moat which partly surrounded the town, formed its defence in the troublous times of past centuries. The "Aldeburgh" Gate has long since disappeared, and we are not aware that there are any traces extant, or even a pictorial representation of it. The "Newburgh" Gate, or Bar, a plain gloomy looking building with an archway beneath it, was removed in 1843, and the present neat edifice erected on its site. The last mentioned building had been used as a *Debtors' Prison*, which occasioned the author of a "Scarborough Guide," published in 1796, to observe:—"Anciently, the road to the Temple of Honour was through that of Virtue; while at Scarborough the approach to health, pleasure, and delight, is under the arch of misery; and, we trust, repentance! For the gateway you pass, leading into the town, is the Corporation gaol or prison! kept by a fair and portly wardeness, who wields the tremendous key, but whose great humanity softens, as did Akerman, the afflictions of the unfortunate and wretched committed to her charge."

The present Bar forms the entrance into the town, and is a neat cut stone structure, of some architectural pretensions. It forms a handsome tower; the archway is groined, and has a large boss in the centre, and above it the building rises two stories, the angles being formed by octagonal turrets, and the whole embattled. In each face of the edifice is a handsome window of six lights, with transoms, and the archway and windows are ornamented on both sides with shields of the Town Arms, &c. There is a narrow footway on each side, beneath the angular turrets. The apartments in the upper part of the Bar are now used as warerooms, in connection with an adjoining drapery establishment.

**THE MUSEUM.**—This chaste and elegant cut stone structure, which is situated on the northern side of the Cliff Bridge, was originated by the Scarborough Philosophical Society, in consequence of the munificent offer of the late Thomas Duesbery, Esq., of Beverley, to give the splendid collection of fossil remains, minerals, and other specimens of natural history and antiquities, formed by his uncle, Thomas Hinderwell, Esq., the late venerable historian of Scarborough, on condition that a suitable building should be raised, in which to place it. A subscription was immediately set on foot by the members of the Philosophical Society, and the foundation stone of the Museum was laid by Sir J. V. B. Johnstone, Bart., the President, on the 9th

of April, 1828. The cost of the building, including the purchase of ground, fitting up, &c., was £1,836. (the cost of the building alone being about £1,300.), and the Museum was first opened for the purpose of lectures, &c., on the 12th of February, 1830.

The edifice is a rotunda, with a dome, of the Roman Doric Order, 37½ feet in its external diameter, and 50 feet high. The circular plan of the building was suggested by W. Smith, Esq., LL.D., the celebrated geologist, as being more capable of exhibiting, in one simple and intelligible form, the stratification of the rocks of Great Britain, than could be obtained by any other method. It was originally proposed, when sufficient funds were obtained, to add wings, radiating from the central building. The cornice, which surrounds the building, has scarcely its equal, and is said to have been taken from the Theatre Marcellus, at Rome; and the windows, designed more for the admission of air than light, are taken from the Temple of the god Ridicula, at Rome. The classical design of the building is from the pencil of R. H. Sharp, Esq., architect, of York. The basement contains the library, laboratory, and keeper's room, and the principal room, which is 35 feet high, is approached by a spiral staircase. This room is lighted from the dome. From its situation, overlooking the sea, this building, combines with the Cliff Bridge, to form a highly agreeable object.

The collection of fossils, minerals, and antiquities, of which Mr. Duesbery's gift formed the basis, is now pretty extensive. In the lower story, amongst the miscellaneous collection, is the piece of carved stone found on the site of the ancient Chapel of the Castle (See page 700); the old *Ducking School*, which was formerly fixed on the old pier at Scarborough, near a spot still known as *Ducker's Hole*;\* and the skeleton of an Ancient Briton, in a rude oak coffin, discovered in July, 1834, in a large tumulus at Gristhorpe.† Also many large and beautiful specimens of animals of the Saurian species, and fossil fishes from the Lias, near Whitby:—one of the Saurians, the gigantic *Plesiosaurus*, is supposed to have measured 23 feet in length. On ascending the staircase, the first objects which attracts the eye are the fossil remains of former ages, which are placed on sloping shelves around the Museum, corresponding in some degree with the arrangement of the strata, or their natural position in the earth. The visitor should commence the examination of them, on the left hand of the gallery staircase:—there, on the first shelf, are placed, as being from the most recent formations, the bones which have been collected from the remarkable Cave of Kirkdale, in Yorkshire,—the next shelf contains the fossils from the Suffolk Crag and Paris clay, the most recent *stratified* formations,—the next, those from the London clay,—then, those from the Chalk; and so on, in succession, beginning with those fossils, which have been collected from the strata *most*

\* For some particulars of this ancient instrument of punishment, see page 383 of this volume.

† An account of the discovery of this skeleton, will be found in the history of Gristhorpe, in the second volume of this work.

recently formed in the crust of the globe, and proceeding to the lower, and lower beds, until we come to the primitive or granatic rocks, in which no remains of living animals can be found. The conchologist will observe that the recent strata contain many shells similar to those of the present day:—as we proceed to the lower strata, fewer, and still fewer, will be found, until having passed the Chalk, scarcely any will be met with, exactly similar.

On the shelf below, which runs round the building, is a collection of fossil shells, and shells of the present day, arranged together according to their different genera: the fossil being classed with the recent shells, wherever they are found of the same genus or family. On the floor are some gigantic Ammonites, and other remains.

The minerals are placed on four tables in the centre of the floor, and are arranged according to their respective bases, or principal component parts. The birds, which are principally British, are arranged according to Cuvier. The insects are arranged in cases, in a gallery above, and with the exception of those in the first case, are all British. The collection of coins is yet small. In 1850, a large *Aquarium* was erected against the building, and communicating with it. It contains a quantity of mammals, such as crabs, lobsters, shrimps, &c.

Outside the building is a large stone effigy of a cross-legged knight, in armour, in a recumbent position. It was removed hither from the cellar of the Old Town Hall, where it lay for a long time. Its history is entirely unknown, but the shield is said to bear the arms of the Mowbray family.

\*.\* A Meteorological Register of the variations of the Barometer, Thermometer, Rain Gauge, &c., is kept in the Museum.

ODD FELLOWS' HALL—*Mechanics' Institution*.—This building stands in Vernon Place, near Christ Church; its foundation stone was laid by Thomas Purnell, Esq., the then Mayor, on the 4th of February, 1840. The edifice, which is 78 feet long, 30½ feet wide, and about 60 feet high, is in the Grecian style of architecture. At the front are two fluted Doric columns, and above these are two fluted ones of the Ionic Order, supporting the middle cornice. Above this, and under the pediment, is the motto, "*Amicitia, Amor, et Veritas*," and a shield charged with part of the emblems used by the Order, carved in *basso relievo*. On the second floor is a large lecture or assembly room, 58 feet in length, by 27 feet in breadth. The Odd Fellows' Hall is at present rented by the Committee and members of the Mechanics' Institute, who use some of the smaller rooms for class rooms, library, &c., and in the large room the lectures of the Society are delivered, and public meetings and exhibitions are frequently held in it.

PUBLIC MARKET HALL.—The Scarborough Public Market Company obtained an Act of Parliament, in 1862, under which, they received powers to erect halls in St. Helen's Square, and its vicinity; to improve the approaches thereto; and also to erect a range of public abattoirs. The new market-hall lately erected by this Company, on the east side of St. Helen's Square,

occupies the site of the old Shambles, and the incongruous mass of buildings adjacent thereto. It is in the Tuscan style of architecture; the principal front is entirely of Whitby stone; the sides and east front are of brick, with stone quoins, cornices, &c. The front exhibits an arcade of five arches, supported by  $\frac{3}{4}$  pillars; in three of the arches are large windows, and the other two are occupied by entrance gateways. In the pediment is a semicircular window. On each side of the entrances is a circular medallion, charged with a carving of the Town's Arms. The building measures externally  $151\frac{1}{2}$  feet in length, and 50 feet 8 inches in breadth; the internal width, from the front of the shops on either side, is 80 feet; and the height in the clear space is 50 feet to the ridge. The roof is of iron and glass, of simple construction, and abundant light is derived from it, and from a row of semicircular lights over the shops. The market is divided into thirty-one neat shops, and ranges of stalls run down the hall, thereby forming long and spacious avenues. There is also a central avenue running from north to south (with an entrance on the south side of the market), in which it was intended to erect an ornamental fountain. Across the ends of the hall are galleries; and the whole area underneath the hall is cellared; part of which is used for the sale of fish and other articles, and the remaining part for the stowage of various commodities. There are two spacious gateways at each end of the market, and one at the south side. The site of the hall cost the Company about £9,000.; and the building upwards of £7,000.

RAILWAY STATION.—The prosperity of Scarborough, both as a port, and as a celebrated place of fashionable resort, has been enhanced by the extension to it of the grand railway connection, which have revived many of even of our most respectable towns. The North Eastern Railway Company's lines extend to this place from the City of York and the town of Hull. The Station is situated on *Falgrave Walk*, and is a spacious and handsome cut stone building. The front has, in its centre, a fine portico, supported by twelve Doric pillars in couples, with a cut stone railing on the top. The interior is lightsome and pleasant. The area in front of the Station is separated from the street by a long range of iron palisades, with handsome entrance gates, piers, &c.

THEATRE.—This place of amusement stands in *St. Thomas' Street* (formerly Tanner Street), and is a very plain building for such a fashionable town as Scarborough; but several improvements are about to be made in it by Mr. Samuel Roxby, the proprietor and manager. It is open for dramatic entertainments during the summer months.

SAVINGS' BANK.—This is a neat stone-fronted edifice in *King Street*,



containing offices for the transaction of business, above which is a board room, which is sometimes used (with permission of the trustees) by the Committees of different Societies, for the management of their affairs. A statement of the amount deposited in this bank, &c., will be found at page 727.

POST OFFICE.—This establishment has just been removed from No. 50, Newborough Street, to a new and more commodious building, erected expressly for it. The situation is one of great convenience to the public. Receiving houses have also been opened within the last few years, at convenient distances from the general office. Mr. George Wheldon is the present postmaster.

BOROUGH GAOL AND HOUSE OF CORRECTION, *Castle Road*.—This is a brick building, erected in 1841. It contains twelve separate cells for prisoners, and adjoining it is a large yard, used for breaking stones, that being the labour to which convicts are put. The apartments over the arched gateway of the old Newborough Bar were formerly used as a *Debtor's Prison* (See page 757); and a part of the Workhouse was once converted into a *House of Correction*.

LITERARY INSTITUTIONS.—PHILOSOPHICAL AND ARCHEOLOGICAL SOCIETY.—The Scarborough Philosophical Society was founded in 1827, and the attention of the members was soon directed to the importance of a Museum, in which the rich treasures of the coast, general subjects of natural history, and local antiquities might be preserved and exhibited. This object has been effected, and the edifice is described at page 757.

The *Archæological Society* was formed in 1848, under the patronage of Lord Londesborough, and has recently been incorporated with the Philosophical Society. Papers on interesting subjects are occasionally read by some of the members of the Philosophical and Archæological Society, and many valuable books have been presented by Lord Londesborough, the Society of Antiquarians, and by gentlemen interested in the proceedings of the Association. The Society has for its object the promotion of science, and the investigation of the natural history of the town and neighbourhood; and in pursuance of that object, it has opened several barrows of the British period on the estates of Lord Londesborough, of Sir J. V. B. Johnstone, and of the Rev. R. Skelton, of Lewisham.

MECHANICS' INSTITUTION, *Odd Fellows' Hall* (See page 759). From the Twenty-sixth Annual Report of the Scarborough Mechanics' Institute (1856), we learn that the Society numbers 881 members, amongst whom are the Parliamentary representatives of the Borough, the Vicar, and many of the leading clergy and gentry of the town. The *Library* contains about 1,300 volumes, and the *Reading Room* is well supplied with periodicals. This

Association is incorporated with the Yorkshire Union of Mechanics' Institutes.

**LIBRARIES AND NEWS ROOMS.**—The *Scarborough Subscription Library*, King Street, Cliff, and formerly known as the "Agricultural and General Library," is the only public subscription library in the town, independent of literary institutions. It was formed on the 1st of July, 1801, chiefly by some gentlemen who were anxious to advance the agricultural interests of the neighbourhood. Since then, however, the books on agriculture were sold, and works of general literature (some of which class had already been added), substituted. The library now contains about 5,000 volumes. The amount of subscription is £1. per ann.

The *Subscription News Room* is held under the same roof as the library, and is the only annual news room in Scarborough, not connected with literary institutions. The room is well supplied with newspapers, and the annual subscription is £1. 5s. The view of the sea and harbour from the library and news room is excellent.

There are, as before stated, libraries in connection with the *Philosophical and Archæological Society* and the *Mechanics' Institute*, and a reading and news room in connection with the latter; besides which there is a free library at the Girls' School of the Amicable Society, and also libraries connected with some of the Dissenting Chapels.

A *News Room* is also open here in the season at Mr. Theakston's, bookseller, St. Nicholas' Street, where is likewise an extensive circulating library.

The *Scarborough Gazette*, a weekly newspaper containing a list of the visitors, is published every Thursday morning during the season, by Mr. Theakston, St. Nicholas Street. This paper is neutral in politics.

**HORTICULTURAL SOCIETY.**—A Floral and Horticultural Society was formed in Scarborough, in 1840, and its first exhibition was held in the Town Hall, in the month of September in that year. It usually holds two exhibitions every year, in the months of July and September.

**TEMPERANCE SOCIETIES.**—The *Scarborough Temperance Society* has been established some years, and the number of its members is considerable. A new association has recently been formed, called *The Working Men's Temperance Society*, and the public lectures of both bodies are generally held in the lecture room of the Mechanics' Institute (Odd Fellows' Hall).

**CEMETERY.**—The authorities of the town having agreed that the conditions of the Act, 16th and 17th of Victoria, cap. 134, should be acted upon, and that a burial board should be formed under the Burial Board Act, a field, called Chapman's Pasture, containing ten acres, situated about half a mile from the town on the north west side, was lately purchased for £3,000.,

and appropriated as a general cemetery. The ground, which is very tastefully laid out, and planted with shrubs, &c., is divided into eight sections—one half, or four of the eight parts, being set apart for the use of the members of the Established Church; three of the remaining sections for Protestant Dissenters, and the remaining section for Catholics. It contains about 6,000 grave spaces, and 220 plot vaults. In the centre of the ground is a handsome Gothic edifice, consisting of two Chapels, connected by a tower, the basement story of which is open for the admission of the hearse, or bier, to pass through, and on each side of which are entrances to the Chapels. The building is in the Decorated style, of hammer dressed stone, with tooled ashler dressings, and is buttressed at the sides and angles. The roofs are high pitched, with an ornamental ridging. The windows have some good tracery in the heads, and the gables are surmounted with six ornamental crosses. The arched-way between the Chapels and beneath the tower is stone groined, and from its centre rises a beautiful structure, consisting of a square tower, with carved canopies and pinnacles; and above this is an octagonal lantern, surmounted with a neat spire of tooled ashler. The pillars and entrance gateway to the cemetery are of a novel character; and on each side is a neat building, one of which is intended as a residence for the Superintendent, and contains a Committee room, and the other the sexton's residence. The first interment took place in this cemetery on the 11th of June, in the present year (1857), when the remains of Mr. Francis Prince, landlord of the Ship Inn, Falsgrave, was buried in it—though the grounds had not then been consecrated, or regularly opened for public burials.

**LONGEVITY.**—Scarborough is remarkable for the longevity of its inhabitants, and the temperature of the place is favourable to invalids in winter. Bigland says, "Scarborough appears, in a great measure, to owe its salubrity to its situation on the acclivity of a hill, lying exposed to the sun, well ventilated by the southerly and south-westerly winds, and by the current of air which accompanies every flowing tide. The winds from the north and north-east blow also with considerable force; and being checked by the Castle-hill, form an eddy, which, mounting over the rocks, is forced down upon the town, by the strength of the superior currents, and ventilates the narrow lanes and passages."

We have shewn at page 716 of this volume, that *William Allanson*, one of the "Governors" of Scarborough Spa, who died in 1775, attained the age of 109 years.

*Bartholomew Johnson*, musician, died here in his 104th year, on the 7th of February, 1814. He was born at Wykeham, near Scarborough, on the

3rd of October, 1710, and resided at Scarborough from the time of his being apprenticed to the humble profession of a barber, to the time of his death; and was nearly seventy years one of the town's waits. As a musician, and for the very many excellent traits in his character, he uniformly preserved the esteem of a highly respectable circle of friends. On attaining his 100th year a jubilee dinner was given, and a musical performance, at the Freemason's Lodge, Scarborough, at which some of the most celebrated composers at that time took part. About ten o'clock in the evening the venerable old man took part in a quartette, by performing on the violoncello, the bass to a minuet of his own composition sixty years previous. This interesting event took place on the 3rd of October, 1810. A portrait of Mr. Johnson, painted for Lord Mulgrave, by J. Jackson, Esq., R.A., and afterwards presented to the Corporation by his lordship, now embellishes one of the ante-rooms of the Town Hall. A tombstone, with a suitable inscription, is erected to his memory in Wykeham Churchyard.

On the 23rd of May, 1857, H. Preston, Esq., of the Crescent, Scarborough, treated to tea and other refreshments forty-two old men and women resident in Scarborough, whose united ages amounted to 3,045 years, giving the average number of 74½ years to each person.

*Oliver's Mount.*—This is a commanding eminence a little to the south west of Scarborough, overlooking the town. Its original name was *Weapon Ness*, a compound word, *weapon*, indicating a place of defence, and *ness*, a point of land. The present name has arisen from a mistaken opinion that Oliver Cromwell erected batteries against the Castle during the siege of 1644-5. But it is an indisputable historical fact that Cromwell was never present at the siege. The hill rises above five hundred feet above the level of the sea, and from its summit, which forms a natural terrace, is a magnificent prospect of the coast, the Castle, the ocean, bounded only by the horizon to the east; and in the west, the extensive moors, the wolds, and the rich and cultivated vales, stretching out towards Pickering and Malton. It is said that in this direction, on a clear day, with a good glass, Castle Howard, the splendid seat of the Earl of Carlisle, may be seen, though at a distance of twenty-eight miles. In 1797, the adjoining land was enclosed, and the brow of the hill planted with trees, which adds to its beauty.

At the foot of the hill is *The Mers*, formerly a fine sheet of water, abounding with pike, perch, and eels; but now much contracted by the formation of the railroad, which runs on one side. "The rank growth of vegetation, and the deposit of sediment which has been accumulating for years," says the *Scarborough Guide* (ed. 1856), "have also materially aided in converting the

lake on whose bosom the majestic swan was wont to repose, into a shallow and useless marsh. It once afforded excellent diversion to the angler; but, except when the frosts of winter congeal its surface, causing it to become a scene of animation; it now possesses no attraction beyond the pleasant walk along its margin in returning from a summer day's ramble in its neighbourhood."

A most agreeable wooded retreat in the immediate vicinity of the town is known as *The Plantation*. Here many varieties of trees throw their shades across the winding paths and walks, whilst a sheet of water spreads its ample surface in the centre, giving coolness, verdure, and beauty to the spot.

EMINENT MEN.—*Roger de Scardeburg*, Abbot of Whitby, from 1222 to 1244, was a native of Scarborough. He is said to have been a man of great abilities, and of an upright honest character.

*Robert de Scardeburg*, another member of the higher order of ecclesiastics, was born here. He appears to have been summoned as a Parliamentary Baron, in 1274, and subsequent years, being at that time Archdeacon of the East Riding of Yorkshire.\* He is styled in the writ of summons "Superior Magister Robert de Scardeburg." He was elected in 1279, Dean of York, and died in the year 1290. (See page 386.)

*Simon de Scardeburgh* was Abbot of Selby, in 1313, and died in 1321; a *Robert de Scardeburgh* was Vicar of Scarborough, in 1320, and Prior of Bridlington the year following; and another *Robert de Scardeburg* was M.P. for the Borough, in 1348. It is uncertain whether all the persons of this cognomen were of the same family.

*Admiral Sir John Lawson, Knt.*, a distinguished naval commander during the period of the Civil War, the Commonwealth, and for some time after the Restoration, is said to have been born of humble parents, at Scarborough, though Campbell, in his *Lives of the Admirals*, has fixed upon Hull as his native town. He received the honour of Knighthood from Charles II. The records of the Corporation of Scarborough, shew that he was many years one of the Common Council of the Borough.

*Thomas Hinderwell, Esq.*, the historian of Scarborough, was the son of Thomas and Rebekah Hinderwell, and was born at Scarborough, November 17th, 1744. In early life his father had been engaged in seafaring pursuits, and was for some years a master mariner and shipowner in this port; but

\* According to Nicholas's *Synopsis of the Peerage*, vol. ii., pp. 715, 782, the Archdeacon of the East Riding was usually summoned as a Peer of Parliament.

having realized a competency, he retired from sea, and for many years occupied a commodious mansion on the Cliff. In 1775 he was elected Junior Magistrate of the Borough, and he died in 1798, at the advanced age of 92 years and 6 months. Our historian acquired the first principles of learning in his native town, but he was afterwards removed to the Grammar School of Coxwold, near Helmsley, then under the care of the Rev. R. Midgley. After leaving school he went to sea, and became master of a vessel; and in 1775 he retired from it, having so far been successful as to render his circumstances at once easy and comfortable. In 1778 he was elected a member of the Corporation of Scarborough, and from that period took an active part in what was likely to promote the general interests of the town. Three years afterwards he was called to the chief magistracy of the Borough, and he also filled the civic chair in 1784, 1790, and 1800. In 1816 he retired from the Corporation. He was connected with the best of the public institutions of the town, and was a warm and constant friend to the cause of education. He was more than forty years a supporter of the Amicable Society, and was elected its President in 1784. It was chiefly by his efforts that the Life Boat, which has been so successful in saving lives in cases of shipwreck, was obtained; and he was also one of the first supporters of the Scarborough Humane Society.

For a number of years Mr. Hinderwell had been collecting information illustrative of the history of his native place—though, as appears from his own statement, not with the remotest idea of ever giving it in any form to the public, but merely as a source of amusement for his leisure hours.

The first edition of his principal work (for he wrote *Remarks on the Times*, and several small publications) the *History and Antiquities of Scarborough*, appeared in 1798, in one small quarto; a second edition was published in 1811, with considerable additions, by the author; and a third edition of the work—almost unprecedented in the annals of topography—was published in 1832. The latter edition, which was ably edited by the Rev. Benjamin Evans, Baptist Minister of Scarborough, was much enlarged, thoroughly revised, and greatly improved. Drs. Travis and Murray, and Mr. Bean, furnished the Rev. editor with many valuable communications, to which their names are invariably attached. The latter gentleman furnished an important part to the natural history department.

Mr. Hinderwell (who was never married) died on the 22nd of October, 1825, in the 81st year of his age, and his remains were interred in the burial ground of St. Mary's, Scarborough.

FALSGRAVE TOWNSHIP.—Falsgrave, or Walsgrave township forms a western suburb of the town of Scarborough, and is included in the parish and Borough of Scarborough. When the Norman Survey was made, "Walsgrif" was the head of an extensive Manor and Soke, then belonging to the King (William I.), but previously was part of the possessions of Tosti, Earl of Northumbria, and brother to Harold, the last Anglo-Saxon King of England. (See page 675.) In the 40th of Henry III. (1256), Falsgrave was disafforested and annexed to the Liberties of Scarborough.

The present area, population, and rateable value of the township of Falsgrave, will be found at page 724 of this volume. There are no very extensive land owners in the township.

The *Village of Falsgrave* is situated one mile S.W. by W. of Scarborough, and the road to it from Scarborough, called *Falsgrave Walk*, which is lined with terraces and pleasant residences, is one of the most agreeable promenades in the Borough. The high road to York passes through the village. Here is a *Wesleyan Chapel*, which was erected by the late Mrs. Elizabeth Clark, of Scarborough, in 1842. The *School*, a plain brick tenement, with a bell in the gable, was built by subscription, in 1806. The Constables of Falsgrave hold certain property in trust for township purposes, out of which they pay the schoolmaster fifteen pounds a year, for teaching fourteen children. The above-mentioned bell is rung by the schoolmaster every week-day, at the hour of 8, 12, and 1. The Scarborough Gas Company have introduced gas into the village of Falsgrave.

END OF VOL. I.







